

# THE ENERGY EVOLUTION



Harnessing Free Energy  
from Nature

**Viktor Schauberg**

*Translated and edited by Callum Coats*

VOLUME FOUR OF ECO-TECHNOLOGY

# Contents

INTRODUCTION	viii
SOURCES	xiii
1. SOME PHILOSOPHICAL ASPECTS OF NATURAL ENERGIES	1
From Special Edition Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 7.4	1
From Special Edition Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 3.1	3
Conclusions	5
The Biological Vacuum - The Optimal Driving Force for Machines	9
The Catalysts	21
Cadaverine Poison in Ray-Form (Ptomaine Radiation)	28
The pressure turbine	28
The suction turbine	32
2. NEW FORMS OF TEMPERATURE	37
A Brief Description of My Discovery	37
Bio-Technology: Active & Reactive Temperatures	39
The Life-Current in Air & Water	41
3. NEW FORMS OF MOTION AND ENERGY	56
The Reactive Fuel Economy	56
The Practical Application of Cycloid-Space-Curve-Motion arising from Processes of Cold Oxidation	61
The Economy Founded on Reactively Produced Energy	65
Explosion and Implosion (Expansion and Impansion)	73
4. NEW VIEWS OF ELECTROMAGNETISM	75
Magnetism - Electricism	75
Magnetism = the Function of Levitism and Electricism = the Function of Gravitism	80
5. THE NATURE OF WATER, ITS CONDUCTION AND USE FOR TRANSPORT	87
Letter to Werner Zimmermann. June 20th 1936	87
The Ennoblement of Water	90

The Transport of Ore in Double-Spiral-Flow Pipe	92
The Liquefaction of Coal by Means of Cold Flows	95
Patent for: Pipe for Liquid and Gaseous Media	104
Patent for: Processes and Equipment for the Conveyance of Liquid, Gaseous or Aeriform Media	107
<b>6. THE AIR TURBINE</b>	<b>115</b>
Letter To Werner Zimmermann	115
The Vacuum Turbine	117
The Formation and Composition Of Riverwater	117
Re: The Air Turbine (Austrian Patent No. 145141 - 15.03.1935)	119
An Air-Turbine Patent	121
<b>7. EARLY DEVELOPMENTS IN IMPLOSION MACHINES</b>	<b>124</b>
From Special Edition Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 7.4.	124
The Atom Transforming Machine	125
7.7.7: Notes from 15th July 1936	125
7.7.2: Notes from 24th July 1936	126
7.7.3: Notes from the 25th July 1936	126
7.7.4: Notes from the 27th July 1936	127
7.7.5: Notes from the 1st of August 1936	127
7.7.6: Notes from the 11th of August 1936	127
7.7.7: Notes from the 13th of August 1936	128
7.7.8: Notes from the 14th of August 1936	128
7.7.9: An eye-witness report	129
7.7.10: Report of Arnold Hohl's visit, 14th-17th August 1936 (Arnold Hohl) 120	129
The Implosion Machine: An assembly of extracts from Implosion Magazine Nos. 45, 56, 57, 58,60 & 83.	130
The Space-Energy Turbine	140
<b>8. THE ENNOBLEMENT OF WATER</b>	<b>143</b>
The Artificial Production of Springwater	143
Letter to Dr W Biisselberg	147
Blood & Sap Circulation as a Model for the Ennoblement of Water	148
Petrol (Gasoline) from Water	151
<b>9. MACHINES OF THE GENUS - REPULSATOR</b>	<b>155</b>
The Production and Advantages of Implosion Machines	155
The Production of Noble Water & Drinking Water : An Assembly of Pertinent Data from Implosion Magazine	157
A Water-Ennobling Device must satisfy the Following Criteria	159

The Treatment of Water in the Preparation of Noble Water	160
Instructions from data provided by Viktor Schauburger	161
Ingredients Required for about 10 Litres of Water	163
10. THE KLIMATOR	164
Cold and Hot Machines - Cooling-Heating Machines	164
The Klimator - a New Form of Synthesising Current produced by a Space-Energy Generator	166
Technology & Bio-Technology	170
The Naturalesque Ur-Generation of Power, Heat and Light	170
11. MACHINES OF THE GENUS - REPULSINE	177
The Repulsine	177
The Suction Turbine	181
Elaborations on the Suction Turbine	184
Un-Natural Motion - Embryonic Death	186
Application for Patent No. 146 141	189
12. LAST LETTERS FROM VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER	196
Excerpt from Patent Letter to Munich Patent Office	196
Excerpts from Letter No. 1 to Josef Brunnader	198
Excerpts from Letter No. 2 to Josef Brunnader	200
Excerpts from Letter No. 3 to Josef Brunnader	203
Excerpts from Letter No. 4 to Josef Brunnader	206
Excerpts from Letter No. 5 to Josef Brunnader	208
Excerpts from Letter No. 6 to Josef Brunnader	211
Excerpts from Letter No. 7 to Josef Brunnader	214
Letter To Mr 'R'	216
13. THE POPEL REPORT	219
The Preliminary Investigation of Helicoid Pipes: Foreword	219
Report Concerning the Preliminary Investigation of Helicoid Pipes with Various Shapes of Pipe-Wall	222
The Multiple In-Winding, Convoluting Flow Process	223
The Influence of the Form and the Material of the Pipe on the Development of In-Winding Flow Processes	227
The Structural Change in the Water as a Consequence of the Multiple In-Winding Flowing Motion	245
The Prevention Of Encrustation	246
Final remarks on report	247
Index	249

# List of Illustrations

Illustration	Fig.	Page
Single water jet experiment	1	11
Spiral water-jet experiment	2	13
Charged water particles - photo	3	15
Preliminary sketch for suction- or trout-turbine	4	18
Suction-turbine rotor - 2 photos	5	19
Viktor Schauberg's microscope evidence - 2 photos	6	20
Abundance-producing wheel (Repulsator)	7	25
The principle of the abundance-producing wheel (The Repulsine)	8	27
The natural tripartite motion of the Earth	9	30
The Mill of God	10	52
3-blade Bio-impeller	11	63
3-blade Bioturbine	12	64
Bioturbine rotor with whorl-pipes	13	64
Comparison between axial—>radial, radial—>axial motion	14	77
The manifestation of physical growth	15	84
Pipe cross-section showing double spiral flows	16	93
Double spiral pipe diagram - patent No. 196680	17	106
Double spiral pipe diagram - multiple patents	18	114
Air-turbine diagram - patent No. 145141	19	123
Water-driven implosion machine	20	133
Air-driven implosion machine	21	134
Bio-technical submarine (2 images)	22	139
The Nuremberg water-jet experiment	23	145
Design principle for the Repulsator	24	158
Repulsator cross-sectional drawing	25	159
Repulsator diagram with cooling coils	26	161
Klimator - sketch	27	165
Klimator - detailed drawing	28	168
Sketches of nozzles	29	183
Repulsine patent No. 146 141 - drawing	30	191
Repulsine patent - photo	31	192

	Fig.	Page
Repulsine patent double membrane - sketch	32	193
Repulsine - 5 images	33	195
Viktor Schauburger's home-power generator - 2 photos	34	201
Possible air-turbine design	35	204
The accelerating stem turns of a skier	36	209
Rotating paramagnet as dynamo	37	213
The effects of relative densities on motion	38	215
The Popel Report		
Test stand No. 1	Diagram 1	224
Test stand No. 2	Diagram 2	226
Arrangement of the test stand	Diagram 3	228
The configuration of the other test-pipes	Diagram 4	229
Measured outputs of straight and helical pipes of different cross-section and wall configuration	Diagram 5	232
Frictional losses at the outlet of the pipes under test	Diagram 6	234
Table 1: Output of straight and spiral pipes	Table 1	235
Table 2: Output and friction losses of straight and spiral test pipes of glass and copper	Table 2	236
Output and flow-velocities of straight and spiral pipes	Diagram 7	237
Output and flow-velocities of straight and spiral pipes	Diagram 8	238
Comparison between the in-winding and turbulent flowing processes in straight and spiral pipes	Diagram 9	239
Suction levels arising from in-winding flowing motion	Diagram 10	242
Suction capacity of the in-winding flowing motion in pipes of various form and different material	Diagram 11	244

# Introduction

Coincidence? Or perhaps not! Standing as we are on the threshold of a new era, the first dawning of a new age, there is an air of expectancy of things imminent and better. In a certain sense this has psychologically programmed us with a willingness to embrace new concepts, to inaugurate and accept far-reaching change. It is also a time to reflect upon the very foundations of what we call 'civilisation' and to reassess their validity and where they have led, taking the good things with us and leaving the bad ones behind. So it seems timely that the radical departure in energy concepts presented here, should be made available now, when the tide of human development is turning and the impetus of this renewing flood can be harnessed to launch Viktor Schauburger's pioneering discoveries into a world more ready than ever before to implement them. At a time also, when the activities of humanity are increasingly seen to be on a head-on collision course with Nature's processes. An alarming increase in the scope and ferocity of so-called 'natural disasters' is forcing us to realise that the future is no longer secure; that other solutions to those presently proposed must quickly be found to remedy the present state of affairs. In my view, these will be largely ineffective unless Viktor Schauburger's important contributions towards the production of virtually free energy and high quality drinking water - the foundation of healthy life - are not taken into account a priori.

What we are concerned with here is an inversion of all that has hitherto been held to be true scientifically and technologically. As obvious as it is true that one cannot wash one's clothes in the same water that soiled them, so too can no new ecotechnology be founded on existing 'laws' and dogma, which have so disastrously failed. While such new departures in thought are usually referred to as 'revolutions', what is involved here is an 'evolution'. This is no form of repetition, a re-cycling of outworn concepts and processes, but an upward movement to totally new and higher levels not only of perception, but also of application of systems of an entirely new dimension and order. It is a movement away from the ceaseless round, the endless unproductive turning or 'revolution' of the wheel, the chief symbol of our technology and a derivative of the geometrical element of the circle. While progress of a sort is made as the wheel turns, the wheel itself does not evolve and always returns

upon itself. Having no in-built capacity for change and transformation it effectively contributes nothing to real evolutive progress.

Implicit in this evolution towards higher perception and a new *modus operandi* is the necessity to think an octave higher, as Viktor Schauberger so often expresses it. Just how fundamentally we will have to change our way of thinking and acting to achieve this we have yet to discover, although the information contained in this book will provide many of the necessary keys. Once inserted into the lock of evolution, new as yet unimagined vistas will unfold themselves and can become manifest, provided the will and determination are present to enter upon them.

But what it is that must change to permit this to happen? Basically it is a question of the geometrical system so familiar to us. This is the geometry of Euclid and essentially involves the elements of the straight line, circle and point, all of which are perfect forms and therefore unchanging. Such perfection requires no further input from external factors, nor can it productively interact with them and therefore these elements are sterile 'closed' systems. In terms of their physical appearance, these are the cylinders, spheres, wheels, straight shafts, pipes, flat surfaces, etc. in common use today. As transcendental constructs, i.e. belonging not to the physical world but to the realms of mental ideation, these geometrical elements are physically 'unreal' and in their application to the physical world are therefore 'unnatural'. Consequently their use in the construction and operation of today's machines and the energies they produce are in discordance with Nature's laws.

Steeped in the grandeur of Euclidean edifices over the last two millennia and the apparent appropriateness and suitability of Euclidean geometry for all purposes, we must now reappraise our unqualified acceptance of it, for it lies at the very root of our troubles. On earlier European structures the straight lines and hard edges were softened and made pleasing to the eye through their often exuberant embellishment. The Chinese on the other hand, versed in the art of geomancy, constructed their traditional buildings differently, deliberately curving the profile of the roof. In their philosophy the straight line was the path preferred by dragons, the mythical personification of destructive power, whose violence could only be curbed by forcing it to move along curved paths. Intuitively the Chinese were aware that straight lines provoke and foster violent behaviour, a phenomenon on the increase world-wide. Since the beginning of the last century [1900s] there has been a rapid reduction of such visual complexity to one of virtual uniformity as this decoration has gradually been stripped away, reducing our built environment to a naked, stark and arid angularity. Concurrent with this unfortunate development, and aided and abetted by the direct application of such geometry, the supremacy of rational straight-line thinking increased at the expense of the intuitive, the beaching from within, increasingly crippling our perception of



Nature's subtle workings. Because of this the rational mind began to cut out important factors that were deemed extraneous, so as to achieve the most economically effective outcomes. Thus, for instance, the bends in rivers were truncated and the gradient steepened in order to 'improve' Nature's patterns of flow, without any account being taken of their contribution to the health and stability of the river. The result - violent discharges and inundations.

Such simplicities of line not only disturb rivers, they also have a disturbing effect psychologically, because the eye, that most complex of organs requires an equal external visual complexity to maintain its health, balance and stability, transferring such states to the brain and psyche of its host. While contemplation of the rich diversity in colour and form of natural undisturbed forest - an apparent chaos but actually the highest state of order - brings us a sense of peace and inner tranquillity, when we are confronted by plantation forests, planted out in rows of same-age, same-species, same-height, same-shape trees, we experience a certain inner discomfort. A higher state of order and complexity has been reduced to a lower one. While such a relatively small reduction produces such a reaction, what effect do more major reductions have on us psychologically?

If we take the thrust and intention of Viktor Schauberg's inversion of our present reality to its logical conclusion, then it also calls into question the validity of the other artefacts we have produced. If the design, shape and function of today's and earlier devices have produced such unwelcome repercussions on the external environment and our health, what effect has the design of our living spaces had on the internal environment of our minds? As human beings, we are created according to Nature's laws of organics and not those of mechanics. We therefore belong to the world of Nature, to the world of sentient, intelligent creatures. And yet, indoctrinated by history, we do not perceive that the form of our dwellings, our physically enclosing structures, is at odds with those of other creatures; creatures whose sensitivity (which is also our birthright) is such that their intercommunion with the subtlest energies and response to the influences surrounding them is extremely intimate and of an order now almost totally alien to us. No natural creatures live in rigid rectangularities, but in roundnesses and curvilinear forms such as burrows, nests and shells, the latter the product of the most complex systems of curves. While Nature makes use of these forms everywhere, we do not, and through our constant use of unnatural geometry in all areas of endeavour, we have largely estranged ourselves from her. We have never even thought to question the influence that continual exposure to unnatural straight lines may exert on our mental, intellectual and emotional processes, on the energies that motivate and animate us and cause us to behave in one way or another. Such is the de-sensitising effect that perhaps we will have entirely to change our

living spaces in order to make possible the leap to the next higher state of awareness, to be able truly to appreciate Nature's processes and attune ourselves to them.

No doubt it was for all of these reasons that Viktor Schauberger so joyfully declared: "In the whole machine there is no straight line and no circle".<sup>1</sup> By this he meant that the overall design and shape of his devices were founded on completely different parameters to those of current design. Gone are the mortifying elements of Euclid. The effective functional surfaces and forms of these machines incorporate the swirling spirals and sinuosities, the open elements of non-Euclidean geometry so prevalent in Nature. By incorporating such organic spiral configurations and egg-shapes in such devices, energies are produced that are life-affirming in lieu of those generated by conventional machines that are presently inexorably destroying it. These energies and forces have the capacity not only to rehabilitate, enhance and stabilise Nature's energies, but also our own. As cooling revitalising energies, their widespread use would contribute much to the re-establishment of climatic equilibrium, which humanity's unthinking activities have so grossly thrown out of balance.

Whereas in earlier days the technology to manufacture and mass-produce such devices cheaply and economically was not available, today this is no longer the case. With the advance in electronics, the only form of modern technology that emulates Nature's resonances and communicative processes, computer controlled machines can produce forms of virtually any curvilinear complexity. Coupled with the independence of movement, the freedom from hunger and want that Viktor Schauberger's devices can provide and the present sophistication of global communication, humanity could be distributed far more evenly over the surface of this planet. This would remove the environmentally harmful point-loads of cities. Instead of being forced to live as human blood corpuscles, whose purpose is to maintain the flow of life-fluid in our machine-cities, we would be able to devote our energies to the evolvment of our innate creativity and to interact with Nature in the way that was always our birthright. Eventually wholly deserted, the deadly grid-iron conurbations of brick and asphalt would be viewed as the cautionary relics of one of the dark ages of human history, albeit a necessary educative chapter in our evolution and without which this coming corner could not have been turned.

To accomplish this, to swing wide the gateway to fresh fields of positive endeavour, all that is needed as Viktor Schauberger urges is the necessary will.

<sup>1</sup> From Section 7.7.10: Report of Arnold Hohl's visit, 14th-17th August 1936 (Arnold Hohl) in the Special Edition of *Mensch und Technik*, Vol. 2, 1993. — Ed.

"Our work is the embodiment of our will. The spiritual manifestation of this work is its effect. When such work is properly done it brings happiness, and when carried out incorrectly it assuredly brings misery. Humanity! Your will is paramount! You can command Nature if you but obey her!"<sup>2</sup>

Callum Coats  
February 2000

<sup>2</sup> From "The Road To Free Energy" in *Our Senseless Toil*, published in 1934 by Krystall Verlag, Vienna. — Ed.

# Sources

## Mensch und Technik - naturgemass

Originally Kosmische Evolution or Cosmic Evolution, the German periodical, Mensch und Technik - naturgemass (Humanity & Technology - in accordance with Nature), is funded by private subscription and published by the Gruppe der Neuen, or the New Group, whose aim was to explore Viktor Schauberger's theories and to interpret them scientifically. Volume 2,1993, is devoted entirely to the recently discovered (early 1990's) transcript of a notebook compiled in 1941 by a Swiss, Arnold Hohl, which not only reports on his visits to Viktor Schauberger in 1936 and 1937. It is from this volume that some of the passages in this book are obtained.

## Implosion Magazine

Implosion is a quarterly magazine, funded by private subscription and generally oriented towards the lay reader. It was originally published by Aloys Kokaly from about 1958 and now runs to 127 issues. Kokaly also founded the Verein zur Forderung der Biotechnik e.V. (Association for the Advancement of Biotechnology) specifically for the research and evaluation of Viktor's theories and through Implosion to provide a platform for Viktor Schauberger's various writings, of which Kokaly had many originals due to his close association with Viktor Schauberger during World War II and the immediately post-war period.

## The Schauberger Archives

Forming the greater part of Viktor Schauberger's estate, these are the private archives of the Schauberger family and the PKS (Pythagoras-Kepler-School) at Lauffen, near Bad Ischl in Upper Austria.

## Other Sources

Personal letters from Viktor Schauberger to various individuals.

## Editor's Note

Device identification: The proper identification of Viktor Schauberger's various machines is somewhat problematic, different names being used for

the same or similar machine. On occasion in Viktor's writings reference is made to an accompanying sketch. Regrettably in most cases this is missing, which has made accurate description of the device in question very difficult, the editor having to rely on other descriptions to aid in identification. In general, however, the discussion revolves around the function of four types of machine, namely the Air-turbine, the Repulsator, the Klimator and the Repulsine. As far as it has been possible reasonably to ascertain its proper attribution, all the data relating to each has been assembled under the relevant heading. Despite the confusion that may arise from the appearance of the same name in different chapters, it is to be hoped that in perusing the diagrams and studying the text, the reader will not only obtain a general understanding of the way these various machines function, but also many insights into what elements and shapes should be incorporated into future designs for machines based on implosion dynamics.

Repetitions: In the original German certain passages overlapped and therefore as far as possible avoidable repetition has been removed. However, some passages still remain which the reader may find repetitive. After much deliberation, the editor decided to leave them virtually untouched as there was no way to remove them without disadvantageously affecting the coherence and detailed comprehension of the theme under discussion.

1.

## Some Philosophical Aspects of Natural Energies

"Everything is governed by one law. A human being is a microcosmos, i.e. the laws prevailing in the cosmos also operate in the minutest space of the human being."

Viktor Schaubberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 8, p.6.

"You must look at the processes of motion in the macrocosmos and microcosmos accurately, and copy them!"

Viktor Schaubberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 14, p.19.

"If we wish to influence our own life in a particular direction, which is constantly threatened by the danger of the emergence of alien life-forms, and protect it from deterioration, then we must either allow Nature to rule or, if we wish to intervene, we must first acquaint ourselves with the simplest principles of life."

Viktor Schaubberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 86. p.11.

"All motion consists of two components. One component serves inwardness (internalisation) and the other outwardness (dispersion). Both preconditions for motion regulate the eternal flow of metamorphosis (panta Rhei)."

Viktor Schaubberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 57, p.5.

"Whoever should leave the Earth in an inward direction, enters Nirvana from which there is no return."

Viktor Schaubberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 90, p.8.

From Special Edition Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2,1993, section 7.4.

**W**hat most peoples have so far achieved is no culture, but merely a civilisation and a retreat from the true culture; a journey that was (is) absolutely necessary in order, through experience, to take the next step forwards. To move forwards means to come to grips with temporal

processes. Whatever we meet with, we must consume as it were. We must digest it in our inner being. The product of this process of organic transformation is mental clarity (non-spacial energies) or the pure intuitive perception of the true reality (and the love of our Father). What we formulate with our thoughts alone, consumes and destroys. For this reason today's purely constructive technology has a consumptive effect.

The machines of the future will not destroy their fuel, but direct the energies inwardly. In this way a harmonious motion manifests itself externally, which transmutes the used material organically, exalts it and refashions it one octave higher. The residual material thus becomes endowed with the necessary potency and provided with the possibility to resurrect itself in the succeeding earthly form of life.

Earth, water, air (and light) are organisms, and between them lie the organs of the most diverse nature in a constant state of readiness to act. If we bring these organs together harmoniously; if we place every inner potential opposite its outer harmonic form, then the thing begins to gyrate within and about itself and to evolve, because in rhythmical sequence every impulse is countered by an expulse, through which the harmonic motion gives way to the inflowing and diffusing counter-movement.

The counter-reactive transverse electrical potentials have to be stationed opposite the strongest longitudinal magnetic potentials. Out of this normal state of opposition the harmonic transitional point is created in the golden middle. This golden middle is the organic angle. It is the only true pathway upon which there is no upwards, no downwards, no sideways and no inwards, but only a movement in and about itself, which corresponds to the infinite will of God, the unity in the universality.

Few will understand the meaning of the above! Some individuals, however, will obtain an indefinable inkling. This apprehension is none other than a dreamlike awakening and the incipient apotheosis of the hitherto animal mass. There is no birth without pain. Every death is followed by a birth. What we are experiencing today is a turning-point of time.

Good luck to all those who understand it! Let them find one another as long as there is still time, for we are fast approaching a stupendous event.

Viktor Schauberger, Vienna, May 1936

It has been proven psychologically that human beings can only appreciate or apprise, i.e. comprehend and understand, something new, if they can succeed in raising up the subconscious immured in their brain cells into their higher consciousness. If this cannot be achieved, then all preaching is useless. And even the eye has first to learn how to see everything new; it too must therefore be awoken from its latency before it can grasp the seen. Above all, there must be a readiness to consider even supposed wonders as the forerunners of

forthcoming realities, for only thus can the foundation be laid upon which rational mind can calculate and analyse.

Viktor Schauberger in a letter to Hermann Jaeger, 31st October 1957, Implosion Magazine, No. 103, p. 20.

From Special Edition Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2,1993, section 3.1

It has become clear to some that the origins of all manifestations of life and motion lie in chemo-physical and electromagnetic causes, which on their part are triggered by plus and minus temperatures.

Will and counterwill are functions of the temperatures that arise for one reason or another. Work is a function of the temperatures that lie above or below the turning point or point of intersection - the anomaly point - in which all life arises (zero-point). It is of similar nature to what we experience as the 'present', which is a function of an on-going extremely high velocity flow. This flow is an eternal motion-of-creation, which in turn gives rise to a constant creation-of-motion.<sup>1</sup> Thus we arrive at the fallacy and the explanation

of the life that lies between birth and burial, which is the illusion that clothes evolution with reality. Temperature is thus the difference between differences, out of which the ceaseless movement of evolution arises, which is itself the product of tensions resulting from the contrasting directions of movement.

The movement of the planets is mirrored in the movement of earthly bodies and thus the possibility also exists to order the course of such planetary systems by means of a particular physical motion. Conversely, it is also possible to exploit planetary motion to produce physical motion, which will enable us to harness a constantly waxing motive force for our own use. Opposites have their appointed directions of movement and find their expression in the mutual interaction of living and moving matter.

If we can now succeed in dosing like-directional dynagens<sup>2</sup> and in bringing the groups of substances thus organised into mutually opposing motion, then

<sup>1</sup>Motion-of-creation and creation-of-motion: These terms relate to the German expressions 'Gestaltungsbewegung' and 'Bewegungsgestaltung', which encompass 'Bewegung' meaning 'motion' and the German concept of 'Gestalt' or 'Gestaltung', an expression that in English cannot be translated with a single word. The Collins English Dictionary defines 'Gestalt' as "a pattern or structure possessing qualities as a whole that cannot be described merely as a sum of its parts." As such it can also apply to physical, energetic and spiritual forms, matrices and structures. 'Motion-of-creation' and 'creation-of-motion' could therefore also be respectively interpreted as 'form (or structure) -creating motion' and 'motion-creating form (or structure)'. — Ed.

<sup>2</sup>Dynagen: This is one of three forms of Ethericity, a term that refers to those supra-normal, near non-dimensional, energetic, bio-electric, bio-magnetic, catalytic, high-frequency, vibratory, super-potent entities of quasi-material, quasi-etheric nature belonging to the 4th and 5th dimensions of being. As such these ethericities can be further categorised as fructigens', 'qualigens' and 'dynagens', which respectively represent those subtle energies, whose function is the enhancement of fructification (fructigens), the generation of quality (qualigens) and the amplification of immaterial energy (dynagens). According to their function or location these may be male or female in nature. — Ed.



a maximal motion results, whose harmonic counterpart is the creation of the minimal form of motion, because the latter represents the totality in a single point. This is the turning or anomaly point out of which is born the creation-of-motion from which in turn the self-enclotting motion-of-creation arises.

This physical formation is the product of organic formative processes and it is obvious that in order to construct such physical forms, we must make use of certain basic shapes. This basic shape we find in the ellipse, which once set in motion, produces the mirror-image, opposite form. As the natural counterpart, the latter also creates the opposite temperament or reciprocal temperatures, which on their part give rise to the potentials and the form of motion associated with them.

Since we are here concerned with pure morphological patterns, there can be no state of equilibrium and therefore that state cannot exist, which we understand as 'rest'. In reality this apparent rest is the very highest state of motion and at the same time the point of material transformation, of the ur-generation<sup>3</sup> of the most purely spiritual dimension, which is transformed at the speed of lightning into movement and formation, through which the thing is forcibly turned inside out and is thus energised from within. On the other hand, this two-fold motion is also the origin of life, which on its part continually transforms itself both without and within.

If we should now succeed in maintaining any given substance - water, for instance - in constant state of change and transformation, then we are presented with the eternal, formative movement. This generates the creation-of-motion, which we can transform by indirect means into that which in today's terminology is described as 'energy'. With this we are well on the way to a technology that will usher in and order the coming bio-ecological age.

The basic principle of this natural technology is the frictionless motion that naturally and necessarily results from the creation-of-motion innate in evolution, which as it evolves to a higher state of organisation, automatically

<sup>3</sup> In Viktor Schauberg's writings in German, the prefix 'Ur' is often separated from the rest of the word by a hyphen, e.g. 'Ur-sache' in lieu of 'Ursache', when normally it would be joined. By this he intends to place a particular emphasis on the prefix, thus endowing it with a more profound meaning than the merely superficial. This prefix belongs not only to the German language, but in former times also to the English, a usage which has now lapsed. According to the Oxford English Dictionary, 'ur' denotes 'primitive', 'original', 'earliest', giving such examples as 'ur-Shakespeare' or 'ur-origin'. This begins to get to the root of Viktor's use of it and the deeper significance he placed upon it. If one expands upon the interpretation given in the Oxford English Dictionary, then the concepts of 'primordial', 'primeval', 'primal', 'fundamental', 'elementary', 'of first principle', come to mind, which further encompass such meanings as: — pertaining to the first age of the world, or of anything ancient; — pertaining to or existing from the earliest beginnings;- constituting the earliest beginning or starting point;- from which something else is derived, developed or depends;- applying to parts or structures in their earliest or rudimentary stage; — the first or earliest formed in the course of growth. To this can be added the concept of an 'ur-condition' or 'ur-state' of extremely high potential or potency, a latent evolutionary ripeness, which given the correct impulse can unloose all of Nature's innate creative forces. In the English text, therefore, the prefix 'ur' will also be used wherever it occurs in the original German and the reader is asked to bear the above in mind when reading what follows. — Ed.

vacates the place it occupied and in this way gives rise to the counter-motion of the surplanting body.

## Conclusions

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 10.0 (Notes from April 1941) "We must look into unknown dimensions, into Nature, into that incalculable and imponderable life, whose carrier and mediator, the blood of the Earth that accompanies us steadfastly from the cradle to the grave, is water."

Viktor Schauberger, 1932, Implosion Magazine, No. 103, p. 28

"Whoever accelerates the media of earth, water and air centrifugally perishes unconditionally, for in so doing they reduce the Blood of the Earth (water) to a pathogenic state and make it the most dangerous enemy of all living and growing things."

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 96, p. 4.

In Nature there are only structures and orifices. From these arise all forms of materialisation and dematerialisation, if orifices and vessels are organised in an inversely symmetrical configuration and within them the reciprocal gaseous substances are correctly dosed. Pressure and suction, and most important of all, the temperature-gradient should be aligned in the right sense (+ not -), through which the desired energy is freed at the point of intersection.

This can be accumulated if the thing is cooled during its motion, becoming homogeneously structured in the process. In this manner it is even possible to decompose ordinary air into animalistic electrical essences, or to produce an artificial thunderstorm, whose transformative essences discharge into metal conductors, calling into being a physical vacuum with which a thunderstorm can be produced in the tube, whose power exceeds that of a cyclone. While it is still necessary to use small quantities of earthly substances in the artificial production of petrol (gasoline), no fuels of any kind are needed to operate the air-turbine<sup>4</sup>. This will avert the crisis that will inevitably ensue if nature-alienated humanity continues to combust substances in its machines, which are preordained by Nature for the provision of food. The seemingly remarkable behaviour of liquids under the influence of light is the totally natural permanent condition of the eternal 'Arising' and 'Passing Away', of the evolution from small to large and vice versa, whose vital harmony Goethe has already explained to us so beautifully that all we need to do is read his works so as to create the perpetual interaction required by all molecules in order to exist in a state of well-behaved order.

Space and volume are inversely disposed opposites, which consume or animate one another depending on whether one is made to burn by the other or

<sup>4</sup> See description of air turbine in Austrian Patent No. 145141, p. 115 of this book. —Ed.

is itself ennobled intrinsically through this reciprocal intensification and polarisation. Today's technology mistakenly chose the former of the two processes and it is therefore no wonder that cancer is on the rampage here, there and everywhere.

Goethe said, "The driving wheels of Nature are polarity and intensification and whoever understands enough to untie also knows enough to bind." What is born in light, disintegrates in the coolness of the ground. It rises up and returns again as a ray of energy in order to quicken that which stands ready to become new life at the boundary between space and volume.

Every leaf is an animalistic magnet in monoplanar form, which attracts and radiates, depending on whether the Sun shines on it or cold caresses it. This great law of reciprocity also operates in water, which constantly restructures itself by altering its space and volume. The space is shaped by light and heat. The volume is a product of darkness and coolness. If we understand how to apportion the opposing relation between space and volume and how to organise its intrinsic structure, then the substance - water - will become 'The Space' and the formless volume its realisation, which is transformed instantaneously with heat-pressure, thereby creating the motion that fills the over-lying inter-space.

If nature-alienated humanity, however, reverses this purposeful process and combusts precisely those substances that occasion life, then they should no longer be surprised when the Sun burns up that which serves it as an intermediate space, and which serves humankind for the maintenance of life.

Life unfolds itself in three spheres:

1. in the Carbone<sup>5</sup>-sphere
2. in the Atmosphere
3. in the Stratosphere

The connection between these spheres is created by water. Conversely, the various states of aggregation of water form the bridges for the formation and reconstitution of the basic elements carried by water, which succeed in reaching the Earth's interior from the stratosphere and vice versa. The purely mechanical circulation of the physical form - water - operates in the opposite direction to the circulation of energy. The rising of the C-substances with their carrier - water - is countered by the sinking of the oxygen. Where these

<sup>5</sup> Carbone: In contrast to the normal use and definition of 'carbon', Viktor Schauberger grouped all the known elements and their compounds, with the exception of oxygen and hydrogen, under the general classification of 'Mother Substances', which he described with the word 'Kohle-stoffe', normally spelt 'Kohlenstoffe' and meaning carbon. Apart from the above definition the hyphen also signifies a higher aspect of carbon, both physically and energetically or immaterially. The additional V in the English word is therefore intended to redefine and enlarge the scope of the usual term 'carbon' in accordance with Viktor's concepts. On occasion carbone will be represented by the term C' differentiate it from the normal term for carbon — C- Ed.

mutually contra-directional currents intersect, energy is freed. These energetic interactions can never reach a state of rest due to the constant variation in the length of night and day. Inevitably therefore, there is a continual shift in the individual microclimatic conditions, which further result in variations in the quantity and quality of the basic elements.

The outcome of this incessant reciprocal activity on the one hand is the reconstitution of the various kinds of water present in the individual zones, and on the other, the constant transformation of the species of vegetation in which water makes its way, ceaselessly moved by this inner interplay of forces. This inner, energetic interaction, however, is opposed by the effect of the water's weight. The alternating magnitudes of these component forces inevitably lead to the constant rising and falling of the water particles - the so-called pulsation of water. Every new formation and all growth is derived from the smallest beginnings. Continuing development in the early stages can only be accomplished if the circulation in the Earth's interior proceeds correctly. According to inner law, every higher form of vegetation is built up from the lower species preceding it. The carrier of the substances and the transmitter of the life-processes in the root-zone is the groundwater. The impulse for its movement is caused by a drop in temperature, to which the inner metabolic processes of the here decisive groups of basic elements give rise. The impulse for the movement of water is thus a product of the interactions between the opposites contained within it, which find their necessary resistance in the water itself. Through the resistance arising from the interactions between carbon and oxygen, fluctuations in temperature again occur and with them the impulse to move - the pulsation of water, which in this way at times dissolves salts and at others deposits them, transports them, creates energies and transforms them. The sense and purpose of these perpetual transformation processes is the creation and maintenance of the various types of vegetation and physical forms, which on their part again represent the bridges for the build-up and maintenance of the energies.

The potential differences in constant existence between inner and outer temperatures are none other than forms of energy, which complete the cycle of water and at the same time kindle it anew. Evolutionary manifestations are therefore,

1. of material, and
2. of immaterial nature.

Stone, plant, animal, human being, planet and Sun are organisms possessed of body and soul. Every ray of light or heat requires a physical form in which it can evolve, or organise itself. Every body requires an inner energy that builds it up or transforms it. When a body disintegrates then those energies

that created it will again be freed. They are never lost. If they lose their place of abode with the decaying of the body, then they are willingly taken up by the water that eternally circulates in, on and above the Earth and which conducts them once more to a new life. Therefore wherever we look there is life, constant formation and transformation. Should we look into apparent emptiness, then a sea of spiritual life, passed and future generations, returns our gaze. Every material form of vegetation is always the reflection of an immaterial form consisting of light, heat and radiation.

Every change in sphere changes the outer and inner relations of the whole, changes the weight and the intensity of the inner radiation of water and thus the direction in which this carrier of life moves. Disturbances to the inner and outer conformities with natural law lead to a disturbance in the organisation of the whole evolution of life. The disappearance of water or its substantial transformation is a very serious warning sign, because the character of the water also changes with its inner composition, and with this the character of all forms of life, including human-beings. The qualitative decline of the vegetation and above all the deterioration of the highest plant-organism - the forest, the psychic and moral degeneration of humankind, are only the legitimate consequence of the disturbance of the physical composition of water and the disruption of the geosphere occasioned by humanity's subversive activity in the organism of the Earth.

What we are experiencing today is no crisis, but rather the demise of the whole, i.e. the qualitative, physical degeneration of all organisms, brought into effect through the disturbance of Nature's water-balance. In step with this devolution goes the moral, mental and spiritual collapse of humanity, which has already reached such an advanced state, that despite all warning signs people still do not recognise the seriousness of the situation. Worse than animals, they seek their final salvation in the decimation of humanity with weapons of war, that our priests even bless along with the banners under which our children are supposed to bleed to death.

The decision, whether we take the latter path or whether at the final hour we can protect ourselves from our own self-mutilation, only lies with us, or with those men of science and the state, who take upon themselves an altogether appalling responsibility, when out of personal interest, with no consideration of the gravity of the situation and being incapable of bringing any effective help, they continue to adhere to their present point of view.

## The Biological Vacuum - The Optimal Driving Force for Machines

An amalgam of articles from Implosion Magazine, Nos. 29 (pp 27-31), 53 (pp. 24-29) & 109 (pp 9-17), written 8th July 1954.

"The scientist states that pressure is exerted outwards in all directions equally, whereas natural pressure (e.g. air pressure) is exerted inwards from all directions equally."

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 114, p.29.

A few years ago my so-called pioneering patents were applied for in 26 countries. In almost every country the patent assessors declared that I was mad and some of them even refused to evaluate the patent applications. Of these about half have been granted to date. The remainder are about to be granted, although their possible practical application has not been understood by a single patent assessor. The substantiation of these patent claims, however, could not be refuted in the preliminary assessment. During this period the German patent attorney, who had been preparing my foreign patent applications, told me that all at once there had been second thoughts and that my patents had been granted one after the other. The truth of my observation had thus been recognised as correct. Their granting was therefore compulsory. This change of opinion had been provoked by very strenuous counter-arguments during the preliminary hearings as well as through the publication of various articles in so-called 'serious' scientific journals. As a case in point for example, the magazine 'Das Universum' reported that the smaller Swiss lakes were already as good as ruined, where contemporary turbine systems had been installed in the upper and lower reaches of their affluent streams. Indeed in many large Swiss lakes and in many German and other lakes, the mysterious deterioration of both lake and river water had been elected. In its issue of the 9th of June 1954, the Hamburg periodical 'Der Spiegel' reported that at present at least 10,000 million marks would have to be outlaid in Germany in order to rectify the most blatant depredations in the mismanagement of water resources. The German rivers are polluted to such an extent that even the best filtration plants are virtually useless. An extended period of drought will have catastrophic effects on drinking-water supplies and water for general use. Signs prohibiting bathing and other warnings bear witness to the fact that the spread of infantile paralysis has been traced to a virus that evolves in polluted waters, which are becoming diseased for unknown reasons. The strongest chlorination or other methods of poisoning have not been of much use. All attempts to eradicate the potato beetle and other agricultural pests with poisons have likewise come to nothing. The opposite has occurred, for increasingly pernicious parasites are appearing

against which even penicillin is powerless. The sicker the organism, the more agile its destroyers become.

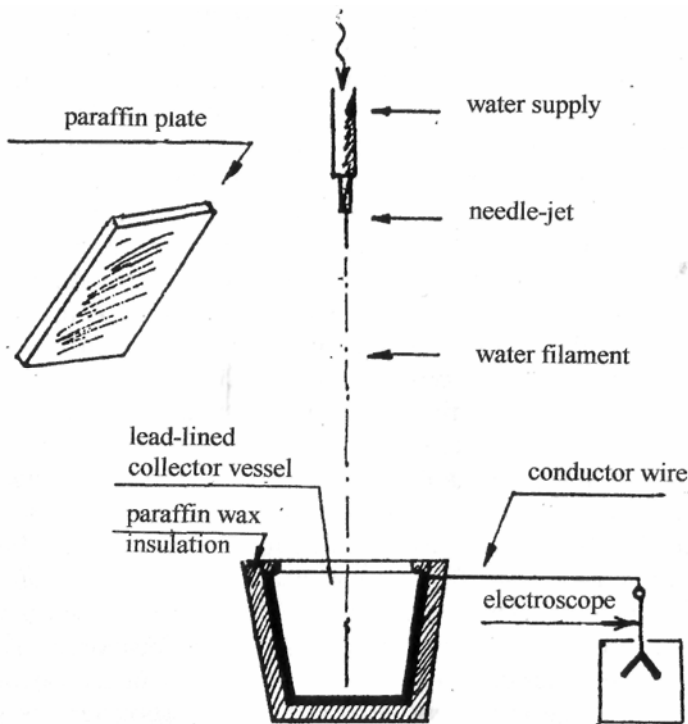
In the aforementioned patent applications it was stated in no uncertain terms, where the causes of these regressive symptoms, including cancer, were to be sought, which imperil all growth and highly evolved forms of life. In these applications I made the observation that it was the method of moving water techno-academically which in every respect is destructive and which is solely responsible for the economic decline, the rise in social privation and the constant increase in political unrest. Techno-academic motion is so called, because it is taught in all academies and universities in the form of the centrifugence of medial structures (earth, water and air) and in every dictionary it is described as an 'unnatural' (unreal) form of acceleration. In spite of this it is used today in all areas of industry in its exceptionally centrifugating form, because no other method of acceleration is known. It will therefore continue to be used everywhere until a more rational source of power is discovered.

Observations over many years of the almost motionless stationary trout in rushing mountain streams led to the discovery of the best and cheapest source of mechanical power. It is a form of energy that promotes healthy growth and will free humanity from the technology that presently enslaves it. Founded on a biological vacuum, it will provide the basis for a quantitative and qualitative increase in productivity, thereby solving the pressing problem of more and more people and less and less food. The political turmoil now apparent everywhere can easily lead to the third and last World War, which if atom bombs are used, will mean the end of civilisation. This should certainly be reason enough to consider the following seriously even though it may appear utopian at first sight, an aspect that should offer no further impediment once the academic expertise derived from the misinterpretation of fundamentals collapses like a house of cards. Nor should it be rejected because many occupations that are more or less parasitic will be eliminated in the process. We are here concerned with the existence or non-existence of millions of people in all countries of the world.

For more than a century it has been known that water emits ionising radiation, if it is discharged through a system of straight jets under pressure (see figs. 1-3<sup>6</sup>). Hitherto unknown, however, was the following: If these rays are braked by a filter composed of fatty substances (paraffin wax) and conducted in bundled form into a vacuum-tube, then they incandesce on the inner surfaces, producing a dark red, strongly pulsating glow when the tube is earthed. This effect is similar to sheet-lightning. If these rays are amplified in Leyden jars and then conducted into inflammable liquids or gases, they ignite the latter. This is how the fire started in the Hindenburg, which was filled with hydrogen and became earthed when its ballast-water was released. The

<sup>6</sup> This also relates to the effects of Lord Kelvin's influence machine — ca, 1880. - Ed.

American airship, the Akron, which was filled with helium, collapsed (imploded) and crashed on a cool and misty morning, because for hitherto unknown reasons the helium-filling reverted to water. In the first case fire was created and in the second case - water. With fire an approximately 1,800-fold increase in volume occurs, whereas the reverse metamorphosis of helium into water is associated with an 1,800-fold reduction in volume. This reduced volume is the 'biological vacuum', which is the result of chain-reactions and is an ideal source of motive power. In biotechnical machines a vacuum is initially created through the volume-reducing function of the whorl-pipes through which, in a process of repulsion, energy can be drawn off.



### Schematic Arrangement of Walter Schaubberger's Single Water-Jet Experiment - 1951

Demonstrated in Vienna, London, Cambridge, Oxford and Birmingham, the electroscope reacted when the accumulated charge was reflected back towards the water-filament by the paraffin-wax plate. This reaction occurred even when the paraffin-wax plate was held up at a distance of 20 metres from the water filament.

Fig. 1



Through Patent No. 1.057.676<sup>7</sup> granted by the French Patent Office, who accepted it in an almost unabridged form, the OEEC was made aware of my views, which in this way came to the attention one of the foremost water and air research institutes. Via a Viennese intermediary, my advice was sought as to whether this could explain the apparently unstoppable increase in the infection and decay of water, sap and blood, which is also responsible for every kind of water catastrophe. The actual impetus for these enquiries arose as a result of Professor Otto Warburg's study of cancerous tumours under the microscope. He determined that they were nourished principally by oxygen<sup>8</sup>. Plants too are supposed to obtain up to 80% of their nutrients from the positively overcharged atmosphere.

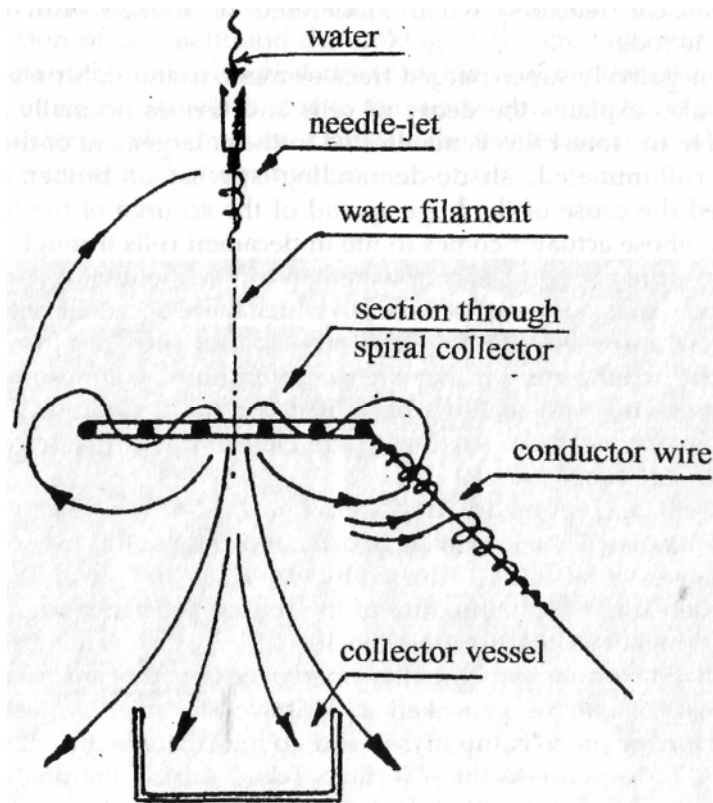
I reject this assertion, because oxygen is no nutrient, but the substance that fertilises the oppositely-charged (geospheric) fructigenic ethericities. These enter the plants via the protoplasm at the tips of the roots (see fig. 15). In more highly organised life-forms they enter the hermetically sealed blood- or sap-streams by way of the intestinal filtration systems; in other words, by way of diffusion. They then proceed through the diffusive orifices of the leaves, needles, gills and lungs and make possible the intermixtures upon whose character and capacity of accommodation the formation of pathogenic or animating entities depends, which at this time are in an atomic state.

Animating energies come into being when etherealised (helium-like) ethericities of carbone and the condensed waste of solar energy in gaseous form, so-called oxygen, become bound together and emulsify. This happens when the intermixture of diffuse substances takes place where a process of reduction occurs in lieu of oxidation.

Whether animating or de-animating life-forces come into being is dependent on the way these substances intermix. The life-giving impulse can only be stimulated, if etherealised carbone (helium-like) ethericities bind the waste products of solar energy that materialise in the form of gas, i.e. so-called oxygen. On the other hand, decomposive, life-removing forces will be stimulated if the process of interaction proceeds in the reverse order. That is to say, if the oxygen ethericities bind the maternal ethericities of carbone. When heated, oxygen becomes aggressive, whereas with cold it becomes passive.

<sup>7</sup> This patent is not to be confused with French patent No. 1.057.576, which relates to the double-spiral pipe described under 'Processes and Equipment for the Conveyance of Liquid, Gaseous or Aeriform Media', p. 107 of this book. It may thus apply to another patent, perhaps for a Repulsator or Repulsine. On the other hand, since both numbers are virtually the same except for one digit, it may also be a typographical error. — Ed.

<sup>8</sup> See Gastons Naessens' research into the effect of nitrogen on cancer. *The Persecution and Trial of Gastons Naessens* by Christopher Bird. — Ed.



### Schematic Arrangement of a Single Needle-Jet with Spiral Charge Collector

Swedish Biotechnical Research Institute

Fig. 2: Spiral water jet experiment

Therefore, if water, sap or blood are over-illuminated, overwarmed or water is accelerated above its boundary velocity by pressure- and heat-intensifying techno-academic devices, such as steel ploughs, pressure turbines and pumps, pressure screws (propellers), Pelton wheels, etc., then the decomposive energies mentioned earlier come to life. These positively overcharged, invasive emanations are x-ray-like in nature and pierce every form of resistance. They penetrate right through to the negatively charged cell-nucleus and in the surrounding growth and life-forms cause the cell-nuclei to split. There

nuclear fission really begins in earnest. Such radiation generates immense heat (viz. nuclear reactors) when moderated or braked with pure carbone (graphite rods).

As a negatively supercharged trace-element, uranium is present in all cells, which also explains the decay of cells and tissues normally referred to as cancer. In the forest this is manifested in the enlargement of the annual rings in over-illuminated, shade-demanding species of timber. Thus is also revealed the cause of the huge spread of the scourge of the technical age - cancer, whose actuator comes to life in decadent cells through over-acidified food, in drinking and cooking water, and in air polluted by exhaust fumes. Here too we encounter tree-cancer, to which these decadent cells give rise and which is transferred to the tree by over-acidified nutrients. Iron molecules are particularly dangerous, if they are swept up into the atmosphere along with the fumes from iron-smelting blast-furnaces, for as catalysts they contribute to the interaction between low-grade elements and inaugurate conditions conducive to lung-cancer.

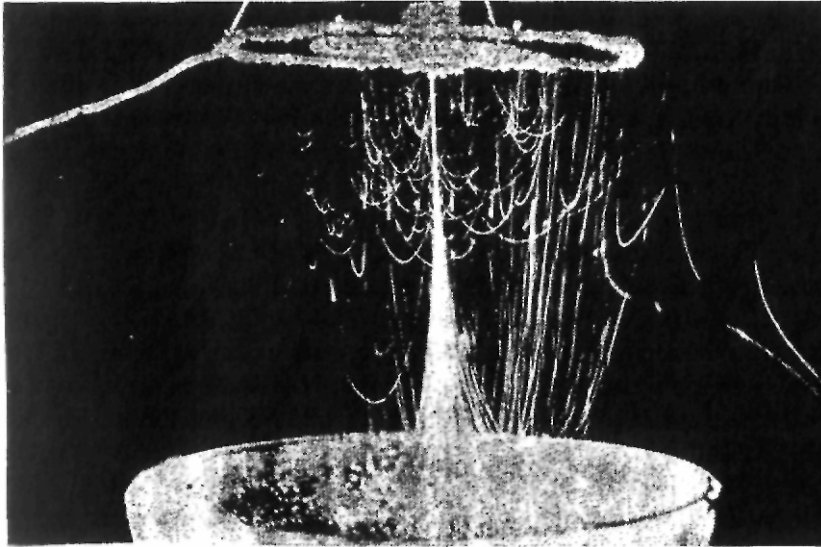
We are here concerned with bacteriophagous<sup>9</sup> threshold substances, which are first animated at a later stage of development. For this reason the view that this relates to viral entities released by water, sap and blood, is an error of the first order. It is the intermixture of the diffuse substances mentioned earlier that first makes fertilisation possible. It is the way in which impregnation takes place that determines whether the emergence of pathogens results or not.

These explanations provoked a veritable storm of protest in academic circles, forcing me to equip myself and go into action with somewhat heavier artillery. In response to the objections raised during the preliminary patent assessment, I then submitted the following supplementary explanation:

1. As inseparable trinities, the media of earth, water and air are the natural accumulators of biomagnetic and bioelectric dynagen concentrates. These are extremely sensitive to pressure and heat and may only be accelerated artificially in the original (primordial) way, i.e. planetarily, wherein cooling effects must predominate. Any abnormal increase in heat, no matter from what cause, triggers unnatural interactions between basic elements at the expense of the negatively surcharged, biomagnetic dynagen concentrates.
2. All over-illumination and overheating immediately provokes the release of decomposive energies; whether heating is the result of sunlight or

<sup>9</sup> Bacteriophagous: According to Collins English Dictionary a bacteriophage is 'a virus that is parasitic in a bacterium and multiplies within its host, which is destroyed when the new viruses are released.' Here the meaning of bacteriophagous has little to do with bacteria as such, but tries to express the notion of highly subtle, autonomous entities within entities endowed with the potential to imparl life- or death-decisive influences. Viktor Schauberger also explains them as threshold conformations or structures which are neither corpuscular, nor metaphysical in nature. — Ed.

processes of combustion is immaterial. In warmed up rivers and streams this is associated with losses in the carrying capacity and tractive force<sup>10</sup> (the deposition of sediment and the sinking of the groundwater table). The products of this emulsion give rise to all kinds of inflammation in all organisms, as a result of which, due to the lack of qualigen, the regressive course of cancer then becomes inevitable. In the tissues minute explosions occur, which result in their destruction.



### Motion of Charged Water Particles around the Spiral Charge Collector

Photo from the Swedish Biotechnical Research Institute

Fig. 3

<sup>10</sup> Tractive force: This refers to the force described hydraulically as 'Shear force' — the force that acts to 'shear off' or to dredge and dislodge sediment. In German the term for shear force is 'Schubkraft', meaning 'to push, to shove' as well as 'to shear', whereas Viktor Schauberger uses the word 'Schleppkraft'. The verb 'schleppen' means to drag, draw or pull. Viktor Schauberger's choice of 'Schleppkraft' here is quite specific, since in his view the movement of sediment is due to the sucking action of fast flowing, dense cold water downstream, rather than to the mechanical impact of the water coming from upstream. In view of this subtle change in emphasis, in lieu of the hydraulically correct term 'shear force', the term 'tractive force' will be used. This dynamic is similar to the effect of wind on roofs, where a roof is blown off not by force from the windward side, but rather by the sucking effect of vortices created on the leeward side. -Ed.

Goethe called Nature's principal, formative essence the 'Eternally Female' and 'All-uplifting'. I have named it 'Qualigen'<sup>11</sup>. This can only come into being, if all medial masses (water, earth, air, etc.) are accelerated 'originally' - planetarily and predominantly centripetally by means of patented devices designed to create this form of motion. The design and the alloys used in the construction of these devices, which are continually being improved, are the exact opposites of those used in all areas of industry for the techno-academic acceleration of mass.

My allegations in this regard were construed as an affront to the honour and prestige of the Establishment and I was requested to provide written proof of these provocative assertions to the university professors I mentioned by name. This I also did and without exception they all had to capitulate. I could prove to them that as a result of techno-academic systems of motion - a predominantly centrifugal form of mass-movement - an atomic (electrolytic) excess pressure builds up in the structure of the basic elements, thereby producing an increase in temperature; in other words, a feverish condition. In contrast, an atomic (magnetic) low or negative pressure is generated through a form of planetary mass-motion in which centripetence predominates. This gives rise to a concentrative, negative pressure, which functions as a biological vacuum. It was discovered as early as 1908 by Professor Ernst Ferdinand Sauerbruch, who recognised that neither breathing nor expansion of the lungs would be possible if the biological vacuum were not to exist. He was declared a fool all the same and dismissed without notice when he told his superior, Professor Mikolitsch, the following:

"Were there no vacuum between the surface of the lungs and the pleura, no intake of breath, nor resistanceless expansion of the lungs would be possible. Everything would suffocate were this biological vacuity to be filled with normal, atmospheric pressure through any form of perforation."

Professor Sauerbruch was unaware that this vacuum comes into being through the planetary movement of the blood. Had he known, then medicine would have taken a completely different course.

I was further able to prove that because contemporary machines operate using centrifuge, resistances to motion with a reactive<sup>12</sup> function are

<sup>11</sup> Here the German word is 'Qualitatstoff', which literally means 'quality-matter, or substance'. With this Viktor Schaubergger intended to describe a higher, 4th or 5th dimensional magnitude of pure quality as a thing in itself and as the driving force in the raising of quality of whatever kind as a 'quality-producer' or 'quality-generating substance' or energy. The English expression term 'qualigen' used here, is a contraction of the two words 'quality' and 'generator'. — Ed.

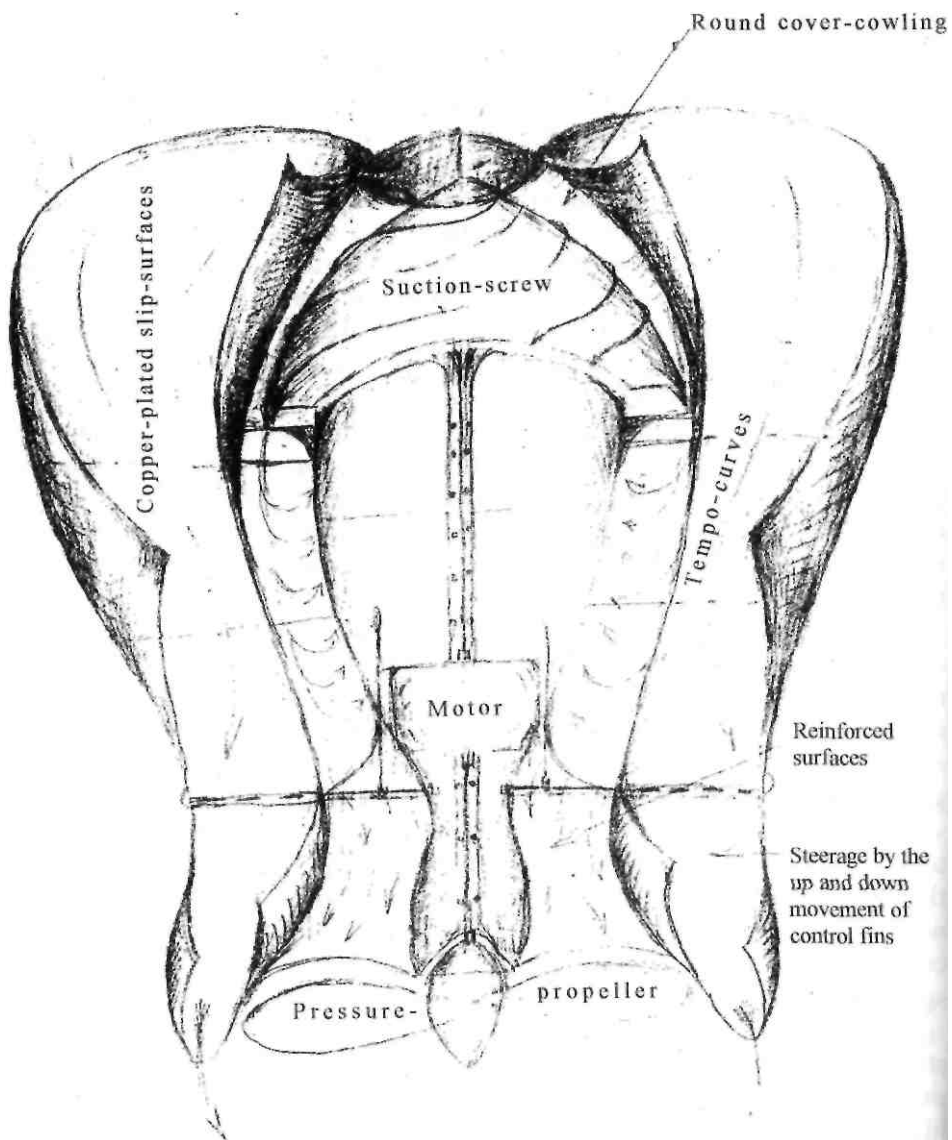
<sup>12</sup> Active and reactive energies, temperatures, etc.: 'Active' essentially relates to the more physical dimension, to what is outwardly physical and perceptible, physically palpable, gravitationally affected or oriented, and life-negating, i.e. to energies that tend to curb, limit and brake life, evolution and development. 'Reactive' on the other hand relates to more metaphysical dimensions, to what is inwardly physically intangible, levitationally affected or oriented, and life-affirming, i.e. to energies that tend to foster, re-animate and accelerate life, evolution and higher development. - Ed.

generated, which increase by the square of the rotational velocity. In a certain sense this can be interpreted as the application of a brake by a violated Nature. With the use of my patented suction-screws (see figs. 4 & 5) on the other hand, performance and efficiency are increased in the same ratio through molecular processes wherein quality is built up, with the result that over-unity energies can be generated.

The product of this involuting motion, which always converges to a point while at the same time curling in upon itself, is biomagnetism. That it is also contingent on the presence of catalytic influences will not be further discussed here. As such, biomagnetism extends itself longitudinally and radiates its surplus energies vertically and, for example, draws the trout along in its wake. The trout can so regulate this upsuctional force with its gills that even its motionless stance and equally well-known mastery of gravity becomes understandable in the light of the above. The weight of physical masses only exists in the atmospheric living space. Above this the force of levitation prevails as inverted gravitation. Consequently, all pressure- and heat-intensifying motion must inevitably function all the more irrationally uneconomically and development-impedingly, the more it is accelerated and strengthened. To this end raw materials are squandered to such a degree that a growing dearth of them is unavoidable.

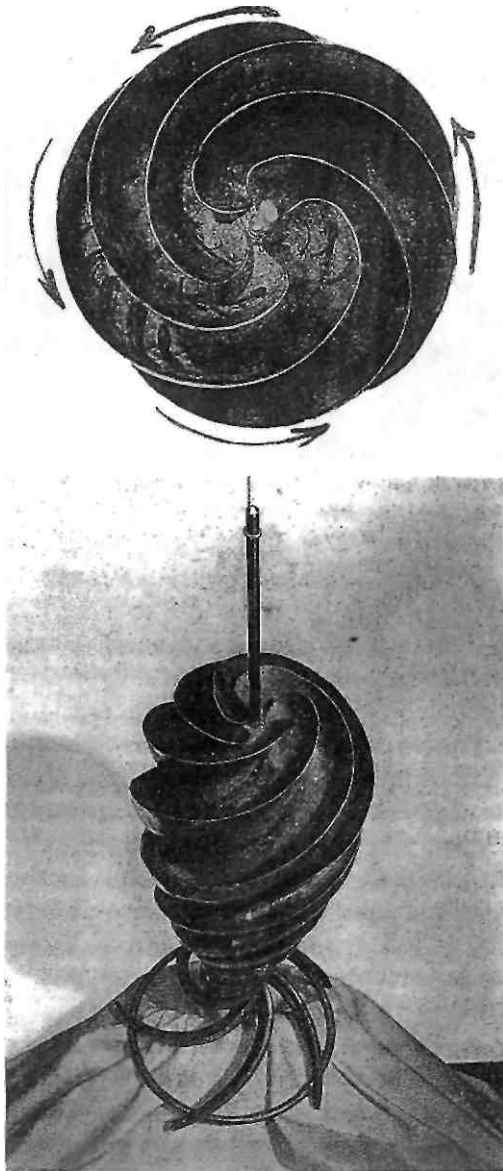
An exact chemical analysis revealed that over-acidified products of emulsion are created by present systems of mass-motion. In contrast, a 100% biomagnetically surcharged concentrate of qualigen is produced by planetary forms of motion. When infused into drinking water, it greedily binds excessive agglomerations of oxygen and purges the body. Cancerous tumours and growths become neutralised in the process and it is therefore the natural preventive of cancer and indeed the means of healing it. Science was never able to discover these things as all it knew was the opposite form of mass-motion that has caused all the havoc in the world. Growth is none other than biomagnetism has been solidified by the diffuse effects of light and heat. As a logical consequence, therefore, over-illuminated and / or overheated mountain springwaters must sink and their sources dry up.

An investigation carried out with a microscope has confirmed that crystalline structures form under technical forms of motion; that planetary motion produces morphous structures (see fig. 6). These are the typical indicator of high-grade interactions of diffuse substances, whose products of emulsion effortlessly overcome all physical weight and mental inertia. This heaviness will be increased, however, if any form of medial mass is made to move in the way that occurs today throughout the civilised world. In this case the ur-source of all life - water - will suffocate, its decomposition progressing all the more rapidly the more this hapless techno-academic system of motion increases in scope and intensity.



A Preliminary Sketch for the Suction- or Trout-Turbine

Fig. 4



### The Suction-Turbine Rotor

The rotor of a suction-screw which narrows towards the base. Despite its operation using geological water-pressure, the flow-through material is not degraded, because here too centripetence prevails and the falling temperature gradient produced by it.

Fig. 5



## Viktor Schauberger's Microscope Evidence

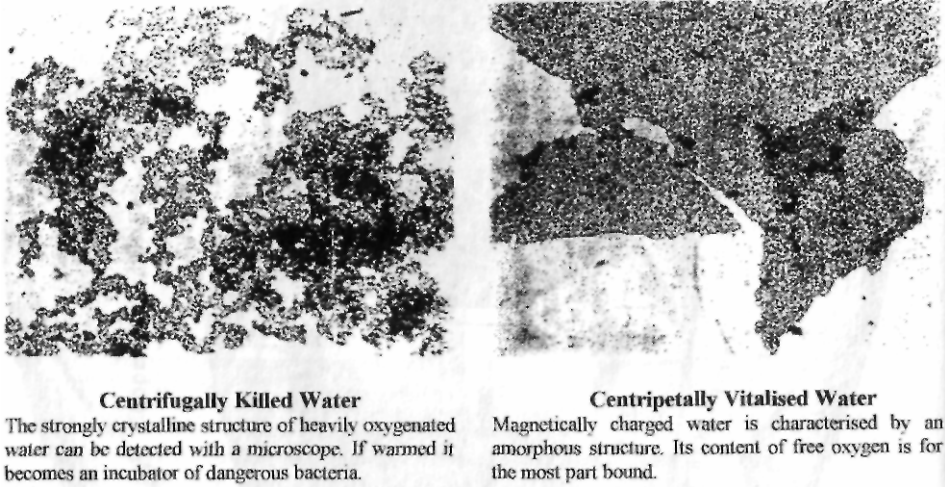


Fig. 6

Biomagnetism is quality. Its adversary is all forms of over-illumination, over-heating or centrifugally engineered increase in pressure. In this case bio-electricity is produced, which, in the form of an atomic force of excess pressure, possesses energies that function electrolytically and over-acidify decompose and kill all forms of life and growth. In the light of this, the deterioration of rivers and lakes becomes quite understandable. Since biomagnetism is quality, it follows that there is no constant conservation of energy in the presently accepted sense. There is likewise no equivalence between mass and energy and no insuperable force of gravity within the atmospheric envelope. All there is, is a rhythmical interplay between bipolar component forces, which ultimately inaugurates the final degeneration. In their interactive function as atomic pressural or suctional forces and through the biological vacuum thereby created, they also produce the best and cheapest driving force for machines.

As a result of all this the scales fell from the eyes of an ecclesiastical scholar, when I explained to him that the earthly remains of life (mineral and metallic trace-elements) were essential for the processes of reproduction, regeneration and upward evolution. Whereupon he responded, "My, but what a joke it would be, if we too had got hold of the wrong story! If the true rigmarole of the resurrection can only begin, when all the various cadavers are moved planetarily in the

womb of All-Mother Earth, a motion the techno-academic school-aristocrats have now turned inside out and into the opposite, then after we've gone every last remnant of culture must also disappear!"

"Indeed," I responded, "it would also be just as futile to sprinkle a dead body with a bucket of holy water. On the contrary, in a grave that is too warm, where the oxygen is aggressive, everything categorically goes to the Devil, and on Earth, due to the absence of qualigen, everything rots away alive."

Accordingly there are only two possibilities: Either this unfortunate form of mass-motion must be prohibited by law, or this thoroughly ruined and polluted work of creation must be blown sky high with the most efficient atomic bombs as soon as possible. - Amen.

## The Catalysts

Sherman, Texas, 28th August 1958, from Implosion Magazine, No. 123, pp 12-17.

When Robert Dormer's two representatives asked me to explain the essential nature of implosion, I told them that the correct choice of catalysts was one of the decisive preconditions for the success of a high-grade emulsion (the inner intermixture of bipolar basic elements). In this regard science defines a catalyst as a substance that alters the speed of a reaction by acceleration or deceleration. For the chemist catalysis signifies 'dissolution', whereas viewed bio-catalytically this is understood as the 'release' from inner urges and yearning. As this explanation is unscientific and therefore of little 'use', various examples will be examined in order to explain the concept of 'bio-catalysts', while not exactly scientifically, nevertheless naturalesquely.

It is known, for example, that for the liquefaction of brown coal (lignite) appropriate catalysts are required. Here there is no uniformity, because everything is bipolar and therefore it is necessary to make a clear distinction between positive and negative catalysts. The chemical reaction itself is of no interest biologically speaking, and the whole thing must be considered from a higher standpoint, otherwise it would be impossible, for example, to liquefy hard coal (anthracite), i.e. to transfer it to the next higher state of evolvment. This also applies to calcium (combusted marble) and other insoluble basic substances. That a falling temperature gradient is of decisive importance for biological processes of development, has already been emphasised elsewhere. Since science, which thinks too mechanistically, has also failed to grasp this, it would be unable to understand the naturalesque interpretation of the concept of 'reaction', which here is to be understood as a process of ur-genesis. Without this there would be no reproduction or further development, which is responsible for higher-grade emulsions, namely the inner fusion (marriage) of etherialised primary substances in the 4th spacial dimension. As long as the

precondition for development is not understood, the biological regeneration and qualitative improvement of contaminated and polluted drinking and domestic water will be impossible. This involves the retro-transformation of degenerate fresh water or undrinkable seawater into high-grade high-mountain springwater.

If such ennobled water is drunk, which accumulates normally insoluble trace-elements in a 'released' state and binds its oxygen content up to a maximum of 4%<sup>13</sup>, then the dissolution of normally insoluble sediment accretions takes place, enabling sclerosis, encrustation of the blood, sap and lymph vessels to be healed. The organisms thus treated regain their metabolic functions as well as their reproductive abilities. In this way senile men almost fully recover their virility. After extended consumption of regenerated drinking water, even people who wear glasses can use weaker ones, because the capillaries of the eye, which supply it with high quality nutrients, will be purged of deposits. Rheumatic disorders are cured within a short space of time, for through this general detoxification the joints move freely and painlessly again and are provided with a film of essential oils. Kidney and gall stones also dissolve after only a few weeks of drinking such healing water and are passed out in gravel-like form with the urine. All those suffering from cancer can get relief from their tearing pains almost immediately, because the almost oxygen-free water binds the excess oxygen in the blood<sup>14</sup>, thus eliminating dangerous hyperacidity. It is therefore not only possible to prevent cancer in this way, but even to cure this dreadful disease, if this all-healing water is drunk in good time. The healing of rheumy eyes with the aid of gold earrings also occurs in a similar way. Situated in the earlobes - the coolest location, they function biocatalytically and make any form of water secretion impossible. If one burns one's finger, then almost intuitively one grasps the earlobe, where the relatively strongest falling temperature gradient prevails, and an almost instantaneous relief from the burning sensation is felt. Catalysts in the form of the emanations from gold and silver not only function oligodynamically (they kill pathogenic bacteria), but also build up apathogenic bacteria, as happens in the vicinity of high springs. Having recognised this, a very open-minded doctor, the director of the old peoples' home at Lainz near Vienna, attempted to cure the sclerotic symptoms of seriously rheumatic W.W.II soldiers by administering the finest gold and silver dust. He only achieved a partial cure, however, because this can only be done with the infusion of precious metals in an organic state.

<sup>13</sup> This is slightly equivocal and can be interpreted in two ways: Either 4% of the 100% oxygen content is bound, or, up to 4% of the 100% oxygen content is bound, namely 96%. In view of what has been stated in "The Liquefaction of Coal by means of Cold Flows" on p. 95 of this book, it would appear that the latter interpretation is what is intended here. — Ed.

<sup>14</sup> The free oxygen radicals are bound. — Ed.

From experience the preparation of organic precious metals is only successful under the influence of a falling temperature gradient, because only thus can higher-grade emulsions take place; something that I have tried and tested myself. Dr Zuckerkandl, a forensic scientist who presently lives in Paris, analysed organic metals that I had ur-produced as long as 20 years ago. To his huge astonishment, he confirmed my assertion that metals of all kinds actually grow. This should be understood as the incarnation of ions, which for the first time correctly explains the generally accepted concept of 'growth'. This involves the solidification of stocks of bipolar dynagens under the influence of gentle and diffuse heat (viz. the highly metalliferous egg-shaped stones, for example, which emit a golden yellow glow even when rubbed together under water - the legendary Rhinegold and Gold of the Nibelungs. This has nothing to do with flints, which in any case do not spark under water.) Therefore it is also a mistake to believe that plants breathe in carbones and breathe out oxygen, which can be proven as follows: If the tips of enclosed stands of conifers are observed on very warm and windless days at about noon, then delicate transparent wraiths of mist can be seen, which waft upwards and disintegrate on exposure to excessive light and heat.<sup>15</sup> This is a sign that decentrating forms of emulsion are taking place. That is, the upwardly radiating carbones, which become passive (inactive) with strong light and heat, are being bound by the aggressive oxygen influence, which happens under a negative (rising) temperature gradient. In my own experience this also leads to the drying up of high-lying true springs, which can only rise under conditions where the oxygen is in a diffuse state. If these vapour formations appear above the tops of the trees, then it is certain to rain after about 4 hours. This prompted watchful foresters of old, who were close to Nature, to pack a raincloak in their rucksacks for the afternoon shift. If the opposite emulsive process takes place, i.e. if the downwardly radiating terrestrial energy, which becomes highly active under a positive (falling) temperature gradient, binds the excess oxygen, which becomes passive

<sup>15</sup> "Every mm<sup>3</sup> of water contains about 10,000 billion water molecules. Each contributes to the cooling effect of evaporation. Droplets rise in spiral paths towards the light (photophoresis)." Walter Schauberger, *Implosion Magazine*, No. 5, p. 29.

"In mixed forests all the species of trees have different root systems. There are flat-rooted, heart-rooted and deep-rooted trees. The root zone is thus widely diversified and reaches a depth of about 5 metres. Such a forest cannot be torn apart by storms."

Aloys Kokaly, *Implosion Magazine* No. 54/55, p. 39.

"In the growing season, 1 hectare of forest evaporates about 50,000 litres of water, or 50 m<sup>3</sup> per day. In the process a quantity of heat will be extracted through evaporative cooling, which is sufficient to cool 3 million litres of water by 10°C. The sap in the stomata under the surface of the leaves is over-cooled, thereby becoming heavier and sinks down to the root-area, which it then cools, creating a zone of coolness, whereas the warmer and lighter sap rises in the sap ducts. (From an infinite number of the tiny stomata in the leaves and needles, which represent the finest imaginable sieve, the spiralling light ray draws out the minute particle of water and screws it up into the sky)"

Aloys Kokaly, *Implosion Magazine*, No. 62, p. 10. — Ed.

(inactive) in a diffuse state, then it will be exceptionally clear and cool above the tree-tops. This happens, because diamagnetically charged levitational forces come into being in a similar way as occurs in natural mixed forests, whose temperature in winter and summer constantly remains close to the anomaly zone of the interspersed water (+4°C - 39.2°F). This healing zone is sought out by sick and wounded animals, which go there to regain their health or to die a painless death. These sick beds, or surgical beds as experienced huntsmen called them, are also to be found in the water immediately below high-grade springs to which wounded game comes and to which the naturalistic huntsman hurries by the shortest route, where he finds the wounded creature dying in the healing water and puts it out of its agony with a coup-de-grace.

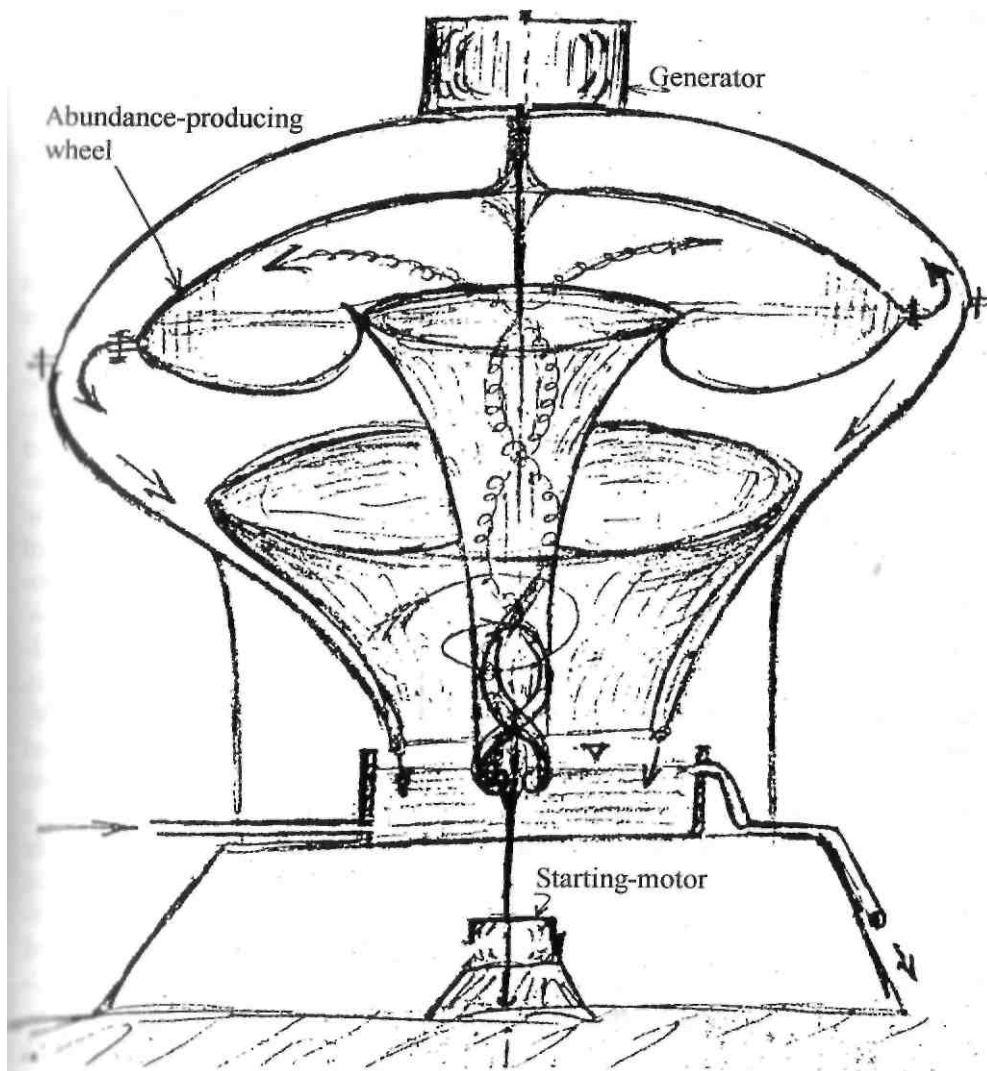
During early and late frosts experienced farmers protect their blossoming orchards by spraying water onto iron or steel plates through a system of paramagnetic<sup>16</sup> nozzles, which results in an immediate rise in temperature of about 6°C (10.8°F) in the crown zone. This water cannot mix with the differently charged surrounding air and remains unchanged even under the severest frost. This works incomparably better than artificial smoke generators (smudge pots), which are also known to protect the delicate blooms against freezing. If the above process is carried out with copper nozzles, then a conspicuous cooling occurs in the crown zone, which can be used to safeguard sensitive young shoots and protect them from scorching. This is especially necessary in the case of young light- and heat-sensitive seed-stock, which are often shielded from sunburn with leafy cuttings.

The simplest effect of catalytic opposites, i.e. fine-structured opposites with inner interuniting properties, or more properly having a 'marrying' tendency (ur-procreation), can best be observed in the generation of electric current, which is normally only successfully achieved with so-called dynamos incorporating rotors made of paramagnetic metal.

Conversely, if diamagnetic catalysts are used in dynamos constructed in exactly the opposite way (so-called Repulsators - see fig. 7 & figs. 24 ->26), then an upward flowing diamagnetism is produced, which viewed biologically is to be understood as 'levitation' (resurrective or upsuctional force), during which the follow-up pressure mentioned elsewhere plays a subordinate role. If the developmental process is initiated in reverse order, where the pressural components predominate, then super-strong gravitational forces are freed.

<sup>16</sup> List of paramagnetic and diamagnetic elements:

1. Apart from iron, nickel and cobalt, whose magnetic properties are already known, osmium and almost all iron compounds are paramagnetic metals.
2. Bismuth and antimony are particularly diamagnetic. Zinc, tin, lead, copper, silver and gold as well as glass and carbon disulphide and other non-conductors are strongly diamagnetic. Aloys Kokaly, *Implosion Magazine*, No. 45, p. 19. For further elaboration of the various forms of magnetism, see Chapter 2, endnote 23, p. 88, *The Fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the Ecotechnology series. - Ed.



The Abundance-producing Wheel  
(Early concept sketch for the Repulsator)

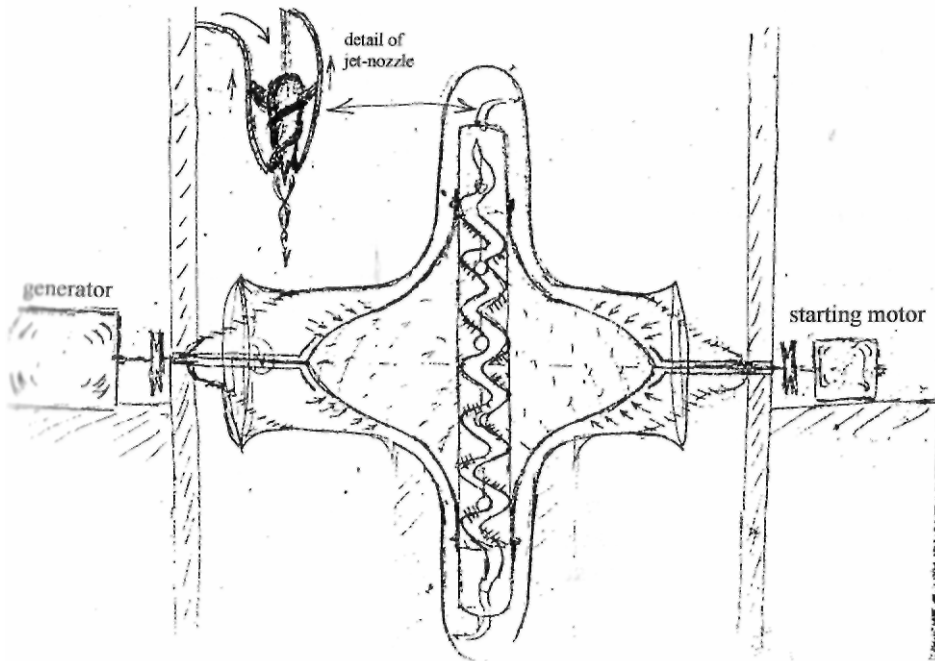
Fig. 7

All today's expansion-explosion machines, pressure turbines, etc. generate decomposive energies that function reactively, and as a result and in conformity with natural law, regressive development is inevitable throughout the whole course of development.

Modern intuitionless science has regulated the eternal flow of evolution (*panta Rhei*) in the wrong way and thus failed to notice the possibility of generating *ur-forces*. Instead of additional products of emulsion possessing development-enhancing functions, it had to make do with development-disturbing reactive forces and resistances to motion that increase by the square of the reversed form of acceleration. According to an age-old maxim, "she half-pulled him down, he half-sank on her". In this play on words there lies a far deeper meaning. It would take too long here to enumerate all the catalysts with various functions, which as Goethe already recognised, form the 'connecting' (emulsifying) bond. They are ray-forms, upon whose function the development-disturbing rising temperature gradient and the development-fostering falling temperature gradient depend. Paramagnetic catalysts act decentrally diamagnetic catalysts concentrally. This fact alone pin-points the incorrect form of development, which ultimately results in the destruction of atoms. Wise Nature, on the other hand, proceeds by way of atomic transformation, which from a biological viewpoint is the exact opposite. Pressure and fire technology therefore produce retrogressive atomic energies, whereas implosion technology generates super-powerful, forward-thrusting atomic energies, i.e. an almost 100% formative and levitative force. And so the question arises, what actually is a catalyst? The answer is simple. It is a condenser that has been galvanically alloyed with oppositely-charged substances, which radiates predominantly negatively potentiated ray-forms into the naturalesquely (inwindingly) moved medium. This then activates a flowing diamagnetism, the formative and levitative force that soars upwards and sucks the generating device up in its wake, and which can be regulated by the rate of rotation. With this, the force was rediscovered that enables aircraft to overcome gravity effortlessly and stationary machines to be powered for virtually nothing. According to accounts from earlier times, the high priests of ancient cultures had a commanding knowledge of this power, which they cherished and guarded like life itself so as to be venerated as Gods for their skill.

By now it ought to be quite clear that the self-accelerating economic decline now taking place throughout the whole civilised world is the biological consequence of the pre-emptive regulation of the eternal flow of evolution, and that it is high time to rectify this grave error in motion against which humanity is lost. It is therefore imperative to reorganise all contemporary economic and industrial practices. The means best suited to achieving this is the spiral whorl-pipe, which like the double meander-membrane (*Repulsine*)

(see fig. 8 & figs. 30-33) operates in accordance with the principle of counter-flowing currents and generates diamagnetism. Under a falling temperature gradient, these devices accelerate the flow-through material almost without friction and with increasing suctional force, if catalytic binding energies are introduced into the flow-through material in order to produce those atomic energies, which exhibit precisely the opposite effects to those that are produced today in ignorance of the disastrous consequences. It was either an abysmal stupidity or the greatest crime of all time to exploit decomposive atomic energies for the build-up of a world-wide economy. How it is produced is still taught and learnt in all technical colleges of the civilised world and as a subject of higher education, is the basis for an unnatural and



The Principle of the Abundance-producing Wheel  
 Exalting radial—>axial inwinding motion  
 (Early concept sketch for the Repulsine)



therefore false economic system. Further comment is now totally superfluous. In any case, it was an outsider, who rediscovered the secret of naturalesque mass-motion, and who thus perhaps rescued the whole of humanity from a ghastly end, namely to perish hopelessly from the putrefaction of water, sap and blood.

## Cadaverine Poison in Ray-Form (Ptomaine Radiation)

9th October 1949, from Implosion Magazine, No. 121, pp 3-12.

"What is the present outlook in the field of energy generation? One word suffices - catastrophic! Through over-illumination and overheating of the media of earth, water and air in Nature's household, a short circuit - 'cold fire' - and the development of cancer has been triggered off. With nuclear fission a conflagration was kindled, whose ashes and slag residues alone will extinguish all life. Thus a reporter stated recently, "For the time being this radiating thing is there and with it the attendant worries as to how we can protect ourselves against these lethal rays, which penetrate even the thickest lead shields." The sheer lunacy of using nuclear power for peaceful purposes will be just as short-lived as the subsequent remorse will be long." - Viktor Schauberger - Implosion Magazine No. 56, p.29-30.

### The pressure turbine

On the 16th of May 1913 Prof. Dr. Viktor Kaplan was able to inform the world's leading turbine manufacturers that he had succeeded in achieving rotational velocities and efficiencies with his newly designed impeller, which far exceeded existing norms.

This was confirmed by Prof. Budau at the test stand on the 22nd of June 1922. With this Kaplan saw himself at the culmination of years-long experimental endeavours, when suddenly an unexpected setback occurred, causing a severe nervous breakdown which crippled his ability to work.

When what had been achieved experimentally with the test model was implemented practically, mysterious cavitation phenomena appeared, which destroyed even steel turbine blades within a short space of time.

It was only after protracted and expensive experiments with alloys that these decompose phenomena could be sufficiently inhibited to enable the manufacture of this turbine system to begin. This was believed and is still so believed today, to be of such great service to industry and the economy, that a few companies licensed by Kaplan (because of the lucrative business opportunities) spared no material expense or intellectual effort in order to eliminate these decompose effects, which according to measurements were equivalent to peak pressures of about 32,000 atmospheres (atm).

In this way this dangerous centrifuge-machine was rescued from oblivion, which decomposes the geospheric and therefore negatively charged mother-water of the Earth (the true carrier of fructigens) in ever wider circles as the turbine's rate of rotation rises with increasing head of pressure.

The cause of this groundwater decomposition is the emission of analysing substances, namely cadaverine poison in ray-form (ptomaine radiation), which arises from liquefied stocks of fatty-matter when mechanically-induced centrifugal pressure and physically dissociative energies trigger lower-grade (expansive) temperatures, i.e. lower-grade cell vibrations, in molecular structures.

Here we are concerned with the consequences of a tragic error inasmuch as it is generally believed that the earthly remains of life, which relapse into the womb of the Earth, purposelessly decay into dust and ashes when the soul is supposedly separated from its former body after its physical vital functions have ceased.

In reality there are two mutually opposed fermentation processes (forms of inner motion) that determine what is to be created from these allotropic (polymorphic) fat-concentrates entombed in the Earth along with the cadaver. Decomposive and retrogressive energies - the above ptomaine radiation - are active here, which are generated when the reversed fermentation process that produces positively charged acids is triggered by thermal influences which intensify internal (rupturing) pressures. This is further exacerbated by the disintegrative effect of mechanics, which bio-logically speaking gives rise to reactivated centrifugal motion. It thus becomes clear that in Nature there are neither equivalencies, nor any constant conservation of energy or matter, but only differentiations, which mutually potentiate one another. Robert Mayer, Isaac Newton and others devoid of intuition - therefore nature-alienated lawmakers - have seriously erred (exact proof of this exists) inasmuch as in an eternally changing Nature there are actually no rigid laws, no domas or absolutes, but only a rhythmical interplay of energies, which determine the fate of all existence.<sup>17</sup> This is because the products of this interplay, already in an atomic state, have an in-built capacity to react, and are therefore products of bio-logical development.

Just a slight positively surcharged motive or stimulative influence is enough to discharge the blood of the Earth, the extremely pressure-sensitive accumulator of the true life-forces in statu nascendi, which it accumulates in order to transform them into reactivated formative (levitative) or disintegrative (retrogressive) energies.

Under natural conditions, this very water, like plant juices or higher-grade bloods, is raised by indirect means to the highest mountain peaks through its

<sup>17</sup> In relation to Newton's discovery of the laws of gravity, Viktor Schauberger comments: "I think it would have been much better if Newton had contemplated how the apple got up there in the first place!" Implosion Magazine, No. 35, p 16. — Ed.

inner levitative forces. However, if it is moved and churned up by high-speed pressure-turbines, hydraulic river regulations or cascade-like torrent confinements, then lower-grade forms of charge and potential give rise to positively supercharged effluxes of energy, which radiate in all directions (this can be proven exactly), pierce through and discharge all resistances, and through internal rupture, loosen the water's structure, thus corrupting the character and the quality of this dynagen concentration (see fig. 6).

As also happens with rapidly moving tractor-drawn iron (steel) ploughs<sup>18</sup>, this gives rise to electrolytic dissociative effects and detonating-gas-like eruptions (so-called earth-rumbles) over a wide area, which further enlarge the structures mechanically that have already been pre-loosened up through their inner excitation. That is to say, the above forms of inner motion and excitation mutually amplify one another by way of such chain-reactions, whose periodicity rises by the square of the rotational velocity. On the one hand the products decisive for development are ur-created, i.e. the buoyant atomic forces (levitation) that effortlessly overcome all physical weight, and on the other, those retrogressive energies, which mortify all life through the enlargement of the tissue-structure. Therefore either the cadaverine poison in ray-form or the life-elixir in an atomic state is created, which overcomes all disease.

This explains why, for example, the resistance to motion increases by the square of the unnatural (centrifugal) rotational velocity in all technical, hydraulic and dynamic pressure- and heat-increasing machines. This, however, does not occur if medial masses (earth, water & air) are accelerated 'originally' in the manner of the natural motion of the Earth's mass (see fig. 9), namely centripetally along the longitudinal axis. Such motion, which builds up everything indirectly and maintains the whole Earth in delicate equilibrium, can be copied in a manner true to Nature with the aid of very specially constructed and alloyed devices.

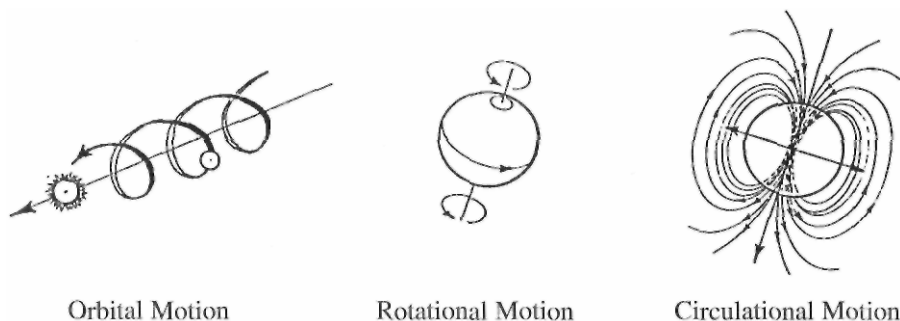


Fig. 9: The natural tripartite motion of the Earth

<sup>18</sup> See descriptions of the effect of steel ploughs in *The fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the Ecotechnology series.  
— Ed.

In this case the relatively highest grade forms of atomic energy can be developed, which move everything 'originally', thereby imbuing all things with life.

Undoubtedly known to the high-priests of ancient cultures, these concentrates of noble matter (ethericities) are responsible for the legendary near-absolute abundance of food and the freedom of movement associated with it. Incidentally, these concentrates were also ultimately responsible for the disaster of Atlantis, referred to as the Flood by a circumspect Church, which was the result of the careless control of these elemental levitative energies. In this respect the Church was quite right, because the negatively potentiated mother-water (amniotic fluid), the physically first-born, will be precipitated out by these formative and levitative energies (there is exact proof of this). It is in this ennobled carrier-substance, however, that the latent higher-grade atomic energies reside, which make naturally ordained locomotion possible. These energies, however, can be transformed into the most developmentally harmful forms of atomic energy if, for example, a cyclotron-like centrifugating device is employed as the supposedly correct means for producing energy. Hitherto it has not been known that vitamins, the concentrates of noble matter (perfectly developed fat-formations fermented under the exclusion of light and heat, which are known to solidify at death) can be degraded through inferior (expansively-acting) influences of heat and light and are gradually transformed into the atomic ptomaine radiation mentioned at the beginning. Only recently has so-called vacuum-distillation been applied to obtaining high-grade fat-concentrates from essential oils. For this, however, only atmospheric-gas-rarefying devices, air-suction or air-pressure pumps are used, which can never emulate the processes that wise Nature employs for specifically densifying these highest-grade concentrates of ennobled matter. This is the 'Organic' vacuum. Created by a centripetence-machine, it densities noble matter through the co-active influences of higher-grade motion and contractile stimuli. That is to say, the moved (accelerated) mass approaches the temperatureless and feverless anomaly state (+4°C - +39.2°F), which is only possible through mass-acceleration on the longitudinal axis. Nor can the resistance to motion mentioned earlier evolve during this process for the simple reason that this 'original' system of mass motion and acceleration, the dissociative, structure-loosening, positive temperature influences are missing, which would otherwise induce an increase in dangerous wall-pressures. It should be noted that it is entirely immaterial whether a molecular interaction between basic elements is initiated by a physical or metaphysical motion-excitation combination. In the same way that social revolutions arise from psychological stimuli, so too can a beneficial fever and thus the healing of a supposedly incurable disease be provoked by a strong inner stimulus, or conversely, sudden death through a so-called stroke, caused by an abrupt alteration of the inner interaction between basic substances.

The all-decomposing cadaverine poison in ray-form mentioned at the beginning is produced indirectly and therefore ur-produced by every pressure- and heat-intensifying machine of the relatively highest power. For this reason the blood-of-the-Earth-centrifugating Kaplan turbine is one of the first machines that must be eliminated as fast as possible. If this is done, it will still be possible at the eleventh hour to arrest an economic and cultural decline with all its perilous political repercussions throughout the civilised world, which will have been caused by the generation of lower-grade atomic energies.

## The suction turbine

The suction-turbine (see figs. 30-33) is the most suitable device for countering this event, for it can ur-produce the most noble formative and levitative energies from water, which function at an atomic level. It builds up the Earth's amniotic fluid, which all today's technical, hydraulic and chemodynamic machines, conveyances and agricultural implements, etc. decompose; in particular the high-speed, blood-of-the-Earth-centrifugating Kaplan turbines and Pelton wheels.

Under the term 'suction turbine' is to be envisaged an inverted pressure turbine. It is an apparatus with which water can be densified mechanically and physically, therefore 'specifically', at the same time. By being moved in this way, the anomaly state so vital to life, the temperatureless and feverless condition of health, can be attained regardless of any positive temperature influences.

This 'original' cooling of the flowing water takes place because the medium can be accelerated without being retarded by the direct action of wall-pressures. In this case, therefore, the resistance to motion that normally increases by the square of the increase in velocity - the reactive effect of all centrifugal pressure - cannot develop.

Specially constructed blade-systems are here involved, which swirl the draining water-masses about their own centre of rotation. Under these conditions neither positive, nor negative temperatures can arise. Therefore the water accelerated in this way approaches the anomaly point of  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ). It is thus temperatureless and feverless, i.e. it becomes healthy and capable of reproduction and further development.

This form of water movement is therefore the one ur-generated by the blood of the Earth, the liquid that pressure-turbines decompose. This explains why water becomes increasingly scarce where pressure-turbines are operating. Not only do they trigger an x-ray-like emission of radiation (inner heat and light), which destroys the structure and quality of the most vital cell-tissue, but in addition they rob the draining old-water of any ability to reproduce and further develop = to increase and ennoble itself, due to the decomposition of its

vital subtle-matter concentrates. This is the reason for the deterioration and dying out of water, without which there would be no growth, no life and no restoration of living standards on this Earth, for diseased water = inferior quality life. In regard to the systems of motion outlined briefly above, this results when, via the indirect route of the structure enlargement and character deterioration mentioned earlier, the seed of decay is ur-fertilised in the ur-cell of life by the irradiating cadaverine poison, which arises from the allotropic fat-concentrates exposed to pressure-intensifying forms of water movement.

Precisely the opposite is achieved when water and its vital constituents are accelerated in a suction-intensifying and invigorating type of turbine constructed with special alloys, which densities the water mechanically and physically, therefore 'specifically'. In other words, a concentrative, structure-reducing, and character-improving synthesising current evolves, which radiates in all directions and also ur-fertilises the substance that the emissions from pressure-turbines decomposes.

The outbirth of this ur-fertilisation is the physically first-born. It is the geospherically negatively supercharged amniotic fluid of the Earth in which, as is the case with all physical forms of procreation, the co-originating spirit is bound, which is also ur-created through the above higher-grade processes of motion and excitation. In the opposite case the most dangerous dynagen concentrate results, which only recently, free of any constraint, is being generated with the aid of an ingeniously designed centrifuge - the cyclotron - for the supposed purposes of national defence.

Produced in suction-turbines, the negatively potentiated ur-product of the cycloidally-moving Earth is therefore the 'original' resurrected entity, which in accordance with Nature's laws must be braked by a corpuscular carrier-substance. Unless this happens it will accelerate out of control and drag everything along with it. (viz. the cataclysm of Atlantis in which the supposed Deluge was triggered by the precipitating out of ur-water at great heights - a process that can be copied experimentally.)

For this reason the suction-turbine must also be braked by heavy operating loads, otherwise it would also over-accelerate and levitate. In this case, in lieu of the familiar resistances to motion, additional rotation and levitational forces evolve through the upsurging bio-magnetic rotary synthesising current.

In both cases we are therefore concerned with supplementary ur-forces having opposite functions, which inaugurate either a progressive economic decline or the opposite. This explains why even the ancient Greeks rejected technology. Derived from the ancient Greek word 'technao', its literal translation means 'self-deceit' or 'self-cheating'. The Greeks preferred the natural labour of slaves in order to spare their evolutionally older descendants from later perils.

In terms of the actual design, the gill-system of the stationary trout should be adopted as a model for the construction and fabrication of the suction-

turbine. This fish, which is known to remain motionless in torrential flows, flees upstream like lightning when danger threatens and in the spawning season floats upwards in the centre of the falling water-masses, which gyrate in cycloid-spiral-space-curves. Possessed of the requisite aids to enhance the potential of the 'original' dynagens, the trout cannot only overcome its own weight, but also the specifically heavy water-masses flowing against it.

In conclusion it is necessary to address in more detail the question: Whence do these gigantic levitational forces actually come? Taking a very large-scale example from Nature, these are the forces that maintain the whole Earth in a fragile state of equilibrium, because they also move in cycloid-spiral-space-curves like every falling filament of water.

The raw material for these atomic developmental products are the earthly remains of former life. Above all, it is the concentrates of fatty-matter which, regardless of any external positive temperature influences, solidify after death. These are subjected to fermentation processes similar to those taking place in the stocks of fatty-matter in plant juices from which, depending on the type of motion and excitation, various acids evolve that give further rise to essential and energetic concentrates. This only happens if no vessels are used, wherein annihilating fire robs these concentrates of their allotropic (polymorphic) trace-elements, namely their concentrates of essential oils, which in such high-grade fermentation processes act like yeasts.

It thus follows that all today's technical, hydraulic and chemo-dynamic machines, conveyances, agricultural implements (ploughs, harrows, disc-tillers, cultivators), dynamos, turbines, propellers, pumps, etc. are developmentally harmful, for apart from their pressure-intensifying shape, they are almost entirely constructed with materials unsuited to Nature's processes. Their use triggers off lower-grade vibrations in molecular structures.

To the catalogue of bio-logical, therefore reactivated, errors in motion and excitation committed by modern nature-alienated science, which has inaugurated the 'other' reaction and which is responsible for the decay and death of everything in existence, the following are to be included:

- The supposedly advantageous 'light-induced' growth in monocultivated plantation forest, which is none other than the incipient proliferation of cancer, triggered by the influences of excessive light and heat inaugurated by modern forestry science;<sup>19</sup>
- The pressure-intensifying cascading of contemporary systems of torrent confinement;
- The loss of tractive force and carrying capacity, and the associated problem of sediment, which has become insoluble;

<sup>19</sup>See references in *The Fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

- The silting up and dislocation of the heavy water-masses, which must breach their banks, because the formation and build-up of the reflux (upstream flowing) bio-magnetic products of noble matter that ur-fertilise the water, have been arrested through elimination of the form of motion that produces it. This is how the hitherto inexplicable steadiness in draining water-masses down a variable gradient was lost.<sup>20</sup>

In this fashion all growth was also interrupted due to the shape and material of unnaturally constructed and alloyed ploughs, etc., which resulted in the triggering of reversed reactions in the pressure-sensitive, negatively potentiated and therefore cool fertile nutrient substratum.

Particularly serious mistakes were made through the spreading of blast-furnace slag (so-called artificial fertilisers), whose intensified combustion once again robs the soil of its essential energy concentrates, the congealed oily sweetness, which the de-energised and finely pulverised slag then drags to itself from the surrounding negatively potentiated groundwater. Artificial fertilisers therefore remove the blood of the Earth's formative substances, which it must supply to the plants indirectly for the purposes of further ennoblement. In this way too, those levitational factors were eliminated which triable the specifically heavy groundwater to maintain its precarious suspension on steep slopes. From this it can be seen how dangerous are the influences of fire and the lower-grade, expansively and explosively functioning temperatures that arise from fire-affected masses.

This vaporising heat-form, which gradually leads to the desiccation of the soil, is the best prerequisite for the development of parasitic bacteria, whose appearance should be taken as a warning sign that serious errors in motion and excitation have been made. If these errors can be rectified, then the parasites disappear automatically, because in a cool (fresh) soil, only apathogenic (health-enhancing) bacteria can survive.

It is therefore ridiculous, for example, to try to treat polluted water with chlorine, or to eliminate all noxious life-forms with poisonous gases, which would otherwise disappear automatically by changing the motive and stimulative influences. In the opposite case, the evil will only be reinforced, for through the influence of the above poisons even what is still healthy will become diseased.

Assuming that from what has been stated the two principal causes of the progressive economic decline and its political repercussions are now clear, all that now remains to be done is to demonstrate the origins and causes of this decline in quality to the competent authorities.

In more specific terms, this unwelcome state of affairs involves the disturbance of the interchange of substances at a molecular level. In other words,

<sup>20</sup> See references in *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.



the alteration of the above fermentation process at its most fundamental phase. To make this even clearer: Allotropic oxygen conformations are liberated through pressure- and heat-intensifying dynamic effects or volume-enlarging thermal influences, because the fat-concentrates with opposite polarity become inactive and are maintained in a passive state under such influences. This results in the inner fission (dissociation) of the previously internally interconnected and highly evolved, therefore extremely pressure- and heat-sensitive trace-elements, which like yeasts initiate the process of raw-material transformation - the fermentation process described above.

It thus becomes comprehensible that all motion gives rise to inner molecular excitation, and conversely, that strong excitation causes a reversal in the molecular vibrations (the inner form of motion).

This explains why, for example, the hitherto incurable can suddenly be healed and the hitherto healthy can become incurably ill (e.g. suffer a stroke). It also explains the hitherto inexplicable effect of the water long known to the ancients as healing, or more correctly all-healing water, which 'specifically' densifies to the highest degree. Such water carries within it the relatively highest-grade products of synthesis derived from the above higher-grade dissociation and therefore is able to reprogramme the molecular fermentation process and thus specifically to heal the condition of disease caused by the opposite primary metabolic processes.

In the management of today's forestry, agriculture, water and energy resources, lower-grade interactions between basic substances are triggered exclusively and without exception. That is to say, molecular disturbances are caused through the influences of fire and expansively acting temperatures. These disturbances immediately intensify into chain reactions, thereby weakening the interaction between basic substances in the whole organism or actually reverse it. Thus, in accordance with Nature's inner laws, the disruptions to development will become all the more severe, the more modern science, which produces the reversed motive and stimulative influences, achieves its phoney successes. In lieu of the 'original' pressure-less and heat-less motion of the Earth's masses, it has invented and applied the reversed methods of motion and excitation.

Those who understand what has been written here will have to agree that we will inevitably become the hopeless and hapless victims of the scourge of the technical machine age, if we do not eliminate the errors in motion and excitation made thus far as quickly as possible, which ur-produce cadaverine poison in ray-form the 'specific' means of decomposition, as the end-product.

## 2.

# New Forms of Temperature

"The inner climate stamps each individual with its character. Every life-form has its own individual anomaly point of health, which makes the orderly reproduction of the species possible. This also explains why the world of parasites increases with fever."

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 71, p. 12.

## A Brief Description of My Discovery

Leonstein, 1945 (Schauberger Archives).

**A**rising from an exhaustive and in-depth observation of Nature, my discovery consists in the fact that all life and growth is shaped and fashioned through vibration and movement. This naturalesque form of motion I finally discovered after decades of research and countless series of experiments. It is the creative curving form of motion found in Nature that I have come to describe as 'cycloid-space-curve-motion', which in more common language is perhaps more easily understandable as a 'life-curve', 'curve of Nature' or even as a 'bio-curve'.

Furthermore, I have also devoted considerable time and effort to translating these forms of motion and dynamic shapes, faithfully copied from Nature, into terms of mechanics. In this I succeeded and it provided me with the basis for my bio-technology.

Through the naturalesque movement of liquid or gaseous substances (e.g. water and air) the following arise in Nature as well as in my apparatuses (which are neither difficult nor expensive to mass-produce):

- (a) Two different forms of temperature, which I shall refer to as  $T_1$  and  $T_2$ . Conditioned by these temperatures and also closely associated with them, there also arise:

(b) Two different types of flow, which we shall describe as  $F_1$  and  $F_2$ .

Through these hitherto unknown forms of temperature and motion the substance in question (i.e. water or air) is decomposed, transformed and built up. In this way, through appropriate regulation, elemental energies are freed. Suctional and pressural forces come into being, which in my apparatuses evolve along a common developmental axis and represent an entirely new means of motion and propulsion.

To contemporary technology, physics and chemistry the following are so far unknown:

1. The form of motion used by Nature herself (i.e. the cycloid-space-curve as the creative form-originating motion);
2. The temperature-form  $T_2$ ;
3. The flow-forms  $F_1$  and  $F_2$  and the phenomena of elemental transformation resulting from them.

In Nature the purpose of temperature-form  $T_1$ , which is associated with flow-form  $F_1$ , is to transform the condensed (allotropic) inner elements of organisms into aethero-energetic<sup>1</sup> animating and kinetic energies. These  $T_1$  temperature-forms gives rise to falling and concentrating heat and exhibits rising and expanding cold effects.  $T_2$  triggers reduction processes and fosters apathogens. If  $T_1$  predominates, then an increase in raw materials and the qualitative improvement of all products of growth result.

Temperature-form  $T_2$ , which is related to flow-form  $F_2$ , is generally known to contemporary technology, physics and chemistry. Its purpose in Nature is to precipitate out what has been decomposed, but not decayed, through  $F_2$  flow-forms, or what is unsuitable for the purposes of the next higher form of development.

$T_2$  temperature-forms exhibit rising and expanding forms of heat and falling (decadent) and condensing (concentrating) forms of cold.  $T_2$  furthers bacterial life. If  $T_2$  temperatures predominate, then a reduction in raw materials coupled with a simultaneous thriving parasitic activity results, the effect of which again reinforces the removal for reprocessing of everything unsuitable for higher purposes.

These phenomena, still unknown to conventional science, I have already exploited practically for the extraction and transport of otherwise untransportable timber in log-flumes at Neuberg in Steyrling and 14 other installations around Europe.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> aethero-energetic: This essentially refers to energies belonging to the 4th and 5th dimensions of being. — Ed.

<sup>2</sup> See references to log flumes on pp. 82 & 107 of The Water Wizard, Vol I of the Ecotechnology series. - Ed.

Today I had the opportunity of presenting a feasibility study for a large project of this kind in Upper Austria to a government agency, and in this way and through its realisation, I hope to be able to make a valuable contribution to reconstruction (after W.W.II) and the Austrian economy itself, and at the same time furnish new proof of the correctness of my discoveries.

## Excerpt from Bio-Technology: Active & Reactive Temperatures

Leonstein, Easter 1946, Schauburger Archives.

Decades-long observations of Nature, innumerable trials and series of experiments led to the discovery that two fundamentally different temperature-groups exist in Nature, namely:

- (A) a group with life-creating functions, and
- (B) a group with life-destroying functions.

All forms of heat that initiate rising and expanding effects, and all forms of cold which inaugurate falling and concentrating effects belong to group B and are therefore development-impeding (growth-destroying). All forms of heat that give rise to falling and concentrating effects and all forms of cold that exhibit rising and expanding functions belong to group A and are thus development-promoting. Both expressions of temperament - and all forms of temperature can be viewed as such - serve for the build-up of tension, charge and potential. On the one hand these give rise to life-affirming dynagen-currents, which come into being when naturally fermented fatty-matter, which the chemist calls 'carbons' (sweet matter), consumes (binds) the oxygenes<sup>3</sup> in an allotropic (condensed) state. On the other hand, life-negating dynagen currents form if the oxygenic elements, which become free, unipolar and aggressive under the influence of usual forms of heat (B-group temperatures), consume (bind) the sweet-matter concentrates. Under such influence the latter become passive and increasingly dense as they inwardly contract. In solid, liquid and gaseous inorganic bodies these life-negating currents act in the same way as poisons do in living organisms, and provoke processes of decomposition, decay or combustion; in a word, they destroy everything ripe for development. In the form of a formative and upwardly impelling dynagen flow, the digestive product of the former metabolic process has development-furthering (growth-promoting) effects.

<sup>3</sup> Oxygenes: In similar fashion to the previous explanation and interpretation of 'carbones', this relates to all normal forms of oxygen as well as to its more metaphysical provenances. — Ed

In Nature both temperature groups are active. Group A provides for the progressive build-up of what is suitable for higher development. Group B is responsible for the precipitating out, breaking down and disassembly of everything unfit for such purposes. This has to be removed and as a life-form must be annihilated, or expressed more correctly, reduced to the relatively lowest developmental state, prior to attempting a renewed ascent under entirely different influences. This temperature group also becomes active when any given life-form has fulfilled the purpose of its existence, its duty to multiply itself physically or further develop itself. Withering away through decrepitude, and as an over-ripe product of raw material, it is then made available for the build-up of qualigen with the aid of A-group temperatures. However, if for any reason B-group temperatures become active in the deceased substance, it will be putrefied, combusted or otherwise destroyed.

Temperature group A is entirely unknown in scientific circles today and is also missing in our conceptual and linguistic vocabulary. All that is known therefore are the so-called processes of oxidation, combustion or decomposition; the so-called reduction process being understood only in part. And this only to the extent to which it is responsible for the separation of both stocks of primary substances, namely the dissociation of the allotropic carbon and oxygens present in deceased organic or inorganic structures.

All analyses of whatever kind are followed by a synthesising process, i.e. the manifestation of what has been evolved to a higher level. This is initiated by A-group temperatures out of which the formative, reproductive, upwardly evolving and qualitatively improving synthesising current arises.

Either this important, or more correctly, vitally important process and the products of development arising from it are wholly unknown, or the possibility has been suppressed, which, with the aid of that which 'radiates' formatively, would enable the enlightening life-flame to be supplied with qualigen. Here we are concerned with the end-product of a life-affirming (reactive) metabolic process, the most highly evolved fatty-matter already in a metaphysical state, without which no increase in intellectual activity (ability) of any kind would be possible.

In other words, either it is believed in such circles that progress as an individual ceases with the cessation of vital physical functions, or there is a definite interest in ensuring that, by inhibiting the production of qualigen by deliberately eliminating A-group temperatures, the dull-brained can never die out.

The fact of the matter is that all forms of heat applied and exploited by science today, however and wherever they occur, engender rising and expanding effects. Similarly, all the forms of cold it utilises have falling and concentrating (mortally solidifying) functions, which lead to degrading, life-destroying expressions of temperament. These wise Nature employs to eliminate everything unfit for further development as well as for purposes of

decomposition, for evacuation of excrement, or for initiating combustion processes that almost completely annihilate almost everything.

This means, no more and no less, that retrogressive development will occur everywhere the influence of science is active. Therefore, for lack of the supply of qualigen, mental abilities will constantly deteriorate in step with the progressive rise in the quantity of living flesh. People will become imbecilic, vegetative and the lower orders of life will atrophy and little by little will cease to exist, because the relatively highest energy-concentrate, the 'upwardly radiating', is missing, which manifests and declares itself as 'Life'.

Apart from this, it is an indisputable and demonstrable fact that B-group temperatures are about 96% more expensive to produce than the reactive A-group temperatures responsible for formation and uplift, for which natural development-facilitating devices and associated systems of motion are required. The necessity to work will therefore become progressively less, and food and other necessities will increase quantitatively and qualitatively as formative and levitative power strengthens.

The same applies to all natural means of producing light and power (viz. the natural increase in the Sun's heat, when the distance from the Sun increases in summer and the developmental path of its energies elongates, or according to the findings of Pickard's research, it gets all the colder and darker, the closer this supposedly fiery orb is approached.)

When the Earth approaches the Sun in winter the intensity of light increases, because in this case the resisting power of the Earth's almost hermetically sealed pores (nozzles) becomes greater. If this natural reciprocity is copied naturalesquely, then the production of power, light, heat and cold will be virtually free. On the other hand, germinating- and growth-energies will continuously and progressively rise to about an average of 30% per annum, which roughly corresponds to the normal increase in the human population.

The devices for practically implementing the generation of the bio-magnetic formative and levitative current with the aid of reactive temperatures (natural-esque expressions of temperament) have now been invented and in principle can be mass-produced.

## The Life-Current in Air & Water

Leonstein, May 1946, (Schauberger Archives).

"Equivalence signifies uniformity and thus immobility."

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 113, p. 23.

It is a well-known fact that what we call the temperature of a body is the result of the motion of its molecules. According to the speed of such motion,

higher or lower temperatures are produced. As the motion slows, the temperature drops until ultimately, with the cessation of all molecular motion, absolute zero is reached at  $-273.15^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $-459.67^{\circ}\text{F}$ ).

Cold is therefore just as much the result of motion as is heat, and de facto is merely a lower level of heat. So much for the scientific point of view.

Entirely unknown to contemporary science, however, is that apart from this familiar form of temperature, there are also 'higher' forms of heat and cold, which are equally attributable to molecular motion. These 'higher' temperature-forms are to be differentiated from those referred to at the beginning in that the 'usual' forms of heat have a rising and expanding function and their associated cold-forms have a falling and concentrating function.

The 'higher' heat-forms are characterised by the fact that they possess falling and concentrating functions, and their associated cold, or refreshing forms have rising and expanding properties. So much for the general appreciation of this bio-technical finding, which is essentially founded on 'higher' physics, or biophysics.

This 'higher' practically implementable metaphysics has nothing in common with today's science. We are therefore here concerned with real 'knowledge' and in no way with the commonly held concept of 'science'.

The formulation of all terminology concerning this 'higher' knowledge is uncommonly difficult for the simple reason that today's science has commandeered all the relevant terminology, and thus in the German vocabulary there is a lack of suitable words with which to formulate these new concepts in a meaningful way.<sup>4</sup> For this reason the only way to approach things is by way of circumlocution so that they can be half-way understood by scientists.

A true understanding is only possible after appropriate observable demonstrations, whereupon all the rigid theorems, principles and dogmas of today will then be rendered untenable and quickly collapse upon themselves. Moreover, all present laws, regardless of whether they concern the laws of energy conservation, gravitation or so-called heat-equivalence, will likewise be invalidated. To make it quite clear at the outset, what is here involved is something entirely new, which is why any proper assessment by scientists would be impossible. For this reason the Austrian government was requested to dispense with the expert opinion of specialists. All that is required is practical proof for which certain prerequisites are necessary, such as the one requested in the memorandum of the 15th of March 1946.<sup>5</sup>

Uncanny experiences in a high alpine reserve almost untouched by human hand and a perhaps extraordinary gift for observation of Nature led to the discovery that a mysterious current lies hidden in the media of air

<sup>4</sup> This also applies to the English language. — Ed.

<sup>5</sup> This relates to the provision of premises for research and development mentioned later in this article. — Ed.

and water, which is freed when these aqueous or gaseous bodies are moved naturalesquely.

In every respect, experiments with this formative and levitative (synthesising) current produced surprising results. Thus, for example, 2,000,000 volts per drop of water, which were measurable, visible and palpable, and therefore incontrovertible, could be freed with appropriate charge-releasing devices. With 50 pairs of needle-jets about 200 million volts can be produced for virtually nothing, for which today's science requires giant machines. Even then it can only produce an exceptionally disintegrative (analysing) current, which has life-negating properties. This is to be differentiated from the formative and levitative, therefore life-affirming, functions of the synthesizing current mentioned elsewhere.

A few examples of applications should explain in general terms the nature of this novelty, still wholly unknown to contemporary science.

If this current is conducted into vacuum tubes, then they emit a strongly pulsating blood-red glow horizontally along the elongated transverse axis and a dazzling, motionless, colourless and temperatureless radiance vertically up the elongated longitudinal axis, which fills the whole space.

If the horizontally emitted current is first accumulated in a Leyden jar and conducted thence into petrol, then a tongue of flame is produced and the higher the accumulated charge, the longer the flame.

If this current is conducted through strongly insulated resistances, then cool, juvenile water, free of other ingredients is produced, which exhibits an uncommonly high dissolving capacity and cohesive power. Conducted into a hinged lever, which hangs down, this current stands it upright. It also causes pendulums to gyrate in peculiar looping, twisting movements.

If this current is introduced into ordinary water, then the water becomes cool, dense and specifically heavy and its ion-count increases many thousand-fold.

If such water is drunk, then every kind of pain ceases almost immediately. After prolonged consumption of such water both mental and sexual potency increases in a truly striking fashion. Even the impotent will regain their potency. Kidney stones, gallstones and accretions of similar nature are dissolved and expelled in the form of grains or mucous. Rheumatic pains disappear completely after a few weeks. Venereal and malarial bacteria are eliminated and passed out of the body in bloodstained urine. In short, under the supervision of doctors, no affliction has yet been found which has been able to offer any resistance to this life-current. Even malignant cases of cancer improved quite remarkably. These experiments were discontinued, because the secret state police intervened owing to rising indignation amongst the medical fraternity. Later I received a valuable offer from the English banker and financier, Sir



Victor Sassoon, which was made in the presence of Dr. Ing. Haertel Wien, director of the State Water Resources department. This I declined, because it required my moving to America or England and I had no desire to leave my homeland. For the same reason I also declined an offer from the Russians. Other offers from France, Turkey and Italy were similarly rejected.

If specifically heavy high-quality water is atomised and the resultant water-vapour is compressed by a descending piston with a simultaneous infusion of atmospheric oxygen, then this aqueous mixture of air is instantaneously transformed into increased and highly potentiated stocks of new air. The expansive pressure produced in this way corresponds to the power of about 2,000 atmospheres per litre of water.

If ordinary air is bio-centrifugated above the speed of sound in very specially contoured and suitably alloyed development-facilitating devices, for which an auxiliary mechanical force is required in the order of 0.08 kW per cubic metre of moved air, then the torque-producing current (synthesising current) mentioned above arises, which also accelerates the device that generates it. This further accelerates the intake of air, which again intensifies the strength of the current, resulting in an even higher rate of rotation, which provokes yet a further increase in the torque-producing current, and so on. Ultimately a powerful and highly potent vacuum is created in front of the generating device, while at the same time the expansive pressure described above exerts a squeezing, wedging pressure along its teardrop-like body (see figs. 22<sup>6</sup> & 38). These suctional and pressural forces, which evolve along a common developmental axis in the form of a fully developed dynagen gradient can overcome any weight or form of anchorage.

What is here involved are the colossal carrying and tractive forces that maintain the whole Earth in an unstable floating state and cause it to rotate in peculiar spiral space-curves (cycloid-space-curve-motion). They are the same forces that maintain the delicate equilibrium of a trout in fast-flowing water and enable everything that crawls and flies on this dung-heap - Earth - to overcome their own physical weight.

In opposition to this dualistic formative, levitative and life-affirming force, however, there is a counterforce, which comes into being in a similar manner. It is also a biotechnically producible current, but functions in a life-negating way and can thus be described as the 'death-current', since, with the exception of developmentally harmful bacterial life-forms, it slowly but surely destroys all life. It breaks down and decomposes every organism so that under very specific pre-conditions and with the aid of a very peculiar movement it can ur-generate new life or death forces of increased and intensified power from the product.

<sup>6</sup> In regard to fig. 22, while the diagrams depict a submarine, theoretically the same process should also apply to a similarly shaped aircraft. — Ed.

Practically and factually we are thus presented with the unveiling of the seven enshrouding veils of Sai<sup>7</sup>. We stand before the secret of the genesis of all life and its unfoldment, which viewed objectively is none other than the perfection of all that is raw material. It is the eternal process of self-renewal out of which are born the forces of growth and formation, as well as those of renewed decomposition and reversion, which appear in the form of synthesising or analysing currents, depending on whether the medium of air or water is moved naturalesquely in specially constructed and alloyed development-facilitating devices, or unnaturally in unsuitable ones.

As absolute opposites these two forces, which promote either progressive or regressive development, arise from different sources; the destructive forces evolving from the temperature-forms that today's science exploits to operate its various types of machine. The formative and levitative forces on the other hand stem from the 'higher' temperature-forms which, as stated earlier, are unknown to contemporary science.

Conventional science has so far only become acquainted with the forms of heat that exhibit fatiguing effects, which however are those heat-forms through which the resistance to motion increases by the square of the velocity. This occurs for the simple reason that they are precisely the forms of temperature that kill off all dynamism and vitality and which, after a suitable development, are transformed into the condensing (falling and concentrating) cold-forms in order to conduct the thing in question back onto or into the Earth, where under the exclusion of light and heat it is prepared for a renewed attempt to rise.

The actual source of life - the 'higher' temperature-forms from which the life-affirming, formative and uplifting levitation-current evolves, is an absolute novelty to today's science.

Whether such a science consciously or unconsciously exploited precisely the opposite means to achieve a desired build-up of culture - the build-up

<sup>7</sup> To give a greater understanding of events at Sai's, that ancient Egyptian city in the Nile delta, The Secret Doctrine by H P Blavatsky relates: "...And how little Herodotus could tell is confessed by himself when speaking of a mysterious tomb of an Initiate at Sai's, in the sacred precinct of Minerva. There, he says 'behind the chapel is the tomb of One, whose name I consider it impious to divulge... In the enclosure there are large obelisks and there is a lake near, surrounded with a stone wall in a circle. In this lake they perform, by night, that person's adventures, which they call mysteries. It is well to know that no secret was so well-preserved and so sacred with the ancients as that of their cycles and computations. From the Egyptians down to the Jews it was held as the highest sin to divulge anything pertaining to the correct measure of time. It was for divulging the secrets of the Gods, that Tantalus was plunged into the infernal regions; the keepers of the sacred Sybilline Books were threatened with the penalty for revealing a word of them.' The Secret Doctrine, Vol II, page 396. While not directly related to the Seven Veils of Sai's, the following quotation from The Secret Doctrine, Vol. III, p.132, may afford further insight into what was hidden behind them. "An impenetrable veil of secrecy was thrown over the Occult and Religious Mysteries, after the submersion of the last remnant of the Atlantean Race, some 12,000 years ago, lest they should be shared by the unworthy, and so desecrated. Of these Sciences several have now become exoteric — such as astronomy, for instance, in its purely mathematical and physical aspect." Ed.

of quality matter, which is what concerns us here and which has been inhibited by these development-impeding temperature-forms, cannot be entered into here.

The fact of the matter, however, is that through these totally perverse procedures and all manner of unnatural activities, everything we are experiencing today that is difficult, disgraceful and degrading of human dignity had inevitably to happen. Deductively thinking logicians have therefore overlooked the causes of the supposed effects, out of which, depending on whether the form of motion is natural or unnatural, the respective ancillary forces that either affirm life or negate it come into being. In this regard the life-denying forces increase, reproduce and advance themselves in exactly the same way as their counterparts, which promote the naturally ordained course of further development through increase and qualitative improvement. This would be impossible, however, were it not for the temperature-forms responsible for expelling what is inferior and for purging, purifying and detoxifying organisms. It is out of these temperature-forms that the decomposing, analysing cavitation current arises, which today's science uses in the widest variety of ways and without exception for a supposed build-up of culture. Clearly the misfortunes we shall have to reap will be all the greater, the more widespread and intensive the activity of a science that makes use of these lower-grade temperature-forms.

The first person, who had unconsciously to grapple with this disastrous development, was Galilei, whose discovery that the Earth itself moved, caused an immense uproar in secular and religious scientific circles. Galilei was forced to recant, although he recanted his recantation shortly before his death. This he did at a moment when he could no longer be harmed by those, who like past dictators used similar means to torture those whose opinion differed from theirs, believing they could re-instil faith through the agonies of torture. His opponents, however, who were just as dangerous as they were ruthless, had practically no alternative but to acknowledge this new fact.

Curiously enough, since then apparently no scientifically trained individual has bothered about the causes of the mysterious motion of this dung-heap Earth, and the purpose of its exceptional form of motion. This disinterest, however, was only feigned. In reality, since Galilei's discovery, people were very much on their guard in order to avert the immeasurable repercussions resulting from the revelation of: 'Why' does the Earth ceaselessly rotate about her own peculiar system of axes in an unstable state of equilibrium in so-called free space in very particular looping movements in defiance of the laws of gravity?

This 'why' has been clarified by various of Nature's phenomena. Amongst others, the stationary trout that stands motionless in torrential alpine streams and flees upstream like lightning whenever danger threatens. Or spawning

trout, which, floating upwards, are able to surmount freely overfalling waterfalls several metres high, if particularly hollowed out flow-guiding stones cause the falling water to flow in 'cycloid-spiral-space-curves', the form of motion that arises and can be observed above every bunghole through which water is able to free-fall. This how the water-inwinding suctional forces evolve and the reactive forces acting in the opposite direction come into being in the axis of the suction-vortex. It is the latter forces that are at issue here. Today's science, which measures and weighs everything exactly, overlooked them, because the 'producer of measure and weight' can neither be measured with a yardstick, nor weighed with decimal scales.

In a word, after decades-long observations, trials and series of experiments, I succeeded in getting to the bottom of this mysterious double-game of Nature's and in becoming aware of the unspeakable ferocity and purest mother-love that are united behind her two eternally concealed faces. I came to recognise the scales of fate of all life upon which every action is scrupulously weighed after death and that whatever is no longer fit for the next higher evolutive progression is once more ruthlessly eliminated, it being of too inferior a quality for its metaphysical transformation into exalted entities in the form of the above formative and levitative current. It has to return to greater or lesser depths within the Earth to interact with those vibratory influences in such a way that out of these basic substances new formative and levitative energies evolve for a renewed attempt to rise. It is these revitalised substances, whose higher forms of cooling essences possess expanding and upwardly impelling functions, which make this resurrection possible. Falling and concentrating light- and heat-forms then subsequently ensure the intermediate solidification of 'what is destined to vegetate', namely the actual physical form of growth in which the counter-energies also reside, which initiate the further interactions that enable this intermediate assembly of raw materials to grow, to reproduce and further evolve itself. Now comes a brief description of Nature's principal formative substance - metaphysical fatty-matter<sup>8</sup> - about which a thick book could be written. As a reactive or 'higher' temperature-form this comes into being with the aid of the Earth's 'cycloid-space-curve-motion' under the exclusion of light and ordinary heat in the cool germinating zone, the boundary zone between the negatively potentiated geo-atmosphere and the positively potentiated external atmosphere. This then develops as a potential that propagates horizontally in a wavi-linear movement.

<sup>8</sup> Fatty matter. In its association with what Viktor Schauberger calls 'sweet matter', a creative, formative substance, this relates to compounds principally containing carbon C and hydrogen H (carbohydrates - CH) and all the elements under the collective term 'carbone' or 'mother-substances'. In this regard, despite its general 'neutrality' as a carrier substance (like a woman with child), H is more inclined to the feminine than the masculine. — Ed.

The raw materials out of which this fine matter arises under very specific preconditions, consist of the naturalesquely interred earthly remnants of former life. On no account are they senselessly and purposelessly reduced to dust and ashes, but once again, under particular preconditions, they develop into the 'peculiar' axis in the form of the formative and levitative current mentioned earlier. This spiritualising and uplifting current, which inwinds, upwardly impels and whirls around like a tornado, is partially condensed by the above heat-forms and can be readily measured and generated in any quantity and quality almost without cost. By means of this formative and levitative current all growth can be increased and qualitatively improved almost at will, and any weight can be lifted or moved indirectly at any desired speed rotationally and / or vertically with a power that increases by the square.

The source of this formative and levitative marvel is the 'higher' temperature-form that evolves through the previously described form of motion, which is produced in very specially contoured and alloyed development-facilitating ur-forms (extreme egg-shapes).

Naturally, this ur-powerfully-active principal formative substance is barely perceptible in water or air, because the naturalesque motion of the Earth has already transmuted it into a metaphysically potentiated state, where in a semi-free and semi-bound condition it characterises the 'goodness' and 'intrinsic quality' of the aqueous or gaseous medium.

Therefore if the media of water or air are moved naturalesquely (and the trick is how to do this) then the bipolar gases are initially transformed into aetheric and ultimately into energetic stocks of subtle matter. These are then bound in the self-evolving juvenile media (air and water) and what has been increased in this way is rendered homogenous and specifically densified. That is to say, they intensify the carrying capacity and tractive force to such a degree that in such waters material with a higher specific weight than the transporting medium, even ore with a specific weight of 1.9, readily floats down the centre of the axis, where the strongest suctional force acts downstream and the strongest reactive force acts upstream in the form of a dynagen gradient, but which, however, has no effect on raw material structures to the extent that these do not involve life-forms.

This also explains why the very moment that watercourses were hydraulically<sup>9</sup> regulated, i.e. when the natural system of flow was ruined, the calamity concerning the transport of sediment began.<sup>10</sup> The riverbanks were attacked, the riverbed silted up and the water ejected itself from its dislocated course with elemental ur-force in order to regain its naturalesque form of motion, through which that something is also propagated and deployed to which

<sup>9</sup> Hydraulically: The use of the term here relates specifically to conventional hydraulics, — Ed.

<sup>10</sup> See Viktor Schauberg's writings on river engineering in *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

everything that lives on this manure-heap owes its independent movement, the 'original form of motion', and its own power to reproduce and further develop itself.

This naturalesque form of motion will now be once more reinstated in those places where there are inaccessible stands of precious timber, which are apparently untransportable with oxen, horse-teams, tractors, cable or forest railways, etc. and, as occurred at Neuberg in Steyrling, will be floated to its destination as circumstances demand with about a 90% saving in transport costs compared to the best transport systems presently available. Therefore at a time when, according to radio and press reports about 800 million people, i.e. about 1/3rd of the world's present population, are threatened with starvation, those people can be saved, whose only assets are those valuable timbers spared by modern forestry, because they were deemed irrecoverable, and who for this reason will be repaid in gold by nations with a high exchange rate, or in what is of far greater value today - food. For today whatever still stands in accessible forests - as every timber expert knows - is worth nothing, or precious little. Such products of forestry science are in any case unsuitable for export.

After this brief pointer as to how these gigantic formative and levitative forces can be made use of in the national economy, it should also be mentioned that these 'original' tractive and transportive forces can be applied to the silent, odourless, smokeless, toxic-emission-free propulsion of all types of machine, all forms of conveyance on land, on water and in the air at any desired speed and at negligible cost, for in such machines, instead of resistance, the power increases by the square of the velocity. Now devoid of foundations, the crowning law of fire-spitting technology will therefore collapse upon itself.

It would take too long here to describe the necessary preconditions through which it is possible to build up the energy-sources (the 'higher' temperature-forms) out of which the formative and levitative current - characterised in the title as the 'life-creating current' - comes into being.

A small error in motion therefore suffices to provoke a general susceptibility to cancer in what has created everything we can see around us or are otherwise aware of.

It is really not immaterial whether motion must first be active in the production of a temperature, which on its part triggers a reactive increase in motion, or whether a temperature induced by physical, thermal or chemical means affects physical movement by way of the molecular motion. The matter first becomes complex, however, when the different temperature-forms mentioned earlier are included in the equation, wherein it is also necessary in regard to the types of motion, to differentiate between those that produce the 'higher' or 'lower' temperature-forms.

The former invigorate, the latter enervate.

The development of high-grade products of potentiation is only possible via an exceptionally long course of development - and what is decisive here - only if the mechanical motive impulse takes place first, which then automatically gives rise to the reactive increase in power upon which the normal course of further development is founded.

However, as is the case with all today's machines, if the physical, thermal or chemical starting impulse happens first, then the opposite reactive course of further development results. It thus becomes clear that with an increasing rate of rotation the resistance to motion increases by the square of the enforced acceleration in the interchange of substances (metabolism).

The crowning law of today's technology is therefore no natural law, but the biological consequence of a tragic error of contemporary science. For if the naturalesque metabolic process is initiated through equally naturalesque impulses (*il primo movere*), then as the velocity increases owing to the additional input from the inwinding rotary current, the power increases by the square. The outcome of this developmental process is an almost cost-free, development-promoting mechanical power - the evolving water (*viz.* the atomised water vapour).

In the opposite case, annihilating fire and its cohorts, including toxic gases, are created, which in association with the debilitating temperature-forms from which rigor mortis develops, foster the proliferation of bacteria.

It thus follows that all attempts to combat the source of disease of whatever kind, are senseless and futile as long as the formative metabolic processes are not controlled causatively at their root-level. This also explains why pains disappear and the most serious diseases improve markedly when water is drunk in which formative and levitative substances have been bound and which further evolve at the expense of the developmentally harmful elements in the organism that consumes such water. As a result the organism automatically regains its capacities, *i.e.* it becomes physically and mentally potent - and therefore healthy.

Fundamentally, therefore, we are dealing with two metabolic processes entirely different in nature and function, both of which are necessary, for without any purging and purifying process no more highly evolved forms could be built up.

These two metabolic processes, which in every organism interact reciprocally, are:

- (a) the process of oxidation, and
- (b) the process of reduction,

which, while known to today's chemist, are initiated unnaturally, therefore in the wrong way, and carried out with the use of ordinary temperature-forms.

The product of the oxidising process is an analysing current.

The product of the reducing process is a synthesising current.

In the first case a form of molecular motion is inaugurated, which results in the principal primary formative substance being bound, consumed and digested by the countervailing stocks of oxygen.

This process is caused by the liberation of this dangerous retrogressive substance, which has become unipolar and aggressive through a pre-active physical, thermal or chemical starting impulse, whereas the principal formative substance, the naturalesquely fermented fatty-matter, or so-called carbon (carbone), becomes passive and inactive under this influence.

However, if the mechanical starting impulse is activated first, which must be produced in appropriately contoured development-facilitating devices, then higher cold-forms arise through which the fatty-matter (carbone or sweet matter), which reacts to centrifugence,<sup>11</sup> becomes free, unipolar and highly active. In this situation the oxygen, which becomes passive under this influence, is consumed (bound), providing it has been dosed (dispersed) mechanically and made palatable (thinned out), (viz. the swaying and fluttering branches of plants).

Every developmental or redevelopmental process therefore has its characteristic source, which gives rise to one or the other activity (function).

This involves two temperature groups:

(A) the formative, life-affirming (incremental), and  
(B) the disintegrative, life-negating (decremental).

To group A belong all falling and concentrating heat-forms and all cold-forms, which initiate rising and expanding phenomena. To group B belong all rising and expanding heat-forms and all cold-forms having falling and concentrating effects. This latter temperature-form is applied by today's science universally, and hence it strives in vain to achieve the build-up of any form of culture (i.e. a naturalesque course of further development). On the contrary, it must reap economic reversals, which will become all the more palpable, the more widespread and intensive this activity becomes.

In Nature both temperature groups are active in every healthy organism.

This is necessary because the formative and uplifting levitational essences evolve from the higher temperature group A and the purging dissociative

<sup>11</sup> This seems to conflict with statements made elsewhere, which attribute intensified carbone activity to centripetence (outside—>inward motion), and intensified oxygen activity to centrifugence (inside->outward motion). In actual fact for each of the two substances there are two opposite 'reactions' involving centripetence and centrifugence. Oxygen 'reacts' to centrifugence by becoming aggressive and 'reacts' to centripetence by becoming passive. Conversely carbone 'reacts' to centrifugence by becoming passive and 'reacts' to centripetence by becoming highly active, as is also affirmed on the following page. — Ed.



forces from the lower temperature group B, which enforce the gravitation of all that cannot be uplifted. This duality therefore involves a rhythm within a rhythm - a sort of four-stroke motor, in which upward, downward, inward and outward impulses can rhythmically take place on a common developmental axis. A perpetual state of turmoil is constantly created in an epicentre of commotion, leading to continuous fission and fusion (separation and combination), whereby what matters is which metabolic process predominates. In other words, in this primordial battle between the ur-feminine and the ur-masculine, whether the re-destructive or the re-creative is victorious. The one that triumphs is the one that is able to drag its opponent into the middle of this gigantic wrestling match, there to encircle, bind, consume and digest it.

The very specific molecular motion mentioned in the opening paragraph is what is decisive here. More particularly, a mechanically induced outside-inwardly directed impulsive force is required, through which, aided by supplementary influences, Nature's principal formative substance - naturalesquely fermented, etherised fatty-matter (carbones or sweet-matter) - becomes free unipolar and highly active and is able to overpower its opponent, which becomes passive under these influences.

Here we are concerned above all with a conformity with a natural inner law of reciprocity today entirely unknown to science. That is to say, with very particular types of motion in specially formed and alloyed development-facilitating devices, the preconditions described in the preceding paragraph are satisfied, and because of this the 'Eternally Feminine', as Goethe called this creative essence, can press its counterpart (oxygen) into the centrepoint of this battle and conquer it (see fig. 10).

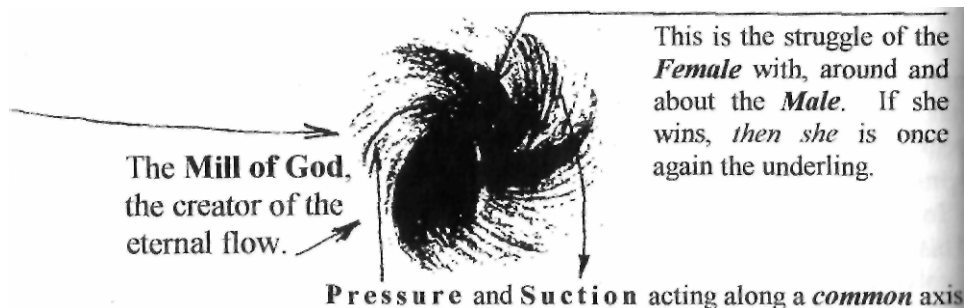


Fig. 10: The Mill of God

The product of this event is the mysterious upcurrent, the naturalesquely ordained resurrection marvel. Springing forth from 'higher' temperatures, it rationally and truthfully explains the increase of what is corpuscular and its qualitative improvement - in a word, the transmutation and perfection of all that is raw material - the process of self-renewal, or to put it briefly, evolution and all growth, its coming into being and passing away.

However, if a physical, thermal or chemical starting impulse is first active, which influences the molecular motion in such a way that the oxygen becomes free, unipolar and aggressive due to the resurgence of positive, group B temperatures, then having been forced into the centre of this combat, the principal formative matter will become passive and will be bound, consumed and digested. The product of this event is the developmentally harmful cavitation current - a variety of the so-called electric current - which as an exceptionally analysing current not only pits and corrodes steel turbine blades, but also decomposes and dissociates the blood of the Earth - water.

In short, it robs everything and anything of its remaining formative and levitative energies in order to mortify the thing itself and to dispatch what has deviated from its ordained path back into this eternally fermenting manure heap - Earth. There, thanks to her special motion and other prerequisites, the total transformation of what has sunk down ensues.

Blood formation or blood decomposition - synthesising or analysing current - vitalisation or devitalisation - health in mind and body or disease, death and economic disaster, all these are decreed by what in the opening paragraph science calls molecular motion whilst having no knowledge of the differences in the forms of motion, which not only determine existence or non-existence, but also all economic progress or decline.

There is insufficient space here to explain the nature of biomagnetic and bio-electric currents or their origin and purpose in more detail. They always come into being and operate simultaneously, because everything is bipolar, i.e. in every man the feminine also exists, and in every woman the masculine. Here too it is merely a question of which type of molecular motion took place first, thus giving precedence to processes of oxidation or reduction. All it takes therefore is a small starting impulse to determine the fate of all living things and whether they are dispatched on a downward or upward path.

Contemporary science is founded on far too low a level of knowledge. The dying forests, the wasting fields and meadows, the polluted waters and the mind- and body-crippling industries are frightening warning signs of a total failure to appreciate the true workings of Nature. Through false pictures of the world, world-views and the ways of working arising from them, science unconsciously or consciously arrested the build-up of quality matter, thus committing the greatest stupidity or the greatest crime; the crime against the spiritual germinating force. It inhibited the transformation of matter into

aetheric and energetic structures and entities; the very thing that even Christ placed at the cardinal point of his world-shaking teachings. This transformation is only possible if very precisely constructed and alloyed calyx<sup>12</sup>- or cup-shaped vessels are moved in the same way that priests have demonstrated to us before the altar for about 2000 years, although they themselves were perhaps unaware of the true significance of this swinging, cruciform motion.

No words suffice to castigate what nature-alienated individuals have perpetrated on their unsuspecting fellow human beings through ignorance or their desire to rule. There is only one thing to do: To point out the developments that we are experiencing today, namely the biological consequences of the disruption of Nature's water-balance through totally unnatural work practices. As a result, all those things, which that something that accompanies us faithfully and unselfishly from the cradle to the grave, requires for its coming into being and its original movement, will now have to travel the road to ruin.

And this ur-blood of the Earth has thus far only been viewed as a chemically inert substance and the provisions for its journey - the diverse forms of sediment - merely deemed to be impurities!!

This may truly appear to be the monstrous invention of an unsound mind to those who have no inkling what colossal energies are contained in a tiny drop of water, which are either bound or freed according to the type of motion. It may also seem just as utopian when it is stated that with the aid of these elemental ur-forces secreted in the medium of water and in the air (or the condensed Breath of God), the entire production of power, heat, cold and light can be reduced in cost by slightly more than 90% and that with this formative synthesising current all growth can be increased by about 30% per annum and qualitatively improved.

Today's forest, land, water and energy resources management and all branches of contemporary science - whatever the specialist discipline - are tragic mistakes, whose terrible consequences will only become apparent when the irrefutable truth has been grasped through practical demonstrations; when people see and understand what is created when any thing - above all air and water - is moved unnaturally and therefore wrongly. Through this absurd form of motion precisely that temperature-form is produced which gives rise to the developmentally harmful cavitation current that wise Nature uses to remove everything from the path of evolution, which for one reason or another is unfit for the growth and formation of the relatively highest quality.

And precisely this tremendous source of power has hitherto been utilised for a supposed build-up of culture!! This continuously destructive principle is taught in every school, so that all humanity is being led into an almost

<sup>12</sup> Calyx = the sepals of a flower collectively forming the outer floral envelope, protective of the bud. — Ed.

escape-less dead-end. Rigid laws and dogmas were contrived which simply do not exist in Nature, where constant change is sovereign.

The immutable law of reciprocity, without which there can be no natural-esque motion, nor anything brought to life, was overlooked, disregarded or deliberately suppressed, "Nulla poena sine lege" (no punishment without law).

For Nature to punish those individuals responsible for the dreadful fate of millions upon millions of human beings was impossible. She therefore had no other alternative but to condemn the whole of humanity, the most dangerous of Nature's trouble-makers, to death by starvation.

Eight hundred million people, i.e. about one third of those alive today [1946], will be mercilessly condemned to starve, if at the final hour it is not possible to produce the practical examples necessary to open the eyes of those who do not perceive the differences between different current-sources, from which, depending on the choice of trifling starting impulse - life or death originate.

This is reason why the Austrian government was requested merely to make a suitable location available at their expense, where in all peace and quiet and with the help of familiarised assistants, it would be possible by practical examples to reveal to the world at large and to expose publicly the ur-causes of this indescribable misery and appalling poverty.

A strange twist of fate led me to the burial ground of an ancient culture on the 20th of May 1946. There people smirked, because they believed they were dealing with a madman, who described water as the blood of the Earth!

### 3.

## New Forms of Motion and Energy

### The Reactive Fuel Economy

Whose natural motive force is the naturalesquely copied space-curve motion of the Earth.

Leonstein, August 1945 (Schauberger Archives)

Centuries ago Galilei discovered that the Earth rotated about its peculiarly individual axis. Through the discovery that the good old Earth rotated - now recognised throughout the world - Galilei experienced all manner of difficulties, a case that is far from isolated, because all those who sift through ancient traditions and practices also have to suffer the full measure of unpleasant experiences and consequently have every reason to repay them with interest and compound interest when the right moment comes.

Unfortunately Galilei could not explain why the Earth actually rotates and what actually should be understood by the term its 'own' or more correctly its 'peculiar' axis. Had he also been able to pass on this information, then we would have been unlikely to have experienced this disastrous machine age. Nor would we have had to experience the lunacy of trying to build up a culture with the influences of fire and the usual forms of heat, which in Nature are used to decompose what is unsuitable for further development. And so it came to pass that the forests were senselessly sacrificed in order to produce the usual rising and expanding heat-forms, which propels flies to the ceiling in a mad rush, while freezing those on the floor. In addition the reserves of coal are as good as exhausted and those who control the meagre residual deposits no longer want to deliver the black diamonds, which are destined by Nature for higher purposes, to those to whom they were previously supplied.

Without coal there would be no water, and without water, no life. For in coal, as in certain other minerals, the elements of carbonic acid are present in

which in turn the allotropic<sup>1</sup> primary materials for growth and development also reside. Reacting to bio-centrifugence, these basic substances are liberated through the cycloid-space-curve-motion of the Earth and under the influence of reactive cooling substances, consume (bind) the counter-weighting oxygen. Reactive differences in potential are created in this way which express themselves as reactive differences in temperature, which on their part, as all-penetrating inner outward<->inward, upward<->downward dynamic influences, intensify the physical (external) form of movement. This leads to a renewed intensification of the inner dynamic processes, which once again act to stimulate additional motion. Thus it is absolutely no wonder that the good old Earth eternally rotates about her peculiarly unique axis, because in this special axis (viz. the shimmering shaft in a water vortex) that something ascends, which enables stationary trout to stand motionless amidst torrential flows and to flee upstream like lightning. A phenomenon inexplicable in terms of mechanics, because the trout must not only overcome its own weight, but also that of the counter-flowing dense and heavy spring water. Indeed it can escape upstream all the more rapidly, the faster the cold specifically heavier water-masses, which swirl about their own axes in exactly the same way that the Earth rotates about hers, enter its jaws and flow out of its gills through a system of cycloid-space-curves. In this way the particular axis is formed in which that something returns to its ur-source, which becomes free through this special rotating motion and the frictional motion produced by it. In becoming free in this way, it then draws the motion-generating form - in this case the trout - in its wake, because this counter-flowing energy-form is the force that enables everything that crawls and flies on this manure-heap Earth to overcome its own weight. In other words, it is the 'levitational force', without which there would be no life, no movement, no growth and naturally no gravitation either.

With this natural formative and levitative force, which only evolves through cycloid-space-curve-motion, machines of all kinds, both stationary and mobile, and even projectiles, can be operated at almost no cost and propelled at any desired speed on land, in and under water, and in the air.

This tremendous power arises from cold oxidative processes, which take place when stocks of bio-centrifugated carbonic acid - as was stated above - react to bio-centrifugence, and under the effects of certain other co-factors attain their relatively highest state of expansion (ray-form state). In this freed (liberated) state they consume (bind) the oxygenic elements, which - still unknown to science - react to centripetence. Becoming denser, the O-elements then withdraw into the axis and therefore have to be dispersed from there mechanically. Thus diffused, they must be made

<sup>1</sup> Allotropic — This refers to elements that exist in two or more different forms. — Ed.

palatable<sup>2</sup> in order to act as levitational fuel for the others (viz. the branches swaying in the wind, whose source of motion - the wind - also arises through reactive differences in temperature). The vertically disposed forces of cyclones, typhoons, hurricanes, etc. are also founded on this developmental process and owe their kinetic energy to cold processes of oxidation.

'Conventional' science and fire-spitting technology naturally do this very differently, indeed in a diametrically opposed fashion. They exploit hot processes of oxidation as the developmental basis for the build-up of a decomposive and retrogressive force, which in Nature is employed for the recall for reconstitution of what is unfit for development. No wonder therefore that this type of force reacts, with resistances that increase by the square, against the insanity of its wrongful exploitation for the purposes of the build-up of culture. Therefore the crowning law of today's technology, the conservation of energy law and the so-called heat equivalent are founded on an unnatural developmental basis. To put it plainly, contemporary science and its technology have backed the wrong horse and have ridden it for so long, or have sacrificed the available raw materials to power precisely the opposite force to such an extent as to drag in an economic collapse by its head and shoulders. It has not understood how to copy the ideal method of generating power and formative energy, or through the naturalesque transformation of inferior raw materials into quality products, how to make the natural sources of energy available in unlimited quantity for a virtually free, silent and development furthering mechanical power.

This ideal fuel is present in a latent state in the stones, which emit a cold golden glow when rubbed together under water - a sign that these energy-concentrations are mature and properly alloyed. Austria, and the Tyrol in particular, is exceptionally rich in such minerals, charged with allotropic formative and levitative substances, which can be used to generate reactive temperatures by very simple means. These can provide a quite ideal form of domestic heating and cooling, because it is in this way that Nature keeps the ground cool in summer and warm in winter. Thanks to this mineral abundance, Austria will become immensely rich, if only it has the will and the determination finally to rid itself of those, who do everything entirely back-to-front so as to secure their continuing existence as so-called experts and

<sup>2</sup> Palatable: Here Viktor Schauberger uses the word 'mundgerecht', which literally means 'suitable for the mouth'. As used here it refers to the processing or preparation of the oxygenic elements for consumption (binding) by the carbonates. The immediately following reference to the action of 'branches swaying in the wind' relates to the way that the leaves and branches of the mother-trees thus moved, break up or 'pre-masticate' as it were, the gross agglomerations of atmospheric gases, thereby refining them sufficiently for absorption by the delicate young saplings. This Viktor Schauberger describes in "Nature's Secrets Unveiled: In Transmutation Lies Eternity", p.11 of *The Fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the Ecotechnology series. It is process analogous to the production of 'pap' in earlier epochs, namely the feeding of babies through the pre-chewing of coarse foods by the mother prior to spitting them into the baby's mouth.—Ed.

specialists. For when things can be done simply, there is no longer any need for those who make everything complicated and upside-down.

Naturally, no normal thinking person will believe that he or she were so brain-washed at school and in church as to be made to believe in the existence of rigid laws and dogmas in a Nature so rich in interchanges of substances and metabolic processes. For this reason it is still necessary to take a small example as an aid, which every respectable Tyrolean knows, who loves a good wine, even if a little dry.

It is known that a good, light and palatable old wine comes into being through fermentation in a cellar. This is none other than a form of digestive process in which cycloid-space-curve-motion naturally plays a part - a motion the naturalistic doctor calls the 'life-creating spiral' and the biotechnician 'double spiral wave motion' (viz. the cycloid movement of the blood, to which we owe the build-up of mental essences, the creation of thoughts, the formation of our bones and flesh, reproductive embryos and of course, the possibility of overcoming our own physical weight).

When the fruit juices that have flourished in the Sun begin to ferment, it is a sign that reactive temperature differences have triggered the fermenting movement, which in the initial stages has to separate the inferior from the superior. The former will be separated and centrifugated out through cycloid-space-curve-motion. The latter interconnects with itself, as it were, and the product of this remarkable marriage process is that something, which also brings us out of the delicately balanced equilibrium that the Earth ceaselessly enjoys. Not being in a state of stable equilibrium, she has constantly to rotate about her own axis in a form of movement that declinates and oscillates in two directions. This is how she generates the inversely symmetrically- and inversely proportionally-acting force, which enables everything that crawls and flies on this dung-heap Earth to move 'originally' (autonomously) in order to seek out its food, which also contains allotropic energy-producing substances. These are then broken down through the vibration of the organs, leading to the familiar development of physical strength and mental vigour, whose ur-causes have not been perceived by physico-technical scientists, who calculate with common calories and measure them with decimal scales and rulers. Moreover, they also believe they have captured everything with their tweezers that is proper to Nature. Unfortunately, however, this cannot be accomplished with such an instrument, because the producer of 'measure' and 'weight' is an imperceptible extra-ordinary energy-form, which as the 'essential' is the 'reactivated' itself, which actively moves the ordinary.

To return to what is contained in good vintage wine, the process is reversed from the outset, for in this case once again activated forces move us reactively, i.e. dislodge us from a state of stable equilibrium. As future bio-technologists, it is with these latter forces that we wish to maintain this instability. For in so



doing we have merely to brake the continuously running bio-machines with a heavy operating load in order finally to solve the whole problem of power and fuel in a truly super-ideal way for through these same forces the diverse foodstuffs, the various forms of growth also come into being, which are known to be endowed with these natural formative and levitative forces for the duration of life. Being thus endowed, they bind a major portion of these elemental levitative forces, or brake them by means of their weight. For this reason all the more regrowth must occur, the greater the production of formative and levitative forces through cycloid-space-curve-motion. Conversely, because of this increase in raw materials, increased stocks of quality matter will subsequently be produced through which the levitational forces will again be intensified.

This two-fold interplay of perpetual motion can be directly observed and studied in deep, cool cellars, for through differences in temperature, what has grown large in the Sun and then reduced in size by squashing, will be moved 'cyloidally' in the cellar. First refined, then made 'cloudy', it slowly becomes clear after termination of this adolescent period. This is how wise Nature operates, who is known to have unlimited developmental periods at her disposition for all things. We, poor souls, to whom only a single, unique life is available in which we will also be forced to make use of cycloid-space-curve-motion in order to alleviate almost intolerable reactive energies through their abreaction, will have to behave more sensibly in order to become somewhat more blissful while still on this Earth than has been the case due to the efforts of 'active' technicians. In other words, we must reverse the way things are done. Cycloid-space-curve-motion must therefore be given pride of place, which logically leads to the almost cost-free mechanical generation of reactive differences in potential, which in turn give rise to increased and intensified active differences in motion. Harnessed once more, these trigger further high-grade differences in potential of a reactive nature, and so on and so forth until temperatures and reactive forces of such a kind are triggered that it is a veritable art to devise an operating load heavy enough to brake and contro these elemental suctional and pressural forces. At the right time, therefore, we must keep our eyes open for the specialists and experts, who function as super-brakes on development!! Most certainly, however, we must replace those, who today brake the normal course of development with the reversed interplay of forces, which they do in such a way as to increase and intensify precisely those kinds of energy that promote decomposition and the expulsion of what is unsuitable for further development. In so doing they trigger a form of perpetual motion, because here too the self-intensifying decomposive and repulsive forces also increase by the square owing to the cycloid-space-curve-motion of the Earth. Sadly they do not see what they have themselves created, namely boundless decline and disintegration instead of an equally

boundless self-intensifying formative build-up, which also results from the universally operating cycloid-space-curve-motion. This would happen merely by reversing the process that they and physico-technical science teach in school and church alike. Consequently - and one can believe it or not - there are two marvellously functioning forms of perpetual motion that direct and produce the eternal coming into being and passing away. For a change, it would be worth setting the other in motion, in order - as already stated - to become somewhat more blissful while actually on Earth than we are under the direction of those who, apart from heating our living spaces unnaturally, also commit all manner of other blunders, for which the present state of affairs is proof. And thus on the next and final page everyone can seek out for themselves what best pleases or appeals to them.

## The Practical Application of Cycloid-Space-Curve-Motion arising from Processes of Cold Oxidation

### Forestry

This would involve the propagation and build-up of fast-growing species of valuable timber by restoring cycloid-space-curve-motion through the re-establishment of naturalesque proportions in the intermixture of various crown and root systems. This will resuscitate the reactive temperature-differences (the reinstatement of microclimates through the graduated arrangement of over- and understoreys and juxtaposition of species) through which the heat-consuming upflows of refreshing and cooling substances ascend like cycloid whirlwinds, which trigger cold processes of oxidation enabling the propagation of species of fine timber on the forest floor (formation of the germinating zone).

### Agriculture

Here the concern would be for the propagation and build-up fast-growing high-quality fruits and cereals through the selection and correct distribution of principal crops and intercrops through the supply of allotropic fat-concentrations in a liquid, vaporous or even an energetic state - the supply of noble water by underground means or the direct supply of noble elements by means of Repulsators (see figs. 24-26).

## Water Supply

The application of this form of motion would bring about the revivification of sluggish, stale, tired, fish deficient, bacterially polluted brooks, streams and rivers through the artificial reinstatement of cycloid-space-curve-motion in draining water.<sup>3</sup> In other words, the reconfiguration of truncated and straightened channels in which the more exalted formative and transformative processes can no longer occur, due to the absence of cycloid motion. Therefore the stocks of basic allotropic heat-imparting substances are no longer consumed (bound) and the improperly regulated watercourses inevitably become warm, stale, devoid of fish and infected with bacteria, because the revivifying form of motion is missing or has been disrupted or eliminated by smooth-walled bank rectification.

## Energy Supply

Here such motion can be practically applied to the following:

- (a) To the liquefaction of coal or carbonic-acid-bearing minerals by way of cold (cycloid) systems of flow, e.g. the generation of incombustible, gas-deficient and highly expansive, dynagen-rich 'explosive' water and drive water with the aid of Repulsators for the purpose of producing highly expansive pressures for driving machines of all kinds.
- (b) To the etherisation of ordinary air-masses through the re-pulsive precipitation of inferior waste matter (water-like carrier substances) and the enhancement of im-plosive suctional forces through the generation of an 'organic vacuum', the co-active counterforce to the above high-pressure expansion, by means of Repulsines (see figs. 30-33).
- (c) the fabrication of naturalesquely designed water turbines, pumps, etc. (see figs. 11-13) with about a 90-fold increase in output and performance under otherwise equal conditions through the combination of both components of motion (pressural and suctional forces in a reactive state) on a common developmental axis.
- (d) To the heating and cooling of living spaces with the aid of allotropic mineral elements through the intensification of the re-pulsive power and performance of expansive substances (the radiation of stocks of basic elements from selenium cells. With slight stimulation these produce reactive forms of temperature, which indirectly result in a form of cooling that acts from below upwards and a diffuse form of heat that acts from

<sup>3</sup> See channel with flow guides in fig.8 and patent figs. on p.207 of *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

above downwards, all of which result in the best and cheapest wood-less and coal-less air-conditioning (see the Klimator, figs. 27 & 28). (e) To a roughly 90% increase in electricity production through the use of repulsive dynamos, the generation of cold light, etc. by means of cycloid flow systems, etc.

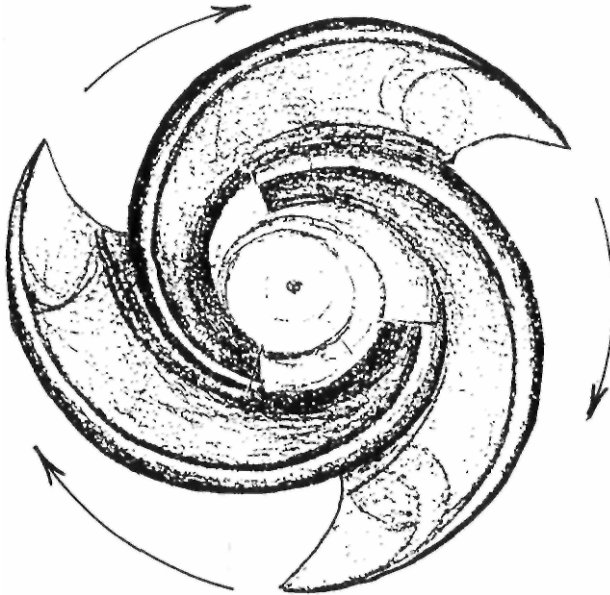


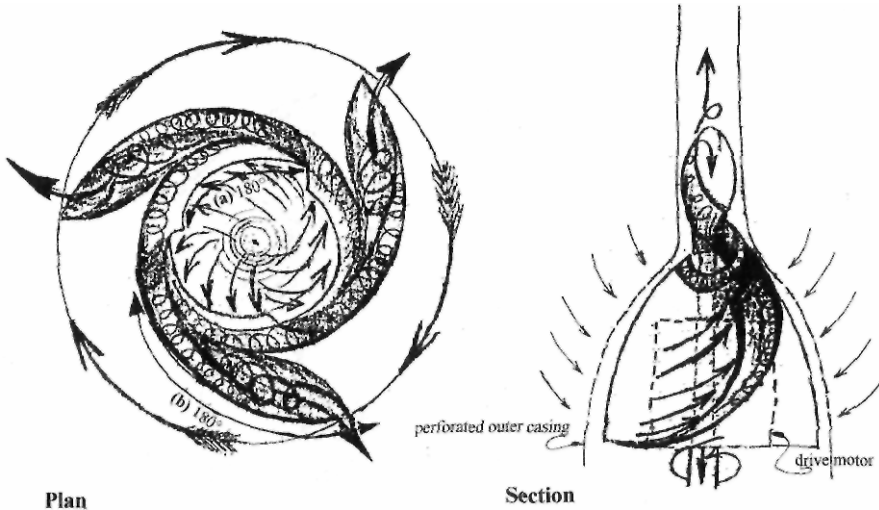
Fig. 11: 3-blade Bio-impeller

### In General

In the same way that it would be impossible, for example, for human beings and animals to reproduce and further develop (increase and qualitatively improve), were Nature not to enforce an interaction between their primary sexual substances through intolerable urge-driven differences in tension, which function reactively, there would likewise be no possibility for the reproduction and further development of plants, minerals and metals, and the physical (active) forms of heat and cold. Today's science is not only founded on a false developmental basis, but also on too low a level of knowledge. It ignores the formative reaction and using combustion processes gives pride of

<sup>4</sup> Excremental or faecal technology: This expression reflects Viktor Schauberg's view that today's technology is founded on the wrongful combustion of waste matter, such as oil and coal. As the energy-deficient physical residues of formerly vital substances, i.e. the expelled by-products of interactions of a purely energetic nature, he regards them as Nature's faecal matter — hence the term 'excremental'.

place to an economy powered by excremental matter. For this reason an economic decline is inevitable. The reintroduction of cycloid-space-curve-motion signifies the reinstatement of the normal progress and processes of development and the immediate alleviation of privation and penury.



Plan

Section

The water must rotate about itself and within itself (about its own longitudinal axis) through  $180^\circ$  on both upper (a) and lower (b) sections of the turbine blade, making a full revolution of  $360^\circ$ .

Fig. 12: 3-blade Bioturbine

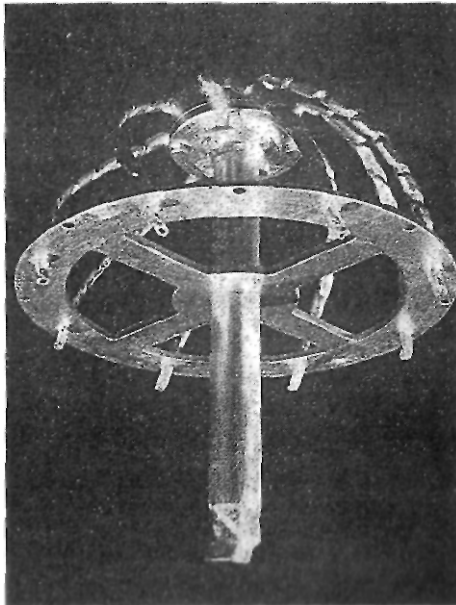


Fig. 13: Bioturbine rotor with whorl-pipes

## The Economy Founded on Reactively Produced Energy as the Naturalesque Source of Mechanical Power

Leonstein, August 1945, (Schauberger Archives)

In the following a ticklish theme will be addressed briefly, about which it is difficult to remain objective for a variety of reasons. Even in the present situation it is not an easy matter not to say too much, nor too little. In a certain sense, a golden middle way must be sought in order to identify clearly those things that which will determine the future fate of humanity. A way out will also be shown to those who have suffered serious setbacks from every quarter, leaving many a bitter after-taste behind. In many instances, these were reminiscent of the religious inquisitions, when it was also believed that a person's faith could be fortified with all manner of instruments of torture. Similar torment had to be endured by the people, which will be just as little forgotten as the satyr-like excesses of those who, as former dictators, should be held responsible for the most heinous offences. For the German people these will foreshadow a lasting shame, although throughout the ages there were people, who did precisely such things whenever their retention of power was threatened - a sign that there was no other solution to keeping their heads above water a little longer.

In every case, however, it was always those who suffered either from too great a trust or from a belief in salvation already bordering on insanity, and therefore incapable of judging for themselves, who had to pay the penalty. Thus they became the victims of those, who already knew how to manipulate history so cleverly, that in the end all that was left for the unsuspecting co-travellers on this road, was to be hung along with the guilty. And thus they were doubtlessly sympathetic towards the present English Labour Party, when it no longer felt obliged to support those elements of British foreign policy of the preceding decade, which in the House of Commons had been criticised by the rank and file of the Labour movement. So much briefly for politics per se in regard to the universal analysis of day-to-day political decision-making, which plays such a major role in these present times that it is just as difficult to obtain an overview and assessment of it, as it is the contents of pastoral letters, or the quite uncanny silence of those, who as perhaps the most successful businessmen, have the keenest interest in the present state of affairs, but who say absolutely nothing about it for the time being. For many centuries my forefathers served as foresters under the bishop's crook and being in this particular profession, experienced things an outsider could never even imagine. This is because the forester's whole approach to life predisposes him to expect the full measure of certain human weaknesses.

The behaviour of the timber merchants was therefore not totally unfamiliar to him, who in this regard and in other ways too would think nothing of thoroughly taking the next good fellow for a ride whenever the opportunity presented itself.

As a former Master of the Wilderness and hunting guide to a princely house, I myself have had a profound insight into the customs and practices of those circles, who consider it a matter of course to exploit their underlings as a means to an end, so as to be able to enjoy their lives and occasionally to afford themselves pleasures, which, were it conceivably possible, would even bring a blush to the face of a lecherous old buck well versed in such affairs. In any event, charity has never yet been the motivating sentiment of those, who coined this beautiful word or who made all manner of promises on this account, which were impossible to keep from the very outset for reasons that will be elaborated in greater detail in what follows. This should not be viewed as a cheap critique, however, but rather as a necessity in order to expose the root of the evil and thus place a finger on the actual wound. With very few exceptions, this will be experienced as painful or at least as unpleasant. Unless this is done, however, the concept of an 'economy founded on reactive energies' cannot be explained.

Without 'reaction' there would be no growth and further development, no increase of any kind, and no qualitative improvement. Similarly there would be no refined matter, no raw material, no motion and no life.

What triggers this reaction is the well-known dynamics of the sexual urge, which re-establishes equilibrium between intolerable differences in tension and potential. Because these differences are always present, this original form of movement will constantly be provoked by a motivating force that never wanes. As a form of motion, we are here primarily concerned with the motion that the Earth has demonstrated to us since the beginning of time. Referred to as 'cycloid-space-curve-motion', it is synonymous with what the naturalistic doctor calls the 'life-creating life-spiral', and the biotechnologist calls 'double screw-form wave motion'.

It is common knowledge that Galilei discovered this motion and because of it, suffered a veritable martyrdom. Up to now nobody has been able to explain why secular and religious science were so hugely disturbed by this discovery. Since then there has no longer been any doubt that the Earth rotates about its own axis. Why it does so, and what purpose is served by this peculiar inclined, gyrating motion, which oscillates to and fro along two different axes has so far never been explained.<sup>5</sup>

Every attempt to provide an explanation was thwarted due to the strenuous resistance of those, who had already made Galilei's life difficult. This awoke in me such a interest in the true nature of this peculiar and unique motion,

<sup>5</sup> See figs. 6a, 6b & 7, Nature as Teacher, Vol. II of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

that I made it my life's work to investigate it down to the smallest details. In spite of the victimisation and harassment, this intention was also carried through to the point where, as perhaps the only one who really knew, I had the right to expose with ruthless clarity, the reasons why even today this explanation is still so opposed and no stone left unturned to suppress it.

Since there would be little point in providing a long and detailed preliminary scientific explanation, a simple example that can be understood by everyone will suffice to explain the nature of this form of motion, which we all have to thank for all we see around us or are otherwise aware of. Only one thing remains hidden from us and that is the 'reactive' temperature-form. This actually involves higher undetectable temperature differences, which reveal the presence of two opposing 'ur-primordial' primary substances, which explain the profound mystery of the genesis of all life or inner motion. Since this will invalidate all forms of contemporary belief and science, it seems to be the real reason why an explanation is shunned in such circles.

Whether this is intentional or unintentional will not and cannot be addressed here. One thing should be emphasised at the outset, namely, that it is futile to continue to oppose this explanation, which is in the interest of all humanity, because widespread interest in this mysterious form of motion has already been so aroused that no power on Earth is in a position to frustrate it.

But now to the example mentioned earlier: In the 'normal' course of cellar fermentation two different (reactive and active) temperature differences (this two-fold concept will be described later) trigger off that special form of motion which, after the expulsion of the less valuable in two opposite directions, gives rise to ethereal energetic matrices that also operate in the same two directions. A destructive force that self-intensifies by the square is activated, whose function is to return to the Earth as quickly as possible, everything that would inflict damage on that which explains all life and movement, and which moves in the other direction (vertically) towards its objective.

This self-generating force, which also intensifies by the square, not only refutes above all the conservation of energy law, the law of gravity and the Second Law of Thermodynamics; in short, all rigid laws of whatever kind, but also renders just as invalid, all those basic tenets and principles impossible in Nature, such as the dogmatic axioms of theology. By enshrining these so-called laws, both science and theology have committed several blunders, and through this identification of their intentionally or unintentionally promulgated fallacies, have made fools of themselves for all time. In any event, they gained an advantage in this way, the loss of which will now for the first time reveal the unholy consequences of the greatest deception, although it could merely be self-deceit. For if the process is reversed, i.e. if the form of motion actuated by the above temperature differences is given first place in naturalesquely constructed and shaped development-facilitating devices,



then even higher forms of temperature influence evolve with which all that we so commonly call 'growth' can be regulated at will. In addition, we are provided with waxing, self-generating motive forces, which intensify by the square, making mechanical power of every kind virtually free of cost and therefore worthless according to today's values. According to higher concepts, however, they become valuable for the first time, for in comparison the motive forces in use today are not only as good as worthless, but are also responsible for the fact that things are deteriorating all the more rapidly, the wider the scope of today's technology, or its intensification. This realisation is consistent with the fact that this excremental technology, which exploits these perverted energies for propulsion, is virtually at an end, because oil is already in short supply and the stocks of wood and coal are quite unable to cover the demand. As things now stand, nobody knows what is to replace them.

We shall now address what is encompassed by the title of this article. Rather than present a long and detailed description or explanation, the only proper course of action would simply be to demonstrate the new source of energy, as most people would suggest. Certainly that would be the right thing to do. However, various reasons argue against this, which should and must be taken into account. Firstly, in the present times [immediately post-WW II] it is not at all easy to obtain the necessary materials, suitable skilled labour, machines, etc., all of which are required to fabricate these bio-machines. Moreover, and understandably so, a justifiable disbelief also prevails when such Utopian things are to be produced and also have to be explained in order to begin the laborious creation of a first prototype, because today nobody can be motivated to work on frivolities. Over the last few years extremely hard work was done under almost impossible conditions and the most extraordinary results achieved, all of which seemed ordained to arouse a zest for further work. However, the desire to work is by no means overwhelming and entirely justifiable suspicion is everywhere. This is compounded by the fact that in spite of all the curiosity, nobody wants to be ridiculed for being taken for a ride by a supposed visionary.

All this is more or less irrelevant, however, because the preliminary work has now reached a point where these difficulties will somehow yet be overcome, because the whole thing can be looked at from many angles. Moreover, because no responsibility must be carried for this indubitably fantastic affair, some will therefore participate when nothing is risked by doing so, because everything will be honestly and properly paid for, which even these days, when money is nothing more than a scrap of more or less beautifully printed paper, is a normal incentive for those, who gladly accumulate funds for their future leisure or out of sheer passion to succeed.

The second reason why one cannot merely blurt out the news about the Repulsine (see figs. 30-33) and the Repulsator (see figs. 24-26) is because the

already very shaky scientific edifice would come tumbling down, if the full scope of the reactive energy economy should become known too quickly. An upheaval of such a kind would then arise, which could not be endured in these days of food shortages, and the baby would be thrown out with the bath-water by those, who have only one idea left: somehow to struggle through life and to be free of all problems. Were this implemented, however, then the most marvellous things would come to life again, which compared to the present world situation would be a paradise. The trick therefore is - how do I tell the innocent children that the end has come for all manner of lusts for power, because a natural power is now appearing, before which everything else must unconditionally capitulate. Today this new power rejoices over the victory, which was brought about by the fact that the Germans - and this can be examined from any desired viewpoint - were unfortunately the best exponents of a technology founded on faecal matter. Unhappily they exploited precisely those expulsive energies that enable us, for example, to rid ourselves of those substances so vital to the Earth for maintaining the eternal renewal of her motive forces. With the aid of these earthly and other waste materials she recreates everything anew, which our evolutionally older descendants absolutely require for their various necessities of life. For this reason wise Nature will not hesitate much longer before she clears everything off the green dissection-table with a single sweep of the hand, as it were, upon which, using decimal scales and an inch ruler, attempts were made to discover the 'essence', namely, that which provides for the weight and measure of all things. And thus, instead of specific elements they found absolutely heavy remnants, which they then declared to be 'atoms'. That these remnants of a former organic whole, which have been artificially rendered potential-less (stripped of life-force, so to speak), interact in a lively fashion, is quite obvious. Under no circumstances, however, do the products of synthesis that produce higher quality products come into being in this way, but only active forms of heat and cold. These promote the process of decay through further interactions, which in turn give rise to the decomposive and retrogressive factors that promote an accelerated disintegration as well as the annihilating energies that intensify by the square. That these energy-forms, which foster decomposition and are possessed of a force of resistance that increases by the square, contradict the irrational assumption that they actually further the build-up of culture, is perhaps only incomprehensible to those who know nothing of the specific counter-elements and who, because of a tragic error, established the crowning law of contemporary technology, such that under all circumstances the resistance must increase by the square of the velocity. The specific counter-form, the upward falling weight as it were, comes into being when etherialised substances are transferred to the 4th dimension. This happens, due to the fact that negatively potentiated constituents of carbonic

acid are bio-centrifugated with the aid of cycloid space-curve motion and so strongly expanded by mechanical means, that they become free, unipolar, cool and highly active in a kind of ray-form. They consume (bind) the oxygenes which become inactive due to the effect of this reactive temperature influence, when these seminal substances<sup>6</sup>, which concentrate around the longitudinal axis are dispersed mechanically. In this way they are made palatable as it were, in a manner similar to branches which, swayed up and down by the wind, prepare or pre-masticate the food for the young saplings growing under the protection of the mother-trees. The ultimate products of this digestive process are the high-grade forms of fructigen which, through a progressive series of transformative and formative processes, are produced in similar fashion, when one entity is consumed by a higher one, which in turn falls victim to an even higher lover. The fructigens thus produced are finally consumed by the Earth herself, who gives upward birth to primary products of synthesis, which are created through a progressive series of interactions involving the etherealisation of former fatty-matter derived, for example, from naturalesquely broken down and transformed worm-fat. This etherealising process then re-produces the more highly influential substances in an energetic state, which the community of worm descendants once more brings to life and moves 'originally'.

However, to return once more to the cellar fermentation mentioned earlier, no combustible essential oils (alcohol formations) are formed, when through self-intensifying cooling influences, cold oxidising processes take place, which give rise to increased and qualitatively enhanced energy-forms, providing the metabolic process is reversed. That is to say, cycloid motion has to be initiated first. As a result, precisely those high-grade energy products arise, which influence the way in which the end-products and their later derivatives are created, and which then endow them with multiplying and quality improving potencies.

This perpetuum mobile is also involved when the developmental process is intensified with Repulsines and, for example, the substances contained in the air are subjected to the fermentation process outlined above. In this way the same thing is achieved practically and factually, but in a slightly different active form. In the same way that the end-products influence the more basic factors and cause them to move, they also cause them to be displaced upwards at cyclonic speeds; a process that also gives rise to reactive forms of temperature at the same time. Using these reactive temperature-forms the floor can be made warm in a rational way. In spite of the forces that help us to overcome our own body-weight so effortlessly, providing both metabolic processes

<sup>6</sup> Seminal or fertilising substances: This relates to oxygen in all its forms. In Viktor Schiuberger's view oxygen is not of the Earth, but comes from above. As a lower provenance sunlight, it is male fertilising substance, whereas the mother substances, so called 'carbones' originate from within the Earth. — Ed.

function unimpededly, we still have to creep and crawl around on this floor in a way that houseflies cannot emulate, which are perhaps the only beneficiaries of these incongruous conventional methods of heating. These methods will also almost completely exhaust the reserves of coal, which is no longer available in sufficient quantity, or is impossible to deliver to the point of use with the present means of transport (the true energy-gluttons), even if sufficient quantities were available for this coming catastrophic winter [1945-46]. It is therefore understandable that those who are threatened with freezing to death and starvation will fall upon this new method of heating and transport like beasts of prey, unless the matter is put in hand with extreme caution. This is the principal reason why heating with mineral substances, with which reactive temperature-forms can be produced virtually without cost, must be inaugurated with great care. These reactive temperatures are activated merely when various allotropic substances are gently stimulated by active heat influences.

To say more about this here would be pointless, because up to now nobody knew anything about the ur-causal energies that dwell in every substance, and especially in very ordinary pebbles. When these are rubbed together under water they produce a gleam of cold light. This is an indication that the bipolar basic elements are mature, ready for release and can be used to generate those forms of temperature, which maintain us and all we see around us in the unstable thermal equilibrium that maintains health.

In an already higher form as invisible suspensions, these same substances are contained in the carrier of life-substances - water - and can be made free and active with the use of Repulsators. In their relatively highest evolved form these bacteriophagous threshold stocks are to be found in the air. These indifferent elements of intermediate substances can be liberated by means of cycloid-space-curve-motion in so-called Repulsines, resulting in the intimate fusing of the former carrier-substances, which exit from the lower end of the apparatus, and immediately interact with the surrounding difference-matter, namely substances of a highly polarised nature. This leads to the formation of new juvenile air, which strives to displace itself upwards, because this increased, qualitatively-improved, evolutionally-older air cannot mix with the surrounding older air-masses, which have a different potential.

Conversely, similar formative and levitative energies are created in front of the intake through primary processes of synthesis. These, for example, enable the trout to stand motionless in torrential streams, or to flee like lightning upstream when danger threatens. This is a phenomenon that cannot be explained mechanically, because the free-standing trout must not only overcome its own body-weight, but also the weight of the oncoming water. It overcomes this all the more easily, the more rapidly and torrentially the water containing these valuable threshold suspensions flows, which are reactivated

by the cycloid-space-curve systems of the trout's gills. In consort with the above supplementary energies, which squeeze the tear-shaped body of the trout forwards (see fig. 38(a), they then give rise to the above phenomenon. In a similar manner, naturalesquely constructed aeroplanes, submarines, or long-range weapons (air and water torpedoes) can be made to move silently through the air or water at any desired speed and almost without cost. Stationary machines of all kinds can also be powered by reactive fuels, which require neither mining nor other forms of extraction, because they are already present in superfluity. These are the allotropic bacteriophagous elements, which merely await the cycloid motive impulse in order to function as miniature dynamos and which through their translatory energies automatically produce the power that intensifies by the square. This explains the tremendously high velocities characteristic of those most highly developed expansive forces - ray formations.

In order to throw more light on their origins, there are two types of seeds:

1. Those responsible for all physical forms of growth, which according to their degree of maturity fall down and upon returning into the earth, germinate and produce the increased and qualitatively ennobled forms of growth. These are the provenances of sweet-matter (carbones), or the
2. Seminal fruits, which having fulfilled their reproductive function, become dormant, die off and become the seminal substances, as it were, for the creation of quality matter, which after decomposition are then transmuted through 'cycloid-space-curve-motion'.

By means of progressive interactions with reactive forms of potential, this results in the segregation of those elements, which in the form of allotropic intermediate substances were left untouched, whereas the more inferior substances descend even further under even stronger influences of heat and are even further broken down. Once again what is still useful will be precipitated out and deposited, until the most inferior substances of all attain their relatively lowest state of evolvment and thereby their greatest degree of separation from the most noble, which on the other side has risen to the highest state. In terms of its height and depth, this is how the above threshold-element depot comes into being. Therefore through a graduated process of deposition according to quality, the variously potentiated indifferent elements have different developmental periods. Those with a smaller separation interact earlier than the others, and logically, have to cover shorter developmental paths in order to reach the next higher evolved state.

The trick was then to discover the appropriate development-facilitating forms in which, through intensified cycloid motion, even the relatively low-quality seminal-fruits sucked in by Repulsines together with their carrier

substances of water or air, could also be whirled around at high speed in cycloid-space-curves. At the same time oligodynamic (decay-promoting) and catalytic (growth promoting) secondary influences also evolve and in this way the process of formation and transformation can take place within seconds due to the slip-pressures and suctional forces, which intensify by the square. This is how it is possible to build up the 'ur-primordial' levitative and supplementary forces in the form of metaphysical suctional and pressural forces almost without cost, in other words the creation of an energy-gradient, which 'ur-originates', as it were, from dynamic elements in a latent state. This opens the way for practically exploitable atom-transformation, or expressed otherwise, for the transubstantiation of former matter (fatty-matter) into negatively potentiated dynagens, those spiritual animating and dynamising energies; a transmutation that has been demonstrated many times over two millennia by the priest when making the symbolic sign of the cross over the Holy Grail - the extreme egg-shape (the calyx). All that hitherto was lacking was the practical design - the model - that proves what is actually obvious, namely, that with annihilating fire and decay-promoting forms of heat, no form of culture can develop. These models, which are now operational and available, merely await the 'extreme unction', as it were, in order to set them in motion and thus inaugurate a new age of development, wherein all privation and other problems will come to a natural end.

### Explosion and Implosion (Expansion and Impansion) from a Scientific and Biological Viewpoint.

Viktor Schauburger, Linz, Austria, 16.01.1956, Implosion Magazine, No. 113, p. 63.

Expansions are retarded explosive effects in the realm of basic substances, in which decentrating (expanding) reactive effects of a subordinate order are freed.

Impansions are slow processes of densation, which for example, can be exploited in so-called chillers or refrigerating machines and are to be viewed as normal de-stressing processes.

Explosion is chemical reaction that takes place extremely rapidly, in which a large increase in pressure occurs due to large quantities of hot gases. Explosions are always innately destructive. They therefore function in a life-harming way.

Implosion is a biochemical reaction and takes place equally rapidly, during which a strong increase in low pressure occurs, whose active force increases by the square of the rate of the decline in heat.

The cause of an explosion is the sudden binding by highly charged oxygen, which at  $+40^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $104^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) becomes free and aggressive, of the sweet substances generally known as carbonates, which become increasingly passive (inactive) with pressure and increase in heat.

With explosions vorticity (turbulence) always occurs, resulting in a reduction in the velocity of the through-flowing substance, leading in turn to cavitation, viz. the corrosion on ships propeller or pressure screws in turbines. In particular when snow meltwater or glacier water is centrifugated. In such cases radar-like retroactive re-actions takes place, which as detonating events, have a shattering effect. The detonation velocity can be a thousand times greater than the normal combustion velocity, which explains, for example, why the resistance to motion increases by the square in all explosion and expansion machines, which also increases by the square of the velocity of an increase in heat. It therefore acts to impede motion.

The cause of an implosion is the sudden binding (emulsion) of oxygen, which becomes passive (inactive) with a decrease in heat and in this state is consumed by the sweet substances, which attain their charged state at  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ). The mechanical atomisation of the oxygen is necessary, however.

With implosions a molecular ordering takes place in a radial->axial direction and therefore a suctional effect takes place in the axis, where the most vigorous decrease in heat and pressure occurs. This attracts, indraws, concentrates and binds (emulsifies) the oxygen, which gives rise to diamagnetism. This is precisely the opposite of the atomic pressural force, generally known as electricity. With implosion, detonationless retro-suctional effects occur in the core zone, which promote a higher grade emulsive process, namely the binding of the oxygen, which becomes increasingly passive the closer it is to the centre of flow. This results in the collapse of the peripheral masses, the release of the through-flowing substance from the walls, and thereby to an almost frictionless increase in the velocity of the self-inwinding through-flowing material, which accelerates by the square of the velocity of a falling heat gradient.

# New Views of Electromagnetism

## Magnetism - Electricism

14th June 1948, Implosion Magazine, No. 123, pp 18-23

**M**agnetism and electricism are the two opposing metaphysical energy-forms, which regulate life and death and which dwell in every solid, liquid and gaseous (aeriform) mass (matter) in an allotropic and latent transitional state. They await the all-important developmental impulse in order to be transformed into higher-grade (life-affirming) or lower-grade (life-negating) forms of energy. In the former case a magnetolytic dissociation process plays the mediatory role and in the latter an electrolytic. The belief that magnetism was a passive and uninteresting by-product of electricism arose merely because nobody was aware of the type of motion that gives rise to higher-grade energy-forms. Nor were they aware of the associated dynamic shapes with which latent bipolar dynagens and their carrier-substance can be accelerated in such a way naturalesquely that, in accordance with the equation  $F = ma$ , the force responsible for the increase in substance and qualitative improvement (ennoblement) arises with whose aid the relatively highest grade energy-form can come into being. This special form of motion, still unknown to conventional science, can magnetise a tripolar mass of air or water up to a maximum of 36% virtually without cost. To do this a particularly constructed, profiled and suitably alloyed form is required, which promotes the evolvment of a developmentally progressive energy, the power of which increases in proportion to the centripetating rotational velocity. In this process it is possible to overcome physical weight and mental torpor effortlessly at almost no expense. Accordingly, magnetism is therefore levitism, the creative (metaphysical) counterforce to electricism, the latter being the decomposive energy-form that actuates gravitism, or physical and mental relapse (the death state).



In this regard the following must be explained: Viewed as a whole, all matter is a tripolar product of motion in which lower-grade dynagen concentrations, i.e. higher-grade qualigen in a pre-developmental embryonic state (here referred to as vitamin molecules), are present in an allotropic (polymorphic - solid, liquid, gaseous) state.

These concentrations of subtle matter are bacteriophagous threshold conformations (being neither corpuscular, nor metaphysical embryos) in which the opposing energy-forms mentioned at the beginning are suspended, which oscillate gently in liquid or gaseous media in a wavering state of equilibrium. That is to say, they possess too much levitational force to gravitate and too much lower-grade mass to levitate autonomously. Their inner processes of motion are sustained by the ambient differences in temperature. These, however, are insufficient to determine the fate of these threshold substances as they vacillate at this cross-roads.

The decisive factor here is *il primo movere*. This is the mysterious motive impulse that Leonardo da Vinci sought in vain during his whole life in order to activate *il primo motore*, the organic machine, in such a way that the intent of the original mobility-enabler - Life - could take its natural course.

This can be achieved when the rhythmical process of motion - an interplay between components (sub-forces) of suction and pressure - is activated in a manner in accord with natural development. That is to say, the suctional component, which builds up the invigorating motive influence prevails and outweighs the fatigue-inducing pressural component.

In this case magnetism, the levitating, life-affirming and relatively highest grade energy-form, springs forth from the above dynagen capsules - the vitamin molecules.

This is to be compared with the tragic error in motion made by today's technologists, hydraulicists and dynamicists inasmuch as they produced the reversed motive impulse in all machines, whether for systems of conveyance or for the generation of light and temperature. In place of the invigorating suctional component they allowed the pressural component to prevail and predominate, which has a fatiguing effect on the moved mass.

In order to give the reader some idea of the far-reaching repercussions of this disastrous misunderstanding of motion, the following will explain how energies that function in different ways can be built up.

Energy in its almost purest state is produced when any given mass (e.g. air or water) is propelled above the speed of sound in order to separate the lower from the higher grade and to ennoble the latter through magnetolytic (formative) chain reactions. This gives rise to the substance-increasing retro-influent<sup>1</sup> energy-form, which endows what has been increased with reproductive and evolutive potency.

<sup>1</sup> retro-influent, refers to the energy form that reverts to physical substance in contrast to that which exalts to metaphysical dimensions of energy. — Ed.

All systems of technical, hydraulic and dynamic motion cause the axial->radial dissociation of the tripolar masses of air and water, through which pressure, which generates lower-grade heat-forms, increases by the square of the centrifugating rotational velocity. This results in electrolytic dissociative processes, wherein the oxygen becomes free, unipolar and highly aggressive, and consumes and digests the carbonates (fermented fatty-matter), which become passive under this heat influence.

Precisely the opposite dissociation is inaugurated when the suctional component prevails or is dominant. This is because suction, which produces higher-grade coolness, increases in proportion to the centripetating rotational velocity. This invigorating (quality-enhancing) suctional effect can only be created when a tripolar mass of water or air is radially->axially rotated at high speed about its own axis.

This biotechnical system of mass acceleration produces upwardly flowing magnetism, whose formative and levitative force increases by the square of the radial->axial rotational velocity (see fig. 14) in a naturalesquely constructed, contoured and alloyed generating device. This system is still unknown to today's purely mechanistic science, which is founded on too low a level of knowledge.

For this reason any expert opinion from this quarter is totally uninteresting, because the scientists, who failed to perceive the natural process of development, formulated rigid laws and dogma that do not exist in Nature's rhythmical interplay of forces.

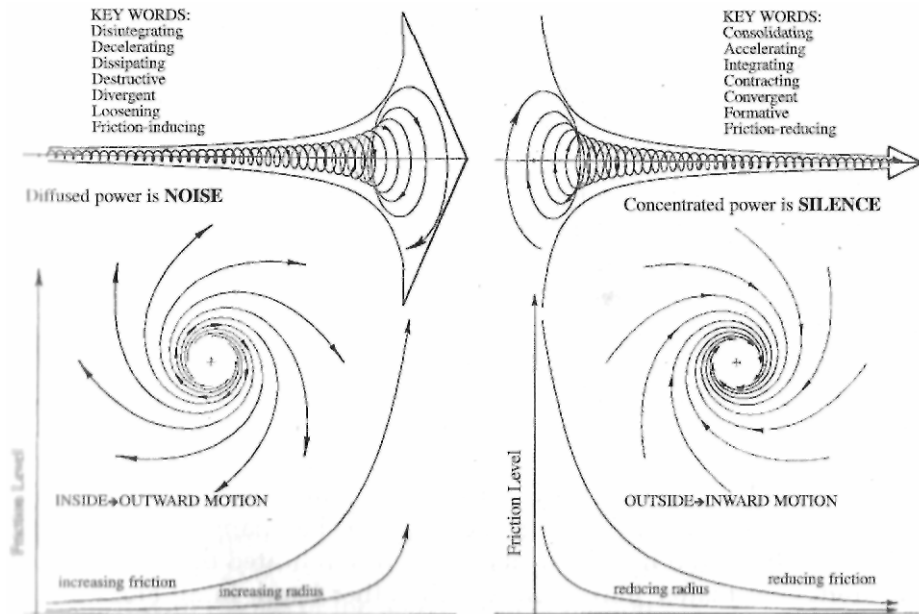


Fig. 14: Comparison between axial->radial (inside->outwards), radial->axial (outside->inwards) motion

No law of energy conservation, nor any heat or other equivalence exists and hence no insuperable law of gravity, for all that is necessary is merely to accelerate a mass of ordinary water or air naturalesquely in order to generate upwardly flowing magnetism. This is the colossal force that maintains the whole Earth-ball in unstable equilibrium and whose revolution in cycloid-spiral-space-curves is caused and sustained by the above rotary (torque-producing) levitating current. By means of magnetolytic dissociative processes, this motion ur-produces the enlivening and originally moving (form-creating) retro-influent energy out of deceased fatty-matter; an energy that gives rise to the hitherto mysterious processes of genesis and increase, and the qualitative improvement (ennoblement) of what has been naturalesquely increased. In other words, it is responsible for the natural self-renewal and evolvment of everything that crawls and flies on this Earth.

Up to now this formative, levitative, multiplying and ennobling natural force has not only been inhibited, but through the reversed form of mass acceleration has been transformed into the decomposive energy-form that destroys development-ripe raw-material. All this happened for the sole reason that air and water were moved axially->radially (= technically, hydraulically or even dynamically) instead of radially->axially, because it was generally believed that the earthly residues of former life decayed to dust and ashes! And so it came to pass that these vital formative substances were thoughtlessly decomposed or combusted in order to produce lower-grade light, temperature and power. In so doing people literally condemned themselves to death by the very sweat of their brows.

The consequences of this defective motion are so great that there is only one thing left to do, namely to reveal the truth with brutal frankness; a truth which, as a Roman poet declared, has been so cleverly concealed that only the sages understood it. Those who think naively, however, continue to go astray. As the mentally castrated so to speak, they do not perceive that they mis-earn their daily bread all the more rapidly by the sweat of their brows, the more conscientiously they carry out the processes and procedures expounded from lecture-chairs and pulpits. They have become the victims of an over-enfeebled mind and only after the most difficult experiences will they be able to re-acquire their innate intuition and repentfully return to Nature.

To put it briefly and simply: We have been taught to wind up the ur-works like a clock, i.e. axially->radially. However, the ur-works that maintain the clock-springs of hunger and love in constant motion must be wound up radially->axially, because only thus is it possible to enable the suctional components to prevail, which produce levitism = upwardly streaming magnetism.

In reality, for the last 2000 years the opposite has happened. Only the Catholic Church, even if merely symbolically, has indicated the naturalesque way to transform matter into spirit. On the other hand, in all areas of the

economy and industry secular science instructed and taught the opposite 'winding'. Therefore, in lieu of the evolution-fostering (ennobling) spirit, it raised and reinforced the demon in the form of development-impeding electricism, as if by conveyor belt, to such an extent that the magnetism-generating Earth, which moves in cycloid-spiral-space-curves, is now incapable of neutralising the decomposive energies and their effects produced by millions upon millions of human beings.

It was therefore inevitable that we should be assailed by the catastrophes of Nature that we are presently experiencing. They are exactly the opposite of those experienced by the Atlanteans, who realised the danger of over-stimulating formative and levitative energies only when whole sections of the Earth were wrenched skywards by these elemental (metaphysical) suctional forces.

All today's machines, all methods of conveyance and the production of light and heat enable the lower-grade heat-, light- and temperature-producing pressured components to prevail and predominate.

Since no heat or kinetic equivalence exist, but only the reactive intensification of development-fostering or development-impeding energies, an economic, social, moral and cultural decline had to take place as the scope of pressure-inducing machines and other such devices increased and intensified.

Accordingly we have to learn the lesson from both extremes and balance out both forms of motion and acceleration in such a way that in accordance with the well-known equation  $F = ma$ , the desired force  $F$  in the form of a predominantly magnetic ion constantly possesses enough levitational superiority to ensure that natural increase and qualitative improvement can keep pace with the unavoidable increase in the population. That is to say, the standard of living must be regulated through the use of higher-grade (quality-increasing) retro-influent dynagens, which come into being when bipolar threshold masses are centripetated in accordance with the equation  $E = mc^2$ . In other words, when they are accelerated by radially->axially in-winding forces to a speed exceeding that of sound under the simultaneous effect of a falling temperature gradient, i.e. accelerated along the longitudinal axis above their boundary velocities. This gives rise to the higher-grade factors of temperature, light and energy out of which upwardly streaming magnetism springs forth from the spiritual embryos, the vitamin-molecules mentioned at the beginning. These are suspended in a delicately balanced state of equilibrium in the media of air and water and await the naturalesque motive impulse in order, as refined subtle matter, to transform themselves into formative, multiplying and ennobling retro-influent energies. This will signify the end of the present shortages of food, raw material, germinating substances and fuels, and instead of capitalism and bolshevism a true socialism will arise about which

Christ preached 2,000 years ago, who taught of the transformation of matter into spirit with the aid of the above form of motion.

## Magnetism = the Function of Levitism and Electricism = the Function of Gravitism

June 1948 (Schauberger Archives)

Magnetism and electricism are the subordinate functions of two metaphysical energetic magnitudes, 'levitism' and 'gravitism' which reign supreme over coming into being and passing away.

These opposing executive forces are to be found in statu nascendi in every solid, liquid and gaseous (air) medium and in the highest-grade transitional state in the vitamin-molecules of the air and water, where they await the liberating motive impulse so as to be transformed into life-affirming magnetic or predominantly life-negating electric fuel concentrates (ions). The forces involved in these metaphysical transformation processes are in the ratio of 96% : 4%. The predominant force in this process can either be the up-building, formative motive force or its decomposive counterpart. Whichever force is subordinate, down to a minimum of 4%, provides the resistance required for all types of motion. Everything is ordered through the agency of 'magnetolytic' or 'electrolytic' processes of dissociation. Both energetic processes are of almost equal value, but differ only in function.

If it has so far been believed that magnetism is a quiescent and more or less passive secondary effect of 'flowing' electricism, this was due to the fact that the type of motion fostering the creation of this higher-grade energy-form was unknown. Equally unknown was the associated shape in which this motion takes place, the so-called 'normal profile'.

Up to now we have therefore been forced to use flowing electricism for the purposes of generating low-grade power, light and temperature (heat). As a result, the essential formative and uplifting force - magnetism - was relegated to the subordinate role of providing the resistance necessary for all motion. That this resistance to motion must increase by the square of the initiating rotational velocity that produces it, is readily understandable because it concerns the development of metaphysical fuels, for which the force of resistance required for the acceleration must increase concurrently and proportionally. For this reason the 'crowning law" (the Conservation of Energy Law) of today's technology is fallacious inasmuch as the supposedly quiescent magnetic resistance to motion can be transformed into a 'flowing' magnetic motive force and conversely, pernicious electricism can be transformed into the aforesaid supportive force (resistance). The means to achieve this is the Repulsator {see figs. 24-26) or the Repulsine (see figs. 30-33), which have hitherto remained unknown.

The decisive factor in the generation of 'flowing magnetism is radial->axial motion and the associated development-facilitating shape. With this it is

possible to split up a tripolar mass (matter) by accelerating it along the longitudinal axis in such a way that, in accordance with the equation  $F$  (force) =  $m$  (mass)  $\times$   $a$  (acceleration), the formative, uplifting fuel-concentrate consisting of ions magnetically surcharged by up to 96% is created. Only by means of this concentrate is it first possible to generate energy in accordance with the equally well-known equation  $E$  (energy) =  $m$  (mass)  $\times$   $c^2$  (speed of light squared), which promotes the naturally ordained processes of formation and higher development.

In this formative process the electrical field-resistance is also responsible for the condensing of the higher-grade medium, which in the process of synthesis described earlier is essential for the physical encasement and insulation of every energy-form. The most important aspect of the magnetolytic (formative) dissociative process is that no low-grade heat-forms should develop during in this restructuring process in which, on the contrary, a cooling (freshening) temperature influence evolves.

This higher-grade dissociative process was previously unknown and therefore the reversed process was used to generate energy. Consequently the relatively most destructive form of energy was produced by very expensive systems of generation and used for the build-up of industry and the economy!!! Precisely the opposite can be achieved through magnetolytic dissociation. The naturalesque process of decomposition is one in which the moved and decomposing matter is cooled all the more rapidly, the greater the rate of acceleration along the longitudinal axis, leading to a corresponding rise in the periodicity of the rhythmical dissociative motion (viz. the rise in periodicity associated with the well-known explosive effect, which produces recoil velocities of up to 5,000 m/sec [16,404 ft/sec])

To be able to appreciate contemporary science's tragic error concerning motion, the following must be stated:

No present-day scientist can explain or understand the quintessential nature of 'motion'. From a naturalesque standpoint, this should be viewed as a rhythmical metabolic interplay between the components of refreshing (cooling) suction and fatiguing (paralysing) pressure; in other words, two constituent forces which as reactive opposites, alternately (rhythmically) act mechanically (materially) and temperature-relatedly (physically). Therefore, depending on the predominance of either the suction or the pressure component (whether the active force is material or physical is unimportant), the metaphysical formative force, or the most elemental destructive force on this planet, comes into being. As the end product of a natural or unnatural sequence of motion, it will be accelerated along either the longitudinal or the transverse axis.

In the naturalesque - formative - direction of acceleration, which must take place along the longitudinal axis (centripetally), so-called electricism acts as

the absolutely indispensable resistance for all motion. As the formative velocity rises, the resistance increases commensurately in order to provide the additional frictional (resisting) surfaces required by the accelerating matter. The actual loss of formative energy associated with this amounts to about 4%, i.e. in this case approximately 96% of the formative energy (= magnetism streaming upwards at enormous speed = levitism) is freed, which sucks up its generating device and a portion of its immediate environs in its wake. In other words, the 'all attracting' comes into being and becomes active with elemental ur-force.

In the unnatural, degenerative direction of acceleration, which operates along the transverse axis (centrifugally), i.e. in an axial->radial mode, the magnetism (= levitism) here acts as the resistance. Compared to the counter-flowing electricism, it appears to be in a certain state of rest, the magnitude of its resistance or support increasing commensurately with the acceleration of the downwardly flowing electricism (= gravitism). This is the origin of the tragic misconception that in all motion the resistance increases by the square of the starting velocity. However, in reality this only happens when any given mass (matter) is made to move technically, hydraulically or dynamically<sup>2</sup>, i.e. axially->radially(centrifugaHy), therefore unnaturally. For if any given mass (matter) is made to move radially->axially (centripetally), then the upwardly flowing magnetism (levitism) increases at the expense of the disintegrative (destructive) electricism (gravitism) and thus the naturally ordained formative and levitative forces intensify in proportion to the starting (radial->axial) rotational velocity. With this type of motion, which is of course only possible with very special motion-inducing shapes (profiles), the effective performance amounts to about 96%. In this case only about 4% of the original formative energies are lost in producing the resistance to motion required by Nature. In technical, hydraulic and dynamic motion precisely the opposite is the case and this is how the enormous consumption of fuel came about, which is exclusively expended in a manner destructive of Nature.

It cannot be disputed that contemporary science, which is founded on far too low a level of basic knowledge, has made exclusive use of pressure-intensifying (development-crippling) motion and arbitrary dynamic shapes that in no way correspond to those required by Nature. The formative components of suctional force, which act in an enlivening (cooling) way, were completely neglected. Hence science created even more dangerous degenerative forces as purported successes were achieved to the detriment of the reactive formative forces. A more rapid economic decline was therefore inevitable, the more widespread and more intensive technology, hydraulics and dynamics became. The soil's energies must also become depleted in the same proportion, because the

<sup>2</sup> These terms Viktor Schauburger uses disparagingly, for he considered these various scientific disciplines to have misused and misinterpreted Nature's processes. - Ed.

natural structuring forces have begun to dwindle due to contemporary methods of working, motion and acceleration.

In order to round off this understanding, the concept of 'mass' (matter) must also be explained in greater detail. Mass is here to be understood as the product of tripolar motion. It represents the partial solidification, as it were, of a motive force that is latent in a neutral carrier-substance and which to a certain extent acts as the resistance to possible inner motion (vibration).

The interaction - or the inner motion, is only possible by way of the seemingly 'dormant' resistance to motion, whose resisting force also intensifies in proportion to the increase in the speed of the interaction. Were this otherwise, then the greatly amplified product of this interaction could not be concentrated in this atomic prison (lattice) - (viz. the increasingly consolidated resistance to motion associated with physical acceleration, without which the latter could not happen.)

The following is a brief clarification of these internal interactions: If a tripolar mass (plus, minus and neutral) moving in an axial->radial direction is split up by pressure-intensifying and therefore temperature-increasing dynamic influences, then oxygen in a developmentally dangerous form becomes free, unipolar and so aggressive that it consumes (binds) and digests the sweet-matter (carbone), which becomes passive (inactive) under such influences. 'Sweet-matter' is here to be understood as the essential creative (fertile) substance. The end product of this dissociative process is the electrically supercharged ion, whose initial decomposive force can be intensified through high-speed centrifugal axial->radial velocity by up to 96%.

If on the other hand a tripolar mass is split up by suction-intensifying and temperature-reducing dynamic influences, then the true creative substance (sweet matter) will be exposed to revitalising (cooling) temperatures. In this case the formative (levitative) sweet-matter becomes free, unipolar and so highly active that it binds, consumes and digests the oxygen (fertilising substance), which has become passive under this other dynamic influence. The end product of this magnetolytic dissociation is the predominantly magnetically charged ion, whose original formative and levitative force, which as everything else in Nature is to be understood as an indirect effect, can be intensified by up to 96%. Imbued with levitative force, these ions suck up the inferior matter and the generating device in their wake with elemental ur-force and encounter the natural and therefore higher-grade forms of inwardly falling (impanding) and concentrating (condensing) heat and light moving in the opposite direction. The product of this partial concentration, which has been solidified through these higher-grade counter-influences is what is known as 'growth', (see fig. 15)

Mass (matter) is thus a product of precipitation, whose quality increases in step with the essential product of dissociation (the product of the interaction



between two basic substances). This is how the highest-grade element of matter, the floating vitamin-molecule, is created. While it contains too much raw material to be able to float upwards of its own accord (autonomously), it nevertheless does not gravitate, because it is already endowed with strong levitational forces. Indeed in this state, and after the loss of the higher-grade heat- and light-creating forces, it only requires a slight invigorating (cooling) impulse to transform such a mass of ennobled matter into the relatively highest light- and temperature-less state.

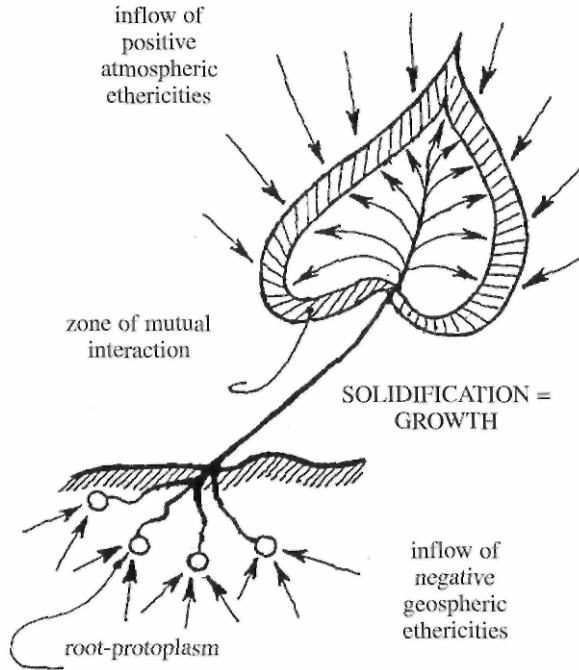


Fig. 15 The manifestation of physical growth

A small, temperature-increasing, material or physical axial->radial impulse suffices to transform such a concentration of highly critical threshold matter in a latent state into the relatively most powerful, destructive energy, whose decomposive force increases in proportion to the strength of the impulse. Thus, for example, a lightning-like recoil in the form of a descending ion is triggered, which with elemental ur-force disintegrates the resistance that brakes its lightning descent.

Contemporary science (technology, hydraulics and dynamics) exclusively and without exception employs the motive impulse which unleashes this

destructive force. That is to say, there is no machine, no transport system, temperature or light generating plant, which does not make use of developmentally dangerous axial->radial impulses. The same applies to all the operational procedures of forestry, agriculture, water and energy supply. All the watercourses and drinking-water plants are being systematically destroyed not only by this development-disrupting motion, which activates electrolytic dissociative processes, but also by official rules and regulations. And if this were not enough, this nation-destroying motion and way of thinking is being enforced by law!

The more strongly the attracting forces become active in the developmental process, the greater the quantity of ennobled magnetolytes (ascended and magnetically supercharged ions) that soar upwards with their adherents and the greater the quantity of less valuable substances expelled by the highest-grade elements which have to solidify under the effect of the counter-influences described earlier. And thus through the proper regulation of these magnetolytic dissociative processes, the increase and qualitative improvement of the aforesaid product of solidification, or growth, can be enhanced at will.

It is hardly worth elaborating further about the opposite case in which the components of pressural force that produce decomposive energies predominate by almost 100%, i.e. the formative (cooling) components of suctional force have been totally disregarded. Therefore with the best will in the world, no flowing magnetism (levitism) can come into being, due to the almost complete lack of the most fundamental prerequisites for growth and increase. On the contrary, everything that now grows (solidifies) already contains the germ of decay, so that in every seed, whether or not it serves an increase in raw or subtle (energetic) matter or even in energy itself, the fiendish demon must rise again.

The decisive factor here is "il primo movere" - the powerful motive impulse of suction or pressure, which will determine the fate of millions upon millions of people.

No scientist can or will dispute the fact that up to now the axial->radial motive impulse, the seed-of-decay-developing impulse, has been exploited everywhere without exclusion or exception. The situation has thus arisen where those forced to work in the wrong way, the enormous host of working people, have had to mis-earn their daily bread by the sweat of their brows. In a manner of speaking, the Devil incarnate has emerged from the seeds of the Spirit, from these mysterious capsules, the vitamin-molecules mentioned at the beginning, and taking these development-ready raw-material concentrates with him, has descended into the depths.

Thus, through a retrogressive impulse at almost the final hour, the most elemental destructive force that ever existed on this fermenting manure-heap was generated from development-ripe matter, as if on a production line. To

put it bluntly, instead of being radially->axially wound up, the ur-works were wound up like a clock-spring in the opposite way, i.e. radially->axially. To date this false 'winding' has been taught and learnt in all schools and preached from all pulpits. Only the Catholic Church, if merely symbolically, has indicated the naturalesque way to transform high-grade matter into Spirit (energy). However they were unable to recognise the truth, because they believed and also fostered the belief, that after death the earthly remains of fatty-matter, out of which allotropic threshold substances - vitamin-molecules - come into being, decay into dust and ashes. Therefore, due to electrolytic processes of decomposition (unnatural form of interment), the metaphysical fat-concentrates cannot come into being, which are the source of spiritual energy that makes all life invincible, free and independent. Perhaps this was considered undesirable so as to ensure the docility of slave-workers by spiritually castrating them through suppression of the build-up of quality substances, thereby making a constant supply of working oxen available.

## 5.

# The Nature of Water, Its Conduction and Use for Transport

"At the intersection of two temperature gradients atomic energy is released. Whether it is a formative or destructive energy is determined in each case by the type of movement and the composition of the alloys used to build the motion-producing machine."

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 71, p. 12.

"In the outbirth of water we have to differentiate between two different kinds. Namely water as a carrier-substance that contains predominantly negative potentialities (substances attuned to earth frequencies) or predominantly positive potentialities (substances attuned to air frequencies). The former are to be viewed as upwardly-impelling geospheric instrumentalities and the latter as downwardly-impelling atmospheric instrumentalities. The former refine and exalt the higher-grade constituents, i.e. they serve the build-up of levitative potencies. The latter serve to cleanse the atmosphere of suspended matter, which as threshold substances still possess too little self-weight and too high a quota of levitative essences and can neither rise nor fall. It is these threshold substances that can be transformed and exalted through cycloid-space-curve motion. From a practical point of view, this is only possible through their co-oscillation with their respective carrier-substances, be it air or water. This leads to a build-up of those substances incapable of further development, resulting in a renewed intensification of the differences in potential through the spacial separation of the difference-substances. The end result is an increased motive force. This explains the concept of perpetual motion in its most natural sense."

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 118, p. 8.

## Letter to Werner Zimmermann. June 20th 1936

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 7.4.

Read "The Ox and the Chamois"<sup>1</sup> again. There you will find precisely the opposite preconditions, namely the release of energy through cold. Here heat

<sup>1</sup> See "The Ox and the Chamois" in Nature as Teacher, p.41, Vol. II of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

is first generated through friction. This heat is immediately absorbed by the water and in the process a physical vacuum is created, which then gives rise to the emergence of inner-atomic rays. Due to the absorbed heat, the free, dissolved oxygen still present in the water becomes aggressive and the emergent geospheric rays become aggressive owing to the presence of the vacuum. Through the encounter between the mutually opposed, contra-directionally propagated, excited rays, the precondition for the marriage is created. The child of this union is organic, or cold light.

Good seed in good earth produces a multiple of itself in fruit. The seed grows and its multiplication proceeds with the aid of contra-directional influences. These influences are higher forms of organisation stemming from the Earth and the Cosmos. Substances that are ripe must either fall upwards or downwards. When water is decomposed inner-atomically, then what finally remains is the substance - water, the H-substance<sup>2</sup>. This H-substance is the polarity, which strengthens itself through these influences. It is the ur-child that draws in essences and energies from above and below and in this way it grows.

The plus and minus elements dissociated from the water separate from one another. The small quantities of carbone present in poor quality water make their escape immediately, because they dematerialise themselves. The phos-elements<sup>3</sup> incorporated by the Sun disperse, enter the horizontal potential-field, become highly aggressive, spread themselves over the active substances and await things now imminent. The 'imminent' is a geospheric gas, which is ingested with great cold.

With sudden cooling, carbones become highly aggressive. A marriage between the highly aggressive phos-elements and the equally aggressive C now takes place. The super-potentiated geospheric gas product evolving from this union binds the hydrogen through the emergent inner vacuum and rising rapidly, cools off and lands on an organic anode, whose upper section is extended into a cathode.

By means of mechanical diffusion this transmitter generates a horizontal potential-field and rapidly cools the gas mixture. Having become highly

<sup>2</sup> H-substance: here refers to hydrogen or hydrogen-like substances. — Ed.

<sup>3</sup> Phos-elements: It is not quite clear what is intended here, but it may relate in some way to bioluminescence. However, the following three definitions are provided as an aid to interpretation.

PHOSPHOR: A substance which is capable of luminescence, i.e. storing energy (particularly from ionising radiation) and later releasing it in the form of light. If the energy is released after only a short delay (between  $10^{-10}$  and  $10^{-4}$  seconds) the substance is called a 'scintillator'.

PHOSPHORUS: P. Element. Atomic weight 30.9738. Atomic number 15. Occurs in several allotropic forms, white phosphorus and red phosphorus being the commonest. The former is a waxy white, very inflammable and poisonous solid. Red phosphorus is a non-poisonous, dark red powder, not very inflammable. The element only occurs in the combined state, mainly as calcium phosphate,  $CA^3(PO^4)^2$ . Essential to life; calcium phosphate is the main constituent of animal bones.

PHOSPHATE: Salt of phosphoric acid  $H^3PO^4$ . Phosphates are used as fertilisers to rectify a deficiency of phosphorus in the soil. Note: The editor regrets that he cannot locate the dictionary from which the information was originally sourced.'

aggressive again, as soon as it is expressed this gas will be hungrily absorbed by the surrounding atmospheric oxygen. This O has H and C in tow, which have been drawn along with it due to centripetence. What is important here, is whether this process is permitted to proceed, 1. via warm, or 2., via cold oxidation.

In the first case a surplus of water is produced. In the second case a surplus of air results. In both cases, however, both products have evolved and grown, and hence the product of growth is a multiple of the original seed-form. The better the earth, the stronger the growth and the greater the abundance of the substance.

If air is produced, then water is in the minority. The increase in this case is the air mixture and the 4th dimension that emerges from it - motion as matter. Out of this motion the 5th dimension ultimately comes into being, i.e. the radiant product, the spirit. This spirit can materialise itself. Conversely, a solid, liquid or gaseous substance can of course be spiritualised as well. Whether one desires to produce one or the other intermediate product is merely a question of the dosing of the intermediate process. The dosing of either heat or cold. The organ that comes into being either in this way or the other is a result of the organisation.

Every organ is an aid or a means to an end that requires various supplementary energies in order to evolve. In its highest form, the developed product is a multiple of the ur-form, because the potencies in it have developed themselves. Potencies are nothing more than bipolar tensions, which de-stress one another and synthesise their desired form. This is the reason for the phenomenon of multiplication. The function of tensioning or de-stressing is heat and cold. The product is therefore a product of heat or cold. The impulse is produced by either a cold or warm mediatory process. The place of birth is the egg and the orifice. The fertilised eggs create orifices and conversely, eggs come into being from orifices.

Radiation is the bipolar unity, the ur-information, which metamorphoses itself into proteins. Since information is also bipolar, then the space, the irrtter-space and the shell come into being in this way. The energy evolving within the shell is space-energy, which like everything else is also bipolar. The heat-potential gives birth to the form and the cold-potential gives rise to dematerialisation. The latter is elemental motion and the former is the elemental envelope, that is, the multiplied soul and the multiplied body.

## The Ennoblement of Water

Leonstein, 25th May 1945, Implosion Magazine, No. 124, pp 59-61

Every entity, whether human, animal, plant, mineral or metal, has a very particular characteristic and individual predisposition and therefore a very specific task or life-purpose, which essentially consists in the bequeathal of this special talent for the benefit of an improved further development.

This is especially true of water. It is therefore important to study the nature of water, its inner propensities and its capacity for onward transmission so that general and individual progress can be fostered through the possibility of its ennoblement.

What actually is water? Whence does it come? And where does it go? Countless individuals have already attempted to answer these questions. Not long ago, Professor Gerlach from Munich declared that water was an unfathomable enigma, whose origins and reasons for disappearance remained a mystery.

An old maxim states: "All life springs forth from water." Water is thus the true source of life, which is reason enough for studying it in detail.

Another maxim states: "All life arises from motion." Since it is known that without death there would be no life, there must be two forms of motion. One that produces the life-state and another that creates the preconditions for this to happen. In other words, there must be two completely different types of motion, which function in equally different ways. One of them produces the 'physical' life-state, whereas the other the prerequisites for it<sup>4</sup> by initiating the 'metaphysical' transformation and actuating the processes through which the products of this form of motion can be brought into being.

All birth requires fertilisation. Fertilisation, however, necessitates the disintegration of the original ur-form. All of which brings us to the fundamental question: What actually is motion? This question is answered by a free-falling droplet of water, from which a horizontally and vertically radiating energy-form springs forth, the power of the horizontal emission corresponding to about 12,000 seed-volts as measured with an electrometer. These are referred to as seed-volts here, because in this case we are concerned with a charge-bundle which contains about 12,000 water embryos in an energetic state. These are freed when a drop of water merely falls about 20 cm (8 inches). Naturally, special equipment is required to measure this capacity. To describe it in more detail here, would stray too far from the present theme, therefore clarification of the 'essentials' will have to suffice.

If the horizontally radiating energy-form is conducted into vacuum tubing then on the inner periphery a strongly pulsating, blood-red glow appears. It

<sup>4</sup> Viz. 'motion-of-creation' and 'creation-of-motion'. See footnote 2. - Ed.

this energy-form is conducted into a glass bulb super-saturated with air containing oxygen, then about the same number of water-droplets appear as the seed-volts measured on the electrometer. With this we are already presented with the birth of water and the form of motion that induces it.

The motion of a free-falling water-droplet is characterised by the 'cycloid-space-curve', which the droplet describes as it falls. To describe this form of motion, which gives rise to the metaphysical preconditions for life, in greater detail, which one or two doctors have called the 'life-creating curve', would take too long here. It is therefore here only to be noted that the horizontal emission of dynagens is associated with a spiral configuration of curves, whose transverse radius of action broadens down the longitudinal fall-path.

The vertically propagating energy-form, which in a vacuum-tube produces an intense and dazzling light - or a Sun in statu nascendi as it were - likewise describes a cycloid-space-curve path, but one in which the transverse radius reduces. The faster the water-droplet falls and the higher the vacuum-bulb is positioned on the longitudinal axis, the more dazzling and intense the light becomes. The further the vacuum bulb is removed from the source of the horizontally emitted energy-form, the darker the strongly pulsating blood-red glow becomes. If heavily insulated shields (such as paraffin wax), which have a braking effect, are interposed around this radiant energy-bundle, then under the influence of atmospheric light and heat, positively charged water is produced. However, if the same process is repeated with the exclusion of light and heat, then negatively charged water results.

We are therefore not only faced with the birth of water, but also with the determination of the gender of the birth product. From the sum total of these experiments arose a discovery, whose implications first become evident, when we consider that it opens the way to produce water - the blood of the Earth- in any desired quantity and quality naturalesquely and in addition to pass on the desired properties to the evolutionally-older new-born entity. Water pipelines are therefore no longer necessary in order make what is nothing less than the most noble water available in the middle of treeless deserts or salt-water wastes. This not only ingeniously solves the problem of living space for a constantly increasing population, but also that of food shortages.

Good water - good life: Bad water - bad life; No water - no life. This fundamental axiom, simple as it is true, makes any further comment superfluous. It need only be stated that the water-producing and ennobling apparatus is operational and presently located at Rudolf Zeitlinger's scythe factory.

The possibility for uninterrupted further work is now the only prerequisite for finally solving the core-problem - food shortages. The achievement of this is the task of those who, after Germany's lost war, are now responsible for the further fate of the German people. It is likewise necessary to refine the current attitude of those, who as nature-alienated politicians, are to blame for the



present lot, a situation for which the whole population is also doubtless culpable. Through the free and voluntary disclosure of Nature's greatest secret, this can in part be rectified. For good water into which beneficial properties can be instilled, expiates the crimes of those, who attacked the fate of all humanity in ignorance of the inner nature of the source of life, which can bequeath both good and bad character traits.

## The Transport of Ore in Double-Spiral-Flow Pipes

Vienna, July 1939 (Schauberger Archives)

In 1933 a proposal was presented to the Alpine-Montan company stating that the ore from iron ore deposits could be delivered to Donawitz, not at the current price of about 3.50 schillings per tonne by rail, but at a cost of about 0.30 schillings per tonne by means of a patented double-spiral-flow pipe (see fig. 16<sup>5</sup>).

At first this proposal was ridiculed, because according to expert opinion either the ore, having a specific weight of 1.9 and therefore heavier than water (= 1.0), would be left lying on the bottom or the pipe-walls would be heavily scoured within a short space of time, and therefore the proposal would not be commercially viable.

In order to counter these opposing views practically, test pipes 64 metres long with an internal diameter of 27.5 cm (11 inches) were fabricated. At a gradient of 1%, ore and pebbles with a grain-size of about 10 cm (4 inches) in cross-section were transported down the pipe. The experiments were carried out at Kohlleben. The steeper the geological gradient was, the more efficacious the transport.

The experts from Alpine-Montan and the then Ministry of Agriculture were forced to admit that ore, stones, mineral coal - in short, bodies heavier than water, were in fact transported down the flow-axis of the pipe without touching the walls.

The speed of the ore, which moved silently along the pipe-axis, was so great that the passage of lumps of ore larger than fist-size could not even be observed in the crystal-clear water through the observation windows. Even at the point of discharge, the speed was too great to be able to discern the stones, etc.

In order to ascertain the uninhibited motion of the transported material, small wire baskets were placed at the end of the pipe in order to determine the flow velocity and the actual position and motion of the heavy bodies down the axis of the pipe.

<sup>5</sup>See also figs. 8 & 9 and associated patent descriptions in *The Water Wizard*, Vol I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

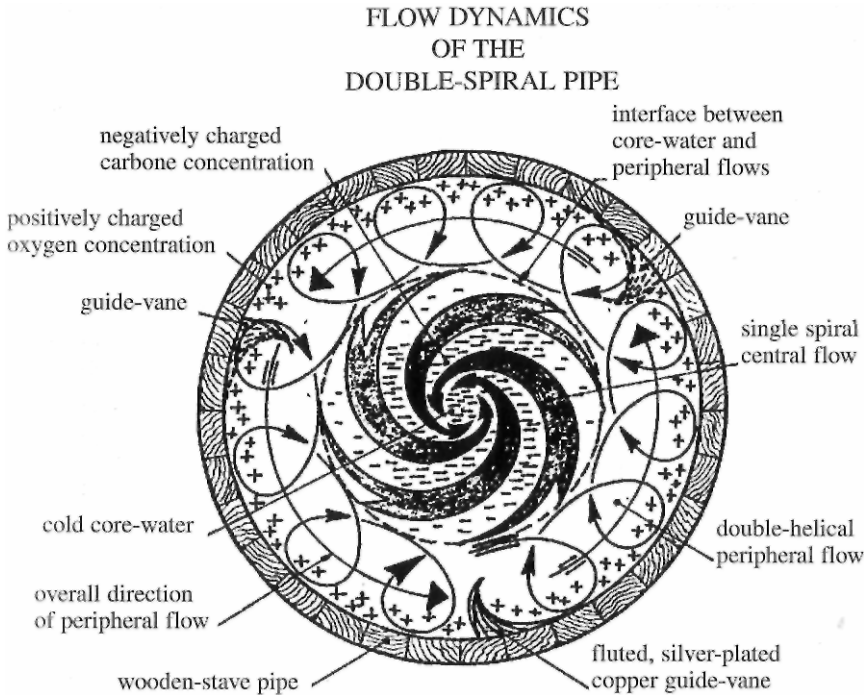


Fig. 16: Pipe cross-section showing double spiral flows<sup>6</sup>

After this practical demonstration, it was announced that the quantity of ore available for transport was falling by the month and that it would no longer be profitable to build a second such pipe-line alongside the existing railway, because it might be necessary to shut down the blast-furnaces altogether and to close the business temporarily.

The whole affair was no longer pursued owing to the deteriorating economic situation.

<sup>6</sup> In regard to the carrying capacity of wooden pipes, the following passage from a book 'The Australian Wood Pipe Company' (p. 21, publ. circa 1910) provides interesting insights. "It is conceded that smoothly-planed timber has the lowest coefficient of friction of all materials ordinarily employed for conveying water. Many extensive experiments have been made on the flow of water in various kinds of pipe operating under many conditions. Within the last few years, the United States Department of Agriculture has carried on a very extensive series of experiments on the flow of water in Wood-Stave Pipe, and attention is called to their Bulletin No. 376, and in particular to the conclusions therein: Conclusions. 'That the data now existing does not show that the Capacity of Wood-Stave pipe either increases or decreases with age. That wood pipe will convey about 15 per cent more water than a ten-year-old cast iron pipe or a new riveted pipe, and about 25 per cent more than a cast iron pipe 20 years old, or a riveted pipe ten years old.' The conclusion of Government experiments, as given above, definitely prove that the carrying capacity of Wood-Stave Pipe is from 15 percent to 25 per cent greater than metal pipe, with the additional advantage that Wood-Stave Pipe will remain smooth and clean internally throughout its entire life."- Ed.

Since interest in this ore-transport has now been revived by a third party, the following description of the method of transporting bodies heavier than water, which contradicts known scientific opinion, is still relevant.

It is known that a few rivers not only transport their heavy sediment to the sea, but despite the resistance of the heavy sea-water, actually carry it far out and form promontories (haff formation).

Rivers that warm up along their course, deposit their sediment, silt up the channel and form deltas, so that instead of the formation of new dry land, marsh- and swampland have created.

The secret of the dwindling and disappearance of the tractive force and carrying capacity in a naturally flowing stream lies in the way it moves.

The origins of all motion are differences in potential. If these differences cannot be maintained during flow, the water's kinetic energy wanes and the sediment is deposited in the wrong place. New bends are formed in this way, which have a greater significance than has hitherto been assumed.

The river-bend or curve is the cradle of water. Due to the water's swaying and swirling motion, processes of atomic transformation take place within the inner structure of the water, which have escaped the notice of the world of experts.

The straightening of a watercourse in order to shorten it and steepen the geological gradient results in an even stronger deposition of sediment and even greater flattening of the geological gradient, a widening of the channel, the warming of the water and its even more rapid disappearance.<sup>7</sup>

The amount of energy lost when a river discharging about 500 m<sup>3</sup>/sec is warmed to about +22°C (+72°F) amounts to about 45 million kilowatts or 57 million horsepower per second.

This energy loss should be viewed as a form of latent energy, which is lost with a dynamic form of motion, but can be gained by a bio-dynamic form<sup>8</sup>, for which experimental proof is available.

The energy that can be gained through bio-dynamic motion manifests itself in an increase in tractive force and carrying capacity, which appear primarily in the pipe-axis. Here the water is densified inhomogenously, because its contained gases are transformed into non-spacial dynagens.<sup>9</sup> As a result the core-water surges ahead like a ball of energy with increasing velocity.

Dynamically conducted water, on the other hand, generates motion-impeding gases.

<sup>7</sup>This is due to the abnormal evaporation rate caused by extended surface exposure and excessive infiltration into the ground due to the downward displacement of the +4°C (+39.2°F) anomaly zone. — Ed.

<sup>8</sup>Dynamic — Bio-dynamic: Here Viktor Schauburger differentiates between conventional hydraulics and naturalesque water flows. — Ed.

<sup>9</sup>Inhomogenously: Since some of the water's gases are transformed into a non-spacial state through densation and the remaining water is densified through cooling, two different states of densation exist and therefore the water is densified inhomogenously. Similarly, despite the overall cooling of the water, the peripheral flow are always warmer than the central core. - Ed.

In patented double-spiral-flow pipes the peripheral water-masses are caused to swirl within and about themselves and around the central pipe-axis. This produces differences in potential between the peripheral and core waters, which lead to an accelerated flow resulting from the energising and ennobling of the bio-dynamically moved water.

The bio-dynamic movement of water is thus the form of motion that leads to culture per se or the inner culture of the water.

If the concept of 'culture' were to be defined naturalesquely then it should be interpreted as "the protection of Nature's pre-acting fundamental processes". This is only possible by taking care of what it is that is moved, for as mentioned earlier, naturalesque motion leads to the vivification of the life-carrier - water - and unnatural motion to its mortification, or its death and disappearance.

The open secret of water consists in the fact that processes of organic synthesis take place in the naturalesque conduction of water, whereas processes of organic analysis occur when it is conducted unnaturally. In the former case, the growth of water and an increase in latent energy occurs, hence a qualitative improvement. In the latter case, it results in the disappearance of water, to losses in latent energy and logically to a decline in quality.

It would deviate too far from the theme at hand to elaborate the inner processes of motion of naturally or unnaturally conducted water in greater detail. It is worth mentioning briefly, however, that the water discharged from such an ore transportation system is the most ideal regulator of the downstream flow regime of a river below it, because the enormous energies generated through double-spiral conduction restore the river's kinetic energies, which to a certain extent were lost through its unnatural regulation. Compared with current methods of transporting the present 3 million tonnes of ore by rail, not only can 9 million Marks be saved, but the large rivers can be reinvigorated at the same time, thus becoming dynamic, fresh and healthy through an unimaginable boost of energy from the double-spiral-flow pipe installation. Fresh and healthy water is the first priority for the culture of any country.

## The Liquefaction of Coal by Means of Cold Flows

Vienna, May 1941, Implosion Magazine, No. 121, pp 37-47

It is a known fact that there are infertile humans, animals unable to reproduce and plants incapable of propagation. This is usually ascribed to an organic defect, but can also happen when any old donkey interferes with the normal course of development. Or it might even be a unique phenomenon.

Infertility or inability to reproduce, however, is not merely limited to increase in a purely quantitative sense; it can also be of a purely intellectual

nature. People who are mentally limited or who have no natural creative ability as a rule are said to be bird-brained. This is a bird, however, that can grow into a veritable bird of prey, which here is to be interpreted as mindless greed, idiocy or other similar traits.

To the latter breed belong those, for example, who bore holes into the organism - Earth - in order to obtain oil, which they then distil so as to make use of the distilled product, petrol (gasoline) to fuel conveyances on land, water and in the air.

Crude oils belong to the genus of physical manifestations that are incapable of reproduction. They are formations that missed their way on evolution's developmental path and rightly belong to the genus of mules, in which connection the donkey is also known to have made a mess of the normal progress of development. Seen from this angle, distilled crude oil is to be considered as a kind of super-mule, produced by humans who think they can cleverly outsmart Nature.

Apart from those who are happy to extract Nature's failed products such as oil, directly from the ground, there are others who make it their life's work, so to speak, to earn their living by meddling in wise Nature's affairs. These species of human being are commonly called chemists, who are known to produce products of fermentation without taking Nature's dynamic processes into account. Without this there is no possibility for reproduction and further development of any kind, because things possessing these properties have come into being through movement, during which differences in temperature arise that initiate intermediate metabolic processes. These then give rise to flow-alternating processes that engender products of organic synthesis, which is what concerns us here.

The last paragraph is already rather difficult to understand, because today nobody knows the true meaning of the expression 'product of organic synthesis'. Such a person is therefore unable to understand that here too, as elsewhere, differences also exist.

Differences are very noteworthy things, and for this reason: Without differences in charge or potential, for example, there would be no motion of any kind, and therefore in terms of the above interpretation, there would be no reproduction or further development; in a word, there would be no evolution.

Conversely, this means that the generation or ur-procreation of natural-essque differences actuates naturalesque forms of motion through which, for example, 'evolution' can be formed and fashioned in countless ways.

At this point the creation or ur-generation of naturalesque potential differences should be examined in more detail in order to wr-create the driving forces and propellants, which neither burn, nor stink or make a loud noise.

That life is a battle is beyond dispute. Men are also inveterate fighters, who believe they can dupe wise Nature and thereby rank themselves amongst the

most cunning. If one looks at the matter very closely, however, they are actually poor wretches, who put their existence, their heads and their necessities for life at risk, because it is dangerous, particularly in time of war, to attempt to lead persons in authority around by the nose.

After this introduction we shall now attempt to describe the enormous difference between differences in potential in the only way possible for an unscientific observer of Nature.

There are two observations that afford an insight into natural processes, which if taken to their proper conclusion, open up unimaginable possibilities.

1. It is a known fact that in high-pressure boilers a reflux from high to medium pressure takes place under certain circumstances without the hermetic seal being broken<sup>10</sup>. Up to now this occurrence could not be explained and because of it the manufacture of miniature pressurised boilers was abandoned, which meant, of course, that veritable mechanical monsters had to be put up with, which consumed a great deal of space and material.
2. It is also known that minute bubbles of carbon-dioxide (carbonic acid gas) appear in good high-spring water, if the water is exposed to the influence of light and heat. If the water is again cooled under the exclusion of light, then the bubbles disappear. The crystal-clear water, however, tastes empty and insipid even when cool. Its former full-bodied wholesomeness has therefore vanished without trace.

A third case will be mentioned here, albeit briefly. If under very particular external influences good high-spring water is rotated at high speed in turbines with blades inclined at a certain angle, then on occasion the effective force rises exceptionally high; by calculation to peak pressures of about 32,000 atmospheres, leading to corrosive damage to the turbine blades. More detailed elaboration would take too long here, and therefore it should be enough to point out that these three phenomena are known facts.

<sup>10</sup> The following excerpt from "Pregnant Water" (Schwangeres Wasser) in Implosion Magazine, No. 117, pp. 60-61, explains this process: "It is a known fact that no free oxygen is present at normal temperatures, but that in the form of ozone it is loosely bound to nitrogen in the ratio of  $3O^2$  to  $6N^6$ . Were it otherwise, then it would not be beneficial to living things. It is only at  $+40^\circ C$  ( $+104^\circ F$ ) that the individual  $O^2$  molecules appear, which trigger life-threatening chemical reactions in the human body and are the cause of heat-stroke for example. At about  $1,000^\circ C$  ( $1,832^\circ F$ ) single-atom molecules of  $O$ , identical to the oxygen atom, appear, which naturally have very specific effects. This is why, despite the hermetic seal, the high pressure in high-pressure boilers drops to medium pressure once the above atomic transformation has taken place. Similarly, it is a fact that  $N$  (= nitrogen) is not a uniform basic element, but in reality is  $CH^2$ , i.e. a carbene composed of  $He^3$  (helium), wherein two atoms of hydrogen play the role of carrier-substance as it were. Furthermore, it is known that gaseous water and liquid water are quite different things. Gaseous water is  $OH^2$  and liquid water  $(OH^2)^6$ . The strong action of gaseous water, for example, follows from this, because two free action quantities or points become active, whereas liquid water has no action quantities, because all the action points are filled with H." Viktor Schaubberger. - Ed.

What science cannot measure or weigh exactly, exists just as little as what the farmer cannot grasp, see or feel.

Because of this curious attitude, conventional science has made a serious mistake, which we have to thank for the general economic decline, the world-wide unease and unrest, and not least, the constant wars. As long as this mistake remains uncorrected, any lasting peace is unthinkable, for owing to the serious disruption of natural development, the quality of the soil is declining, the shortage in raw materials is increasing and the various sources of food and fodder are dwindling in the same ratio that the population is increasing. It is therefore obvious that under such circumstances no lasting peace can come about.

Viewed from a naturalesque standpoint, evolution or reproduction and further development should be seen as a sexual process. Only thus can the truth be established and practical progress made.

Truth is an approach towards probability. The closer we come to the truth, the more bitter the realisation that today's science is a fallacy with serious consequences, because it operates with values that are no values, but utter worthlessnesses.

Nature is careful and operates with real values, and the more valuable they are, the less they manifest themselves.

Let us consider, for example, a fully-developed ovum in the body of a fertile woman. The reproductive product, the child, can only be woken to life through a particular forward motion, which takes place first. This leads to the influx of the fertilising substance, to independent life and thus to autonomous movement. For this process wise Nature made provision for certain changes in shape associated with aroused or excited states without which the coming to life of a child is impossible.

The actual formative instrumentalities are always present and only come into play under very particular preconditions. Any human with the organic capacity can make use of one or the other attribute in order to beget the 'crown of creation', a young child for example, provided he or she is at all capable of becoming aroused and surrender themselves to the particular motion ordained by Nature for reproduction and further development.

We have to follow precisely the same *modus operandi* if we wish to reproduce or further develop a given water, so as to ur-produce qualities and properties that can be applied to the widest variety of purposes. Naturally the same is true for other organisms, amongst which air is also to be included.

These two organisms (air and water) contain various ingredients that differ both in nature and kind. It is common knowledge that science regards these interstitial substances as the impurities of a substance, which it considers to be just as chemically inert as it does the carrier-substance itself.

These supposed impurities are the carriers of bipolar energetic factors, which in their interaction with other factors in their environs manifest themselves as reproduced and evolved ethericities. These always appear as

individualities and while similarities occur, identicalities never do. This fact alone suffices to show that any rigid conformity to law or dogma-derived process is just as impossible as an identically formed product, for the form and type of the product of synthesis is determined by a process of constantly changing change. It was Heraclitus, who long ago stated that one cannot bathe in the same water twice, because it is in continual motion even when apparently still, and is thus in a constant state of metamorphosis.

What could be more desirable than to move water or air in such a way naturalesquely that the beneficial and valuable inner factors attain their relatively highest state as ethericities, which on their part lead to the most beneficial processes of reproduction and further development.

In order to clarify what has been stated in the last paragraph, books would need to be written. Here we are especially concerned with the production or ur-creation of higher formative and dynamic agencies (dynagens), whose essential nature will be described here to the extent necessary to enable miniature machines to function more naturalesquely and therefore better than is presently the case. Everyone has a free choice either to adopt these new methods or to continue to believe that the scientific system, devised by rationally-minded individuals, is the very last word in mechanical motion.

The practical aim of this explanation is the production or ur-creation of a hydrocarbon that neither burns, nor smells or makes noise, the essential point here being that it is of a much higher grade and therefore functions far more efficiently as a propellant than oil, which has been cleverly manipulated, or the synthesised product that the chemist calls synthetic petrol (gasoline).

Everyone knows that so-called petrol (gasoline) is an explosive substance. That the creation of precisely the opposite is what is intended here, stems from the fact that we wish to proceed im-scientifically. With this tm-scientific product of synthesis we are therefore concerned with no ex-plosive product, but only with an im-plosive factor.

If we study the inner processes involved in synthetic fuel production, then we can establish that, together with supplementary catalytic factors, strong pressure and high temperature play the leading role.

Just a small heat-influence is enough to separate the higher factors from more inferior ones contained in good water. As the condensing reversinary elements of retro-development, the latter appear and become visible in the form of substantial physical matter. It should therefore be quite obvious that with the high temperatures known to be necessary for contemporary methods of coal liquefaction, the identical processes of separation and concentration must take place in increased measure.

At this point it should be noted that this always involves a law of reciprocity, or that the bipolar basic substances are inversely related both symmetrically and proportionally.



The inner ingredients contained in carbon (carbone) can be compared to the unfertilised reproductive or formative substances of a mature woman immediately after menstruation.

Like the beads of carbon-dioxide in water that has been warmed, through the strong influence of heat the residual substances shrivel up after the separation and precipitation of the higher quality constituents<sup>11</sup>. Due to the high pressure the outer envelope or the carrier substance will be crushed and in this way the de-energised elements released.

The opposite primary elements, the varieties of so-called oxygen, will be physically released at higher temperatures, i.e. they attain the so-called charged state that enables them to consume, or as the scientist says, to bind their as it were 'devoted' condensed counterparts.

Through this metabolic process a transformation takes place that ultimately gives rise to a motion leading to a higher and a lower product of synthesis. This further results in two different current flows and the products associated with them. In the first case, this logically leads to the formation of a higher energy-form, which pierces through any enclosing walls and expresses itself as an emitted charge.

In the second case, a marriage takes place between the residual substances. In short, the inferior product of synthesis that science calls synthetic petrol (gasoline) is produced. The moment this second, inferior synthesising process happens, a pressure recoil (cavitation) takes place due to the emission or discharge of the higher constituents (viz. the pressure reflux in high-pressure boilers).

Further examination of this uninteresting process will be discontinued here, because the naturalesque and hitherto entirely unknown process is far more interesting than this scientific derailment of natural processes.

When two people do the same thing, it is never exactly the same, and all the more so, if something is initiated under completely different preconditions, which is here the case in a practical sense.

The two bipolar inner constituents, which appear in a nascent state in every organic substance, should be viewed as latent energy-compounds, which require appropriate prior preparation in order to be combined (married) naturalesquely. As a result a product of synthesis is produced that is substantially different from what science describes as 'synthetic petrol (gasoline)'.

In a pipe, which is described in greater detail in the patent application to the Reich's patent office<sup>12</sup>, specially shaped resistance-inducing vanes are incorporated, which are made of a potential-increasing material and are installed and aligned along very particular curved paths on the inner periphery of the

<sup>11</sup> In the conversion of carbonic acid ( $\text{H}^2\text{CO}^3$ ) to carbon dioxide or carbonic acid gas ( $\text{CO}_2$ ) with heat, molecular hydrogen ( $\text{H}^2$ ) is released. Therefore a kind of vacuity is created, causing a reduction in the inner 'volume'. — Ed.

<sup>12</sup> See descriptions of Patent Nos. 134543 and 138296 (pp. 201-203) and associated figures Nos. 8 & 9, p.63 in *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. - Ed.

pipe-walls. The patent extension for constructing these vanes is included with the patent application under separate cover. In the patent claims particular reference is made to the pipe's insulation. Details of the angular configuration, etc. of the above vanes were omitted, because they have already been included in earlier patents.

Details concerning the initial procedures for catalysis and catalytic effects appear in the application only to the extent necessary for the preliminary establishment of the novelty and the technical feasibility of this pioneering patent. It is not the examiner's brief to adjudicate on the practicality and other aspects (see patent regulations) of the application and therefore nothing has been excluded that is required or prescribed for the patent examination. It should be emphasised here that the mechanical processes in this pipe are totally uninteresting and therefore my own earlier applications and those of others, which give prominence to the advantages of the mechanical motion, are peripheral to the present application.

This pipe should be laid to a particular gradient and oriented in certain direction<sup>13</sup>. It should then be charged with water - the best kind being sea-water thoroughly irradiated by the Sun - to which coal dust, carbonic acid and other things have been added.

Together with its ingredients, the onrushing water proceeds along two completely different paths. The peripheral water-masses follow a centrifugal developmental path, while the core water-masses take a centripetal one.

Bodies heavier than water move down the centre. Bodies lighter than the carrier-substance migrate towards the periphery, where they are thrust against the wedge-shaped guide-vanes, which deflect them towards the pipe-walls<sup>14</sup>. These guide-vanes are placed at certain intervals so that mechanical pressure is alternately increased and decreased continuously. This results in the cooling of the whole water-mass, similar to the Linde process<sup>15</sup>, only that here

<sup>13</sup> See description of the north-south and west-east orientation of pipes on p. 175 of *Nature as Teacher*, Vol. II and in "Increase In Soil Productivity", in *The Fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the *Ecotechnology series*. — Ed.

<sup>14</sup> See explanatory figures Nos. 10 & 11 on p.4 of *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the *Ecotechnology series*. — Ed.

<sup>15</sup> Linde process: (1) "A high-pressure process for the production of liquid oxygen and nitrogen by compression to about 200 bar (20 MN/m<sup>2</sup>) followed by refrigeration and fractionation in a double column. - Penguin Dictionary of Chemistry, Penguin Books, Great Britain, 1983, p.399).  
 (2) "A process for the liquefaction of gases by the Joule-Thompson effect. In this process devised by Carl von Linde (1842-1934) for liquefying air, the air is freed of carbon dioxide and water and compressed to 150 atmospheres. The compressed gas is passed through a copper coil to an expansion nozzle within a Dewar flask. The emerging air is cooled by the Joule-Thompson effect as it expands and then passes back within a second copper coil that surrounds the first coil. Thus the expanded gas cools the incoming gas in a process that is said to be regenerative. Eventually the air is reduced to its critical temperature and, at the pressure of 150 atmospheres (well above its critical pressure), liquefies. The process is used for other gases, especially hydrogen and helium. Hydrogen has first to be cooled below its inversion temperature (see Joule-Thompson effect) using liquid air; helium has first to be cooled below its inversion temperature using liquid hydrogen." (*Collins Dictionary of Science*. Oxford University Press, Great Britain, 1984, ISBN 0-19-211593-6). — Ed

the arrangement is substantially different from all other known cooling processes.

Through the indirectly engendered cooling the density increases, whereby the frictional pressure is intensified by the mechanically-induced increase in velocity. The arrangement of the guide-vanes causes a spiral circumvolution, so that the bipolar ingredients, which rub against one another flow all the faster as their volume is reduced by the constant abrasion. Apart from the circumfluent motion another form of motion is also active which causes the bodies of the ingredients to swirl about their own axes and ensures their abrasion on all sides.

Here it should be noted that experiments established that all substances of terrestrial origin<sup>16</sup> react to centrifugence, whereas the higher refluxent or inward-falling substances, namely all forms of so-called oxygen, react to centripetence.

This results in the spacial separation of the two bipolar substances, i.e. the oxygen proceeds down the centre and the carbonates along the sides, where with increasing slip-pressure against the resistances (guide-vanes) and rotating about their own axes, they continue to be ground off. As a result the inner constituents are freed and separated out according to their centrifugal or centripetal characteristics.

We therefore arrive at the following transformative phenomena:

1. The inner constituents freed through mechanical abrasion (removal of the outer envelope) are transferred into two different states due to the cooling of the carrier substance. Through this increasing cooling the terrestrial substances or carbonates attain their relatively highest potential.
2. The stocks of all forms of so-called oxygen travel down the middle and with increasing cooling become inactive and shrivel up like their counterparts, the beads of carbon-dioxide in warmed water. At the same time these increasingly indifferent<sup>17</sup> fertilising substances (oxygen) are accelerated mechanically along the unrestricted (no guide-vanes) and shorter central axial path and are thereby dispersed, or dosed as it were. (see fig. 16)
3. Through the rising acceleration of the axially moving core-water-masses, the centrifugence of the swirling peripheral water-masses intensifies. This in turn increases the slip-pressure exerted by the suspended ingredients on the naturally shaped and alloyed potential-increasing slip-resistances (guide-vanes). Due to the rising velocities the oligodynamic effect also increases, i.e. more and more supplementary influences are freed by the potential-intensifying frictional resistances and due to the water's careful

<sup>16</sup> Terrestrial: In relation to oxygen, which Viktor Schauberger viewed as a lower form of sunlight, this refers to substances that specifically belong to the Earth (carbonates). - Ed.

<sup>17</sup> indifferent: relates in this instance to a condition similar to lethargy. - Ed.

insulation against heat are bound into the water, which is swirled in towards the central axis by the inclined angle of the resistances - guide-vanes. 4. Having been drawn there by the increase in axial velocity, the water-masses inwinding towards the central axis now bind the highly active dynagens, which have been released through the mutual abrasion of the carbones. No longer reacting to any mechanical centrifugence, these energised terrestrial elements then begin to encircle the centrally moving oxygenes. Through the continuous approach of the through-flowing water-masses towards the anomaly point of  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ), on the one hand the terrestrial elements attain their relatively highest energetic state and on the other, the oxygenes become increasingly indifferent and more dispersed, thus reaching the condition proper to a fertilising substance. If this state is reached at the anomaly point, then the highly energised terrestrial residues (the former carbones) bind their fertilising counterparts, and the naturalesque product of synthesis is complete.

This product of synthesis is characterised by the fact that the ratio between oxygen and its carbone counterpart is 4% : 96%, because all the remaining oxygen has been transformed into fertilising substances and then bound. Therefore the new product of synthesis has the highest negative valency and is of geospheric character. Certain factors relating to these processes should be noted: In the scientific synthesising process heat has a shrivelling effect on the decisive formative substance in its nascent state, while physical pressure ruptures its outer envelope. In the case of coal liquefaction by means of cold flows the increasing cooling on the developmental path acts to increase the potential. However, since the increase in the potential of the true formative substance is of a purely energetic nature, it would be unable to break through the outer envelope had this not been mechanically abraded through the circumvolution and inner rotation (about itself and its own axis) caused by the increasing frictional pressure arising from the doubly increased velocity of the whole water-body. These differences demand the closest attention and consideration. The product of synthesis obtained by means of cold flows, binds itself into its own waste product (juvenile water). Therefore apart from a new, fresh and more highly cultured energy, an associated carrier-substance of the highest order is also created at the expense of the gradually transforming (internally reconstituted) stocks of old water. This two-fold transformation represents the increase and the qualitative improvement of what has been quantitatively increased (the growth of water). The finished product is a crystal-clear water that has neither taste, nor smell, nor colour, because in this product of synthesis all kinds of things are on the loose or have been loosed (emancipated), i.e. they have been raised to the

relatively highest evolved state, which is of energetic nature and therefore non-spacial. This water has the relatively highest density and specific gravity, attained through cooling towards the anomaly point, which is marginally less than  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ )<sup>18</sup>.

If this product of synthesis, almost exclusively composed of geospheric energies, is atomised and atmospheric oxygen simultaneously infused through nozzles (viz. other forms of fertilisation), thus charging it with fertilising substances (these become passive at high centripetal velocity) and if this whole mixture is lightly compressed (warmed) by a descending piston, then the mixture is instantaneously transformed into the next higher state of development or aggregation, namely into air.

Due to this new organism's roughly 1,700-fold increase in volume, an exploitable expansive pressure equal to about 2,000 atmospheres per litre (0.264 gal.<sup>19</sup>) of such water is produced.<sup>20</sup>

That this tremendous pressure expresses itself silently requires no special comment. That, as a high-grade air, this product of transformation has a more beneficial effect on the environment and development generally than the waste matter of explosive processes, also goes without saying. That this high-grade product of transformed air does not smell, is without doubt. In this way what was striven for has been achieved, namely a far higher exploitable pressure than is produced by any form of petrol (gasoline). Moreover, it is an incombustible pressure-creating substance that neither stinks nor creates a din, and its beneficial effect can be raised to any desired level, so that in practice the smallest quantities are enough to achieve any desired effects.

This ideal pressure-producing substance is the driving medium for powering the centrifugal Repulsators, which ur-generate the bio-electromagnetic vacuum, the most powerful suctional force of Nature's that could ever be imagined. These centrifugal Repulsators are described in the patent application at the Reich's Patent Office in Berlin<sup>21</sup>. Their more detailed description will be undertaken at an appropriate moment in the future.

## Patent for: Pipe for Liquid and Gaseous Media

### AUSTRIAN PATENT OFFICE

### DESCRIPTION OF PATENT No. 196680

<sup>18</sup> Actually  $+3.98^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.164^{\circ}\text{F}$ ). — Ed.

<sup>19</sup> Gallons: Where values in gallons (gal) are referred to in the text, these are US gallons, where 1 US gallon = 3.785 litres, or 1 litre = 0.264 gallons. — Ed.

<sup>20</sup> "At a temperature of  $15^{\circ}\text{C}$  water is 819 times heavier than air at the same temperature. Water-vapour, on the other hand, absorbs a 1,700-fold volume of water. With the evaporation of 1 litre of water, about 600 heat units become latent (stored, bound)." Walter Schauburger, *Implosion Magazine*, No 9, p.26. — Ed.

<sup>21</sup> Unfortunately no details of this patent are available. - Ed

Class 47 f, 1

Issued 25th March 1958.

## VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER IN LINZ

## PIPE FOR LIQUID AND GASEOUS MEDIA

Application date: 30th May 1951 - Patent applies from: 15th August 1957

The named Co-inventor is Dipl. Ing. Walter Schauburger of Lauffen (Upper Austria)

Many suggestions have already been made as to how losses in energy, pressure or velocity arising in the transport of liquids or gaseous media can be reduced. Thus for the purposes of inhibiting the formation of air-bubbles, which provoke an increase in the resistance to flow, a British Patent No. 409,528 for a pipe has been published, which is wound in a screw-form manner and its cross-sectional surfaces are formed by two arcs of a circle. From the British Patent No. 28,5343 of 1913 AD, the application of a pipe with an egg-shaped cross-section was made known, which was provided with flow-directing slats to inhibit the formation of vortices. In the U.S. Patent No. 1,655,197 as well as in the Swiss Patent No. 126637, cylindrical or conical pipes were proposed with the object of reducing friction by converting it into rotation, for which the pipe axis served as the rotational axis. Lastly, the Austrian Patent No. 28099 depicts the use of indented and twisted pipes.

This invention (see fig. 17) relates to a conduit or pipe for liquid or gaseous media, which is intended to prevent encrustation and to reduce flow losses, wherein the pipe cross-section is formed of several curved arcs of a circle and the pipe is coiled in a screw-form manner. The invention also consists in the fact that the cross-section is egg-shaped with an indentation on one side adjacent to the pointed end of the egg and that the pipe is first twisted upon itself before the whole is formed into a coil. With the aid of such a pipe, the conveying capacity and efficiency is improved due the reduction of frictional losses and the prevention of encrustation. In order to increase the conveying capacity, the coiling of the pipe around an imaginary cylinder has proved to be particularly effective. For the same reason, the pipe can be rotated in a normal manner, whereby the central axis of the coiled pipe arrangement is also the axis of rotation. It is also advantageous to narrow the cross-section of the twisted pipe.

In the attached drawing the cross-sectional form and the coiling of the pipe are depicted schematically. Figure 1 shows the cross-section of the pipe and Figures 2-4 the pipe in its coiled configuration.

In Figure 1 the cross-section of the pipe in question is shown with a curved indentation on one side adjacent to the smaller end of the egg-shape. The coiling of the pipe can be effected by winding it round an imaginary cylinder,

Figure 2, or around an imaginary cone, Figures 3 & 4, prior to which the pipe is first twisted about itself. If the pipe is wound around an imaginary, circular cone corresponding to Figures 3 & 4, then pipe cross-section can be narrowed either towards the point or towards the base of the cone. Furthermore, for purposes of reducing frictional losses and the avoidance of encrustation, the whole arrangement can be rotated by suitable means, wherein the central axis of the coiled arrangement is also the axis of rotation.

### Patent Claims

1. The invention of a pipe for liquid and gaseous media for the prevention of encrustation and the reduction of flow losses, whereby the pipe cross-section consists of several arcs of a circle and the pipe is wound in a screw-form shape, is characterised by the fact that the cross-section of the pipe is egg-shaped with a curved indentation on one side adjacent to the pointed end, and that before being coiled, the pipe itself is first twisted.
2. In accordance with Claim 1, the pipe is characterised by being wound around an imaginary cone.
3. In accordance with Claims 1 & 2, the pipe is characterised by the fact that the coiled arrangement as a whole can be rotated about the central axis of the same.
4. In accordance with Claims 1 to 3, the invention is characterised by the fact that the pipe cross-section narrows in one direction.

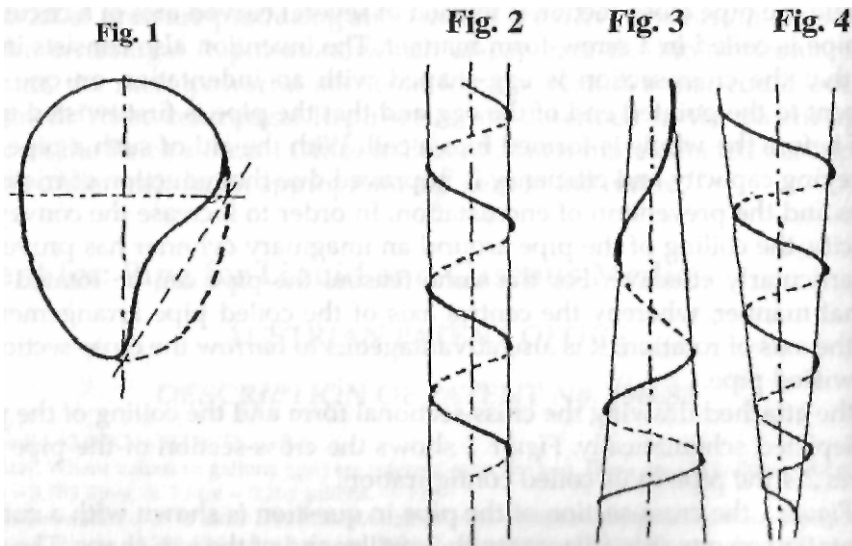


Fig. 17: Double spiral pipe diagram - patent No. 196680

## Patent for: Processes and Equipment for the Conveyance of Liquid, Gaseous or Aeriform Media

Processes and equipment for the conveyance of liquid, gaseous or aeriform media, as well as for the control of molecular separation and reduction, transformation and synthesis in moving media and the achievement of increased mechanical power

### VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER PATENTS - 1953

(The following text has been compiled by the editor from Implosion Magazine No. 41 and the Patent documents listed below.)

Portugal: No. 29,729 - 1953 - France : No. 1.057.576 - 1953 - Brazil: No. 43,431 -1953

This invention (see fig. 18) relates to a process for the conveyance of media in a liquid, vaporous, gaseous or aeriform state and which can be described, for example, as emulsions or suspensions, etc. Moreover, it also relates to the equipment required to carry out such processes. The invention also concerns processes for controlling molecular separation or reduction, transformation and synthesis with or in the media moved in accordance with the invention.

It further relates to the procedures for achieving increases in mechanical efficiency and output as well as equipment for the carrying out of such processes.<sup>22</sup>

Pursuant to the invention itself, it is essential that the media to be conveyed are imparted a movement which conducts them inward towards the centre, in the course of which the media are conveyed through grooves, pipes, etc. By means of such laminar, inwinding, and especially a multiple inwinding motion, significant advantages can be achieved in comparison with the methods of conveying such media in use today. This occurs through the transport of the media in channels, grooves, fluting, pipes or vessels with a cross-section in the form of an egg, or more accurately part of an egg, having a curved indentation, which is twisted like a screw in the direction of flow. If pipes are used, then these should take the form of the longitudinal cross-section of an egg, but with a curved indentation incorporated on one side at the more pointed end and which encompasses a quarter or less

<sup>22</sup> Where the word Figure occurs in the following text in italics, this refers to the various numbered figures shown on the actual patent drawing shown in fig. 18 and not to those elsewhere in the book. - Ed



of the total circumference. In open conduits, the cross-section corresponds to a portion of such an indented egg-section. Under the term 'egg-shape' is to be understood the classical egg-shape or an approximative egg-shape. The imparting of an inwinding motion can also be induced through conduction along appropriately shaped surfaces.

The conduits, pipes and vessels as well as the guiding surfaces can have a straight axis, although a meandering or screw-form axis is preferable.

Through the combined orbital and rotational motion thus imparted, the conveyance of the media is facilitated and improved, and in this way a series of specific effects are achieved. Thus it was, that Professor Dr. Ing. habil. Franz Popel of the Institute of Hygiene at Stuttgart Technical University was able to establish through comparative experiments, that in an indented or fluted, egg-shaped profile, wherein the indentation is twisted like a screw in the direction of flow, the level of friction did not increase with increased volume and velocity of flow. On the contrary, at certain velocities the friction diminished and overall it was significantly less than in conventional pipes of circular profile.<sup>23</sup>

In liquids conveyed by this invention, the frictional resistance of the liquids on the inner wall-surfaces of the conducting pipe is reduced to a remarkable degree. It has also become evident that any variety of copper enhances or facilitates the inwinding motion catalytically. Instead of being wholly made out of copper, copper facings can also be used, which are affixed to the inside of the pipe. The desired results are achieved simply because the liquid comes in contact with the copper from time to time, the more frequently the better. Alloys of copper can also be used to equal advantage. Instead of copper, other metals belonging to the same electromotive series can be used, such as silver or gold.

The best effect corresponding to the intent of the invention, is achieved with the use of doubly twisted pipes. These are pipes in which the indented, egg-shaped, cross-section is first twisted along the length of the pipe and the whole then wound into a coil.

Apart from this, the desired effect can also be intensified by the application of magnets. These are either laid continuously or spaced at certain intervals along the length of the pipe.

To date it has not been known that it is possible to move liquid, gaseous or aeriform media in such a way that molecular activity can be controlled at will.

With today's conventional systems of movement, e.g. in straight-drawn, smooth pipes, the through-flowing media will indeed be transported. However, a reactive, structure-loosening tendency evolves as a secondary effect, which provokes further molecular disintegration. This cannot be controlled. These disintegrative events increase quite considerably with an

<sup>23</sup> See the Popel Report on p. 219 of this book. — Ed.

increase in velocity caused by increased pressure, additional warming or mechanical centrifugating, etc.

If the molecular structure of a moving liquid, gaseous or aeriform medium is to be maintained or a process of molecular synthesis actually inaugurated, then the aforesaid structure-loosening tendency must be prevented as a first priority.

The aim of the invention includes processes and appliances, which not only prevent unwanted molecular disintegration and the de-energising of the moving liquid and gaseous media, but also enable the achievement of molecular synthesis and a build-up of energy. These also lead to increases in mechanical efficiency and output.

In certain cases these molecular processes have to take place in a certain, special, rhythmical interplay of forces, in which expansion and contraction alternate with each other. By preventing molecular disintegration or separation, a condition can be achieved in which encrustations and sedimentation in the moving water or other liquid can be eliminated.

In accordance with the invention, the desired effect is achieved through a particular process, as a result of which the medium is primarily imparted a definite laminar, multiple-inwinding motion. It is the special construction of these pipes, conduits or vessels that makes this form of motion possible.

The molecular synthesis, recombination and transformation, energetic upgrading, bio-catalytic reduction, etc. is achieved with the processes associated with this invention:

- (a) through the laminar, multiple inwinding of the media to be moved in these involution enhancing forms, fabricated with certain materials, and if necessary,
- (b) through the addition of substances of diverse molecular and atomic structure or if need be, of trace-elements, active substances and the like, and
- (c) through the energetic bonding (coupling) of the media and the added material by means of catalysts. This can also be effected by directly or indirectly incident rays of light of different frequencies, e.g. blue, ultra-violet light, etc. The stimulation of pulsation or vibration by means of ultra-sound is also possible. Excessive structure-loosening influences of light of certain frequency bands must be reduced to the minimum value prescribed for each medium.

By way of example, the design of a conduit producing a multiple-inwinding flow-motion, which at least maintains the molecular structure of media to be moved, is to be provided with an 'open profile' and must exhibit the following features:

- (a) it must have a variable cross-sectional profile, which is envisaged as having been derived from the pointed end of an egg-shaped form, whereby in one of its longitudinal halves the near-identical profile is incorporated as a concavity. (see Figure 1 - 'open profile')
- (b) It must have a longitudinal profile that is so shaped as to take the form of a wave, or meander, as shown in Figure 2a.

The form of the conduit itself must be so constructed that along the length of the meandering longitudinal profile the convex portion of the 1/2 egg-shaped profile migrates from the right-hand of Section A-A<sup>1</sup>, via the neutral point of Section B-B<sup>1</sup>, rising to its extreme value again on the left-hand side of Section C-C<sup>1</sup>. In this process of migration the size of the indentation gradually reduces and displaces laterally.

In natural channels (streams, rivers, etc.) the previously described channel shape is the prerequisite for inwinding motion. Natural channels are therefore the prerequisite for the regeneration of the watercourse and for the maintenance of the biological laws of bio-hydraulics.

If the previously described, partial egg-profile containing the convex indentation is supplemented by fully rounded, longitudinal portion on the opposite side, then the cross-sectional form of the 'closed profile' is produced (Figure 3).

In Figure 4, by way of example, an arrangement is depicted in which a pipe with a closed profile is wound around the outer face of an imaginary cylinder.

This design can be usefully applied, for example, to drinking water pipelines, the reticulation of industrial water and for pipelines of all kinds.

If in addition an acceleration of the flow is desired, i.e. for purposes of reducing the cross-sectional area and the resultant savings in costs of the pipes themselves, then these specially profiled, closed pipes, either singly or severally, can be wound around and attached to a cylindrical core (Figure 4), which is then made to rotate. The volume conveyed and the increase in mechanical efficiency and output can be regulated by varying the rate of rotation. This arrangement is particularly suited to the conveyance of liquid, gaseous and aeriform media.

A further example of the design, which serves for certain syntheses (transformative, recombinant and upgrading processes), is depicted in Figure 5a, 5b. In these configurations the closed profile shown in Figure 3 can also be used. In this design a pipe possessing the said profile is wound around a conical, rotating core.

Depending on the desired purpose, the cross-sectional profile either reduces in size towards the point of the cone (Figure 5b), for example, for the conveyance and transformation of seawater into freshwater, or towards the base of the cone-shaped core (Figure 5a), for example, for the separation of mixtures.

For particular applications, several such pipes can be connected top to top, or bottom to bottom (for example, in the stimulation of pulsations for processes of synthesis).

Likewise several such twisted pipes can be grouped about a common axis.

Open, slotted, perforated or partially open and closed pipes and pipe systems of the above type can also be used, for example, to achieve diffusive or filtering effects.

With the possibility of regulating the rotational velocity of such pipes or pipelines, not only can the discharge velocity of the media be increased and with it an increase in mechanical efficiency and output, but also the speed of the molecular transformation can be controlled.

On the other hand, with a non-rotating pipe configuration of similar nature, the process of molecular transformation takes place over a correspondingly longer pathway.

Experiments have shown that a particularly useful shape of vessel can be developed from the egg-shape and is especially suited to the mixing, stirring, etc., of media, or the carrying out of biochemical processes and fermentation processes. This shape can also be developed from rotating egg-shaped or ovoid bodies or if necessary from paraboloid or hyperboloid, rotating bodies and the like, whereby these vessels can likewise be set in regulable rotation as the case demands.

The driving mechanism for all these rotating bodies can also be designed in such a way, that these bodies are imparted a rhythmically alternating direction of rotation. Drives of this nature require no further elaboration here, since they are already well-known to technology.

The inclusion of additives can take place in any desired fashion and relates to substances in a solid, liquid, gaseous or aeriform state, and is ordered according to the nature of the desired molecular synthesis or organisation.

The intrinsic qualities of the material required to upgrade the water must be introduced in doses in accordance with the findings of the analyses of the said drinking, medicinal and /or mineral water.

The energetic coupling, the actual bonding of these additives to the media, is achieved through the interaction between the aforesaid types of motion. The bonding takes place by way of bio-catalysts inter alia through the appropriate choice of materials from which the previously described pipes, channels or vessels are made. In such applications, copper, silver and gold and their alloys have proved to be particularly suitable. However, synthetic resins (plastics) with or without mineral or metallic inclusions or crystals, or natural stone, woods such as larch, fir, etc. and combinations of such materials can also be used.

For example, in a vessel made with an appropriate copper alloy, water with a corresponding valency (healing property) can be produced.

Catalysts and materials, elements, etc. to be incorporated must naturally have a specific, energetic proportional relation, which in any event is sufficiently well understood in the field of catalysts and their application.

In addition, the energetic coupling (bonding) can take place through direct irradiation by light of various frequencies (blue, ultra-violet, etc.) or through the mechanical stimulation of vibration, as has already been stated.

The distinctive, multiple-inwinding motion, characterised above by the orbital and rotational, inwinding tendency of the moving medium (water, earth, air, etc.) leads to a drop in temperature towards the anomaly point of +4°C (39.2°F) and its specific densation, which is the case with water in particular.

These effects are integral to the possibility of controlling the induced molecular processes and to the achievement of a substantially higher output and performance. They can be applied to drive turbines, propel ships, locomotive devices, aircraft, the conveyance of all kinds of media, to the raising of the carrying capacity and tractive force of the water in small, artificial channels, conduits or flumes, etc.

The increase in performance itself is to be attributed inter alia to the substantial elimination of the centrifugally-acting, reactive wall-pressures. In all systems of motion of this nature, the speed of motion is increased. The process of molecular syntheses is strengthened through the increase in specific density.

In the case of rotating pipes, pipes systems and vessels, a regulable reversed flow and/or counter-rotation occurs between the rotating forms and the media moving through them, which accelerates and augments the aforesaid processes as well as the mechanical increase in output and efficiency.

Accordingly, the areas of application of the invention are manifold and of extremely wide scope. The implementation of this process and the associated appliances has proved to be particularly effective in the prevention of encrustation in pipes, sedimentation in channels, the transformation of seawater into freshwater with a range of properties, the biological purification of polluted drinking water and general purpose water, and in high-grade molecular syntheses. It is equally suited to processes of energetic concentration and transformation, for example, in the transformation of molecular structures of liquid nature into gaseous, ethereal or volatile states and vice versa. It demonstrates the nature of the build-up of blood, and sap in the world of plants.

It should also be mentioned that, as a result of this invention, new designs for turbines, propulsion systems for ships and aircraft, and differently designed water reticulation and transfer installations can be developed.

With more specific reference to the invention itself, it should also be noted with reference to Figure 6, that the movement mentioned above (which can equally take place in the opposite direction), and multiple inwinding movement in particular, should be conceived as the tendencies represented in

Figure 6. In this figure, which depicts a closed profile, D is the direction in which the profile itself rotates and E is the direction of the tendency to inwind.

As inwinding forms, apart from the inwinding motion described above, equal consideration should be given to the coiling of the profile shown in Figure 6 about various other forms depicted schematically in Figures 4, 5c & 5d.

These other forms can also include an extended egg-shape (tear-drop shape) or a contracted (extreme) egg-shape.

Amongst the base core-forms mentioned above, inwinding tubes or systems of inwinding tubes of a special design can be incorporated (as in Figure 7).

Curved or inwinding tubes of a special shape can likewise be attached to the external envelope or the internal periphery of the bodies of the rotating conical shapes or the others described above, whose spiral configurations rotate in opposite directions, for example, a left-hand external spiral and a right-hand internal spiral configuration, or vice versa.

## Patent Claims

The invention is characterised notably by the following features and possible permutations and combinations:

1. Procedures for the control of processes of molecular decomposition, transformation or composition taking place in the moving media, liquid, gaseous or aeriform through which an increase in mechanical performance and output can be achieved; Procedures characterised by endowing the media with a particular laminar movement, which then inwinds upon itself several times in the above conduits, tubes or receptacles of a certain shape and material conducive to such form of movement.
2. Given that different media have different molecular and atomic structures, these are transformed into molecular organisations of different nature through the interactions occurring during such laminar multiple-inwinding movement by means of energetic coupling.
3. Elements existing as trace-elements, active substances and such like are incorporated into the said processes in order to contribute or participate in the energetic interactions.
4. The energetic interaction (coupling) between the media or substances is produced, for example, by way of catalysts, which amongst other things, desirably correspond to the base material of the artefact, or through the direct or indirect production of oscillations (for example, light of different frequency regions or ultra-sound), the said interaction being additionally assisted by the production of mechanical oscillations.

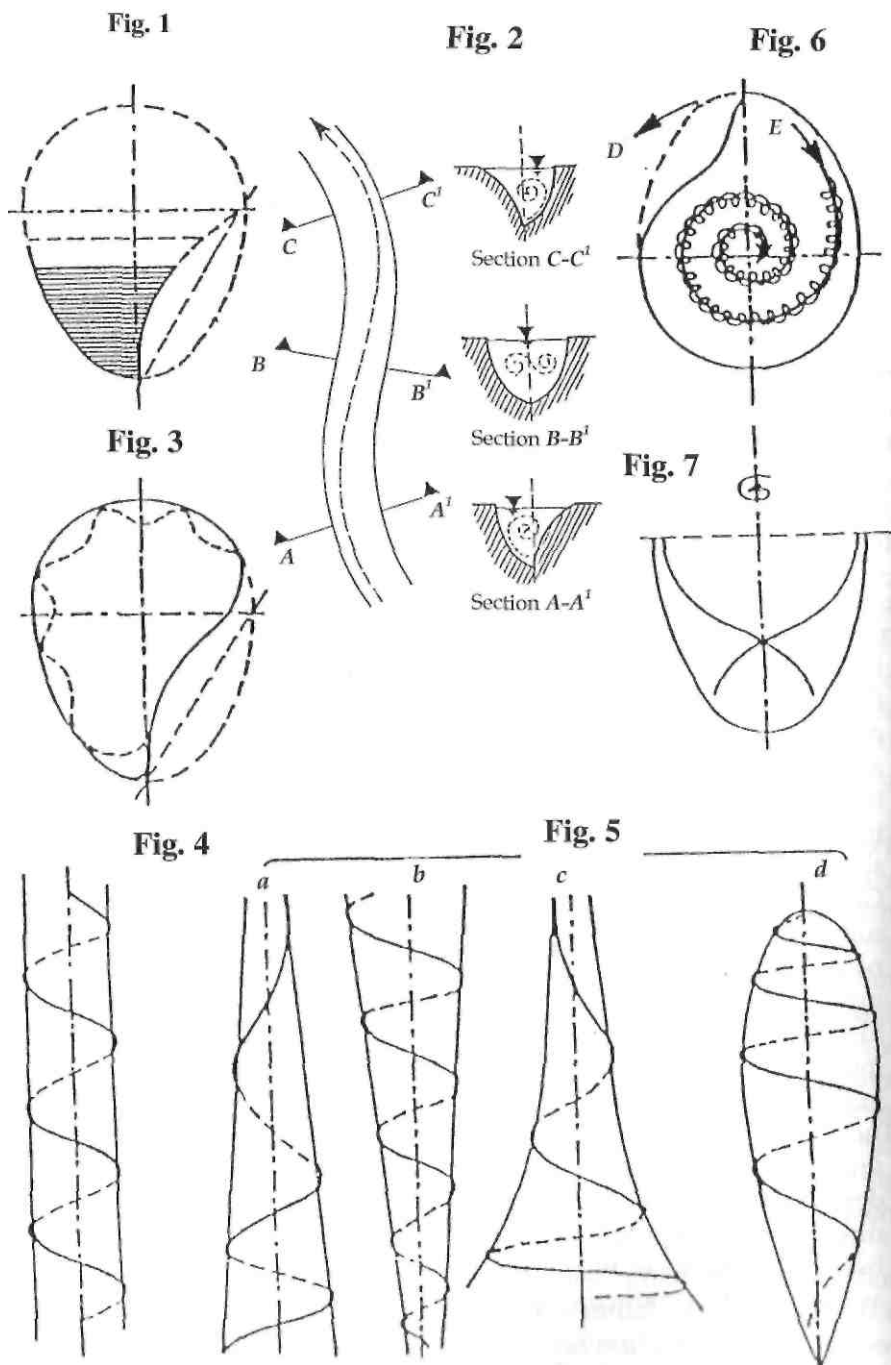


Fig. 18: Double spiral pipe diagram - multiple patents

## 6.

# The Air Turbine

## Letter to Werner Zimmermann

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 2.0. (4th February 1936 - extract)

**A**part from the 'production of petrol from water', the exploitation of which we will be discussing later, I have stumbled on something which perhaps will change the whole of technology and commerce from the ground up. On the 22nd of January (1936) I was granted a patent (No. 145,141) for an air-turbine (a breathing machine) (see fig. 19). The principle of this vacuum-turbine consists in the fact that an artificial thunderstorm, or high-tension electrical charge develops in a capillary tube and a double-spiral pipe in which electromagnets have been incorporated, which transforms the substances of the air into electrical energies. These discharge into the sidewalls and from there, through diffusion, are ducted away downwards as heat. Through the transmutation of aeriform matter into energies, a self-intensifying physical vacuum is created in an upward direction and through the recurrent development of a heat gradient in a downward direction, a powerful upcurrent of air evolves, which after a few minutes intensifies to cyclonic force. Because the air-pressure in an upward direction can be progressively reduced in this extremely simple way, the counterflow of air can be raised to over 200 kph (124 mph), producing about 10,000 brake horsepower on the inclined surfaces of the propeller (turbine).

This opens the way to the development of fuel-less, silently moving aircraft, because the physical vacuum evolving inside the machine at the forward end creates an airless space immediately in front of the machine into which the machine itself is drawn. Through the appropriate adjustment of the internal system of lungs or gills, the intensity of this suction can be varied. In this way the motive force and the speed of the apparatus can be increased as desired,



because the repulsing reverse-thrusting piston-like columns of air are themselves the fuel. Once this fuel has been decomposed analytically, it triggers the physical counter-current through which the suctional forces arise.

With this invention I have finally achieved what I have been striving for these last 20 years, namely to make the use of coal, oil and hydro-power no longer viable. These substances are predestined for the production of food. Their increasing extraction from the organism of the Earth will inevitably lead to problems of food supply, because the constantly rising world population increasingly robs the Earth of those substances that support life. Since no combustion processes are involved, the aeriform substances transformed in the machine create very high-grade nitrogenous material, which increases the vitality and germinating capacity of the vegetation. Thus I have struck a blow against the technologists, who utilise the substances required for food production to create motion by means of hot combustion and hence bring the natural processes of growth to a complete standstill.

Air-masses super-saturated with oxygen will become the sole fuel of the future. This will reduce the mechanical and physical air pressure on the Earth and even in low-lying areas, mountain air-conditions conducive to increasing the vegetation will prevail and at the same time tropical changes of climate will eventuate, which will counteract the coming ice-age. These machines will completely change the whole of the world economy and make wars, etc. unnecessary, because a superfluity of vegetable matter will automatically arise. Of necessity this will have to be consumed, if the creation of excess negative energies, as happens today, and therefore the development of elemental catastrophes are to be avoided. In this way charity and tolerance will become the dictates of reason, because the increasing turnover will be transformed into prosperity. That is to say, that love of one's neighbour, which cannot be instilled with threats of hell and damnation, will become established in this way and indeed will actually become an object of speculation for humanity.

I am now working feverishly on the completion of this highly simple and cheap breathing-machine and I hope to be able to show you the finished work at the end of the month. Then your work begins, namely the work of the Sermon on the Mount, the call to reason, whose purpose is the turning inside out of contemporary economics and falsities. It is fate that has brought us together. I reiterate emphatically that you can rely on me 100%, because I am in a position to furnish you with material that will make the whole world sit up and take notice and will create such a stir, that people will come to you from all corners of the Earth once you begin to preach. It is my job to research to seek and to unveil. Your job is to speak and explain and in this way your circle of business acquaintances will become what it should be; the focus of power that spreads like a wave and envelopes whatever is still possessed of a spark of reason.

## The Vacuum Turbine

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, section 7.6.

The principle of this vacuum turbine consists in the fact that in a capillary tube and a double-spiral pipe in which electromagnets have been incorporated, an artificial thunderstorm or high electrical atmospheric charge develops, which transmutes the elements of the air into electrical energies. These discharge themselves into the sidewalls and from there are conducted downwards as heat by way of diffusion. Through the re-formation of aeriform substances into energies, a self-intensifying physical vacuum is created in a forward or upward direction and owing to the succession of downwardly directed heat-gradients, a strong upcurrent of air develops, which after a few seconds intensifies to cyclonic force. This provides the basis for silent, fuel-less aircraft, for through the physical vacuum created inside the machine, an airless space develops in front of it into which the machine itself is sucked. This suction can be intensified at will through the appropriate adjustment of the system of gills and lungs in the machine's interior, so that the motive force and the speed of the apparatus can be likewise increased as desired, because the repulsing air-piston is the actual propellant which, decomposed analytically, unleashes the physical counterflow.

## The Formation and Composition of Riverwater

A reply by Viktor Schauberger to a newspaper report - Implosion Magazine, No. 84.

I thank you for your last letter and enclosures, which interested me particularly, because this is the fourth instance of rivers flowing uphill. These cases cannot be explained purely mechanically. In the Tatra mountains of Czechoslovakia there is a river, which over a distance of about 15 km (9.3 miles), overcomes a reverse-gradient of 64 metres (210 ft). These phenomena are painstakingly kept secret, because it is feared that an exhaustive analysis of them would bring about the collapse of the Law of Gravity. These statements are closely related to my own discoveries, which can be exploited practically and perhaps will change contemporary technology completely. Tackled correctly, power will cost virtually nothing. Science made a gross error in defining water with the chemical formula  $H_2O$ . Should there be any formula for water at all, it should look like this:

Water is the most ideal accumulator and transformer in which the direction of movement alone determines whether magnetic or electric currents are produced. These are of organic origin and decompose either air and water, so that

the three primary elements hydrogen H, carbon C and oxygen O are released. Under the appropriate arrangements C and O combine to become organic electricity. The freed H streams upwards at great speed and, through a double-spiral motion (a secondary spiral flow about a primary spiral path), attracts to itself the difference-matter (variously potentiated elements) of the air, resulting in the recreation of water and air.

If the vortical current streaming upwards in a specially constructed tube is braked against a propeller, then at a rate of 4,000 litres (141.25 ft<sup>3</sup>) of air per second, which rise at a velocity of 200 kmh (124 mph), this produces an active force on the shaft amounting to 996 hp. To analyse 4,000 litres of air only 3 - 4 hp are required, so that the above 996 hp represent free, usable energy. This kinetic principle is founded on thermo-electric processes that we can observe in Nature in the formation of cyclones, storms, etc. These implosive processes can be simulated artificially and enable tremendous energies to be unleashed in the smallest machines, when organic catalysts, similar to those in the lungs and gills, are agitated and which dissociate either water or air into its basic constituents. The dissociated H is the attracting magnet for the surrounding air-masses, which in the process become so condensed, that inside the machine the potential pressure of the air falls by over 100 mm (4 in.), provoking a powerful influx of the air-masses lying immediately in front of the air-intake, which in turn creates a zone of rarefaction into which the machine is impelled. This actually represents the discovery of the silent and fuel-less aircraft, which correctly simulates the flight of birds organically.

Our work here progresses only slowly, because the people are heavily over-worked and we have been waiting for the components for months. We are here concerned with a machine, which should deliver 1,000 hp, requiring a driving force of only 4 hp to do so.

What you have represented as a phenomenon in your newspaper report will be a self-evident phenomenon once this machine has been built, because with it one can lift water to any height without effort and almost without any input of power.

The Hindenburg accident in those days is to be attributed to similar processes of dissociation, or more precisely, to synthetic reversed metamorphoses. The crash of the American airship, the Akron, which was filled with helium, is equally attributable to short circuits. With hydrogen, fire is created, and with a filling of helium - water. The analogous counterpart to the helium synthesis we find in the natural formation of rain.

One day it would be very interesting to clear up the question, whether humanity consciously or unconsciously lost these simple processes of Nature. In my opinion, it happened unwittingly, because in earlier times people had no conception of analytical or synthetical processes and 50 years ago the science of radiation physics was virtually unknown.

It is beyond doubt, however, that the Atlanteans possessed silent aircraft (vimanas). It is at any rate possible that at the time the priesthood preserved the secrets of catalysis, which in the course of time were simply lost. I arrived at the whole affair through observations of the motionless trout in torrential currents and through the accurate observation of bird-flight, which without physical exertion takes place entirely through processes of diffusion<sup>1</sup>. I am convinced that we now stand before an upheaval, which will fundamentally change all realms of knowledge and belief, for in my opinion the discovery of the way to produce an abundance of food will provide the basis for all manner of political development. This abundance first has to be lost with the continuing development of our present technology, because it is only in this way that humanity will bring about its own ruin through its own handiwork and come to realise the stupidity of its activities.

## Re: The Air Turbine (Austrian Patent No. 145141 - 15.03.1935)

Excerpt from *The Discovery of Levitational Force*, Salzburg, 1949, Implosion No. 115, pp 36-37

With high frequencies, which can be regulated as desired, this patented device produces an almost absolute void (vacuum), causing air to move at such high velocities per unit of time that any desired power can be obtained by means of a propeller-like resistance to motion.

This patent is founded on the discovery that constant pressure or suction, whether generated by mechanical or physical means is immaterial, triggers a

resistance that increases by the square of the velocity generated by either of them. This happens for the simple reason that under abnormally high pressure, for example, the state of aggregation (not to be confused with the natural variation in developmental states) of air is transformed instantaneously into water, and under strong suctional velocity, water into air. In the first case, by way of a reactive intensification, an almost absolute vacuum (or more properly, an almost 100% air-less vacuity) is created. In the second case, a counter-pressure of such magnitude evolves, that any further attempt to achieve a greater reactive reduction in volume would be futile.

The above patent (No. 145141 - 15th March 1935), however, has long been superceded and is therefore only of historic interest, because incomparably more powerful reactive forces can be generated, which increase performance

<sup>1</sup> See how is a bird able to become temporarily independent of the ground ?' on p. 14 of *The Fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the Ecotechnology series. - Ed

instead of reducing it. In the case of the above patent, if this process is merely reversed, then the following happens:

The so-called oxygen of the air is combusted by two periodically pulsing electric (therefore decomposive) flame-arcs. This creates an exhaust gas, which can only be extracted by strong centrifugal pressure.

To this end a very specially constructed egg-shape is required, which rotates at high speed.

This particularly shaped and alloyed egg-form contains an equally specially shaped and alloyed system of curves, which only produces a reaction in the exhaust gases, but not in the renewed inflow of oxygen or any small quantities of combustible gases or liquids.

In this way an expulsion of exhaust gas occurs, whose velocity can be effortlessly increased to 10,000 m/sec (32,800 ft/sec). The velocity of this exhaust emission is inhibited by the full-throttle velocity, which can be raised by the square of the exhaust velocity easily and cheaply.

The interposed brake-propeller transforms these powerful suctional velocities into useful power that can be regulated and increased at will. Modern science on the other hand uses this braking-propeller for forward propulsion, despite the fact that its use produces pressure- and heat-intensifying and therefore reversed reactions - and is thus a resistance-triggering device.<sup>2</sup>

This fact should put an end to today's science (technology, hydraulics and dynamics), which without exception triggers the reversed force that produces braking reactions.

For this reason it can no longer be claimed that annihilating fire and the temperatures, etc. arising from this epicentre of destruction are still necessary, if a process was researched and put in place that enables the ur-generation of the highest-grade forces of pressure and suction that exist on this planet, which like the energised effects of urge and yearning, function at the speed of thought.

This process, which involves the natural acceleration of mass without combustion or heat, is therefore not founded on fire.

<sup>2</sup> "As best demonstrated by Nature in the case of the aerofoil maple-seed, today's propeller is a pressure-screw and therefore a braking screw, whose purpose is to allow the heavy maple-seed to fall parachute-like slowly towards the ground and to be carried away sideways by the wind in the process. No bird has such a whirling thing on its head, nor a fish on its tail. Only man made use of this natural brake-screw for forward propulsion. As the propeller rotates, so does the resistance rise by the square of the rotational velocity. This is also a sign that this supposed propulsive device is unnaturally constructed and therefore out of place." Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 112, p. 52. — Ed.

## An Air-Turbine Patent

### AUSTRIAN PATENT OFFICE SPECIFICATION OF PATENT No. 145141

Class 46f.

Issued 10th April 1936

VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER IN HADERSDORF-WEIDLINGEN,  
LOWER AUSTRIA.

#### AN AIR-TURBINE.

Application date: 7th March 1935 - Patent applies from: 15th November 1935

It is known that impellers can be caused to rotate by moving air. It is equally known that an air current can be generated through evacuation. The present invention, however, makes use of mechanical and physical forces.

In the accompanying diagram (see fig. 19), the object of the invention is portrayed in Sections A-A and B-B. A snailshell-shaped housing a in which the impeller b is mounted is connected to a double-spiral pipe c by means of a hollow shaft d. The double-spiral pipe c is joined to an egg-shaped, hollow body e at f, which is divided into two spaces by means of a wire mesh g. In the inner chamber of e gas-burners or electric arc-throwers are incorporated that combust the inflowing gas at about 2,000°C (3,632°F). The inner chamber is connected to an exhauster via a heatable double-spiral pipe h. To this exhauster, streamlined, egg-shaped nozzles i are attached and the whole arrangement is activated by an external force.

The impeller incorporated inside the snailshell housing is constructed in such a way that fresh air can only enter the hollow shaft d when the impeller-blade k passes over the slot j incorporated in the hollow shaft. The flywheel l, whose cross-sections are egg-shaped and which is mounted on the hollow shaft d, is installed in an externally airtight housing m. The air present in the hollow space n is sucked out through a connecting passage o, so that in the highly rarefied space n the flywheel is offered very little resistance to rotation. To maintain the combustion process, a combustible gas is introduced at p. The double-spiral pipe c mentioned at the beginning has been granted an Austrian patent, No. 138296. This pipe consists of an external pipe made of wooden staves and an asbestos sleeve. Within the latter there is a metal sleeve, which has wood-shaving-like metal elements bent out from the periphery, whose axis is inclined towards the pipe-axis at an angle of 30° to 45°. <sup>3</sup> These metal elements are aligned along several spiral pathways. The

<sup>3</sup> See description of Patent 138296 on p. 202 of *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

peripheral air-masses will thus be forced to describe a path corresponding to a spiral within a spiral.

The inner metal sleeve is heated electrically. In addition, the heat arising from friction on the outer walls leads to the warming of the outer air-masses, through which in particular all the oxygen contained in the air expands, concentrates itself at the pipe-walls, becoming even warmer on its multi-spiral path along the pipe-walls. The remaining gases contained in the air pass down the centre of the pipe and rise through the agency of the gas introduced at p.

Because the warmer and therefore more aggressive oxygen brushes along the outer pipe-walls and the colder residual components of the air flow through the inner region of the pipe, inner tensions arise between the materials due to the temperature differences obtaining, which become more pronounced the longer the distance travelled, until interactions ultimately occur. These interactions proceed in the form of small explosions and assist the reaction that takes place through the combustion of the highly energised gases within the egg-shaped safety mesh g.

In the egg-shaped body e a sieve (safety mesh) g is incorporated, outside of which the separated oxygen mentioned earlier accumulates, passes through the sieve into the centre, wherein, with the aid of the electric or gas arcs, it contributes to the almost complete combustion of the centrally conducted combustible gases. As a result a much greater vacuum evolves than has hitherto been achieved using currently known methods. At the same time the exhaust gases are reduced to a minimum and extracted mechanically via h and i. Through the creation of the vacuum in e, the air will be sucked in with even greater force, setting the impeller in motion in the process.

## Patent Claims

1. The air-turbine is characterised by the fact that the air-masses in a double-spiral pipe can be so strongly moved, that due to frictional heat and externally supplied heat between the peripheral air-masses and those streaming down the pipe-axis, differences in temperature arise, which lead to cold interactions in the air flowing through the double-spiral pipe, whose end-product is an almost total vacuum.
2. In accordance with Claim 1 the air-turbine is further characterised by the complete combustion that takes place in a partitioned chamber by means of a safety mesh having a pipe-shaped extension towards its base.
3. In accordance with Claims 1 & 2, the air-turbine is characterised by the fact that the attached flywheel is caused to rotate in a rarefied space.
4. In accordance with Claims 1-3, the air-turbine is characterised by the fact that the supply of air takes place pulsatingly through a slot in the hollow shaft.

5. In accordance with Claims 1-3, the air-turbine is characterised by the fact that the discharge of exhaust gases takes place by means of a heated pipe in which a temperature higher than that of the exhaust gases prevails.

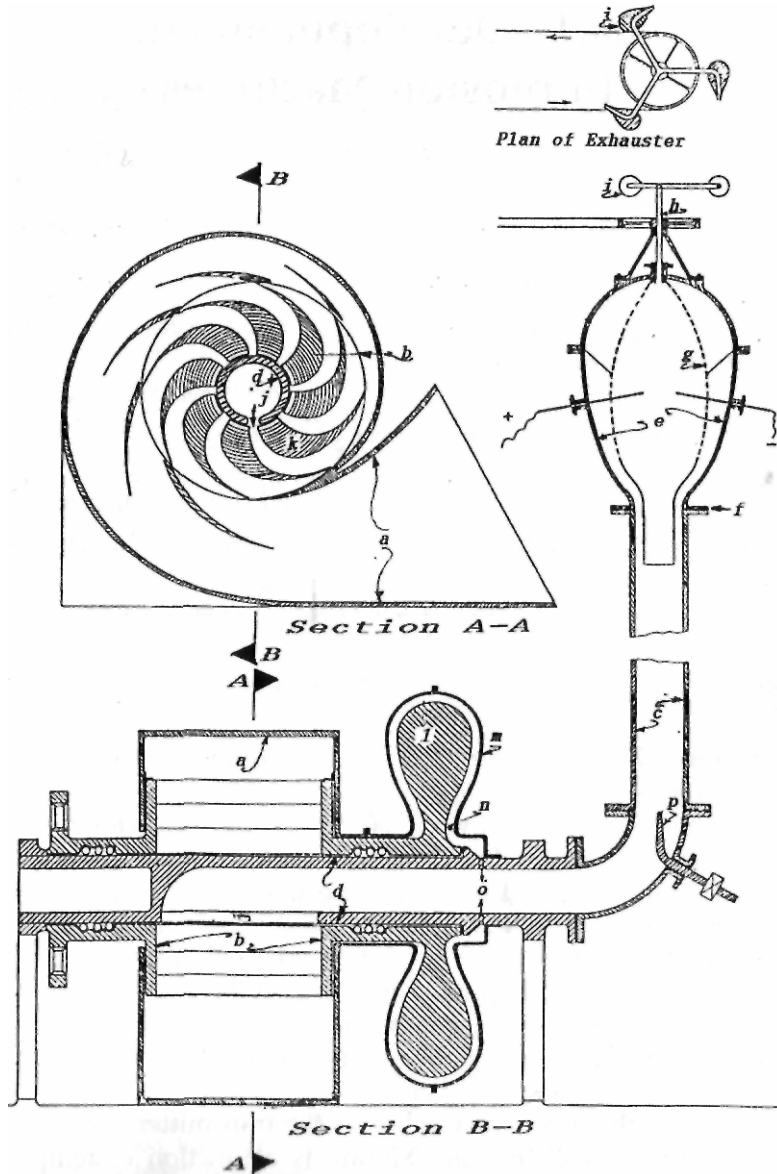


Fig. 19: Air-turbine diagram - patent No. 145141



## 7.

# Early Developments in Implosion Machines

"Implosion is no invention in the conventional sense, but rather the renaissance of ancient knowledge, lost over the course of time."

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 83. p.16.

"In every case do the opposite to whatever technology does today. Then you will always be on the right track."

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No.36, p. 3.

"You must learn to think one octave higher. Only then will you learn how implosion energy works."

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p. 27.

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2,1993, section 7.4.

In a letter from Viktor Schauberger to Werner Zimmermann of the 21st May 1936, Viktor writes:

"This machine (30 cm [12 in] wide, 50 cm [20 in] high) vaporises, purified and distils water by means of cold processes. At the same time, it will raise water to any desired height, for which almost no power of any kind is needed. My machine is a body, which consists of internal and peripheral nozzles, which replace the valves of present machines or supplement them. My machines only require the impulse and manifest the reaction as an expulse, which not merely presses, but simultaneously sucks. This then results in the creation of resistance-less motion, due to the reciprocity, which today's resistance<sup>1</sup> makes use of as a 'means of propulsion'.

The body is merely an antenna, whereas the transmitter is responsible for the phenomenon we call 'motion'. Motion is a function of temperaments, which within and about themselves are possessed of plus and minus in

<sup>1</sup> Here the use of the word 'resistance' may actually be intended to apply to the scientific establishment. — Ed.

diverse shapes and sizes. Hence by altering the inner-atomic structure, we can displace the centre of gravity and thereby achieve that which we regard as pure, resistance-free motion; a motion, however, we have for so long not understood, because we ourselves are the resistance, which under the most difficult conditions, has to move itself in order to evolve."

## The Atom Transforming Machine

From Spec. Ed. Mensch unci Technik, Vol. 2,1993, sections 7.7.7-7.7.10

### 7.7.7 Notes from 15th July 1936

Today we began to assemble the atom-transforming machine. Tomorrow or the day after it will run for the first time. Simple and true, that is the impression one gets when observing it. Unfortunately, in its present state we cannot make the upper part of the machine fully operational. The danger is too great. I cannot risk the lives of my co-workers. Fully operational, the machine must be remote-controlled, for either a violent thunderstorm or a cyclone will develop; If the organic H discharges itself downwards, then there is a short-circuit - a thunderstorm, whereas an upward discharge of H produces the celestial electromagnet, which is actuated at about 40,000 milli-amps, and with it the charging up of the celestial Plus + Minus, i.e. the cyclone. The physicist Renault produced a short-circuit, which incinerated him and his colleague in a matter of seconds<sup>2</sup>. Perish the thought that it should first ignite

<sup>2</sup> There follow some short extracts pertinent to the above. Here is an interesting extract from one of Schauburger's writings (TAU 145, page 18), concerning the extraction of energy from water: — Ed. "...and thus I succeeded not only in producing petrol-like explosive aqueous substances and the most noble high springwater from dirty water, but also in recreating an invention, which the well-known physicist Gerard Renault had apparently made in his day (1926), and to which he and his assistant fell victim at the Paris Academy because he failed to recognise the enormous energies latent in water and in the air."

The following extract from the periodical *Der Weg* (7/11/1946, 1st year, no 48, p. 12) gives a fuller indication of what Renault was working with:

The French physicist Gerard Renault had already occupied himself with the problem of obtaining electricity from the air. In his laboratory in Grenoble he worked night and day on his invention and even the scant information that emerged publicly created a sensation in scientific circles. One day a machine stood in his workshop which was held to be a wonder. Day after day its wheels turned without any observer being able to determine whence the driving force originated. Neither steam, nor combustion gases, nor electrical motive forces could be detected. The machine stood on its base, completely insulated from the ground, and ran independently like a perpetuum mobile. For a while Renault enjoyed the general wonderment, and then one day he said, "This machine is in fact driven by electricity, but with electricity from the air! I have solved the problem. With its practical application, in a few years we shall achieve a paradise on Earth." The French Academy requested Renault to come to Paris so that he could demonstrate his invention there. The inventor agreed, hastening to the capital with his assistant, setting up his machine in the experiment theatre. Just before the beginning of the demonstration, he wanted to explain how it worked. His assistant was present. Suddenly there was a tremendous explosion, flames shot out of the doors and windows, and once the fire brigade had succeeded in extinguishing the fire, the machine was a heap of wreckage. Renault and his assistant died in the explosion. They took their secret with them to the grave.

on the transverse axis! It entirely depends on where the H discharges. On the transverse or vertical axis? This determines the stronger pole, for here too a bipolarity is involved.

### 7.7.2: Notes from 24th July 1936

In terms of their actual manufacture the machine's components have not been properly fabricated and now, unfortunately, I have to have the whole work carried out again completely, because I cannot achieve the required revolutions. The first trial demonstrated an important law, namely that the Sun's rays decrease in capacity with an increase in heat. This gives rise to the possibility of producing cold light or cold fire artificially and in further consequence, the absolute cure of cancerous diseases.

Through the organic arrangement of the cathode and anode systems, I achieve planetary motion in the machine by adjusting the potential angle of  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ), whereby either light - the primary ur-structure, or motion - the primary ur-dematerialisation, is initiated. If I set cold light and warm motion in a harmonic rhythm, then I obtain a growing motion, or the living force of the Almighty.

So-called short-wave radiation is none other than hard unprocessed un-demodulated radiant energy, which can be generated to any intensity with the organic machine. From this arises the mutation, the inversion of the creation-of-motion, that is, the waxing motion-of-creation or free energy. For this reason I require an initial inward-moving force in order to set the machine in dynamic motion. Once the required revolutions per minute have been reached, then the warm motion begins to grow.

If this waxing mass-motion in the double-spiral pipe is now slowly cooled, then absolute dematerialisation is achieved; that is, pure heat or cold energy and with it the separation of the Ur. This H is the organic polarity or the earthly motive impulse, which as a result of the relaxation of its inner tension now displaces itself and streams upwards. On its way to the pole, this negative impulse sucks the aeriform substances towards itself, thereby producing a vertical vacuum or a cyclone in the air.

### 7.7.3: Notes from 25th July 1936

This week I checked over the machine, which intentionally or unintentionally had many faulty components. I will have nothing more to do with engineers in the future. In the final analysis they are dishonest and stupid.

#### 7.7.4: Notes from 27th July 1936

It is done! At last I have achieved planetary motion! Wanted to smash the machine to smithereens. Inside it everything happened contrary to my expectations. Burning candles showed me the way in which the dematerialising substances operate. Window-sill - smooth surface - the Moon's motion. Now all has been solved!

I have a very heavy week behind me. It seems as though Nature refuses to reveal her final secret of bio-motion to me. Everything was other than I had imagined. Something was always missing and I really began to doubt. What was missing were the functions of the moon and cold light. A brain-wave! It was almost a dispensation of Providence that placed the solution to the puzzle in my hands. Two flies at one blow! 1. Cold light. 2. The axial motion of the moon.

With this machine, which can do almost anything, it would be a simple matter to create my own monopoly and peddle both heat and cold-producing devices, thereby raising funds for further research in other fields. The secret of this machine lies in the mirror-image inversion of what today is held to be true. Because of these misconceptions neither the economics, nor the results add up. In the sacred waters lie the eternal forces of the Earth and the air. One grows out of the other and the boundary conditions of these 'Three' are: the overcoming of gravity and the densation of life into matter - the creation-of-motion and the motion-of-creation.

#### 7.7.5 : Notes from 1st of August 1936

I am now able to construct the organism of this machine in such a way that it ceases to function the very moment it is opened up. In exactly the same way that a living body ceases pulsating when the heart is opened, my machine also stops functioning if an inquisitive person wishes to examine it anatomically.

#### 7.7.6 : Notes from 11th of August 1936

This machine is a tool with which it is possible to ennoble solids, liquids and gases to such an extent that the end-product exhibits a manifold increase in quality and dynamic capacity. The principle has been copied from Nature, wherein decomposition (analysis) - (creation-of-motion) - and synthesis - (motion-of-creation) - take place by way of bio-dynamic movement. If air is decomposed, for example, then a high-grade ethereal product is created, which can no longer maintain its station in the atmosphere, but streams upwards at high speed. The uprising gas absorbs the surrounding aeriform

substances and in this fashion, a vertically moving vacuum evolves, or a cyclonic flow.

The decomposition of fresh water or seawater produces the same effect, and the upward streaming hydrogen gas can either be made to flow through suitable carbones or precious metals and minerals, whereby in the first instance a petroleum-like substance is created and in the second, depending on the absorptive mass, a more or less high-grade fuel-water is produced. The petrol-like substance can be made combustible or incombustible. In the latter case we are concerned with a nitro-glycerine-like substance, which can be dosed as desired. The nature of this substance may be similar to the so-called 'Greek Fire'<sup>3</sup>. The raising of the liquid and the cooling to +4°C (+39.2°F) results spontaneously from the decomposive process and the ethereal structure of the product of decomposition.

#### 7.7.7 : Notes from 13th of August 1936

After 20 years of effort, I have arrived at the almost absolute 'nothing', namely the near-absolute 'vacuum'. A vacuum-machine is a machine that is specifically designed to function with planetary motion and only requires an impulse in order to run for as long as the machine's organic components are capable of life or movement. A drive-motor is not absolutely essential, because the initial impulse can be given with the hand or by means of foot-pedals. The whole secret lies in the organic creation-of-motion and motion-of-creation, through which the bi-polar development evolves spontaneously, namely the dematerialisation of the material and the overcoming of gravity on the one hand and the densation of matter and physical growth on the other.

#### 7.7.8 : Notes from 14th of August 1936

I stand face to face with the apparent 'void', the compression of dematerialisation that we are wont to call a 'vacuum'. I can now see that we are able to create anything we wish for ourselves out of this 'nothing'. The agent is water, the blood of the Earth and the most universal organism.

<sup>3</sup> Greek fire: 1: A Byzantine weapon employed in naval warfare from 672 or 673 AD. It consisted of a mixture, usually shot from tubes, that caught fire when wetted. 2: any of several other inflammable mixtures used in ancient and medieval warfare." — Collins English Dictionary.

Greek fire: A combustible, highly ignitable composition for setting fire to an enemy's ships, also known as St Elmo's fire, elixir vitae or composant fire. Oxford English Dictionary. — Ed.

St. Elmo's Fire: Aluminous region that sometimes appears around church Bpires, the masts of ships, etc. It is a corona discharge in the air caused by atmospheric electricity - also called 'corposant fire'. - Collins English Dictionary.

### 7.7.9 : An eye-witness report:

Gretl Schneider relates: "Mr Viktor Schauburger has demonstrated the machine to me. The previous huge construction is no more. It has been reduced to half its former size and in operation develops enormous power. I poured a jar of water into the bottom of it. The machine produced an almost inaudible sound and then a 'pfft' in the same instant and the water pierced right through a 4 cm (1 1/2 in.) thick concrete slab and a 4 mm (5/32 in.) thick super-hardened steel plate with such force that the water-particles, invisible to the eye due to their high velocity, penetrated right through all clothing and were experienced as lightning needle-pricks on the skin. Waterglass was also pressed through and solidified in 5 cm (2 in.) long hairs on the outside of the casing, like bristles."

### 7.7.10 : Report of Arnold Hold's visit, 14th-17th August 1936 (Arnold Hohl)

Dismantled machine: The overall concept is remarkably interesting. Like a Vesuvius made of gold and silver with several craters disposed around the point, about 20 cm (8 in.) in diameter. Conspicuously heavy, all made of metal.

"And it floats in the air", said VS, even though it rotates at about 3,000 rpm. Reflecting the internal vacuum system, the outer casing is like a Roman water-pitcher (amphora) made of silver-plated brass. "In the whole machine there is no straight line and no circle", reiterated VS.

Vacuum and pressure so great that the finest water-vapour could exit through slots (at 1 cm (3/8 in.) centres). It even forces waterglass through, which hangs down outside in long threads. The finest water-vapour, only detectable with a mirror. Nickel-plated hub with movable metal pipes in which a series of butterfly wings were riveted in a spiral configuration. Placing one's ear to it, one heard a seashell-like sound. No electric drive, but only hand or foot-pedals are necessary. The motive impulse has to be repeated periodically. The machine must be taken apart in order to seal it more effectively<sup>4</sup> and to examine the material. Within 5 minutes the forged casting was heavily rusted as though it had lain in water for 14 days. Temperatures vary from +4°C to +800°C (+39.2°F - +1,472°F): Rpm from 6,000 to 30,000.

O = oxygen = pressural force - separation actuates centripetal force.

H = hydrogen = suctional force - combination actuates centrifugal force.

O = transverse potential = electricity.

H = longitudinal potential = magnetism.

If a very fine tube is placed beneath an egg to be incubated by a chicken, which allows air to flow through to the egg, then the hen sits on it for only

<sup>4</sup>It even broke a mercury seal. — Ed.

3-4 days and then pushes it aside. She then takes a new one, and so on, because in this way no chicken (foetus) can develop. That is the secret of the needle-jet.

Cut the grass early in the morning only, because something very exceptional is associated with the scythe's cut. The grass, or rather the haulm is a small tube or a minute orifice. Because it is made of iron, the scythe attracts atmospheric oxygen and releases hydrogen in the process of cutting.

The hydrogen, however, seals the orifice instantaneously so that the grass neither bleeds to death nor transpires and the roots are not deprived of energy. Whoever mows in sunlight, destroys the roots and with time the field becomes barren.

## The Implosion Machine

An assembly of extracts from Implosion Magazine, Nos. 45, 56, 57, 58, 60 and 83.

Every whorl-pipe is a tornado, a vortex. The flow-through material creates a space-spiral. From the starting point movement is both inwards and downwards at the same time. The whorl-pipe must be cone-shaped on its longitudinal axis. In experiments with cylindrical pipes few noteworthy effects were achieved. In addition, there is also a third direction of movement, which seems to be the most important. It is a rotation about itself, which in regard to the electrons in atoms we call 'spin', or which we can see with couples when dancing the waltz.<sup>5</sup> Viktor Schaubberger sought to achieve this rotation about its own axis with the oval (egg-shaped, not elliptical) profile of a pipe with a rotating indentation on the longitudinal axis. For this design he also applied for patents (see fig. 18), which were only partially successful. The acceleration of the in-rollment of the flow-through material depends on four factors:

1. The length of the pipe,
2. The size of the intake cross-section in relation to the outlet nozzles,
3. The rotational velocity of the rotor,
4. The diameter of the conical rotor, because it is upon this that the centrifugal force depends.

The rotor is a conical bell. The whorl-pipes are attached either to the outside or inside of a collector. Due to the centrifugal load it is advisable to mount them on the inside. From the collector a suction-pipe extends vertically downwards into the water reservoir of the machine.

<sup>5</sup> In 3/4 time, like the heart-beat, the waltz is one of the most natural, dynamic, energy-producing, rotating planetary movements. — Ed.

The rotor is driven by an electric motor, which is connected to the alternator or generator that produces an electric current. To begin with the drive-motor is powered from any available current source in order to set the rotor in motion. When the rotor produces more power than the drive-motor requires, electricity can be ducted off for other purposes. According to estimates, the proportion is in the ratio or 1 : 9, namely 1/10th of the output for running the drive-motor and 9/10ths as surplus power. The implosion machine is a therefore more than just form of perpetual motion.

The power of the machine results from four impulses:

1. As connected to the suction-pipe, every whorl-pipe is a siphon, whose function we know from school physics. As a fall-pipe, the whorl-pipe is longer than the vertical suction-pipe. Its exit nozzles are at the same height as the lower end of the suction-pipe. Only a slight impulse is therefore required to trigger the flow of water.
2. As soon as the rotor reaches top speed the water is centrifugated against a fluted outer wall with enormous force. As it impacts a dense electrical force-field evolves, in which the weight of the water is neutralised. This electric charge can be increased by the rotor's rate of rotation. The water rises, without being lifted, in the suction-pipe and passes into the whorl-pipes from the collector. The fall-weight is the impulse that enables the ducting off of surplus power. From time to time the water should be changed. The electric charge must also be ducted away otherwise it can act as a brake in front of the nozzles.
3. A further gain in power results from the removal of frictional losses in the whorl-pipes. If the water is in-rolled through the special profile of the whorl-pipe, it is released from the pipe-walls and forms a water plait like and inward-screwing water column. Experiments of this nature were carried out under Viktor Schauburger's direction at the Technical University of Stuttgart.<sup>6</sup>
4. Due to the rapid rotation of the rotor, centrifugal forces arise. The accelerated water in the whorl-pipes is thrust against the fluted outer wall of the machine. The ends of the whorl-pipes are curved in the opposite direction to the actual direction of rotation. A recoil is created similar to that in the abundance-producing wheel. This recoil develops energies similar to those in tornadoes. It should be mentioned that cooling takes place during the densation process in the whorl-pipes, and the 'cool eye' of the water-tornado sucks up water as tornadoes do cars, houses and locomotives.<sup>7</sup>  
Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 57, pp 28-30

<sup>6</sup> See Popel Report and Preamble on p. 219 of this book. — Ed.

<sup>7</sup> In a letter Viktor Schauburger wrote that every tornado would collapse into itself, if one could manage to warm up its 'cold eye', i.e. the tip of the tornado. Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 57, p. 27. — Ed.



With appropriate minor structural alterations the implosion-machine (suction-turbine) can be used for a variety of purposes.<sup>8</sup>

1. For the generation of free energy in any quantity, whereby the water used to fill it is converted into noble water.
2. As a generator for the achievement of manifold increase in growth. If embedded in the ground, the energetically charged water radiates growth-enhancing forces down into the earth.
3. For obtaining individually constituted noble waters, which charge up the body cells, dissolve deposits and reduce inflammation.
4. For the propulsion of aircraft, which can never malfunction and crash.

The great difficulty thus far was the manufacture of the whorl-pipes themselves and the dynamic balancing of the rotor for the necessarily high rate of rotation.

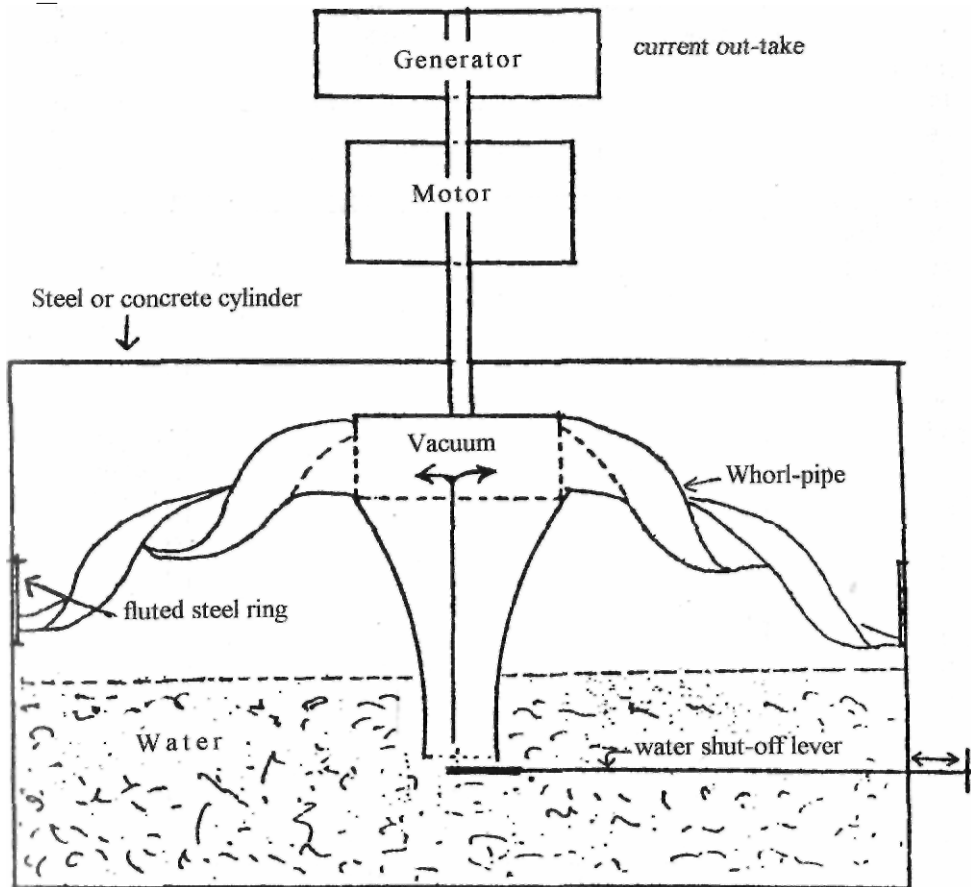
The machine consists of a cylindrical pipe (see figs. 20 & 21), whose diameter and wall strength must be suited to the desired performance. The bottom plate, which also has a stable base fitted, is welded or riveted onto the cylinder. The plate carrying the motor, the dynamo and the whorl-pipe rotor is fixed to the top end of the cylinder with angle brackets. All three components rotate on a single, common axle. Because the carrying plate is mounted on rubber vibration pads, the axle takes up all the vibration and permits both high and highest rotational speeds. The rotor itself is hollow and houses the real heart of the machine. In the upper part of this hollow body a hub is attached from which the whorl-pipes project. This hub is an enclosed hollow form. It is attached to the rotor and turns with it. On its underside there is an opening for the intake of the suction-pipe. It extends deep into the lower part of the machine where the drive-water is present.

The whorl-pipes are conical and various types of jet-nozzles can be fitted to the ends (see figs. 29a & 29b) The tips of these nozzles are turned towards the direction of rotation. Opposite the exit openings and attached to the periphery of the cylinder, a harmonica-like sheet-metal band is attached. It is against this that the water jets are impelled at a wide angle. The rotor is then forced to move in the direction of rotation through the resulting recoil and is thus set in rotation.

As soon as the motor has set the generator and rotor in motion, the air or water will be sucked up the suction or rising pipe and into the rotor hub and centrifugated down the whorl-pipes. A vacuum is thereby created, which lifts the drive-water like any pump.

The centrifugally impelled water, on impact with the sidewalls, would begin to flow in a circular path and all the water would remain at the outer wall. To prevent this, radial baffles must be installed to calm the water and conduct it back to the suction-pipe.

<sup>8</sup> Either as a Repulsator or a Repulsine. — Ed.



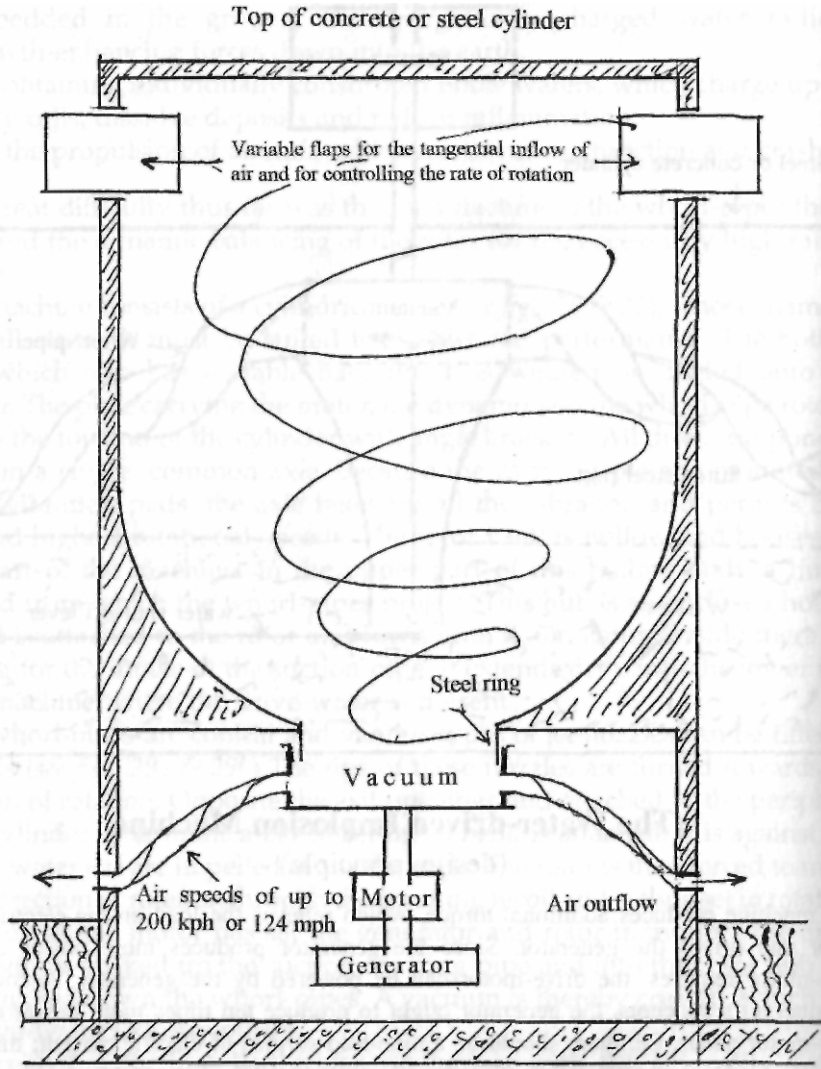
### The Water-driven Implosion Machine (design principle)

This machine produces additional torque, which relieves the load on the electric drive-motor and drives the generator. Since the generator produces more power than the drive-motor requires, the drive-motor can be powered by the generator. According to Schauberger's concepts, the generator ought to produce ten times more power than the drive-motor needs, i.e. there should be a nine-fold surplus of electric current; the whole arrangement representing a form of perpetual motion. (A. Khammas - Implosion No. 83, p.21)

Fig. 20

In order to control the quantity of water used, a flow restrictor must be placed at the bottom of the suction-pipe. Its purpose is to regulate the flow so that the machine does not rupture and at the same time controls the rate of rotation of the machine.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 60, pp 3-5.



The Air-driven Implosion Machine  
(Tornado-machine - design principle)

Fig. 21

In the implosion machine, several whorl-pipes are incorporated. These have an egg-shaped cross-section, narrowing conically towards their ends and which have an impressed indentation over their whole length, by means of which the 'in-rolling' of air or water is enabled (see fig. 18). The narrowing of the cross-section occurs harmonically (proportionally), the exit nozzles can be of any size and the pipes of any length. In the implosion machine, several pipes are mounted on a conical rotor and radiate outwards from a common inlet. Through the rotor's rotation, the medium in the pipes (water or air) is subjected to centrifugal acceleration, resulting in its split-second in-rollment, which leads to its cooling and densation. Through the discharge of this condensed and twisted water-plait, powerful repulsive forces are generated, if the water-plait is centrifugated against the fluted outer walls. This recoil is the driving force.

The principle involved in this process is that, due to the cooling during the reduction process, the oxygen becomes bound by the fuel (water or air) in the implosion machine, which produces a reduction in volume. The water and air then sink resistancelessly into the resultant suction. This implosive process is the exact opposite of explosion, today utilised everywhere.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p. 15.

In this machine an additional rotational force is created, which reduces the load on the electric drive-motor and drives the generator. Since the generator produces more power than the drive-motor requires, the drive-motor can be powered by the generator. According to Schauberger's concepts, the generator ought to produce ten times more power than the drive-motor needs. In other words, there should be a nine-fold surplus of electric current. This occurs due to the fact that in specially constructed and (copper) alloyed devices protected by patents (inverted propellers - whorl-pipes), ordinary air is caused to move above the speed of sound almost silently and virtually without cost. This results in the total collapse of the structure of the air, leading to a so far unknown energy-form, and through this, to any desired intensifiable form of heat or cold, or it is possible in this way, with the aid of the above form of energy, to generate silent, fire-less, mechanical power.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p.21.

What does 'emulsion' mean? It is the intimate intermixture (marriage) between bipolar basic elements. Whether this union actually takes place, is dependent on the nature of the catalyst.

In order to obtain a high-quality emulsion, three factors have to be taken into account:

- (a) The mechanical involution of mass with the aid of specially constructed and alloyed whorl-pipes. This in-swirlment of mass has to take place in a geospheric environment.
- (b) The physical (specific) densation of the trinity of the solid, liquid or gaseous media to be accelerated, i.e. earth, water and air.
- (c) The procurement of the secondary radiation of energetic essences from involuted (inwinding) whorl-pipes constructed with bipolar alloys. These generate suction-vortices in the moving mass, whose narrow ends projects downwards. Upwardly whirling pressure-vortices then evolve, which flow back into the suction-vortex. It is a metabolic cycle moving in cycloid-spiral-space-curves in an endless screw-form motion. Expressed even more clearly, it is a motion within and about itself.

Once again it is to be stressed that all this has to take place in a geospheric environment. This first results in a condition of indifference, in a transitional state from which what is to be regenerated can be raised one stage higher in the process of synthesis. A preponderance of bases is created, which restores the over-acidified and the regenerated to a state of health. As a result, they can then reproduce and upwardly evolve with their own forces and energies, i.e. increase and ennoble themselves.

The products of this implosive process have no spacial magnitude and thus create a biological vacuum in the fermentation vessel. A biological vacuum is the function of a mass of earth, water or air having a predominantly magnetic charge. It is the metaphysical ur-force of life.

This primordial, yet new form of life, which overcomes all physical weight and mental inertia, can be produced for virtually nothing in every natural-ly designed and alloyed liquid-manure pit within a week.<sup>9</sup> When these energies ascending autonomously from the vegetation intermix with direct rays of light and heat, they coalesce into further physical growth.

Viktor Schauburger, *Implosion Magazine*, No. 45, pp 6-7

In Nature everything is reversible. If a metabolic interaction is triggered off implisively, it produces the relatively highest-grade upsuctional forces (levitation), which alleviate all mental torpor and negate all physical weight, as they also do in the case of the stationary trout.

This can all be achieved with the implosion-machine, which unwinds, rewinds and converts excess atmospheric pressure into a concentrative negative pressure. With these naturally engineered differences in potential it is possible not only to produce the driving forces for all growth, but also for powering these properly constructed, alloyed and insulated machines.

<sup>9</sup> See figs. 10 & 12 in *The Fertile Earth*, Vol. III of the Ecotechnology series. - Ed.

themselves almost free of cost. These implosion-machines can also generate those energies on a large scale that come into being when we breathe, the result of which is etherealised food.

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 57, p. 5.

In this case biomagnetism, the attracting and indrawing breathing force, evolves by up to 90%. It supplies the life-motor as well as the implosion-machine with atomic suctional and pressural forces of the relatively highest efficiency. The 90% concentrative reactive forces serve creation and growth. The remaining 10% of decentrative surplus energies serve to expel waste and faecal matter, which in this process of reduction and purification, must quickly be ejected in order to prevent self-toxification.

Viktor Schauberger, Implosion Magazine, No. 56, p. 30.

All power-generating machines, regardless of the system with which they operate, must conform to this principle: Useful energy can only be obtained from a system, if the machine triggers off a change in the temperature of the through-flowing substance.

Started by an impulse-giving motor, the implosion machine sucks in the surrounding air and water masses and reverses their polarity through a tangential, predominantly radial->axial, in-winding motion. In this way the diamagnetic, negative pressure comes into being. It is this negative pressure, that forces us to inhale positively supercharged air.

This negative pressure produces a drop in temperature, resulting in the densation of the introduced water or air masses, which in turn results in a significant reduction in volume. This acts so strongly that, for example, the inducted air is transformed into water. The process is induced through the special shape of the spiral suction device, in which the through-flowing material is accelerated towards the bottom, in which process the special alloy also plays a role. The indrawn water-masses instantaneously attain the anomaly point of +4°C (39.2°F). They become specifically densified. Homogenised by the spiral suction systems, the through-flowing material separates itself from the walls of the whorl-pipe. Through the intensification of the inwinding force and the simultaneous narrowing of the flow-through profile, the contents will be accelerated to such a degree, that the water or the air is screwed together into an almost homogenous jet and shoots out of the special system of nozzles as if from a gun. The through-flowing material attains an intrinsic velocity of 1,290 metres (4,232 ft) per second. This is about four times the speed of sound. The discharge opening has a diameter of 1 mm (0.04 in.). This jet of water or air is as solid and as hard as steel wire, and is braked periodically by means of fixed, flat (angled) resistances, which results in a reactive recoil in the direction of the turbine's rotation. With a 1 mm (0.0394

in.) diameter jet outlet, energy is produced in the order of 17.9 horse power (hp) per jet, which maintains the turbine at 1,200 revolutions per minute (rpm). Every nozzle has 2 or 4 exit openings and in one system up to 100 nozzles are possible. If each opening discharges 1 litre (0.264 gal) of water - within a fraction of a second - in the opposite direction to the above direction of braking, then atomic repulsive forces become free and active. With a total quantity of 10 litres (2.64 gal) of water, which circulates in this system without any resistance in cycloid spiral space-curves at supersonic speeds, then forces of almost astronomical power become active. If the air is liquefied, then the efficiency is considerably increased, because the reduction in volume is even greater than with the densation of water. The difference in potential increases with the number of rpm. By altering the rpm, the output can be changed significantly. For example, in order to achieve an output of between 50 and 100 hp, a turbine measuring 60 cm x 60 cm (24 in x 24 in) with a total weight of 30 kg - 50 kg (66 lbs - 110 lbs) and a rotational rate of 1,200 rpm would be required. For this neither pressure gradient nor pressure pipe is necessary. The turbine extracts its driving water from the surrounding air itself. Since the effective output increases with an increasing rate of rotation, which in addition necessitates an enlarged radius, all that is needed is to increase the starting velocity in order to produce upwards of 1,000 hp from a turbine normally producing 100 hp.

Letter to Prof. Dr. h.c. Werner Zimmermann circa 1950, Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 56, p. 4.

If water or air are moved centripetally, i.e. radially->axially, then not only is there no resistance, but the output increases by the square of the velocity.

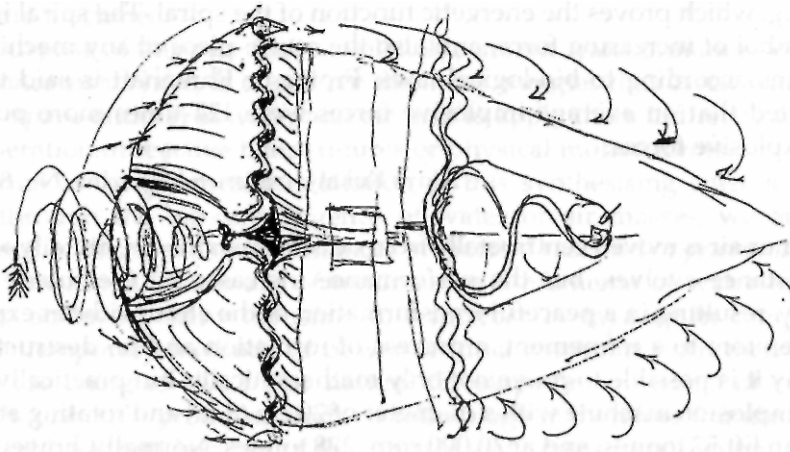
Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p. 15

In his theories, Viktor Schauburger proceeds on the basis that the spiral-shaped suction whorl-pipe itself can generate any amount of energy automatically. The implosion machine is supposed to generate so-called 'diamagnetism', and in this way is simultaneously stimulated into a sort of 'breathing', through which its uninterrupted operation is achieved.

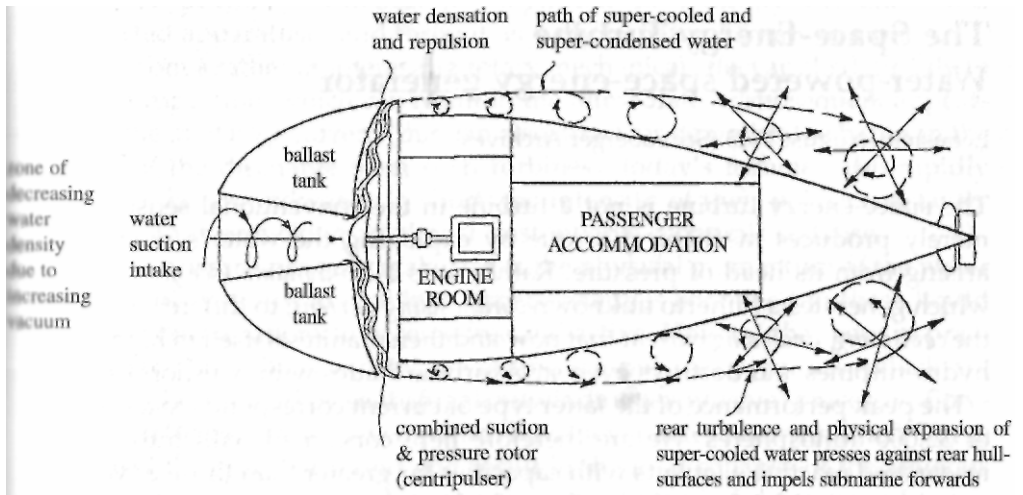
A. Khammas, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p. 15.

Schauburger applied this perception to all his deliberations and conceived flying discs, submarines, gas purifying and energy-generating systems. The component of his bio-technical submarine (see fig. 22) consisted of bundled 'whorl-pipes', which narrowed and in-rolled the water, the combined effect of which produced a powerful repulsive vortex.

What made Schauburger's principle so problematic, was 'the skill' of finding those curves wherein the water separated itself from its conducting walls,



Probably the first sketch showing the design principle for a biotechnical submarine powered by a trout turbine (undated)



The Bio-technical Submarine  
(Design principle)

Fig. 22: Bio-technical submarine



thereby becoming increasingly dense, but without any resistance, centripetalised and thereby cooled. During this process the moving water evolves into a 'suction piston', resulting in an increasing densation from winding to winding, which proves the energetic function of the spiral. The spiral is hence the symbol of increasing force, and also the centre-piece of any machine that functions according to bio-logical laws. Professor Ehrenhaft is said to have calculated that on average implosive forces were 127 times more powerful than explosive forces.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p. 14.

If water or air is moved centripetally from outside inwards, i.e. radially->axially, no resistance evolves, but the performance increases by the square of the velocity, resulting in a peaceful transformation of the atom without explosion and therefore to a refinement, a process of formation and no destruction. In this way it is possible to prove not only mathematically, but practically, that a small implosion machine with a diameter of 20 cm (8 in) and rotating at 10,000 rpm, can lift 57 tonnes, and at 20,000 rpm, 228 tonnes. Normally, however, one would use smaller rotational forces and enlarge the radius.

Leopold Brandstatter, Implosion Magazine, No. 60, p. 23.

## The Space-Energy Turbine Water-powered space-energy generator

Leonstein, August 1945 (Schauberger Archives)

The space-energy turbine is not a turbine in the conventional sense, which merely produces mechanical torque by exploiting the water's momentum arising from its head of pressure. Rather, it is a bio-dynamo (see figs. 30->33), which generates a hitherto unknown synthesising current, to differentiate from the cavitating, analysing current that now and then manifests itself in high-speed hydro-turbines and destroys even steel turbine blades within a short time.

The peak performance of the latter type of current corresponds to a pressure of 32,000 atmospheres. We are therefore here concerned with hitherto un-researched reactive elements with capacities far greater than those developed in conventional hydro-turbines through the forces arising from the water's mass-momentum.

The types of current first mentioned arise from the bio-centrifugated inner constituents of water or air and are therefore space-energies. These are freed, for example, when high-grade (metal and/or quartz bearing) pebbles rub against one another, or manifest themselves as strong light effects in vacuum tubes, when a drop of water free-falls in an appropriate apparatus. These

energies can act destructively or creatively and can be produced almost without cost and developed to any desired magnitude by means of mechanical impulsive forces derived, for example, from the mass-momenta of water in miniature machines.

The purpose of this practically exploitable atomic transformation, which is what concerns us here, is to set free the inner energies that dwell within the bodies (space-lattices) of water and air, and to apply them indirectly towards the generation of reactive temperatures or physical motive forces.

In terms of the practical exploitation of this synthesising current, which arises through the bio-centrifugence of water or air masses, we are here concerned with the peak performances of reactive suctional or pressural forces, whose generation makes use of minimal mass-momenta of water or air in order to achieve a many thousand-fold increase in capacity in comparison with contemporary methods of power production. Apart from their cheapness, these energies also foster natural development. In terms of the way power is presently produced, today's technology is therefore founded on an unnatural basis and because of this, increasingly disastrous economic recessions must inevitably occur, the broader the scope of this totally unnatural method of generating energy. In other words, this must happen due to the extent to which the intensity of this development-inhibiting and expensive system of power production is magnified in wrongly designed and constructed apparatuses and through equally unnatural forms of motion.

Apart from a rather uninteresting rotary mechanical effect applied directly to turbine propulsion, which can result in the immediate or subsequent appearance of the cavitating current (this can also attack or demolish the banks in the vicinity of the discharge from such turbines), today's turbines also rapidly discharge the groundwater. In short, the intensity of their power constantly increases, thus provoking an almost unstoppable economic collapse.

Space-energy turbines only make use of the physical momentum of the water as an impulsive force to enable the space-energies contained in these liquid dynagen concentrations to become free and active. How this happens in practice is that, through centripetal inwinding (impulsive) processes, which are immediately followed by centrifugal outwinding (expulsive) processes, flow-through velocities are achieved, which have never before been attained. These far exceed the speed of sound and result in the total collapse of the aqueous flow-through substance, leading to processes of atomic formation and transformation, which evolve on a common longitudinal developmental axis.

This involves an upflowing bio-magnetic current with formative and levitative functions. It is thus a means of enhancing the whole spectrum of growth and increasing the upwardly impelling (levitative) force associated

with it. In other words, it is the means to foster the evolution and increase of the 'ur-powerfully creative' motive force and to intensify its power to such a

degree that free and independent movement can be achieved on land, on and under water and in the air at any desired speed virtually free of cost.

While in the best machines produced today the resistance to motion increases by the square of the velocity, with the aid of these reactively intensified energies, whose power increases by the square of the increase in rotational velocity, there is about a 90% saving in the driving medium as well as about a 60% reduction in construction material, for under otherwise equal conditions, the 60% smaller space-energy turbine has the same capacity as a large conventional one. Whereas the principal reactive force produced by the latter is the cavitating current, the former generates the synthesising current, which by indirect means can not only can produce any desired output, but on top of this, development-enhancing higher-grade im-pulsive and ex-pulsive energies.

Briefly, this would signify not only the almost costless and labour-free solution of today's problems of food supply, but also those of power, fuel and raw materials, which are the biological consequences of completely back-to-front methods of power production.

In more graphic terms, humanity has mis-earned its daily bread by the sweat of its brows through unnatural methods of producing those energies that Nature employs for purposes of decomposition and the precipitation and reconstitution of what is unfit for further development.

## 8.

# The Ennoblement of Water

"The revelation of the secret of water will put an end to all manner of speculation or expediency and their excrescences, to which belong war, hatred, impatience and discord of every kind. The thorough study of water therefore signifies the end of monopolies, the end of all domination in the truest sense of the word and the start of a socialism arising from the development of individualism in its most perfect form."

Viktor Schaubeger, - Implosion Magazine, No. 6, p. 29.

"The true foundation of all culture is the knowledge and understanding of water. Water is the ur-substance or ur-cause of all creation and for this reason is the ur-original accumulator, which readily absorbs both earthly and cosmic substances and conveys them to the body in a purely objective form. This is dependent, however, on the possibility of incorporating these substances in the water. This must be done in such a way that the ur-attributes will in no way be modified and that change as such can only first come about in the effect, which the organically correctly

structured body mediates and imparts. For this reason a good spirit dwells in a healthy body. Conversely a body full of vitality can be created, maintained and further developed by healing the inhering spirit."

Viktor Schaubeger, 1936, From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2,1993, section 4.1.

## The Artificial Production of Springwater

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2,1993, section 7.3.

**A**s forester and huntsman I was often able to observe how sick and severely wounded animals sought out certain herbs and immersed their wounds in very particular kinds of water. Ultimately it dawned on me that very mysterious powers dwell in water and so I began to seek them. Not only did I find these remarkable forces, but I also found the means to incorporate them into water at will. To begin with I tried the product on myself, later giving this naturally activated water to a number of others to

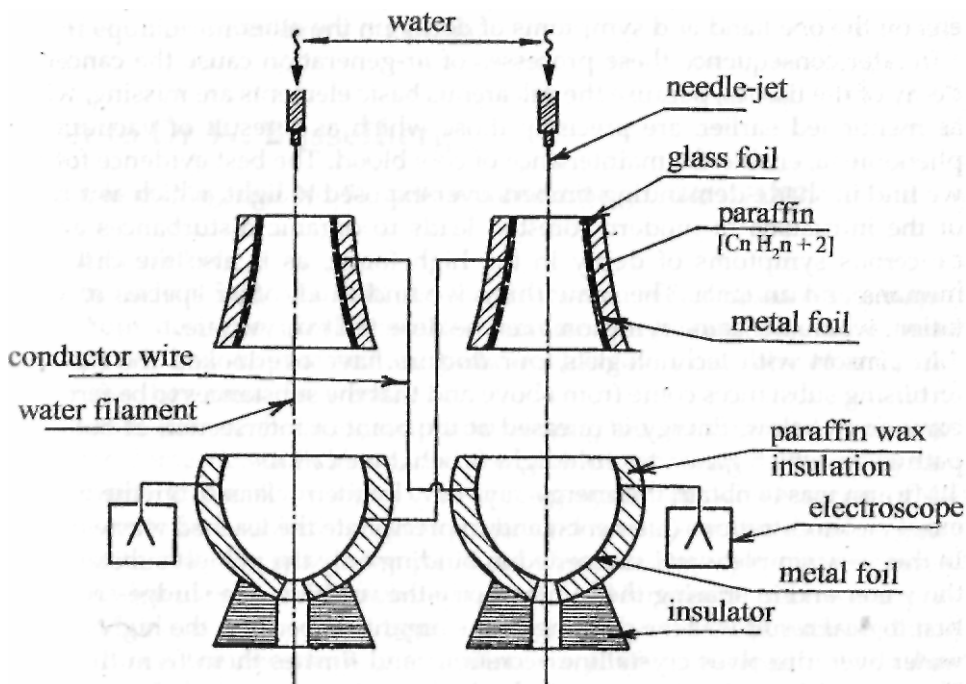
drink. Over time there were hundreds of people suffering from all imaginable afflictions, who were restored to health. I gave this ennobled water to all of them to drink, which tasted far better than the Vienna mountain-springwater.

I have small devices in my possession with which I can determine the quality of water. The ennobled water flows through rifled pipes without touching the sides, i.e. it falls through the middle and lands on cone-shaped, metallic bodies placed below the pipes. Wires are arranged around the outer periphery, which are cross-connected. They become charged with the animalistic currents emanating from the water and conduct them to an electroscope (see fig. 23 & figs. 1->3).<sup>1</sup> One litre of water has to pass through this apparatus about 150 times before the flapping of the electroscope's foils weakens. Neon tubes glow with a rich, dark red initially, only to become brighter and brighter until the water begins to die and the light finally flickers and goes out. Consequently we imbibe hundreds of thousands of volts when we drink this healthy water, which can in no way be differentiated from a high-grade mountain-springwater. It was in this way that I discovered how to transform stale stream-water, rainwater or distilled water into high-quality drinking water.

The process is very simple. A little light, a little darkness, a little heat and a little cold, rhythmically sequenced, is enough to charge the vilest water with high quality as it flows through the mutators, a process that could also perhaps be described as 'ionisation'. To this I add the elements that chemical analysis has shown to be deficient, but which are present in all springwater and therefore the waters of any given spring, even the most famous spa-waters, can easily be emulated just as Nature does it. In this regard a cubic metre of water (35.315 ft<sup>3</sup>) only costs about 10-12 Austrian grosschen and the apparatus itself about 100 schillings if mass-produced. Therefore anyone can install their own spa or mountain spring in their attic at very little cost.

The essential nature of this concerns the achievement of an absolute solution and the freeing of the energies concentrated in the metals and minerals by means of a cold process of combustion. By virtue of this, all substances are dissolved, or expressed more accurately, fall out of the mother-stone or mother-metal in the form of freed energies, which can be incorporated into the water without undergoing any change. To achieve this, the water must be brought down to a temperature of +4°C (+39.2°F) in darkness, which takes place in interconnected mixing vessels through indirect oxygen pressures. The added salts are of such minimal quantity that it is inconceivable to anyone that effects of such a kind can be produced. An essential aspect in this regard are the solutions of the metallic substances, which are accumulated in the water and thus in the simplest way these contrasting metals are

<sup>1</sup> This also relates to the effects of Lord Kelvin's influence machine ca. 1880. - Ed.



Schematic Arrangement of the Nuremberg

#### Water-Jet Experiment- 1938

This was set up to determine the charge in falling water as well as water quality. Charges of 15,000 - 20,000 volts were produced.

Fig. 23

transferred to the organism, without which there are no electromagnetic life-processes.

Every acid contains dissolved metal. Through the intake of over-insolated water, the heavy long-rays enter the water in excessive measure and the light short-rays are missing.<sup>2</sup> This leads to symptoms of inflammation, because the supply of the inflammation-inhibiting calcareous<sup>3</sup> elements is prevented by present methods of water treatment. The consequences of these deficiencies are intermediate growth-processes of purely morphological nature which, exposed to the effects of pressure, produce large capillary diameters. Symptoms of fatigue then follow as a result of undernourishment. With an

<sup>2</sup> Heavy long-rays = long-wave infrared radiation: light short-rays = short-wave ultraviolet radiation —

Ed.

<sup>3</sup> Calcareous: containing or resembling calcium carbonate. — Collins English Dictionary. — Ed.

over-abundance of sodium emanations, these give rise to animating phenomena on the one hand and symptoms of decay on the other.

In later consequence these processes of ur-generation cause the cancerous decay of the tissues, because the calcareous basic elements are missing, which as mentioned earlier, are precisely those which as a result of vacuum-like phenomena, enable the maintenance of cool blood. The best evidence for this we find in shade-demanding timbers over-exposed to light, which as a result of the intrusions of modern forestry, leads to organic disturbances and to cancerous symptoms of decay in the high forest, as is also the case with humans and animals. The same thing we find in all other species of vegetation, where the same symptoms can be detected everywhere.

In consort with technologists, our doctors have overlooked the fact that fertilising substances come from above and that the substances to be fertilised come from below. Energy is released at the point of intersection of both ray-pathways, which generates cold light or what we call life.

My aim was to obtain the energy-rays only by their release from the various energy-concentrations (elements) and to precipitate the leached waste matter. In this very simple way I succeeded in binding only the noblest substances in the water and in sparing the human body the function of a sludge-sack. The first logical result was the purging of the organism, because the highly active water even dissolves crystalline accretions and flushes them from the body. The second logical outcome was the high-grade organic transformation of emanations and therewith the synthesis of those high-grade thoughts with which all other natural processes can be comprehended.

The main point, however, is that no high-quality ideas can emerge from a messy sludge-sack and therefore it is no wonder that humanity is not only putrefying healthwise, but also morally. Mutilation of the mind is a further logical result of contemporary deductive methods and even here too, outsiders must dare to venture in order to make the specialists and experts aware of ur-simple, natural phenomena. No process is of one-sided nature. All progress also involves wastage. The waste material produced by the formulation of thoughts are seeds. Therefore with their present view of life, people will not only become mentally impotent, but sexually impotent too.

Through the combined action of certain interdependencies, organic effects can be induced in the body. Very recently I dissolved the dynagens contained in purest rock crystal and then accumulated the freed radiant energies in the water. In this way I managed to produce ur-proteins or life-kindling vitamins. Our food should be viewed as bio-electrical energy. The consumption of water in which many solar-vitamins of reactive nature have been incorporated, creates pleasant symptoms of fatigue, followed by a freeing of mental powers and a certain carefreeness coupled with a rising sense of responsibility. It is necessary, however, to differentiate between calcareous and sodium-containing

foodstuffs. The binding of ur-substances in water brings about a harmonious state of equilibrium in every organism.

## Letter to Dr W. Busselberg

From Implosion Magazine, No. 71, written in Nuremberg 18-24/11/1937.

Dear Dr Busselberg,

In the periodical TAU you will see the treatise on water resources management.<sup>4</sup> Your desire for further articles I am unable to satisfy, because these writings have been suppressed everywhere. I have only one copy of each, and in any case they are all in Vienna. The publication or the manuscripts concerning the decomposition of drinking water, domestic water, blood, and the cause of cancer are so alarming that it is unwise to speak of them here in Germany. The whole secret of all scourges is to be ascribed to over-oxygenated water - water that has been treated with chlorine, quartz lamps, or subjected to oligodynamic processes. When combined with anodic substances (artificial fertilisers), such water produces bacteria in a very short time. I have furnished doctors with evidence and set down the necessary interrelations in writing, because nobody has dared to publish the true causes, otherwise almost all drinking water supply-pipes would have to be rebuilt. Equally inevitable would be the prohibition of the fertiliser industry by law. In other areas of industry drastic changes will also have to take place. For this reason there will hardly be any possibility to discuss this openly in the foreseeable future.

My discoveries are so far-reaching, that everybody would be reduced to a state of terror. I have therefore no other choice, but to bide my time and continue my research eventually to be able to provide information and advice, when those in authority no longer see any other way out. In my estimation this moment will already come early next year. I am ready at any time to furnish free information, proofs and means of assistance to competent persons. Naturally in doing so I cannot afford any large outlays, because as a foreigner I have none or only a few marks to my name. These are just sufficient to allow me to finish the work I started here. In any event, I have to

acknowledge that it takes a lot of courage to listen to what I have to say. When

I find such individuals, then it will be possible to provide effective assistance.

If not, then there will be much vexation.

At the moment I am building an apparatus with which I will demonstrate the processes of growth and in particular, the enormous importance of the

<sup>4</sup> See series of articles on river engineering written by Viktor Schauberger for 'DieWasserwirtschaft', the Austrian Journal of Hydrology, which appear in The Water Wizard, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.



growth-zones in the Earth. Moreover, I will provide proof that the cause of all cancerous diseases is due to the direct influences of atmospheric oxygen. Atmospheric organisms can only obtain oxygen by way of diffusion (indirectly by passing through another medium), otherwise pressure, combustion, inflammation of the tissues, blood-, water- or sap-decomposition ensues. Bacteria are only of secondary importance. Every type of blood, water and sap has its own individual bacteria. In Nature there are indeed similarities, but no identicalities, for in Nature there is no state of equilibrium.

Water is not  $H_2O$ , but the first substance arising from the harmonious interaction between plus and minus (quantity and quality). The ur-cause of natural motion is the interchange of substance (metabolism). Whoever causes substance to move without taking the metabolism into account will also have to accept the associated resistances to motion. A motion triggered through metabolic processes is natural and therefore resistance-less. Here too we stand before an upheaval with technological ramifications. The associated proofs, apparatuses, etc. are now complete. Present practices in land, forest, water and energy resources management are absolutely wrong. Germany stands before a catastrophe in the foreseeable future, because the water is disappearing and the groundwater is sinking. Atmospheric water has nothing whatever to do with geospheric water. The scarcity of rainwater is not the reason for the disappearance of springwater, because the latter is produced through geospheric metabolic processes.

You must apply all your influence to this, for it concerns the fate of Germany. I stand completely behind my assertions and can prove all that is stated above. I honestly mean what I say and have the best of intentions. I know Nature and her secrets, more perhaps than any other person alive.

## Blood & Sap Circulation as a Model for the Ennoblement of Water

Leonstein, 28th May 1945, - Implosion Magazine, No. 124, pp 56-58.

Up to now no-one has succeeded in discovering the origins of blood and sap circulation, or in explaining the purpose of this metabolic cycle. The assertion that the heart is a blood-pump is inadequate for the simple reason that the primary question still remains unanswered, namely, what forces keep the heart muscle pulsating? A trifling infection of the blood is enough to alter the heart's activity, to make the pulse-beat irregular and to disturb the state of health with feverish conditions. For this reason alone it becomes clear that it is not the heart that moves the blood, but the blood that activates the heart.

To understand this, the nature of the blood, the causes of its coming into being and the reason for its passing away must be examined more closely.

The cause of its formation is 'cycloid-space-curve-motion', which is to be understood as inwardly and upwardly inwinding spiral cyclical motion. This is characterised by the fact that, with even the smallest impulses the substance rotates about its own axis, which gives rise to the rhythmical alternation between centrifugal and centripetal pulsations on a common developmental axis, resulting in the creation of an alternating current flow. This organic alternating current is the actual motivating force behind the movement of blood and the activity of the heart caused by such movement. An analogous proof of this is the emergence of pulsation in naturally moved water.

The heart is therefore a kind of compensating valve into which the discharged (venal) blood flows back and satiates itself with products of digestive processes. This mixture is then supplied with fertilising substances (oxygen) through breathing; in other words, the former consumes (binds) the latter. The products of the repulsive further movement of the blood are conformations that have been developed to the immediately higher aetheric and energetic state. Due in part to the influences of heat and diffuse light, these agglomerate as new blood masses and subsequently solidify into the physical substances of growth. It is out of these secondary products of synthesis that the build-up of primary synthesising substances takes place, namely, forms of energy which interact with the surrounding potentials and in this way generate the body's physical energies - its capacity to carry its own weight and its ability to move.

In principle it is the same process that can be observed in all plants, where the root-protoplasm is the source of negative potential through which fertilising interactions with positively charged atmospheric substances occur. Again, through the direct influences of light and heat, this leads to the inner condensing of the lower-grade products of these interactions and therefore to the layer-by-layer formation of the solid forms of plant bodies - in other words, to physical growth. The motion arising from physical impulses therefore leads to metaphysical formative motion, and in further consequence to an increase in performance.

Provided the appropriate temperature influences, namely the oligodynamic (dissociative) and catalytic (formative) ancillary influences, can take effect, then a small impulse triggered off in a naturally contoured and alloyed vessel will suffice to enable droppable<sup>5</sup> liquid or gaseous mixtures to be transformed and built up into the next highest state of evolvment (aetheric and energetic forms). On their part, these are responsible for further processes of reproduction and development, the increase in physical substance and the enhancement of metaphysical qualities.

<sup>5</sup> Droppable: refers to liquids or gases capable of agglomerating into drops when falling. — Ed.

In principle the same transformative and formative processes take place in the human and animal organism. These stimulate respiration which in turn provides for the supply of fertilising substances, and once again the next higher products of development, aetheric and energetic, are created, which are the actual source of energy for the physical and metaphysical motive forces.

It is upon this finding that the ennoblement of the blood of the Earth - the negatively charged groundwater - is founded. This cannot only be produced in unlimited quantity, but also increased and qualitatively ennobled, provided the developmental processes described above are copied naturalesquely. Once again, the true secret of evolution lies in the cycloid motive impulse triggered off in naturalesquely formed vessels - extreme egg-shapes.

Following from the above, it is obvious that the proper proportion in the mixture between the substances of the Earth and the Sun (carbones and oxygenes) is also decisive.

This system of blood and sap circulation, faithfully copied from nature, enabled the high priests of bygone cultures to produce artificial high-springs in which water rose exuberantly to the highest mountain peaks, where the sacred groves were to be found. In these groves the holy or healing water gushed forth - the higher up it discharged, the greater its wholesomeness. The lengthening of the developmental path along the longitudinal axis was one of the most closely guarded secrets of the nature-attuned high priests, who were regarded by the populace as miracle-workers. They increased the growth of high quality cereals and fruits and enhanced harvest yields simply by moving water rhythmically about the transverse and longitudinal axis and about its own axis cycloidally in naturalesque development-facilitating vessels under the exclusion of light and heat. Moreover, they knew the recipes for the mixtures, which similar to those in human or animal bodies, are the products of inorganic digestion. As inwardly and outwardly oscillating formative essences arising from the 'cycloid movement of the Earth-masses', these products are respired and supplied with fertilising substances (oxygen) on their formative path and explain the profound secret of genesis and growth, as well as the latter's ennoblement. In this way it is therefore possible not only to produce large quantities of water, but also to ennoble it.

Therefore the possibility now exists not only to transform seawater into drinking and domestic water at an atomic level, but also to establish new and almost limitless cultural communities even in waterless wastelands. That 'specific' healing is also possible with this noble water will be addressed in another chapter and explained in greater detail. The devices for demonstrating these processes are located at the moment at Rudolf Zeitlinger's scythe factory.

What we are therefore here concerned with is the rediscovery of the secrets of age-old cultures, with which it is possible to improve the tragic world situation. To restore to all humanity almost absolute freedom from hunger, as

well as almost absolute freedom of movement on land, in and under water, and in the air.

## Petrol (Gasoline) From Water

From Spec. Ed. of Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2, 1993, Section 9.0 (Notes from January 1936).

Take a well-insulated, preferably egg-shaped vessel made of clay or failing this, an oak-barrel, which as far as possible shields against the influences of external temperatures, but which neither impedes the respiration of the vessel, nor disturbs its diffusive functions. A three-element jet-impeller is rotated (screwed into the water) inside the vessel, the upper portion being made of copper and the lower of a metal of opposite polarity, such as silver.

The openings themselves must of as small a bore as possible and of a screw-form configuration, so that on the one hand the mechanical coherence of the gases forced through under the highest practicable pressure is guaranteed and on the other, a very strong atomisation takes place, when the gas exiting from the lower nozzle enters the upward-curving egg-profile under a strong drop in temperature. The surfaces of the systems of jet-nozzles are reciprocally configured dimensionally. The three nozzle-openings narrow towards the exit-opening in the same ratio.<sup>6</sup> The lower series of nozzles is half the size of the upper. Immediately above and below the two thrust-producing elements, which must be well-insulated externally, adjustable thrust deflectors are mounted inside the egg-form, which can be set closer together or further apart in order to be able to regulate the evolving differences in potential. These thrust-emitters are also to be insulated externally, so that the direction of their respective electrons is safeguarded. They must also be made of bi-polar metals; the simplest solution being to silver-plate the copper elements or to put a layer of copper-oxide on the silver components.<sup>7</sup>

The most essential aspect in this regard is that these elements begin to emit rays under the reciprocal influence of temperature and that an animalistic current flows. This ionisation, wherein hydrolysis<sup>8</sup> plays a decisive role by means of high-tension and complex absorptive processes, is of crucial importance for it is during these processes that the analysing and synthesising electro-osmotic events have to take place.

<sup>6</sup> The ratio here is probably that of the 'Golden Mean' or 'Fibonacci ratio' = 1 :1.618033988. — Ed.

<sup>7</sup> This appears to describe an early model of the Repulsator for which there are no accompanying diagrams. — Ed.

<sup>8</sup> Hydrolysis signifies the decomposition of a substance by the combination of one of its elements with one of those in water. - Ed.

The barrel or unglazed, earthenware vessel<sup>9</sup>, which should be as egg-shaped as possible, will now be filled with well-insolated seawater or thoroughly insolated or acidified fresh water, preferably rainwater. The successful outcome depends on the degree of solar irradiation and acidification. Lack of sunshine can be remedied by the addition of hydrogen peroxide, etc., but this does necessitate irradiation with a quartz lamp. The simplest is solar irradiation. The starting temperature of the water should be between +12°C (+53.6°F) and +17°C (+62.6°F). Into this insolated water very small quantities of silver or zinc, or copper filings should now be added. Eventually these can also be applied to the nozzle lining and around which the entering gas will flow. In this case, the particles or laminates must be small enough not to block the nozzle-openings.

The relative proportions between these two metals of contrasting polarity has to be determined empirically. In addition small quantities of brown-coal in the form of cubes, phosphates of salt, a little magnesium or other substances, such as can be found in all springwater, must be introduced into the water. These salts, however, should not have been overly exposed to daylight. As additives, sulphurated water and the addition of a little nitrate of potash increase the performance of the end product. The more varied the additives, the better and the higher the quality of the final mixture. Because the changing seasons often have a decisive effect on the whole, the relative proportions of these additives must also be determined empirically.

Once all this has been done, the vessel is then closed and sealed against the entry of light and air. Then a dash of carbon-dioxide and a dash of air or oxygen are introduced alternately, the former from above and the latter from below, but in such a way that no pressure is created in the interior.

The C-acid gas<sup>10</sup> introduced from above lowers its temperature and will be rapidly absorbed by the cooling water. Once this ionised gas mixture has been inhaled by the water, as it were, then a dash of oxygen is injected, whose dispersal must be confined within the water only, concentrating itself in the upper strata of the water. This results the development of a stratified, self-densifying, spacial structure from the bottom upwards, through which the carbone gases coming from above have to diffuse. If the process proceeds

<sup>9</sup> This shape is akin to the gulla, which Viktor Schauberg describes as follows: "The people of ancient cultures made use of the so-called 'gulla' for storing their liquids. This mysterious vessel maintains the freshness and vitality of every liquid, be it water, milk, etc. Fabricated under very curious ritualistic practices, the gulla was formed out of clay with a high aluminium content. The basic shape of the gulla was the pentagon, the ur-form into which the lump of clay was shaped before being turned on the potting wheel into the naturalesquely shaped vessel. If such a basic clay form is stood on its natural base, then the naturalesque egg-shape is created, in which the bi-fifth triangle plays a decisive role in respect to its hypotenuse and side in relation to the radius, whereby the rpm of the wheel and the resistance to oscillation of the shaping hand has also to be taken into consideration. The function of the finished vessel, with which it is known the ancients cooled luke-warm water in hot sand under the rays of the midday Sun, depends on the skill applied to these internal and external influences as the naturalesque egg-shape was rotating." *Implosion Magazine*, No. 115, pp 62-63. — Ed.

<sup>10</sup> C-acid gas: Carbonic acid gas otherwise known as carbon-dioxide. - Ed.

correctly, then an extremely strong vacuum forms in the space above the water, which atomises and cools the follow-up  $\text{CO}_2$  even more, giving rise to the necessary intensification on the one hand and the creation of the polarity between the gas and the water on the other.

Under this reciprocal intensification the introduced substances begin to dissociate, during which process the water temperature slowly drops to  $+4^\circ\text{C}$  ( $39.2^\circ\text{F}$ ). This temperature level must be maintained by injecting the gases alternately during which the pressure-gauge fluctuates slightly. This is a sign that the water has begun to breathe and pulsate properly. Should over-pressure occur, it is indicative of a progressive development of heat, whereas an under-pressure signifies a strong increase in  $\text{CO}_2$ . Here the danger of an explosion is incipient, which can be averted if the temperature of the water can be maintained at  $+4^\circ\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^\circ\text{F}$ ). This can be regulated simply by adjusting the inflow of oxygen. The addition of very small quantities of oil or other fatty-matter increases the valence of the mixture, but also the danger of explosion. For this reason the introduction of these substances is not advisable at the beginning.

If no reactions of any kind are evident, and if all the ingredients have been completely dissolved, then the mixture should be allowed to stand for about two hours, during which time the temperature must always be maintained at  $+4^\circ\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^\circ\text{F}$ ). This is most easily achieved in a cellar where such temperatures prevail. Where a good cellar is available, however, the whole thing can be simplified, because the process described above need only be inaugurated with a few alternating injections of  $\text{O}$  and  $\text{CO}_2$ . The whole can then be left to ferment, a process sufficiently well-understood in the preparation of wine or cider. In this instance, however, in the initial stages of the process, the contents should be stirred around gently with a well-insulated mixing-device on which a zinc or silver scoop has been mounted on one side and a copper one on the other. The external closure can be effected with a mercury seal or by the insertion of a compression ring.

The content of introduced  $\text{CO}_2$ , however, must exceed 90% and proportions similar to those found in the water of all good mountain springs must exist in the end-mixture, although here we are concerned with substantially different products of solution than those found in springwater. In principle, however, there is no difference between them. In this regard it is necessary for those substances that have evolved under the influences of light to be decomposed in darkness and a drop in temperature or vice versa. Through these alternating processes of decomposition, structures of alternate character are formed by mutually opposing influences. This arising and passing away is triggered artificially and reciprocally intensified until a complete solution results, ultimately arriving at the synthesis intended. With warming and having undergone an end-reaction, the finished mixture has a slight smell of petrol, but does not burn. However, if this mixture is

atomised in a needle-jet or injector and only lightly compressed by the descending piston, then an explosion occurs. We have thereby achieved what we wanted, namely a mixture of explosive water, which is an exceptionally stable and safe substance, but which produces a higher dynamic effect in the piston-engine than the product obtained through the distillation of crude oil we call 'petrol' (gasoline). Electromagnetic ignition is superfluous and by means of this process we have produced a substance that can be used in diesel-engines.

For large-scale production, this mixture is best produced in special tubes, which cool and move the seawater bio-dynamically as it flows. In this way any desired quantity can be mass-produced. Since any kind of agricultural or forestry waste can be decomposed in these tubes, this process is by far the simplest and best, for no work of any kind is required. All that is necessary is for predigested waste-matter to be thoroughly and completely fermented in seawater or salinated fresh water during the self-cooling flowing motion. The addition of turnip slices, fruit-waste, lemon peel, etc., increases the valence of the mixture, because we are here concerned with a very simple natural process, which is essentially always the same, namely that everything that has once grown, that has lived and moved, pulsates, ferments and reconstitutes and builds itself up, if the thing is merely moved morphologically and the anomaly point or life-point is approached as a result.

With every degree Celsius (1.8°F) drop in temperature, all gases cool at the expense of their volume and in this extremely simple way the dematerialisation-volume, or the 4th dimension, or the condition of pure energy is ultimately reached. In this respect it is important to differentiate clearly between the spacial structure and the volumetric structure; that is to say, that neither formative entities, nor dematerialising entities should be allowed to appear,<sup>11</sup> if one wishes to accumulate positive or negative intensifications of energy in any given liquid. This takes place at the anomaly point or point of neutrality, in which space and volume dematerialise and hence manifest themselves non-spacially as energy.

<sup>11</sup> Here the word 'spacial' can also be taken to mean 'dimensional' in that here it is necessary to achieve an intermediate state of equilibrium at the halfway point between other-dimensionality and physical volume. — Ed.

## 9.

# Machines of the Genus — Repulsator

"We need no science of formulae, but a science of forms."

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 124, p. 29.

## The Production and Advantages of Implosion Machines

Linz, 27th March 1955, From Implosion Magazine, No. 61.

**T**he Suction-turbine (see fig. 20), generally known as an Implosion machine, is as different from a pressure-turbine as night is from day. Both machines are reactors or devices which trigger off reactive forces. The suction-turbine is water-producing, whereas the pressure-turbine is water-destroying.

The pressure-turbine utilises the forces resulting from the weight of water and its efficiency rises as the available head of water or steam increases. The suction-turbine requires no head of pressure and therefore can be installed in still water. This saves expensive pressure resistant pipes primarily because it sucks in its own drive-water. In order to do this, however, it has to be set in motion by conventional means. The higher the speed of the starter motor, the greater the quantity of drive-water screwed upwards and the higher the performance. The indrawn water becomes densified mechanically and physically. The rotation of the many whorl-pipes generates centrifugal force along their longitudinal axes, which expresses itself as an evolving reactive force. The generation of these reactive, rotational forces, and therefore the performance of the suction-turbine, is dependent on the initial velocity at which the mass of drive-water is sucked upwards, densified and accelerated. This can be regulated at will according to the setting of the starter motor, which merely provides the initial impulse for the frictionless, rotational acceleration.



An engineer, who is unaware that products of reduction also exist in every movement of a medium containing bipolar sediments, will find it difficult to discern the origin of these additional rotational forces. Forces are active in the suction-turbine, which cannot be compared with those in a pressure-turbine.

The suction-turbine is also a machine for ennobling water, in which polluted freshwater can be reactivated, or seawater reconverted into mountain-spring-quality drinking water and otherwise useful water. Suction-turbines are therefore development-enhancing reactors.

The output of the suction-turbine is about nine times greater than a pressure-turbine, because no resistance is created in its system of pipes. This eliminates all competition from the pressure-turbine industry.

At school everyone learnt that the Earth has a magnetic longitudinal axis about which it rotates. In every physics book or even a dictionary it is stated that there is a form of magnetism which attracts iron, cobalt, nickel, manganese, etc. The counterpart to this form of magnetism is the organic vacuum, which draws in oxygen and supplies organic processes with it.

Also known as diamagnetism, this form of magnetism evolves when a medium with a loose-knit structure, such as air or water, is moved in an inwinding motion about its own axis. This motion leads to the cooling and reduction of the volume. The reduction in spaciality is indicative of the initiation of the adsuctional or attractive effect.

This axis is not like the shafts in all contemporary machines. The suction-turbine (implosion-machine) has no shaft, but only a hub onto which the logarithmical<sup>1</sup> whorl-pipes are attached. It is an inverted (inside-out) propeller, which centripetates the indrawn masses of air or water about their own axis and therefore inwinds them radially->axially. They trigger off the mysterious negative pressure, which Professor Sauerbruch discovered in the thorax. In 1908 his superior, Professor Mikolitsch, declared that Professor Sauerbruch was out of his mind, when the latter asserted that without this negative pressure it would be impossible to breathe. Nor would any uptake of nutrients be possible. However, Professor Sauerbruch failed to appreciate that this concerned the development of diamagnetic, reactive forces, which evolve in the self-inwinding blood and sap vessels.

New findings of research have indicated that the Earth rotates in spiral space-curves about its diamagnetic axis. This axis is no axle, but a negatively potentiated concentration of dynagen, which arises through this inwinding motion. The axis itself is something akin to a hole into which seminal substances are sucked. Had science perceived this earlier, then the suffocating death of water would never have happened. It must also be mentioned in this regard, that over-illuminated and warmed water inevitably decays.

<sup>1</sup> Logarithmical: Viktor also makes use of the 'Golden Mean' or 'Fibonacci ratio' in the construction of such pipes and their graduated attenuation in the ratio 1:0.618033988. - Ed.

Every river regulation is a crime, because the water migrates towards the riverbank owing to the cessation of its complex, curvilinear, flow pattern. Vortices are unable to develop, which suck in the oxygen like miniature cyclones and enable the water to breathe. Regression and the development of cancer then ensues.

This fact is easy to prove and can be demonstrated by all pressure-turbine systems. Indeed, the destruction of quality should be proof enough. The progressive extinguishing of the life-force daily furnishes evidence of this. Those who do not wish to travel this cancerous road, will buy biotechnical machines and appliances, in the same way they buy health products in the health food stores that are springing up like mushrooms.

## The Production of Noble Water & Drinking Water An Assembly of Pertinent Data from Implosion Magazine

The whole problem lies in the creation of breathing water using a technical appliance. First of all the water must actually be alive. For this it has to be made to in-roll and then out-roll again. If one wishes to achieve the desired potentiation of the noble water, then its previous potential must be eliminated. This happens by starting off with distilled water into which the trace elements are introduced, that are to be found in certain medicinal springs. The starting temperature is about  $+20^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+68^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) and the end temperature  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ).  
Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 51, p. 12.

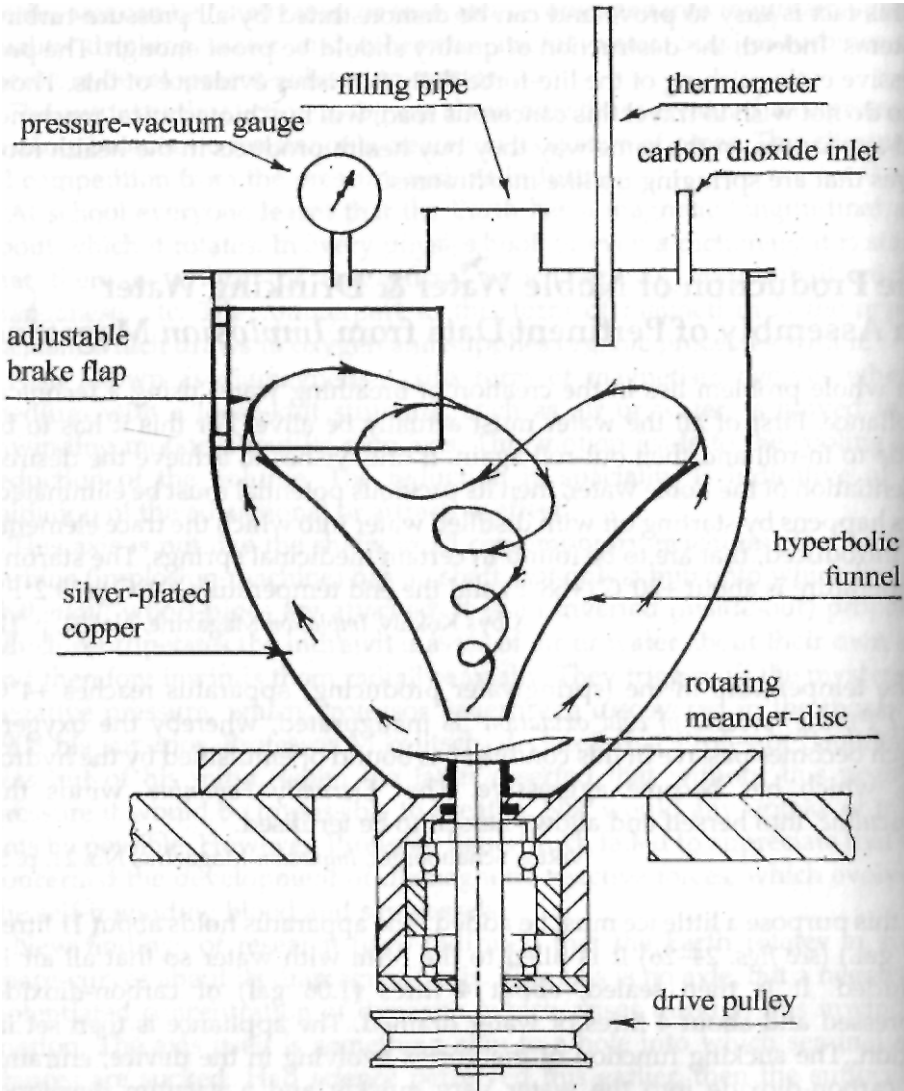
If the temperature in the (springwater producing) apparatus reaches  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ), the 'process of cold oxidation' is inaugurated, whereby the oxygen, which becomes passive in this condition, is bound or emulsified by the hydrogen, which has become aggressive. The 'Eternally Feminine' winds the 'Masculine' into herself and allows herself to be fertilised.

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 21, p. 5.

For this purpose a little ice must be added. The apparatus holds about 11 litres (2.9 gal.) (see figs. 24-26) It is filled to the brim with water so that all air is excluded. It is then sealed, about 4 litres (1.06 gal) of carbon-dioxide impressed and about 4 litres of water drained. The appliance is then set in motion. The sucking function of the vortex evolving in the device, entrains the carbon-dioxide into the water very quickly and a vacuum develops. Under the effect of this vacuum, the various mineral and metallic trace elements become incorporated in the water. With the drop in temperature from  $+17^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+62.6^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) to  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) the oxygen becomes inactive, whereas the carbon and hydrogen become highly active. The water becomes hungry for

oxygen. Such water, drunk fresh, breaks down all excess acidity in the body. The over-acidified cells can then breathe again and take up oxygen. Return to health follows.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 51, p. 12.



Design Principle for the Repulsator

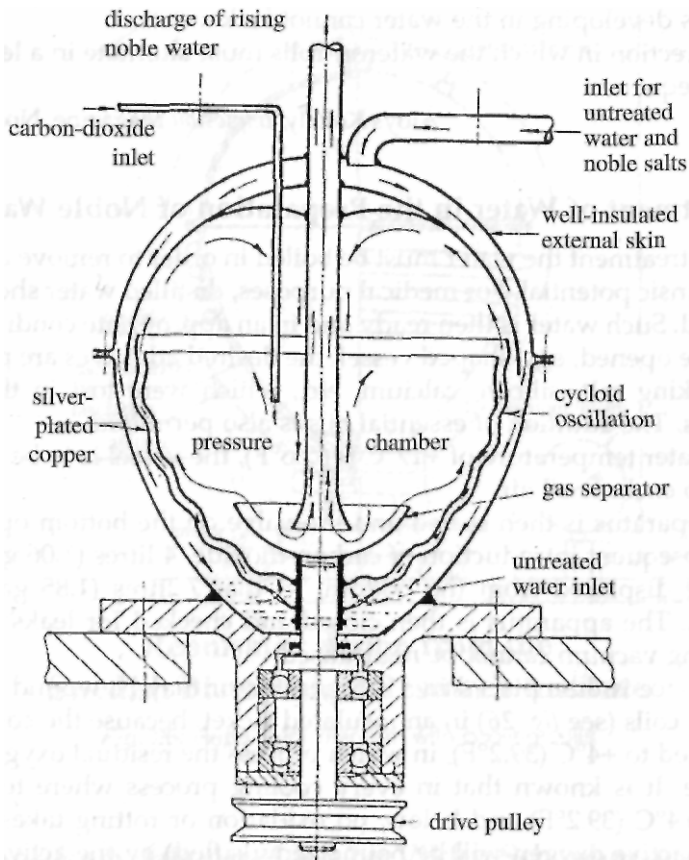


Fig. 25: Repulsator cross-sectional drawing

A Water-Ennobling Device must satisfy the Following Criteria:

- (a) The water must be able to in-roll on itself, as happens in a natural water-fall.
- (b) The water must be able to breathe in order to be to take up added ingredients. These substances can be of solid, liquid or gaseous nature.
- (c) A temperature-gradient must evolve; the water must be cooled from  $+17^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+62.6^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) down to  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ), its condition of greatest specific density.
- (d) It must be possible to accelerate the movement of the water.
- (e) The vacuum that soon appears due to the densation of the water and the uptake of carbon-dioxide, must be sealed and protected against external influences.

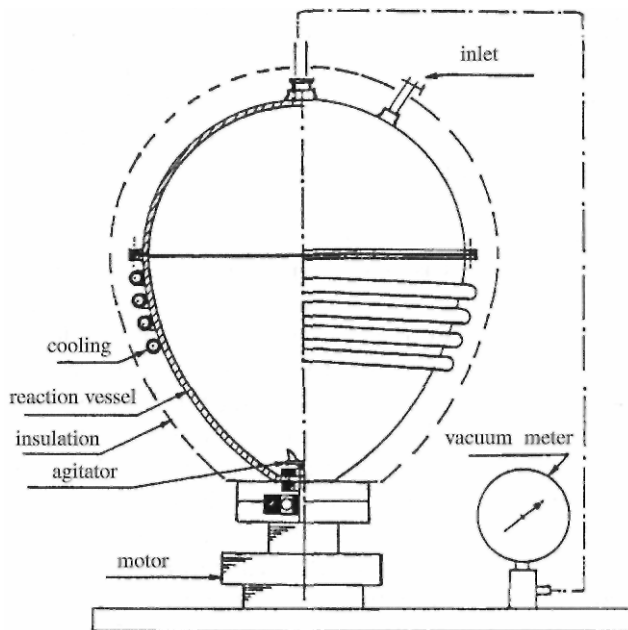
- (f) The device must be so insulated externally that the electromagnetic charges developing in the water cannot leak away.
- (g) The direction in which the water in-rolls must alternate in a left and right hand sequence.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 54/55, p.45.

### The Treatment of Water in the Preparation of Noble Water

1. Before treatment the water must be boiled in order to remove any dirt and its intrinsic potential. For medical purposes, distilled water should always be used. Such water is then ready and in an appropriate condition for use.
2. Into the opened, egg-shaped vessel, the desired additives are placed, such as cooking salt, silicon, calcium, etc., which were lost in the previous process. The addition of essential oils is also permitted.
3. At a water temperature of  $+17^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+62.6^{\circ}\text{F}$ ), the vessel is to be filled to the brim to exclude all air.
4. The apparatus is then sealed and the valve on the bottom opened. With the subsequent introduction of carbon-dioxide, 4 litres (1.06 gal) of water will be displaced from the bottom, so that 7 litres (1.85 gal) of water remain. The apparatus is then closed and checked for leaks, so that the evolving vacuum cannot be neutralised.
5. The device is then placed in a refrigerator, or may be wound with refrigerating coils (see fig. 26) in an insulated jacket, because the contents must be cooled to  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ), in which process the residual oxygen becomes passive. It is known that in every cooling process where temperatures reach  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $39.2^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) and below, no oxidation or rotting takes place. The now inactive oxygen will be bound (emulsified) by the activated hydrogen and carbon-dioxide.
6. Meanwhile the motor is switched on and the contents of water will be propelled upwards along a centrifugating spiral column. In a certain sense, this represents the breathing of the water. The water is moved by a motor-driven rotating concave copper disc.
7. In the upper half of the apparatus a rotating copper dome-shaped enclosure is incorporated. The rotating water will be pressed inwards by this and flows downwards in the form of an in-rolling spiral. The point of this vortex, similar to a tornado, lands on the lower rotating copper disc and the whole process begins anew.
8. The automatic control of the motor's alternating direction of rotation to right and left is intended to copy the right-hand $\leftrightarrow$ left-hand curvilinear flow of water in natural, untouched watercourses, where the water will always swing from one side to the other.

Aloys Kokaly, Implosion Magazine, No. 85, pp 9-10.



Repulsator design from the  
Swedish Biotechnical Research Institute

Fig. 26: Repulsator diagram with cooling coils

Instructions from data provided by Viktor Schauburger

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 36, pp 30-32.

1. An egg should be filled to the brim with springwater (under no circumstances should it contain any chlorine) or aqua destillata or carbonated water (soda siphon water). Starting temperature should not exceed  $+27^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+80.6^{\circ}\text{F}$ ). First attempts should be made using well-boiled well-water, which should be allowed to cool to  $+17^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+62.6^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) before being poured into the egg. In this regard the water must be poured in very carefully to avoid entry of any sediment. All foam and surface scum to be skimmed off.
2. Two opaque, dark bottles (beer bottles, for example) should be half-filled with the above water, one of which should receive the prescribed quantity of calcium and the other, the three other ingredients or sediments<sup>2</sup>. It is

<sup>2</sup> These are not specified, but may relate to the ingredients necessary for remedying specific deficiencies in the water being ennobled at the time. — Ed.

- very important that one bottle should be filled with calcium only. The two bottles are then shaken thoroughly for a few minutes until the water in both has become milky. The bottle containing the three sediments should be poured into the egg first, followed by the bottle containing calcium. The latter should be handled with care and should be stored in the dark. At first the water appears milky, but clears itself during the inwinding process.
3. Sufficient carbon-dioxide should then be introduced in order to expel the last traces of air. This is best done with a vacuum pump, whereby any desired quantity of carbon-dioxide can be admixed, or whose addition can thereby be regulated. Regulation is also possible with the reduction valve. The right quantity of carbon-dioxide can only be determined by experiment, which is possible by tasting the finished water. If the carbon-dioxide is noticeable, then too much has been added. If the water is too hard, then the amount of calcium is excessive. Whatever ingredient or sediment comes to the fore must be reduced in quantity. If the water is insufficiently refreshing, then the magnesium should be increased. The mixture is correct if no sediment or carbon-dioxide is particularly noticeable in the water. If the water is insufficiently invigorating, then there is not enough carbon-dioxide.
  4. After the cover of the egg has been sealed, then it should be allowed to operate for about 3/4 of an hour. The best time to do this is before 9.00 am. During thunderstorms or immediately prior to them, attempts to produce good water are unsuccessful. All smelly, aromatic or odorous material should be removed from the vicinity of the egg, because the fermenting water attracts and absorbs all aromas, particularly those of onions, garlic, soap, etc. The vacuum must be allowed to develop slowly (about 300 rpm should suffice). Rapid vacuum development is unproductive and should be avoided. It is enough if 0.8 - 0.96 absolute atmospheres have been achieved by the end of the process.
  5. The external temperature during the regenerative process should be at least +3°C (+37.4°F), since it effects the internal temperature. After completion of the fermentation, then the external temperature should be maintained at +4°C (39.2°F). Maturation takes about 24 hours and should take place in the egg itself or in clean glass vessels stored away from all light and heat.
  6. When analysed, the finished water should be deficient in oxygen. The water actually still contains oxygen, although it is bound by the carbon-dioxide. The water's potency is increased in this way, which is not the case in soda siphons.
  7. The water should only be drunk in small quantities at temperatures not exceeding +7°C (+44.6°F), for the water already begins to deteriorate at

+9°C (+48.2°F) and therefore it should always be transported in thermos-flasks to prevent the temperature rising above +7°C (+44.6°F). Drinking this water provokes strong elimination or excretion, because all waste-matter is expelled from the body. The appetite is strongly stimulated. Diamagnetism disappears after 24 hours, which impairs the healing effects.

### Ingredients Required for about 10 litres of Water

Potassium (K)	= 0.0034 mg/kg	Chlorine (Cl)	= 0.0257 mg/kg
Sodium (Na)	= 0.0776 mg/kg	Sulphate	= 0.1301 mg/kg
Calcium (Ca)	= 0.0215 mg/kg	Bicarbonate	= 0.0638 mg/kg
Magnesium (Mg)	= 0.00039 mg/k	Nitrite	= 0.0001 mg/kg
Iron (Fe)	= 0.00042 mg/kg	Fluorine (F)	= 0.0028 mg/kg
Manganese (Mn)	= 0.0001 mg/kg	Thiosulphate	= 0.00055 mg/kg
Lithium (Li)	= 0.00022 mg/kg	Malic acid	= 0.0754 mg/kg
Strontium (Sr)	= 0.00047 mg/kg	Metaboric acid	= 0.00497 mg/kg
Aluminium (Al)	= 0.0002 mg/kg	Free CO <sub>2</sub>	= 0.0054 mg/kg



10.

## The Klimator

"I can generate suctional forces, which act indirectly and are entirely undetectable. No current of air can be noticed; only an almost imperceptible cooling, as occurs when air is sucked in strongly with the back of the hand held in front of the mouth. It is therefore incorrect to say that I have copied the cyclones and typhoons of the tropics."

Viktor Schauburger, Implosion Magazine, No. 83, p. 17.

## Cold and Hot Machines - Cooling-Heating Machines

From Spec. Ed. Mensch und Technik, Vol. 2,1993, section 7.5.

I have certain devices in my possession that can cool a river with a temperature of about  $+20^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+68^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) down to below  $0^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $+32^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) in a few minutes without any cooling equipment of current design (ice or refrigerator). The breath-like regulation of oxygen between interconnected vessels (containing copper and zinc plates) is enough to eliminate thousands of heat-calories in a few seconds, or convert them into cold substances. These simple, natural processes are valid for temperature fluctuations in excess of  $60^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $108^{\circ}\text{F}$ ). This involves the atomic dissociation of air or aqueous substances.

I am now having machines built, which generate heat or cold organically. (see fig. 27) Heat or cold-producing dynamos of 1/8th horsepower heat and cool in a cold combustion process, without fire. The device is both heater and refrigerator. By means of an organic vacuum, it lifts water or air to any height, converts water or air into an immaterial form and distils the starting product, so that any kind of water or air can be produced. Main criterion: The correct composition of the material. Study catalysts that separate oxygen from water. For experiments use caustic potash and zinc, or sodium. To dissipate the additional heat, bind aluminium and silica with waterglass. The ratio of 1:1 is not right, because the resultant temperature is too high. Intuitively it should be in

the ratio of 2:3, wherein the C-substances must predominate. The number of revolutions per minute should be between 4,000 and 9,000. Basic concept is planetary motion with suction and pressure on opposite sides of the catalyst. Depending on the rate of rotation, there can be a 350,000-fold increase in weight or pressure. The device can also be used to produce the cheapest artificial petrol.

With one system as big as a fist, houses can be heated. On the other hand, any desired low temperature can be achieved merely by adjusting the needle-jets. Small motive impulses only are required to set it in motion - kick-starter or electrical starter-motor.

In a vacuum water will be evaporated and by means of cold is transformed (through mutators) into a gaseous state. In my next device air will be converted into electrozoic energy.<sup>1</sup> This is how the organic or physical vacuum comes into being, which even in small machines consumes about 4m<sup>3</sup> (141.24 ft<sup>3</sup>) of air per second, delivering about 10,000 hp to the drive-shaft to do work. If a physical vacuum is created in front of the suction-intake openings, then the machine itself is drawn forwards by this force, thus opening the way to the production of silent, fuel-less aircraft (in the current meaning of the word).

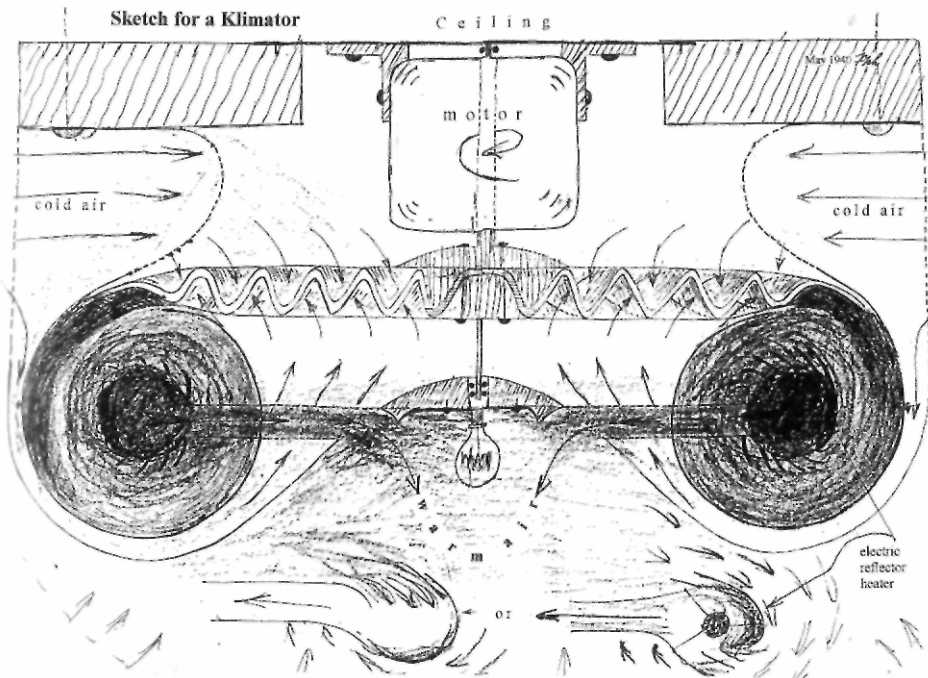


Fig. 27: The Klimator

<sup>1</sup> Electrozoic energy: an animalistic or organismic form of electrical energy. — Ed.

## The Klimator - a New Form of Synthesising Current produced by a Space-Energy Generator

From Implosion Magazine, No. 77, written in Leonstein 25:8:1945.

### Central heating with reactive forms of heat

In exactly the same way as happened after World War I, there is no other solution to the present shortage of coal than to cut down the forest in order to heal our houses over the coming winter. As a result:

1. A valuable national asset will be further destroyed.
2. A whole string of new economic disasters will ensue.
3. Nothing will be achieved of any practical value.

Assuming that we are able to fell such a large number of trees, then, as also happened after World War I, it will be impossible to transport the green and heavy fire-wood logs to the railways and on to further destinations, due to the lack of draft-animals and fuel. What is actually delivered, can barely be burned for at least six months, because firewood must first be dried out. At the same time the generation of an unhealthy form of heat, conducive to the propagation of bacteria will result.

People should send me a few sheets of copper (Cu), brass ( $\text{Cu}_5\text{Zn}_8$ ,  $\text{Cu}_9\text{Al}_4$ ,  $\text{Cu}_3\text{Sn}_8$ ) or aluminium (Al), which should be 0.8-1.0 mm (0.0315-0.0394 in.) thick. Steel sheet is hard to bend, although it is also very suitable. It is not worth having a press-die specially made merely to build a prototype to demonstrate how this problem can be solved naturally and inexpensively. Hardly anyone will be able to understand the essential nature of this new system of heating. Nevertheless, the attempt should be made in order to create interest.

It is a well-known fact that it is warm below the ground-surface in winter and cool in summer. These variations in temperature originate from material changes in the raw materials present in the ground and in part are also effected through the 'cycloid-spiral-space-curve motion' of the Earth. These internal and external changes in motion are brought about as Nature increases the intensity of the Sun's rays in summer by lengthening their developmental path<sup>2</sup> and weakens them in winter through the earthward approach of the Sun at perihelion. In very general terms this enables dense agglomerations of

<sup>2</sup> In the northern hemisphere summer the distance between Sun and Earth increases to a maximum at aphelion about the 1st of June. — Ed.

oxygen to enter the ground. It is the same process that happens in a motor in cool weather or at night. The oxygen then consumes the residual matter, which the Earth created during the summer out of the earthly remains of deceased life-forms with the aid of her cycloid-spiral-space-curve motion.

The movement of sap in summer and its state of rest in winter are the biological sequel to the above variations in intensity. These are the cause of the different motions, which in turn contribute towards the intensification of the Earth's new processes. It is only in this way that qualigen is to be understood, whose waste-matter is also involved in the generation of reactive, falling and therefore concentrating influences of heat. Without these influences no growth is possible. It is these falling and concentrating forms of heat that are of interest to us at the moment, since they can solve the most urgent problems of fuel and heating quickly and simply. They are about 90% more efficient than normal methods of heating for the simple reason that they are produced from the waste-products of qualigen and hence will function equally efficiently in large, medium or very small heating appliances.

A great deal of time, effort and expense can thus be spared using this naturalesque method of heating. Wood and coal will become as good as obsolete. In Nature nothing happens directly, but only indirectly. Without waste-matter, therefore, no growth and no gain is possible. As far as present heating problems are concerned, the trick is to learn how to make use of those waste-products that generate falling and concentrating heat rays. These heat from above downwards in the same way that the Sun heats the surface of the Earth.

For this purpose a Klimator is required. What is a Klimator? It is merely a type of dynamo that generates natural forms of temperature, or more accurately, falling and concentrating heat rays as well as naturally rising and expanding forms of cold. The latter are health-promoting and lethal to bacteria.

The Klimator essentially consists of three special components (see fig. 28) and:

1. Is a small, conventional heating element, which is incorporated in the middle of a sort of selenium cell<sup>3</sup>, which is surrounded by a material mass. As in a natural living cell (similar to a protoplasm), all major and secondary basic elements are present in an allotropic state. Herein are contained all stocks of allotropic fructigens and seminal substances, oligodynamic (decay-promoting) and catalytic (growth-accelerating), exciting substances.
2. Is a diminutive, but faithful copy of the Earth itself, within which an agitator rotates, which is attached to the end of the vertical shaft. In addition,

<sup>3</sup> Selenium's electrical resistance increases with exposure to light and a selenium cell is a type of photoelectric cell comprising a thin coating of selenium applied to a metal disc and covered with a layer of gold or platinum thin enough to allow the passage of light. — Ed.

the Klimator consists of a series of nested, rilled, calyx-like<sup>4</sup> vanes, which are so constructed that the through-flowing masses, such as water and air, can be bio-centrifugated. Through the increase in centripetating and centrifugating velocities, which have hitherto never been achieved anywhere, increases in pressure and suction are produced, which reciprocally amplify each other exponentially. This results in the decomposition of the water and air due to the thorough trituration of the smallest molecules of sediment, leading to the development of a hitherto unknown process of synthesis. This gives rise to two longitudinally oriented types of inward flowing, spiral-like currents, one flowing upwards and the other downwards.

3. A small generator is also incorporated in the Klimator, whose armature is fixed and about which the stator rotates.

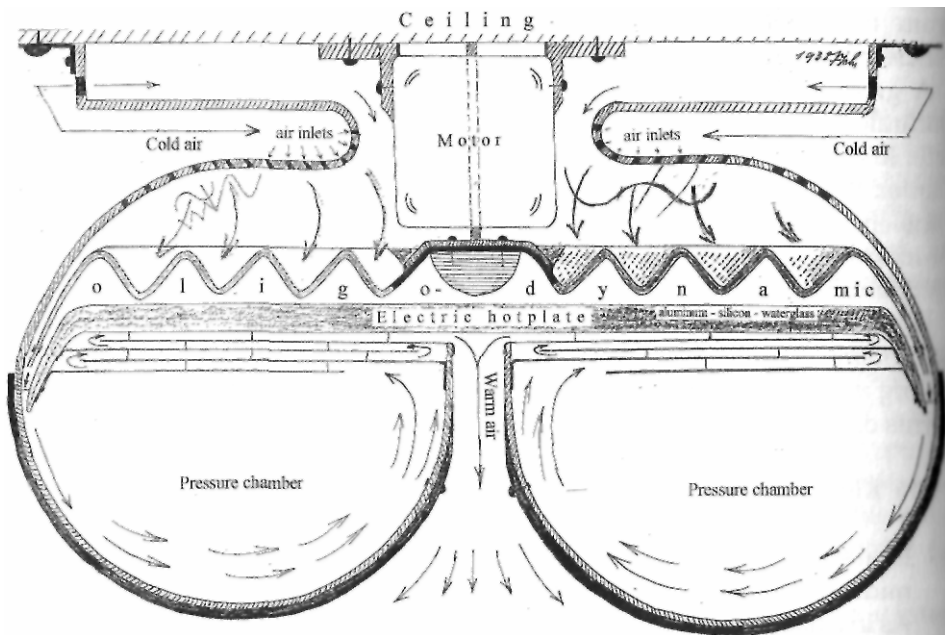


Fig. 28: The Klimator

The primary product of synthesis, a biomagnetic formative and levitative current, will not be elaborated in more detail here, since we are primarily interested in the solution of the problem of heating, namely, with the function

<sup>4</sup> Calyx = the sepals of a flower collectively forming the outer floral envelope, protective of the bud. - Ed.

of the secondary or reflux current. This is a potential with which it is possible to heat up a space from the ceiling downwards, like the Sun does. It is a radiant form of heat, which heats the whole space evenly. If the intensity of the small heating resistance (element) is reduced, however, for which the rate of rotation of the agitator must be increased, then the living space is suffused with an evenly dispersed, rising, expanding and high-altitude-like fresh air. In this way the natural, reactive forms of temperature are produced nearly free of cost, through which the natural warmth of the valley-climate comes into being. It is a mountain micro-climate.

The Klimator represents the most basic developmental form in which the natural, primary motive forces can evolve, whose two components are to be differentiated as:

- (a) The metaphysical, which acts from the inside outwards, and
- (b) The physical, which acts from the outside inwards.

Both these higher forms of pressure and suction together produce the 'original' form of motion through which the higher influence arises, which in turn generates the increased and qualitatively improved, primary life-energy. This original way of generating natural formative and levitative essences is exploited by the stationary trout, which stands motionless in fast-flowing torrents and darts upstream like lightning when danger threatens, wherein it cannot only overcome its own body-weight, but also, swimming freely and without other assistance, overcomes the weight of the oncoming water. This was previously inexplicable as far as science was concerned.

The secret of this mysterious overcoming of gravity solves the problem of the aforementioned, hitherto unknown synthesising current, which is triggered off through the cold metabolic process. Contemporary science knows nothing about it, because it only uses warm processes of oxidation, which triggers the counter-current to the above current. This, however, is the most dangerous current of all.

This annihilating current science uses for mechanical power and to heat living spaces. The suppression of the life-current means the gradual elimination of the life-force leading to disease and premature death.

Progress can only be made in the search for the synthesising current and quality of life when all substances are moved inwindingly. The cyloidally moving Earth demonstrates this to us daily. It was a trout that showed it to me. With the Klimator, the Repulsator and the Repulsine the first atom-bomb that rises can be produced instead of one that falls. The latter achieved the veritable zenith of almost complete annihilation with the aid of the most efficacious combustion process of all. But with it came the long-sought turning point, for in all truth no deeper nadir could have been reached.

## Technology & Bio-Technology

The naturalesque Mr-generation of power, heat and light

Biotechnisches Versuchsinstitut (i.Gr.), Oct. 1946 - from Implosion Magazine, No. 116, pp 37-45.

The no longer mysterious secret of the naturalesque generation of power, heat, cold and light lies hidden in the substance that today's technologists combust, from which the so-called 'calories' arise, and which understandably disappear when we drive our machines with Nature's principal formative substance (fatty-matter), or use it for heating or for generating low-grade light.

Derived from the ancient Greek word 'technao', technology means 'self-cheating' or 'self-deception'. Actually it ought to be called 'stupidity', because all we have to do is merely to move what actually 'moves, heats and illuminates' naturalesquely in order to be able to set every kind of machine in motion 'originally' or to produce heat and light naturalesquely.

For this reason the ancient Greeks also rejected 'technology' in any form. Instead they captured slaves so as to have the more demeaning and demanding tasks carried out by these natural machines, which run on metaphysical fatty-matter.

In order to eat today the wretched slaves scramble for work, burrowing into the earth for coal, felling the forests and extracting oil from the ground, in order, so they believe, to alleviate their lot, but achieve precisely the opposite. More and more people have to work and the more diligently they slave away, the more keenly the hunger they will have to experience, because without coal, timber and oil no growth of vegetation is possible. In other words, there will be an increasing dearth of all that is most vital to life, if by the sweat of our brows we inhibit the build-up of quality matter and exploit Nature's most important formative substance - fatty-matter - for every possible and impossible purpose, i.e. to drive machines and for ridiculous methods of lighting and heating: All this in the belief that these earthly residues of fatty-matter would in any case be reduced to dust and ashes if left in the ground, and therefore it does not matter whether we make soap or something else out of them, or merely combust them.

Today this is totally unnecessary. Naturally there will be a hue and cry from all the well-camouflaged slave-masters, who earn fat sums through those they lead around by the nose, once the bio-technical secret is revealed and the mentally castrated work-oxen are shown the way to move this mysterious fatty-matter naturalesquely. This will provoke an upheaval of a kind that humanity has never yet experienced, because mechanical power, heat and light will be as good as free. In the future no intelligent person will operate

machines or even generate heat and light with Nature's principal working material, but will make the actual 'mover and Life re-awakener' move bio-technically.

To learn this art it is necessary above all to explain two fundamental concepts. Firstly, what actually is 'substance' and secondly what actually is 'motion' ?

From a naturalesque viewpoint, the term 'substance' is to be envisaged as a more or less highly developed energy-concentrate; a lattice of atoms, as it were, or as the word 'lattice' implies, a sort of prison, in which Nature's principal formative substance - the fatty-matter in the process of change and formation - also resides in an allotropic (naturally congealed or condensed) state. This only awaits the naturalesque motive impulse in order to be elevated to a 'freely moving' atomic state, which happens all the more rapidly, the faster this energy-concentrate in a latent transitional state is rotated in inwinding space-spiral-curves about its own axis by means of so-called venal-motion. Immediately thereafter, what has come into being in this way is moved further in so-called arterial-motion in order to distribute what has been 'freely formed' by way of naturalesque rhythmical motion through the surrounding body (the soil) in order to bring it to life.

With this the secret of biotechnical motion stands revealed and all that remains is to explain the mysterious machine with which it is possible to ur-generate the 'originally moving and resuscitating', i.e. a higher-grade potential. With its use all machines can be powered and our homes heated and illuminated independently. Moreover, all growth - which is none other than the natural solidification of energy-concentrates - can be stimulated and increased as well as qualitatively improved. In short, our every wish can be fulfilled with very little effort.

Naturally all this will be described as Utopian, as the product of a deranged mind intent on creating all kinds of confusion amidst the present economic chaos caused by the insanity of combusting Nature's most vital primary substances. Consequently, great concern for the continuing supply of fatty-matter will inevitably arise; a substance that nowadays not only every housewife lacks<sup>5</sup>, but one that is also lacking in the form of what might be called 'cerebral lubricant'. For it is from the brain that all healthy thoughts arise, and above all the idea of doing things in accordance with Nature in the future; something the director of an institute for commodity studies naturally cannot immediately appreciate. Therefore a number of other things must be explained in greater detail in order to make it clear to the various ministers of government departments as well. This is necessary so as to enable an increased production of commodities and above all a faster growth of calories, which under the present circumstances are not only being increasingly wasted, but ultimately would go to waste entirely were such individuals not

<sup>5</sup> This relates to the severe food shortages and rationing in Austria in the immediate post-war period.  
- Ed.



to be enlightened by an outsider. That is, were the fundamental concepts of 'biotechnology' not explained in a generally understandable way.

Under the concept 'motion' we have to visualise a rhythmical combination of pressure and suction, wherein it is of crucial importance whether pressure or suction predominates. If the former prevails, then a decadent potential or expressed more scientifically, an oxidation, takes place, which should generally be understood as a highly combustive process that inhibits development.

In contrast, if suction prevails during a naturalesque course of motion, then a reduction process occurs, which is here to be generally understood as the aforesaid higher-grade transformation of an already high-grade material into spirit, or expressed more scientifically, into the above form of higher-grade potential. Naturally, this is also the source of higher-grade temperature and light phenomena, which as development-furthering instrumentalities, foster the development of naturalesque motive forces, high-grade heat and cold as well as light.

In this formative process *il primo muovere*, the initial motive impulse, also plays a decisive role. If any motion is actuated by a pressure-induced axial->radial (see fig. 14) impulse and pressure prevails, then the decadent form of potential results, because in this case the atom lattice ruptures due to the release of its content of unipolar and highly aggressive allotropic oxygen. In other words, when the oxygen has attained the energetic state that enables it to encircle the fatty-matter (carbone). The latter having become passive and coincident (internally collapsed) under this lower-grade heat influence, the oxygen loops around it in spiral-space-curves, and engulfs, consumes and digests it.

The offspring of this outbirth of decadent energies are lower-grade temperatures, i.e. rising heat-forms and falling cold-forms, which foster the decay process. Subsequently, with the aid of these solidifying cold-forms, the relapse into the earth of what has missed its way on evolution's upward path ensues.

However, if a motion is initiated by a radial->axial impulse, i.e. if the initiating upward suction and inward impulsion are triggered simultaneously, then firstly the atom lattice of basic elements is disassembled naturalesquely, because under this centripetal motion it is only the oxygen that reacts and contracts into itself. Secondly, due to the developing coolness that occurs with all sucking action, the fatty-matter (carboni), which become free, unipolar and highly active then encircles the oxygen, also loops around it in inwinding spiral curves, and engulfs and digests it. The product of this metabolic process is the higher-grade potential, which immediately gives rise to higher-grade temperature-forms, i.e. falling and concentrating heat-forms and rising and expanding invigorative cold-forms. These combine the highest-grade elements into a new atom lattice and propel the product of this high-grade synthesis, which already has a desire to rise, into even higher zones of evolution.

To restate the process briefly: axial->radial ex-pulsion results in ex-plosion, decay and combustion. Ira-pulsion, or a radial->axial impetus results in im-plosion, ennoblement and autonomous upward displacement (levitation). In this case reactive suctional forces operate first during the ascent and are then reinforced by supplementary reactive forces. This is how physical weight is overcome naturalesquely, during which process the already higher-grade energetic ballasting elements are precipitated out and manifest themselves as falling and concentrating heat-forms.

If this formative process is copied naturalesquely in a so-called Klimator (see figs. 27 and 28), which is suspended from the ceiling and moved bio-centrifugally then a falling and concentrating heat-form is produced with which the living space can be naturalesquely heated in winter.

If these invigorative cold-forms with their rising and expanding properties are introduced into an evacuated glass bulb, then the energy-concentrates, which in any case move exceptionally rapidly, exceed their highest velocity in this resistance-less space. In the process they eject high-grade ballast material which interacts with the residual oxygen still present in an extremely rarefied state. The product of this renewed union is atmospheric space-light, naturalesquely copied sunlight as it were. This evolves and lights up the vacuum bulb when the bulb, which has no other connections apart from the earth-wire, is merely earthed. All that is required therefore is to connect the earth-wire in order to make the living space as bright as day. To extinguish this natural light, which is of course temperatureless, the earth-wire is simply disconnected.

If virtually free mechanical power is required, then the above higher-grade heating effects merely need to be switched off, thus converting them into formative and levitative invigorative forms (cold-forms). This immediately reactivates the 'ur-powerfully-waxing' buoyant motion, which here should be envisaged as a bio-magnetic up-current (a synthesising current). With elemental force arising from an energy gradient that evolves along a common developmental axis, this up-current sucks up the generating device in its wake, i.e. it effortlessly overcomes its own weight. Aircraft, submarines or heavy projectiles can be propelled like lightning in this way at negligible cost. In stationary machines on the other hand, which must be well anchored to the ground, the indrawn air will be almost instantaneously decomposed, transformed and built up as described earlier by passing through a curviform pipe. The concurrently coincident water, i.e. the discharged and inwardly collapsed medium, will be expelled at the same time, resulting in the ur-generation of a high-grade high-quality space - the 'organic' vacuum. This is the opposite of atmospheric air pressure and is the best and cheapest attractional force to be found anywhere on this planet. It is also the 'space' that produces ray-like forms which penetrate through all enclosures and stream upwards.

If a communicating pipe is interposed between this naturalesquely evacuated highly potent vacuity imbued with qualigen and the outer pressure of atmospheric space, and if a propeller or turbine is installed inside it, then the external atmospheric pressure exerts a force of  $1 \text{ atm/cm}^2$  on the inclined blades of the propeller (turbine).

Since any desired volume of air can be reduced (transformed into formations of qualigen) in a fraction of a second with a naturalesquely constructed Repulsine (see figs. 30-33), for which at most a driving force of 0.8 kW is required, the levitative torque-producing force generated, or more correctly ur-generated, in this way is as good as free. For here, with increasing velocity due to the upward activation of the above bio-synthesising torque-producing force, the Repulsine's power increases by the square of the ur-generative motion. This is to be compared with the increase in the resistance to motion in all 'technical' machines, where understandably, due to the reversed direction of motion the forces of recoil increase in the same ratio as described above.

That is to say, today's technology strives to move forwards with forces that operate backwards. Logically what has been achieved is not only a reversal of motion, but also of the economy; an economic decline resulting from the mechanical build-up of decadent repulsive pressures, which naturally have a decadent or destructive effect economically. Consequently, the economy will become increasingly unhealthy, the more widespread and intensive such technology, this self-deception becomes, or to put it mildly, the more the abysmal stupidity of generating decadent energies mechanically takes effect.

This tragic aberration was inaugurated by the foolish belief that the progress of evolution comes to a halt when the life-functions are apparently extinguished and that the so-called soul escapes after the cessation of vital activity. In reality the true resurrection only begins after the proper decomposition of an atom lattice (fatty-matter concentrate) that has fallen back into the earth with the aid of and because of the cycloid-space-curve motion of the Earth itself, which provides the radial->axial im-pulse. In contrast, all 'technical' machines, i.e. all dynamos, turbines, pressure pumps, propellers, explosion and steam driven engines, all furnaces, gas and electric heating appliances, all soil-tilling and harvesting machinery, etc. provide a developmentally harmful ex-pulse to initiate motion. Because of this and without exception, the atom lattice thus moved ruptures, resulting in the disintegration of the molecular (bacteriophagous) formations in suspension. In unnaturally moved air or water decadent stresses appear, causing the decay of the devise energy-concentrates (as a graphic example, see hydraulic river regulation and torrent confinement<sup>6</sup>). This leads to the build-up of decadent potential and the decomposition of the blood of the Earth, and thus to a total economic collapse along the whole course of development.

<sup>6</sup> See sections on river engineering in *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series. — Ed.

The possibility of ur-generating virtually free mechanical power, heat, cold and temperature-less light, however, is only the first step towards cultural (economic) reconstruction. For with venal-motion, it goes without saying that the highest quality blood of the Earth - water containing exceptionally potent substances - can be produced by mechanical means. With this water not only can reactive expansive pressures be generated and all petroleum fuels, etc. replaced, but all cancerous decay can also be healed naturally, which would revolutionise medicine, i.e. put it back on the right track.

In a word, the naturalesque movement of any given medium and the atom lattice it contains, signifies a social reconstruction in every sense, because all slave-labour will cease with the restoration of natural abundance and freedom of movement. Everyone will be free and independent, and healthy once more in mind and body. This will happen for the sole reason that any given atom lattice - like the body of a dead animal or plant - can be transformed and built up with the aid of venal-motion, whereupon the subtle physical energies - the so-called life-forces - then come into being, which through this revitalising process move our bodies originally (autonomously).

Precisely the same thing happens at a large scale if we transform and build up bacteriophagous threshold structures (minute molecular atom lattices of water or air) mechanically through venal-motion, and thereafter distribute these specifically densified higher-grade energy-concentrates where required by way of arterial-motion. This will reimburse the surrounding body or geosphere - the macro atom lattice - with life and restore its inner vibration. We have only to intensify this formative oscillating motion in order to stimulate the macro-climate or higher-grade potential out of which displacement, namely physical movement, reproduction and further development, arises as the biological sequel to a naturalesque motive impulse.

With this I place the lever or the fulcrum that lies beyond space and time in the hands of humanity, which will enable the normalisation of those evolutive processes whose normal motion has been dislocated and in this way the standard of living can be simply and fundamentally improved along the whole chain of development. Only when this is done can reconstruction

finally begin in a truly natural way.

In this regard all institutes for commodity studies and research are outdated and for this reason the Visamontana Biotechnical Research Institute Ltd<sup>7</sup> has been registered with the chamber of commerce.

It is in the close interest of those who play a leading role in government to enable this research institute to come into operation quickly, because all the preconditions now exist for implementing these formative atomic energies

<sup>7</sup> The name 'Schauberger' can be broken down into two concepts — "Schau" = look/see and "berger" = of the mountain. Hence the Latin-derived name Visa (look/see) + montana (mountain) = Visamontana. — Ed.

practically. This will put an end to the present world-wide shortages of raw materials, food, fuel and germinating substances, which had to happen because the workings of evolution were subverted and put into reverse gear through the reversal of the naturalesque motive impulse.

There can be no doubting what has been stated, because it is founded on indisputable practical results. It is contemporary science that erred and which, on the basis of various inventions, took the wrong evolutionary road. Science must now be shown another way by an outsider, and if not of its own free will, will be forced to do so by the mass of the people deprived of their most primitive rights to life.

To err is human. It would be inhuman, however, now to delay and arrest this fresh start for the sake of scientific prestige or other interests. For in the present situation the life of millions upon millions of people, already hungry and freezing, is at stake.

For this reason all this will be presented to the competent authorities and once more emphasised that the economy cannot move forward in reverse gear. Therefore everything must be switched around all along the line.

# 11.

## Machines of the Genus — Repulsine

### The Repulsine

From Implosion Magazine, No. 36, written in Vienna, 1944.

**W**hat is it? What is it for? What does science say about it? These three questions are asked repeatedly. They will therefore be answered first in general terms and then in more detail. The Repulsine is a germinal-matter generator with which humanity can once more be returned to Paradise and whence all wearers of mitre-boards, gowns, cassocks and cowls will have been expelled by fire and sword. Science and its berobed representatives would no longer be asked for their opinion and they will all be indicted regardless of whether they are knowingly or unknowingly guilty - questions they will have to decide for themselves. They will be accused of being accessories to the crime against the germinating force. Generally speaking, this relates to the suppression of the production of qualigen for the purpose of creating an artificial shortage of food; for fostering an increasing feeble-mindedness; for promoting a constant and thriving trade in foodstuffs; for ensuring that the sheep on this increasingly barren heath are not well paid by promulgating a belief that does not accord with the truth. The suppression of qualigen was therefore the precondition for the filthiest traffic there ever was, is or will be. In order to power its machines, today's science gives priority to an oxidising or metabolic process, wherein oxygen (atmospheric oxygen) - the natural stuff of breath - consumes the lower oxide or protoxide<sup>1</sup> (a type of metallic calc or calx<sup>2</sup>)

<sup>1</sup> Protoxide: The oxide of an element that contains the smallest amount of oxygen of any of its oxides. Collins English Dictionary. — Ed.

<sup>2</sup> Calx = calcined metal, the powdery oxide formed when an ore or mineral is roasted, or another name for calcium oxide. Calcined = to heat a substance so that it is oxidised, reduced or loses water.; to oxidise as a result of heating Metallic = of a metal element existing in the free state, rather than in combination. Collins English Dictionary. - Ed.

which contains valuable growth-factors and which is a geospheric formative substance.

This interchange of substance (metabolism,) is referred to as the 'normal' combustion process and people are of the mistaken opinion, that it gives rise to those carrying, shifting and orienting forces that move and animate our bodies. This 'normal' process of combustion, whose dynamic product Nature uses to break down, decompose and eliminate the evolutionally unfit, is triggered in such a way that at about +40°C (+104°F), through the application of heat or fire, the oxygen becomes aggressive and belligerent. If it is heated further, then it becomes even freer and more dangerous, leading to the decomposition of blood, water and sap. At this point all life-functions of whatever kind cease in all growing, living and autonomously moving things.

The reason for this is the growing inactivity of the protoxide, which becomes less and less active as the above-normal temperature rises. The end-product of this immobilising process is annihilating fire. The dynamic product of this metabolic process is an increase in the 'normal' rising, expanding, and braking form of heat. This heat-form is alone responsible for the decomposition and elimination of the genetically and physically unsound as well as everything else that has failed to contribute to the progress of evolution.

The antithesis of this growth-inhibiting form of heat is a falling and concentrating heat-form, which gives life to all those things destined to vegetate, reproduce and separate. It ensures growth and improves the condition of raw materials. The purpose of these cold or cooling substances is to separate the low-grade from the high-grade in the higher realms of evolution and to transmute the latter into that, which the mysterious life- and motive-force gives to all living things. This 'higher inward fall' or 'supra-cadence'<sup>3</sup> has as yet no name. It is an energy-form active in everything, in human beings, in animals and plants as well as in water, air and every organic structure. It accords them physical and spiritual growth, reproduction and upward evolvment and the increase in the quantity of raw materials and their ennoblement.

This organic product of synthesis was hitherto unknown. For this reason it is so named, because it endows all living things with the power to raise themselves up autonomously. It has remained unknown, because the form of motion was not perceived through which everything comes into being that we are able to see or become aware of all around us. This special form of motion will be called 'cycloid motion'. Blood makes use of it in the blood vessels, salts make use of it in plants and natural, untouched rivers avail themselves of it as they flow through the countryside. It is the ur-origin of the fount of qualigen. It is both cause and criterion of all emergent life. It is the living and moving 'connecting link', which weaves the mother-tissues in the womb of the Earth, as Goethe described the performance of this functional entity.

<sup>3</sup> An inward and upward fall into a higher realm of manifestation, either energetic or quasi-material. - Ed.

This energy-form will be consumed, however, if a river is warmed and its water becomes stale and energetically depleted. In this condition dangerous bacterial life, the seeds of decay, arise from bacteriophagous<sup>4</sup> threshold matter, which serve both degeneration and decomposition. On the other hand, if the 'normal' metabolic process is inverted, then the opposite dynamic product comes into being with the aid of 'cycloid motion'. It is the initiator of health, which serves a higher form of development. It is the primal activator that Leonardo da Vinci called 'il primo motore'. It is vitalising force that Paracelsus named the 'life-elixir'; in short, it is the secret of all life and movement to which everything on Earth owes its life and mobility.

Therefore every living thing and all that moves and has its being of its own free will, owes its very existence to this 'cycloid motion'. If it tires and wanes, then physical life comes to an end. Once ended, the period of metaphysical development, the unfolding of the evolutionally older life<sup>5</sup>, the build-up of qualigen or the formation of 'higher influences' begins.

Science and technology scorn and scoff at anyone closely connected to Nature, who does something differently and more correctly and in so doing, reverses the metabolic process so harmful to growth. Quite logically therefore such individuals create the product of synthesis that promotes the build-up of qualigen. Today's science has no inkling that the formative fructigens react to centrifugence and that the seminal substances required for the development of more highly evolved products, react to centripetence. With the aid of cycloid motion and its analysing function, the smothered (de-animated) fructigen is separated from the animating oxygen (for in cycloid motion centripetence and centrifugence operate simultaneously). Science likewise has no idea that 'higher temperature influences' are able to change the characteristic inner properties completely (inversion of charge or potential) and reverse the polarities. In this connection it is to be noted that the formative fructigens become highly active and the debilitated oxygen inactive, due to the simultaneous action of catalytic and oligodynamic factors. With the simultaneous precipitating out of the erstwhile carrier-substance, the opposite product of synthesis comes into existence. It is quality itself in *statu nascendi* - the procreative embryo. This now consumes the counterweighing resistance to weightlessness and in this way develops into the primordial, formative force or the true stuff of levitation. Against this there is no gravity, i.e. everything will be carried aloft with elemental *ur-force*. Those scientists and technologists, who inaugurate the reversed metabolic process, therefore create the annihilating energy-form by the sweat of their brows. In contrast, the bio-ecotechnologist activates the naturalesque metabolic process and generates the life- and motion-promoting counterforce.

<sup>4</sup> Bacteriophagous: see footnote 9, p. 14 -Ed.

<sup>5</sup> Here is meant those entities or systems which exist at a later stage of evolution chronologically. — Ed.



In order to propagate this embryo of levitational matter mechanically, a ridiculously small amount of power is required - about 1/4 hp. Although there are very minor fluctuations, this impulsive and propulsive force always remains constant. As the motive force increases, more and more seminal substances (motion-impeding substances) are generated, whose polarity has been reversed in the process. In consequence the counter-active resistance they would otherwise offer is neutralised.

This diametrically opposed metabolic process or reversal of polarity is conditional on the inactivity of the oxygen and the highly active state of the protoxide. It is achieved through the effects of reactive temperatures, or more accurately, through the action of falling and concentrating heat and rising and expanding cold. The more intense the effect of these 'higher' influences, the more inactive the oxygen and the more aggressive and ravening the protoxide becomes.

The crucial factor in the mechanical propagation of formative embryos is the naturalesque conversion of normal temperatures, whose effects are opposite in nature, into reactive functions. The exploitation of this discovery will completely revolutionise economic activity. It is therefore the machine, which makes the creation of these embryos of qualigen possible by reversing the polarities and functions of the component forces. It is the organ that provides the growth-promoting metabolic process in the organic raw material required for development.

If this concept is taken to its logical conclusion and these mechanically produced, formative embryos are combined with the various media of water, earth, sap and air, then the resultant productivity is truly staggering. From this moment on, everything into which qualigen has been incorporated, starts to reproduce itself and upwardly evolve. It begins to multiply itself qualitatively and to improve itself qualitatively. Logically therefore, the physical and mental condition of all humanity will also be raised indirectly and the standard of living rapidly improved, because the beneficial effects of incorporating additional levitative material into the various foodstuffs in this way, will be transferred to the human consumer. As if touched by a magic wand, even metals, minerals and the organisms of water and air, etc. will begin to flourish, to grow and to ennoble themselves. This is no fairytale, but experimentally proven fact and will change all contemporary economic, social and cultural conditions. In this regard one aspect requires special emphasis: The belief in the unity of mind, body and soul is here confirmed from a completely new quarter.

It is equally important to realise, however, that the suppression of the production of quality matter was no accident, but the result of a shrewd assessment by those who guide our thinking and saw in it the only possible means of dominating the 'common' people. Thus is also becomes understandable,

why people are always so suspicious and so antipathetic towards everything new. But here we are concerned with the whole and naturally it will be said that the whole thing is too improbable to be true. It sounded equally improbable to those contemporaries of Goethe, however, when he asserted that people would one day be able to fly. Now and for the first time they can really do so. Indeed, in the near future what we today call 'flying' will only provoke roars of laughter.

## The Suction Turbine

Viktor Schauberger, April 1958, *Implosion Magazine*, No.114, pp 54-57

The abundance-producing water wheel, which functions using centrifugal pressure, principally consists of a double membrane (see plan and cross-section in fig. 30), which rotates anti-clockwise about a vertical axis with the aid of a low-power drive motor.

The so-called whorl-pipe is wound around the vertical shaft centred on this axis. Viewed from below, the whorl-pipe rotates in a clockwise direction and without any resistance, sucks up the centripetally compressed drive-water.

The faster the drive motor propels the water (which is orbiting about and rotating within itself) through the double-membrane, the greater the quantity of water scooped up by the intake at the lower end of the whorl-pipe, which swirls inwards and upwards in a clockwise direction only to be centrifugated outwards and downwards in rhythmically alternating horizontal and vertical curves, and then centripetated inwindingly again in systems of nozzles. That is to say: Continuous (= one-sided) rotation has a braking effect.

Therefore: Ascent of the water in the whorl-pipe clockwise. This is followed by the swirling expulsion of the water in the double-membrane right out to

the egg-shaped nozzle opening<sup>6</sup> in which, under enormous centrifugal pressure, the drive-water is once again moved centripetally. It then flows at a very high exit velocity into the lower hermetically sealed pressure chamber, which, under hydraulic excess pressure, then impels the water originally drawn up

by the suction whorl-pipe back towards the whorl-pipe intake.<sup>7</sup>

This means: The suctional force must be and so remain the predominant force throughout the whole sequence of motion. The pressure components,

<sup>6</sup> Egg-shaped nozzle opening; This may refer to the egg-shaped cavities above and below the exit nozzles, at the right and left hand sides of the section shown in fig. 32, which actually form a double dough-nut or double toroid pressure-chamber around the periphery of the device. On the other hand, the nozzles may also have the profile of the pipe described in the following patents: Austria: No. 196680 —1951, Portugal: No. 29,729 — 1953, France : No. 1.057.576 —1953, Brazil: No. 43,431 —1953 on p. 107 or the nozzles shown in fig. 29.- Ed.

<sup>7</sup> Although not shown, this infers the presence of an egg-shaped enclosing vessel. — Ed.

which exert the more subordinate pressure, must never act in a purely vertical direction, but always tangentially and at an angle of about  $32^\circ$ . And for this reason: A cycloid-spiral-space-curve is always produced so that the moved mass inwinds from the periphery towards the centre in such a way that the centre of gravity of the unequally heavy (bipolar) masses (i.e. the oxygen - atomic weight 16) is displaced into the centre of the axis<sup>8</sup>. Here the oxygen is cooled (falling [positive] temperature-gradient) and in this condition is encircled and bound (emulsified = consumed and digested) by the hydrogen of opposite polarity, which actually has an upward velocity of about 2 m/sec.

The product of this emulsive process (the ur-procreative act) is diamagnetism. Functioning as levitational force (autonomous resurrective energy), it raises naturalesquely moved water to the highest mountain peaks (viz. true high-mountain springs). The movement of blood and sap is equally the product of the above emulsion = the inner combination (marriage) of opposing bipolar basic substances in order to re-create a unity (individuality) comprised of opposites.

Today's technology operates exclusively with excess pressure and disregards the developmentally important suctional components. What is achieved, therefore, is an increase in pressure, friction and heat. These result in the reversed emulsive effects, which in turn produce predominantly dielectric forms of flow-motion. Since heat is the lowest form of electricity and electricity decomposes water, sap and blood, retrogressive development (= cancer) must ensue all down the line.

Whereas excess pressure oppresses all growth, under-pressure (slight suction or vacuum) - the upwardly impelling diamagnetic force - fosters it.

The faster the double-membrane's drive-motor rotates, the more drive-water is uptaken and the higher the centripetal compression becomes, which then discharges through the pressure nozzles. This intensifies the rotary force in the opposite direction, which must be braked with a dynamo (electric current generator) in order to prevent the rupture of the suction turbine and its disintegration due to constantly increasing centrifugal pressure.

The centripetal compression in the nozzles is regulated by the rate of rotation of the drive-motor. Acting together the two magnitudes of compression and rotation determine the overall power output which, produced by the nozzle pressure, acts in the opposite direction to that of the discharge. This once again provokes hydraulic excess pressure in the hermetically sealed pressure-chamber, which then reinforces the volume of water sucked up by the whorl-pipe.

Since in this rhythmical reciprocity between centrifugal pressure and centripetal suction - therefore through reactive forces - the power increase by

<sup>8</sup> This action is akin to the way that a top or an egg will stand up and spin about the longitudinal axis on its point if spun on its side, or like the weight compensating gyration of a washing machine in the spin-dry phase. — Ed.

the square of the rotational velocity, should the dynamo is suddenly be relieved of its load, provision must be made for regulating the suction turbine by throttling the water supply.

The suction turbine is the first machine that operates with reciprocally interactive reactive forces.

The immensity of the forces released through a properly constructed and precisely calculated suction turbine is attested by the well-known equation for centrifugal force.

If 1 litre (0.264 gal) = 1 kg (2.2 lbs) of water is centrifugated at 10,000 rpm at a radius of 10 cm (4 in.) and suddenly centripetated in the compression nozzles (see sketch - fig. 29), then at a discharge velocity of about 40 m/sec (130 ft / sec), which corresponds to a geological head of pressure of about 400 metres (1,312 ft), repulsive forces are freed, which are equivalent to an increase in pressure of 57,000 kg (125,400 lbs).

This solves the great problem of energy supply simply and cheaply, and what is more, naturalesquely.

What is and remains remarkable is that no-one understands how to transform the cheapest and most powerful reactive force - centrifugal force - into centripetal force (a reactive suctional force), through which the resistance to motion in all today's machines can be transformed into additional power. That is, instead of an efficiency of roughly 10% -12% as has been the case thus far, an efficiency of up 96% can be exploited.

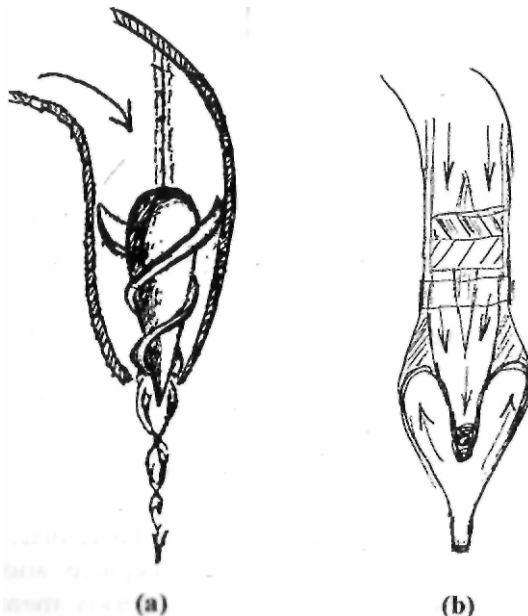


Fig. 29: Sketches of nozzles

## Elaborations on the Suction Turbine

Sherman, Texas, 25th August 1958, Implosion Magazine, No. 114, pp 57-60.

For decades medical science has sought the so-called 'life-curve' in which the two reciprocally interactive component forces of suction and pressure intersect one another in such a way that at the point of intersection an energetic interplay of different emulsions takes place. Pressure- and fire-technology produces and exploits the rising (negative) temperature gradient exclusively and consequently creates excessively strong repulsive forces, which logically act to inhibit development.

While it is true that the falling temperature gradient is known to science, up to now it has not been in a position to activate it. Science has therefore had to put up with braking reactive forces, which become free and active when the medium of water or air is moved along straight paths by physical excess pressures of whatever kind (gradient or pressure-pump). The same also applies to rotary motion, where meanders and sinuosities are absent and in which over-strong frictional, thermal and expansive forces become active. By way of products of reversed emulsions they enforce the emergence of exceptionally decomposive energies. The resistance to motion, the result of an unnatural increase in velocity which rises by the square, is the biological consequence of an unnatural and therefore false type of motion. This is particularly true in the case of all contemporary turbines, which centrifugate the driving medium - water. Moreover; science uses paramagnetic material (steel, etc.), which with an increase in heat (heat is the lowest form of electricity) gives birth to additional decomposive energy (electricity).

As a result of this finding experiments were also made to rotate water in meander-forms made of diamagnetic material (copper, bronze, etc.). Even diamagnetic wood can be used. Out of these experiments arose the double-membrane, which with increasing radius automatically increases the flow-through velocity, if the angle of the alternately disposed slip-surfaces is flattened out towards the periphery.

Fig. 30 (Diagram 1) depicts such a double-membrane (a rotating meander) in which the water is partly sucked, partly propelled upwards by means of a counter-rotating whorl-pipe (= cycloid-space-spiral). The water is then evenly dispersed in the opposite direction, rotated within and about its own axis and in this way the centre of gravity of the flow-through material is displaced towards the centre of the axis.

Here there are two possibilities for increasing the exit velocity relative to the intake velocity as desired and to raise its carrying capacity and tractive force at the same time through specific densation. As already mentioned earlier, this naturally presupposes an improvement quality.

Either an inwinding water movement, therefore the centripetence of the draining water will be achieved with appropriately designed spiral-forms that make use of an existing geological gradient, or the suction-turbine will be rotated by the drive-motor while still empty and once the desired rpm have been reached, the drive-water will then be introduced and sucked from inside towards the periphery with increasing velocity. A suction that extends backwards is thus created, which is produced by the faster outward moving, specifically densifying plug of water. This exits at a velocity, which can be regulated as desired and activates a recoil, which in kinetic terms is the same as the exit velocity.

In order to move air above its boundary velocity, which under a falling (positive) temperature gradient results in its retro-formation into a watery substance, special spiral-helical shapes must be used in order to achieve the same effect described earlier. This spiral-helical form is like a hollow propeller, which once again partly sucks in and partly impresses the surrounding air masses. Here again, the suction components must predominate in order to prevent any pressure and heat stresses. In this manner biologically-correct emulsions occur, whose products are diamagnetically supercharged energies, which levitate and draw up their generating device in their wake (viz. the behaviour of the trout, which cannot be explained mechanically, but only atomically). To emphasise the point once more: Everything is reversible in Nature and hence there are also atomic energies that are not life-destroying, but life-creating. The latter cannot be produced in a cyclotron and so atomic physicists must also be taught that two different things happen, depending on whether a medium, to which ultimately the primary building blocks of Nature - the atoms - belong, is initially subjected to pressure or sucked up to a higher valency.

The attached sketch-diagram is actually extremely primitive. It is enough, however, to enable a halfway naturalistic viewer to get an inkling of what serious and fateful errors are being made by today's atomic experts, for apparently not one of them has ever considered what 'motion' actually is and what biological role it plays. Namely, that death and life depend on the way a medial structure or entity moves and thus vast differences exist between atomic destruction and atomic transformation, for an incorrect motion begets the embryos of death. It is, and was always so, that he who makes a mistake fails to see it, whereas to an outsider, or to a 'layman' as is so often said, it immediately springs to the eye. For a sharp-eyed observer of Nature it is simply incomprehensible that science does not recognise the interconnections that exist between forest and water; that through the disturbance of this bipolarity the differences in potential between the negatively charged geosphere and the positively supercharged atmosphere diminish, causing the groundwater table to sink and the high-grade mountain springs to dry up as a result.

If water is recharged with geospherical energies, then it begins to rise again autonomously and supplies all the vegetation, including man and beast, with aetheric nutritive substances. This happens through the agency of the protoplasm present on every root-tip, which permit the entry of only the most valuable substances, after which the interaction with the diffuse atmospheric oxygen takes place. The end-product of this emulsive process is juvenile-water - demonstrable experimentally - and by extension the formation of blood and sap, if a falling (positive) temperature gradient predominates during this transformative process. However, if a rising (negative) temperature gradient prevails, then fever results, and the decomposition of water, blood and sap is the biological and therefore obvious consequence. By now it will also be apparent to any halfway rational thinker, what deadly perils lurk in the pressure- and heat-intensifying movement of air or water, in the over-warming or over-illumination of organisms of all kinds and why in machines, which trigger a rising temperature gradient, the resistance to motion must increase by the square of the velocity due to cumulative blocking pressures.

For this reason all today's expansion-explosion machines, pressure turbines, etc. destroy life and must be replaced by implosive devices and apparatuses if all humanity is not to perish unconditionally through the mass-murder of every prerequisite for life of whatever kind. For whoever disturbs Nature's household is irretrievably lost.

## Un-Natural Motion - Embryonic Death

Sherman, Texas, USA, 23rd/24th August 1958 (Schauberger Archives).

Suction Turbine:

The essential difference between suction and pressure turbines is as follows:

- (a) The rotation of pressure turbines is induced by the pressure of falling water,
- (b) The rotation of suction turbines is initiated by an auxiliary motor.

In the suction-turbine, the drive-water is introduced once the rotational velocity has been reached sufficient to meet the desired power requirement. Conducted centripetally, this water screws upwards all the more rapidly, the faster the suction-turbine rotates.

The upwardly screwed drive-water is then passed through a double membrane and moved in such a way as to rotate in an anticlockwise direction while simultaneously rotating about its own axis (i.e. about and within itself orbitally and axially), its velocity increasing towards the periphery.

This motion between membranes can be likened to the path of a skier, who transfers his body-weight rhythmically from one foot to the other during his descent, thereby augmenting the speed of descent. The faster the alternation in the displacement of body-weight, the faster the rate of travel (see fig. 36).

The same thing takes place in the suction-turbine, whereby in the course of the above inwinding and by way of almost frictionless motion and acceleration, the drive-water becomes specifically denser as it approaches its anomaly point - 'the biological zero-point'. Now in an almost homogenous condition owing to this particular form of motion, this water is subsequently collected and accumulated in an annular pressure zone (see fig. 33e).

A ring of jet-nozzles is incorporated around the periphery of this pressure ring in which pressures arise, whose intensity increases as the machine is rotated by the auxiliary motor (impulse motor). The apertures of these jet-nozzles must be of small enough size to permit the release of the accumulated excess pressure only. The exiting high velocity 'jet-water' then impacts with high pressure onto a system of specially constructed blades (these have a certain similarity to the blade-system of a Pelton wheel). In contrast to those of the Pelton wheel, however, these are arranged in inverted form and in wreath-like manner.

Once again in a manner akin to the Pelton wheel, the water is expressed laterally virtually free of pressure, and further accelerated by means of a rotating egg-shaped form due to the fact that in this form the radius increases towards the base. This newly accelerated water is then inwound once more, becoming specifically denser in the process, and at high velocity enters an hermetically sealed, but stationary pressure-chamber from the periphery (tangentially). In so doing a hydraulic excess pressure is created, which discharges towards the lower suction whorl-pipe opening - once again in the opposite direction -, the upward angle of which is engineered in such a way that the above excess pressure also remains constant. In other words no more water can be screwed upwards than is desired and because of this a constant rotational velocity is achieved.

If the above rotational velocity is increased by means of the impulse motor, then the quantity of upwardly screwed water also increases, whose naturally induced excess pressure increases by the square in contrast to artificially

created pressures using conventional means. In this case the output increases analogously, but without any excessive demand for more material (fuel), for due to the increasing centripetence of the drive-water, the centrifugal pressure also increases commensurately.

The drive-water, which frees itself from the conducting wall-surfaces during flow - see Prof. Popel's expert opinion<sup>9</sup> - descends almost without friction as a result and, because it seeks a straight passage between the meander-like

<sup>9</sup>This appears on p. 219 of this book. - Ed.



membranes, is impelled by a succession of thrusting, rotational impulses and exits at the closely-spaced wreath of turbine blades (see figs. 33d & 33e<sup>10</sup>)

When the drive-water enters the hermetically sealed pressure-chamber, an atomic retro-pulsive force is additionally created, which is equal in magnitude to the velocity of the exiting water above, because the levitational force mentioned in the previous chapter, discharges in the same anticlockwise direction as the rotating machine. Here too the same counterforce appears, which maintains the steadiness of flow over constantly varying gradients characteristic of naturally regulated riverwaters.

This effect is wholly unknown to conventional science and hence the above motive principle is likewise as good as incomprehensible to any pressure- and fire-engineer, who hitherto has been incapable of triggering the 'falling heat-gradient'. Through the agency of this gradient water can be specifically densified by being inwound in cycloid-spiral-space-curves - like the movement of blood and sap, and in this way can be accelerated to any desired velocity without the need to make allowance for the effect of centrifugal braking pressures,

In this regard it is to be noted that the movement of blood and sap is not the result of hydraulic pressure (the supposed pumping action of the heart), but is caused to move orbitally, axially and predominantly centripetally due to the evolution of potential differences. In emulation of this, the suction turbine therefore faithfully copies the original, natural circulation of blood and sap.

The pressure- and fire-technologist generates kinetic energy by expansive and explosive means exclusively. In contrast, the bio-ecotechnologist does this by indirect means - and in this lies the crucial difference between natural and unnatural and therefore false methods of acceleration. Today's technologist achieves an increase in resistance to motion that rises by the square, whereas the bio-ecotechnologist achieves a reactive effect, which is evolution-promoting, virtually cost-free and increasable at will to any desired intensity.

More precise details can only be explained with the aid of an actual model. These clarifications and supplementary information will be given to the atomic scientists, Chief Engineer, Eric. A. Boerner and my contract partner Mr. Robert Dormer of Colorado Springs at the meeting in Sherman in 14 days' time (this date was set for me by Mr Robert Dormer's representative, Herrn Karl Gerchsheimer). I will make every effort to answer all their various questions clearly with the aid of the above model, so that I can return to my homeland, because my health is suffering greatly from this torrid climate, as has been proven by events of the last weeks, and the doctors too do not recommend any extended stay.

Incidentally it should also be noted here, that the ennoblement of water takes place according to the very same principle. The precision technician, Mr.

<sup>10</sup>See also fig. 21.11, p. 291 In *Living Energies* by Callum Coats and published by Gateway Books 1996.

Renner, who is soon to come here, has constructed several working water-enobling devices. This task Renner will henceforth be able to carry out on his own.

The suction-turbine principle is described in the accompanying sketch. My comment here is that this principle will have to be adapted to every type of machine and each must be treated and built on an individual basis.

Please note that the carrying capacity, increase in tractive force and the amelioration in quality of mixtures of solid, liquid and gaseous or aeriform substances, which carry bipolar charges, are only possible with the aid of the 'falling heat-gradient', i.e. with the form of motion that causes the substance to approach the anomaly point (+4°C - +39.2°F). An understanding of how to trigger these high-grade emulsions is a prerequisite for building a purposeful and evolution-furthering power-producing machine, which corresponds to the primordial life-motor.

## Application for Patent No. 146 141

Viktor Schauburger at Wien-Hadersdorf, Austria, 4th March 1940.

### Processes and Equipment for the Atomic Transformation of Droppable Liquids or Gaseous Substances.

It is known that atomic transformation has been carried out by way of atomic destruction without having achieved any useful economic or commercial results in the process. It is also known that dissociation and recombination, therefore the rearrangement of the atoms, can be effected in the substrate with the aid of catalytic processes. In this regard it has been observed that these processes take place in a characteristic cycle or oscillating rhythm until a new state of equilibrium is established.

The process for the atomic transformation of liquid or gaseous bodies associated with this invention takes this rhythmical tendency during the course of such processes into account from the very beginning. Namely, in accordance with the invention, the aforesaid substances will be subjected to an increasingly rapid flow-motion, during which these substances will be exposed to alternating strong suctional and pressural forces, which results in significant changes to their surface tension.

Furthermore, this invention also makes use of the fact that the presence of certain substances, especially metals such as copper, silver or gold, for example, or those substances collectively termed synthetic resins (plastics), which are decisive for the progress of the vital functions in liquids or gases (air) and whose effect can in part be described as oligodynamic.

Therefore if the said course of motion of the substances to be dissociated is also allowed to proceed oligodynamically, then the severing of the atom it-bonds can be successfully achieved to a large extent and considerable energies freed. These freed energies can readily be brought into new combinations, such as for the further development of the atoms of primary gaseous substances into liquid or even solid formations, or these energies may be drawn off or diverted in some other way.

An example of the device for implementing this process is depicted on the drawing. Diagram 1 shows a section taken through a - b on the top view, Diagram 2 (see figs. 30 & 31). Two circular sheet-metal plates (1 & 2) made of silver-plated or amalgamated copper are press-formed in such a way that they are endowed with a waviform shape and are superimposed on one another in such a way as to create a waviform interstitial space (3). Both plates are maintained at a distance from one another by already known methods. The lower plate (2) is attached to the backing plates (4 & 5), which are insulated from one another by a hard-rubber plate (6). On the upper plate (1) two (three or more) cover-plates are mounted in such a way that they initially rest on the wave-crests of such plate before gradually tapering downwards into the wave-troughs. In this way the narrowing pressure-chambers (8) are formed, whose longitudinal axes run parallel to the circumference. On the inner inclined surfaces of the upper plate (2), narrow slits (9) are incised. The central component (10) incorporates a spacer-ring (22). Spacer-rings incorporating nozzles can be provided in the interstitial space (3). Furthermore, the hollow shaft (22) opens into the cup-shaped component (23), whose inner surface is advantageously fluted, and which has exit openings (24) into the interstitial space (3).

If the device is caused to rotate rapidly in the direction of the arrow (see Diagram 2), then the liquid or gaseous substances entering the pressure-chambers (8) at (25) will be impressed downwards and sideways through the slits (9) into the interstitial space (3), in which a considerable suction evolves, so that the space (3) acts as a suction-chamber.

The whole device therefore represents a kind of multi-stage centrifuge, each concentric wave being regarded as a stage. It can readily be understood that the liquid or gaseous substance present in the pressure-chamber (8), having been subjected to strong pressural forces here, immediately passes through the slits (9) in the pressure-chamber walls and partially expands.

At an appropriate rate of rotation a maximum pressure will be reached, under which a bio-electrical energy evolves, with whose aid the primary combinations of the through-flowing liquid or gaseous substances will split up, whereupon these freed energies can be synthesised into any desired form or be drawn off.

As material for the two plates (1 & 2), silver-plated or amalgamated gold, or synthetic resins (plastics) can be used. If synthetic resin is used and seawater,

for example, is impelled through the suction-chamber (3) an insipid fresh water is obtained as a result of this process.

The arrangement can be so designed that like upper plate (1), the lower plate (2) can also be provided with cover-plates (7), so that the pressure-chambers (8) lie on both sides of the suction-space (3). (see fig. 32)

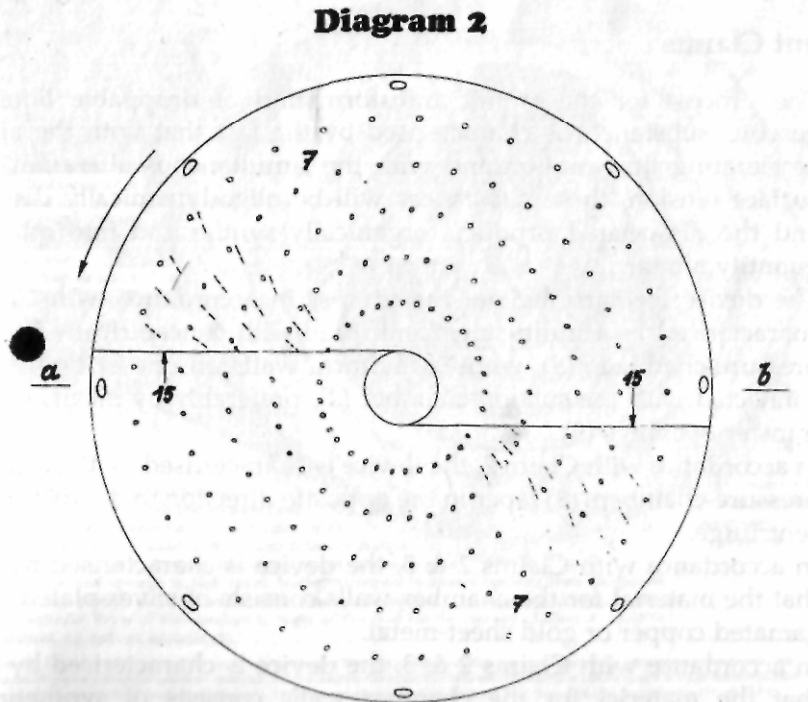
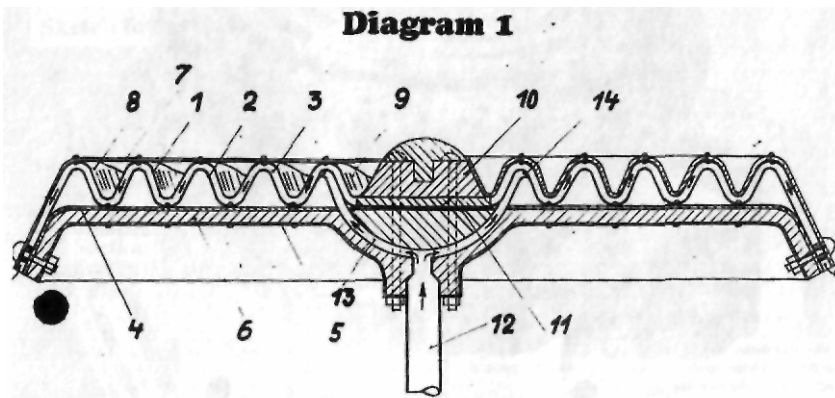


Fig. 30: Repulsine patent No. 146 141

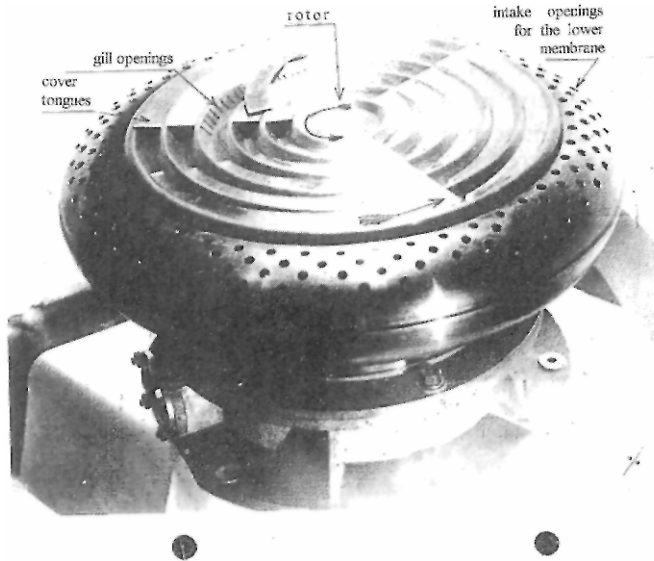


Fig. 31: Repulsine patent

### Patent Claims

1. The process for the atomic transformation of droppable liquids and gaseous substances is characterised by the fact that with the aid of an accelerating flow-motion and with the simultaneous alteration of their surface tension, these substances will be oligodynamically dissociated, and the dissociated products organically synthesised into quality and quantity matter.
2. The device for carrying out the process in accordance with Claim 1 is characterised as a multi-stage centrifuge with concentrically juxtaposed pressure-chambers (8), whose waviform walls on one or both sides are connected with the suction-chamber (3), preferably by means of slit-like transfer openings (9).
3. In accordance with Claim 2, the device is characterised by the fact that the pressure-chambers (8) taper in the opposite direction to the rotation of the centrifuge.
4. In accordance with Claims 2 & 3, the device is characterised by the fact that the material for the chamber walls consists of silver-plated or amalgamated copper or gold sheet-metal.
5. In accordance with Claims 2 & 3, the device is characterised by the fact that the material for the chamber walls consists of synthetic resins (plastics) or partly from synthetic resins and partly from silver-plated or amalgamated copper or gold sheet-metal.

6. In accordance with Claims 2-5, the device is characterised by the fact that the suction-chamber (3) is connected to a supply pipe (12) for the supply of solid, liquid or gaseous ingredients, preferably located on the axis of rotation.

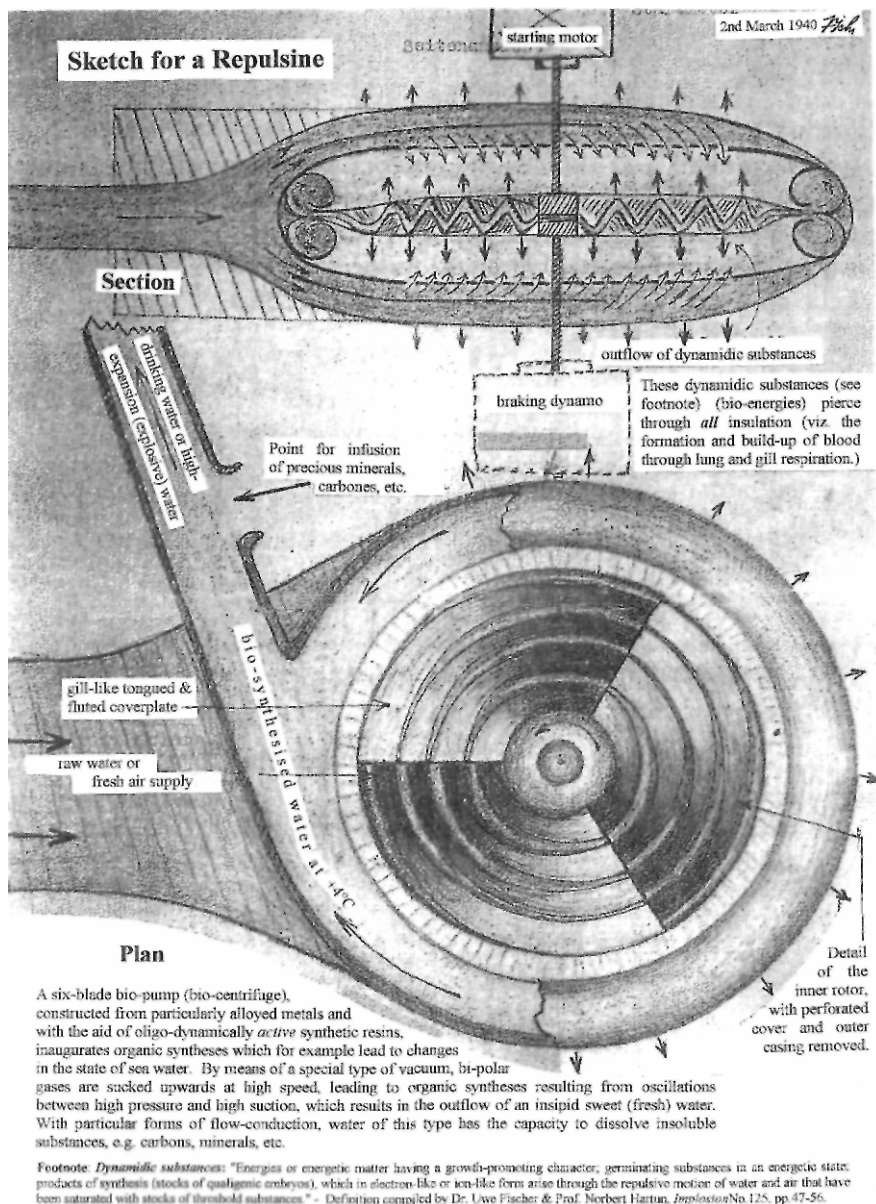


Fig. 32: Repulsine patent double membrane

Viktor Schauberger's accompanying letter:

To the Reichs Patent Office  
Gitschinerstrasse 97-101,  
Berlin S.W. 61.  
1st March 1940

I, Viktor Schauberger, of Herzmanskystrasse 1 in the town of Wien-Hadersdorf, do hereby apply for patents for the invention described in the enclosed documents and request that I be granted a patent for the same.

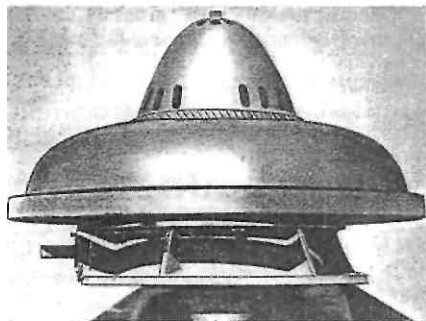
Description: "Processes and equipment for the atomic transformation of droppable liquids and gaseous substances".

The sum of 25 Reichsmarks in regard to the costs of processing will immediately be paid to the cashier at the Reichs Patent Office.

Enclosed please find:

1. a carbon copy of this application,
2. two identical descriptions, each with six patent claims,
3. a drawing in duplicate (printed and reference),
4. a confirmation of receipt and pre-paid return envelope.

Signed,  
Viktor Schauberger



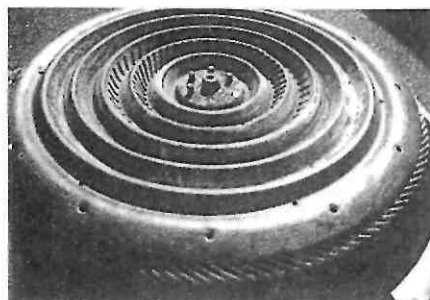
(a) Fully assembled machine on fixed cast metal base. Note power take-off shaft on left hand side of base.



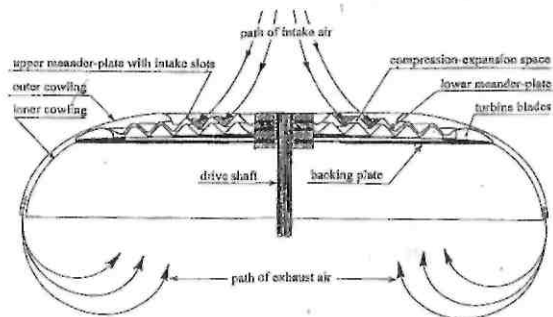
(c) Inner distributor cone removed to expose central portion of upper meander-plate.



(b) Machine with upper air-intake cone removed to show inner air-distributor cone.



(d) Outer cowling removed to show upper meander-plate with intake slots.



(e) Section through the machine.

### The Repulsine (The Final Model)

**Fig. 33**

Note: Permission to reproduce figs. 33c and 33d was kindly granted by Commander Richard C. Feierabend, USN (Ret).



## Last Letters from Viktor Schauberger

"I must furnish those, who would protect or save life, with an energy source, which produces energy so cheaply that nuclear fission will not only be uneconomical, but ridiculous. This is the task I have set myself in what little life I have left."

- Viktor Schauberger in a letter to Aloys Kokaly in 1953 - Implosion Magazine No. 29, p.22.

### Excerpt from Patent Letter to Munich Patent Office

From Implosion Magazine, No. 87, written in Linz, September 1955.

**B**y reason of research work carried out over more than 30 years, I can provide irrefutable proof that centrifugal acceleration triggers off decentrating, reactive forces. Through the hitherto unnoticed, instantaneous pole-reversal in the lower world of bipolar basic elements, decomposive forces evolve in the media of water and air. This results in the killing off of noble bacteria. In the dying water symptoms of decay appear and pathogenic bacteria come to life, leading to the development of cancer. For this reason the unreal systems of motion taught in all universities are the true cause of cancer. Plasmic disturbances occur, which for lack of adequate replenishment of qualigen, lead to the death of the cells, if metallic toxins form on the cell-membrane. This happens as a result of the accumulation of certain metal ions, to which the oligodynamic extermination of pathogenic bacteria by silver ions is also attributable. These do indeed disinfect the contaminated water, although further possibilities for re-infestation are not removed. On the contrary, if the causes are not correctly combatted biologically, then increasingly developmentally harmful parasites gradually propagate in the further degenerating water, resulting in its total contamination.

The same applies to chlorinated water, since in both cases processes of electrolytic decomposition occur. Georg Krause of Munich was able to control this

so accurately with his electro-catadyne process that the water thus treated was apparently purified bacterially and hence became potable drinking water. In reality, however, water thus treated is not immune to the toxic effects resulting from the formation of increasingly dangerous bacteria. As is the case with agriculture, these have to be combatted with even stronger poisonous sprays. However, if water or air is moved predominantly centripetally in specially constructed and alloyed suction-screw systems (my principal patent claim), then a negative ion concentration evolves of up to 90%, which emulsifies the attendant oxygen. This results in a drop in pressure and heat, due to the specific densation of the naturally moving, through-flowing material. In this case concentrative reactive forces are active. Their products become densified along the longitudinal axis and propagate in a predominantly vertical direction. On account of their enormous velocity, they draw up the device that produces them in their wake.

Seen from this point of view, the assertion by a nuclear physicist in the USSR is correct. He stated that all the available information in classical physics textbooks concerning the attraction of mass is a stupendous mistake, since there is no such thing as an attracting force or mass-attraction. With increasing distance from the Earth, the velocity of the self-purifying, emanating substances becomes so great that an atomic vacuum or vacuity is created behind them. As is known, this also develops behind a fast-moving vehicle and draws a closely-following motorcyclist along with it.

This forward and upward suction also evolves in naturally inwound water, to which the stationary trout owe their motionless stance in fast-flowing water. Even the uplifting of the trout in waterfalls is founded on this action of suction, if the falling water-masses flow naturalesquely and inwind. In all cyclones, typhoons and hurricanes forces are active, albeit hitherto unknown reactive forces, which are the causal agents of this catastrophic upward-wrenching effect. Conversely, every propeller (the archimedean pressure-screw) functions like a dynamo and because of this the mysterious air-crashes over particularly charged or potentiated areas of water and high-grade forests can be correctly understood for the first time, due to the fact that these areas send pressure-sensitive ions aloft.

When the bankers, who were financing conventional hydroelectric power stations and the manufacture of aircraft fitted with propellers or other forms of pressure screw, began to understand my fairly detailed explanations, it was no wonder that such financial institutions and their patent attorneys lost all interest in the granting of patent rights. As an old-age pensioner, I am not in a position to take up arms successfully against the whole scientific establishment. For this reason I have to remain silent, keeping the most pertinent and crucial details from the public until I have managed to find other financiers.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 1 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz, 25 /12 /1955

Many thanks for the two letters I found upon my return from the turbine works where my suction-turbine, which has already reached an advanced stage, is being built. Without these practical results, every attempt to return humanity to Nature would be a wasted effort.

The booklet 'Implosion instead of Explosion'<sup>1</sup> prompted the director of a major European turbine-works to ask me whether I would be prepared to receive his scientific adviser and to explain the essential nature of the naturalesque build-up of potential to him, which viewed biologically is the build-up of quality-matter. Shortly thereafter I was sent a book entitled Fundamental Principles of Potentisation Research. From this it was apparent that despite very expensive experiments in this complex matter, no-one had yet been able to arrive at a solution and even the information provided by the anthroposiphist L. Kolisko, based on Rudolf Steiner's instructions, was to no avail,

Apart from me, no one has yet succeeded in the resistance-free acceleration of medial masses by means of a falling thermal gradient. In the turbine-works, where my suction-turbine is being built, it was admitted that the effects of all contemporary pressure-turbine systems, which trigger a rise in the temperature of the through-flow material, become all the more dangerous, the more the supposed efficiency or output is increased.

With this it can be seen what is here involved, i.e. as follows: In order to heat up 1 litre (0.264 gal) or 1 kilogram (2.2 lbs) of water by 1°C (1.8°F) from +14°C to +15°C (+57.2°F - +59.0°F), 1 kilo-calorie = 5.4 horsepower is necessary. If for example, 1 m<sup>3</sup> (35.3 ft<sup>3</sup>) of steam = 1 kg (2.2 lbs), is cooled from about +90°C to +4°C (+194°F - 39.2°F) by moving it in a planetary system of curves, then 86 kcal/sec are freed, which provide additional power in the order of 466.4 hp / sec, discounting minor frictional losses.

With a diameter of 300 mm (1.0 ft) and at 1,000 rpm, a peripheral velocity of 50 m/sec (164 ft/sec) and hence a 50 m/sec exit velocity is produced in my suction-turbine, which corresponds to a geological head of pressure of 500 metres (1,640 ft).

At 1 litre (0.264 gal) of water/sec,  $QxH/100 = 5.4 \text{ hp/ sec}$  per nozzle and second,

where Q = quantity of heat and H = mechanical equivalent of heat. With 10 nozzles = 10 litres /sec (2.64 gal/sec), 54 hp / sec are produced, if these 10 litres (2.64 gal) of water are merely cooled by 1°C/sec (1.8°F/sec), for which only about 0.25 hp are required to provide the required impulse. In this suction-turbine any desired quantity of water can be cooled in a matter of seconds by

<sup>1</sup> Implosion statt Explosion, a book about Schauberger's theories, self-published by Leopold Brandstatter circa 1954. — Ed.

at least 10°C (18°F), say from +15°C (+59°F) down to +4°C (+39.2°F). In this way on average a drop in temperature is produced in the same order of magnitude as the rise in temperature in an ordinary vacuum cleaner, which is driven by archimedean pressure-propellers.

Using a radius of 50 cm (20 in) and a circumference of about 315 cm (126 in) for calculation, then already at 1,000 rpm an effective force is produced equivalent to that required to drive a modern express train. To accelerate it to 80 kph (50 mph), for which about 6,000 hp are required today, I only need about 3 hp/sec as an impulsive force. In my water or air suction-turbine neither air-resistance (sound barrier), nor a thermal barrier exists, because the forelying air-masses are sucked in at the speed of lightning and re-converted into water. The effective power therefore rises quite astronomically, if for example about 30,000 litres (1,059.44 ft<sup>3</sup>) of fore-lying air are screwed inwards in seconds and re-converted into about 30 litres (7.92 gal) of water. For all this about 3 hp are necessary.

By examining the relevant tables showing the reduction in volume that occurs with the conversion of air into water, one can get an idea of the magnitude of the negative pressure that evolves when about 30,000 litres (30 m<sup>3</sup> - 1,059.44 ft<sup>3</sup>) of air are re-converted into a homogenous water precipitate within seconds. If the reverse calculation is made, then it can be seen what force is needed to transform 30 litres (7.92 gal.) of water into a gaseous, aeriform state within seconds. In this regard, if the additional air-resistance encountered by a train at 80 kph (50 mph) is taken into account, then it can be seen how stupidly we deceive ourselves and uselessly squander a vast number of kilocalories to produce the requisite steam pressure to drive such a train at 80 kph (50 mph). With my system, however, only about 3-6 hp would be needed to transform air into water.

About a third of the 27 patents I have been applied for have been granted. The other countries have been assessing them for about 4 years, and will have to capitulate once I demonstrate the improved suction-turbine to them, for owing to their techno-academic education they simply cannot understand the differences. And the same also applies to you, since you too learnt precisely the opposite at school. You must therefore also be patient until you have seen how media of all kinds can be accelerated naturalesquely without resistance, wherein the resistance to motion produced by all technical machines is converted into additional power.

It would therefore serve no purpose were you to act against established science prematurely, because science will become ridiculous once the exact opposite has been proven. I therefore suggest that you continue to be patient for the short time that I require in order to place a fully functional suction-turbine on the lecture table at the next series of lectures to trained biocotechnologists.

At the moment I also have no time for any more detailed theoretical explanations, because work on the turbine, which is proceeding apace, demands my full attention. Very soon the moment awaited with much excitement will come, when turbine manufacturers will have been initiated to the point where they will reproach themselves for having made such a stupid mistake, namely for having produced a rising temperature-gradient in lieu of a falling one, and therefore recognise the self-deception that lies rooted in today's flawed teaching methods.

Please understand that it is for these reasons that I must decline any further theoretical explanations. I wish you a good New Year, which will bring the turning point that everyone has so anxiously awaited, because things simply cannot continue the way they have thus far. As a result there will no longer be any need to fight against those who so far believed they could build up a healthy economy or even a culture with the use of fire. Such a turning point I experienced during the days at the above turbine-works, when the director capitulated completely once he understood the difference between falling and rising temperature-gradients.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 2 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz, 15/6/1956

Thank you for your nice letter. That you haven't heard from me for a while was because I've been extremely busy with the construction of an improved home-power generator. (see fig. 34)

As a result of experiments with the first two models, possibilities for their improvement and simplification emerged which were quite surprising, which I will tell you about in more detail in the near future. This will be from Germany, where I am making more rapid progress, because there water scarcity is looming increasingly threateningly and therefore the authorities will be forced to make drastic changes. Indeed, in this whole sphere little can be done without compulsion.

Future home-power generators will use a falling (regenerating) thermal gradient entirely. Interestingly enough, in scientific circles nobody knows of the vast differences that exist between regenerating (refreshing, cooling), and rising and degenerating thermal gradients. By means of the latter, decent ruling reactive forces are activated from the true sediments which contain bipolar trace-elements. These act to decompose water. With the falling regenerative temperature-gradient, concentrating water-forming energies or emanations evolve.

This can be understood as follows: The mechanical equivalent of heat of 1 kcal = 427 kgm of work<sup>2</sup>. If 1 kcal is transformed into mechanical energy in 1 second with the aid of a falling thermal gradient, as normally occurs in the digestive tract, for example, then per kcal (= 1°C or 1.8°F) = reduction in temperature = drop in fever, about 5.7 hp in additional power or energy is made available.

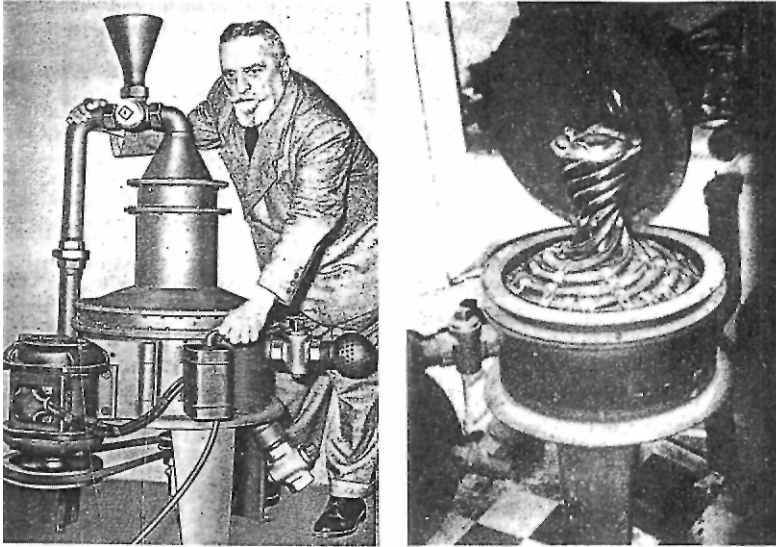


Fig. 34: Viktor Schauberger's home-power generator

Contemporary science makes exclusive use of rising thermal gradients. In this case atomic regressive impulses - or viewed mechanically - reactive forces of recoil or atomic braking forces evolve from the above sources of indifferent dynagen concentrates. Science therefore made two cardinal errors in motion:

1. It created atomic brake-forces with the reversed thermal gradient and
2. It produced reactive forces, which become all the more developmentally dangerous, the faster the rotational velocity of their technically contrived machines.

In my case the more the atomic formative, forward- and upwardly-propelling forces are stimulated by the increasing rotation of an implosion machine, the more the supplementary forces and development-enhancing energies become

<sup>2</sup> kgm: kilogramme-metre	(kgm)	[mechanical]	1 kWh = 367,700 kgm
kilowatt hours	(kWh)	[electrical]	1 kcal = 427kgm
kllocalories	(kcal)	[thermal]	1 kWh = 860 kcal

active. The factor that has been overlooked is the bipolarity - the potential differences - through which the original, causal motion or stimulus is triggered off.

If one now considers that today coal, oil, wood, pressure-turbines, etc., exploit the rising, degenerating thermal gradient and therefore unwittingly generate atomic decomposive forces from the above trace-elements, then it becomes quite evident that throughout the whole chain of evolution cancerous regression will gain sway. The true trace-elements function like fever-reducing medicines, if they are regenerated with the aid of a falling thermal gradient. However, if in any form of motion the rising, degenerating temperature-gradient prevails owing to the supremacy of centrifugence, (e.g. pressure-turbines, expansion and explosion machines), then the above concentrates of reduced matter act as a poison.<sup>3</sup> As this finding can be proven, the very foundation of modern science has been completely undermined, since from this point of view science is the true instigator of cancer.

You can imagine what effect this realisation had in Germany, the ever-alert land of the best technologists. Major industries sent their best specialists and experts, who were unconditionally forced to admit the tragic error, and to realise that techno-academic methods of motion must be immediately prohibited by law, otherwise no recovery is possible. For if the last remnants of water are decomposed due to the effect of degenerative reactive forces, then the consequences are truly unforeseeable.

Recently the Daily Sketch reported that the first English atomic powerstation had to be shut down because of an impending lack of water. Similar reports have come from America, where whole areas are drying out and dust-storms are transforming thousands of farms into wasteland.

For the first time it is now being realised that the practical implementation of Einstein's atomic energies for peaceful purposes is even more dangerous than the enormous consumption of water for today's industrial purposes. And now, as the best hope for a recovery, the League for Human Rights is going to champion my all-revolutionising discovery of how to generate a falling, regenerating thermal gradient. To aid in this recovery, regenerated carbonic acid - the best mountain springwater - can be produced in exactly the same way that it happens in Nature, provided the thermal gradient is present that builds up the concentrating reactive forces prevailing in naturally conserved forests.

A properly constructed and alloyed implosion-machine develops regenerative atomic energies from the indifferent concentrates of dynagen. In the process of producing these, the animating qualigens of 4th- and 5th-dimensinal dynagen can no longer remain inactive and powerful dynamos must be attached in order to produce the electrical resistances. This is the best way to

<sup>3</sup> See "Cadaverine Poison in Ray-Form (Ptomaine Radiation) on p. 28 of this book. — Ed.

prevent such an implosion-machine from running out of control, and in this way the demand for atomic levitational factors can be regulated, which provide the energies that sustain growth. Through my invention the problem of more and more people, less and less and worse and worse food can be naturally and finally solved, if things are merely done in the opposite way to what is presently taught and learnt in all academies, universities and technical colleges.

My new implosion machines produce an almost nine-fold increase in power in comparison to today's machines. We therefore stand directly before an upheaval of a kind that humanity has never yet experienced. Any further comment is superfluous and now at last people are beginning to capitulate unconditionally, because the continuation of current methods of power production will rob our youth of any possibility for further existence, and propel them towards a truly grisly future.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 3 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz 20/10/1956

Thank you for your letter of the 18th and many thanks too for the wine you sent me for my 71st birthday. I was not able to thank you earlier, because I had lost your address.

What I already foretold 30 years ago has now come to pass. If humanity does not come to its senses at this final hour, then the very next generation will have to dig for water as hitherto has been dug for gold. The same applies to the realm of energy resources. After a 6-year battle for Patents, the officials at the Patent Office have finally had to give in. Meanwhile I have built the 4th model of the suction-turbine (see fig. 34) and have developed the air-turbine (see fig. 35) to the extent that in principle no further basic development work is necessary.

On the whole I can state after 40 years of research that modern science, founded on precepts and principles going back as far as Moses, was either a tragic error or a deliberate falsification in order to keep the broad mass of humanity in a state of virtual ignorance, for only the stupid or unconditionally dependent are easily governed.

I have now reached the point where with the aid of a falling - regenerative - thermal gradient, I can achieve a nine-fold increase in performance compared to equivalent conventional mechanical systems. The latter make use of a

rising - degenerative - thermal gradient exclusively, thereby reaping a resistance to motion, which increases by the square of the velocity at which the above temperature rises.



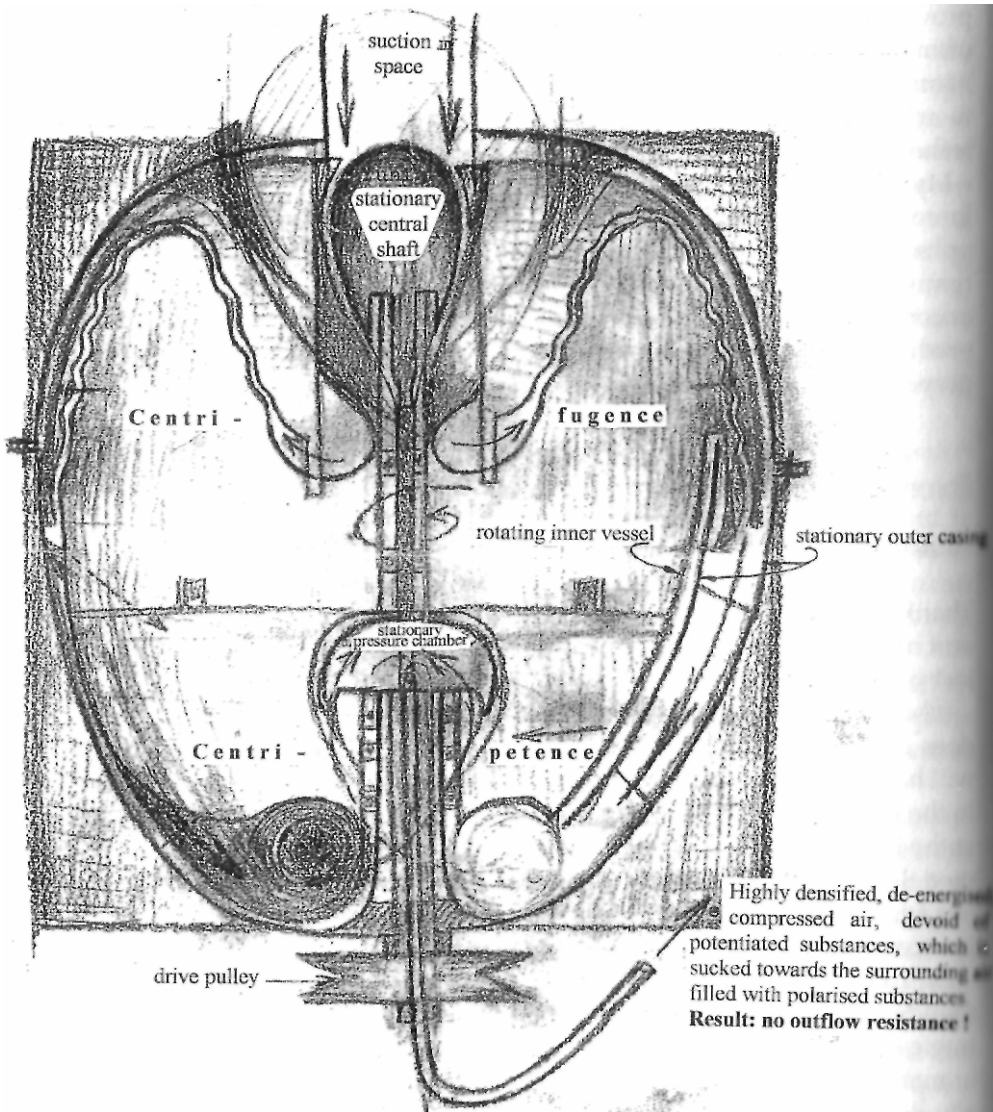


Fig. 35: Possible air-turbine design

If the process is reversed - centripetal forces predominate instead of centrifugal - then per kilocalorie and second about 5.7 hp in additional output is obtained, because in this case the calorific elements inhering in the media of

water and air - so-called 'chromosomes'<sup>4</sup> - are transformed into mechanical power, or in the former case into reactive resistances to motion. And herein lies the error of modern science through which all humanity will be systematically eliminated. If things are carried out unnaturally therefore back to front, then in accordance with inner natural law no advance is possible, but only cancerous regression.

It is the evolutionally older, the rising generation, who will have to pay for the consequences of the fatal misconception of a science founded on rigid, morbid logic. They will never perceive the error, however, because it will only take effect indirectly in the 2nd or 3rd links in Nature's biological chain.

I have often been reproached for not having made implosion technology freely available. Many believe that I know much, but cannot implement what I know practically. In this assumption they err. The reason for my withholding this information goes far deeper. I am convinced that today's leaders of humanity are not stupid enough to have failed to understand how medial masses should be accelerated in order to inhibit the build-up of heat and pressure and hence resistance to motion, which are the obvious result of the expansion of the unnaturally and inversely moved mass.

Without doubt, therefore, there is a definite intention to teach young people upside down methods of working with which they have to mis-earn their daily bread. That is to say, instead of moving forwards, they go backwards all the more rapidly in step with the improvements in the contrary methods of motion. For only thus can today's teaching principles flourish.

Were I to make the naturalesque system of mass motion known prematurely and with it a naturalesque and economic (development-enhancing) *modus operandi*, then the first to get hold of this implosion principle would be those who have no interest whatsoever in any improved social conditions. They would either be held to total ridicule for their hitherto contrary practices, or they would be recognised by their victims as those to blame for this complete economic collapse and therefore punished. In such case, precautionary measures would be taken to ensure that my discovery once again disappeared without trace.

There is only one thing that can be done and that is to explain everything to the victims of this self-deceit or general deception for as long as it takes until

4 Chromosomes: Since the 'calorific elements' consist of substances whose interaction produces heat, i.e. carbone (female) and oxygen (male), the characteristics of homologous chromosomes seems most likely to be what is intended here; These are defined as: "Chromosomes having the same structural features. In diploid nuclei, pairs of homologous chromosomes can be identified at the start of meiosis. One member of each pair comes from the female parent and the other from the male. Homologous chromosomes have the same pattern of genes along the chromosome but the nature of the genes may differ." Meiosis: A type of cell division that gives rise to four reproductive cells (gametes) each with half the chromosome number of the parent cell." — Concise Science Dictionary, Oxford University Press, 1984. — Ed.

they recognise the vast differences that exist between a rising, degenerative thermal gradient and a falling regenerative one. The first serves the build-up of decomposive energies; the second the build-up of formative and levitational atomic forces. It is actually via the agency of counter-polarities, which so regulate the differences in potential, that an increase or decrease in temperature results.

The success or failure of any effective endeavour depends on the possibility of regulating the temperature or thermal gradient. For if with the aid of a falling thermal gradient, 1 kcal is transformed into mechanical power in 1 second, then about 5.7 hp in additional power is obtained from the store of so-called 'chromosomes' contained in the above media.

On the other hand, if a medial mass is moved techno-academically so as to increase pressure and heat, then decentrating reactive energies are released from these dyngen concentrates and act as resistances to motion.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 4 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz, 10/8/1957

Please tell those who are harassing you the following: In 1934 I was subjected to an extremely searching investigation when I told Hitler, who had summoned me by telegramme, that today's heat- and pressure-intensifying technology was the greatest self-deceit of all times and that Germany would be finished if the medial structures of earth, water and air continued to be moved techno-academically, i.e. predominantly centrifugally. In this I was confronted by Privy Counsellor Max Planck and other leading lights from the Kaiser-Wilhelm Institute to whom I stated the following:

In the medial structures of earth, water and air there are trillions of reduced fossils - minute planetary systems. These science calls atoms and trace-elements. Doctors call them chromosomes, but I collectively term them 'ur-cells'. If their carrier (medium) is moved axially->radially by means of a 'technical' shaft or axle, then the pressure increases by the square of the speed at which heat increases, in other words, by the square of the increase in friction,

This heat-form is the lowest form of so-called electricity, which for example decomposes water. If the products of this dissociation, hydrogen and oxygen, are recombined, then an explosion of oxyhydrogen gas occurs, resulting in a renewed increase in heat. For this very reason progressively intensifying electrolyses are continually produced in exactly the same way - even if barely detectable - as occurs when an electrical current is conducted into water. Water is only the carrier of the above ur-cells wherein the real process of decomposition actually takes place.

In the first place the inhalation, the attraction and insuction of diffuse oxygen is prevented by the increase in pressure. Having a bipolar charge, the ur-cells therefore suffocate, resulting in a reversal of polarity - the so-called Lenard effect<sup>5</sup> - at the level of the basic elements. This ultimately leads to the rupture of the cells (miniature explosions) and thus to the total disintegration of the ur-source of reproductive, regenerative and multiplying life-forces. As a result trillions of ur-cells putrefy and ultimately whole rivers and seas become polluted due to the emergence of pathogenic life-forms, all of which has been accurately recorded by numerous researchers.

All pressure-, friction- and heat-increasing machines, pressure-turbines, agricultural implements, etc. made of paramagnetic materials only are therefore atom-smashing devices of the first order. Their effectiveness in this regard intensifies in step with the predominantly axial->radial (centrifugal) increase in rotational velocity. This also explains the nascent resistance to motion in all the above machines, which once again increases by the square of the velocity of the above expansive increase in heat.

On the other hand, if the media and their ur-cells are moved predominantly centripetally in a radial->axial direction, then precisely the opposite effects of pole-reversals (naturalesque Lenard effects) occur. These can be measured exactly and trigger an atomic negative pressure in the vicinity of the ur-cells. Equally capable of accurate measurement, this biological vacuum attracts and in-draws the surrounding stores of oxygen and internally binds (marries) it to the unsaturated nitrogen. The product of this in-spire-ation (ur-procreation) - this emulsion-is a diamagnetic formative and uplifting energy. In other words, it is precisely the opposite product of emulsion achieved by contemporary pressure- and fire-engineers.

In this case the reduction in the above resistance to motion reduces in inverse proportion to the increase in reproductive and upwardly evolving energies, which occurs when a falling thermal gradient is triggered instead of the heat-increasing degenerative rising temperature-gradient. Please tell your adversaries that they should produce this re-creative (refreshing and enlivening) thermal gradient with the aid of planetary motion, which will

<sup>5</sup> The Lenard effect: Hereunder some explanatory quotations:

"Philipp Eduard Anton Lenard (1862-1947) Hungarian-born German Physicist awarded the 1905 Nobel Prize for Physics for his investigations of cosmic rays, during which he showed that the atom is mainly empty space. He also made pioneering studies of the photoelectric effect, showing that cathode rays are generated thereby." — Phaidon Concise Encyclopedia of Science and Technology.

Lenard spiral: "A small noninductively wound spiral of bismuth wire, mounted between mica plates, that is used to measure magnetic fields. It depends for its operation on the significant increase in the resistance of bismuth under the influence of an orthogonal magnetic field. The change in resistance due to a magnetic field is measured by connecting the spiral to one arm of a Wheatstone bridge." - The New Penguin Dictionary of Electronics.

Lenard's mass absorption law, "The absorption of electrons moving with a velocity of at least 1/5 of that of light is determined only by the mass of the absorbing matter traversed and is unaffected by its chemical nature." - The Penguin Dictionary of Physics. — Ed.

automatically put an end to any further discussion about who is right. For in this case the internal frictional resistances amount to only about 10%. This results in a 90% increase in effective power, which in the case of techno-academic mass-motion is dissipated through the cumulative increase in degenerative heat. Therefore nothing could be more stupid than to move planetary systems techno-academically, which increases heat and friction! Is this now clear to you? For with atom-disintegrating devices no further development can be expected, whereas with my atom-transforming machines this is a matter of course. To find out how to make the Ur-works function properly again, please study the Austrian patent application over which I have fought a 6-year battle with the sharpest scrutineers of the Patent Office<sup>6</sup>. Like their counterparts in other countries, who took an average of 21 years to make their assessment, they were forced to capitulate and grant me the patents.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 5 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz, 5/10/1957

Recently some Englishmen came to visit me in order to make a closer study of the natural production of life-force that arises through the agency of the digestive process. In principle, this build-up of force, which serves to overcome physical and mental heaviness, is the same force that causes the Earth to float in space and provides for its perpetual motion about its diamagnetic longitudinal axis. If the planetary motion of the Earth, water or air is copied, then the build-up of levitational forces proceeds correctly. This form of motion is also exploited by all types of blood and sap. The ancients called it the 'Eternal Flow' (panta Rhei), the eternal, cycloid-spiral-space-curve circulation, which is a circular motion within a circle.

The ur-sources of energy are those energy-concentrates that modern science calls atoms, trace-elements or chromosomes. Viewed biologically and according to their state of being, these are to be understood as the reduced remains of former manifestations of life of all kinds and are also in suspension (float) in water and air in their trillions. According to the type of motion, these are transformed either into pathogenic or apathogenic life-forms, which collectively are encompassed in the concepts of 'life-affirming' or 'life-negating' forces. The fertilisation of these indifferent - neutrally disposed - ur-cells is engendered by the Sun.

In terms of the production of mechanical force from a biological standpoint, what is important about this primordial metabolic process - the 'Eternal Flow'

<sup>6</sup> See description of Austrian Patent No. 196680, p. 105 and "Processes and Equipment for the Conveyance of Liquid, Gaseous or Aeriform Media", p. 107 of this book. - Ed.

- is whether predominantly dia-magnetically or di-electrically supercharged concentrates of dynagen become free and active. This reconstitution of inorganic (reduced) residues of former life into reproductive and upwardly evolving repositories of energy is akin to the manner in which the digestion of undecayed food - fresh cadavers - proceeds. This is not only a process of cold combustion, but also one in which the normal build-up of life-force occurs, which is also diamagnetically super-charged and serves to overcome our own physical and mental ponderousness.

The important factor in this mechanical production of power is whether the media (carrier substances) containing the inorganic sources of energy - the 'ur-cells' - are made to move predominantly planetarily or anti-planetarily. By this is meant techno-academically and therefore pressure-, friction- and heat-intensifyingly. Nature moves the above ur-sources of all life planetarily thereby attaining the 'Golden Middle Way' - a sine-like curve that propagates itself as a (3-dimensional) wave. It is produced when centrifugence and centripence mutually amplify one another. Under such conditions the above 'Eternal Flow of Evolution' is able to take place naturalesquely, because in this process the relatively highest velocity is produced. This is akin to the high speed attained by a skier, when making stem turns during the descent. Through such tangential impulses, the centrifugence appearing in all motion is continually redirected into the straightest possible direction of travel (see fig. 36). Thus the development of the force here in question is brought about in accordance with the equation -  $\text{mass} \times \text{velocity}^2 = \text{energy}$ .

This is like a river, which makes similar stem turns along its meandering course. Its natural developmental path, however, the modern river-engineer truncates, steepens and shortens, thus achieving the opposite effect - excess pressure. This results in a loss of suspended (nutritive) sediment, because it weakens the suctional force. Through the negative pressure associated with this force the provisions for the river's journey - the small particles of



The tangential impulses of the stem-turns of skiers and bends in rivers during descent assist in their straight, forward acceleration.

Fig. 36: The accelerating stem turns of a skier

sediment - are atomised with virtually no application of heat. This is because in the advancing tip of the suction-vortex swirling about its own axis, the relatively strongest centripetal forces prevail, which act to bore out the path in front of it.

If any given flow - a flow of electrical current for example - is natural-ly regulated, then the so-called 'Ohms Law'<sup>7</sup> no longer applies, because such a flow inwinds almost without any generation of heat (super-conductors) and follows the almost loss-less path of the 'Golden Middle Way'. If such a current flow - water for example - is braked by the resistance from the inclined blade of a pressure-turbine, whose angle of attack can be varied to maximise the effect of centrifugal force, then the resistance to flow increases by the square of the expansive increase in heat thus arising. This occurs precisely because the braking blade is made of paramagnetic alloys. In this case di-electric, decomposive energies evolve from the aforementioned trace-elements (ur-cells). These ur-cells are suspended in their trillions in water and air and await the motive in-pulse in order to transform themselves into an octave higher, 4th or 5th dimensional implosive force, which is nevertheless of corpuscular nature. In this instance the levitational, formative and up-suctional, atomic force develops, which the medium accumulates and elevates in order to conduct these reproductive and evolutionally uplifting atomic energies into the interior of the plants by way of diffusion. Through the subsequent interaction of these energies with atmospheric influences, precisely that product of emulsion comes into being, which also endows plants with increased driving force or growth energies.

However, if instead of negative pressure, positive pressure prevails through the implementation of light-induced growth (the exposure of heat-sensitive, shade-loving trees to light and heat), then the structure becomes enlarged due to the abnormally high di-electric forces. Spongy heart-wood and hence genetically defective - red- and white-rot ridden wood - wood cancer is the biological and hence obvious sequel, because heat is the lowest form of the electrical decomposive force.

The same mistake is made throughout the whole chain of evolution through the disturbance of the 'Eternal Flow'. It is therefore really and truly no wonder that the whole process of growth and development will fall victim to cancerous regression, if any medium is moved unnaturally - techno-academically = pressure-, friction- and heat- intensifyingly. This insane form of mass-motion is therefore the true instigator of cancer, because it is itself the seed of

<sup>7</sup> Ohm's law: "The statement due to G. S. Ohm in 1827 that the electrical potential difference across a conductor is proportional to the current flowing through it, the constant proportionality being known as the resistance of the conductor. It holds well for most materials and objects, including solutions provided that the passage of the current does not heat the conductor, but electron tubes and semi-conductor devices show a much more complicated behaviour." - Phaidon Concise Encyclopedia of Science and Technology. — Ed.

decay. This seed is then transferred to all more highly evolved forms of life through the consumption of contaminated water, food and polluted air. Here too, therefore, all that is needed is an additional mechanical, physical or mental (di-electric) motive or stimulating impulse to raise the scourge of this abortive techno-academic age to an acute condition.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 6 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz, 15/1/1958

Your letters and activities always give me a great deal of pleasure. What I cannot understand, however, is that you are trying to teach four professorial assistants from the Technical University in Vienna how to do things better. You overlook the fact that implosion-technology will signal the end of pressure- and fire-technology upon which the existence of these four young academics is founded. These fire-apostles would lose their livelihoods if this self-deceit and betrayal of the public were to be replaced by meta-technology.

Recently I had a very disturbing experience. As you know the blind, deaf and arm-less physicist, Burghard Heim, has been occupied for years with the problem of propelling rockets with light-rays. Not long ago I had a visit from his co-worker, Dipl. Ing. Peter Goslich, an aircraft designer - a very sympathetic and intelligent young man of about 30. For years and very unselfishly he has supported his friend Heim's efforts unpaid and he sought my advice as to whether these efforts could be expected to be successful in the future. I said the same thing to him that I said to Dr. Martin, namely, that light-rays act more and more diffractively and motion-impedingly, the further they are from their source - the closer they approach the Earth.

It is upon this property that growth is actually based. Seen from a natural-*esque* point of view, this is to be understood as the re-solidification of what is unsuitable or unusable for the purposes of the next, higher and further development. This has to be expelled and is condemned to vegetate further, so that no genetically harmful matter is incorporated in the further evolution of the fit.

These 'fit' entities, which are capable of resurrection, are products of reduction, i.e. earthly remains of former life. Purified by the planetary motion of the Earth, these are forms of emanation - those diamagnetically supercharged earth-rays called 'Od rays'<sup>8</sup> - which become bound by geospheric water.

<sup>8</sup> Od rays: "Od was a hypothetical force held by Baron von Reichenbach (1788-1869) to pervade all Nature, manifesting itself in persons of sensitive temperament (streaming from their fingertips), and exhibited specially by magnets, crystals, heat, light and chemical action; it has been held to explain the phenomenon of mesmerism and animal magnetism. It forms the second element in chemical derivatives as biod; tin' od ol animal life; cln/niod — chemical od; crystallod — the od of crystallisation; elod — electric od; htliod tha od Oi kha Sun; magnetod — magnetic od; pantod — od in general; selenod or artemod - lunar od, thermod - heat od (Oxford English Dictionary). — Ed.



During these processes of emulsion, water is created as a by-product and under certain preconditions, rises to the highest mountain peaks in order to be able to convey the metaphysical, reproductive and upwardly evolving energies to the plants by way of diffusion. It is the separation of the carrier of these formative and uplifting energies, which cannot exist without a certain physical corporeality, that supplies the root-tip protoplasts (see fig. 15). These only permit the entry of the highest qualities to the interior of the plant as happens in similar fashion in our own bodies through the diffusion of digested, nutritive ethericities into the bloodstream. In this instance as in the other, the supply of diffuse ethericities of the air takes place, the so-called re-*spire-ation* of those geospherically super-charged microzymes, which the doctor defines as red blood cells. These smallest concentrates of dynagen interact with the oppositely-charged cells - the so-called white blood cells, Everything in Nature happens indirectly. The product of this ultimate interaction between fundamental elements, is life itself, which arises anew with every intake of breath by way of naturalesque molecular interaction.

However, if the media (the carriers of life) of water and/or air are moved techno-academically - pressure-, friction- and heat-intensifyingly - then precisely the opposite molecular recombination occurs and with it an unnatural process of emulsion. The product of this is a repulsive (regressively developing) de-centrating (dispersing) and therefore a decidedly destructive energy, which becomes bound in the weakest organisms and inaugurates malformed growth, or the loosening or coarsening of the structure. This is more commonly called cancer, or in a narrower sense, 'leukaemia' or 'anaemia', which quickly promotes the decay of the red blood cells - diamagnetically supercharged energy concentrates - to the benefit of the carriers of decomposive energy.

The same thing happens in over-illuminated, shade-demanding timbers and other forms of growth, and above all in the physically first-born - water, which contains trillions of microzymes. Considered from a more universal standpoint, it is in this way that the decay of water, sap and blood is triggered off, whose germs are transferred to the next higher forms of evolution through the consumption of genetically impaired water and food. After this a slight mechanical, physical or psychic stimulating impulse is all that is required to bring the scourge of this techno-academically, developmentally deformed age to an acute state. Therefore any over-illumination or over-heating of the blood, sap or blood of the Earth - water, causes the relapse of the same and from this point of view the techno-academic movement of medial entities is the true cause of cancer. Conversely, the 'health stimulators' will be brought to life, if these media are moved or stimulated naturalesquely - planetarily - or in exactly the opposite way to the one promulgated and learnt in all academics, universities, high schools and technical colleges.

Whatever manifests itself - even light - is to be viewed as the waste matter resulting from the purification of the relatively highest quality entities, which never manifest themselves physically. For this reason one cannot make use of what serves to shape the Vegetative for purposes of primordial motion. In a word, in an upward direction a falling thermal gradient prevails (positive temperature-gradient) and in a downward direction a rising thermal gradient predominates (negative temperature-gradient). Hence in conformity with inner natural law, cancerous regression must ensue, if the rising thermal gradient is used to create forces that are supposedly uplifting. Dr Martin makes the same mistake, substituting the primary for the secondary. Hence he is also chasing a phantom although from another point of view he is right.

Electricity, whose lowest form is heat, comes into being when the microzymes of the air, or their carrier, are moved predominantly centrifugally (see dynamo - fig. 37). If this medium is moved in exactly the opposite way, i.e. predominantly centripetally, then diamagnetism comes into being, because in this case the falling thermal gradient is activated.

The true stationary trout can therefore only exist in specifically densified, diamagnetically supercharged, high-mountain spring-water. With the aid of their 'choanoid'<sup>9</sup> gill systems, these fish are able to trigger supplementary magnetolytic processes of molecular recombination. It is to this phenomenon that they

Microzymes created  
and atomised through  
slip-pressure !  
Grindstone principle !

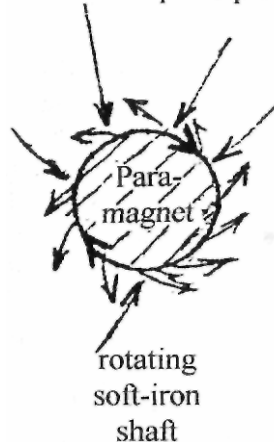


Fig. 37: Rotating paramagnet as dynamo

<sup>9</sup> Choanoid: Funnel-shaped. - Ed.

owe their ability not only to overcome the weight of the counter-flowing water effortlessly but also the weight of their own bodies.

The four young pressure- and fire-technologists, however, can only continue to their lives as long as there are madmen, who believe that culture can be built up with a decomposive-energy-producing thermal gradient. They have to chirrup to the same old tunes or go to the dogs. How therefore can you expect any successful outcome to your efforts from such mentally castrated individuals, where their very existence is in question?

Electricity and magnetism are higher octaves of pressure and suction respectively, and symbolise bipolarity as such. The interplay between these two polarities determines the life and death of what has been imbued by either.

## Excerpts from Letter No. 7 to Josef Brunnader

Written in Linz, 1/4/1958

For years the Austrian Patent Office has disputed the novelty of a system of pipes that eliminates pressure, friction and an increase in heat almost entirely. This movement and the simultaneous cooling of medial structures at equally high velocities can be achieved, through which the introduced gases can also be liquefied. Up to now this could only be done with extremely expensive high-pressure (viz. liquid air). The product of such liquefaction - liquid air - is highly explosive.

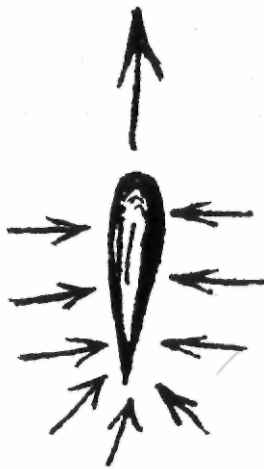
Precisely the opposite can be achieved through the displacement of the centre of gravity into the axis. In the process a suctional force evolves, whose suction-tip accelerates ahead, producing a cooling effect. For every 1°C (1.8°F) cooled the volume of the moved mass is reduced by 1/273rd.

The result of this specific densation of medial structures or introduced gases, is a water-like liquid, which functions implosively and generates an atomic negative pressure. This effect can be intensified at will and is also the best and cheapest form of mechanical power. I have called it a 'biological vacuum', which is unknown to science. This utterly new principle for generating mechanical power has therefore remained incomprehensible. It is a principle that serves the build-up of the levitational force, which counteracts gravitation and enables the force of gravity to be overcome naturally.

Since every body loses weight in proportion to the degree to which it is displaced by a specifically densifying medium, it is to this phenomenon that the true stationary trout owes its almost absolute freedom of movement, and is accelerated forward and upwards like a plum-stone, when squeezed between index finger and thumb. In this manner the weight of the body becomes uninteresting (see fig. 38a).

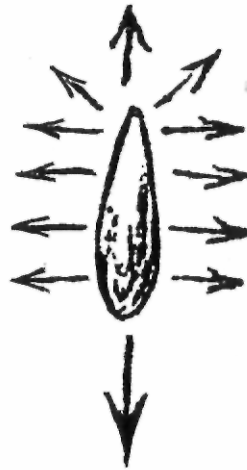
By inverting Archimedes' law the hitherto unnoticed possibility arises for a body to lose weight as its volume is displaced (reduced). This results in the forward and upward squeezing of a tear-drop-shaped foreign body through the sudden densation (liquefaction of the bipolar gas content) of the medium surrounding it. This is to be contrasted with the specific de-densation (rarefaction) that occurs, when medial structures are moved in a pressure-, heat- and friction-increasing fashion - techno-academically. In this case the medium surrounding the foreign body expands and the body falls through it (see fig. 38b).

From this not only can the effects produced by a rising thermal gradient now be understood, but also why tremendous forces are required to counteract this specific de-densation of the surrounding medium. In other words, counter-forces nearly nine times as strong have to be produced in order to overcome the effects of this erroneous form of motion, which increases the heaviness of a foreign body such as an aeroplane for example.



(a)

Forward and upward motion due to the specific densation of the surrounding medium.



(b)

Backward and downward motion due to the specific rarefaction of the surrounding medium.

"If the 'surrounding' has the same density as the 'surrounded', then there is neither gravitation nor levitation. If the 'surrounding' is denser than the 'surrounded', then the 'surrounded' must rise."

Walter Schauberger - Implosion Magazine No.35, p. 17.

Fig. 38: The effects of relative densities on motion

On the other hand, when a falling thermal gradient is triggered natural-ly, under certain preconditions it specifically densifies the medium of water or air almost instantaneously and liquefies voluminous gases in the creation of a progressively intensifying negative pressure. This functions in the same way as the above squeeze-pressure on the plum-stone. Thus it also becomes understandable how this new type of aircraft acquires almost total freedom of movement like the true stationary trout, which specifically densifies the falling water.

Of necessity, therefore, either this techno-academic method of moving medial structures must be prohibited or, through the specific rarefaction of the various media, the hapless victims of this abysmal stupidity will inevitably perish.

## Letter to Mr 'R'

From Implosion Magazine, No. 82, written in Linz, 4th February 1958.

Dear Mr R,

Thank you for your two letters and enclosures. You conceive the matter to be much simpler than it actually is. Above all, you overlook the fact that it concerns the whole of contemporary, technological science, which believes it can correct Nature and without exception exploits a rising energy gradient. In so doing, it triggers reversed processes of molecular transformation and fosters the build-up of decomposive energies, instead of generating the reproductive and ennobling products of emulsion.

The culmination of this tragic, abortive development was the fissile atomic energy of Einstein.

Thirty eight years ago as I was building the first log-flume and mixed and moved the water in such manner as to trigger a falling thermal gradient, I had no inkling that this was the initial stage in the build-up of a concentrating form of atomic energy. Acting purely intuitively I proceeded further along this course. In 1921 I built the first suction-turbine to provide and light my remote forest-homestead with electricity.<sup>10</sup> With it I achieved an almost nine-fold increase in output. This I deemed to be the most natural thing in the world and once again took the next further step. I utilised this falling thermal gradient for the purposes of re-converting polluted water into noble water - akin to that of high-altitude springs. This water exhibited remarkable healing properties that nobody was able to explain. As time went by I took out over 70 patents, but not being much of a businessman, I was unable to exploit them

<sup>10</sup> See Jet Turbine Patent (No. 117749) in *The Water Wizard*, Vol. I of the Ecotechnology series, p. 206. - Ed.

commercially. Eventually the doctors and pharmacists became aware of these mysterious healing successes. Just as they did Priessnitz and Kneipp, they accused me of charlatanry and one day the Austrian State Police appeared and confiscated my apparatus.

I then went to Nuremberg, where a laboratory had been placed at my disposal. There I discovered that what I was actually concerned with were emanations with different functions. There are pure rays, which animate and enliven. There are also types of rays that debilitate, and lastly there are indifferent rays, which serve to build up or decompose water (see fig. 23 & figs. 2-3). The first are released from so-called microzymes when water moves under a falling thermal gradient. The second are activated when water moves under a rising thermal gradient, whereas the former build up the corporeal elements, which bind one thing with another.

From that moment I recognised the erroneous form of motion employed by the whole of science and exposed it for what it was. On doing so, I stumbled into a veritable hornet's nest and began to feel the full force of the omnipotence of my scientific adversaries. I was challenged to provide proof. Whenever I did this, I was robbed to such an extent that there was no other course was open to me other than to remain silent once more. In the February issue of 'Weltgewissen' you will be able to read that these devices, which the Austrian State Police took from me, are now being manufactured in Germany with enormous success. This has happened to me twelve times. Every time I had something fabricated, all I was given were the leftovers, while the best part was retained and exploited commercially by others. Or the apparatus was never made public (see the suction-turbine), although I had paid all the agreed development costs myself. Subsequently such large sums were demanded of me, which lay far beyond my capacity to pay, and the machines I was struggling to build were withheld as security against payment.

I then began to work covertly and in this way succeeded in producing workable machines. I then first became aware of what I had discovered, namely higher-grade atomic energies. At this stage "Demonstrate it!", "Prove it!", "Let it be examined!" was and is always demanded. If I concur, then all is lost. If I do not, however, then I am a fraud. 'M' requested that I show the gadget to him and some of his friends and that I hand over the patents to the VSB, otherwise he would cancel the public demonstration. "Do it then !", I replied. Whereupon he withdrew his threats.

Then along came a major German industrialist with his scientific advisors. He investigated the process and found it in order. Statements were made expressing readiness to proceed with fabrication and cost evaluation and then, yes, then one will just have to wait and see. All they are, are empty promises, never kept. Now representatives of the U.S. government have announced themselves. They too want to see and evaluate everything first,

and then, only then will it be considered what might be done. I requested a provisional agreement, which would only come into force once I proved that I could achieve significantly increased output. This was rejected. First see, then negotiate and the outcome was always the same. Professors also want first to see, evaluate and then, aye and then take over.

My dear Mr R, I have now reached the point where they can all kiss the place where my spinal column terminates. I am old and seriously ill. My only concern now is for all the poor children, who are faced with a grisly future. If I reveal everything, it will only be hushed up, because it not only involves the whole scientific establishment, but also the doctrines of the church. All power-politics will collapse once the truth emerges that science is the actual causative agent of cancer.

I have no need of the VSB, neither as curiosity seekers, nor even as those hungry for business. I know that lot only too well ! This is how the matter stands, my dear Mr R. I intend to return to the forest once more, there to die in peace. The whole of science and all its hangers-on, are nothing but a band of thieves, who are suspended like marionettes and must dance to whatever tune their well-camouflaged slave-masters deem necessary. In this situation only a frightful catastrophe may perhaps bring about order. In the achievement of such generalised order at least 90% of humanity will fall victim. They will perish because of water and blood decomposition (cancer). The final victory will be achieved by the Russians, who are closer to Nature and who, according to the Pfalzer Tageblatt of the 14th January 1957, are nearest to the overcoming of gravity. This, however, will only be understood by the West when it is already too late.

You, Mr R, are still young and will live to see this. I know it, but can do nothing to change it myself. Please don't attempt to persuade me otherwise. In order to put their remains to the best use, pigs and human beings are only weighed after they are dead. One day in the near future, you will hear that this old turnip is no more.

Kindest regards, Viktor Schauburger.

13.

## The Popel Report

### The Preliminary Investigation of Helicoid Pipes: Foreword

Extracts from the Foreword to the Report concerning the  
Preliminary Investigation of Helicoid Pipes with Various  
Forms of Wall Structure

Stuttgart University of Technology - Professor Franz Popel.

#### SUBJECT:

Negotiations on the 9th of February 1952 at the Stuttgart University of Technology concerning investigation of prototypes of straight and spiral helicoid pipes of various materials developed and made available to the Stuttgart University of Technology by VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER.

#### WITH REFERENCE TO:

The report of the Institute of Hygiene at the Stuttgart University of Technology Stuttgart, dated the 15th of March 1952.  
(Director: Prof.Dr.-Ing.habil. Franz Popel)

- 1.0 Present at these negotiations on the 9th of February 1952 at the Institute of Hygiene at the Stuttgart University of Technology were:
- 1.1 Prof. Dr.-Ing. Franz Popel.
- 1.2 Assistant Secretary KUMPF, as representative of the Federal Ministry for Water Resources in Bonn.
- 1.3 Viktor SCHAUBERGER, Salzburg, Austria.



- 1.4 Dipl. Ing. Walter SCHAUBERGER, Bad Ischl, Engleithen, Austria.
- 2.0 The object of the negotiations was the comprehensive complex of themes and questions concerning:-
- 2.1 Water supply and its scientific and technical problems.
- 2.2 A paper of Viktor Schauberger's, with particular reference to his previous research findings, developments, projects and the performance of completed projects in the sphere of near-natural hydraulic engineering, including a number of observations, explanations and assertions concerning agriculture, forestry, water and energy supply.
- 2.3 A short paper of Walter Schauberger's concerning non-Euclidean (Gauss) concepts in Nature, the basic assertions of quantum physics, and facts incorporated in the Theory of Relativity, which taken altogether, emphasise the centripetal dynamics of Nature's energetic and resonant processes with their universal sphere of action.
- 2.4 Professor Popel made a statement opposing Viktor and Walter Schauberger's statements and opinions. He expressed the view that the crucial areas of technology were founded on the legitimacy of classical mechanics and hence the laws governing the flow of liquids and gases should also be dealt with from this point of view. Moreover, it had likewise been determined that in hydraulic engineering optimal results had been achieved with Euclidean elements. He could therefore state at the outset that Schauberger's desired investigation of such pipes, would achieve no useful results for technology. Also, in view of the relatively high costs to Schauberger arising from such investigations, he asked permission to withdraw from this task.
- 2.5 Kumpf agreed unreservedly with Professor Popel's opinion and added that Bonn was interested in this scientific investigation inasmuch as it would at last put a stop to Viktor Schauberger's unqualified attacks, which were directed primarily against the sphere of water resources management. Bonn would therefore make some financial contribution towards the costs of the investigation.
- 2.6 Thereupon Professor Popel declared that his institute would carry out the various investigations on straight and rifled helical pipes and that the results of the investigations could be expected in about two month's time, Viktor Schauberger's request that his son, Dipl. Ing. Walter Schauberger, be present at these important series of tests, was accepted by Professor Popel.
- 2.7 The scope of the investigation and its subsection concerning the format of the series of experiments and the catalogue of questions to be settled, was fixed. This referred, with significant reductions however to the complex of questions, namely points 1 to 5 quoted in the investigation report.
- 2.8 In point 6, the crucial area which Schauberger stressed and wished to be settled, namely "Technical hydraulic engineering and its destructive

consequences', was on the one hand deferred by Prof. Popel, and on the other, rejected by Kumpf as serving no purpose. Point 6 was concerned not only with the specifically targetted formulation of questions, attempts at interpretation and facts, but also empirically substantiated findings. These concerned such aspects as:-

- (a) That to the most massive intrusions into Nature's biological balance, must be added the purely mechanical correction of river embankments. (Proof: The regulation of the Rhine, Danube and other 'hard-edged' rivers and streams.
- (b) That despite the consequential damage occurring everywhere due to this unnatural and therefore incorrect regulation of watercourses, why is this practice still continued?
- (c) That indisputable evidence (and these are not merely assertions or opinions) show unmistakably, that the execution of such erroneous corrective measures in relation to embankment works, i.e. mechanical methods of regulation, results in an even more drastic sinking of the watertable, a far more widespread drying up of springs and the increasing disappearance of water.
- (d) That a farm report (Third Reich) dated 4th of February 1939 indicated that the repercussions due to the vanishing of the watertable had become so evident, that development of steppe-land over large areas was greatly to be feared. The already projected re-routing of rivers mentioned in this report and their attendant dams for the storage of irrigation water, would only accelerate steppe-development and desertification.
- (e) The smallest causes have unforeseen effects in Nature.
- (f) The warming up of water through unnatural motion and containment leads to the loss of its carrying capacity and tractive force, and in further consequence, to its disappearance.
- (g) Despite its slow rate of flow (meander), naturally flowing water has a greater carrying capacity and tractive force, which decrease, however, with steep, technically contrived gradients.
- (h) Nothing is more absurd than to intensify the geological gradient by a shortcut, because in such instances, due to its own weight, the water throws itself out of its course and the preconditions for natural motion diminish.
- (i) Hydraulic engineers have neglected:
  - the interplay between the tractive force and the carrying capacity of water
  - the normal profile arising spontaneously from a bio-dynamic form of motion

- the rotation of water about its own axis, which again is the result of a normal profile.
  - the proper insulation (from heat, Sun, etc.) through the natural placement and deposition of the layers of sediment.
- (j) The natural regulation of a watercourse is never possible through mechanistic restructuring or realignment of the riverbank.
- (k) Water, sap and blood are all accumulators and transformers in which analyses and syntheses constantly take place. These further intensify, the more water, sap and blood are caused to move in a natural way. In the course of this, the outer velocity has almost no effect, whereas the inner balancing velocity plays a very important role.
- (l) The origins of carrying and tractive power, at otherwise equal velocities, lie in the water's inner metabolic processes.
- (m) Quantity can be transformed into quality. This requires a corresponding organisation of the material, in form as well as in qualitative relationship.

Dipl. Ing. Walter SCHAUBERGER

## Report Concerning the Preliminary Investigation of Helicoid Pipes with Various Shapes of Pipe-Wall carried out at the Institute of Hygiene at the Stuttgart University of Technology, Germany.

Director: Prof. Dr. - Ing. habil. Franz Popel.

During negotiations on the 9th of February 1952 the Biotechnical Study Group made various prototypes of straight and spiral helicoid pipes of different materials available to the Institute of Hygiene at the Stuttgart University of Technology in order to clarify fundamentally the following problems:

1. Can water be brought into a multiple in-winding, convoluting, spiral motion when flowing through pipes?
2. Does the form of the conducting pipe play a decisive role in the attainment of this convoluting motion?
3. Does the material of the pipe play a decisive role in achieving this in-winding spiral motion?
4. Do changes in the molecular structure of the water occur during this in-winding flow process?
5. Could these in-winding flow processes be utilised in the prevention of pipe-encrustation?

## To Question 1:

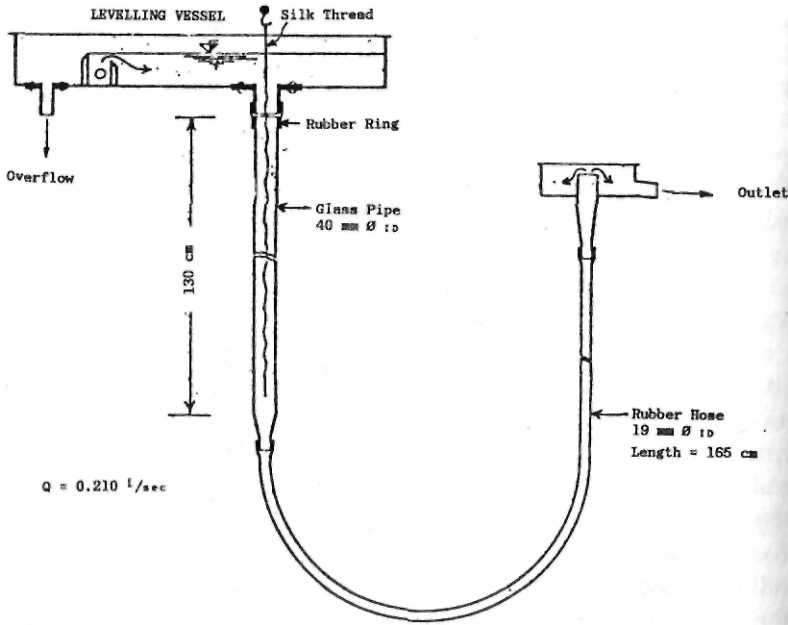
### The Multiple In-Winding, Convoluting Flow Process.

If water containing coarse suspended matter is first stirred around in a glass beaker and afterwards left to rotate by itself, then the suspensions concentrate themselves in the axis of the rotating cylinder of water caused by the stirring. This well-known natural phenomenon is already being evaluated technically in the circular sand-capture machine by the Geiger Company, Karlsruhe and in the 'Hydro-Cyclone' of the Stami-Carbon Company for the separation of suspensions from water. In both cases the contents of the circular containers is caused to rotate by the tangential supply of the liquid, which can be considered to be the cause of the self-ordered concentration of suspended matter in the axis of the vertically rotating cylinder of liquid. However if water is conducted from a large container into an inlet pipe and is set in a faster or slower rotation above this, a suction funnel is formed, which is deeper or shallower according to the velocity of flow prevailing in the outlet pipe. Attentive observers can often watch the formation of such vortexial funnels at the outlets of basins and baths. The spiralling of the water in the pipe, evolving from the inlet in the direction of the outlet pipe and the forward motion of the water in the outlet pipe itself, now generate as a result of these reciprocal influences, a flow-through process composed of the simultaneously combined effects of several 3-dimensional space-curves, which can be made visible in the following manner.

Water flows from a vessel with a constantly maintained water level (levelling vessel) into a glass pipe of 40 mmOID<sup>1</sup> and onwards by means of a rubber hose of 19 mmOID to an overflow. Whereas in Test Stand 1 (Diagram 1) the levelling vessel and the water supply were so arranged that only a very weak spiralling motion at the inlet of the observation pipe was able to develop, in the case of Test Stand 2 (Diagram 2) the build-up of spiral motion was intentionally assisted by the trumpet-like form and a tangential inflow of water. The 40 mmOID test pipe with a flow section of 0.125 dcm<sup>2</sup> was supplied with a quantity of water between 0.2 and 0.21 litres/sec, so that this would flow through at a calculated velocity of 1.6 to 1.68 dcm/sec. This already lies within the region of turbulent flow. A thin silk thread, weighted at the end, hanging straight down into the test pipe at a state of rest, was set

<sup>1</sup> To aid readers unfamiliar with the metric system of measurement and to avoid over-complicating an already complex text by inserting Imperial or US equivalents, the following correspondences have been provided by the editor:

1 litre (l)	= 0.22 imp. gallons	= 0.26 US gallon	
1 millimetre (mm)	= 0.03937 inches	1mm <sup>2</sup> = 0.00155 in <sup>2</sup>	1mm <sup>3</sup> = 0.00006102 in <sup>3</sup>
1centimetre (cm)	= 0.3937 inches	1 cm <sup>2</sup> = 0.155 in <sup>2</sup>	1 cm <sup>3</sup> = 0.06102 in <sup>3</sup>
1 decimetre (dcm)	= 3.937 inches	1 dcm <sup>2</sup> = 15.5 in <sup>2</sup>	1 dcm <sup>3</sup> = 61.02 in <sup>3</sup>
1 metre (m)	= 39.37 inches (3.28ft)	1 m <sup>2</sup> =10.764 ft <sup>2</sup>	1 m <sup>3</sup> = 35.315 ft <sup>3</sup>



Institut für Gesundheitstechnik an der Techn. Hochschule Stuttgart				
Des: <i>Uf</i>	Dat: 20.3.52	TEST STAND No. 1	Zeichn. Nr.	DIAGRAM 1
Des: <i>Uf</i>				

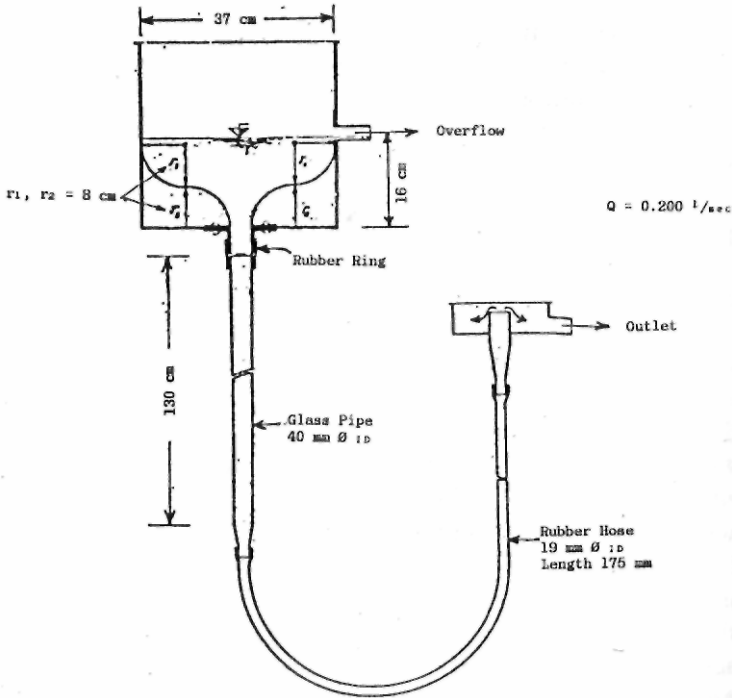
Diagram 1

in a slow rotation corresponding to a slightly convoluted 3-dimensional space-curve by the flow of water through the pipe. In Test Stand 2 the curvature of the thread was greater than in Test Stand 1, due to the greater spiral motion at the inlet. Since apart from this, it was observed that fine hydrophobic suspensions, very evenly dispersed over the water surface with the aid of a finely meshed sieve, were concentrated into little clusters along the 3-dimensional space-curve denoted by the thread, it is thus demonstrated that a flow in the pipe is developed, which follows a 3-dimensional spiral curve and simultaneously rotates about the axis of this space-spiral. (Proof: Curvature and rotation of the silk thread.) This is also confirmed by the fact that the air entrained by the water becomes concentrated along the 3-dimensional space-spiral in the pipe and which, according to the size of the air bubbles in the rotating flow of the water about the space-spiral, either accompanies the water or rises upwards again.

In order to be able to examine this multiple in-winding flow more closely, the behaviour of three silk threads, each suspended from the corner of an equilateral triangular spacer-block, was investigated. Although the position of these threads was fixed by spacers at the middle and at the lower end as well, an entwining of the three threads could be observed, when water flowed through the pipe. In addition, the threads in this new arrangement were always forced into the region of the 3-dimensional space-spiral axis, despite their weighting and spacers. Due to the greater combined stiffness of the three entwined threads, which were even more encumbered than the single thread by their spacers and three end-weights, their curvature was naturally somewhat less than in the case of the single thread. In order to check whether the entwining of the three threads was not merely attributable to the rotation of the spacers caused by the rotation of the water at the inlet, the spacers were removed from the middle and the bottom. In this instance too, the entwining of the three threads and their alignment along a slightly curved space-spiral was achieved. It is thus clearly demonstrated, that the entwining of the threads cannot be ascribed to the rotation of the uppermost spacer, but only to the multiple in-winding flowing motion of the water.

This multiple in-winding flow process inside the pipe is superimposed by a second equally space-spiral-like, curving, peripheral motion as well. This phenomenon was made visible with the aid of iron filings. It was noticeable, that during the flow-through of the water in the pipe, the pitch of the strongly curved space-spiral is not constant, but gradually becomes greater and at the same time a concentration in larger agglomerations takes place.

These flow processes, which superimpose each other in pipes and which have been detected for the first time with the aid of the demonstrative experiments described above, must still be thoroughly investigated in relation to their formation and effect.



Institut für Gesundheitstechnik an der Techn. Hochschule Stuttgart			
Doc: <i>clp</i>	Doc: <i>muft</i>	TEST STAND No. 2	Lehrno Nr.
Dep: <i>Y</i>			DIAGRAM 2

Diagram 2

Were only centrifugal forces here active, then the silk thread hanging down the centre ought to have been drawn towards the exterior. Also such forces could never bring about an entwining of the threads along the weakly curved space-spiral. Moreover it would be impossible for centrifugally acting forces to twist the three silk threads suspended in the outer zones of the pipe into a single thread, which then further accommodates itself to the space-spiral-like curved axis. These phenomena can only be brought about by centripetally acting forces greater than the centrifugal force.

The multiple in-winding flow can therefore only be attributed to these centripetally directed forces initiated by the system of flow itself and which have been observed and clearly detected for the first time.

In addition, it can be concluded from the variable pitch of the strongly curved space-spiral and by the observed flocculation and migration of the particles of matter in the centre, that the centrifugal forces decrease with the flow-through of water in the pipes and the centripetal forces which overcome them are always of the same magnitude and accordingly increase their effect gradually in relation to the centrifugal forces.

The detected flocculative processes, however, cannot be attributed to the influence of mechanical forces alone. According to prevailing ideas concerning the coagulation of solids, it can be assumed with the greatest certainty, that the agglomeration of solid particles occurring in the course of the flow process, is triggered off by the effects of electro-physical forces.

The flowing motion of water in straight pipes, made visible in various ways, thus clearly proves that at the inlet of these pipes a greater or lesser spiralling motion develops, which in turn triggers off an in-winding flow along a space-spiral and which is additionally superimposed by flows along more strongly curved space-spirals.

To Questions 2 & 3:

**The Influence of the Form and the Material of the Pipe on the Development of In-Winding Flow Processes.**

The superimposing flow processes detectable along either a weakly or a strongly curved space-spiral must strongly impede each other through the formation of vortices in the fringe areas of both motions, which differ in direction and velocity of flow. Therefore as a logical conclusion arising from this observation, an increase in the output of the pipe could thus be anticipated in the instance of a favourable limitation of the mutually impeding flow processes due to vortex formation.

Since in their rhythmically oscillating form the helicoid pipes are aligned to the course of the strongly curved space-spirals automatically evolving during



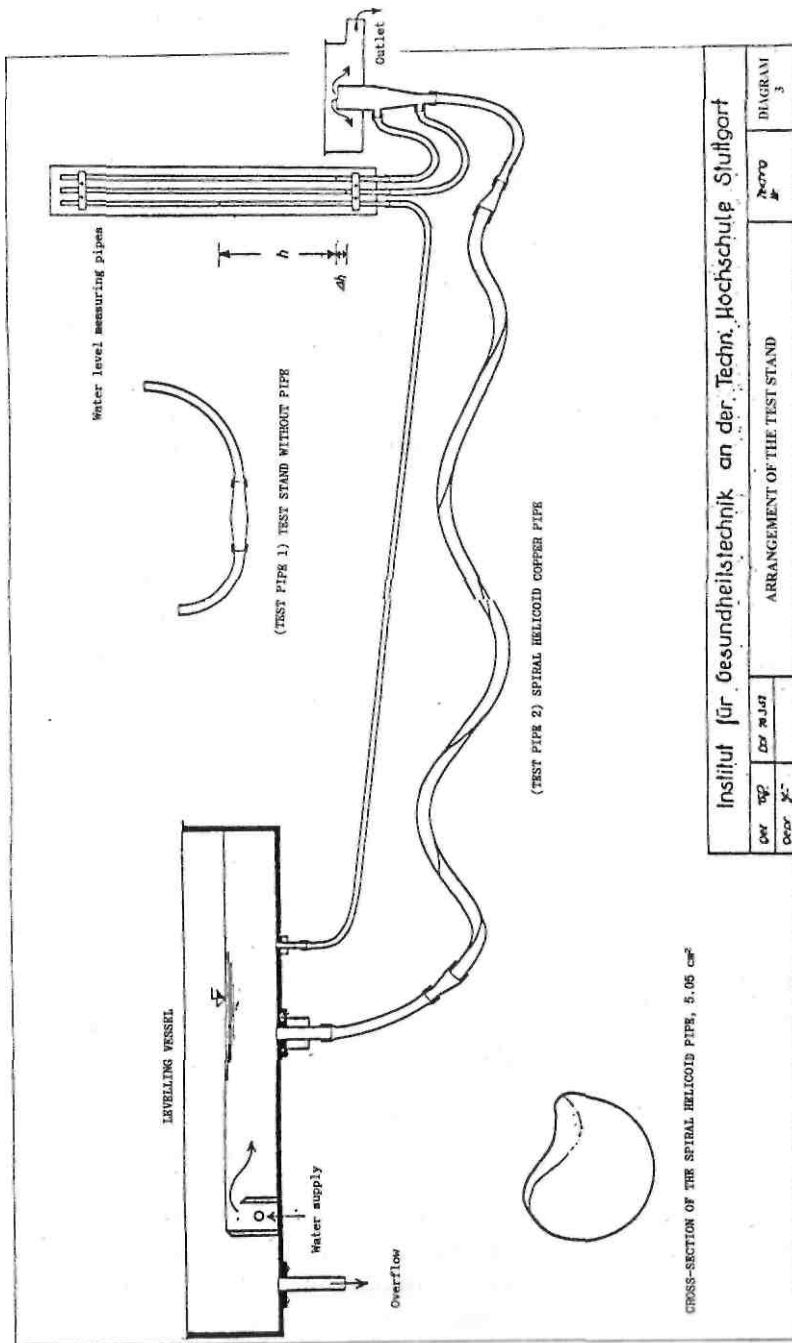


Diagram 3

- TEST PIPE 3 - Straight Copper Pipe.
- TEST PIPE 4 - Straight Glass Pipe.
- TEST PIPE 5 - Smooth Conical Copper Pipe.



- TEST PIPE 6 - Conical Spiral Helicoid Copper Pipe



- TEST PIPE 7 - Large Straight Conical Helicoid Copper Pipe.
- TEST PIPE 8 - Small Straight Conical Helicoid Copper Pipe.

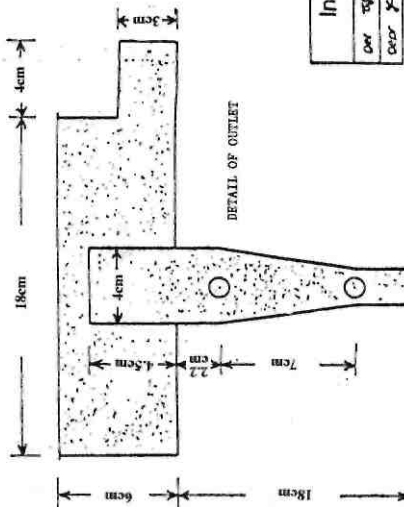


Diagram 4

Instytut für Gesundheitstechnik an der Techn. Hochschule Stuttgart		DIAGRAM
OW 100	OW 20103	2070
OW 100		10
THE CONFIGURATION OF THE OTHER TEST-PIPES		DIAGRAM
(This diagram originally belongs to Diagram 3)		4

the flow through the pipe, these must therefore have a greater capacity than straight pipes of equal flow section under otherwise identical conditions.

If the processes of motion, above and beyond those initiated by the spiral form of the helicoid pipe, are also synchronous with the momentum arising from the velocity of the through-flow, then, as in the case of the strongly curved space-spiral in the glass pipe, the water ought actually to flow through the helicoid pipe in a freely oscillating manner, i.e. without touching the pipe walls and without the formation of flow-impeding and separating vortices. In this case, as a result of the multiple in-winding flow motion, the pipe wall would then hardly be touched by the water at all. From this it would appear as yet a further step towards hypothetical conclusions, that under very specific preconditions the frictional losses usually occurring in straight pipes could be reduced to zero in the case of the helicoid pipe.

The same hypotheses, however, could also be put forward for the helicoid pipes, which in shape correspond to the weakly curved space-spirals formed inside the straight pipes and with which the spiralling motion of the water is created by a particular configuration of the pipe walls. This screw-shaped indentation in the pipe walls of the straight and curved helicoid pipes, however, by virtue of the flow patterns, will not only aid the formation of the in-winding flow process itself, but will also stabilise its actual configuration - as for example in the case of the rifled barrel of a gun.

The hypothetical conclusions arising from the flow experiments described under Question 1 above, were checked as to their formal logic by measurements of the friction losses and outputs of seven straight or spiral pipes of various cross-section and wall configuration.

From the levelling vessel of Test Stand 1, the water was conducted to the pipes to be tested by a rubber hose of 19 mmOID. A rubber hose of the same diameter served to further conduct the water towards the measuring outlet. This essentially consists of an outlet pipe, enlarging conically from 20 mmOID to 40 mmOID, with two connections for measuring the drop in pressure (Diagrams 3 & 4). The outlet pipe is positioned centrally in a drain catchment. A stopwatch was used to measure the quantity of water flowing through the pipe by the time required to fill a 15 litre measuring vessel. The head of pressure thereby expended, was determined with the aid of three measuring pipes arranged directly adjacent to the measuring outlet. The difference in height  $h$  between the water level of the levelling vessel and the outlet pipe were constantly measured. In addition the pressure gradient  $h$  was measured, arising from the flow through the outlet pipe itself.

The ascertained outputs  $q$  are based on the amount of friction and in Diagram 5 are plotted in the form of a graph using a double logarithmical co-ordinate system. In consideration of the various flow sections  $f$  of the different test pipes, in this case it was not the flow-trough velocity that was

graphically depicted in double logarithmical form, but the measured output  $q$  based on the measured difference in the heights  $h$  of the water levels. The connecting lines of the mutually related measured values, which could be described briefly as  $q - h$  lines, would then have to be straight, taking the Weissbach formulation as a basis, for which the relation

$$h = \frac{c^1}{2g} \times v^2 = c^{11} \times \left(\frac{q}{f}\right)^2 \times q^2 = c \times q^2$$

According to this basic equation the measured values of the pipes of equal flow section and equal roughness of pipe wall must therefore lie along a straight line. In the case of unequal cross-sections, however, the values would certainly be displaced by a factor dependent upon  $1/f^2$ .

As is shown in Diagram 5, the  $q - h$  lines of the different test pipes actually deviate very considerably from the straight line and exhibit a characteristic oscillating course, as for example in the case of the spiral helicoid copper pipe (Test Pipe 2), concerning which the possibility cannot be ruled out that, as determined, the measured values may not have been ascertained with sufficient care.

The smooth, straight copper pipes with constant (Test Pipe 3) and conical (Test Pipe 5) flow sections are those which best follow the hydraulic postulate  $h = c \times q^2$ . With the other test pipes, apart from the oscillating course of the curves, the direction of the connecting lines are characterised by a relation in which the exponent of the output  $q$  is smaller than 2. For the Test Stand (Test Pipe 1) itself, as well as Test Pipe 2 (spiral helicoid pipe), Test Pipe 4 (straight glass pipe) and Test Pipe 7 (straight conical helicoid pipe - larger cross-section) the exponent would be reduced to 1.67. In the case of Test Pipe 6 (conical spiral helicoid pipe) it actually decreases to 1.57 and with Test Pipe 8 (straight, conical helicoid pipe - smaller cross-section) attains the lowest value of 1.51. This permits the conclusion that the winding and twisting of the pipes can exert either a favourable or an unfavourable influence on the flow-through processes according to the prevailing flow-through velocities.

If for example, Test Pipes 6 and 5 are considered, which have the same length and conically shaped flow section, but which differ in relation to their winding and twisting, then the measured value arising from the position of the connecting lines is such, that the winding and twisting of Test Pipe 6 in the area under measurement has an unfavourable effect on its output. The straight, conical copper pipe with smooth walls (No. 5) at equal difference in height of the water levels, delivers more water than the helicoid pipe. The difference in the output, however, constantly decreases with increasing difference in height and at a value of  $h = 28$  cm, is completely cancelled out. With greater differences in height the helicoid pipe (No. 6) delivers a greater

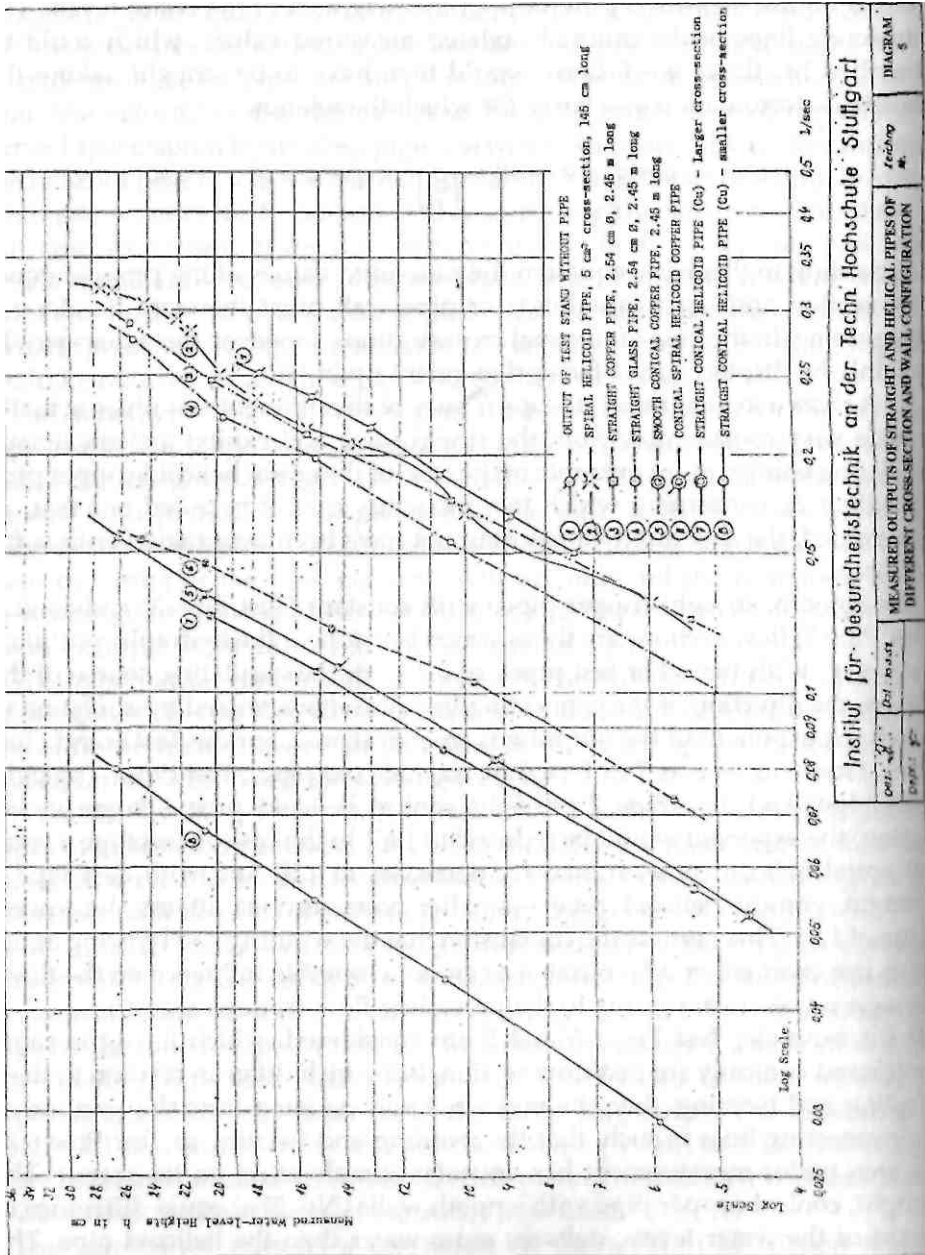


Diagram 5

volume of water than the straight copper pipe (No. 5). The same would also apply to Test Pipe 7, since it would have overtaken the straight, smooth copper pipe (No. 5) at the point where  $ft = 30$  cm with a value of  $q = 0.17$  litres/s. This hypothesis can now be confirmed by the thorough analysis of the measured values of Test Pipes 2, 3 and 4 as corresponding to the facts. The straight glass pipe (No. 4) at an equal difference in height  $h$  always has a smaller output than the straight copper pipe (No. 3) and the spiral helicoid copper pipe (No. 2), but up to a difference in height of 10.5 cm Test Pipe 3 delivers more than the spiral helicoid pipe (No. 2). From here onwards, however, the performance of the spiral helicoid pipe is always superior.

The conclusion, which is derived from the direction of the connecting lines of the measured values of Test Pipes 5, 6 and 7 and concerning the favourable effect of the winding and twisting of these pipes on the flow-through process lying outside the area of measurement, is therefore proven to be correct in the cases of Test Pipes 2, 3 and 4 by the ascertained measured values. The change from the unfavourable to the favourable effects of the winding and twisting of the pipes on the flow-through process to be anticipated beyond the area of measurement of Test Pipes 5, 6 and 7 in comparison to the straight, smooth pipes, already took place in the case of Test Pipes 2, 3 and 4 within the area of measurement. It is therefore appropriate to submit these test pipes to a thorough analysis.

It emerges from the values in Table 1, that the pressure gradients, the  $dh$  values at the outlet of the test stand, exhibit no uniform tendency. In order to determine whether the observed deviations are to be attributed to inaccuracies in measurement, the  $dh$  values based on the output were plotted in graph form (Diagram 6) in a double logarithmical system of co-ordinates. Whereas the connecting lines of the measured values of the straight copper pipe (No. 3) and the straight glass pipe (No. 4) have an even course, those of the spiral helicoid pipe (No. 2) and also of the test stand (No. 1), on the other hand, display characteristic oscillations.

The results of these measurements thus prove that the test stand itself, due to its semi-circular, downwardly pendent configuration, triggers off a similar effect to a coiling of the pipe, which however is completely or to the greatest extent annulled by the intervening incorporation of sections of straight pipe. In the case of the inclusion of the spiral helicoid pipe (No. 2), it is not assumed that the effect of the downward hanging test pipe (No. 1) has been neutralised, but perhaps even further enhanced. Hence, in order to maintain the requisite friction loss in the test pipes required maintain the output  $q$ , it is necessary further to reduce the differences in height of the water levels around the pressure gradients present at the outlet. In Diagram 7 the outputs  $q$  dependent upon the  $(h - dh)$  values are plotted on a double logarithmical co-ordinate system.

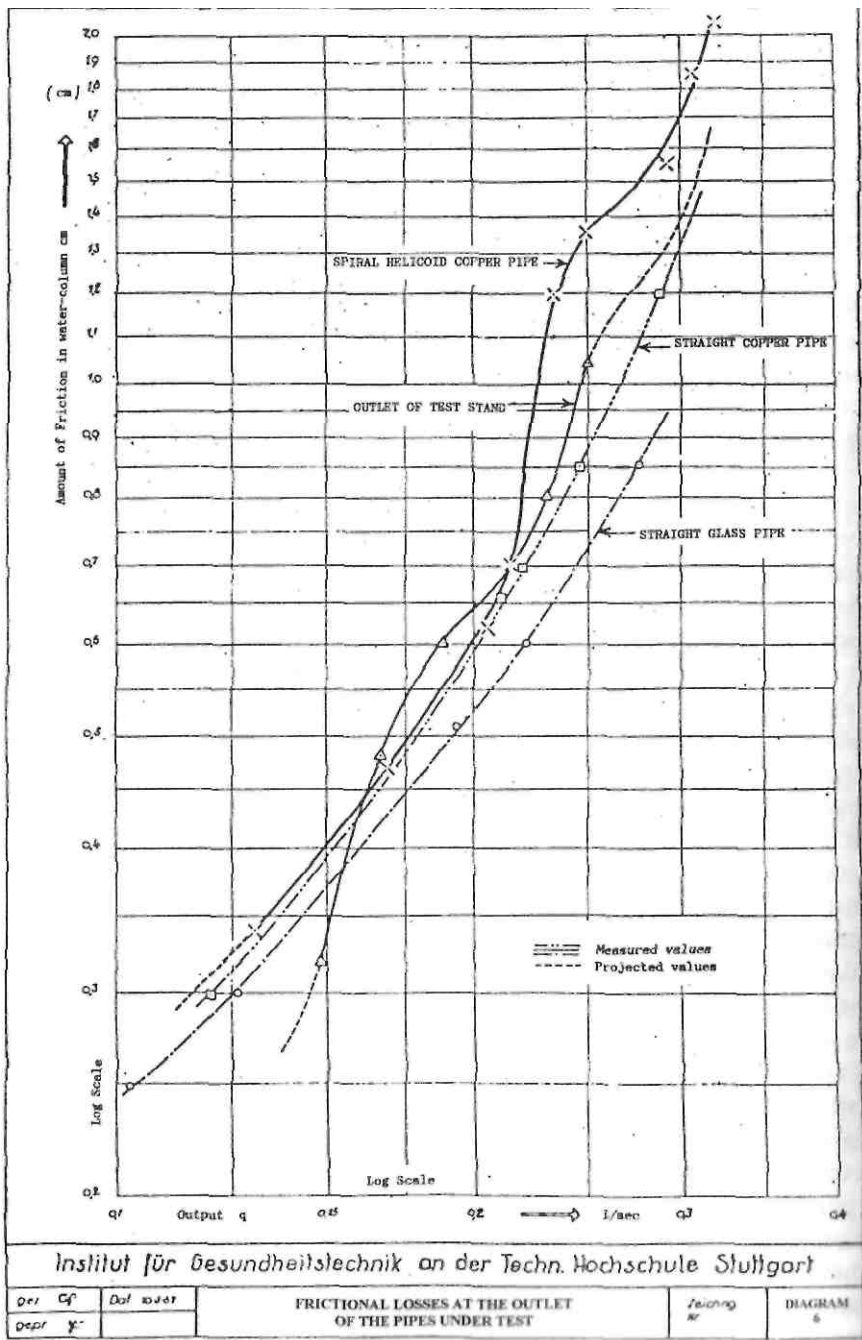


Diagram 6

TABLE 1

Output of straight and spiral pipes

	Output	Flow	h	$\Delta h$	h - $\Delta h$
	q l/s	v cm/s	cm	cm	cm
1) Test Stand without pipes but with conical inlet and outlet of the test pipe and rubber hose of 19 mm $\varnothing$ ID	0.148	52.3	7.35	0.32	7.03
	0.166	58.7	8.81	0.49	8.32
	0.187	66.1	10.70	0.60	10.10
	0.215	76.0	12.85	0.70	12.15
	0.231	81.6	15.30	0.80	14.50
	0.247	87.3	17.48	1.10	16.38
2) Spiral Helicoid Copper Pipe roughly 1.45 m long with a 5.05 cm <sup>2</sup> cross-section of the below form	0.130	25.7	6.0	0.34	5.66
	0.168	3.93	10.05	0.47	9.58
	0.206	40.8	13.7	0.62	13.08
	0.215	42.6	15.7	0.70	15.00
	0.234	46.3	18.0	1.20	16.80
	0.250	49.5	19.8	1.36	18.44
+ These values are obtained from a different series of experiments	+ 0.283	56.1	21.2	2.15	19.95
	0.294	58.3	22.1	1.55	20.55
	0.303	60.06	24.55	1.85	22.70
	0.319	63.38	26.9	2.05	24.85
3) Straight Copper Pipe, 2.54 cm $\varnothing$ , 1.45 m long	+ 0.320	63.4	25.7	2.9	22.8
	0.123	24.4	5.3	0.30	5.0
	0.177	34.6	16.4	0.50	9.9
	0.211	41.7	15.6	0.65	14.95
	0.246	48.7	20.2	0.85	19.75
	0.288	57.0	25.5	1.20	24.70
	<b>q</b>	<b>v</b>	<b>h</b>	<b><math>\Delta h</math></b>	<b>h - <math>\Delta h</math></b>
4) Straight Glass Pipe, 2.54 cm $\varnothing$ , 1.45 m long	0.106	21.0	5.5	0.25	5.25
	0.155	30.7	16.5	0.30	10.20
	0.192	38.0	15.6	0.55	14.75
	0.222	43.9	19.6	6.60	19.00
	0.275	54.4	25.3	0.85	24.45
5) Smooth Conical Copper Pipe, 1.45 m long.	0.073	-	5.65	0.20	5.45
	0.1035	-	9.80	0.22	9.58
	0.1200	-	14.65	0.20	14.45
	0.1445	-	20.70	0.30	20.40
	0.1555	-	24.75	0.42	24.33
6) Conical Spiral Helicoid Copper Pipe 1.45 m long	0.0525	-	4.60	0.15	4.45
	0.0820	-	9.30	0.23	9.07
	0.1075	-	14.25	0.30	13.95
	0.1320	-	20.55	0.38	20.17
	0.1565	-	26.40	0.62	25.78
7) Straight Conical Helicoid Copper pipe of larger cross-section, 1.45 m long	0.0565	-	5.35	0.17	5.18
	0.0844	-	10.70	0.32	10.38
	0.1060	-	15.20	0.38	14.82
	0.1240	-	20.40	0.22	21.18
8) Straight Conical Helicoid Copper Pipe of smaller cross-section, 1.45 m long	0.0292	-	5.90	0.10	5.80
	0.0438	-	10.70	0.10	10.60
	0.0545	-	15.70	0.10	15.20
	0.0665	-	20.70	0.13	20.57
	0.0788	-	26.40	0.18	26.22



The connecting lines of the mutually related measured values of the inlet and outlet of the test stand (No. 1), as well as those of the straight glass and copper pipes, now have a more even course than before. The connecting line, whose measured values emulate those of the spiral helicoid pipe, again exhibits the characteristic oscillation of the latter. The results of measurement evened out in this way are then used to determine the friction losses of the 1.45 m long test pipes. As is indicated in Diagram 7, each one of the ordinates between the  $q$  -  $h$  lines of the test stand and the test pipes are ascertained and compiled in Table 2.

TABLE 2

Output and Friction Losses of Straight and Spiral Test Pipes of Glass and Copper.

Output $q$	Frictional Losses in		Straight Glass Pipe
	Spiral Helicoid ↓ Copper Pipe	Straight ↓ Copper Pipe	
l/sec	cm	cm	cm
0.12	0.10	0.5	1.85
0.13	0.19	0.20	2.07
0.14	0.00	0.23	2.20
0.15	0.40	0.33	2.48
0.16	0.95	0.45	2.85
0.17	0.95	0.70	3.25
0.18	0.65	1.20	3.75
0.19	0.45	1.85	4.25
0.20	0.95	2.25	4.65
0.21	2.05	2.55	5.05
0.22	2.50	2.65	5.30
0.23	2.45	2.95	5.45
0.24	2.10	3.10	5.60
0.25	1.70	3.24	5.79
0.26	1.25	3.35	6.00
0.27	0.80	3.50	6.20
0.28	0.35	3.75	6.65
0.29	0.00	4.00	7.00
0.30	0.00	4.30	7.30
0.31	0.10	-	-
0.32	0.80	4.90	7.30
0.34	3.50	4.90	-
0.36	4.60	4.90	-
0.38	3.70	5.05	-
0.40	2.50	5.38	-
0.42	1.60	5.80	-
0.44	0.70	6.50	-

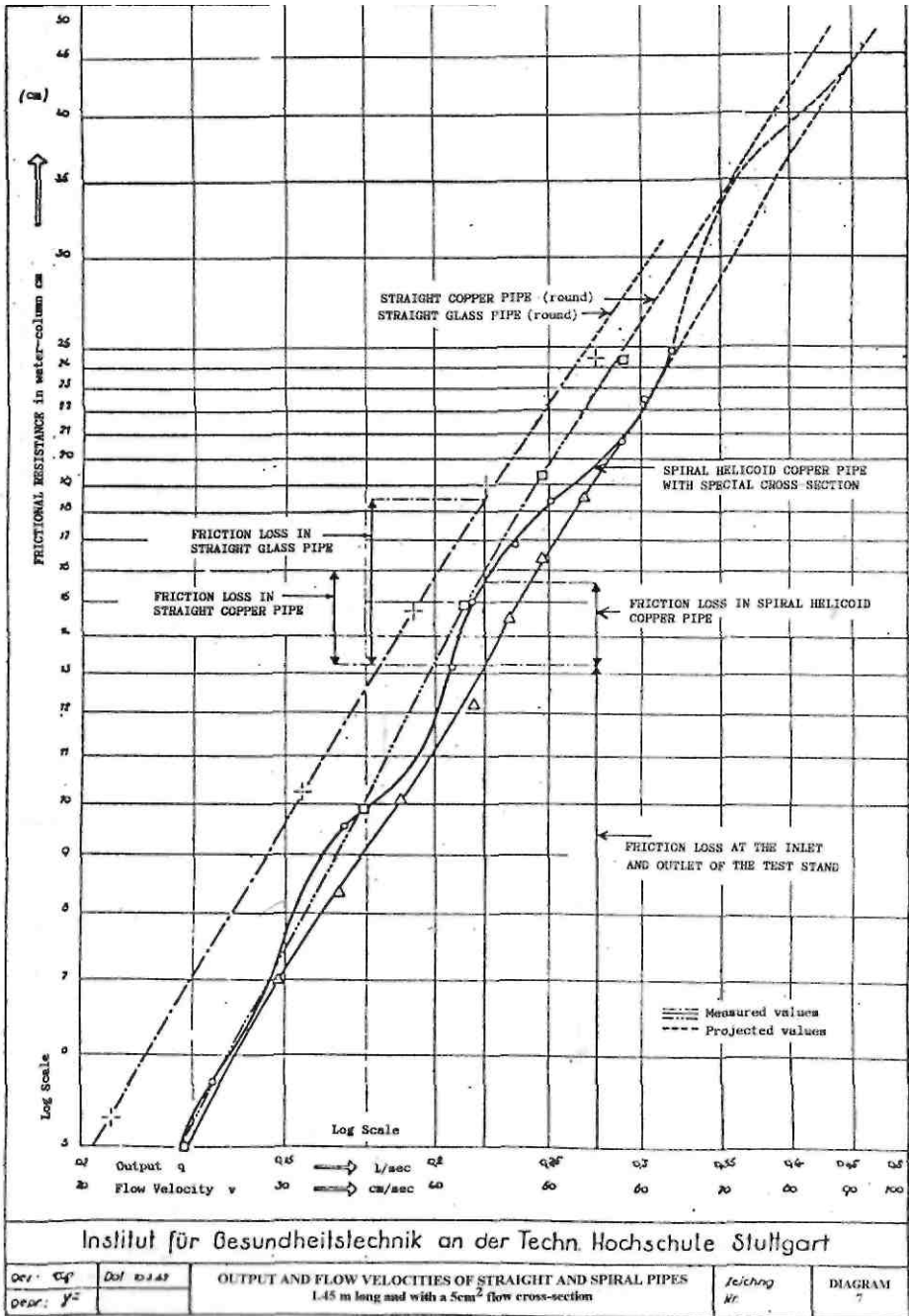


Diagram 7

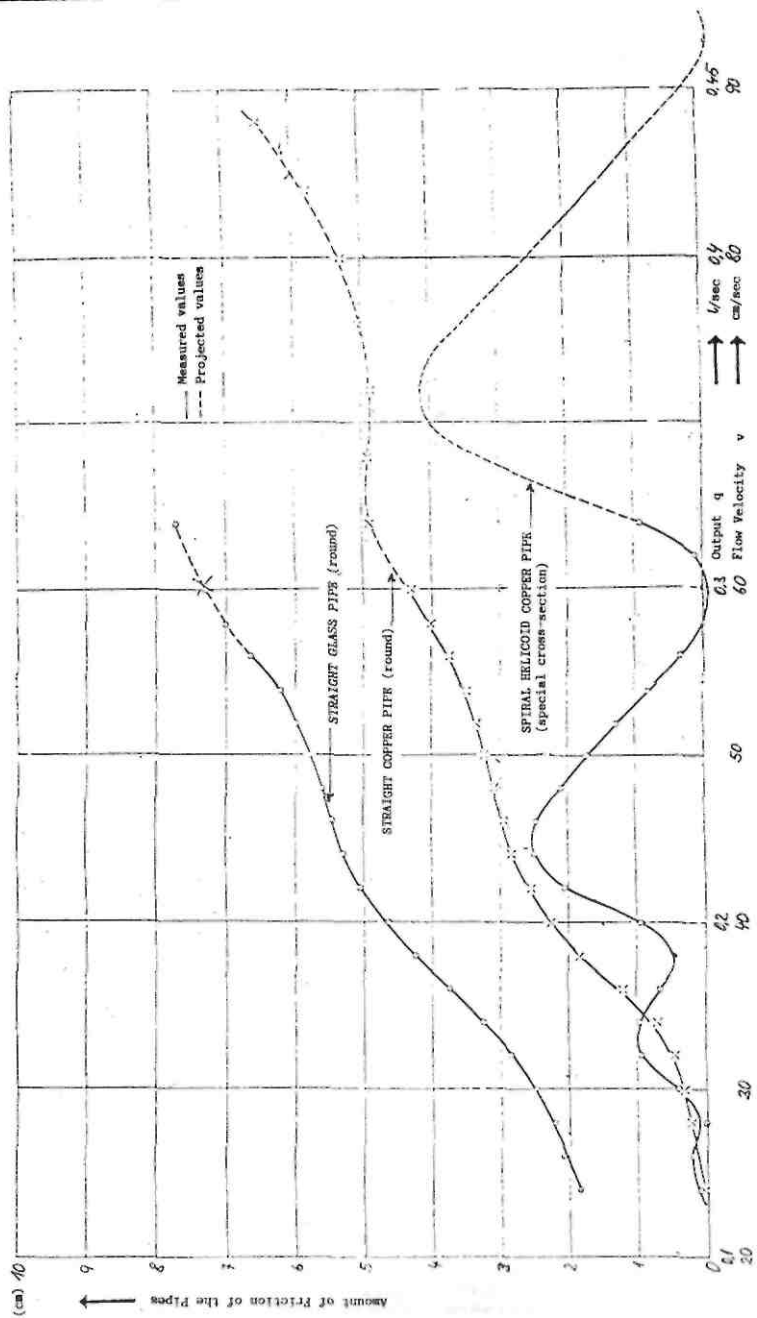
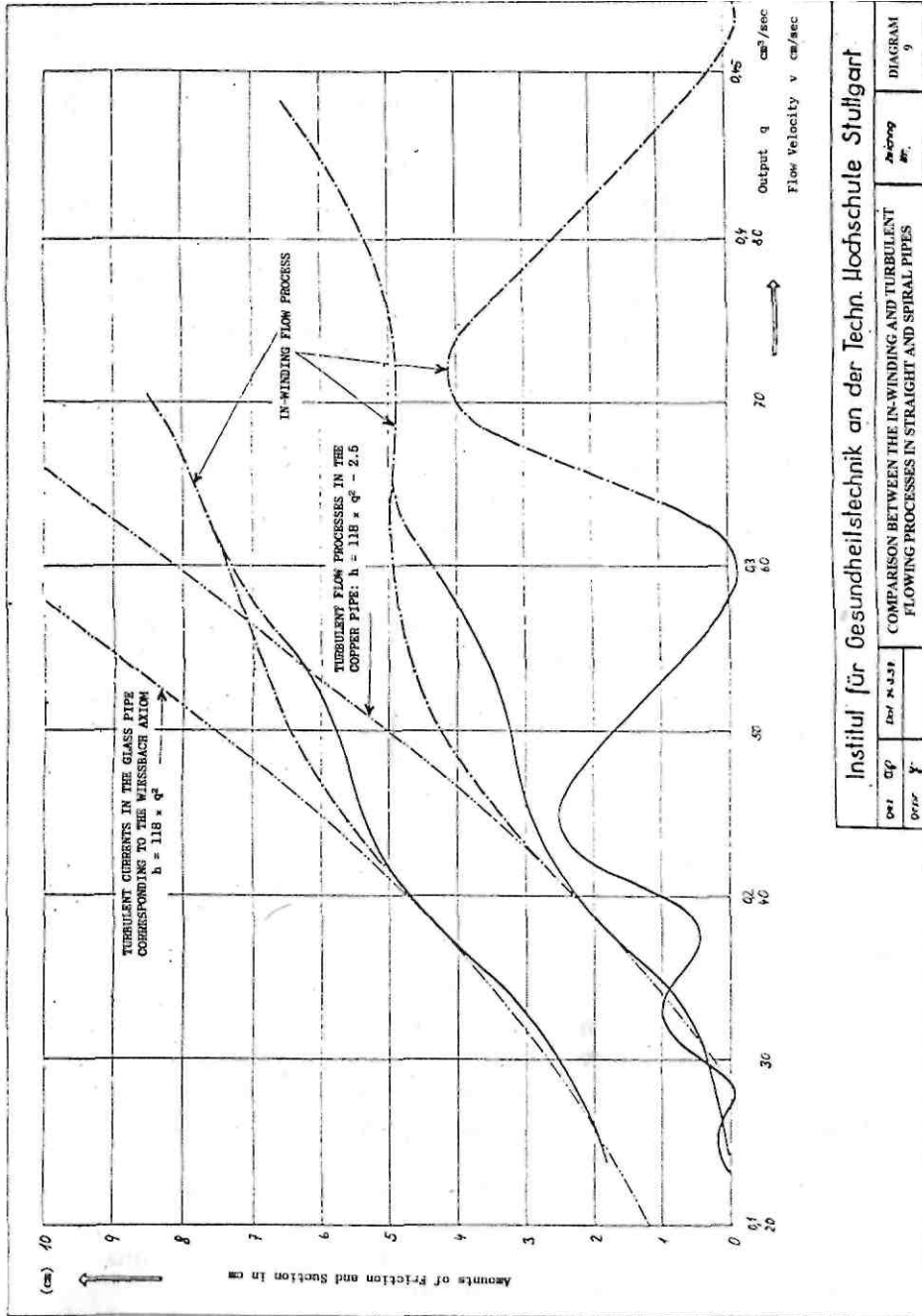


Diagram 8

Institut für Gesundheitstechnik an der Techn. Hochschule Stuttgart

Dir: cp	Det: H. J. S. R.	Output and Flow Velocities of Straight and Spiral Pipes	Diagram 8
Dr: F.		1.45 m long and with a 5cm <sup>2</sup> flow cross-section	



Instilut für Gesundheitslechnik an der Techn. Hochschule Stuttgart		DIAGRAM 9
Order No.	Order No.	
COMPARISON BETWEEN THE IN-WINDING AND TURBULENT FLOWING PROCESSES IN STRAIGHT AND SPIRAL PIPES		

Diagram 9

In Diagram 8 the output of the pipes are plotted in Cartesian co-ordinates based on the amount of friction and the relevant measured values related vertically and horizontally. It is to be noticed that all the connecting lines exhibit a characteristic oscillating course, which is most clearly pronounced in the case of the spiral helicoid pipe (No. 2).

From the configuration of the three curves, it indisputably emerges that with equal amounts of friction, the spiral helicoid copper pipe has a greater output than a straight copper pipe of equal length and flow cross-section. These findings, not to be anticipated in relation to the turbulent flow processes currently considered to be correct, however can be considered as a confirmation of the hypotheses put forward on the basis of the flowing processes evolving in straight pipes, due to the screw-shaped form of the water inflow and which were addressed in detail in Question 1.

With the synchronisation of the speed and form of flow of the water with the space-spiral of the spiral helicoid pipe, a decrease down to zero in the amount of friction was factually observed.

The total disappearance of friction, however, can only then occur, when the kinetic energy of the water flowing in the spiral helicoid pipe and co-acting with the spiralling motion of the same, induced at the inlet or by the rifling of the pipe walls, generates a free spacial oscillation of the water precisely attuned to the coiled configuration of the test pipe.

In this connection, however, the centripetally directed suctional force arising from the in-winding flowing process also contributes decisively. In relation to the experimental models examined under Question 1, this is actually so strong, that the end-weighted silk threads were formed into a 3-dimensional space-spiral corresponding to the flow process, against the gravitational attraction acting upon them. Whereas the self-same weakly curved flow processes with strong, centripetally directed in-winding motion and the strongly curved flow processes with slighter in-winding action, observed in the vertical glass pipe in Test Stand 1, were superimposed in a mutually impeding fashion, both of these centrifugally acting oscillating forces and centripetally acting in-winding forces in the spiral helicoid pipe could become united in a mutually supporting harmonic action, when the kinetic energy of the water corresponds to the combined form of the helix and the rifling, through the conduction of the water along a 3-dimensional space-spiral and a screw-shaped pipe wall.

In the instance of the spiral helicoid pipe (No. 2), this was the case with the following outputs and flow velocities.

The amount of friction in the spiral helicoid pipe approaches zero	
when $q = 0.14$ l/s	or $v = 0.28$ m/s and
when $q = 0.19$ l/s	or $v = 0.39$ m/s and
when $q = 0.38$ l/s	or $v = 0.60$ m/s and
when $q = 0.46$ l/s	or $v = 0.92$ m/s

and it reached its highest values

when  $q = 0.127$  1/s or  $v = 0.254$  m/s and

when  $q = 0.165$  1/s or  $v = 0.330$  m/s and

when  $q = 0.225$  1/s or  $v = 0.430$  m / s and

when  $q = 0.360$  1/s or  $v = \dots$ .

In Diagram 9, which is a more comprehensive complement to Diagram 8, it is noticeable that the output of both smooth and straight pipes are subjected to a rhythmical oscillation very similar to that of the spiral helicoid pipe. This is presumably to be put down to the spiralling of the water at the inlet of the test stand and to its U-shaped formation. The course of the connecting lines conforming to the measured values even permits the presumption that we are here concerned with two output-related oscillations lying one over the other, which probably arise from the combined action of the torsional motion and the configuration of the test stand.

Furthermore it is to be noted, that the q-h line of the straight glass pipe (No. 4) in the output range of 0.13 to 0.20 1/s, fairly precisely follows the curve, which in accordance with the Weissbach principle is satisfied by the relation

$$H = 118 \times q^2$$

In the immediately following zone of greater output, though, the q-h line of the glass pipe deviates very markedly from this fundamental Weissbach equation. The outputs increase much faster with increasing amounts of friction than could be anticipated according to Weissbach's basic law, as a consequence of the in-winding flow process generated by the spiralling at the inlet and the pendent U-shaped form of the test stand.

The lower section of the q - h line for the straight copper pipe runs exactly parallel to that of the glass pipe; it is therefore displaced downwards in relation to the friction level  $h = 2.5$  cm. The friction loss of the copper pipe in the area where  $q = 0.13$  to  $0.20$  1/s therefore amounts to only  $h = 118 \times q^2 - 2.5$ , despite a greater roughness of the pipe walls than the glass pipe,.

This reduction in the level of friction when the water flows through the copper pipes can only be explained by the fact, that copper is more favourable to the formation of the in-winding flow process than glass. As was already detected earlier, suctional forces are exerted on the water through this in-winding motion, which lead to the observed reduction in friction. The magnitude of this suctional force, therefore, can now be determined provisionally by means of the very closely associated decrease in friction that must attach itself to the water in the areas of reduced friction. The in-winding flowing motion generated in the copper pipe produces an adsuctional capacity A, where

$$A = 2,5 q \text{ in cm g/s}$$

in the lower region of the q - h line and which rises even further with increasing output from 325 to 500 cm g/s.

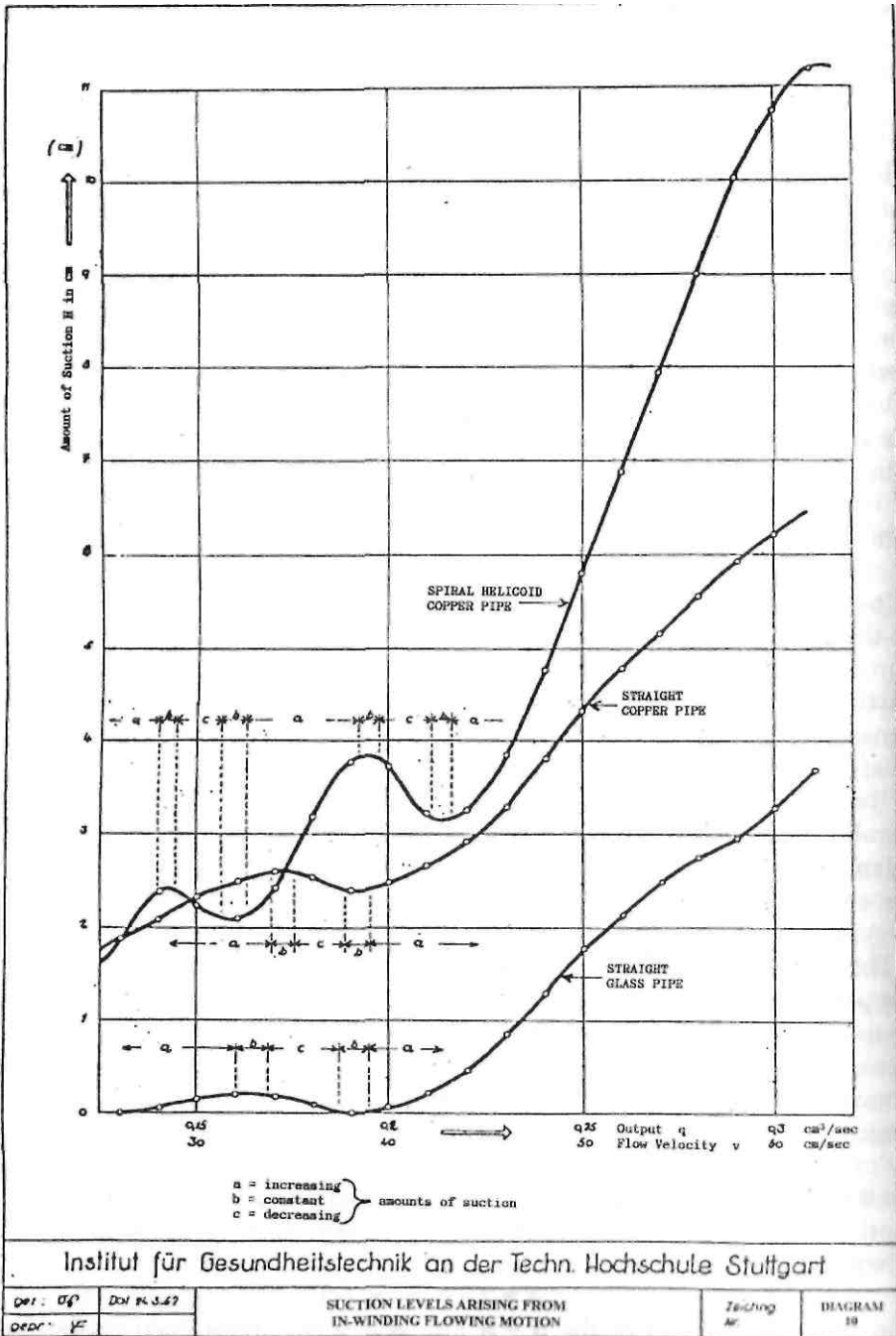


Diagram 10

Without erring, it can furthermore be assumed that the Weissbach basic equation for frictional loss in pipes should also apply with outputs greater than 0.2 l/s, if at the inlet to the test pipes the formation of torsional motion could be prevented. Hence it is possible further to extend the parabola for the friction levels of the form  $h = 118 \times q = 0.2$  l/s. The differences in the ordinates between these parabolas and the  $q - h$  lines of the three test pipes, then represent the reduction in the amounts of friction normally applicable and as a consequence of this, can also be defined as the amounts of suction that the in-winding flowing motion of the water creates and which, as described above, form the basis for the calculation of the suction capacity.

To illustrate these trains of thought, the amounts of suction based on the output were plotted in graph form in Diagram 10. With their aid the suction capacities  $A$  were determined, which in Diagram 11 were likewise plotted as  $q - A$  curves based on the output.

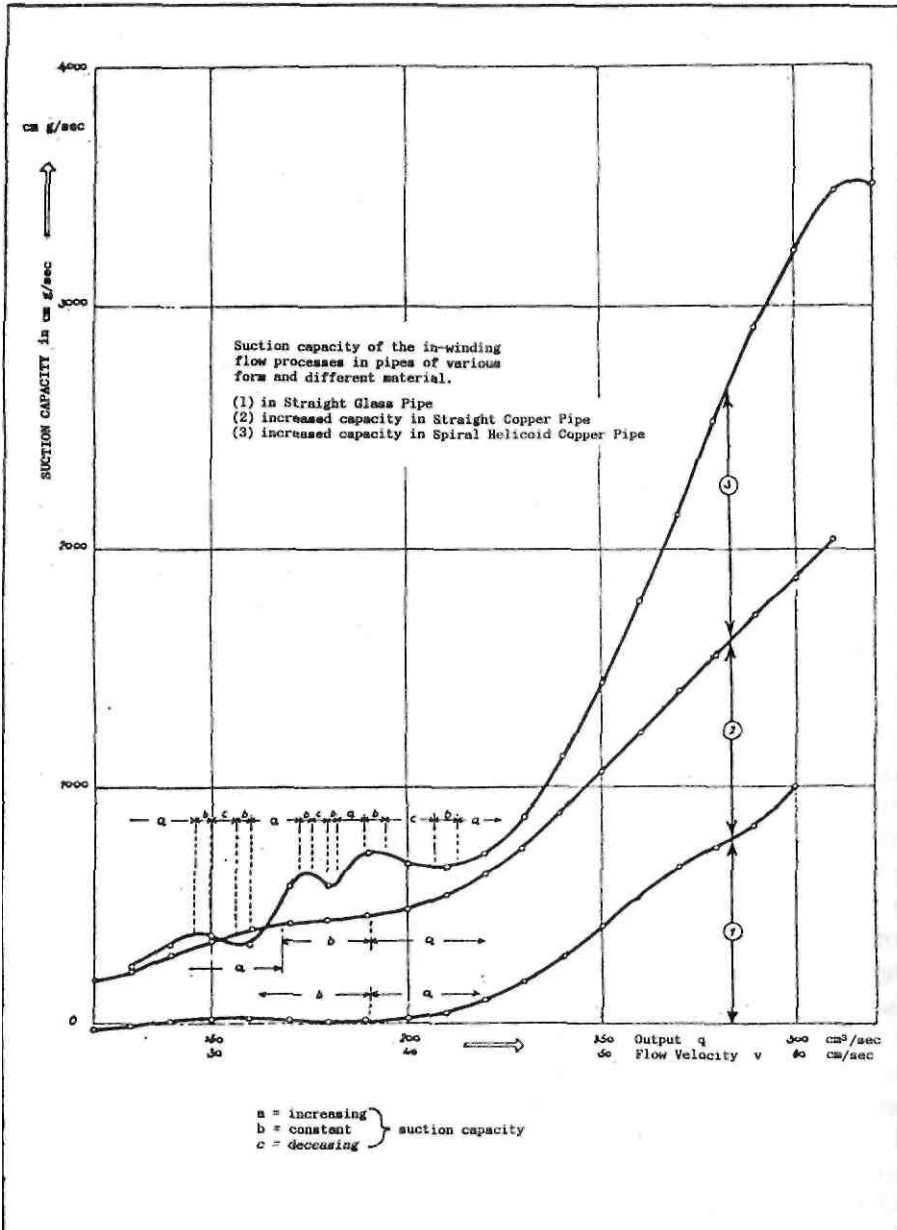
In the case of the glass pipe, the suction capacity constantly increases towards  $A = 850$  cm g/s up to an output of  $q = 300$  cm<sup>3</sup>/s. The copper pipe, however, under the same delivery volume, now develops a suction capacity of  $A = 1860$  cm g/s. The material of the pipe has thus intensified the suction capacity exerted on the water by  $1860 - 850 = 1010$  cm g/s. With an output of 310 cm<sup>3</sup>/s the suction capacity of the spiral helicoid pipe reaches its maximum value in the examined area of measurement, where  $A = 310 \times 11.1 = 3450$  cm g/s. It is therefore 4.05 times as large as that of the glass pipe and 1.85 times larger than that of the straight copper pipe.

The course of the  $q - h$  and  $q - A$  lines in respect of the three test pipes shown in Diagrams 10 and 11 makes the rhythmical fluctuation of increasing, constant and decreasing amounts of suction with increasing output clearly apparent.

In the zones of increasing amounts of suction and suction capacity, the amount of suction arising from the multiple in-winding flowing motion of the water is always greater than the amount of friction to which, according to the Weissbach principle, the normal turbulent flow processes in pipes would give rise. The interpretation and evaluation of the observations selected above hence also permit the hypothetical conclusion, that the synchronisation of the kinetic energy of the flowing water generates more energy due to the spiralling and twisting of the pipes than is required to overcome the frictional losses obtaining. A constantly increasing acceleration of the motion of the water would therefore have to occur.

This acceleration, however, cannot assume unlimited proportions, since the zones of increasing amounts of suction and suction capacity are repeatedly interrupted by those of constant and decreasing suction capacity. These interruptions only occur, when the optimum synchronisation of all the flow processes is exceeded, leading to the accentuation of the dynamic translatory





Institut für Gesundheitstechnik an der Techn. Hochschule Stuttgart

Ver. Nr.	Daf. 14.8.57	SUCTION CAPACITY OF THE IN-WINDING FLOWING MOTION IN PIPES OF VARIOUS FORM AND DIFFERENT MATERIAL	Zeichn. Nr.	DIAGRAM 11
----------	--------------	---	-------------	------------

Diagram 11

component at the expense of the rotational and oscillatory motions, whereby an asynchronous combined action of the various superimposed kinetic processes comes about. The course of the curves demonstrates that in the investigated area of measurement, these consist of relatively long sections of increasing suction capacity, interrupted by shorter sections of constant and decreasing suction capacity. In the areas of constant amounts of suction and suction capacity, the gain in energy arising from the in-winding flowing motion of the water - corresponding to the observation in the glass pipe - is just as large as the consumption of energy, which the normal turbulent flow would cause. The gain in energy however, as in the case of the copper pipe, can also be of a greater constant amount than the normal consumption of energy in turbulent flow processes.

In the zones of decreasing amounts of suction and suction capacity, the kinetic energy of the flowing and rotating water is not synchronised with its oscillating motion. Through this the turbulence of the currents is intensified to the extent that the consumption of energy required to convey the water in the pipes is much greater than the energy gain arising from the in-winding motion of the water.

Therefore the fact cannot be disregarded, that the representation of the observations in the above form may not reflect reality. It was employed first and foremost in order to obtain an initial overview of the magnitude of the forces capable of giving rise to the phenomenon of the in-winding flowing motion. It must be left to further experiments to understand their magnitude, form and effect more precisely. Since their existence has now become known and their conscious technical application lies within the bounds of possibility, they will be awarded a revolutionising importance in the areas of the handling and conveyance of liquid and gaseous media.

Since the courses of the  $q - h$ ,  $q - H$  and  $q - A$  lines permit the recognition of the superiority of the spiral helicoid pipe vis-a-vis the straight copper pipe and the inferiority of the glass pipe with respect to the latter, Questions 2 and 3 can be collectively answered as follows:

The form and the material of the pipes are of decisive importance for the formation of the in-winding flow motion and the suction capacity and amount of suction generated by it.

To Question 4:

**The Structural Change in the Water as a Consequence of the Multiple In-Winding Flowing Motion.**

Even if no exact measurements can be undertaken concerning the structural changes in the water as a result of the in-winding flow motion, it is very clear

from the experimental models under Question 1, that in straight pipes - even those with flow processes still flowing synchronously - this in-winding flow motion is already capable of giving rise to flocculations, which apart from the mechanical agglomeration of solid matter, must also be attributed to electro-physical effects.

The fact established under 2 and 3, that the material of the pipe exerts an extraordinarily large influence on the formation of the in-winding flowing motion of the water, cannot rest on purely hydrodynamic effects alone, but presumably will also have to be ascribed above all to electro-physical effects arising from a greater reactive capacity of copper in its interaction with the water.

These conclusions are also confirmed by the observations made in connection with the flow process, where silk threads with transverse copper filaments were incorporated and which was reported in 1. The darkening effects of the copper filaments, which were not present at a state of rest and which first appeared in the immediate vicinity of the copper filaments under the full motion of the water, indicate a slightly reduced light transmittance of the water at these locations. This decreased light transmittance, however, probably cannot be ascribed to the form of the flow caused by the copper filaments alone. It is to be assumed that here too electro-physical effects co-act, which lead to a localised change in the light transmittance of the water. It is hence quite conceivable that the electro-physical processes detected through the flocculation and increase in the in-winding flow as well as the reduction of light transmittance, are also able to cause structural changes in the water itself.

To Question 5:

The Prevention of Encrustation.

In the answering of Questions 2 and 3, it was determined that water moves itself in a freely oscillating manner in the spiral helicoid pipe, if the kinetic energy of the flowing water is synchronised with the meander of the space-spiral. It can hence be assumed with the greatest probability, that under these conditions no encrustation of the pipe walls will occur. This should not necessarily also apply in the case where the liquid conducted through the pipe would normally have a tendency towards the precipitation of its dissolved salts.

Stuttgart, the 15th of March 1952

Signed: Popel, Dr. Honoris Causa,  
Full Professor, Dr. - Eng. habitatus.  
Director of the Institute of Hygiene,  
Stuttgart University of Technology,  
Germany.

#### REMARKS:

1. In the above transcription of the expert opinion from Stuttgart University of Technology only a few minor, inessential deletions were made.
2. The underlining of various sections of the text were made later in the transcription.
3. The photographs Nos. 3 - 9A concerning the kinetic effects in the vertical glass test pipe, which showed the entwining of the silk threads, the iron filings and hydrophobic substances, inter alia, were not reproduced due to their poor quality. However these effects are clearly interpreted in the text.
4. The financial costs of this expert opinion (materials, personnel and fees) including the earlier costs of research, development and prototypes, were at the expense of the client.
5. This expert opinion was primarily concerned with the subsequent scientific confirmation of the earlier research and development findings of Viktor Schauburger and of the evaluation data of previous series of experiments in which Walter Schauburger was also involved.

In attestation of the correctness of the transcription

Signed: Ingeborg Schauburger.

Editor's Note: Due to the deletion of the photographs 3-9A mentioned in 3. above, the various diagrams have been renumbered in sequence from 1-11 to avoid confusion.

A misty river at sunrise with a forest in the background and green plants in the foreground. The sun is low on the horizon, creating a golden glow over the water and the mist. The foreground is filled with lush green plants, possibly water hyacinths, which are slightly out of focus compared to the background.

Foreword by **David Bellamy**

# Hidden Nature

The Startling Insights of Viktor Schauberg

Alick Bartholomew



# Contents

Foreword by David Bellamy	11
Introduction	13

## Part One: An Alternative Worldview

1. Schauberger's Vision	25
The water wizard 26; Log flumes 29; Water, source of life 31; Motion is crucial 32; Temperature controls 34; Evolution 34; Balance 35; Implosion 35; The visionary 36.	
2. Different Kinds of Energy	39
Subtle energies 39; Schauberger's worldview 39; Why the mystery? 40; Degrees of energy 41; The vortex as the key to creative evolution 42; Energies as creative process 43; Spiritual science 44; Different dimensions 45; Changing octaves 47.	
3. The Attraction and Repulsion of Opposites	49
The Sun as a fertilizing entity 49; Polarities 51; Opposites working towards balance 52; Gravity and levity 53.	
4. Nature's Patterns and Shapes	55
Sound as resonance 55; Resonance is about qualities 58; Plants have perception and memory 59; Cymatics 60; Patterns and shapes 61; Patterns in motion 62; Rhythms within the solar system 62; The confrontation of two geometric systems 63; Sacred geometry 64; The golden mean 66; The magic of the egg form 67.	

## Part Two: How the World Works

5. Energy Production	73
The inefficiency of modern technology 73; Entropy and ectropy 74; Scientific 'laws' 74; Energy pollution 75; The choice before us 77; Energy defines quality 79; The creative energy vortex 80.	
6. Motion — the Key to Balance	85
We use the wrong form of motion 85; The 'original' motion 87; Types of motion 89.	

7. The Atmosphere and Electricity 93  
Earth's atmosphere 94; Electricity 96; The terrestrial biocondenser 97; Earth as an accumulator of energy 99; Electricism and magnetism 100; Storms, water vapour and climate 101.

Part Three: Water — the Source of Life

8. The Nature of Water 105  
The memory of water 107; The creation of water 108; The anomaly point of water 109; The qualities of different waters 111; How the river protects itself 112; The temperature gradient 114.

9. The Hydrological Cycle 117  
The full half hydrological cycle 117; The half hydrological cycle 120; Temperature gradients and nutrient supply. 123

10. The Formation of Springs 127  
The veneration of springs 127; Seepage springs 129; True springs 129; How spring water rises 131; Producing energy from the ocean 133.

11. Rivers and how They Flow 135  
Stages of a river 135; Temperature and the movement of water 136; Creating a positive temperature gradient 137; The formation of vortices and bends 142; Vortices as the source of creative energy 144; The formation of bends 145; Conventional river engineering 147; Hydroelectric power 147.

12. Supplying Water 151  
Dwindling water supplies 151; Water for profit 152; Modern water treatments 153; Transmuting waters memory 155; Tubular water movement 156; Water main material 156; The Stuttgart tests 159; The circulation of blood 160; Water storage 162.

Part Four: The Life of Trees

13. The Role of the Forest 167  
Evolution of the forest 167; Destruction of the forests 168; A moral tale 169; Tropical rainforests 171; Forestry 174; Monoculture 175; Biodiversity 176; Energy in the forest 178.

14. The Life and Nature of Trees 181  
Trees in the biosphere 181; The form of a tree 182; Trees and



humans — a symbiotic relationship 183; Trees and colour 184; The physical nature of trees 185; Tree classification 186; Light- and shade-demanding trees 188; Light-induced growth 191; Man-made deprecations 191; The importance of photosynthesis 193; The creation of water 195; The maturation of water 196.

15. The Metabolism of the Tree 199  
Sap movement 199; Temperature gradients in the tree 204; The tree as a biocondenser 207; Root systems 209; Soil and nutrition 210.

#### Part Five: Working with Nature

16. Soil Fertility and Cultivation 215  
The crisis in intensive farming 215; Ploughing methods 216; Two kinds of electromagnetism 216; The golden plough 217; The bioplough 218; Alignment of furrows 220; Grazing and grass cutting 220; Artificial fertilizers 221.

17. Organic Cultivation 225  
Biological agriculture 225; Soil remineralization 225; Organic farming 226; Biodynamic farming 229; The role of subtle energies in Nature 231; Cold Fire 234; Fertilizing energies 236.

#### Part Six: The Energy Revolution

18. Harnessing Implosion Power 241  
The beginnings of implosion research 241; The American consortium 244; A new kind of aircraft? 245; Schauberger's search for free energy 247; The biological vacuum 249; Nuclear fusion 251; The repulsator 252; The implosion motor 253; The repulsive and flying saucer 254.

19. Viktor Schauberger and Society 259  
The human legacy 259; What of the future?

Appendix: Implementing Schauberger's vision 264

Endnotes 271

Resources 276

Bibliography 278

List of Illustrations 281

Index 283

# Foreword

Water is the commonest substance on the face of the Earth, yet we really know very little about this essential source of life. We do know that without it there would be no life — indeed there would be little in the way of chemical reaction, for water is the universal catalyst. Water is also our potential nemesis, for today it is widely agreed that if there is another world war, it will be waged over this precious resource. Water in a state fit enough for human consumption or for succouring the life cycle of the brown trout is now in short supply and its availability is diminishing every day.

Before Austria had stripped her mountains of all her old growth forests, Viktor Schauberger, a forester, observing how a trout could maintain its station in the midst of a turbulent stream, discovered the secret of living water. Distilled from the sea and leaving most of its burden of salt behind, it droppeth as the gentle rain from heaven, taking up kinetic energy as it makes its way back to ordnance datum (standard sea level), itself controlled by the balance of the global greenhouse.

En route this living water absorbs minerals from both soil and bedrock sufficient to nurture the pulse of life itself, tiny herbs, some full of the power of healing, and the natural vegetation that generates organic soil. The trees, reaching up to the Sun, power houses for transforming energy, are driven by living water, ameliorating the climate near the ground, controlling erosion and helping to maintain the life-giving water cycle.

If this cycle gets out of balance in any way, the consequences are dire, as insurance companies are now discovering. Drought, floods, winds and wild fire out of control, and perhaps worst of all, eutrophication, the clever name for too many nutrients choking the very arteries through which living water used to meander its self-cleansing way down to the sea.

There is much in Schauberger's philosophy that gets up the noses of the science that sees only financial profit at the end of their glass telescope of knowledge. Alick Bartholomew is to be congratulated for bringing Schauberger's vision into focus in this book at the most opportune time. Wave power is beginning to come on stream

with the promise of base load electricity cheap enough to split, not the polluting atom, but the water molecule, into oxygen and hydrogen — the latter to fuel the much discussed non-polluting, fuel cell-based, hydrogen economy.

Is this a wise strategy? In the absence of Schauburger as my mentor I sat beside the stream in my garden with Tornado jets making warlike passes overhead, and watched a trout enjoying what are perhaps the only real human rights, peace and access to living water.

David  
Bedburn, February 2003

Bellamy,

# Introduction

'I no longer own my own mind. I don't own even my own thoughts. After all I've done, finally there is nothing left. I am a man with no future.'<sup>1</sup> These were the words of Viktor Schauberger, an Austrian naturalist, the pioneer of Eco-technology (working with Nature) who had devoted his life to demonstrating how the desecration of our environment proceeds directly from our complete ignorance of how Nature works at the energy level. His controversial credo was that humanity must begin, with humility, to study Nature and learn from it, rather than try to correct it. We have put the future of humanity at risk by the way we produce and consume energy. His aim was to liberate people from dependence on inefficient and polluting centralized energy resources and generation of power.

Viktor was communicating his distress to his son, Walter, on the plane home from Texas after a nightmare of exhausting cross-examination to extract the secrets of the devices he had developed which demonstrated free energy, anti-gravity and fuel-less flight. He died five days later on September 25, 1958, in Linz, Austria, of a broken heart. Father and son had embarked on an ambitious, but ill-conceived, scheme hatched by an American consortium which probably had CIA and atomic energy connections, in order to persuade him to give up the keys to his mysterious research (see Chapter 18). Schauberger had in 1944, under threat of death, been forced to develop a flying saucer programme for the Third Reich, the secret weapon which, had it been initiated two years earlier, might well have tipped the war's balance in Germany's favour.

Schauberger's inspiration came from studying the water in fast-flowing streams in the unspoilt Austrian Alps, where he worked as a forest warden. From his astute observations he became a self-trained engineer, eventually learning, through the implosive, or centripetally moving, processes that Nature uses, how to release energy 127 times more powerful than conventional power generation. By 1937 he had developed an implosion motor that produced a thrust of 1,290m/sec, or about four times the speed of sound. In 1941 Air Marshall Udet asked him to help solve the growing energy crisis in Germany; however the research came to an end when Udet died and the plant was

subsequently destroyed by Allied bombing. When in 1943 Heinrich Himmler directed Viktor to develop a new secret weapon system with a team of engineer prisoners-of-war, he had no choice but to comply.

The critical tests came just before the end of the European war. A flying disc was launched in Prague on February 19, 1945, which rose to an altitude of 15,000 metres in three minutes and attained a forward speed of 2,200kph.<sup>2</sup> An improved version was to be launched on May 6, the day the American forces arrived at the Leonstein factory in Upper Austria. Facing the collapse of the German armies, Field Marshal Keitel ordered all the prototypes to be destroyed.

Schauberger had moved from his apartment in Vienna to the comparative safety of Leonstein. Meanwhile the Russians pushed in from the East and captured Vienna; a special Soviet investigation team ransacked his apartment, taking away vital papers and models, and then blew it up.

The Allies seemed to be well aware of Schauburger's part in developing this secret weapon. At the end of hostilities, an American Special Forces team seized all the equipment from his Leonstein home and put him under 'protective U.S. custody' for nine months' debriefing. It seems likely that they could not fathom his strange science, for they let him go, although this group, detailed to enlist as many of the front-line German scientists as possible, took back scores of other 'enemy' scientists to give a vital boost to American industrial and military research. They forbade him from pursuing 'atomic energy' research, which would have left him free to follow his dream of fuel-less power.

For the following nine years Viktor could not continue his implosion research because the high quality materials needed for his very advanced equipment were beyond his means, and he had no sponsors. In addition, he may have been haunted by remorse for having been forced by the German SS to design machines of war. Schauburger was essentially a man of peace who, above all, wanted to help humanity become free; so he turned his attention to making the Earth more fertile, developing experimental copper ploughshares.

## Levitation and resistantless movement

This strange life path had started on his return to civilian life after the First World War, when Viktor Schauburger went to work in the mountains. His experiences of unspoilt Nature were life-changing.

One such that would set him on a lonely course to change the course of human life for ever, he describes graphically:

It was spawning time one early spring moonlit night. I was sitting beside a waterfall waiting to catch a dangerous fish poacher. Something then happened so quickly; I was hardly able to grasp it. The moonlight falling onto the crystal clear water picked up every movement of a large shoal of fish gathered in the pool. Suddenly they dispersed as a big fish swam into the pool from below, preparing to confront the waterfall. It seemed as though it wanted to scatter the other trout as it quickly darted to and fro in great twisting movements.

Then, just as suddenly the large trout disappeared into the huge jet of falling water that shone like molten metal. I could see it fleetingly, under a conically shaped stream of water, dancing in a wild, spinning movement, which at that moment didn't make sense to me. When it stopped spinning it seemed then to float motionlessly upward. On reaching the lower curve of the waterfall it tumbled over and with a strong push reached behind the upper curve of the fall. There, in the fast flowing water, and with a strong movement of the tail, it disappeared.

Deep in thought, I filled my pipe, and as I wended my way homewards, smoked it to the finish. Often subsequently, I witnessed the same sequence of behaviour of a trout leaping up a high waterfall. After decades of similar observations that manifested like rows of pearls on a chain, I should be able to come to some conclusion. But no scientist has been able to explain the phenomenon to me.

With the right lighting, it is possible to see the path of levitational currents as an empty tube within the veil of a waterfall. It is similar to the tunnel in the middle of a circulating vortex of water plunging down a drain, which brings up a gurgling sound. This downwardly-directed whirlpool drags everything with increasing suction with it into the depths. If you can imagine this whirlpool or water-cyclone operating vertically, you get the picture of how the levitational current works and you can see how the trout appears to be floating upward in the axis of fall.<sup>3</sup>

Viktor used to spend hours watching fish in the streams. He was fascinated by how the trout could lie motionless in the strongest current and then, if alarmed, without warning, would dart upstream rather than be carried down with the flow. Having learned from his family about the importance of temperature on the energy potential of water, he did an experiment. He had colleagues heat up 100 litres of water that, on his signal, they poured into the fast-flowing mountain stream some 150 metres upstream from where he stood. Viktor noted how the trout he had been observing became agitated, and soon was unable to hold its station in the fast flowing stream, thrashing its tail fins to no avail. The minute, but nevertheless abnormal, rise in the average temperature of the water and the chaoticized flow that resulted, had interfered with the trout's hovering ability. Viktor searched the textbooks in vain for an explanation of this marvel.

He would often quote these experiences with the trout as having the most influence on developing his ideas, for temperature and motion were the foundations of his theories and discoveries. He subsequently developed a generator to produce energy directly from air and water, naming it the 'trout turbine' in honour of his mentor, though it was later called the 'implosion machine.'

## The non-conformist

Viktor Schauberger was discredited and criticized by 'the experts,' as pioneers have been in the past, from Galileo to Max Planck. He insisted that we have betrayed our calling and our heritage, by usurping the role of God and trashing our environment. He saw that we were hell-bent on a path of self-destruction, and predicted that, within a generation, our climate would become more hostile, our food sources would dry up, there would be no healthy water, and illness, misery and violence would predominate.

Where have conventional scientists gone astray? By not observing carefully how Nature works. If they did, they would be able to formulate her laws, as Schauberger has done, and then comply with them, so that human society could come into harmony with our environment. As he so often said, 'Comprehend and Copy Nature.' Instead, modern scientists believe we are above Nature and are free to exploit the Earth's resources without consequence.

Schauberger spelled out clearly exactly where we have gone wrong with our technology. How can we start to put things right?

Certainly by a complete reversal of the way we do things. This can involve only a sea change in the way we regard our lives, and a personal commitment to help bring about a major shift in our society. Only through sufficient numbers joining together in common cause can these changes begin.

He criticized mainline science for its arrogance and herd instincts. He also castigated scientists for their blinkeredness, their inability to see the connections between things. Schauberger did not blame the political hierarchy for the world's woes, as we often do today. He believed that political leaders are basically opportunists and pawns of the system. It was his own adversaries, the 'techno-academic' scientists as he called them, whom he held to blame for the dangerous state of the World.<sup>4</sup>

Visionaries and pioneers are inevitably a challenge to the establishment in whatever field, for they pose an imagined threat to the interests of those who benefit from the status quo. The degree of vilification seems to depend on the level of rewards at stake. Thus science, as perhaps the most exclusive and arrogant of disciplines, has done so much throughout history to undermine great innovators like Copernicus, Kepler and Galileo to, in our times, the biological pioneers James Lovelock, Rupert Sheldrake and Mae-Wan Ho.

Despite, or perhaps because of, his interrupted education, Viktor retained a great thirst for knowledge. His wife found domestically disruptive his tendency to stay up all night, pouring over books of every kind, especially the more esoteric variety. There was no question that Viktor felt he had a calling. This was evident from the fact that often he seemed to write in a trance-like state, returning to normal consciousness quite surprised by what he had just written!

Schauberger was a man of unshakeable self-confidence and inner conviction about the viability of his theories, and unsurprisingly had a lifelong battle with orthodoxy. Callum Coats describes how on one occasion during the Nazi era, good fortune saved his life from being taken in a sinister way.<sup>5</sup> He did, however gain important support. This was inevitably from the few scientists who were not swayed by greed or jealousy and were of more independent mind. One was the Swiss Professor Werner Zimmerman, a well-known social reformer who published articles by Viktor in his ecologically oriented magazine Tau. Another was Felix Ehrenhaft, professor of physics at the University of Vienna, who helped with Viktor's calculations for his implosion machines. A third very



loyal friend was Professor Philipp Forchheimer, a hydrologist of world repute.

Most people have heard of Viktor Schauburger only in connection with his inspired ideas about water or of the energy-saving machines that harnessed the enormous power encapsulated in lively water. They were, indeed, so fundamental and important as to justify his reputation as an ecological pioneer. However, as we are concerned with the broader challenge of restoring the damage wrought by humanity on the Earth, we shall need to present Schauburger's larger worldview of how Nature works.

Walter Schauburger, who unlike his father, had a formal education in science and was, for a time, a university lecturer in physics, worked hard to make Viktor's ideas more accessible to mainstream science. After he did a lecture tour in 1950 at a number of England's top universities, some of the distinguished scientists were asked what they thought of the Schauburger physics. While they agreed that the theories were quite convincing, the problem, it appeared, was that 'it would mean rewriting all the textbooks in the world.'<sup>6</sup>

## An alternative worldview

Viktor Schauburger suffered much from the vindictiveness of the scientific establishment towards him. Nevertheless, his constant complaints about them obscure his principal message, which is far more important than academic arrogance per se. This is that our whole culture is completely under the thrall of a materialistic worldview or way of seeing; we are caught in the excitement of apparently being free to do anything we want, and by the glamour of possessing lots of riches and distractions. Our science is but the product of this worldview, as is our philosophy and education, our religion, our politics and our medicine. You don't need to subscribe to conspiracy theories to realize that all aspects of our society suffer from a grand delusion that is contributing to the breakdown of our world order and to the collapse of our ecosystems.

The real issue is that the intellectual movement of the late seventeenth century, the Enlightenment, and its equivalent in science, Rationalism, have caused a great schism in human society. The philosopher Rene Descartes (famous for his 'I think therefore I am') has a lot to answer for. That movement put man on a pedestal, introduced the idea of humanity being apart from Nature and started to

interpret all natural phenomena by a process of deduction. The effect has been a separation of thinking from experience, of head from heart. Because of the dominance of scientific determinism in our culture, the more intuitive way of knowledge is considered as suspect, but there is a new awakening taking place at all levels of society of people wanting to get in touch with their intuition, who feel that rationalism is in fact the Great Delusion.

We have experiences every day that fall outside the accepted conventions of reality; like little synchronicities, intuiting events, the sensing of different qualities of 'atmosphere' as emanations from people, situations or places, the power of thought over action, communication with a household pet. If we share these with like-minded friends we feel like conspirators discussing something taboo that the thought police might catch. At best these phenomena might be labelled woolly, like 'psychic' experiences. We are lost because there is no system or structure to 'make sense' of an important part of our lives. They are not part of conventional wisdom.

Viktor Schauberger was one of the first to put in a scientifically verifiable framework a study of natural processes set free from the constraints of rationalism. He has widened our understanding of our place in the world by describing a worldview of a natural science that includes these experiences without recourse to scientific, religious or philosophical dogma. By understanding how Nature works, we can begin to relate our experiences to a much wider and more exciting worldview. Rachel Carson, who is credited with having initiated the environmental movement with her book *Silent Spring*, was a brave woman for taking on the multinational corporations. Schauberger is all the braver for taking on our conventional worldview.

There must be a fundamental change in the way we see the world (including our environmental policies), before change is possible. Have Viktor's warnings been vindicated? It is over 45 years since his untimely death, and much of what he prophesied has come to pass even earlier than he foresaw. There was some hope before September 11, 2001, that environmental awareness was gaining ground, if slowly. Recognition of the critical imbalances we have created in our atmosphere and of the urgent need to change our priorities from consumption to conservation was starting to spread. Now we seem to have backtracked a generation and we can't even agree to implement the kind of cuts in carbon dioxide emissions that are essential to avoid catastrophic climate change.

INTRODUCTION

We feel that Schauberger's perceptions are a vital key to understanding where our culture has gone wrong and that our future as a species depends on being able to reconnect with the natural processes he rediscovered. We shall, therefore, bring into twenty-first century relevance his views of how Nature works and where our society has gone wrong, to see what we can learn from his insights.

Viktor has a singular way of deprecating our culture, as the following comment on our conditioning reveals:

Humanity has become accustomed to relate everything to itself (anthropocentrism). In the process we have failed to see that real truth is a slippery thing upon which the perpetually reformulating mind passes judgment almost imperceptibly. In the main all that is then left behind is whatever was drilled into our brain with much trouble and effort, and to which we cling. To give rein to free thought, to allow our minds to flow freely and unimpeded, is too fraught with complications. For this reason the activity arising from these notions inevitably becomes a traffic in excreta that stinks to high heaven, because its foundations were already decayed and rotten from the very beginning. It is no wonder, therefore, that everywhere everything is going wrong. Truth resides only in all-knowing Nature.<sup>7</sup>

Schauberger predicted that modern human culture's destruction of the creative energies of Nature would result in greater violence and depravity in society. If we were to pay heed to what Nature requires of us, would we witness a reversal of this observable deterioration, and a gradual coming back into balance of a human society that would eventually be able to live in tune with Nature?

But as in our hubris we believe we are at the peak of material human achievement, there is a reawakening of the human spirit, and a great need is being reborn to reconnect with Nature, with our source. This book attempts to encourage and nurture this need.

## Towards a science of Nature

The majority of people in the UK oppose the genetic modification of food because they know in their hearts it is against Nature. The policy is being driven by the commercial interests of big business supported by a compliant political climate. Above all, it is justified

by a science with a materialist worldview that believes Nature exists to be manipulated and exploited for the imagined benefit of humanity. Accountability is apparently not an issue.

The national debate on GM held in Britain in 2003 showed that most people are deeply disturbed by the arrogance of the view that Man can do anything he wants on this Earth. But they have no science to turn to for rebuttal. What is needed is a Science of Nature to supplant the misguided science presently taught in our schools and universities. We need to work with a holistic view of Nature as omnipotent on the Earth, whose laws govern us humans as well and which we flout at our peril — in brief, a Nature with which we must learn to cooperate with humility.

What are these laws of Nature? How are we to know what is our place, and what is demanded of us? Viktor Schauberger excelled as a teacher of the science of Nature. He describes and illustrates, as few have done, how Nature works, with its marvellous and complex processes at the heart of the evolution of consciousness.

Viktor Schauberger is known at present only to a small, holistically-inclined audience that has a strong commitment to environmental issues, to organic growing or to the development of alternative energy sources. Much of the literature on Schauberger is sometimes difficult to follow for the less committed. This book draws on Callum Coats' seminal book on Viktor's work, *Living Energies*. We hope that the less technical approach of our book will facilitate for a broader audience how indispensable are Schauberger's insights if we wish to understand our present ecological predicament. The great ideological conflict of this new century will be between the very limited and flawed mechanistic/deterministic worldview and the holistic understanding of life as a wondrous, intimately interconnected and spiritual whole.

PART ONE



An Alternative Worldview

# 1. Viktor Schauberger's Vision

Our natural world is essentially an indivisible unity, but we human beings are condemned to apprehend it from two different directions — through our senses (perception) or through our minds (conceptual). A child just observes and marvels, but as our rational minds become trained we are taught to interpret what we see, usually through other people's ideas, in order to 'make sense' of our sensory experience. Both are forms of reality, but unless we are able to bring the two aspects meaningfully together, the world will present nothing but incomprehensible riddles to us. This, in fact, is the basic shortcoming of our present human society. It is the great weakness of the prevailing scientific orthodoxy. As Schauberger noted:

The majority believes that everything hard to comprehend must be very profound. This is incorrect. What is hard to understand is what is immature, unclear and often false. The highest wisdom is simple and passes through the brain directly into the heart.<sup>1</sup>

Some of the pioneers of science were able to bridge this dichotomy. Their way was to immerse themselves so deeply in the world of pure observation and experience, that out of these perceptions the concepts would speak for themselves.

Viktor Schauberger (1885-1958) possessed this rare gift. As a result of this, more than anyone else of his time he foresaw, as early as the 1920s, the environmental crises in which we are now engulfed. Viktor's forebears had a long tradition of caring for the welfare of the natural forest and its wildlife in the Austrian Alps. Although he was born into a family that cherished unspoiled Nature, Viktor, like most pioneers, was the rebel amongst them.

Born one of nine children, he seemed to get on well with his siblings. His father, nicknamed after the legendary giant 'Ruebesahl,' as he was 6' 8" tall, did not relate well to the young Viktor. He resented the young man rejecting his paternal advice to improve himself with a modern academic training. His brothers acquiesced with their father. The one to whom Viktor remained closest was his

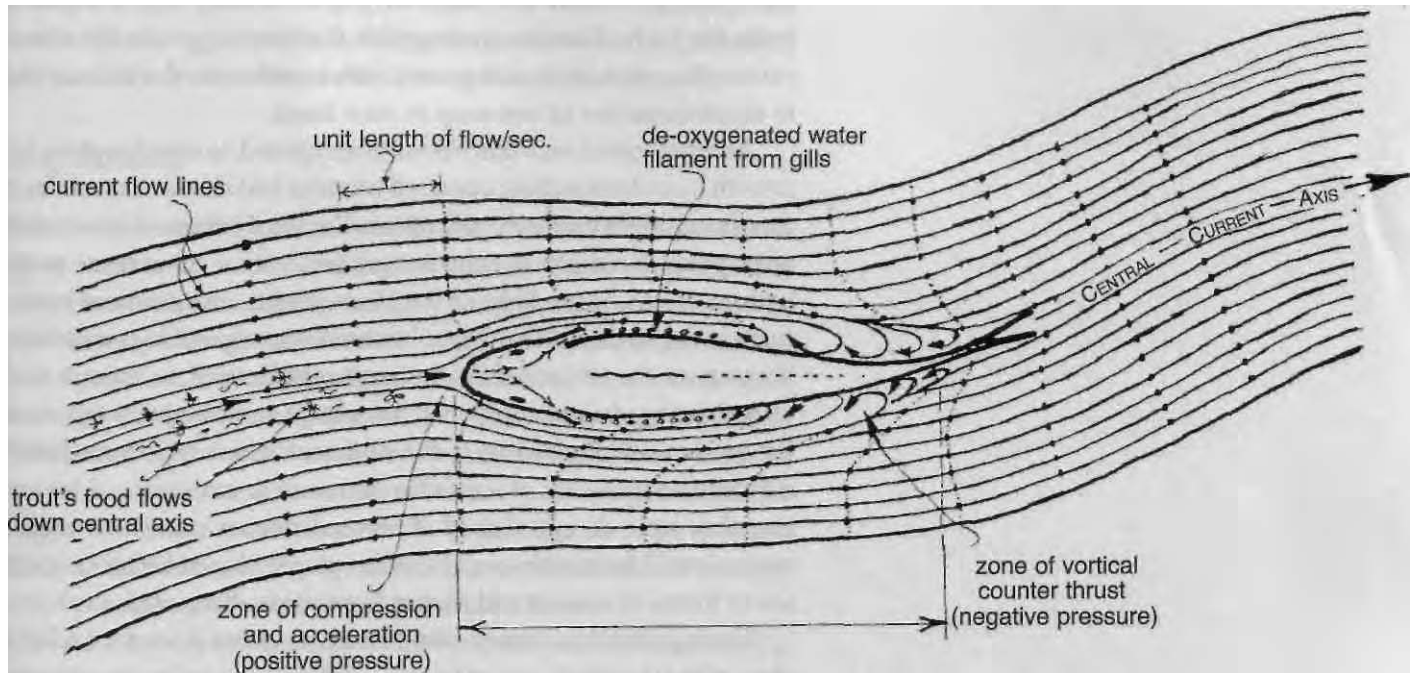
mother. But he told how both his parents believed in the healing power of water, and of their insight that the quality and transportive power of water in a stream was particularly strong on a cold night, and more so under a full Moon.

Viktor was a dreamy child, but was endowed with an extraordinary quality of observation, a keen intellect, and evident intuitive and psychic abilities. As a boy he would spend hours by himself in the forests, exploring streams, watching the animals and studying the plants. He was able to experience first hand what he had first heard from his family, and more, about the life of the natural forest and its creatures. He had no interest in the academic path and declined the opportunity to go to forestry college. He did some more practical training instead, and served an apprenticeship under an older forest warden. Married young, Viktor moved to a post in a virgin forest 93 miles (150 km) south into the mountains. Four weeks after his son was born, Viktor was drafted in 1914 into the Kaiser's army.

After the war he quickly rose from junior forest warden to gamekeeper and became the head warden of the forest and hunting domain in Brunnenthal/Steierling owned by Prince Adolf zu Schaumburg-Lippe. In this large wilderness area, almost untouched by man, Schauburger was able to study how Nature works when left undisturbed. Here biodiversity was undamaged, with many magnificent trees, an abundance of wildlife, and unspoilt streams teeming with fish and other creatures.

## The water wizard

Water was always Viktor's fascination. One day, accompanied by his foresters, he came to a remote upland plateau where there was a legendary spring that emerged from a dilapidated dome-like structure. Schauburger ordered it to be pulled down for safety reasons. One of the older foresters then warned him that if the structure were removed the spring would dry up. Taking note of the old forester's advice, and as a verifying experiment, Schauburger requested that the structure be carefully dismantled, with each stone numbered and its place marked. When Viktor passed again some two weeks later, he noted that the spring had indeed dried up due to exposure to the Sun's rays. Immediately he ordered the structure to be carefully rebuilt and a few days later the spring began to flow again. This taught him that water liked to flow in cool darkness.



Viktor's abiding interest was to discover how to generate energy using Nature's own methods. He worked out how a trout is able to screw its way up a waterfall by hitching a ride on strong levitative currents, and using this principle, the first generator he developed was the 'trout turbine.' To perfect this he needed more precise information on how a trout is able to stand motionless in a fast moving current, and indeed how it can suddenly accelerate upstream. The above diagram illustrates this amazing phenomenon (Fig. 1.1).

The trout is holding its station in mid stream where the water is coldest, densest and has most potential energy. Viktor studied the gills of the fish and found what he thought were guide vanes which would direct the water flow into a powerful backwards vortex current. Its shiny scales minimize friction with the water, but they also create scores more of little vortices that amplify the upstream counter current, particularly towards the tail, which cancel out the pressure on the fish's snout. A zone of negative thrust is created along the whole of the trout's body and so it stays in the same place. These counter currents can be increased by flicks of the tail, creating negative pressure behind the fish. Flapping of the gills amplifies the vortices along its flanks, giving it a sudden push upstream. The

Fig. 1.1. The stationary trout. The trout normally swims in the middle of the central current, where the water is densest and coldest. Its body displaces and compresses the individual water filaments causing them to accelerate. As their critical velocities are exceeded, vortices or countercurrents are formed along the rear part of the trout's body, providing a counterthrust to the current, allowing the trout to remain stationary in the fast flowing water. If it needs to accelerate, it flaps its gills, creating a further vortex train along its flanks, increasing the counterthrust upstream.



faster the gills move the more oxygen-deficient water is expelled from the body. This combining with the free oxygen in the water, causes the water body to expand, with an effect on the fish similar to squeezing a bar of wet soap in your hand.

Another experience that Viktor often quoted as significant for his growth in understanding, occurred when he had shot a chamois buck on a frosty night under the full Moon. The buck fell into a ravine and, attempting to retrieve it, Schauberger fell down a snow chute to the bottom. In the bright light of the Moon, he became aware of movement in the stream below where he stood. Some green logs were bobbing up on the surface, then sinking to the bottom, as though they were dancing. And not only that, but a large stone began to gyrate at the bottom, and then came to the surface, where it was immediately surrounded by a halo of ice. Other stones also surfaced, and he saw that they were all egg-shaped. It seemed that no uneven or ragged stones would float in this way. Schauberger developed his ideas of different forms of motion and shapes from these observations.

Having seen how water could carry its greatest load on a cold, clear night, he made practical use of this observation. During the winter of 1918, the town of Linz was suffering a severe shortage of fuel as a result of the war when the draft animals had been commandeered. There was a small stream that ran through narrow gorges and which was considered unsuitable for transporting logs, but he wanted to try out his ideas using this stream. His offer to help being accepted by the authorities, he describes how he proceeded:

I had observed that an increased water level after a thaw builds up sandbanks that are then partially dispersed when the water temperature drops during clear cool nights. I then waited for an increase in the strength of the water current. This takes place in the early hours of the morning, when it is coldest, and particularly at full Moon, although the volume of the water is apparently less due to its compression on cooling. I planned for the timber to be put in the stream under these conditions, and in one night 1600m<sup>3</sup> were brought down to the valley.

Viktor had discovered that when water was at its coldest, it had much more energy that enabled it to carry more sediment, gouging out deposits of sand, and concluded that in these conditions it would be

able to carry a greater weight of logs. This was a principle that enabled him to turn upside down the current theories of hydraulics, and particularly the methods of river and flood management.

## Log flumes

Schauberger was looking for a way to demonstrate to others his ideas about movement in Nature, and to discuss them with technical experts and scientists. His opportunity came in 1922 when the owner of the forest and hunting reserve on which Viktor was a junior warden, Prince Adolf zu Schaumburg-Lippe, was looking for a way to avoid bankruptcy. (His wife, the Princess, had very expensive tastes.) After World War I there was a demand by the expanding building industry for timber, and inaccessible stands of mature trees were earmarked for felling. The timber flotation methods of the time were fairly crude, straight channels running down the valleys, which caused the logs enormous damage, many being good only for firewood.

The Prince offered a prize for the construction of a flume to bring logs down from the remote areas, and Viktor eagerly submitted his plans. These were, however, rejected by the administrators of the estate as totally unworkable, as the proposed method went completely against accepted hydraulic principles. Through a chance meeting on a hunting expedition, the Princess asked Viktor what savings could be achieved through his method. On claiming that he could offer a cost of one schilling per  $\text{lm}^3$  against the normal cost of 12 schillings per  $\text{lm}^3$  for flotation, she offered to have his salary trebled should he succeed, despite his lack of academic qualifications. The Prince, driving a hard bargain, made a condition that Viktor should build the flume at his own expense and that it had to deliver a minimum of  $1,000\text{m}^3$  daily.

There was much scoffing by the experts who judged Schauburger completely mad, and who made malicious predictions of the outcome; as Viktor describes:

The construction was completed after some four months. The great timbers were in position. The day before the inauguration I tried a test. An average sized log was put into the flume. It floated down for about 100 metres and then suddenly grounded on the bottom, causing the water behind to rise and overflow the flume. I saw the scornful faces of my workers, realized that I had miscalculated and felt discouraged. The log

### 1. VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER'S VISION

was taken out of the flume. I thought that there was too little water and too sharp a drop. I did not know what to do. So I sent my workers home so that I could quietly consider the problem.

The curves of the flume were correct; of that there was no doubt. So what had gone wrong? I walked slowly along the flume until I came to the trap and the sorting basins, from which a further length of flume continued. The basins were full. I sat on a rock above the water in the Sun.

Suddenly I felt something moving below my leather trousers. Jumping up I saw a coiled snake. I picked it up and threw it away; it fell into the basin and tried to get out, but the bank was too steep. As it swam back and forth I was amazed that it could swim so fast without fins. Observing it through my binoculars I saw its peculiar twisting movements in the clear water. Finally the snake reached the far bank. For some time I stood quietly and went over in my mind the snake's bodily movements of horizontal and vertical curves. Suddenly I understood how it had done it!

The snake's movement was that of a spiral space-curve twisting like the horn of a Kudu antelope. Calling back his workers, he ordered the holding basin to be emptied and the log removed. He then gave instructions to attach thin wooden slats to the curved sides of the flume walls, which would act like the rifling in a gun barrel, and would make the water rotate anti-clockwise on left hand bends and clockwise at right hand bends. Promised double wages, they worked through the night, and the adjustments were completed in time for the opening in the morning.

The inauguration of the flume was attended by the Prince and Princess, by the Chief Forestry Commissioner and a number of hydraulic specialists, the last ready to gloat over Viktor's humiliation. After greeting the royal couple and the head forester, he continued:

I opened the lock, behind which my workers started to arrange the smaller logs in the water. Unnoticed, a heavier log about 3ft (90cm) in diameter went in with the others. The senior log master shouted, 'We cannot have that one.' I gave a quick wave and the unwanted log floated high, towards the outflow. Quickly it created a blockage that raised the water level. No one said anything, staring at the log rising out of the

water, waiting for the flume to overflow. Suddenly there was a gurgling noise. The heavy log swung first to the right, then to the left, twisting like a snake, its head high as it floated away quickly. A few seconds later the log slipped through the first curve and was gone.

Schauberger's flumes followed the curves of the valley, with guide vanes mounted on the curves, making the water spiral along its axis. With the careful monitoring of temperature along the route, bringing in cold water where necessary, he found it was possible to float logs under conditions regarded as impossible, using significantly less water, and achieving very high delivery rates. Parts of his flumes can still be seen in Austria today.

The flume at Steyrling was a great success, much to the chagrin of the observing hydraulic engineers who were so sure his crazy scheme would fail. Schauburger's fame quickly spread. Experts came from all over Europe to study the flume's construction. He was appointed State Consultant for Timber Flotation at a high salary. The academics were furious that he could give directives on technical questions which he could not understand with his inadequate education, and that he was paid twice as much as any of them. In the crisis that followed, Viktor resigned, and accepted a job with one of Austria's largest building contractors for whom he built installations all over Europe. If this has been his only accomplishment, Viktor Schauburger would still be known as the man who completely mastered the art of transporting timber by water.

## Water, source of life

His painstaking and inspired studies of water were the source for a seminal paper that Schauburger wrote on 'Temperature and the Movement of Water.'<sup>2</sup> Central to these was the influence of minute differences in temperature, which are presently wholly ignored by modern hydraulics and hydrology. Natural, living, water, which is conventionally regarded as a homogenous substance, he showed to be composed of many strata or layers with subtle variations in temperature and electric charge which influence the water's motion, its form of flow and its physical properties.

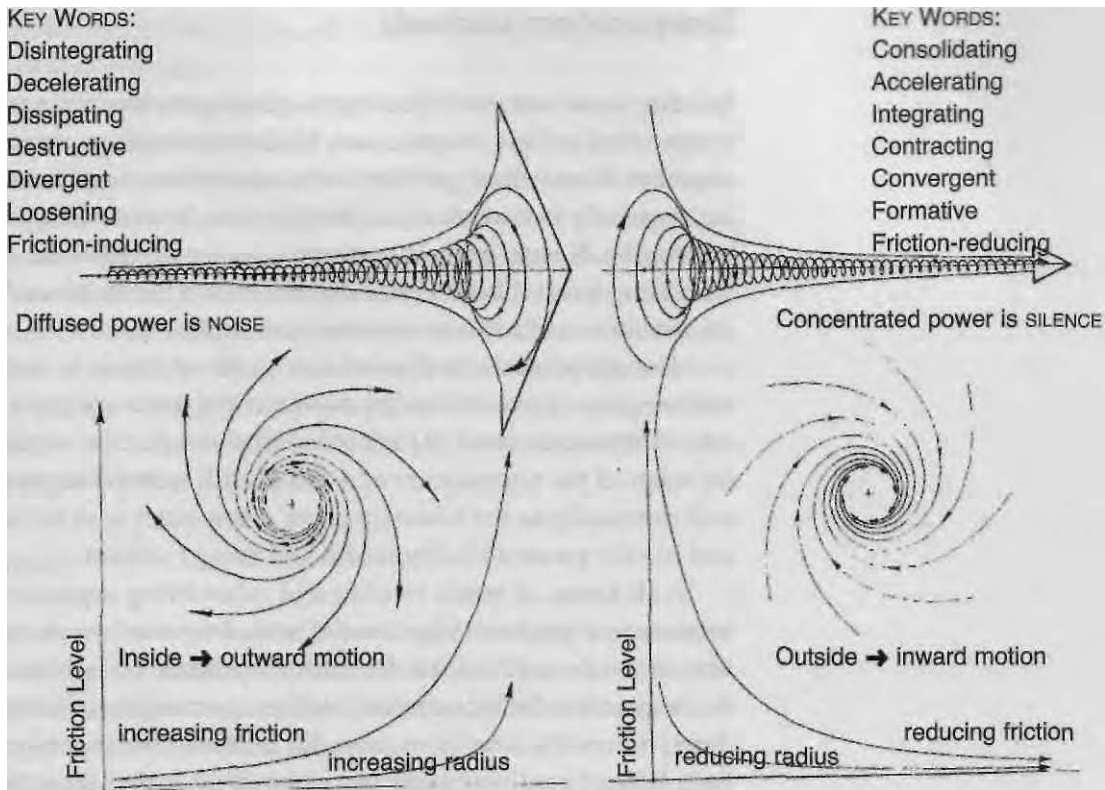
Schauberger saw water as a pulsating, living substance that energizes all of life, both organic and inorganic. He called it 'the life blood

of the Earth.' Whether as water, blood or sap (which are essentially water), it is the indispensable constituent of all life-forms, and its quality and temperature is fundamental to health. When it is healthy it has a complex structure that enables it to communicate information, carry energy, nutrients and healing, to self-cleanse and discharge wastes. He believed that one of the causes of the disintegration of our culture is our disrespect for and destruction of water, the bringer of life, for in doing so we destroy life itself. Viktor also profoundly believed that our dangerous technologies produce poor water that has lost its energy and its ability to pulsate — and is effectively lifeless. This dead water produces inadequate nutrition, and Viktor believed that its regressive energies are responsible for degenerative diseases like cancer, for lower intelligence and for community turmoil.

Natural forests (not the monoculture plantations of today) are the cradle of water and also the main source of oxygen for the planet. Their precipitate destruction, Schauberger predicted, would result in global warming, severe water shortage and the creation of deserts. He made brilliant observations of the way in which trees in a natural, diversified environment are biocondensers of energy (accumulating and storing energy from both Sun and Earth) — how the groundwater (man permitting) brings Earth's energy to the tree in order to balance the Sun's energy.

## Motion is crucial

An understanding of motion may be the most important of Schauberger's discoveries. Our current technology uses the wrong form of motion. Our machines and processes channel agents such as air, water, other liquids and gases into the type of motion that Nature uses only to decompose and dissolve matter. Nature uses another form of motion for creating and rebuilding. Our technology's mode of motion creates chaos, noise and heat, bringing disease to organisms and the breakdown of structures. Visualize if you will, what happens in an explosion — matter is torn apart, fragmented and destroyed. Its effect is to create degraded energy. Through its dependence on the decomposing mode of motion our technology creates enormous energy pollution and entropy, dangerously affecting the vital biodiversity and balance of our ecosystems. Our mechanical, technological systems of motion are nearly all heat- and friction-inducing, with the fastest movement at the



periphery (as in a wheel), a form of motion that is disintegrative, noisy and inefficient; this is the way we generate our power — centrifugally. By contrast, Nature uses the opposite, centripetal, vortical form of motion, moving from the outside to the inside with increasing velocity, which acts to cool, to condense, to structure, assisting the emergence of higher quality and more complex systems.

Spirals are a basic form of motion in Nature, but Schauberger's recognition of the vortex (see p. 42) as the principal creative movement system in the Universe is at the core of his Eco-technology and the key to his valuable implosion research. From the tornado to plant growth, it is Nature's mechanism for transforming energy from one level to another (Fig. 1.2).

Asked about our technology 'How else should it be done?' Viktor's answer was: 'Exactly in the opposite way that it is done today.' He saw that the potential for creating energy for human needs by replicating the in-winding motion of Nature was the way of the future.

Fig. 1.2. Centrifugal and centripetal movement. Comparison between axial>radial (inside>outwards) motion, the way our current technology works, and radial>axial (outside>inwards) motion, Nature's way of generating creative energy.

## 1. VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER'S VISION

## Temperature controls

Another cornerstone of Viktor's ecotechnology is the importance of temperature in Nature's processes. Modern technology creates vast amounts of waste heat (entropy) which contribute to global warming, especially in cities and industrial centres (carbon dioxide from burning fossil fuels being the principal source of global warming). Increasing heat will ultimately destroy life on Earth. Nature's creativity, however, thrives on measured coolness.

Most significantly, he showed how small variations in temperature are as crucial to the healthy movement of water and sap as they are to the human blood. He identified in particular the importance for water of the temperature of +4°C (39°F), referred to physically and chemically as the 'anomaly point,' when water is at its densest and has the greatest vitality, health and energy content.

In all forms of water, in trees and other living organisms, the temperature gradient (the upward and downward movement of temperature) is active. In the natural process of synthesis and decomposition, the temperature is either approaching (positive gradient) or moving away from (negative gradient) the anomaly point. Each form of gradient has its special function in Nature's great production; the positive (cooling) temperature gradient must play the principal role if evolution is to unfold creatively. We shall be looking at this in more detail in the appropriate chapters.

Schauberger found that temperature changes according to certain patterns and cycles that activate life and death, bringing increase and decrease, decomposition and renewal. Temperature controls the innate energies that produce the pulsations that punctuate and control all life's processes. These energy pulsations which at one moment dissociate or disconnect, and at another recombine both energy and matter, are the mechanism for creating the countless individualities and qualities that make up life as we know it. Viktor said that the cyclical change of temperature creates the conditions suitable for the evolution of new individual life forms or the renewal of existing ones.

## Evolution

Viktor Schauburger recognized that Nature's evolutionary purpose is to facilitate the emergence of higher life forms, to promote greater

complexity of interrelationships and to raise the level of consciousness of the higher life forms, all a consequence of the continual refinement of energies.

Viktor showed that highly ordered systems lose their stability when their environment suffers deterioration. He predicted that a decrease of biodiversity in Nature would bring an increase in violence and a degeneration of spiritual qualities in the human community.

We think of evolution in terms of technological development. But if one aspect of potentiality is developed at the expense of the others, you end up with an unbalanced person, or even with a monster. This is one of the most important lessons our culture has to learn. It might well apply to the unregulated biotechnology industry. What level of crisis will be required to force us to rethink our priorities and change direction?

## Balance

Perhaps the most important of Schauberger's insights that we have to heed is the importance of balance in Nature. The nature of some attribute of an organism, its wholeness or unity is composed of two seemingly opposed qualities in resonant balance. Thus, for example, both egoism and altruism are necessary as human qualities, but for evolution to proceed, altruism must be more in the ascendant. Because our culture has emphasized the coarser qualities, our creative evolution has been arrested, and we have attracted the darker energies of degeneration, with increasing disorder and violence as the outcome.

All the qualities found in Nature have a coarser physical aspect that our worldview attracts, to the discouragement of higher, more subtle energies; we shall be looking at how this impinges on the environment as a whole. In this way Nature's balance is upset, the most obvious being the supremacy today of the more aggressive energies of humankind.

## Implosion

Nature's methods of producing energy are silent, but inherently far more effective and powerful than our mechanical techniques, as Schauberger was to prove with his implosion machines that produced prodigious amounts of power. The difference between the



two forms of energy production is fundamental to the quality of any process in our world.

Not only does this implosion technology produce much more energy than the 'explosive' methods currently employed, but it creates no waste, pollution, global warming or other damage to Earth's fragile ecosystems. Schauberger invented a number of 'over-unity' machines that produced a substantial excess of power over input. These included means of propulsion for aircraft, submarines, and cars; different devices that produced power, coolness or heat for the home, and invaluable machines for making high quality springwater from polluted water. Unfortunately the working models were destroyed at the end of the Second World War, and his detailed drawings are missing.

His descriptions of these appliances have inspired a number of inventors searching for 'free energy' generation. It seems that no-one has quite succeeded in replicating one of Viktor's, but there are some promising devices ready to go into production. The main obstacles to their introduction include personal harassment from agents of the energy 'establishment,' the lack of imagination by politicians and investors, and the vested interests of the fossil fuel industries, whose lobbying of government is bent on delaying as long as possible the day when people will be able to gain their true independence by producing cheaply their own power needs at home, as Schauberger envisaged.

## The visionary

What we have to take on board, as it were, is the extent to which the degraded energies of our present technologies are polluting the world, both from excess heat, but more particularly because they not only block or impede the natural productive and healing energies, but actually encourage degeneration. We can reduce global warming by significant reductions in CO<sub>2</sub> emissions. But we cannot hope for the long-term survival of humanity without ditching our current technology models for those that are wholeheartedly Nature-friendly. Schauberger shows us the way ahead. For example, ecotechnologies are being introduced into the fragile Himalayan ecosystems of Ladakh, as a means of securing economic self-sufficiency for a proud people who are losing their independence in the face of imposed economic exploitation from outside.<sup>3</sup>

Viktor Schauberger came from a background that was rare even a century ago. Several generations of his family had lived in the unspoilt Alpine forests. They understood many of Nature's laws. Viktor's refusal to go to college came from a fear of being indoctrinated, as he believed he would lose both his intuition and his ability to see the magical interconnections within Nature. His natural ability voluntarily to change levels of awareness was the key to his singular discoveries of how Nature works. He was able to enter a more refined state of consciousness, as when he describes how he let his awareness enter the flowing water in a stream, ready to bring back intuitions of what the water required for its health.

This book is not about going back to some romantic past, or about discarding science as a discipline, or technology as a means of making our lives more effective. It is about, as Schauberger used to say, 'thinking an octave higher.' Viktor was a supremely capable scientist, an impeccable observer, a thorough researcher and an inspired inventor. He also predicted, seventy years ago, the climate change disasters that we are now experiencing, and the moral and spiritual collapse of our civilization. But he also, supremely, gave us the keys to reclaiming our heritage as true guardians of Nature and, as we shall see, showed us how to repair the damage we have done to our precious Earth.

## 1. VIKTOR SCHAUBERGER'S VISION

## 2. Different Kinds of Energy

### Subtle energies

In the last 200 years, the application of increasingly complex technologies has accelerated enormously, overwhelming the far more subtle energy systems of Nature, with dire consequences for us all. For while some will argue that these have brought benefits to many on the material level, the quality of life on the planet has seriously deteriorated, with severe damage to ecosystems and to biodiversity.

No one explains, as convincingly as Schauberger, just how this has come about. He found that the energy our technology propagates is destructive of the evolutionary impulse in life forms, precipitating a downward spiral in the quality of organisms, and in the human quality of life. Imagine trying to be creative in a steel mill or a slaughterhouse! The pride we hold for our Machiavellian machines that pour out incessant noise and heat is based on the mistaken belief that we represent the summit of evolution.

Schauberger pointed out that, besides having the ego-centred need to control, modern science sees only the surface of things.<sup>1</sup> Its reductionist (everything in separate compartments) and materialistic agenda prevents an understanding of the energetic processes which, as Schauberger demonstrated, are essential for any material substance to come into being; in the same way that an idea or impulse must precede any human action. These subtle energies are essential to the increasing quality Nature demands in her evolutionary process. When these are subdued, only deterioration can result, which inevitably also affects human aspirations. So energy is cause, form is effect. An understanding of any creative process is impossible without true awareness of subtle energies.

### Schauberger's worldview

Viktor Schauberger took the ancients' view of the Sun as the male inseminator of Earth to create bountiful Nature. But, also like the

ancients, he saw Nature as the mirror of the Divine. Following Goethe's eighteenth century view, he conceived of God as a kind of 'Divine Weaver' of the unfolding tapestry of Evolution. It was through this vision that Viktor found common ground also with the Austrian philosopher Rudolf Steiner.

However, he saw the Earth and Nature also as part of a much larger cosmos. The visible Sun is but the kernel, the only visible part, of a much larger sun that, with its radiative body, stretches to the very limits of the solar system. The Earth is within this sun, bathed by the solar wind, spiraling with its sister planets like organs within the same body. Our own bodies too are but kernels of a much broader, invisible self that extends around us, and with which we can feel another's energy.

He was influenced by Theosophical thinking that conceives the Universe as a holistic system, and criticized contemporary thinking that cannot accept our subservience to Nature; he said that this limitation of awareness prevents us accepting our place in the Universe, of which the consciousness we call Nature is a part. This holistic view of all creation is aided by the idea of a hierarchy of energies, from the very finest that are inconceivable to humans, down to the coarse, material energies which dominate contemporary society. Schauberger would refer to these different levels as 'octaves,' but we shall describe them as 'dimensions' or domains.

## Why the mystery?

His scientific contemporaries misunderstood Viktor Schauberger because his frame of reference was the subtle energies in Nature, and they hadn't a clue what he was on about. His heightened sensitivities enabled him to be aware of phenomena more subtle than most of us are able to perceive. As this was his *modus operandi*, we need to take a look at this whole question of energies.

Firstly, we need to accept that the worldview of our contemporary culture is that of the material world; that is its reference point. We don't learn about energies at school or at college, other than the purely mechanical or electrical. Any phenomenon that is nonmaterial poses a difficulty for conventional science, for it cannot be described in a manner that is familiar to its discipline. Thoughts and emotions are energies we all experience, but how

do we study them in the laboratory, other than their physical effects?

The various forms of effective energy medicine such as acupuncture, homeopathy, cranial osteopathy (and others) are not understood by orthodox medicine and, for that reason, are generally dismissed and usually opposed. It is not sufficient to see that acupuncture works; or that most people are intuitive. If you can't explain it, then modern knowledge says it must be bogus. We are not talking about religion, beliefs or values, but about things that actually happen on a nonmaterial level.

Earlier cultures acknowledged the tremendous power of immaterial life-energies. The life force (Ch'i) that moves along the energy meridians in the human body was recognized by the Chinese several thousand years ago. To correct bioenergetic imbalances or blockages in the body, they developed acupuncture at that time, a treatment still widely used in China and now also in many Western countries by accredited practitioners and by some more open-minded physicians.

While the life sciences, for the most part, are still imprisoned in the mechanistic view of life, the physical sciences are undergoing a revolution. The study of sub-atomic phenomena has led to the development of quantum physics, in which the environment becomes unpredictable. The boundaries between energy and matter become blurred, so that the smallest constituents of matter — particles and electrons — are interchangeable. Matter becomes energy, which leads to the conclusion that everything is energy.<sup>2</sup> Sadly the rigid boundaries that have developed between different scientific disciplines have as yet denied these insights to the life sciences and to medicine.

As there is nowhere intellectually respectable to slot in these 'anomalous' phenomena, new labels have to be found, like 'energy medicine' or 'alternative science.' Schauberger was a pioneer of alternative science, which pushes the boundaries of what is worthy of study beyond the merely physical.

## Degrees of energy

We know the ways in which energy manifests itself. We can see that flowing water is energetic. We can see that energy is associated with creating clouds. Energy is active in an engine combusting gasoline

### 2. DIFFERENT KINDS OF ENERGY

or petrol. But what is its essence, a process that always seems to be connected with movement?

When we look up at the fluffy clouds on a summer's day, we may wonder what they're made of. So wispy and light, each cloud may contain hundreds or thousands of tons of tiny individual droplets of water, invisible and in constant motion. A collection of minute, invisible, weightless things becomes large and visible. It's a question of density. Our entire universe forms in the same way.

A material object consists of billions of atoms, each composed of sub-atomic particles, each of which is a vortex of energy. Gyrating around each other in vortices, the sub-atomic particles form heavier particles of energy that become denser, eventually slowing down to the point where they may become visible or even tangible.

Water is a substance that appears in different forms according to its compactness. In its solid state, as ice, its atomic particles move the most slowly. As the ice melts, they move faster, need more space to gyrate or vibrate, creating the less dense form, liquid water. Heated up, the particles accelerate, requiring more space, and become steam or the invisible gas, water vapour. Their state and appearance differ, depending on their expression of energy as movement or vibration, and its rate of motion is called its frequency. The principles of vibration and frequency determine the countless energy forms in our world.

The material substance we see is the result of energy setting up a visible 'blur' by vibrating in and out of a physical state, with a frequency and density that makes it seem like a static whole. The forms create an illusion of being solid and static, caused by countless particles constantly accelerating and then slowing down enough for us to see them as matter. When you see that all material objects are composed of atoms and particles in constant motion, it becomes possible to understand that everything is energy.

## The vortex as the key to creative evolution

The vortex is a window between different qualities or levels of energy. Black Holes can be thought of as vortices linking different parts of our universe or even different universes. The vortex

and spiral became hallmarks for Viktor Schauberger, as for him they were the key to all creative movement. As we shall demonstrate later, the vortex is most clearly seen with water, which it uses to purify and energize itself, introducing finer energies to wipe clean the bad energies of the water's previous memory of misuse.

One could use the metaphor of a musty room that feels stale and unwelcoming. Once sunlight and fresh air are allowed to penetrate, the unpleasant atmosphere is quickly transformed. It is a natural law that the more refined energy always prevails over the coarser.<sup>3</sup> As Viktor Schauberger demonstrated, Nature's evolutionary imperative is continually to refine and to create greater complexity and diversity, the vortex being the key process in this endeavour.

## Energies as creative process

We normally think of energy as the power to do work, as to be able to run across a busy street. But thought is also energy. For the human, creativity is dependent on thought. Between having an idea and our wish to see it fulfilled lies a complex creative process.

If I want to make an apple pie, there is first the idea, then the planning, translating this through visualization and then finally the physical creation of the pie. This is much more important than we realize. From the simplest task like tying your shoelace, to the complex challenge of becoming a tennis champion, the better the 'mind pictures' of how we are going to perform the required actions, the more successful will be the outcome. The force, the impulse, which is the motivator for us to create, is an unseen energetic process.

Viktor Schauberger shows us that we need to think of energy in Nature as the potential for creation, not as a mechanical working process. He criticized our present view of how Nature works as untenably mechanistic, which he said this is one of the main reasons why we're in such a mess. Our culture thinks of Nature as being like a big machine that can be manipulated and its resources extracted for our own greed, rather than a creative system that has a purpose.

Productive energies make it possible for life forms to arise that are appropriate to the needs of the environment. It is as if Nature

has a blueprint for what is required for a balanced and diversified community. For example, a healthy river that is carrying energized water will create on its banks trees that it needs to keep it cool and protect its vitality.

James Lovelock and Lynn Margulis recognized this creativity by naming the Earth 'Gaia' after the classical Earth goddess. They described how the Earth behaves like an organism, and how the conditions for life on our planet are maintained within very narrow limits, in spite of the enormous variation in the Sun's radiation, and the effect of harmful cosmic rays. This seems to work in a similar way to the self-regulating system in the human body that maintains the blood temperature in the narrow range essential for health (around +37°C/98.4°F). A mechanistic scientist would insist that this is just a computer function, but computers don't operate with purpose and meaning.

## Spiritual science

To say that purpose and meaning are more to do with belief or religion is, I believe, a mistaken view. Purpose can be ascribed to living systems. Watch a community of bees at work, and there is a significant purpose! Meaning is usually associated with sentient beings. Being creatively human is difficult without a sense of meaning in one's life. Schauberger didn't talk much about God, but as we shall see he recognized in the extraordinary fecundity of Nature, and indeed in all of her processes, an indisputable sense of meaning and purpose. If it makes more sense to you, call it 'spiritual' science.

It is not necessary to postulate a God that created every living thing and who is behind all the subtle energies in Nature. Probably the idea, found in so many religions, of God as a being like superman whose support can be called on for your little or big power plays is in much the same category as that of regarding Earth's resources as private property for exploitation. The concept of co-creation — that all of creation participates in and contributes to the creative process, is often more acceptable to the thoughtful searcher.

We are clearly influenced by the beliefs of the culture into which we are born. The worldview of contemporary Western society represents an enormous shift away from what has been the norm of



human experience over its half million or so years on the Earth. The clearest modern examples of a more 'normal' worldview are the Buddhist beliefs, the Celtic, and those of the indigenous peoples worldwide who share the idea that the Great Spirit (or God) inspires and inhabits the rocks, the waters, and all living things.

In our detachment from the complete or 'real' world, we assume that it is normal to divide different 'bits' of knowledge into separate compartments or 'disciplines.' In fact it is quite abnormal. For traditional peoples, there are no barriers between cosmology, science and the spiritual, for in the interconnectedness of all Nature there is no separation; all is One.

## Different dimensions

Viktor Schauberger didn't write about hierarchies of energy, but we know that he subscribed to Theosophical or Eastern concepts of energies, so we shall give an outline of these in order to understand where he was coming from.

Our physical spacetime dimension contains that spectrum of energy that vibrates at a rate low enough to support material form. This Third Dimension or domain has length, breadth and height, but it also has the three components by which humans may be conscious. These are: the physical, neutral energy through which the material world exists; the emotional, negative energy by which we receive sensory information; and the mental, positive energy by which we project our beliefs and personalities into the world. (NB: The terms negative and positive are used not in a qualitative sense, but more in the electrical sense of polarity.)

Our daily lives demonstrate the differences between these energies. The mental is the most changeable; it is harder to change our feelings, and the dense, physical form is almost impossible to change. If we move into a lower dimension, we lose one aspect of consciousness, and if we move higher, we gain one. Moving from the third to the second dimension, we lose the ability to generate original thought. Moving from the third to the fourth, we add the ability to mould time.<sup>4</sup>

In terms of the pure physicality of our three-dimensional world, our consciousness places and senses each lower dimension as being external to the body, although, paradoxically, it is both within and without, and permeated by the higher one (see Fig. 2.1, next page).<sup>5</sup>

## 2. DIFFERENT KINDS OF ENERGY

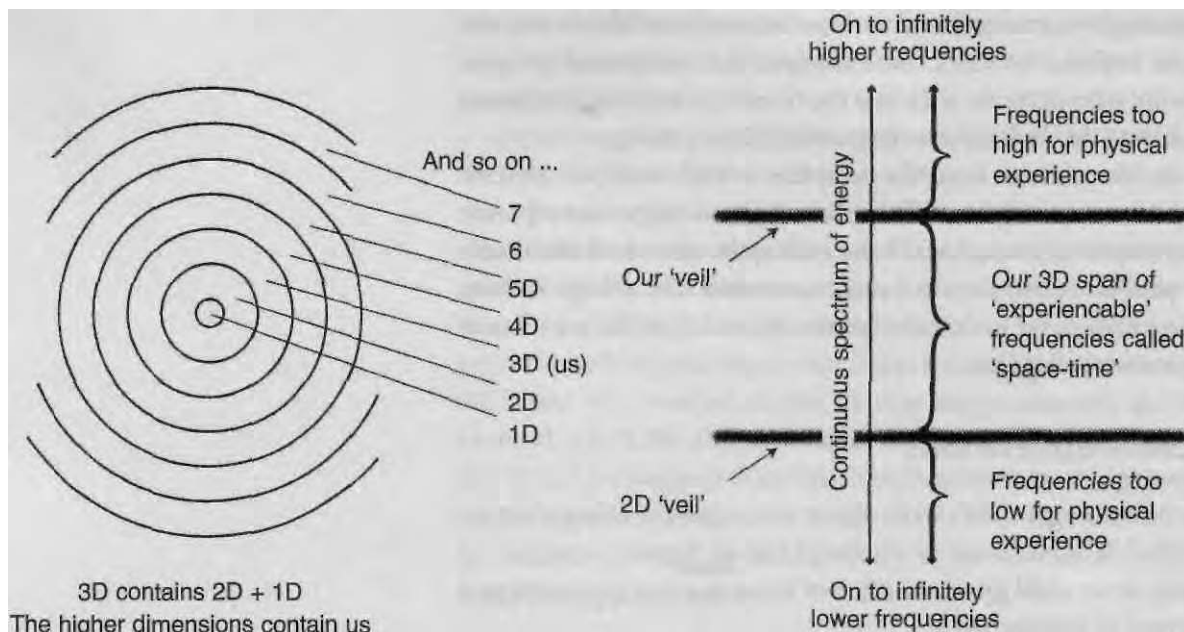


Fig. 2.1. Different dimensions or levels of existence. Each dimension has a 'veil' at its upper limit which renders higher levels inaccessible. To a lesser extent someone of a 'lower' state of consciousness may be unaware of another in a 'higher state.'

Intuitive or inspired creativity, the level of expanded consciousness sometimes reached by inventors or by people of great vision, belongs to the fifth and sixth dimensions. It is apparent that Viktor Schauberger had the ability to tap into this reservoir of inspiration. All subtle dimensions are present on Earth, interpenetrating the third dimension, though we are not normally conscious of them.<sup>6</sup> The other animals or humans with raised consciousness have a wider range of perception. A close relationship with a dog, cat or horse often reveals instances where the animal is aware of a nonphysical 'presence' which is beyond our own awareness or which may be a spirit presence. If we lower our consciousness, we feel less ability to control our own lives. If all our three components of consciousness are being fully used, then we can experience the full potential of being human, which is the gift of free will.

We shall not discuss in detail here the important energy shifts that are occurring on our planet at this time. In line with the idea that God, or the All-That-Is, seeks constant evolution or expansion of consciousness, ancient teaching has long predicted that the Earth and all its inhabitants would graduate from the third to the

fourth dimension in these times. Human society is becoming increasingly polarized between the materialist-based (third dimension) power structures that are reluctant to release their control, and those who wish to participate in a fairer and more spiritually based society.<sup>7</sup>

## Changing octaves

When Viktor Schauberger said, 'We must think an octave higher,' (if we are to get out of this mess), one tends to think he means being less taken in by the physical view of life, and become more aware of its subtle aspects. While that is true, he did propose an interesting way of illustrating the concept of how a particular kind of energy can be taken up one octave. On the face of it, the following may be considered contradictory, but a more interesting view is to see them as complementary or reciprocal energies an octave apart, one a development of the other (like thesis and antithesis), which, when combined are reconciled and become a unity:<sup>8</sup>

lower octave		higher octave	
Matter	X	Spirit	= unity
Egoism	X	Altruism	(= unity)
Analysis	X	Synthesis	(= unity)
Heat	X	Cold	(= unity)
Gravitation	X	Levitation	(= unity)
Electricity	X	Magnetism	(= unity)
Bioelectricism	X	Biomagnetism	(= unity)
Pressure	X	Suction	(= unity)
Expansion	X	Impansion	(= unity)
Centrifugence	X	Centripetence	(= unity)
Oxygen	X	Carbones	(= unity)
Yang	X	Yin	(= unity)

The second column, the 'antitheses,' being more refined, have the potential to contribute to creative evolution by being able to bridge the gap between the idea and manifestation. They are, if you like, endowed with special vibrational energies and powers.

Callum Coats, in translating some of these more difficult concepts from Viktor's German terms, coined his own to describe the different forms of subtle energies from the fourth and fifth dimensions, which

## 2. DIFFERENT KINDS OF ENERGY

collectively he called 'ethericities.' By these he meant the bioelectric, biomagnetic, catalytic, high-frequency, vibratory, super-potent elements of quasi-material qualities:

These ethericities are further categorized as 'fructigens,' 'qualigens' and 'dynagens.' They respectively represent those subtle energies whose function is the enhancement of fruitfulness (fructigens), the generation of quality (qualigens) and the amplification of immaterial energy (dynagens). According to their function or location these may be female or male in nature. There are thus female fructigens and male dynagens, for example.<sup>9</sup>

We shall be using these terms from time to time where they are helpful.

# 3. The Attraction and Repulsion of Opposites

## The Sun as a fertilizing entity

We all know that sexual reproduction requires insemination of the female by the male but, according to Viktor Schauberger, the Earth works on the same principle. From Nature's point of view, this starts with the Sun. Throughout nearly all of humanity's time on this planet, the Earth has been regarded a sacred being, the Great Mother. The Sun held an equally significant place in our forebears' worldview. Most of the ancient cultures regarded the Sun as the primary, masculine deity, fertilizing the Earth in order to create life. The eighteenth century thinker, Johann Wolfgang von Goethe referred to Earth's creative spirit as the 'Eternally Female' and the 'All-uplifting' (or levitating).

Viktor Schauberger uses explicit sexual terms to explain this vital natural process. He talks of the Sun impregnating Mother Earth in order to create the incalculable number of different life-forms that inhabit this planet. The Sun behaves very much as a living body. It is known to pulsate rhythmically, its surface expanding and contracting 3km (1.8 miles) every 160 minutes. Its life-giving energies warm the atmosphere and penetrate deep into the ground to inseminate the elements and substances of the Earth (the sleeping princess). The beneficial UVc rays<sup>1</sup> which the ozone layer allows through, have to decelerate in order to unite with the receptive and passive female energies rising inside the Earth; these slower energies have to accelerate, for fertilization can take place only if the two resonate with a sympathetic rate of vibration (see Chapter 4).

All of life, from the gross material to the ethereally subtle, evolves through the interaction of male and female, positive and negative, energies. Each polarity has a particular manner of expression, the downwardly-radiating solar energy meeting the Earth at right angles to the energies of the Earth ranged in a layer below the surface (see Fig. 3.1). Their properties and potentialities are opposite, but complementary, to each other. The manner in which these polarized energies

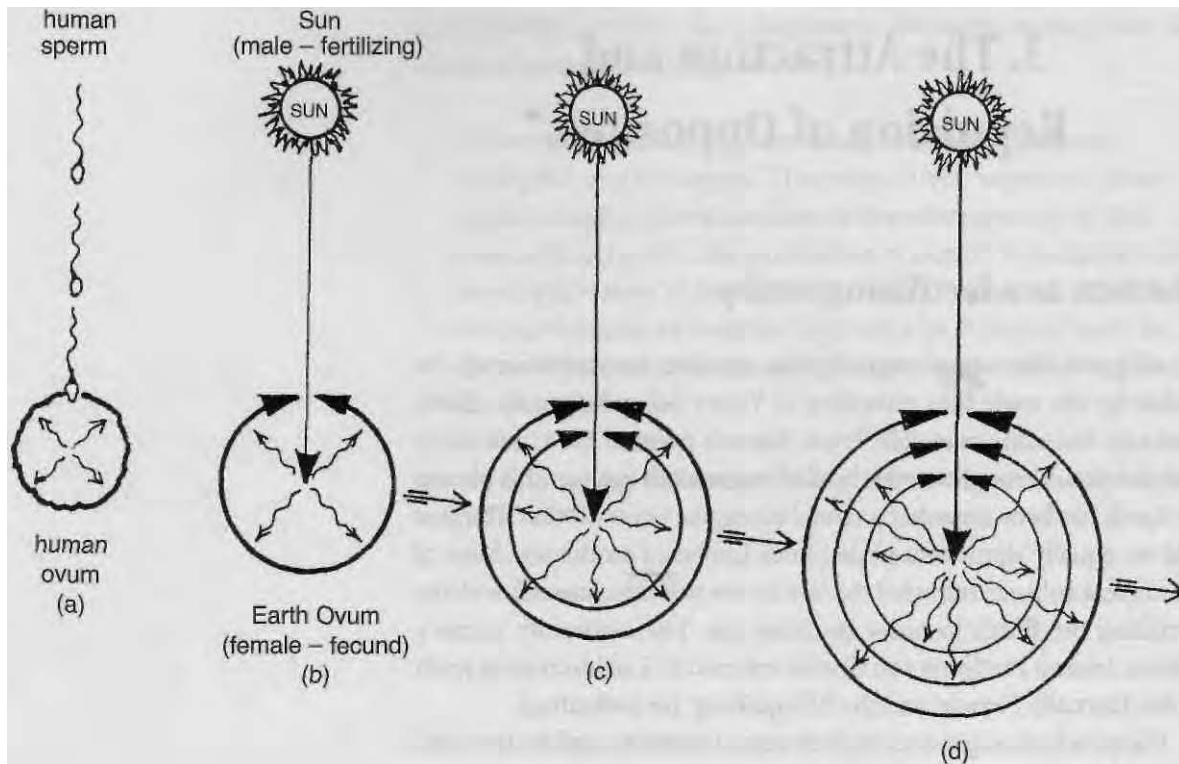


Fig. 3.1. Cosmic fertilization. Schauberger saw the fertilization of Earth by the Sun as a similar process to human fertilization. The Earth responds to the Sun's energy by releasing propagating energies (the concentric circles) which become more developed and complex as evolution proceeds.

interact alternate between attraction and repulsion, which sets up a pulsation which will vary according to the season.

In winter when the Sun's energy has the most blue and ultraviolet light and the Earth is passive, with low temperatures in the cold winter sunlight, the vegetation is dormant and much animal life hibernates. It is then that fertilization, reproduction and growth are at a minimum, but the solar energies continue to penetrate deep into the Earth to awaken the embryonic female energies lying far below the surface. This union produces the prolific growth of springtime.

In spring and summer however, when the Sun's radiation becomes relatively stronger, the balance between the ultraviolet and the infrared shifts towards the red end of the spectrum. This awakens the Earth, whose energy interacts with the Sun's high-frequency energy, producing a third kind of energy, which is dynamic growth. Viktor Schauberger saw this as the discharged precipitates of higher, bipolar subtle energy. In the summer months the solar energies fuse with their female opposites in the higher strata near the

surface of the Earth. This repeated process of impregnation results in an almost continuous flow of fertile energies emanating from deep in the Earth to stimulate burgeoning growth.

Viktor grouped almost all the known elements and their compounds, with the exception of oxygen and hydrogen, under the general classification of 'female.' The exceptions were silver, zinc and silicon, which were considered to have paternally-oriented characteristics, while gold, copper and limestone were regarded as more maternal (these will be discussed in more detail in Chapter 17). Schauberger used the term 'carbones' for all these elements, (the extra 'e' meaning more than just 'carbon'), because of the prevalence of various sorts of carbonous matter in the multitude of living organisms created in the body of Mother Earth.

The Sun's energy, of course, is regarded as male, and Viktor saw oxygen as a lower form of solar energy. Together, the role of the Sun and its assistant oxygen is to fertilize these female, propagative energies, the Sun being responsible for all of life, and oxygen for organic growth and development. To hydrogen, Viktor gave a special role, as the carrier substance of both oxygen and carbone (see Fig. 3.2 above). From a detached view, far outside the atmosphere, our planet, composed of carbones and fertilized by oxygen, is indeed floating in the hydrogen gas ocean of space.

The words 'matter' and 'material,' both have their root in the Latin word mater, meaning mother, which supports the idea that physical substance is feminine in nature. Thus all the physical elements (except for oxygen and hydrogen) can be seen as the maternal progenitive constituents of 'Mother-Earth.' Viktor Schauberger visualized all physical structures and all new living entities coming into being through the union between these 'mother-substances' and the inseminating agent of oxygen.

## Polarities

Viktor Schauberger used to call polarity Nature's engine. He once described the harmonious interplay of the attraction and repulsion of polarized atoms as 'the dance of creation.' Electricity depends on the positive and negative charge of electrons. Magnetism expresses the polarities of attraction and repulsion. Polarities also apply in biological terms, of course, where balance is achieved between contrasting qualities, and of course between different sexes.



Fig. 3.2. Hydrogen symbol.  
Hydrogen as the 'carrier' of both carbone and oxygen.

Without the attraction and repulsion of atoms there would be no water, no plants, nor chemical compounds. The mutual attraction of 2 x H and 1 x O gives birth to the marvel of water.

We are more familiar with the terms 'positive' and 'negative' than 'male' and 'female' in scientific contexts; as, for example, with electricity. Of course, positive and negative in this sense are not judgmental terms, but opposite poles. Schauberger felt that to use the terms masculine and feminine was more in keeping with Nature, which he saw as a living organic system.

## Opposites working towards balance

We tend to think of Nature as being chaotic. The reverse is true. Schauberger discovered that Nature operates according to very strict laws. One of the most important is that concerned with the balance between energy polarities, each of which has its particular manner of expression. Masculine and feminine together make up a complete human being; one cannot exist without the other, and each needs the other to be whole. You might think that to be in balance, masculine and feminine energies need to be about 50/50, as they nearly are with the distribution of the human sexes.

For the last three thousand years or so human society has functioned in a predominantly masculine mode and is now quite out of balance. If you consider masculine energy to be represented by rationality, concern with the physical, forceful, expansive and individualistic; and the feminine by a tendency to be inclusive, intuitive, connecting and compassionate — then most will agree we need a swing of the pendulum towards the latter.

The natural law about balance is that it must be weighted towards the feminine for creative growth to proceed. Otherwise growth (in terms of higher quality) is arrested, and degeneration takes place. This applies to all the qualities, like:

matter and energy or spirit

chaos and order

yang and yin

positive and negative (not in judgmental terms, more electrical)

egoism and altruism

quantity and quality (a confusion of our present society)



And then in the more technical areas of life-building energies which we will cover in the relevant chapters:

gravitation and levitation  
electricity and magnetism  
oxygen and carbon  
centrifugence and centripetence  
negative temperature gradient and positive temperature gradient

What is the correct proportion by which the negative should dominate? Ancient Chinese society was very much taken up with these questions, and they believed the ratio of the correct balance was three-fifths (60%) to two-fifths (40%). Viktor Schauberger, who worked very intuitively, particularly on the temperature gradients in water, came up with two-thirds to one-third (66.7%). Callum Coats, who worked with Viktor's son Walter, a mathematician and physicist, related the proportion to the sacred geometric ratio of  $\phi$  (phi) which is 1.618, which gives the negative share of 61.8%.

The interaction and combination of opposites is found throughout all natural processes. It is true of heat and cold. The crucial interplay of heat and cold is found in many life-forms. Some types of fruit and seeds cannot germinate properly unless they have been exposed to frost. Brussels sprouts are best after the first frost! Growth is dependent on the right combination of heat and cold.

There is, however, no such thing as stable equilibrium, which would bring immobility and uniformity with which evolution would be impossible. Development and evolution in the dynamic Universe depend on an inherent imbalance, since movement is always occurring somewhere between one extreme and the other.

## Gravity and levity

Gravity is recognized as a powerful physical force in the Cosmos. However, Viktor Schauberger demonstrated that its opposite, levity, is tremendously important in Nature. That levity is not acknowledged by conventional science presumably has to do with its being one of these more subtle energies which are anathema to the reductionist mindset. Without levitation, fish would have great difficulty swimming upstream in a strong current, and we would not have majestic trees reaching for the heavens; only ground-hugging

species.<sup>2</sup> Levitation force may indeed be related to these female subtle energies spiralling upwards to the Earth's surface in their desire for fertilization.

Levitation has much greater potential power than gravity, much as suction does over pressure. Schauberger used this to great effect in his implosion machines, as we shall see later. Levitation can best be described as the life-force present in all healthy living things, particularly the more youthful, which gives a feeling of lightness and of relative weightlessness. It gradually weakens with age, so that the elderly become conscious of the weight of their bodies and the greater difficulty of movement. When this levitational force withdraws, so too does the life-force of the body.

## 4. Nature's Patterns and Shapes

The essence of the Gaia principle is that all life is interconnected. Nature is a conscious system in which all phenomena or happenings affect everything in their environment — the micro-environment for a small incident, or the whole world in the case of a major event. Life forms in Nature respond to each other by means of resonance; you might call it 'Gaia's glue.' When you say someone has 'good' or 'bad vibes,' you're talking the language of resonance; flowers attracting insects by their colour and scent, our response to certain kinds of music, the practice of feng shui in the home; monks chanting, bees humming.

Resonance is the language of communication and response. It is how energetic information is transferred from one object to another. It is also the mechanism of harmony. For example, the organs and cells in the human body vibrate each at its specific frequency, and in the healthy body they resonate in harmony like the different instruments of an orchestra. Water, as the principal constituent of and the bringer of life to all organisms, is the most powerful carrier of resonance.

### Sound as resonance

Every musician knows that a tuning fork of the note C struck in a concert hall will make any number of C tuning forks respond in the same space. When you rub your finger round the rim of a wine glass, its note will sound. If a singer finds this note, the glass will resonate in sympathy, or even shatter if the vibration becomes too strong.

Sound is probably the most ancient form of resonance in the human experience. Jericho was reputedly destroyed by destructive sound resonances. There are accounts in oral traditions of how early societies, such as the ancient Egyptian, the Tibetan and the Inca employed the use of sound to levitate enormous blocks of stone used in their buildings. Music itself is more than a paradigm of Nature's resonances. For millennia people have sung and played music to their crops, their lovers and their children. Schauberger

describes how the Alpine farmers while stirring the fertilizing liquid would sing into it (see p. 230).

Callum Coats cites:

Research carried out by Dr John Diamond in the field of behavioral kinesiology (BK), yields some interesting insights.<sup>1</sup> A member of the International Academy of Preventive Medicine, Dr Diamond found that while the deltoid muscle of a healthy adult male can normally resist a force of 40-45lbs, its strength is reduced to 10—15lbs through the negative effect of certain types of rock music, such as heavy metal and hard rock.<sup>2</sup>

In contrast to a more natural rhythm, where the beat emulates that of the heart, with emphasis on the first beat, i.e. DA-da-da or 'LUB dup rest,' as he puts it, in the above type of music this emphasis is reversed, i.e. da-da-DA, which conflicts with the body's natural pulsation and in poetry is known as an 'anapestic beat.' As Dr.Diamond states: 'one of the characteristics of the anapestic beat is that it is stopped at the end of each bar or measure. Rock music that has this weakening effect appears to have this stopped quality; it is as if the music stops and then has to start again, and the listener subconsciously "comes to a halt" at the end of each measure. The anapestic beat is the opposite of the dactylic or waltz like beat, which is DA-da-da, and in which there is an even flow.'<sup>3</sup>

Dr Diamond further asserts that:

these forms of music and unnatural rhythms cause switching in the brain's responses, which induces 'subtle perceptual difficulties' that may well manifest themselves in children as decreased performance in school, hyperactivity and restlessness; in adults as decreased work output, increased errors, general inefficiency, reduced decision-making capacity on the job,... in short, the loss of energy, for no apparent reason.

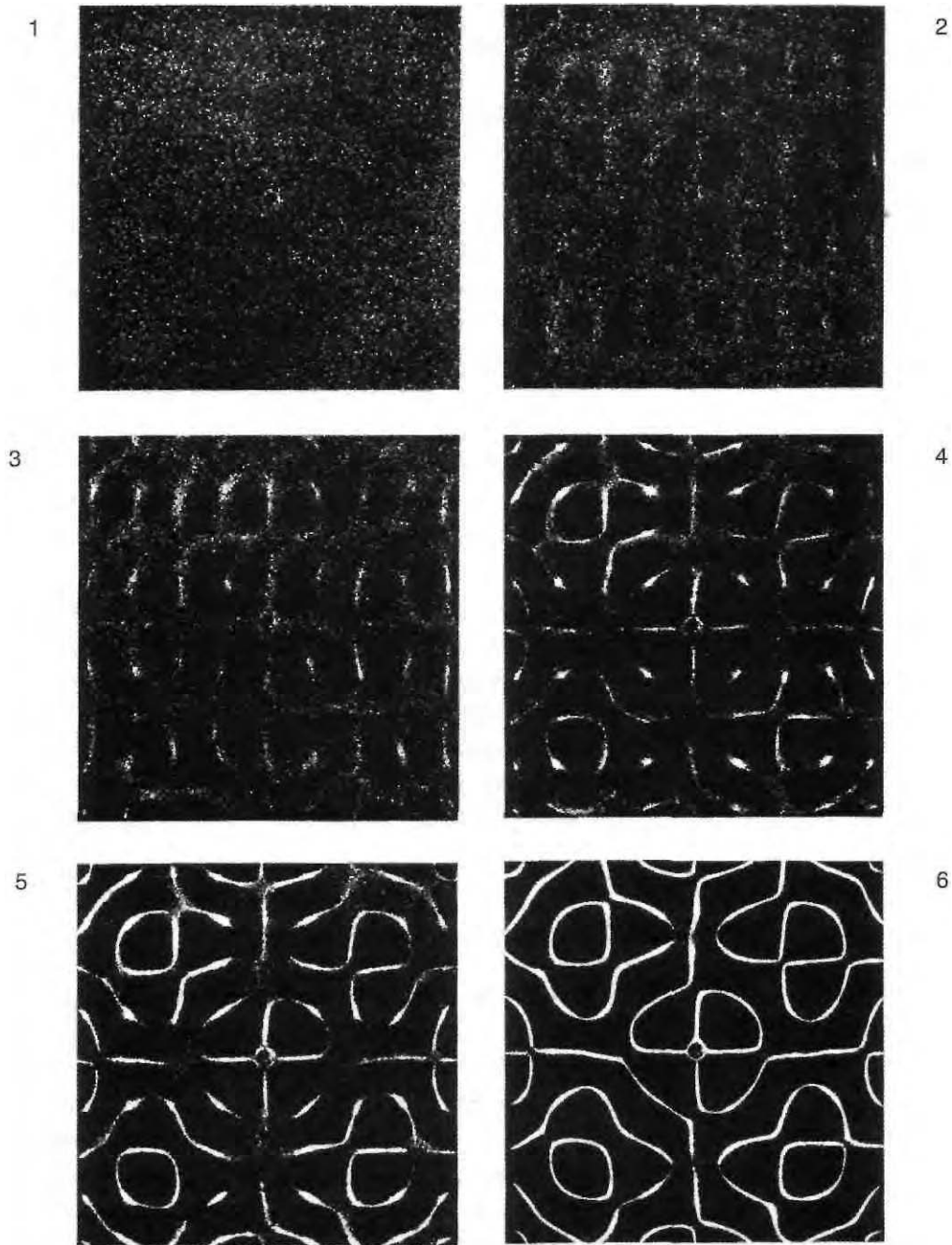


Fig. 4.1. Sonorous figure. The photographs show a simple sonorous figure taking shape under the action of crystal oscillators. Steel plate 31 x 31 cm; thickness 0.5 mm; frequency 1560cps. The material scattered on the plate is calcined sand.

Thus a given physical structure is created by an idea dependent on a particular frequency level or pattern of vibrations or resonances, higher vibrations producing higher forms and vice versa.

As we survey the world around us today this is precisely what appears to be happening — the quantitative thrust of our technology and ideology is pressing downwards towards uniformity, to a vibrationless state, which is equivalent to zero energy and quality (see Fig. 5.1, p. 78). Thus species after species is disappearing simply because the prevailing creative energy pool available for qualitative evolution is absent. If we may imagine that all that can be preserved is what remains, we forget that Nature has her own urge to proceed with evolution.

What is required of us is to purge our technology's production of so much debased energy. This would create positive feedback into human consciousness, raising its level, which would produce an outflow of positive, creatively potentiated energy, creating a swing towards the negative or feminine in society (see Chapter 3, p. 52).

An urgent swing from carbon-based energy production to renewable sources is vital if global warming is gradually to level off. Schauberger believed that this would help restore the energy balance towards Nature's need for dynamic evolution. But it is not the whole answer; only a radical change of consciousness so that we recognize our sacred role as part of Nature and begin to follow her laws can bring about a new way ahead for Nature and the planet.

## Resonance is about qualities

As we saw in Chapter 2, all matter, though it may look solid and stationary, is based on sub-atomic particles that are always in motion.<sup>4</sup> The velocity of this motion determines its vibratory rate; this and the type and size of the object contribute to its vibrational frequency. A piece of wood, and each of the organs in our bodies have different resonant frequencies; planet Earth has its own — a frequency of 7.83Hz (Hertz). Every thing, both animate and apparently inanimate has its own vibrational or resonant frequency that can be enhanced by sympathetic vibrations, or harmed by destructive.

There is increasing evidence of the harmful effects on human

health from the ceaseless bombardment of the body's very sensitive, electrically charged cells by the veritable salad of electromagnetic emissions from high-tension cables, radio, television, radar, microwave transmitters, etc.

A very tragic example of this was publicized by the media in the summer of 2001.<sup>5</sup> The navies of several countries, notably the US and Britain, have developed sonar technology for hunting submarines. This involves using massive blasts of sound up to 230 decibels which have been blamed for several mass killings and strandings of marine mammals, notably in the Bahamas in 2000 when at least seventeen Cuvier's beaked whales are known to have died.

Post mortem examination showed that sonar killed them through resonance, a process in which air bubbles in water can amplify sound waves by up to 25 times. When whales dive the air is forced out of their lungs into the tiny air spaces around the brain. Harmful resonance in these air spaces is believed to cause massive tissue damage and hemorrhaging, so that injuries can occur at much lower sound levels and over a much larger area than is presently acknowledged.

The rules that the US navy scientists follow are based on old-fashioned physical science which puts the safe noise level below 180 decibels, and the safe distance below 2.2 km (1.4 miles). There is now evidence that resonance effects could injure whales up to 100 km (62 miles) away.

## Plants have perception and memory

Cleve Backster was a former CIA interrogator who trained police in the use of the polygraph, or lie detector. One of their techniques was the use of 'threat to wellbeing' to evoke emotionality in suspects. In a spontaneous experiment, he attached the electrodes of the instrument to a plant. In considering what a plant would regard as a threat, he thought of applying a burning match to a leaf. Without even moving, only his thought alone triggered a strong response in the plant.<sup>6</sup>

Subsequent experiments, which were then widely repeated by different researchers, showed that plants are able to communicate or 'resonate' their shocked or pleasurable experiences to one another. Backster describes how he tried to block whatever signals

were being passed between plants with a variety of complex screens, without success, suggesting that their signals are outside our electromagnetic spectrum. One of the hazards of this research is that unless the researcher is truly aware of his/her own emotional states, these can confuse the results. Perhaps every scientist who wishes to produce 'objective' results should go on a course to make him/her more aware of their prejudices! There is probably no such thing as truly objective research. (The same could be said for anyone whose work brings them into a role influential with others.)

Backster's best known experiment excluded the human factor. Live brine shrimps were dumped in boiling water automatically at pre-determined intervals, near the plants which reacted 'emotionally' each time the massacre took place. Not only do plants respond as if they had a nervous system, but they also exhibit a capacity for memory. As we shall see later, water also has this memory facility. With specially adapted equipment, 'emotional' reactions have also been monitored from amoebas, blood samples and cell cultures. Experimenting with fertilized eggs, it was found that when one egg was broken others, even in the next room, responded with shock.

Societies with ancient roots still celebrate this knowledge, as in the kosher quietening rituals, prior to the sacrifice of animals, or in the blessing of crops before they are harvested. This is more than consideration for the sacrifice, for it also recognizes that the food thereby retains higher vibrations and is more beneficial for human consumption.

## Cymatics

One of the first to convert vibration into visible form was an eighteenth century German physicist, Ernst Chladni, who found he could influence patterns of sand scattered on a steel disc by playing different notes on a violin. This was developed last century by Hans Jenny of Zurich, using sophisticated equipment with liquids, plastics, metal filings and powders.<sup>7</sup> He then vibrated the discs at ascending pitch, and found that the harmonic patterns that appeared at different pitches formed a variety of organic shapes: spirals of jellyfish turrets, concentric rings of tree growth, tortoiseshell patterns or zebra stripes, pentagonal stars of sea-urchins,



hexagonal cells of honeycombs, etc. The higher the frequency, the more complex the pattern. Jenny also produced a stunning film which shows that raising the pitch of sound caused a static pattern to change into a moving one.

All of these were, of course, the same geometric and vortical forms which underlie the ordering of physical matter; thus 'inorganic' matter vibrated simply with sound produces 'organic' shapes. But what is intriguing is that the sand collects on the 'dead' areas of the plate, for the 'life' of the pattern is vibrating on the background that is free of sand. The paradox is that the visible expression of energy is the inverse of the actual vibratory pattern, which is invisible. Organic growth and development require harmony. Resonance is the process by which harmony is brought to lower systems which then provide a firm basis upon which higher structures may be built.

One is reminded that the early Christian Gnostics insisted that the physical world is but a shadow or shell of a supreme ordering energy that exists in another dimension. Schauberger also saw the physical form like a discarded mantle or energetic detritus, the creative energy of the fifth dimension having been spent. Callum Coats saw the resonant pattern associated with a life form as the seed bearing the image or idea of what is to be created. He argued that all physical manifestation develops as the product of focused energy from the 'Will-to-create' or original 'Source.'

## Patterns and shapes

Patterns are to do with order; with design and structure. Nothing can come into being without a design or template. The patterns in Nature are governed by laws that oral tradition tells were the gift of the gods (perhaps a rationalization of a chicken-and-egg situation!). Holistic or spiritual science sees Nature as a mirror of the original creative impulse in the Universe, a manifestation of the Universal Mind, or The-All-That-Is.

Our science, since the Renaissance, has been searching for immutable Laws that help to explain how the natural world works. Because the territory it observes is limited to the physical, conventional science rejects the idea of a cosmic order that affects the Earth and its inhabitants at a subtle energetic level, which frustrated Schauberger. He demonstrated that a new science that has more in common with ancient wisdom does show how the world

is subservient to cosmic laws, creating 'correspondences' between the two orders.

Until comparatively recent times, scientists and philosophers recognized the creative energy of Nature as sacred. They saw the way in which Nature's patterns and its complex interdependences were so often expressed in very specific shapes and numbers as proof of God at work. So they called these correspondences sacred numbers and sacred geometry. It is certainly difficult to explain away the complex mathematical and symbolic patterns in Nature as purely accidental or fortuitous (see below, p. 66).

## Patterns in motion

In the beginning was the vortex<sup>8</sup>

All life is motion. Natural movement is not in straight lines, but in spirals, or in spiraling vortices. Spirals are the actual shape of fluid energy evolving order from chaos. Viktor Schauberger saw them as the natural movement of life, from the structure of galaxies down to the atom. The spiral is the most common vehicle for 'correspondences' — as above, so below.

The spiral can develop in a number of different ways: as a vortex, moving upwards or downwards, round in a circle, or doubling back on itself. Whenever there is movement, spirals form, visibly with water; but gases and even electrical fields express themselves in spirals or doughnuts. Sinews, tissues, blood and bones and so many formations in organic life are spiral in form.<sup>9</sup>

## Rhythms within the solar system

The relationship between Earth and Moon can be very subtle. Professor Frank Brown of Northwestern University has shown how the 'biological clocks' that initiate cyclical activities like rat-running, and colour change in fiddler crabs are subject to lunar rhythms. His better known experiment involved the shipment in hermetically sealed containers of oysters from the sea shore at New Haven, Connecticut to Evanston, Illinois, 2000 miles inland. Within a couple of weeks they had adjusted the conspicuous rhythm of opening and closing their shells to the lunar tides that would have existed at Evanston had it been on a sea coast.

The terrestrial environment is teeming with electromagnetic phenomena and their secondary effects, which are demonstrably related to greater events in outer space. Dr Harold Burr of Yale University kept extensive records of the voltage changes measured in holes bored in the trunks of trees. When both ends of a wire were inserted into two holes vertically a yard apart, an electrical current could be detected moving either up or down, at different voltages, in regular cycles that were not related to the Moon's phases, but to some other unidentified non-terrestrial source. His records showed that all trees, even hundreds of miles apart, would simultaneously experience the same changes of the voltage and direction of the current. It is as if the whole family of trees responds to the same electrical rhythm, like a cosmic breathing.<sup>10</sup>

It seems that there are universal laws, not yet fully understood, which guide an organism's growth into predetermined patterns. As the vehicle for creative energy, the spiral is clearly involved in the organic growth of plants and embryos. Buds contain all the concentrated energy of the future plant, and their mathematical analysis can yield clues as to how this formative energy is expressed. Rudolf Steiner, the founder of Anthroposophy, initiated these studies, which have been developed in great detail by the projective mathematician Lawrence Edwards.<sup>11</sup>

Edwards discovered that tree buds expand and contract in a curious rhythm, specific to the species. He applied Steiner's theory that a species often has a particular connection to a planet. Steiner suggested correspondences between particular trees and flowers and certain planets, for example, the oak with Mars, and the beech with Saturn. The results clearly showed that these bud pulsations are linked to the cycles of particular planets. The Moon on its own had little effect, but when amplified by an alignment with Saturn (for the beech) and to Mars (in the case of the oak), showed unmistakable fortnightly rhythms. There was one beech tree studied that did not show these phenomena. It was found to be growing a few yards from an electricity supply substation!

## The confrontation of two geometric systems

Schauberger was at odds with scientific rationalism. He described our prevailing Euclidean geometric system as 'techno-academic.' It

is essentially a controlled, closed system whose elements are the point, the straight line, the circle and the ellipse. This system dominates the contemporary worldview and mindset and is incompatible with Nature.

In more traditional communities, the hard, straight lines of structures were often softened with decorative embellishments, such as are still found on the eaves or rooflines in some Alpine villages. In the last century, ornamentation has been stripped away in architectural design and we are left with buildings that present a naked angularity and sterile uniformity (of agricultural monoculture).

Until modern times the Chinese rejected the Euclidean model. Their building designs were informed by geomantic principles that recognized the straight line as the path of the dragon, the personification of destructive energy. This energy could be tamed by making it flow into curves and spirals. The Chinese understood in those days that straight lines fostered disruptive behaviour. Perhaps it is time to consider what a deadening effect the boxes we inhabit may have on our thoughts and emotions; of how our dependence on the straight line may cause us to behave.

Nature's system is non-Euclidean, open and dynamic; its elements are open spirals forms, shell, egg and vortical forms. This facilitates a fluid and adaptable environment, one in which forms are able to evolve into more complex and creative arrangements. Other creatures, whose sensitivity is nourished by the subtle energies of open forms, make use of roundness and curves in their nests, burrows, and shells. In order to arrest the downward spiral of our culture, we must take note of systems that encourage creative change (see Fig. 5.1, p. 78). Schauberger wished that we could remember that we were created as part of the organic processes of Nature, rather than the mechanical processes that we have adopted.

## Sacred geometry

Viktor Schauberger saw patterns and rhythms as the heartbeat of the Universe, and was fascinated by the traditional use of the language of number and form to codify how they are repeated and in what form. It is hard for us, schooled in a rationalist worldview which separates form from the natural order to see that they are

part of one whole. The ancients regarded mathematics and geometry as the tools to understand patterns in Nature and in the Universe. The religious leaders of old, who were also the scientists and mathematicians, did not make our mistake of putting different phenomena in separate compartments. To them, the world of matter and reason and the world of spirit and the awareness of God were all one. In the context of myth and symbol, they used numbers and forms in a way that would satisfy the spiritual sense of meaning and the scientific need for structure and reason. Out of this process arose the traditions of numerology and sacred geometry.

In all the ancient cultures, the square symbolized the Earth of matter and rationalization, and the circle the encompassing world of spirit and feeling. How to bring them into balance was called 'squaring the circle' and was the pursuit both of architecture and philosophy. The sum of the sides of the square was equal to the circumference of the circle, so they come into harmony by enclosing the same area. This is sometimes used as a metaphor for the balanced personality. So 'circling the square' indicates someone whose rationality is greater than his/her sense of feeling.

As with other problems in sacred geometry, though it is not possible to draw this relationship by simple measurement, because it is part of the natural order, that is where the solution is to be found — in fact in the relationship of the size of the Moon to the size of the Earth.<sup>12</sup> You draw a square around the circle of the Earth (each side of which will equal the Earth's diameter). Then you draw the Moon on the same scale, sitting on top of the Earth. A circle with its centre as the centre of the Earth, and its circumference passing through the centre of the Moon will have a circumference equal to the sum of the sides of the square enclosing the Earth.

Fig. 4.2 also contains the 3-4-5 Pythagorean triangle which connects the corners of the Earth and Moon squares. It was from such relationships that the 'Pythagorean canon of proportions' was created. The basics of musical harmony depend on intervals created by these divine proportions. There were canons of architecture, of painting and of musical harmony taught in the medieval mystery schools, and partly revived in the Renaissance.

Fig. 4.2. Squaring the circle. Sacred geometry is based on observations of cosmic relationship. The Great Pyramid's base straddles the Earth's equatorial diameter; its apex is at the centre of the Moon, which is in true proportion to the Earth, and held to the square by a Pythagorean 3-4-5 right-angled triangle.

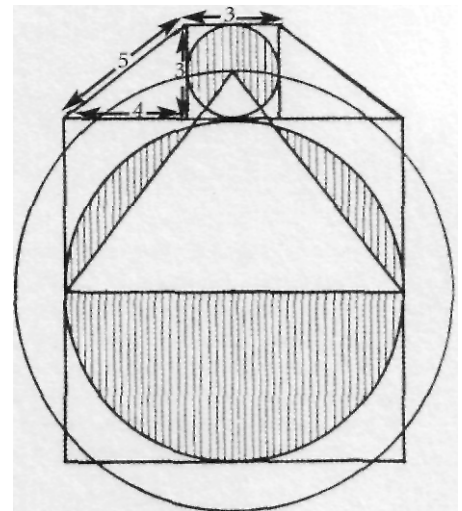
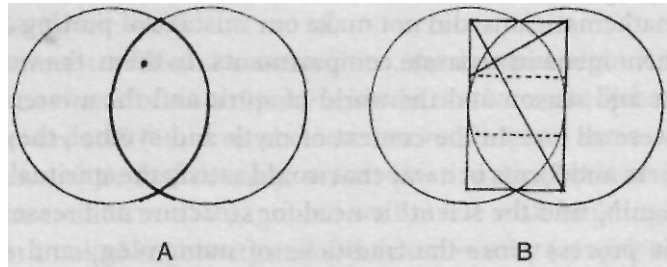


Fig. 4.3. Vesica piscis.

'The Vessel of the Fish' is the simplest and most informative geometrical symbol, being the orifice of two interpenetrating circles which inspired the master masons of the medieval cathedrals. Many Christian symbols, including the fish and the bishop's mitre, have been derived from the vesica. On the left is the fish, whose eye corresponds, on the right, to the geometric 'eye' of the  $\sqrt{3}$  rectangle enclosing the vesica.



## The golden mean

The search for perfect proportion, a shape for containment that is aesthetically pleasing, led to the discovery of the 'Golden Mean' or  $\sqrt{3}$  rectangle. The square is too mechanical, a long rectangle too awkward. The shape that 'seems' to be just right is a square rectangle with the proportions 1:1.618. This turns out to be the magical proportion favoured by Nature in her designs. A series of these, reducing in size, form a perfect spiral, like the nautilus shell (Fig. 4.4).

Spiral forms often display a similar 'sacred' proportion of 1:1.618; numbers in the Fibonacci series, for example, which maintains the Golden mean proportions indefinitely, and dictates the beautiful spirals in a sunflower head, Nature's ingenious way of packing the maximum number of seeds into the head.<sup>13</sup> An intriguing form that arises in Nature, either on its own, or as part of a more complex form, is the vesica piscis (Fig. 4.3). It is the feminine principle of generation from which spring all other geometrical forms, from triangles, squares, polygons, to Golden mean rectangles, which abound in sacred architecture.

All the traditional arts and sciences were based on the same cosmic truths expressed in number, and the sacred numbers were the ratios in a revealed world order, drawn from the experience of mystics and confirmed by precise measurements of the solar system. Sacred buildings from Stonehenge to the Temple of Solomon,

ancient Egyptian paintings, the works of Michelangelo, all have their magical effects and power over human consciousness attributed to the use of these divine proportions.

The Middle Ages were a time when the physical and the spiritual were completely intertwined, but our histories, based on the rational 'Enlightenment' worldview, regard those centuries as a time of ignorance and deprivation. In fact they were seething with creativity and inspiration: thus the Gothic cathedrals which relied more on an understanding of correct proportion than on reasoned engineering skills. Medieval musicians were fascinated that if you divided an open string by whole numbers, you can get notes that are in exact proportions.<sup>14</sup> They rediscovered the miracles of harmony, and easily accepted them as Divine. This may be the reason for the extraordinary beauty of medieval chants.

## The magic of the egg form

We noted in Chapter 1 that Viktor Schauberger was one of a breed of innovative natural scientists who are able to immerse themselves so deeply in direct perception of the natural world that concepts or theories spontaneously emerge. But his intuition also would bring up ideas directly. An example of this was his discovery that Nature

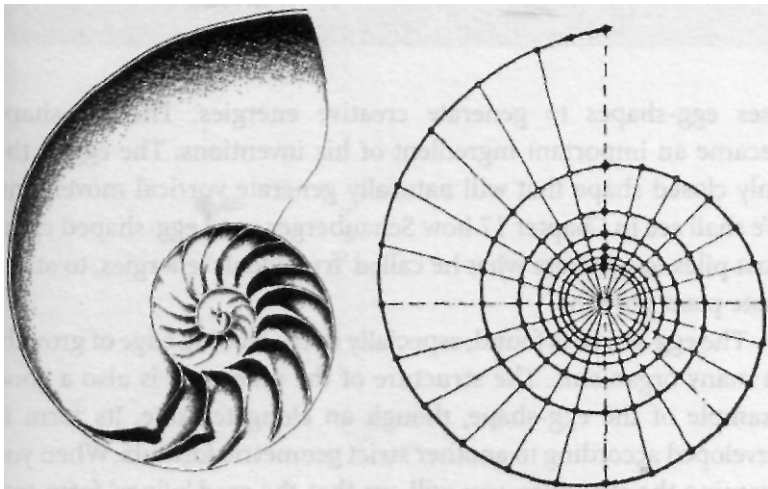


Fig. 4.4. Snail shell & hyperbolic spiral. The spiral of the snail compared to a similarly-shaped hyperbolic spiral (right), a non-Euclidean open system whose constantly changing curvature is based on very precise geometry.

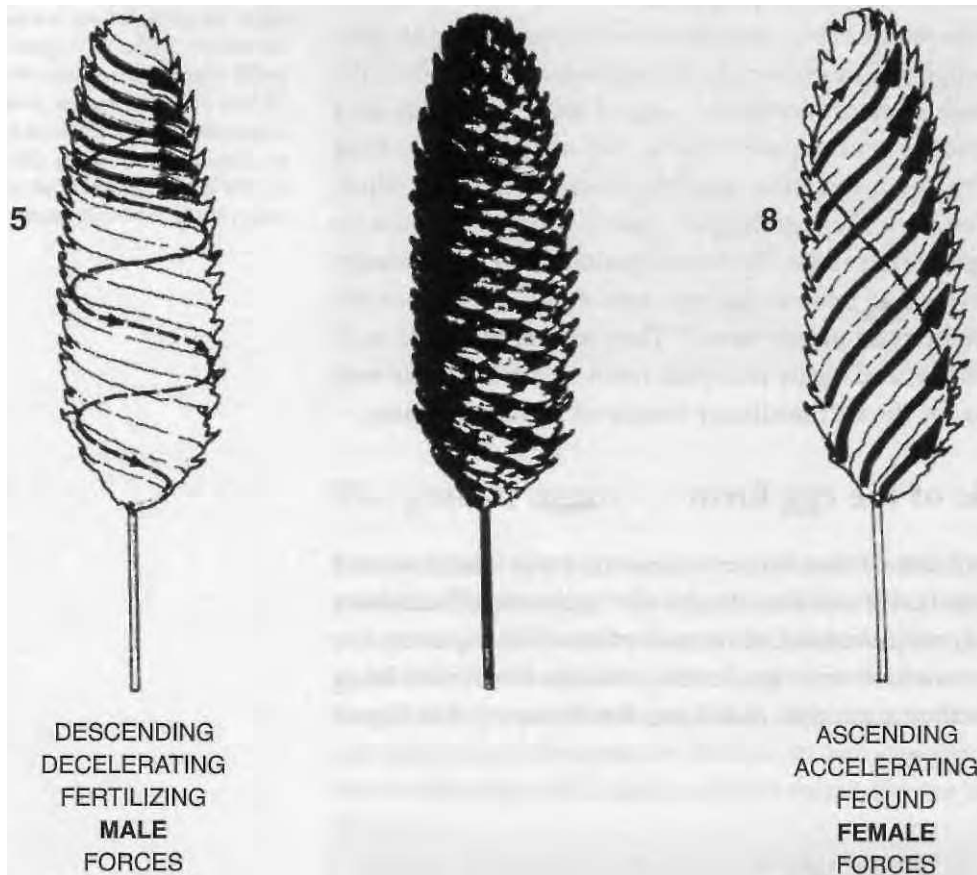


Fig. 4.5. Pine cone symmetry.  
The left hand cone shows the five decelerating, positive male spirals of energy descending to meet the eight accelerating, rising negative female spirals. Where they cross each other, a union of the two forces produces a seed of new life. This illustrates how two antithetical, but oppositely charged forces can interact harmonically and be in balance.

uses egg-shapes to generate creative energies. The egg-shape became an important ingredient of his inventions. The egg is the only closed shape that will naturally generate vortical movement. We shall see in Chapter 17 how Schauberger used egg-shaped compost piles to generate what he called 'fructigenic' energies, to stimulate plant growth.

The egg-shape is found, especially in the leading edge of growth, in many organisms. The structure of the pine cone is also a good example of the egg-shape, though an elongated one. Its form is developed according to another strict geometric formula. When you examine the structure, you will see that the seed 'wings' form two opposing spirals. Moving from left to right (anti-clockwise) the



descending (male) spirals complete three revolutions in the wavelength of the cone; the eight ascending (female) spirals, rising to meet the male, are slower moving, completing only one revolution in the cone's overall length. Where the male and female spirals intersect, a seed is born.

This relationship (proportion) of 5:8 is the signature of the 'Golden Section,' known also by the Greek letter phi ( $\phi$ ), which resolves into the ratio 1:1.618033988. Phi — and pi ( $\pi$ ), the transcendental number that describes the circumference of the circle, are called 'divine proportions.' Many of Nature's forms depend on phi for their generation, as it is one of the vehicles for transforming energy into form. By varying the length of the radii from the centre growth point (the radius length being determined by phi), a large variety of natural spirals and leaf shapes can be created.

PART TWO



How the World Works

# 5. Energy Production

## The inefficiency of modern technology

Why are the accepted methods of producing energy so inefficient? Far more energy in terms of fuel must be applied than is produced, in most cases more than twice. This has up to now not been of concern, as fossil fuels have been regarded as unlimited and free for the taking, and still are by most, though there is more discussion now of sustainability. The main argument for reducing their use is that their consumption produces CO<sub>2</sub>, the principal source of global warming.<sup>1</sup> A power source is now regarded as unsustainable unless, as for example with solar panels, it is renewable; it does not take from the Earth without giving back.

To compare the efficiency of modern technology with that of the human body is illuminating. Walter Schauburger (Viktor's son) calculated that a typical car on a journey of 1000 km (621 miles) consumes as much energy as a human being uses in a whole year. In an 11 hour journey, the car has consumed one human being's annual oxygen requirement. To replenish the oxygen consumed by the world's motor vehicles annually requires healthy forest covering 28% of the world's land area, far more forest than our present, and dwindling, forest cover.<sup>2</sup> There is alarming evidence that the amount of free oxygen in our atmosphere is actually reducing. This comes from an analysis of air captured in bubbles in ancient glaciers in Antarctica as well as in amber.

Using the famous Hasenohrl-Einstein equation  $E=mc^2$ , Walter Schauburger calculated that the amount of energy stored in 1 gram of material substance (e.g. flesh, wood, water) amounts to 25 million kWh.<sup>3</sup> The challenge is how to unlock this source of energy. Viktor Schauburger once said: 'More energy is encapsulated in every drop of good spring water than an average power station is able to produce.'<sup>4</sup>

Schauburger observed that Nature's methods of producing energy were far more efficient, which led him to design implosion machines for natural energy production in the belief that they would solve the crisis of modern technology.

## Entropy and ectropy

James Lovelock proposed in his Gaia hypothesis that Nature (for his mathematical model he used the name 'Daisyworld') regulates the Earth's energy balance through natural feedback mechanisms to suit the evolution of life forms. All energy used by living and non-living systems eventually degrades to irrecoverable waste heat, or disorder. All our physical processes lead to entropy. Nature made use of this to create the greenhouse effect, by which increasingly complex life forms were introduced into the biosphere as the climate was gradually modified.<sup>5</sup>

Entropy or disorder has been recycled by the Earth's greenhouse effect for millions of years. Every time we walk a pace forward, respiratory processes in the body burn a little ordered carbohydrate to power the muscles of our legs, and some disordered waste heat has been lost without trace from the surface of the body. Every time a simple bacterium moves a milli-millimetre it releases a few micro-calories of disordered heat waste. But every time a jet plane cuts its way through the stratosphere it leaves behind a massive amount of irrecoverable heat that disperses into the planetary heat sink in total disorder. It is all a question of degree. We are now increasing entropy to an unsustainable degree that is decimating life on the planet.

The Earth environment provides an extremely narrow temperature range compared to the extremes found in the Universe. Growth and development of life forms require moderate temperature conditions, as large or abrupt changes are harmful to most organisms. Our warped technology has made us used to very high temperatures; we produce power through combustion and hot fission. Most of our manufacturing processes require excessive heat and high pressure. We create chemical compounds using the coercion of heat and pressure. Technical man can indeed produce a high degree of order in one place, but in so doing he creates a much greater amount of disorder elsewhere.

## Scientific 'laws'

Scientific laws are fairly reliable general statements about particular events under specific circumstances. The Second Law of Thermodynamics, for example, which states that all closed systems must

generate into chaos without input of energy to maintain the ordered state, is thought to be inviolable. Schauberger, by demonstrating that energy could arise spontaneously in his 'perpetual motion' machines, or that frictionless movement could be achieved, disproved this axiom.

Due to the remarkable feedback systems of the atmosphere and the biosphere, temperatures on Earth are kept within the narrow band of those required for abundant life, especially of higher life forms. Gaia research has shown that it is life itself which has fine-tuned that thermostat, so that more complex life forms are able to develop. Some species live within small microclimates, so that on one tree you can find several kinds of finch, each having its own niche.

Humanity is considered to be the most adaptable of species, able to survive in a range of about  $-10^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $14^{\circ}\text{F}$ ) to  $+40^{\circ}\text{C}$  ( $104^{\circ}\text{F}$ ). While that is true for the species, it is not true for individuals, unless you believe that individual physical health and spiritual wellbeing are stronger than they have ever been. One of the requirements of Nature is that, in order to be whole, we have to be in tune with our environment. It takes many generations of adaptation to a specific environment for people to develop fine physical qualities and sensitive psychic faculties. Similarly it takes generations to adapt safely to a change in the environment (for instance, as a result of global warming or microwave radiation). In the past two hundred years our bodies have been challenged to adapt to higher temperatures and in the last sixty to stressful microwave energy.

Compare this to the efforts modern humans take to accommodate a life divorced from Nature, to jet travel life and unnatural food, and one subject to enormous electromagnetic stress. We take mountains of pills to counteract physical and emotional imbalances or go to psychotherapists to assuage our spiritual starvation. While he does not suggest returning to primitive life-styles, Schauberger assures us that, while our lives are now completely out of balance, by following Nature's clues we can regain both equilibrium and sanity.

## Energy pollution

We usually think of pollution in physical terms, like a room full of tobacco smoke, or a factory's chemical effluent poisoning a stream. This is the boundary for conventional science. Thus when people

raise fears about the safety of microwave ovens, radar transmission towers, mobile phones, the official response from scientists is inevitably, 'there's no evidence that they are any danger to health.' Naturally, cynical collusion between government and industry only strengthens this misguided view in order to discourage public protest or lawsuits.

Viktor Schauberger brought a further dimension to the concept of energy pollution. He understood that the creative process of Nature is consistently to refine, to diversify and produce higher forms of organic systems — to use a metaphor from human experience — to raise consciousness (consciousness as integration of higher levels of connectedness). He distinguished three forms in which subtle energies perform these upwardly evolutionary functions, which in the last chapter we called dynagens, fructigens and qualigens.

They are produced, as we shall see in the chapters that follow, through the specific forms of motion and temperature that Nature designed for the purpose of evolution. If I were in a court of law, it is these complex processes that I would cite as evidence for meaning, purpose and above all, intelligence in Nature. Schauberger described these 'enlightened' control systems thirty years before Jim Lovelock and his colleagues proposed the Gaia theory of intelligent self-sustainability in Nature, and in the area of evolutionary energies, went far ahead of them.

The blocking of these creative energies by the emanations from modern technological processes Schauberger saw as the most dangerous form of pollution. Their heat, pressure and, above all, chaotic effects actually destroy the more delicate energies of Nature's constructive developmental processes. Thus, chemicals invading a stream not only make it dirty and smelly, but they also destroy the complex structure of the water, so that it can no longer behave like healthy water, but literally dies (see Chapter 11).

This form of pollution has an evolutionary as well as a health effect on people. Schauberger suggested that this explained the well-documented degeneration of intelligence and the increase of violence in industrial communities. Dr Weston Price, studying fourteen isolated indigenous communities around the world in the early 1930s noted this in the effect that changing from their slowly evolved local diet to a western-type diet had on these people (for food is energy medicine!).<sup>6</sup>

We don't know how much energy pollution from anti-Nature technology affects the environment in general. Logically it should be most prevalent near power stations, large factories and the like. However, when rivers, which are the arteries of the blood of the Earth (see Chapter 11), and normally transmit energy to the surrounding countryside, are turned into 'lifeless corpses' (as Schauberger used to say), what effect will this cadaverous energy have on the environment? Clearly, if humanity is to reverse the downward devolutionary spiral, our first priority must be to change over to Nature's energy systems.

## The choice before us

Humanity lived a relatively natural and sustainable lifestyle until fairly recent times. The growth of industry and its massive demand for energy resources has introduced increasing degrees of instability. Going back over 2000 years, but much more clearly in the last 350 years, it has been possible to chart a different kind of development which has brought with it a deterioration of the natural environment, increasing disorder and inefficiency.

Callum Coats shows this divergence of the two systems in the accompanying chart (Fig. 5.1). In the last 150 years with rapid industrialization, a scientifically based technology developed, and the divergence shown by the lower curve has become dramatic, with dire consequences for the environment.

By contrast, the curve rising up toward 'ectropy' shows how natural evolution builds more complex systems with more evolved species on the foundation of earlier ones. This is how biodiversity increases. The appearance of new species requires a surplus of evolutionary energies deriving from the improved conditions of interdependence. It is as though the growth in natural capital from the sound economy of evolution produces interest or surplus energy from which new life forms may be formed. Nature's system is so economical that little is wasted. The many seeds, nuts and fruits which sustain all the currently existing life forms, can be seen as the surplus on Nature's interest.

The mineral resources of the Earth, which are Nature's base capital, should never be used. As we shall see in Chapter 17, Schauberger illustrates how they are essential building blocks in the production of formative energies. The indigenous people understood their

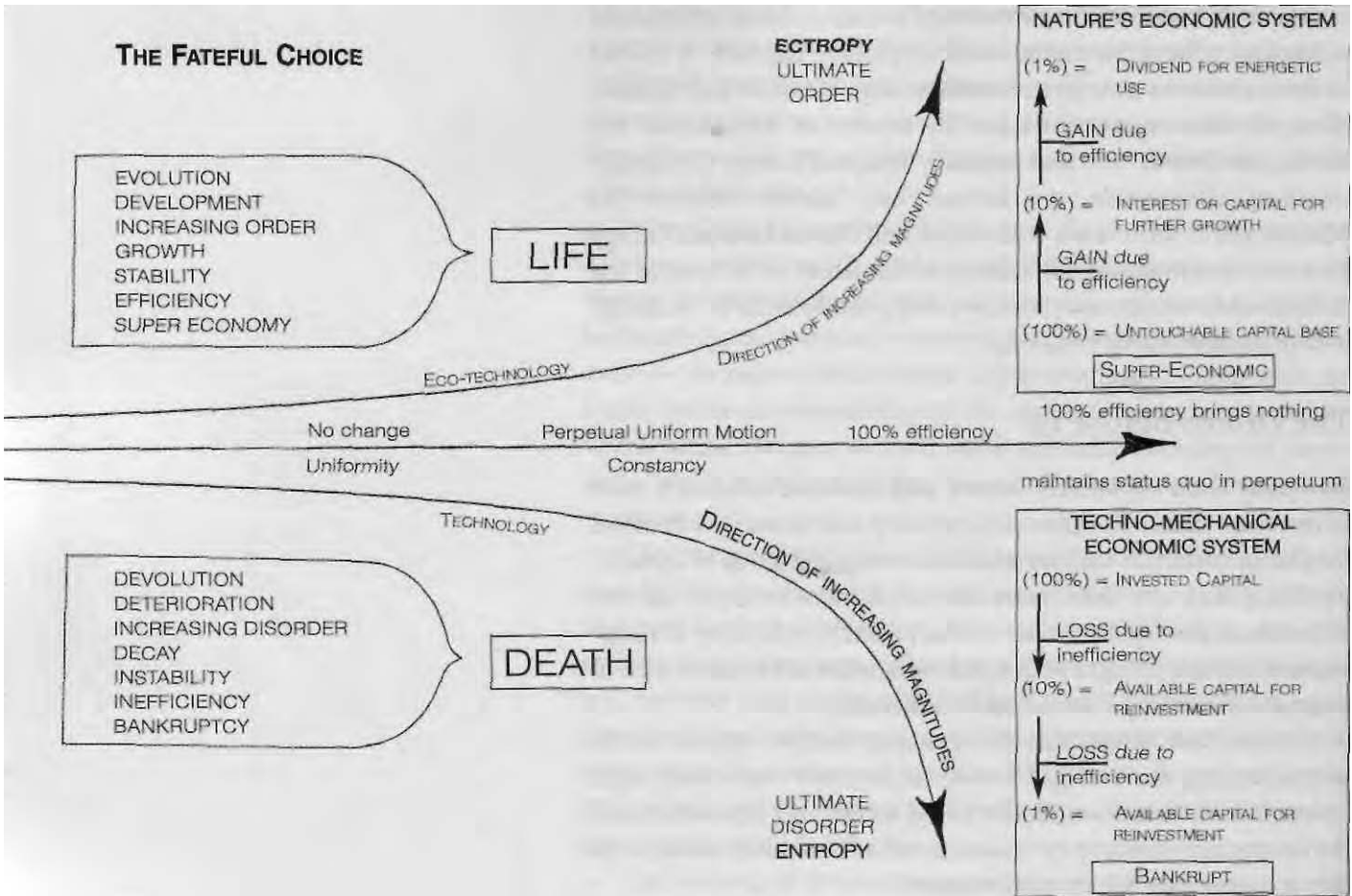


Fig. 5.1. The fateful choice.

importance. Mineral-rich lands are for them energy-enhanced areas that they regard as sacred.

Nature has to increase her capital by say 10%, to allow for growth, movement, and evolution of new life forms. To live sustainably is to live off Nature's surpluses (such as the careful harvesting of trees under properly controlled mixed forest management). The increasing diversity of evolving Nature brings more stability and the ability to withstand temporary setbacks (Fig. 5.1).

The centre line in Fig. 5.1 represents 100% efficiency. This may seem the best direction, but it is not the answer. It is undynamic, like circular motion. Its uniform condition means it never increases or decreases. Above all, the purpose of Nature is to seek movement, change and evolution; she despises stasis and uniformity.

The lower curve represents the path on which we are at this



time. The use of energy is improvident and wasteful, replacing diversity with mass production for quick return, which Nature cannot tolerate. Where once rich forest flourished, with a wide diversity of interdependent species of trees and animals, there exist now only monocultures. This requires enormous, hedgeless fields where only one crop is grown, dependent on fertilizers that slowly destroy the living humus; they become monotonous environmental wastelands. Gone are the high yielding, organically nourished fields surrounded by windbreaking hedgerows teeming with birds, small animals and wildflowers. The frequently reported notices of endangered or newly extinct species bear witness to this ebbing biodiversity.

What Schauberger calls the 'techno-mechanical economic system' produces a downward curve, accelerating as unnatural systems of energy are applied more widely. Pollution apart, these systems are clearly inefficient. In the 1970s, Walter Schauberger discussed industrial efficiency with Dr Fritz Kortegast, head of research and development at Mercedes-Benz in Stuttgart, who confirmed that at that time the propulsive energy produced by their most sophisticated engines was only 13% of the total energy introduced, the balance consumed as dissipated heat and pollution. A business this inefficient would soon fail.

The truth is that our techno-mechanical economic system is created by vested interests that consume energy through the massive exploitation of non-renewable resources. It must be clear that the ultimately such unsustainable technology can produce only economic collapse, social chaos and environmental deterioration. The disorder and decay that we are witnessing come from our dependence on an energy system that is self-destructive. In this system, an investment of \$100 produces \$13, which in turn would produce only \$1.69.<sup>7</sup>

## Energy defines quality

Convinced that we are the pinnacle of life on the Earth, we humans are actually destroying the very basis of creativity on the planet. It is the diversity of Nature that supports our place in the biosphere. The ongoing extraction of oil, coal and other minerals, deforestation, overfishing, and the continual loss of animal and plant species threaten our very existence. It is well accepted that only inferior

kinds of fish can live in poor quality water. It is no different for people. By allowing the natural resources of the environment to depreciate, the quality of human potential inevitably suffers.

Conventional science does not understand the importance of quality. For the reductionist scientist water is water, or a genetically engineered crop is the 'substantial equivalent' of a conventional crop. No two things can be identical in Nature whose processes depend on constant change and transformation. While quantitative science states that  $1 + 1$  makes 2, no two natural systems can ever be equated.

Monocultures and mass production mean repetition. They repeat an energetic or experiential process that has already happened, in which no new development, no advance, however slight, is possible. Identical repetition goes against evolution, because it wastes energy. The development of a new natural process or system demands change and variety.

George Gurdjieff, the Caucasian mystic and teacher, used to say that the ordinary person operates like a blind machine with no awareness or consciousness. Viktor Schauberger saw contemporary humans as superficial creatures that look, but never see. Our seeing is limited to recognition, not deep examination. We mistake outward appearance for totality, effect for cause. What we actually see are the external shells of manifestation, what is left by the formative energy. We don't see the energy that created the organism.

## The creative energy-vortex

Callum Coats illustrates the process of the creation of matter in the diagram (Fig. 5.2). As we have seen, creative energy moves spirally in the form of a vortex. The creative process takes place as the energy containing the blueprint of what is being created moves in whatever way it needs to in order to create the system it wishes. It draws down matter as a mirror image of the idea or blueprint. This is why the physical is said to be the shell of the organic reality.

What we have described is the formative energy. There is also the sustaining energy, the Ch'i in Chinese terms, which moves in the same way. This is the way a healthy river moves; and the blood in our capillaries, external manifestations of an energy path. We

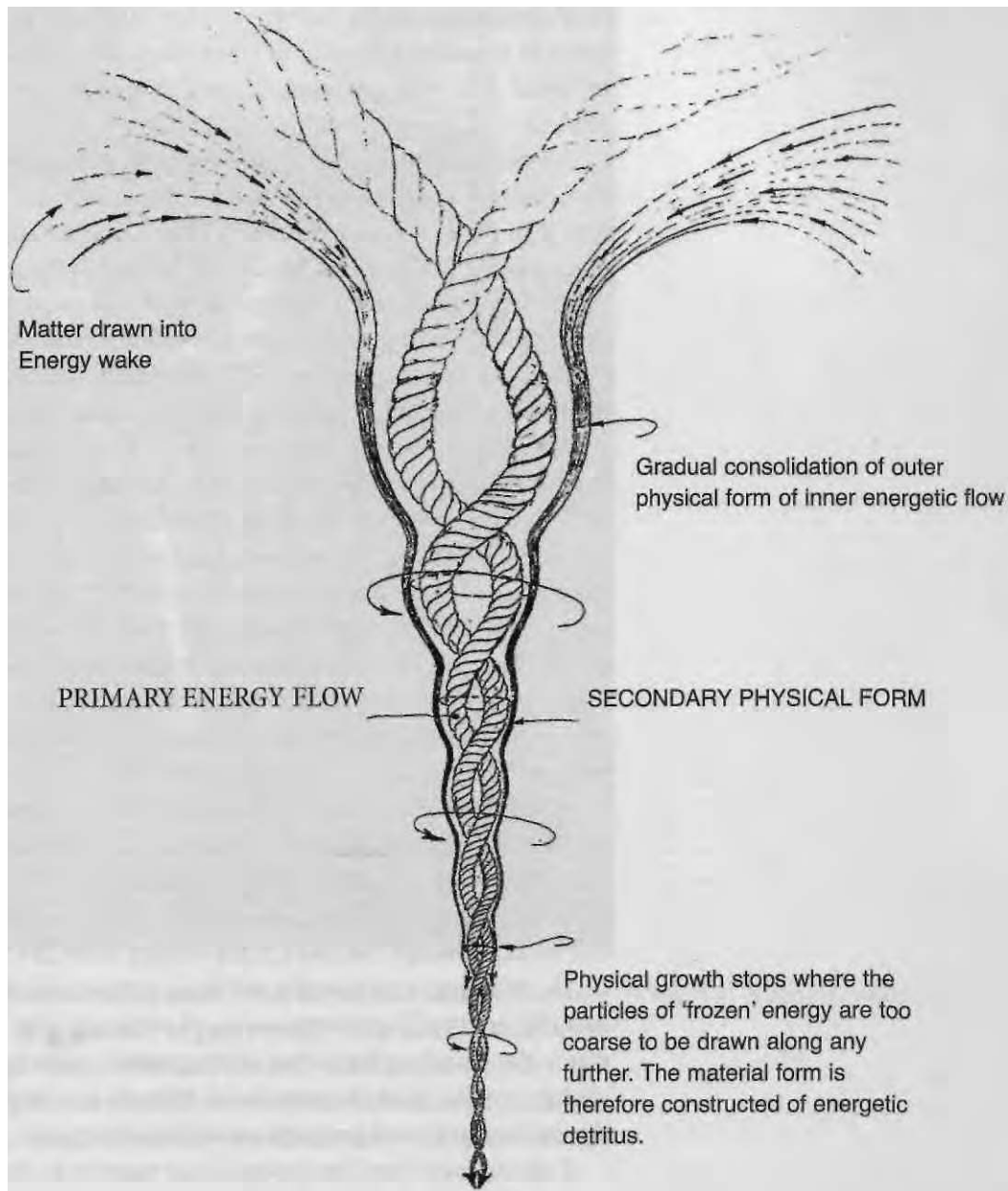


Fig. 5.2. Energy and form.

In the beginning was energy; it is primary — the cause; it creates the form in which it wishes to move; the form is the mirror of the energy — the secondary effect.

see the blood, but we don't see the energy that pushes it. What is visible in blood is the matter that is too coarse to be taken to the final destination of the energy. Energy manifests how it wants to move in the most efficient way. It is as if, when we build a house, we build it to suit our lifestyle, one in which it is easy to move around.

All natural systems are mirrors of their pattern of energy, or of the 'idea' that sought to create them in the first place. When the system is in place, the energy from which it originated is rejected as matter being too coarse to be carried further in the energy stream. Viktor Schauberger used to describe the Earth as a huge dung-heap, saying that all living things were the result of waste matter ejected by the creative energies moving in a certain way, and which were unable to continue transporting the material further.

Put simply, it is only those energies that remain immaterial that contribute to an increase in life-force, while the remaining energetic material is expelled as waste, just like daily human defecation. There are subtle nonmaterial energies in the food we eat, which are used to produce thought processes and metabolic functions. The human body is like a energy path containing a complex vortex which transforms the energy of matter into intellectual and physical actions. It is therefore axiomatic that the quality of our functions is dependent on the quality of the energy that we ingest. Viktor Schauberger campaigned for high quality nutrition and water.

So, physical manifestation depends on the movement of energy. All of Nature's creations that we observe are the outward shell of the formative energy path. Schauberger used to say that a tree will grow only to the height to which the energies can draw up the physical mass, although the tree's main energy body lies above it.

He demonstrated that the vortex is the natural form of movement for energy. The accompanying photograph (Fig. 5.3) well illustrates the spiraling form that water prefers. Each of the twists is slightly smaller than the one above. Viktor's son, Walter, calculated the mathematics and proportions of this structure.<sup>8</sup>

Callum Coats used the action of our weather to demonstrate the importance of the vortex in creating material substance. The spiraling air masses possess very little density, very slow rotational velocities and a large radius of influence. When these air masses converge, they gain in speed with the reduction in their radius of rotation.

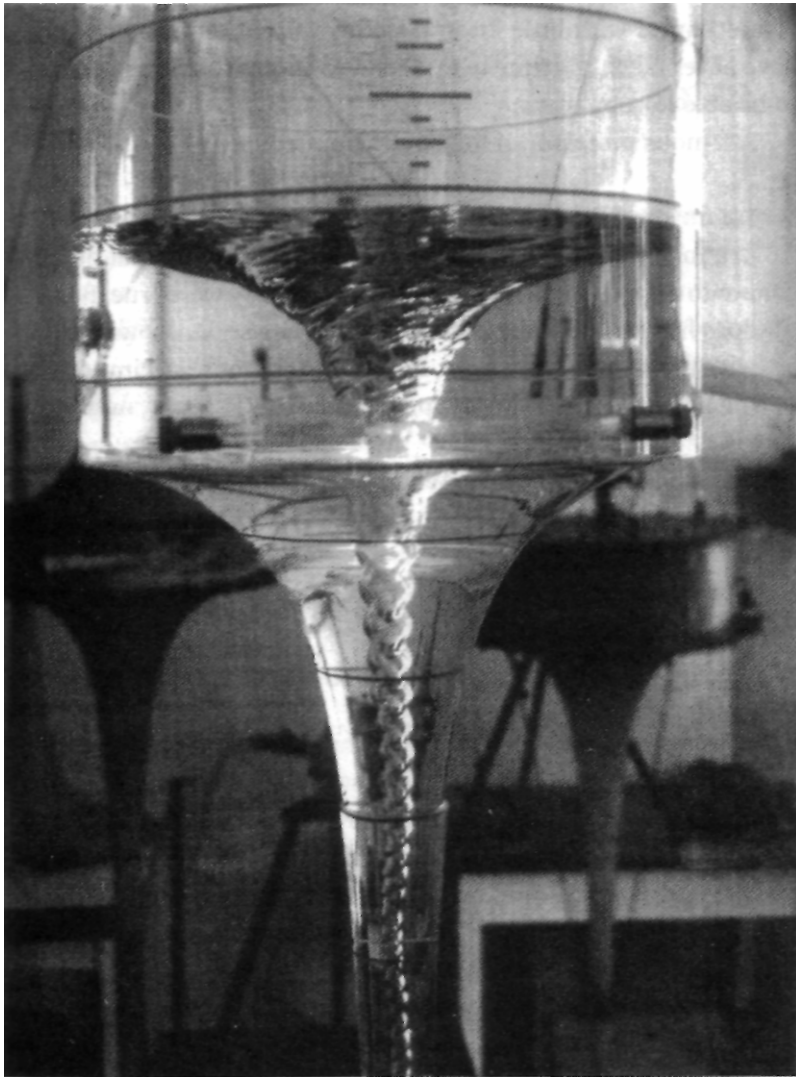


Fig. 5.3. A natural vortex.

At their extreme development, these air masses take on the more physical form of a tornado or waterspout. With their source in the lower density air mass subjected to solar radiation, as they descend with increasing velocity they become denser and more physical. The core of some tornados becomes so dense they can bend railway lines.

Viktor Schauberger found it hard to understand why science has not ascribed any fundamental importance to the natural movement of energy and Nature's systems of spiral movement, which are so clear, from the scale of a galaxy to that of a DNA molecule. Perhaps this is because it has been too immersed in the Euclidean elements

of mechanics with little knowledge or conception of organics. We have never taken the time to understand enough Nature's dynamics to be able to copy them.

A famous professor of logic once pointed out:

We must conclude, I think, that there is no room for telepathy in a materialistic universe. Telepathy is something that ought not to happen at all, if the materialist theory were true. But it does happen. So there must be something seriously wrong with the materialist theory, however numerous and imposing the normal facts which support it may be.<sup>9</sup>

Goethe too said of scientists, 'Whatever you cannot calculate you do not think is real.'

## 6. Motion — the Key to Balance

What we are doing is wrong and contrary to Nature. Nature moves in other ways. She primarily employs drawing (i.e. sucking), energies, since these are indispensable to Nature for the growth and maintenance of life. Nature uses pressure energies and explosive forces only for reducing quality and destruction. The work of atomic physicists is also upside down. They would be more correct if they started with simple nuclear fusion. They should set about the cold transformation of hydrogen into helium, as Nature has done over the millions of years of Creation. Today's technology has a tiger by the tail, because it splits the heaviest atoms with the greatest development of heat and an enormous expenditure of energy.<sup>1</sup>

### We use the wrong form of motion

The way earth, water and air are moved determines whether pathogenic or healthy life-forms come into being. New life can arise from burnt (carbonized) bacterial cultures, but if it is wrongly moved and processed then its parasitic nature soon becomes evident. However, if this culture is placed in soil that has been spared humanity's misguided interference, then its life-force blossoms again immediately.<sup>2</sup>

Motion and energy are inextricably interlinked. Movement is an expression of energy, and together with temperature, these are the cornerstones of Schauberger's Eco-technology. Through his careful observations and experiments he became aware of the difference between Nature's way of working and the prevailing human technology. He realized that the principles under which conventional technology operates must be basically unsound to have produced such appalling consequences for water, for soil and indeed for all of life.

Most of us are aware of the effects of chemicals in the body and on the soil, of the dangers of radioactive waste and biotechnology. But Schauberger was also concerned with something much more basically wrong with our technology. Being above all a practical man, he observed the appalling squandering of resources; why are

the internal combustion and steam engines on which our civilization depend not even 50% efficient? The energy that is not turned into power or motion is wasted and heats up the atmosphere, adding to the greenhouse effect. From his observations of Nature came the answer, which is probably the most important of Schauberger's discoveries — that we use the wrong form of motion.

Our machines and technological processes channel agents such as air, water and other liquids and gases into the type of motion that Nature uses only to decompose and dissolve matter. As a consequence, the air, water and other substances are devitalized and debilitated, affecting their surroundings. The energy produced by our technology is harmful because, by its very nature, it causes deterioration in the environment through strengthening those energies that break down structures and degrade quality, while at the same time suppressing those that increase quality and thus help plants and animals to be healthy.

Biodynamic and organic gardeners have commented that they value Viktor Schauberger's advice on how to treat materials that Nature breaks down for recycling, for these insights have been lacking for this form of cultivation (see Chapter 17 for more on this topic).

Through its dependence on the decomposing mode of motion our technology is dangerously affecting the vital biodiversity and balance of our ecosystems, the stability of our societies, and is one of the main causes of human-generated global warming. The form of motion on which we depend for building and development is the one that Nature uses to destabilize and break down. Nature uses another form of motion for creating and rebuilding. It is hardly surprising then, that our technology is self-destructive and unsustainable.

Our mechanical, technological systems of motion are based on explosive, outward pushing energies which always meet resistance, producing heat and friction. This form of movement goes out at a tangent, producing the fastest movement at the periphery (as in a wheel), a form of motion that is disintegrative, noisy and inefficient, because so much of the energy is dissipated. The effect is to break apart, to fragment. This is the way we generate our power; from the inside to the outside. It is called centrifugal movement, and is a process that Nature will use only to break down before reassembly into some other form takes place (see Fig. 1.2, p. 33).

By contrast, Nature uses the opposite, centripetal, form of



motion, moving from the outside to the inside with increasing velocity, which acts to cool, to condense, to structure; like water going down a plughole. When we talk of something imploding on itself, there is not the resistance or dissipation of energy that is found in the explosive process. The reverse takes place, cooling and condensing. Schauberger called this 'constructive' movement.

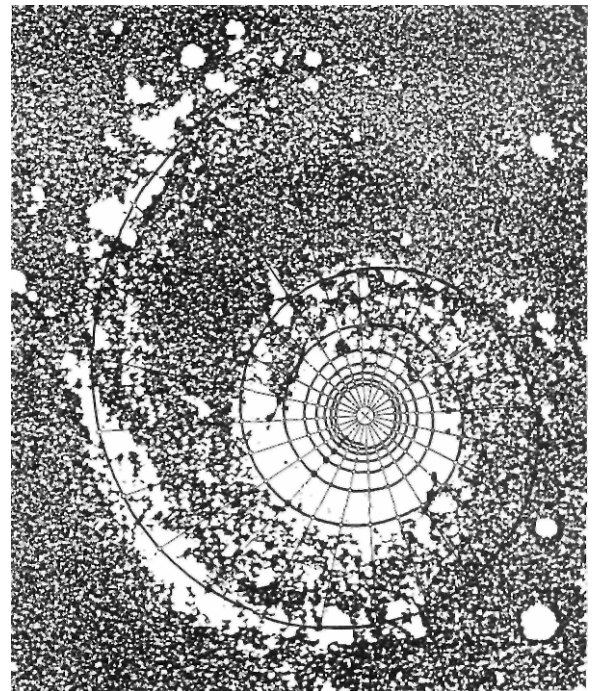
The centrifugal form of movement should not be called 'destructive,' because the word has such a negative connotation, and it has its rightful purpose in Nature; instead he called it 'deconstructive.' Viktor Schauberger demonstrated with his remarkable implosion machines that replicated the in-winding motion of Nature, that this was the way to create energy for human needs in the future.

As Schauberger's discovery has such enormous implications for the future of human culture, why has it not been openly debated in scientific circles? The reasons are two-fold. Firstly, Schauberger, being persona non grata with the German postwar establishment, was not granted the oxygen of publicity. Secondly, he was talked of in postwar Germany as a Nazi collaborator, by association rather than fact, as his work for the Nazi regime was carried out under duress. Though both the Russians and the Americans secretly confiscated his research papers, the Cold War days kept his name in the shadows. His discoveries have been enthusiastically embraced by the alternative culture, but as yet have not become more widely known.

## The 'original' motion

Viktor Schauberger was always comparing terrestrial laws of motion to the patterns of movement in the Heavens. He firmly believed that there existed a 'form originating' motion that was responsible for the evolutionary dynamics of the Earth and the Cosmos, generally referring to it as the 'original' motion. The whole Universe is continually in motion. This movement is in spirals, many spirals within spirals. Galaxies take a spiral form. As we saw in Chapter 4, forms in Nature very often follow the law 'As Above, so Below,' implying that there is a Universal language of form and motion. Liquids and gases prefer to move in spirals; likewise energy. Dowzers find energy spirals in the ground. Energy in the human body seems to do the same.

Fig. 6.1. Spiral galaxy superimposed by hyperbolic spiral.<sup>3</sup>



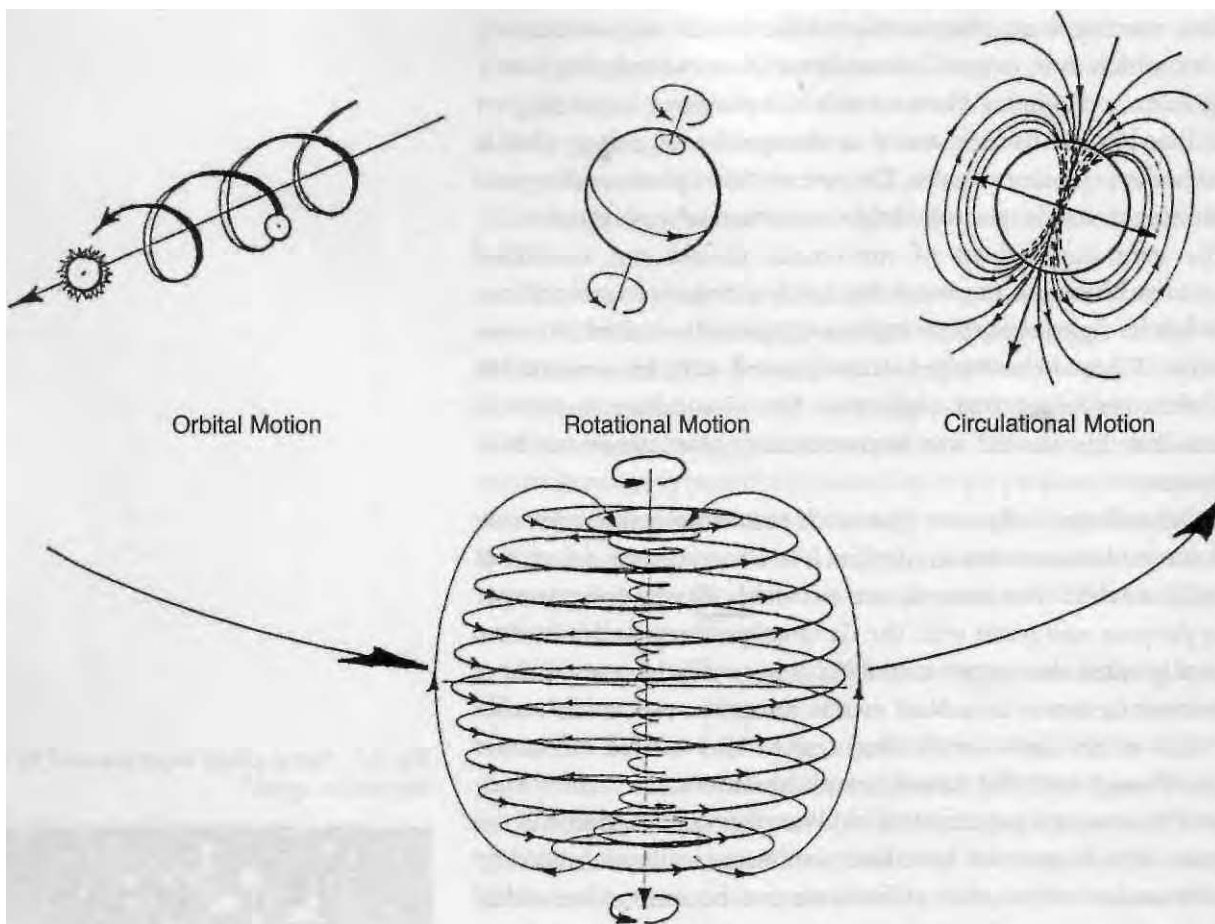


Fig. 6.2. Three basic forms of motion. When combined into one, these make up the dynamic, creative, formative spiral-vortical movement.<sup>5</sup>

As Callum Coats recounts:

There are many examples in ordinary language which recall this spiral movement. When we ex-(s)pire, we leave this our 'mortal coil.' When we are in-spire-d, we feel drawn to higher ideals. Our spir(e)it is raised when we are sucked into the upward spiral. Similarly through re-spir(e)-ation the ionization balance of the body, which varies according to the time of day, is adjusted by the proportional ionization of the air indrawn through the nostrils, which due to opposite directions of rotation, is negatively ionized by the left nostril and positively by the right nostril. Sneezing, therefore, may perhaps be a compensating process, through which high opposing charges resulting from over-ionization are reduced to zero.

Interestingly, the German word — Wirbelsaule — for the spinal column, the fundamental supporting structure of the human body, literally means a 'spiral' column. Similarly each of the vertebrae is referred to as a whirlpool or vortex. Clearly the Germans have long had a completely different view of the central structure of our bodies. Whereas we see it as a stiff, more or less rigid, physical structure, they understand it more as an energy path. This has obvious associations with the Hindu concept of Kundalini, the name given to the two serpents that metaphorically dwell at the base of the spine, whose rising energizes that spiritualize the various higher chakras (energy vortices) of the physical body and whose entwinement on Mercury's staff (the caduceus) empowers him as Messenger of the Gods. Nature too, provides us with countless examples of dynamic spiral growth and movement in the form of galaxies, cyclones, whirlpools and tornadoes, of which we, in our blindness and arrogance, fail to take note in our pursuit of mechanical perfection.<sup>4</sup>

## Types of motion

All natural dynamic motion consists of one or more of three basic types of movement — orbital, rotational and circulatory (see Fig. 6.3). When these are put together they produce a complex form we call spiral-vortical motion which Nature uses to build, structure and purify.

Viktor distinguished two forms of spiral-vortical motion — radial—> axial (or centripetal) and axial—> radial (or centrifugal) motion. In Fig. 1.2, axial —> radial motion is shown initially as a movement around a centre, changing to a tangential movement as it moves outward. There is no motion at the centre but, with increasing distance from the centre, the speed of movement and the degree of disintegration also increase. The wooden wagon-wheels of yore had an iron band around them for this reason. The 'tie-er' (tyre or tire) held the wheel together.

The form of movement employed by our technology produces excess energy in the form of heat or noise. Initially, with no movement at the centre, velocity and resistance increase with the outward 'explosion.' This axial -> radial centrifugal form of motion can

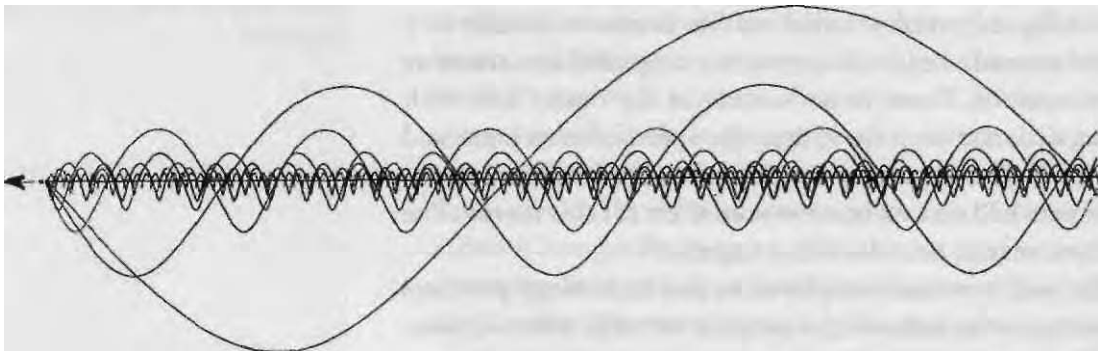
be described as divergent, decelerating, dissipating, structure-loosening, disintegrating, destructive and friction-inducing.

While the explosive dispersion of energy creates noise, its creative concentration of energy, is silent. As Viktor often insisted, 'Everything that is natural is silent, simple and cheap.' A natural forest can be a haven of silence. The millions of chemical and atomic movements and interactions taking place are energetic processes, an extraordinary concentration of quiet creative energy. In contrast, its destruction brings the horrendous racket of chain-saws, heavy machinery and crashing trees. Our mechanical forms of movement are almost always axial  $\rightarrow$  radial and heat- and friction-inducing. Nature's dynamic processes, on the other hand, use the opposite form of movement, the slowest at the periphery and the fastest at the centre. The movements of a cyclone or a tornado are a good example, flowing from the outside inwards with increasing velocity, which acts to cool, to condense, to structure. The centre of a cyclone is not hot; it is cool.

Radial  $\rightarrow$  axial (centripetal) motion can be defined as convergent, contracting, consolidating, creative, integrating, formative, friction reducing.<sup>6</sup> The dynamics of evolution must therefore follow this centripetal path, for if the opposite were the case, all would have come to a stop almost before it started.

Force is the employment of energy to do work, and can be measured as acceleration. It is important to distinguish between two forms of acceleration, for one form breaks apart and the other consolidates. In the deconstructive form the radius of rotation is expanding and the form of acceleration is pressure- and friction-

Fig. 6.3. The planetary vortex.  
The movements of the inner planets, shown dynamically over a period of one full Saturn cycle of 29.46 years, actually describe a vortex, with each planet describing its own spiral path about the Sun.



intensifying (centrifugal acceleration); the constructive when the radius of rotation is reducing, creating a form of acceleration that is suction-increasing and friction-reducing (centripetal acceleration). More power must be applied to maintain the same velocity or to increase speed with centrifugal acceleration. With centripetal acceleration, the velocity and energy increase automatically. Viktor called this 'formative force,' the constructive energies from which all life is created.

# 7. The Atmosphere and Electricity

It is thought that, when the Earth was young, after it had cooled from a molten mass of condensing gases and a crust had formed, it was entirely covered in water. In those early days there was great heat loss and the Earth was cooler. The lower part of the initial atmosphere was composed of water vapour evaporated from the vast ocean, with a contribution of other gases emanating from volcanic eruptions. Because of its high specific heat<sup>1</sup> and its capacity to retain heat, the water vapour gradually absorbed the heat of the Sun, thus raising the average temperature. Heat losses were kept to a minimum at night because water absorbs infrared heat. It was these qualities of water that allowed the greenhouse effect to take hold. Otherwise the Earth would have remained cold, lifeless and barren.

Of all liquids, water has the greatest ability to store heat. It absorbs heat slowly, releasing it slowly. Water vapour was thus an ideal medium for conserving heat on the Earth's surface, enabling life to gain hold and, once it was established, water became the medium for complex life forms to develop.

What makes water different from all other liquids is its so-called 'anomaly point' or 'point of anomalous expansion,' which will be discussed in more detail in Chapter 9. Contrary to the behaviour of other liquids, the volume of water does not decrease continually with increasing cold; below a temperature of +4°C (39°F) it starts to expand again, and on freezing expands still further.

Pure water will freeze only at a temperature of around -40°C (-40°F) or in clouds at about -10°C (14°F), which again is fairly important, as we shall discover later. Compared to absolute zero (-273.15°C), supposedly the lowest temperature found in the Universe, the temperature of 0°C (32°F), or freezing point, is relatively warm. The normal human living environment, between approximately -10°C (14°F) and +40°C (104°F), is not a large range.

At a height of about 22 km (14 miles) above the Earth's surface, water vapour becomes so thin and unsubstantial that it is dissociated into its constituent atoms of oxygen and hydrogen through the action of strong ultraviolet radiation. As it is the heavier element,

the oxygen then sinks back to Earth, while the lighter hydrogen atoms rise eventually to reunite with the hydrogen of space.

The widowed single atom oxygen atoms are now exposed to high levels of ionizing radiation which causes them to combine with molecular oxygen (O<sub>2</sub>) to form an allotropic form of oxygen, O<sub>3</sub> or ozone, which absorbs dangerous ultraviolet radiation, a process vital for shielding life on Earth.

## Earth's atmosphere

The atmosphere is a relatively thin veneer surrounding the Earth, containing the gases essential to life. Its total thickness is about 400 km (248 miles), which represents about 0.3% of the Earth's diameter. It has four principal zones, through which the temperature swings alternately from a falling mode to a rising mode:<sup>2</sup>

During each of these temperature transitions, the anomaly point of 4°C (+39°F) is passed, so that in each zone there is first a band of negative temperature gradient, followed by a band of positive temperature gradient (see Chapter 5). The three lower zones each have a water layer close to these anomaly points, cumulus and cirrus clouds (troposphere), nacreous clouds (stratosphere) and noctilucent clouds (mesosphere) as shown on Fig. 7.1 which would resist the transfer of an electric charge. Callum Coats has suggested that this could result in the creation of a natural biocondenser, a condenser being a device with which an electric charge can be accumulated and stored.

Table 1. The four principal zones of the Earth's atmosphere.

	height (km/miles)	temperature	
Troposphere:	13/0 to 8	+ 15°C (59°F) to -60°C (-76°F)	area of weather activity
+4°C (39°F) layer	3.5/2		and the greenhouse effect
Stratosphere:	13/8 to 50/31	-60°C (-76°F) to +10°C (50°F)	contains ozone layer
+4°C (39°F) layer	40/25		and very high clouds
Mesosphere:	50/31 to 80/50	+10°C (50°F) to -100°C (-148°F)	rapidly falling temperature
+4°C (39°F) layer	65/40		and pressure
Ionosphere:	80/50 to 400/248	-100°C (-148°F) to +600°C(+1100°F)	absorbs Sun's shortwave
+4°C (39°F) layer	100/62		radiation

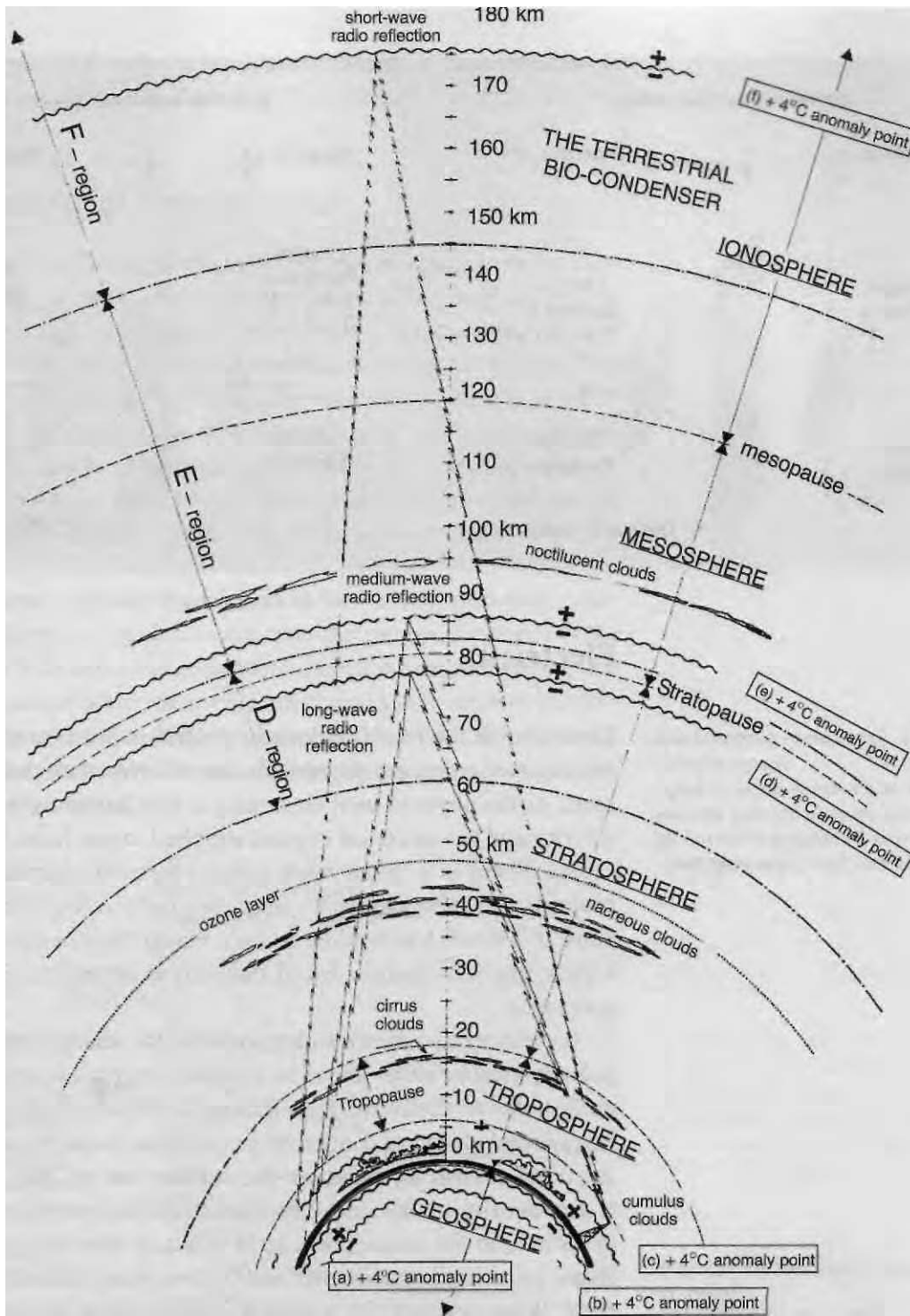
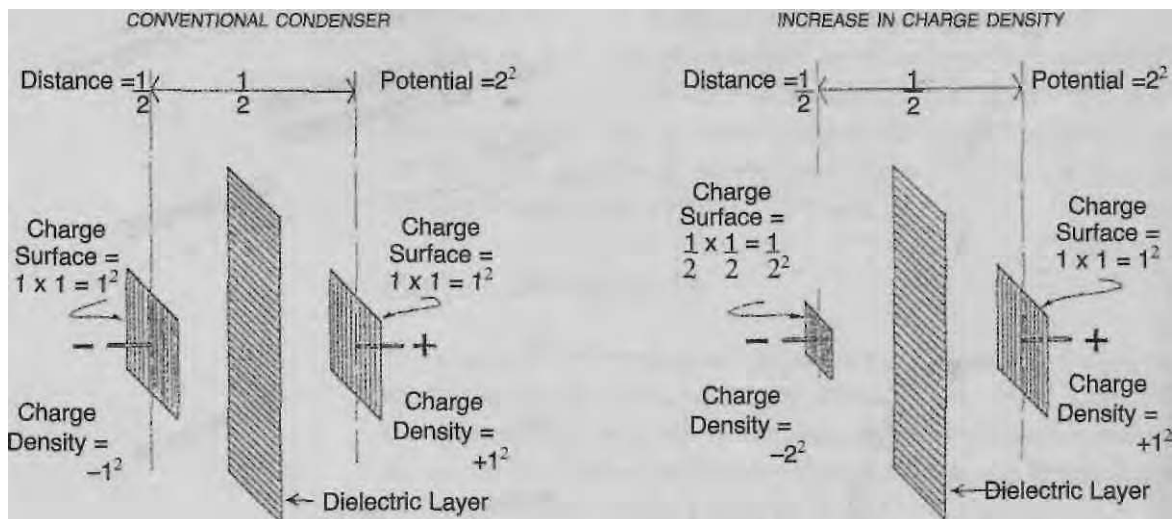


Fig. 7.1. Section through Earth's atmosphere, showing temperature fluctuations.

Galium Coats postulates a series of concentric rings where the temperature reaches water's anomaly point of  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$ , which Schauberger identified as water's state of greatest potential, together creating an accumulator of energy to facilitate the emergence of life.





## Electricity

Figs. 7.2 & 3. Increase in potential and charge density.

In a condenser for accumulating electrical charge, the energy potential increases by either reducing the area of one plate, or by bringing it closer to the dielectric layer (separating plate).

Electricity is the result of magnet polarities put into motion. In electricity the process depends on the polarity of electrons in the atom. At the physical level electricity is familiar in thunderstorm activity and the electrical current supplied to our homes through cables. There is a much more refined form of electricity more properly called bioelectricity which is produced by living organisms. It is much less studied or even recognized, being an octave higher, but Schauberger found that this is crucial to all natural processes.

For electrical activity to be possible, the charges of different polarity must be either joined by a conducting path or separated by an insulator or dielectric. Figs. 7.2 and 7.3 illustrate two situations in a normal electrical condenser or capacitor for accumulating an electrical charge. By reducing the surface area of one plate, the charge density on that side of the dielectric is increased, in the ratio of its area to the larger plate. So if it is a quarter the area of the larger plate, its charge density will be four times that of the larger plate. What is called the potential is the amount of energy with which the two opposite charges try to balance out the difference. The energy potential increases as the distance between the plates

HIDDEN NATURE

is decreased.<sup>3</sup> If the area of one plate is reduced at the same time as it is moved closer to the dielectric, the potential is increased exponentially.

## The terrestrial biocondenser

While Fig. 7.2 illustrates the principle of a normal electrical condenser, Fig. 7.5 shows the typical situation at layers of the atmosphere where the air temperature is close to the anomaly point of +4°C (39°F). The pure water layer takes the place of the dielectric layer. Generally speaking the positively charged surface is influenced by the positive temperature gradient, and the negatively charged surface by the negative gradient. If the charge of the positive plate is raised, that of the negative plate will rise automatically to the same level, the charges being distributed evenly on the plates' surfaces.

If we now rearrange these plates in the form of concentric cylinders as shown in Fig. 7.4, to simulate the proposed pattern of the +4°C (39°F) condensers in the atmospheric zones, you will see that the surface area of the inner cylindrical plates reduces from the outside inwards and the charge and potential increase automatically. The greater the number of nested plates therefore, the more intense the energy potential.

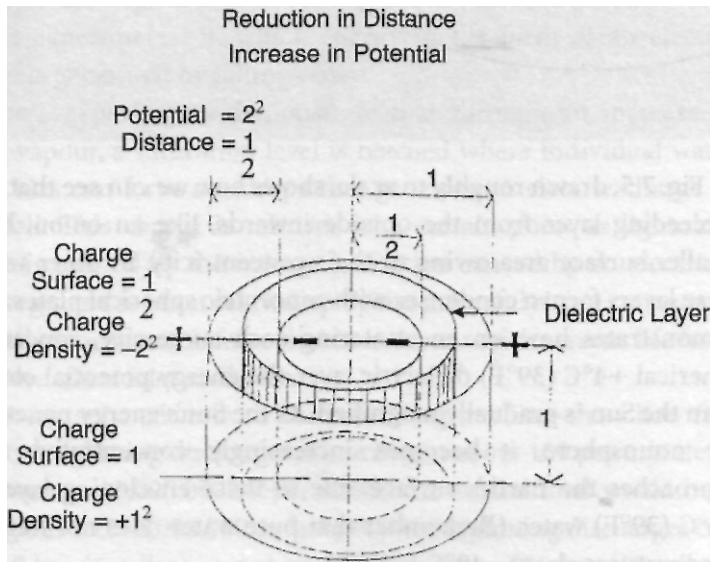


Fig. 7.4. Reduction in distance, increase in potential. The dielectric layers act like non-conductive membranes or insulators, separating positive and negative charges.

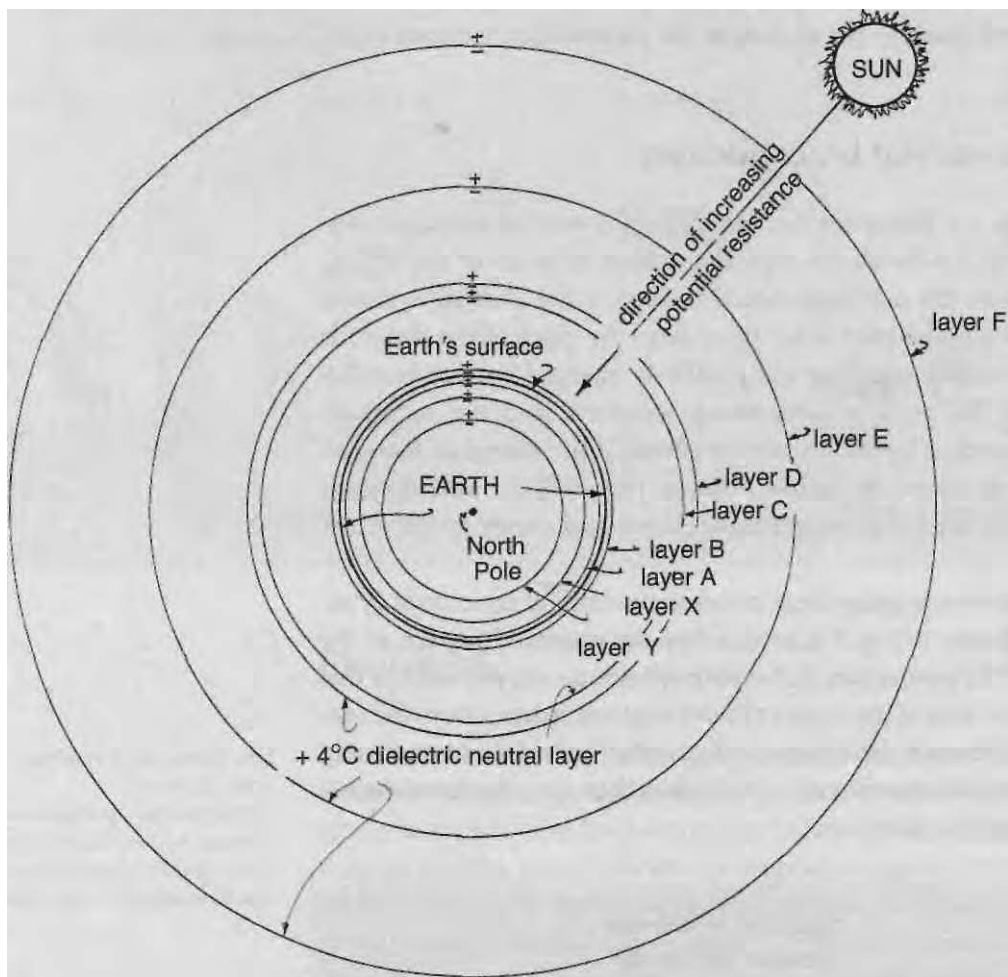


Fig. 7.5. Terrestrial bio-condenser.  
 A schematic proposed by Galium Coats, illustrating how the Sun's electromagnetic energy is amplified by the diminishing radius of each dielectric layer formed by water strata at a temperature of +4°C.

Fig. 7.5, drawn roughly to scale, shows how we can see that each succeeding layer from the outside inwards, like an onion, has a smaller surface area owing to their concentricity. In other words, these layers form a condenser with concentric spherical plates. This demonstrates how, on encountering each successive, concentric, spherical +4°C (39°F) dielectric layer, the energy potential coming from the Sun is gradually magnified. As the Sun's energy penetrates the atmosphere, it becomes increasingly concentrated as it approaches the Earth's surface, due to these enveloping layers of +4°C (39°F) water. (Remember that pure water does not freeze at temperatures above -40°C /-40°F.)

## Earth as an accumulator of energy

Viewed from a more cosmic perspective these strata are extremely close together, producing a very high potential of energy. Callum Coats proposes an ingenious concept of the Earth as an accumulator of energy gradually building up an electromagnetic charge (Fig. 7.5). This accumulation of energy would naturally enhance the emergence of life because, without differences in electrical charge, gender, potential or a suitable energy field, life is impossible.

Viktor Schauberger was concerned to identify which natural processes and functions might promote the concentration of the energetic matrix within which physical life can evolve. He favoured an energy matrix being created by the 'original' motion of the Earth as it rotates about its own axis and circulates its biomagnetic and bioelectrical energies through itself during its 365.26 day, orbital waltz around the Sun.

It seems reasonable to propose that these variously charged layers in the atmosphere are a product of the Earth's rotation. The +4°C (39°F) layers form charge-resisting strata which may contribute to the reflection of radio waves, though the conventional explanation for their reflection is the different ionization levels, water vapour being present at different densities in the different layers.<sup>4</sup> The development of electricity can be demonstrated by very simple experiments, in which energy in the form of an electric charge is generated by falling water.<sup>5</sup>

These experiments demonstrate that through an increase of water vapour, a saturation level is reached where individual water molecules can form raindrops that generate an electric charge as they fall. This charge is released at a certain point as lightning. Ozone is created by the intense ionization caused by an electrical discharge, and is often carried up by the powerful rising currents of a thunderstorm, to reinforce the ozone layer, which screens life from excessive ultraviolet radiation.

Photographs taken from Earth-orbiting satellites show how frequent are lightning discharges, occurring at about 100 per minute. If they average 15,000,000kw per strike, the annual total would be a prodigious 13,000,000,000kw/hrs per year.<sup>6</sup> Lightning discharges can reach 9 km (6 miles), and sheet lightning up to 100 km (62 miles).

There is some evidence in recent years of a decline in thunderstorm activity.<sup>7</sup>

If this were the case, the implications for the protective ozone layer would be serious. Water particles have to be very fine in order to spin fast enough to produce an electrical discharge (the water atom is an electrical dipole). One of the features of more stormy weather is to produce a larger water drop that cannot spin fast enough to produce a significant electrical charge.

## Electricism and magnetism

Viktor Schauberger coined the term 'electricism' for the effect that electricity has on life, which is destructive, dismantling, disintegrative and debilitating. Magnetism is the energy that circulates through and around the Earth on its polar axis. Electricism and magnetism are apparently contradictory (or dialectic partners, see p. 47). Together they form the electromagnetic whole, magnetism being the more cohering and life-affirming (female) of the two. Its higher state, biomagnetism, which is associated with living organisms and whose qualities are uplifting and upbuilding, is an energy responsible for the combining of elements in the creative process of building new life forms on a higher, more refined octave (e.g. the fourth dimension). Bioelectricism, on the other hand, is associated with the deconstructive aspect of organic life.

As we saw in Chapter 3, bioelectricism and biomagnetism are complementary, but operate differently in contrasting functions, representing extremes of bioelectromagnetic quality. As in all formative and life-building processes, both bioelectricism and biomagnetism are part of the action, but normally balance each other. However, in order for creative processes to be successful, biomagnetism must predominate.

The Van Allen belts, encircling the Earth roughly over the area between the tropics of Cancer and Capricorn, form the radial expansive (centrifugal) electric (bioelectric) function of the Earth dynamo. The axial magnetic (biomagnetic) contractive (centripetal) function is performed by the magnetic lines of force passing through the centre of the Earth from the South to the North Pole and sweeping around the Earth globe from North to South. Between these two component forces, a pulsation, which is the hallmark of all living things, is created as electrical and magnetic moments

alternately attain their maxima. According to Viktor Schaubberger, these oscillations take place at such a high frequency that we cannot perceive them, and view them as a state of rest.

## Storms, water vapour and climate

The amount of water evaporated annually from the oceans has been calculated to total about  $333,000\text{km}^3$ .<sup>8</sup> By comparison, the amount from rivers, lakes and land surfaces is more like in  $62,000\text{km}^3$ , or 18.6% of the world's annual rainfall ( $395,000\text{km}^3$ ). This has in the past been derived mostly from forests. However, the enormous deforestation of the last fifty years, particularly for agriculture and beef production, has led to a much higher evaporation rate from the Sun-exposed land surfaces.

This leads to a higher volume of water vapour in the atmosphere, which in turn increases the greenhouse effect, leading to higher temperatures which produce a further increase in evaporation from the oceans.<sup>9</sup> There is one feedback mechanism which alleviates the increase in surface temperature; this is the increase in cloud cover as a result of the increased water vapour, increasing the reflection of the Sun's energy back into space (the albedo effect).

While this additional water vapour will increase the general atmospheric temperatures, much of it will drift towards the poles due to the movement of the upper air streams, there to fall as snow, adding to the volume of water fixed almost permanently as ice. This abnormal water vapour content increases the amount of cloud cover, increasing the albedo effect by which the Sun's energy is reflected back into space from the clouds' surface.<sup>10</sup>

The catastrophic rainfall in some areas like Bangladesh and Mozambique and the severe drought conditions of central Africa and northern China are the result of this serious disturbance of the Earth's water balance. Man's destruction of the forest starts a chain reaction that precipitates the cumulative effects of an increasingly disrupted world climate.

## PART THREE



## Water — the Source of Life

## 8. The Nature of Water

The Upholder of the Cycles, which supports the whole of Life, is WATER. In every drop of water dwells a Deity, whom we all serve; there also dwells Life, the Soul of the 'First' substance — Water — whose boundaries and banks are the capillaries that guide it and in which it circulates.

Viktor Schauberger<sup>1</sup>

Our Earth is the planet of water. Seventy percent of the world's surface is covered by water. Our bodies are seventy-five percent water. It is essential to all life. Yet, our present science understands little of its real nature. We have no respect for water; we use it for transporting inappropriate substances, usually waste and pollutants. We destroy its complex structures by driving it through turbines, pipes or straightened riverbanks. We treat it as a commodity. Viktor Schauberger called it a living organism, 'the blood of the Earth,' and insisted that in its various forms, as blood, sap or water, it is the basis of all life.

Viktor Schauberger was known as 'The Water Wizard' because he made profound discoveries about its nature. His principal pre-occupation was with water as the key to all life, and its vital relationship to the forest. He saw water as the foundation of all life-processes and the channel that nourishes and energizes all life. He also recognized it as a living entity, whose main function is to accumulate and transform the energies originating from the Earth and the Sun. The source of all our problems, according to Schauberger, is our failure to regard water as an organism; we arrest its creative processes and when it becomes our enemy it can do enormous damage.

As a young man, searching for inspiration in his beloved forest, Viktor was sitting quietly by the bank of a pristine stream when he unexpectedly found that his consciousness entered the water. It connected with an intelligence in the water that spoke to him. It told him what movements it needed to make in order to stay healthy, and under what conditions. It was from this mystical experience that he built up his awareness of how healthy water is



essential for the creation and maintenance of all life. Water needs to flow in a particular dynamic way, and must not become overheated. Movement and temperature are the key criteria for water, and therefore for all life.

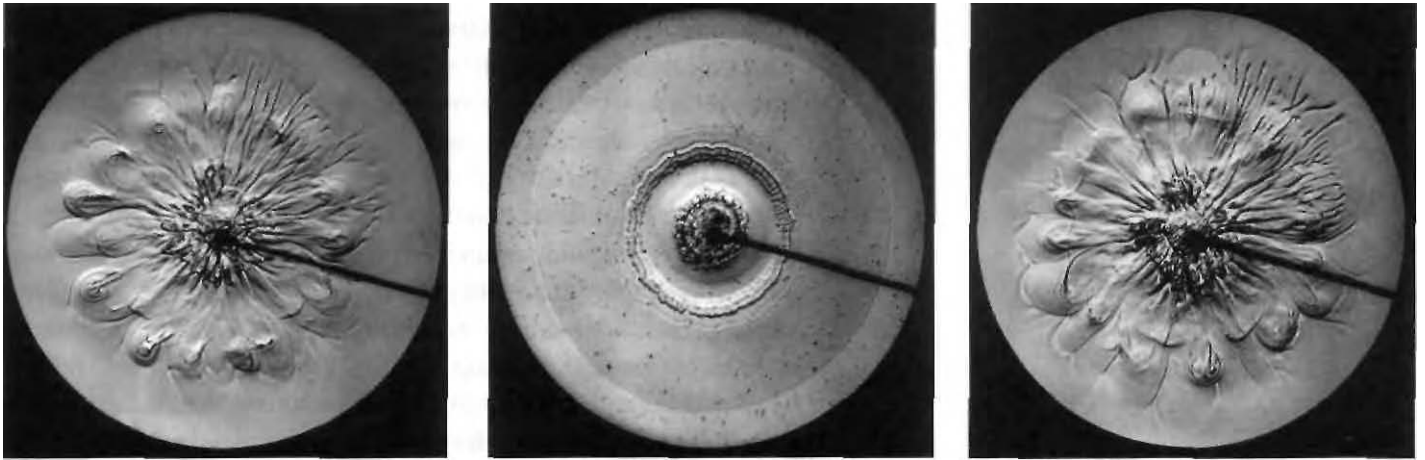
Still water is passive; it is amorphous and apparently lifeless. As soon as it begins to move, it is filled with surfaces that define little structures, convoluted in form, and with magical vortical shapes. The nature of water is to move. When it is active it comes alive; in movement it fulfils its potential, which is to bring life.

When it is immature, water takes, absorbing minerals with a voracious appetite, to give back the much needed nourishment to its environment only when mature as a mountain spring. Water has a memory; when we think we have 'purified' water of the chemicals and hormones we have mindlessly thrown in, in order to make it drinkable, the energy of these contaminants remain, polluting our energy bodies in the same way that chemicals affect our physical bodies. Because of its nature, water sacrifices itself entirely to the environment, for good or for bad.

People mocked Viktor when he insisted that water behaves like a living organism. When it has reached maturity water displays amazing properties. He showed how, when it is vibrant and healthy, it pulsates, twists and spirals in a very specific way that maintains its vitality and purity, enabling it to fulfil its function for all organisms as an energy channel and a conveyor of nutrients and waste.

If we watch water streaming down an inclining road after a shower of rain, or a rivulet on the sloping beach sand towards the sea, we will notice how it pushes down in a jerky rhythm, as pulsations. That is because water is alive — it actually does pulsate, just as blood pulsates through the veins and arteries of the body. But the most miraculous fact about water is that it has the power of self-purification, and can restore its generative properties in the same way that other living things can heal themselves.

In all symbolic traditions, water is linked with the emotions. It is the emotions that open us out to life, that make us sensitive, receptive and compassionate. Artists love water for its inspiration; it has the ability to stimulate awareness and imagination. I am fortunate to live by a stream; the murmur of a little waterfall by my gate has the quality of calming my emotions. The sounds of water are very evocative; the 'plop' of a drop on a pool surface echoes in the cave;



the rhythmic crescendo and fall of the waves hitting the rocks, or the swish and suck of the waves on the beach.

Current wisdom accepts that water is important because it is the most common substance on the Earth's surface, and that it is the main physical constituent of all living organisms. But conventional science regards water only as inorganic, with no life of its own.

## The memory of water

Water's reputation as a powerful solvent derives from its electromagnetic qualities. The positive hydrogen atoms in the water molecule attract to themselves negative ions from the substance they are in contact with, while the oxygen atom with a double negative charge joins up with positive ions, so that balance is maintained. In this way water breaks down and dissolves substances into their constituent parts, taking oxygen, nitrogen and carbon dioxide from the air, and calcium, potassium, sodium and manganese, etc, from the rocks. Water continually collects substances from one source, depositing them, usually as building blocks for new growth, somewhere else.

When water is flowing as its nature dictates, energetically in spirals and vortices, it creates the structure necessary for it to carry constructive information. These are microclusters of vibrating energy centres, constantly receiving and transmuting energy from every contact the water body makes. Despite water's fluidity and its ability constantly to change its state, the molecules, if conditions permit, generally organize themselves into structures. The vortical

Fig. 8.1. These 'drop' pictures show the structure of water. The first is of living spring water with its structure complete; the second downstream after domestic sewage and industrial effluents, with a trace of rudimentary development, but no formative capacity; a third taken from further down the stream will show how it has, through its natural spiralling movement, rebuilt the water's structure.

New techniques are now being developed for demonstrating photographically the structure of water, e.g. through magnetic resonance equipment, of which the best known are the experiments of Dr Masaru Emoto with ice crystals.

movement creates the microclusters and also a complex laminar structure that generates energy from the interaction of their plane surfaces against each. These structures can be observed with a suitable microscope. The more powerful the vortical action, the greater the storage capacity of information (like adding memory to your computer). Thus water put through Viktor Schaubberger's implosion (powerfully vortitized) process (see Chapter 18) has the ability to enhance the energy of organisms with which it comes in contact. The clusters have the ability to store vibrational impressions or imprints. If these are beneficial, they may be able to restore healthy resonance in the human body, as through homeopathy. On the other hand if they are the imprints of toxins or pollutants in the drinking water, they may be carriers of disharmony and disease (see p. 119).

Viktor demonstrated that water as an organism has a life cycle from birth, through maturation to death. When it is treated with disrespect or ignorant handling, instead of bringing life and vitality, it becomes anti-life, facilitating pathogenic processes in the organisms it inhabits, which initiate physical decay and eventually bring death. One of Schaubberger's more controversial discoveries was that water that has been structurally damaged takes on negative energy that precipitates deterioration in the human being, affecting our actual moral, mental and spiritual wellbeing.

## The creation of water

Where does water come from? No one really knows. It is one of Nature's mysteries. Its source cannot be the upper atmosphere for, as we saw in Chapter 7, the water molecule is actually broken down at high altitudes. The only other source must be the Earth herself. Fascinating research done by the American Stephan Riess in 1934 showed that enormous quantities of virgin water could be obtained from crystalline rocks. A combination of geothermal heat and a process known as triboluminescence, a glow which electrons in the rocks discharge as a result of friction or violent pressure, can actually release the oxygen and hydrogen gases in certain ore-bearing rocks. This process, called cold oxidation, can form virgin water.<sup>2</sup>

Riess was able to tap straight into formations of hard desert rock of the right composition and produce as much as 3,000 gallons per

minute. Unfortunately, his efforts to provide needy areas with copious quantities of high quality, fresh water were thwarted by Californian politicians with vested interests, and he was persecuted relentlessly. His experiments should now be replicated.

Water is conventionally described as  $H_2O$ , having two hydrogen atoms, each carrying a positive external charge, and one oxygen atom carrying two negative external charges. It has, however, been analysed to contain 18 different compounds and 15 separate types of ions.<sup>3</sup> Both seawater and our bodies contain 84 elements in the same proportion. There is 4% salt in our blood; in the oceans it is also 4%.

Water is not a straightforward substance with its own identity, for it takes on the qualities of the medium in which it moves, or the organism in which it resides. It has the unusual ability of being able to combine with more elements and compounds than any other molecule and is sometimes described as the universal solvent. Viktor called it an 'emulsion' when it is supercharged with these creative, 'fructigenic' energies. The more diverse the make-up of constituents dissolved or suspended in water, the more complex the emulsion and the broader the range of its properties. (Carbon, its so-called inorganic counterpart, has a similar capacity that no other elements possess.) Water is found in three physical states: solid as ice, liquid as water and gaseous as water vapour. It also comes in many guises and forms: it is saline and fresh, it is blood and it is sap.

## The anomaly point of water

The density of water is crucial to its behaviour. It is at its densest and has its greatest energy content at a temperature of  $+4^{\circ}C$  ( $39^{\circ}F$ ). This is the so-called 'anomaly point,' which has a major influence on its quality. Viktor called the temperature of  $+4^{\circ}C$  ( $39^{\circ}F$ ) the state of indifference of water, meaning that when in its highest natural condition of health, vitality and life-giving potential, water is at an internal state of energetic equilibrium and in a thermally and spatially neutral condition. Above a temperature of  $+4^{\circ}C$  ( $39^{\circ}F$ ), water expands. Below this temperature it also begins to expand and become lighter in weight. Because of this ice floats and is able to protect the fish in the water below from extremes of cold.

It was very convenient for Nature to arrange that mammals and other creatures should depend on blood. In the body, the temperature of the blood (composed 90% of water) is almost exactly the same as the temperature of water at its point of lowest specific heat of +37°C (+98.4°F). This means that our bodies are able to tolerate a wide range of ambient temperatures, for a great amount of heat or cold is required to change the temperature of water. But it also holds on to heat well; good for body temperature and for domestic heating systems.

We are familiar with the principle that the normal temperature of blood in the human body is +37°C (+98.4°F). A very small change in that temperature indicates sickness. It is the same with water and with sap. Schauberger demonstrated this to the world-renowned hydraulicist, Professor Philipp Forchheimer by putting some hot water into a mountain stream. The marginal rise in temperature downstream caused the complex structure of the water filaments to break down, so that a trout that they had observed holding its station in the torrent was unable to stay, and was swept downstream. Forchheimer was dumbfounded, because conventional science does not recognize the importance of small temperature differences.

If science were able to see water as possessing as well as giving life, it would be a giant step towards the rehabilitation of water in human society. Schauberger wrote:

Were water actually what hydrologists deem it to be — a chemically inert substance — then a long time ago there would already have been no water and no life in this Earth. I regard water as the blood of the Earth. Its internal process, while not identical to that of our blood, is nonetheless very similar. It is this process that gives water its movement.<sup>4</sup>

The symbol H<sub>2</sub>O represents pure or distilled water. Schauberger called it 'juvenile' water, because it has no developed character or qualities. It is raw and hungry. Like a baby, it grasps at everything within reach. If you drink only this juvenile water, it will weaken and eventually kill you because it leaches out the minerals and trace elements from your body. Water is mature when it is suitably enriched with raw material, what we call 'impurities,' on which other organisms depend for their energy and life.

## The qualities of different waters

Although good water is tasteless, without colour or smell, it quenches our thirst like nothing else. In order to be healthy, we need to drink, according to some authorities, 1-2 litres (5-9 pints) of good quality water a day.<sup>5</sup> Some types of water are more suitable for drinking than others. In Chapter 12 we shall consider some of the choices we have of improving the quality of the available water before we drink it. High quality water should contain elements of both geospheric (female) and atmospheric (male).

### Distilled Water

Considered physically and chemically to be the purest form of water. Its nature is to extract or attract to itself all the substances it needs to become mature itself, and therefore absorbs everything within reach. Such water is really quite dangerous if drunk continuously long-term. The 'Kneipp cure' uses distilled water for its short-term therapeutic effect, where it acts to purge the body of excessive deposits of particular substances.

### Rainwater

If it has not been affected by industrial pollution (acid rain), rainwater is the purest naturally available water. Slightly richer through the absorption of atmospheric gases, it is still unsuitable for drinking in the long term. When drunk as melted snow-water, it also gives rise to certain deficiencies and if no other water is available it can on occasion result in goitre, the enlargement of the thyroid gland.

### Juvenile Water

Juvenile water is immature water from deep underground sources, like geysers. It has not mellowed sufficiently on its passage through the ground. It has not developed a mature structure and contains some minerals (geospheric elements), but few gases (atmospheric elements), so as drinking water it is not very high grade (cf most spa waters which arise from mineral rich depths).

### Surface Water

Water from dams and reservoirs contain some minerals and salts absorbed through contact with the soil and the atmosphere. Its

quality deteriorates through exposure to the Sun, to excessive warming and to chemicals and other pollutants. Although most urban communities now depend on this source, generally speaking it is not good quality water.

#### Groundwater

Groundwater has a higher quality due to a larger amount of dissolved carbons and other trace salts. This is water emanating from lower levels, seeping out at the surface after passage along an impervious rock surface. Often this is now polluted by the chemicals of industrial agriculture.

#### Spring Water

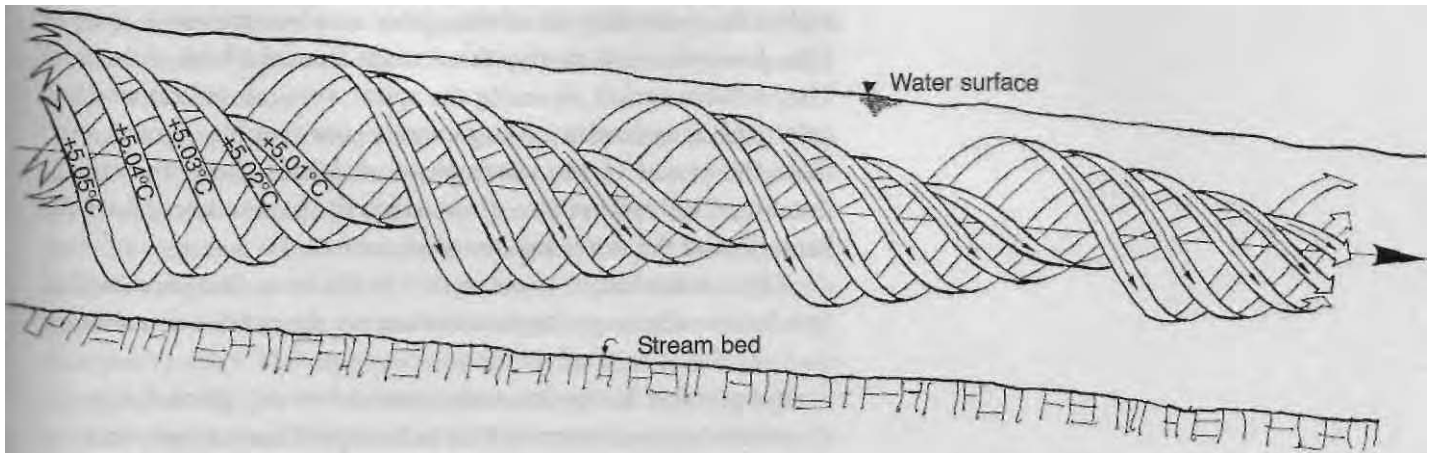
True spring water has a large amount of dissolved carbons and minerals. Its high quality is often shown by its shimmering, vibrant bluish colour. The product of infiltrating rainwater (full complement of atmospheric gases) and geospheric water (full complement of minerals, salts and trace elements), this is the best water for drinking, and it often retains this quality in the upper reaches of a mountain stream. Commercially bottled 'springwater' is unfortunately not always of the best quality — many are not from true springs — even if it is bottled in glass rather than the plastic which impairs its quality.

#### Other Groundwater

Artesian water is obtained from boreholes and is of unpredictable quality. It may be saline, brackish, or fresh. Water from wells can vary from good to poor, depending on how deep is the well and what stratum of water is tapped, and they can be polluted by nitrates and herbicides.

### How the river protects itself

Schauberger saw water as being conceived in the cool, dark cradle of the virgin forest. As it slowly rises from the depths, water matures. It absorbs minerals and trace elements on its upward path. Only when it is ripe will it emerge as a spring. A true spring, (compared to a seepage spring), has a water temperature of about +4°C (39°F). In the cool, scattered light of the forest water begins its long journey down the valley as a lively, sparkling and gurgling stream.



Water, when it is alive, creates this spiralling, convoluting motion to retain its coolness and maintain its vital inner energies and health. It is thus able to convey the necessary minerals, trace elements and other subtle energies to the surrounding environment. Have you noticed how refreshing and enlivening it is to sit by a healthy bubbling stream?

Naturally flowing water seeks to protect itself from the damaging direct light of the Sun. The reason that you find trees and shrubs growing on the banks of streams is not from people planting them, but because the energies from the flowing stream facilitated their growth there, to shade the water. When a stream is able to maintain its energies, it will rarely overflow its banks. In its natural motion, the faster it flows, the greater its carrying capacity and scouring ability and the more it deepens its bed (Fig. 8.2).

Schauberger discovered the reason for this — that in-winding, longitudinal spiral vortices form down the central axis of the current, moving alternately clockwise and anti-clockwise. The nature of inwardly-spiralling vortical movement is to cool. So these complex water movements constantly cool and re-cool the water, maintaining it at a healthy temperature, leading to a faster, more laminar, spiral flow, ejecting or transforming undesirable substances.

As the stream gets bigger, it is less able to protect itself from light and heat, and it begins to lose its vitality and health, and with this its ability to energize the environment through which it passes.

Fig. 8.2. A longitudinal vortex showing laminar flow about the central axis. The coldest water filaments are always closest to the central axis of flow. Thermal stratification occurs even with minimal differences in water temperature. The central core water displays the least turbulence and accelerates ahead, drawing the rest of the water-body in its wake.



Ultimately becoming a broad river, the increasing silt content makes the water flow more sluggishly and become more opaque. This, however, protects the lower strata from the heat of the Sun. They remain cooler, retaining the spiral, vortical motion which is able to shift sediment of larger grain-size (pebbles, gravel, etc.) from the centre of the watercourse, and keep down the risk of flooding. This motion also discourages the generation of harmful bacteria and the water remains disease-free.

Viktor Schauberger wrote in 1933 in his book, *Our Senseless Toil*, how he was able to put to practical use his discoveries about water:

It is possible to regulate watercourses over any given distance without embankment works; to transport timber and other materials, even when heavier than water, for example ore, stones, etc., down the centre of such watercourses; to raise the height of the water table in the surrounding countryside and to endow the water with all those elements necessary for the prevailing vegetation.<sup>6</sup>

## The temperature gradient

One of Viktor Schauberger's most important discoveries was to do with temperature. He showed how small variations of temperature are as crucial to the healthy movement of water and sap as they are for the human blood. He clarified this by identifying temperature change in its relationship to the anomaly point of water +4°C (39.2°F). When the temperature departs from this anomaly point, either up or down, it is said to have a negative gradient. When it approaches the anomaly point, from either direction, or when the groundwater is colder than the air temperature, it has a positive gradient. Heat always moves towards cold.

In the natural process of synthesis and decomposition in all waters, trees and other living organisms, both the rising and falling temperature gradients are active. Each form of gradient has its special function in Nature's great production; the positive (cooling) temperature gradient must play the principal role if evolution is to unfold creatively.

This important factor affects all the features of a river, such as flow velocity, tractive force (shear force), sediment load, turbidity, and viscosity, and everything to do with water management generally, like its

storage and transport through pipes (see Chapter 12). It is because modern hydrologists do not recognize the temperature gradient that they are unable to prevent rivers flooding or to deliver better quality water to our homes.

In Nature, the positive gradient is used for creating and building life forms, the negative for breaking down as part of recycling. Biodiversity and evolution, in order continually to develop more complex life systems, require the finer energies that a predominating positive temperature gradient will provide. These two temperature gradients co-exist in the same environment because they have complementary roles. The problem with our civilization is that we have allowed the negative to become dominant, so we have disappearance of species, and the prevalence of coarser energies that result from a degenerating environment.

The quality of any process in Nature depends on the relative influence of the positive and negative temperature gradients. The way the two forms of temperature interact is of crucial importance, for this affects not only the movement of water, but sap in plants and the flow of blood in our veins. It also determines the configuration, structure and quality of the channels, ducts and vessels surrounding and guiding them, as we shall see later.

Schauberger called the stronger temperature behaviours 'essences,' for they have a critical effect in creating life forms. For example, if the positive temperature gradient is very powerful, then the reciprocally weaker negative temperature gradient will help the manifesting of a high quality substance in material form. On the other hand, if the negative temperature gradient is dominant, what manifests is a material substance of poor quality. For evolution and growth to proceed with increasing quality, vitality and health, which form is uppermost and at what level is significant.

Flowing water behaves according to whichever temperature gradient is active. The positive temperature gradient builds up living systems by cooling, concentrating, and energizing as it approaches +4°C (39°F). The key to this process of healthy growth and development is that the ionized substances are drawn together into intimate and productive contact, and the contained oxygen becomes passive and is easily bound by the cool carbonates,<sup>7</sup> the building blocks of life. The increasing warming of the negative temperature gradient however, reduces the cohering energy and loosens the structure of an organism and the forms start disintegrating. The

oxygen becomes increasingly aggressive and instead of helping to build structures, pulls them apart, encouraging pathogenic disease.

If only our science would recognize the importance of temperature in natural processes and we could rapidly implement changes throughout our technologies, the effect on our environment would be immediate. Our current environmental crises are not limited to increasing global warming through entropic heat pollution. If our technologies were more eco-friendly, there would quickly be a magnifying effect of balancing in the environment, a positive feedback effect, because Nature is always seeking balance. We seem to think that working with Nature is like trying to be honest in our lives (a nice thing to do). In fact Nature's need for balance is so powerful that once we began seriously to work with true ecological integrity, we would be amazed how our efforts would be reciprocated and amplified by Nature.

Schauberger demonstrated, not only that living water possesses extraordinary healing properties, but that it is possible, by designing machines which follow Nature's dynamic processes, to produce this living water from lifeless water.

In this way it is possible to produce quality drinking water for humans, beasts and for plants artificially, but in the way that it occurs in Nature; to render timber and other such materials non-flammable and rot resistant; to raise water in a vertical pipe without pumping devices; to produce any amount of electricity and radiant energy almost without cost; to raise soil quality and to heal cancer, tuberculosis and nervous disorders.

... The practical implementation of this... would without doubt require a complete reorientation of all areas of science and technology. By applying these new found laws, I have already built some large structures for log-rafting and river regulation, which have functioned faultlessly for a decade, and which today still baffle the water hydraulics experts.<sup>8</sup>

# 9. The Hydrological Cycle

In the same way that blood flows through the arteries and veins of the human body, so does water through the lithosphere of the Earth. The cyclical movement of water from subterranean regions to the atmosphere and back again is called 'the hydrological or water cycle.' Today this complete circulation of water is usually interrupted by human intervention, being limited to the atmosphere and the Earth's surface. Viktor called this the half hydrological cycle, the shortcomings of which contribute significantly to our present climate change.

## The full hydrological cycle

The diagram below (Fig. 9.1) shows the full hydrological cycle. At the left hand side the upward, anti-clockwise spirals indicate the evaporation of water from the sea. This rises, condenses and falls as rain. Some sinks into the earth and some drains away over the ground surface, depending on whether the ground is forested and what type of temperature gradient is active. In areas of natural forest where a positive temperature gradient normally prevails about 85% of rainfall is retained, 15% by the vegetation and humus and about 70% sinking to the groundwater aquifer and underground stream recharge.

This underground recharge is important, because water that is linked to the subterranean water system acquires the negative energy charge of the Earth. In a natural forest, the mature trees with deep roots bring up this negatively charged water, along with vital minerals and trace elements from the deeper soils. As we shall see in Chapter 14, trees act as biocondensers, harmonizing the positive energy from the Sun with the negative energy of the Earth. As a result, the evapo-transpiration from the leaves of the trees is a balanced, creative energy. This is shown in the diagram as a different direction of spiral from the evaporation from the oceans, to indicate its superior quality. The forest, as a more dynamic living system, creates transpiration that carries the energy (nonmaterial) imprint of all the resonances of the complex biosystem, including the subterranean

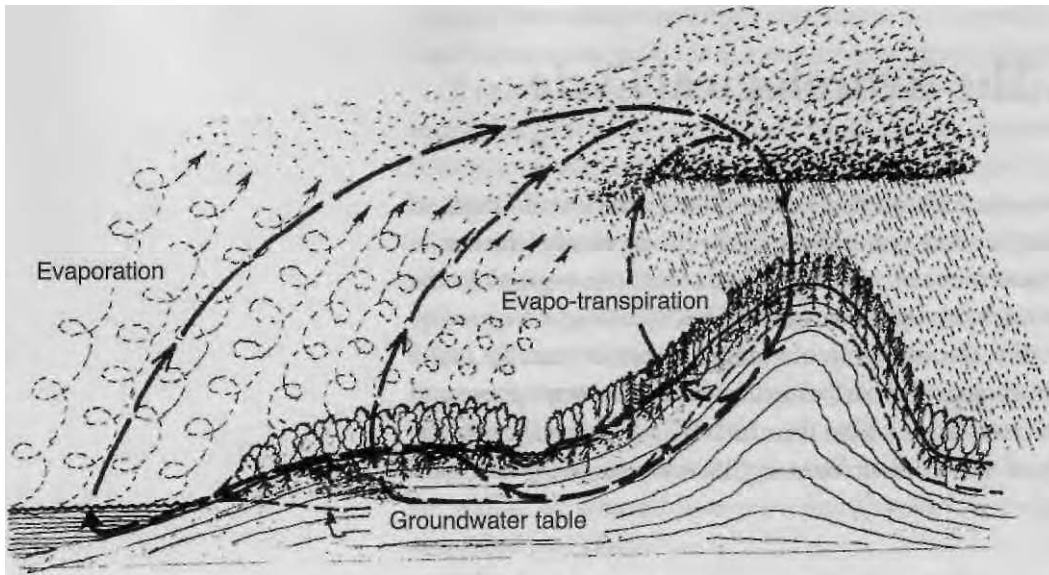


Fig. 9.1. The full hydrological cycle.

The FULL CYCLE of water, is characterized by the following phases:

- Evaporation from oceans and evapo-transpiration from vegetation;
- Rising water vapour;
- Cooling and condensing;
- Formation of clouds;
- Precipitation as rain;
- Infiltrates the ground under positive temperature gradient;
- Recharge of groundwater and aquifers;
- Maintenance and regulation of height of groundwater;
- Formation of +4°C centre-layer of the groundwater;
- Creation of underground retention basins;
- Passage through the +4°C centre-layer of the groundwater;
- Purification at this temperature;
- Further sinking into the subterranean aquifers due to its own weight
- Transition to a vaporous state due to the influence of the Earth's hot interior
- Rising again towards the ground surface with the simultaneous uptake of nutrients;
- Cooling of the water and deposition of nutrients;
- Draining away over the ground surface;
- Evaporating and forming clouds;
- Falling again as rain — and so on.

elements. Rainfall generated from the forest will carry this beneficial influence. The ocean, although it is recharged by undersea volcanic eruptions and exposure to the atmosphere, mainly consumes all it produces and therefore lacks these dynamic qualities.

This is best explained in terms of homeopathic theory, in which the greater the dilution of a substance, the more powerful its energetic effect. One of the most important discoveries by Professor Jacques Benveniste is that water (even in the form of vapour) carries information.<sup>1</sup> The implication of this is that our tap water may contain the energies that are recycled from human sources, but also that water can be imbued with a healing energy that can be used to treat other water. Some of the domestic water treatment systems now available use this principle.

In the full cycle, water evaporates from the forest and the oceans. The rising water vapour cools with altitude, condenses, forms clouds, with the help of dimethyl sulphide emitted from the leaf protoplasts and from marine algae, combines into larger drops and falls as rain. With full forest cover the temperature of the land surface is cooler than the falling rain, which readily soaks into the ground because of the positive temperature gradient. In other words, the temperature decreases from the atmosphere, through the earth towards the central layer of the water-saturated ground where the temperature is +4°C (39°F). As it falls on the cooler ground, the warmer rain is easily absorbed; it replenishes the groundwater, developing subterranean aquifers. Vegetation depends on groundwater being recharged by rainwater entering under a positive temperature gradient (Fig. 9.1).

The temperature range that life on Earth has adapted to lies roughly between -10°C (14°F) and +40°C (104°F). It is the balanced greenhouse effect that maintains this range. As global temperatures rise with global warming, the stress on all life forms is immense, because they do not have time to adapt to the new conditions.

Water vapour is the principal greenhouse gas. The reduction in evapo-transpiration from the dynamic forests substantially affects the quality of the water vapour and its distribution in the atmosphere. The water vapour created by the natural forest has been balanced by fertile energies from the Earth that bring with it the power to stimulate and heal. Water vapour from the oceans has more of the raw untamed energy of the Sun, and global warming increases the evaporation from the oceans. Without the forest's water, there is a greater contrast between areas with abundant water vapour and

those with almost none. This greatly disrupts weather patterns, with an increase in violent storms, hurricanes and serious flooding near coasts, while the areas away from coastal winds suffer droughts and freezing night temperatures.

## The half hydrological cycle

Without forest cover, the ground surface overheats, causing a negative temperature gradient in the soil. This means that the cooler rain cannot penetrate into the warmer ground, and fast surface runoff in areas of heavy rainfall causes catastrophic floods. The cause of the floods in recent years, in Columbia, Mozambique, Assam and Bangladesh was the deforestation on high ground.

This disruption of the natural water cycle Schauberger called the half hydrological cycle, which is now prevalent almost worldwide. Notice the difference between Fig. 9.2 below and Fig. 9.1 on p. 118. The drawing below shows that, in the absence of tree cover, the water table has sunk. Once the forest has been removed, the exposed ground heats up rapidly, all the more so if dry, and to much higher temperatures.

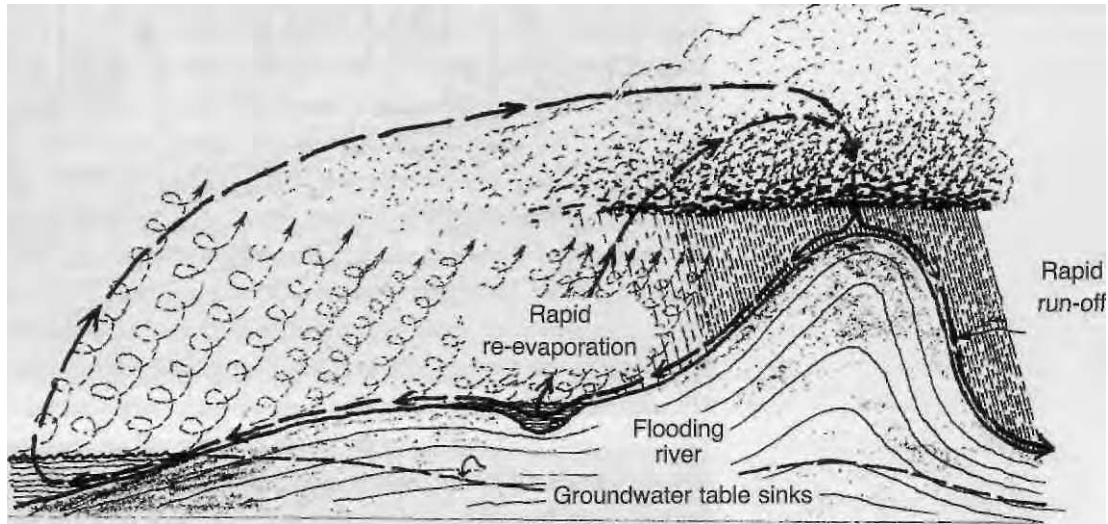
This type of evaporation, now lacking the evapo-transpiration from living things, has more destructive energies. If the rainfall is excessive, then flooding inevitably occurs. In many hot countries denuded of vegetation, dry valleys and creeks can be suddenly engulfed by a wall of water as terrifying flash-floods sweep away everything in their path.

In the absence of trees and ground cover to absorb it, the rainwater spreads widely over the surface of the ground, resulting in massive abnormal re-evaporation. The increase in water vapour in the atmosphere soon causes increased precipitation. What happens is that one flood causes another, while in inland areas, droughts become more frequent. The only answer to this vicious cycle is a massive international campaign to plant trees, particularly in the warmer latitudes.

The most serious result of the half cycle is that there is no replenishment of the groundwater. With the sinking of the groundwater level, the supply of nutrients to the vegetation is cut off. The water that is evaporated into the atmosphere is virtually lifeless, lacking in the energy and the qualities that groundwater acquires. Viktor Schauberger called this a 'biological short-circuit.' The essential soil moisture, trace elements and other nutrients that the tree roots nor-

mally raise to the benefit of other plants sink below reach as the groundwater sinks. This is the cause of desertification, now becoming prevalent in many tropical areas. The groundwater disappears, probably for ever, into the womb of the Earth where it came from.

The limited circulation of the half water cycle increases the intensity of thunderstorms. These can raise the water vapour to levels far higher than normal. At altitudes of 40-80 kilometres it is exposed to much stronger ultraviolet and high-energy gamma radiation, which break up the water-molecule, separating the hydrogen and oxygen



The HALF CYCLE in contrast, has the following features:

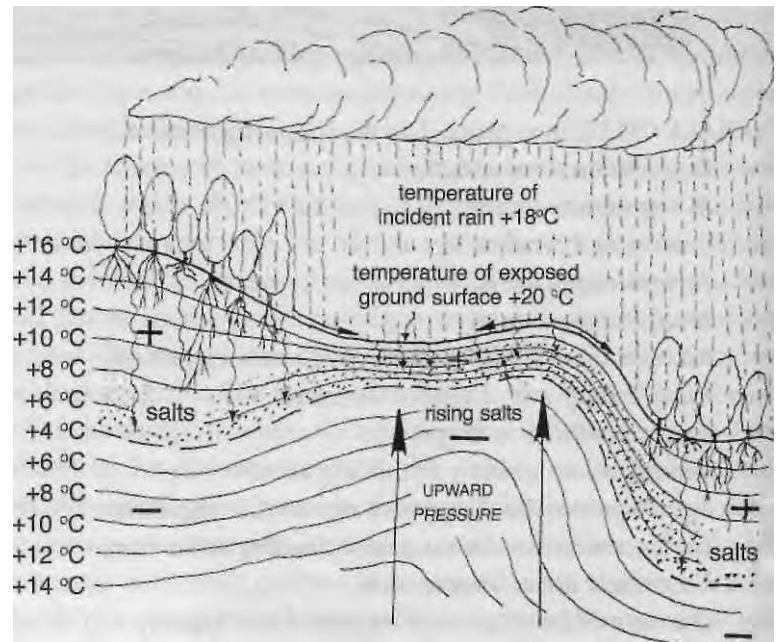
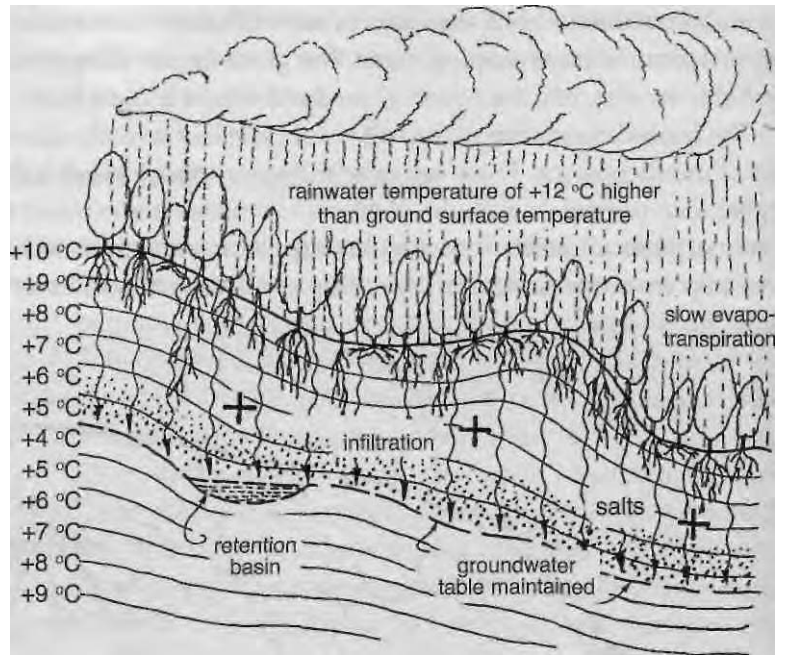
Fig. 9.2. The half hydrological cycle.

- Evaporation from oceans;
- Rising water vapour;
- Cooling and condensing;
- Formation of clouds;
- Precipitation as rain;
- No infiltration due to negative temperature gradient;
- Rapid runoff over the ground surface;
- No groundwater recharge;
- Sinking water table — in the long term;
- Cessation of natural supply of nutrients to vegetation;
- Under certain conditions, major flooding can occur;
- Excessively fast re-evaporation;
- Oversaturation of atmosphere with water vapour;
- Rapid reprecipitation as storm rain.



Fig. 9.3 a&b. Positive and negative temperature gradients:

Fig. 9.3 a illustrates a positive temperature gradient — ground cooler shaded by trees — rainwater warmer than the ground surface will soak in easily, recharging the groundwater. But where the surface is unprotected (Fig. 9.3 b) it heats up, does not allow the rainwater to penetrate (negative temperature gradient), causing the water table to be forced upwards, with the dissolved salts, which remain near the surface, possibly causing problems of salination.



atoms. The hydrogen then rises because of its lower specific weight, and the oxygen sinks. That water becomes permanently lost. The effect of global warming is complex. The atmosphere first warms up due to the greater amount of water vapour, some of this increase of heat being offset by the loss of water atoms at high altitudes.

## Temperature gradients and nutrient supply

As we have seen, unless vegetation keeps the ground surface cooler than the falling rain, the water will not easily penetrate the soil. The direction of the temperature gradient indicates the direction of movement. Energy or nutrient transfer is always from heat to cold. So a positive temperature gradient is also essential for nutrients to be able to rise up to the roots of the plants (see Fig. 9.3).<sup>2</sup>

If the surface is well forested, the rainwater is warmer than the soil, and penetrates to the lower strata, replenishing the groundwater body and the aquifers. The salts remain at a level where they cannot pollute the upper strata where they would harm those plants which are salt-sensitive. The groundwater hugs the configuration of the ground surface. Fig. 9.3 shows how the salts in the ground rise near the surface, particularly on a hilltop, when part of the forest is cut down, leaving the ground exposed to sunlight.

Schauberger demonstrated that when light and air are absent well below the surface of the ground, the minerals and salts are precipitated near the temperature horizon of +4°C (39°F). Warm ground will encourage evaporation of the moisture near the surface, so that the minerals and salts are deposited near the surface, lowering the fertility of the soil. If all the trees are removed (Fig. 9.4), there will be no penetration of rainwater; the water table initially rises, due to the now uncompensated upward pressure from below described in the following chapter, bringing up all the salts, but will eventually sink or disappear altogether without the replenishment of rainwater. Fertility can be restored in time only through reforestation, bringing about the reestablishment of a positive temperature gradient.

Replanting must be done initially with salt-loving trees and other primitive plants, as only they would survive under such conditions. Later, due to the cooling of the ground by the shading of the pioneer trees, the rainwater can penetrate the ground, taking the salts with it. Over time, as the soil climate improves the pioneer

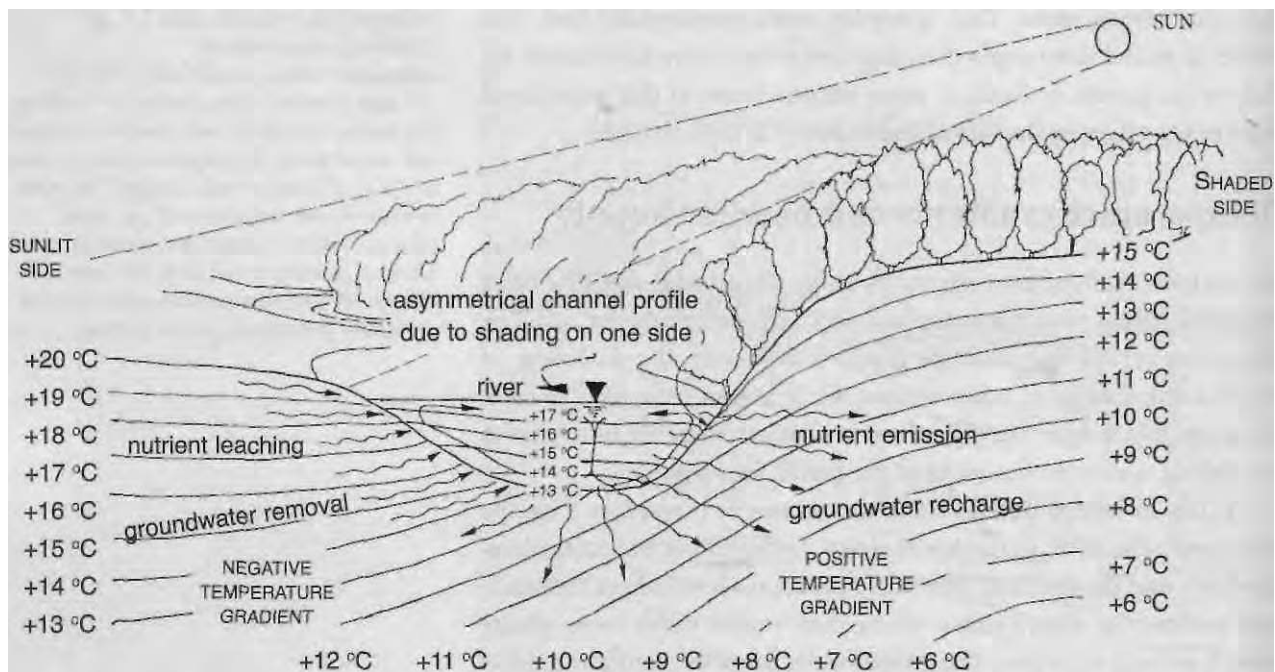


Fig. 9.4. Asymmetric river development. The orientation of a river relative to the Sun's position affects the nutrient supply. Where the river flows east > west or west > east, the side nearest the Sun tends to be more shaded and the water cooler; a positive temperature gradient develops, allowing the cooler ground to absorb mineral-rich water from the river, and the soil becomes more fertile. On the side exposed to the Sun, the reverse occurs, with a negative temperature gradient forcing groundwater, with its minerals to leach into the river.

trees die off, because the improved soil conditions don't suit them. Other species of tree can replace them and the dynamic balance of Nature is restored.

Irrigation in hot climates aggravates the problem because, as the ground temperatures cool during the night, the irrigating water can penetrate the upper salt-containing strata. With the increase in temperature during the day, the infiltrated irrigation water with its acquired salts are drawn up, and upon exposure to light and heat are deposited on the soil surface. The seriousness of the problem will vary with latitude, height and season.

All healthy rivers will carry nutrients in suspension that will be absorbed by the vegetation on the river banks if the soil is cooler than the river water. This improves soil fertility and recharges the groundwater. But, if the soil is warmer than the river, due to the absence of protective cover, a negative temperature gradient will cause the nutrients to leach from the soil into the river, which will eventually make the soil sterile and unproductive. The longer a river flows through irrigated, sunlit farmlands, the more it becomes contaminated with salts, artificial

fertilizers and pesticides, making it unhealthy in the lower reaches as a source of water.

In the diagram (Fig. 9.4) opposite, the river water temperature varies from +17°C (63°F) at the surface to +13°C (55°F) at the bottom. Where the ground under the wooded area on one side of the river is cooler than the river water, a positive temperature gradient exists from river to ground. On the opposite side, in the absence of trees, the ground is warmer and attracts a negative gradient from river to ground. The diagram shows nutrients being removed from the warmer bank and deposited on the opposite, cooler bank.

Where the tree cover cools the river, it flows faster with a laminar structure, removing sediment and deepening its bed.

The rivers are the arteries of Gaia. If they are not allowed to operate as natural conveyors of energy and nutrients to the land through which they flow, the fertility of the land gravely suffers. If we were really to take care of our rivers, protecting their banks from overheating, and allowing them to flow sinuously as they will, rather than make them follow straight lines, we would be taking important steps to give back to Nature her own power.

# 10. The Formation of Springs

Before the installation of public water networks, springs were the most valued or sometimes the only sources of drinking water, and they still are in many parts of the world. Settlements would establish around a spring that delivered high quality water. Possibly because of the connection between living water and good health, some established a reputation for curative powers. Viktor Schauberger insisted that the high quality water produced by his springwater machine had healing qualities.

## The veneration of springs

Springs have long been associated with folk medicine, ritual and religion, frequently being reported as places of power in the landscape. Usually, springs thus endowed are called 'holy wells' which is confusing, because the word derives from the Anglo-Saxon for spring — wella, (hence the expression to 'well up') not for its modern use as a shaft excavated to reach the underground water table. The tradition of venerated springs is found in all cultures and major religions, including the earliest known to us. The most common association is the bestowal of supernatural qualities, but more specifically as the abode of spirits or deities, or being linked with holy figures or saints. In Britain, in most cases the saints named had no connection with the site, but their qualities may be associated with those the previous pagans had ascribed.

The waters of most sacred springs are credited with healing powers, and with cures accomplished by bathing or drinking. In British lore the most common affliction claimed to be healed by springs is infertility, followed by eye complaints. However some springs are regarded as so powerful — as at Lourdes in France, or Bath in England — that they are reputed to heal many diseases. Offerings were made to the pools served by the springs, either as part of the locally established ritual, or as a 'trade' for a wish to be granted. Many 'wells' were 'dressed,' or decorated with flowers, paintings, statues or strips of cloth, a tradition found all over Europe and Asia, in Africa and Central America.

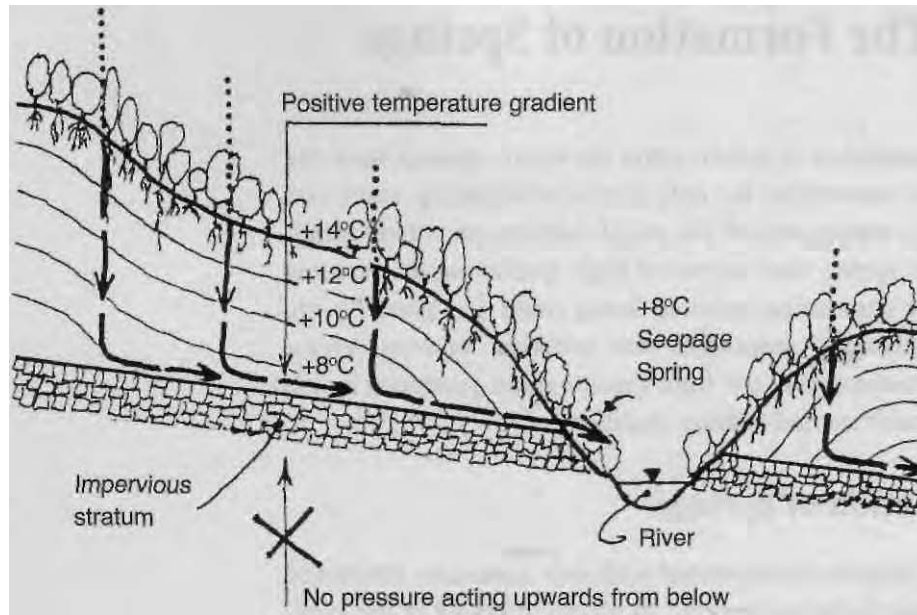


Fig. 10.1. Seepage spring.

Seepage springs occur when water infiltrating the ground (positive temperature gradient) encountering an impervious layer, seeps down this slope emerging where it meets the ground surface. The amount of the infiltrations determines the outflow rate and its temperature that of the surrounding area, seldom very cold.

Natural springs would be valued also because the quality and reliability of the water flow in times of drought might make the difference between life and death. It is not hard to see why people invested these sites with magical powers, or seeing them as inhabited by a living spirit who was the guardian of the waters. It is likely that many of our forebears would empathize with Viktor Schauberger's vision of water as 'the blood of the Earth' when they saw the pure, cold, nourishing liquid issuing mysteriously from the womb of the Earth.

Rivers frequently have their source at a spring.<sup>1</sup> The source of a great holy river is regarded as particularly sacred. Many churches and monastic institutions are associated with springs, the churches using the water for baptism. The monasteries pioneered the capping of the springs to deliver the water through wooden or stone 'conduits.' These proved to be the salvation of growing urban populations in England who, after the dissolution of the monasteries in the sixteenth century, would take 'feathers,' or branch pipes, off these monastic conduits. Like the springs from which they derived, in some localities these conduits were often venerated and adorned with flowers and gilded branches.

When the rationalism of the Enlightenment replaced the superstitions of an earlier age, some explanation had to be found for the curative powers of certain famous springs. This led, in the 18th century, to the birth of the spa culture, and doctors would examine any deposits left behind when they had boiled away the water, in order to identify this and that mineral as the true elixir that would give legitimacy to their spa water. During the Protestant Reformation in England, and then with the decline of rural populations, many sacred springs fell into disuse, being rediscovered by Irish immigrants in the nineteenth century, whose Celtic-based Catholicism still had strong pagan roots.

Today, with the revival of ancient rural traditions, many sacred springs are being restored in Britain and in Continental Europe.

## Seepage springs

What is generally understood as a spring is actually not a true spring, but a seepage spring which is the overflowing of surplus water from soil and rock strata that have a limited depth (Fig. 10.1). Rainwater which is warmer than the ground (a positive temperature gradient), soaks in and descends until it reaches an impervious layer like clay, which channels it out as a stream to the surface again, lower down. It acts by gravity. The temperature of the water will be that of the strata from which it emerges, probably between +6°C (43°F) to +9°C (48°F). This water will contain some trace elements, minerals and dissolved salts but, generally speaking, not in such a broad spectrum as true springs. The seepage spring responds quickly to variations in precipitation, frequently drying up in a hot summer, and flowing strongly after heavy rain.

## True springs

A true spring originates from much deeper strata (Fig. 10.2). Water collects in ancient aquifers and retaining basins over many years, and the water emerging to the surface might be hundreds of years old; or even thousands in the case of the famous therapeutic hot springs. Because of their age, these spa waters are extraordinarily rich in well-balanced minerals. The rich waters of the Hunza Valley in Pakistan, or the Caucasus mountains, which are credited for the longevity of the local people, also originate in true

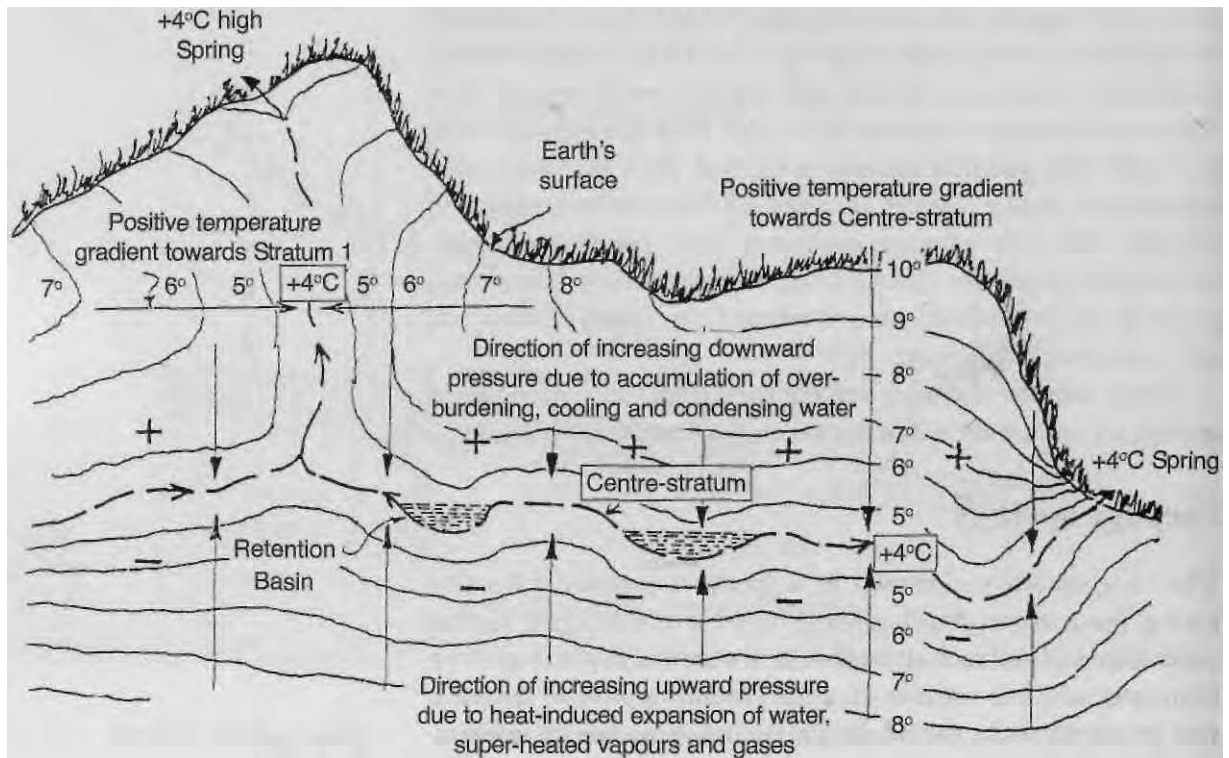


Fig. 10.2. True springs and high altitude springs.

These depend on the existence of the 39°F (+4°C) denser water level which is called the centre stratum. This gets squeezed between the weight of water in the rocks above, and the water strata below. At 39°F (+4°C) it will compress no more, and has to move vertically or laterally, eventually emerging as a spring. This is why they are normally very cold and may appear on mountain tops.

springs. The difference here is that, emerging in the high mountains, these waters are then augmented by rich glacial waters, and by minerals from the action of the aggressive mountain streams eroding the surface rocks.

The rainwater penetrates the ground surface under the influence of a positive temperature gradient, in a way similar to that of a seepage spring. But it is drawn down much more deeply, helped by the increasing pressure, so that it condenses and cools to around +4°C (39°F). Being immature water, it will absorb what it can, so it removes salts from the upper layers of the ground, depositing them later as the water condenses and cools with depth. This makes the upper layers more fertile, and the salts are now available to deep-rooted trees that have the ability to metabolize them, converting them to nutrients for more shallow-rooted plants.

The downwards-percolating rainwater increases the pressure on the groundwater body, pressing the lowest layer into rocks that



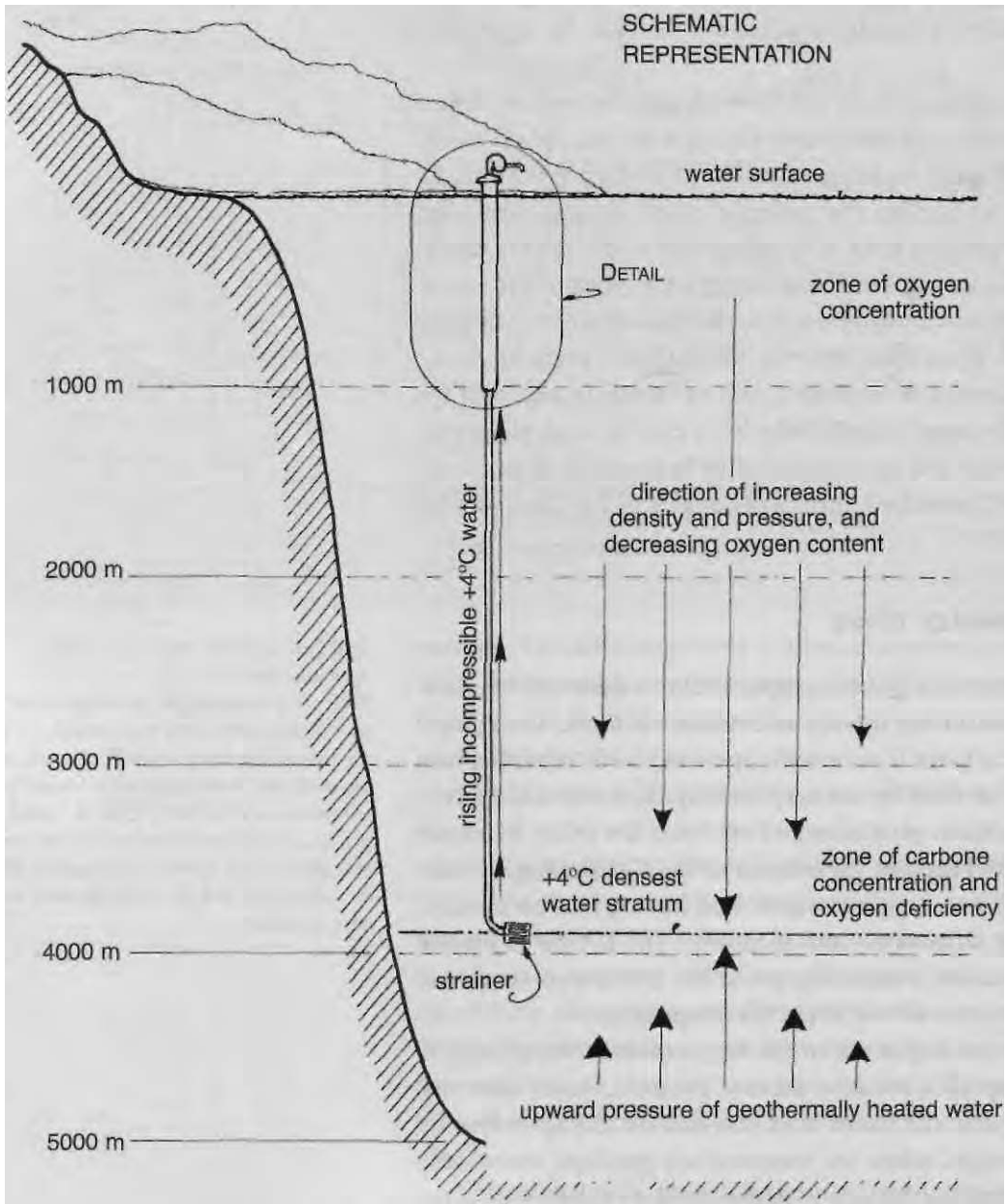
are affected by geothermal heat. These are caused to expand, compressing the layers above. But the +4°C (39°F) stratum water is already at its densest and virtually incompressible at this temperature, so all it can do is to push out laterally, providing the springs with their flow. This action explains how springs can emerge from high mountain peaks at such cold temperatures, where there would be insufficient local collection for a gravity seepage.

Rain absorbs oxygen in its fall through the atmosphere. After it enters the ground and percolates through the soil, plant roots and organisms reduce its oxygen content. So when it eventually emerges as a true spring, the water is often oxygen-deficient, though rich in carbonic acid. It is dangerous to drink this water directly from the spring, for being hungry for oxygen, the water can steal it from susceptible organs, like the stomach, causing great discomfort. If breathed directly, the carbonic acid can damage the lungs. Known to mountain folk as 'damp-worm,' and by miners as 'choke-damp' respectively, both can be fatal. However, within ten metres of the source, the water has usually, through its active movement, absorbed sufficient oxygen to be quite safe to drink.

## How springwater rises

Viktor Schauberger designed an experiment to demonstrate how groundwater rises during the day and recedes at night. The equipment consists of a glass U-tube with open ends, one of which has contact with the air only by two very fine capillary tubes, the other end being open. Each arm is sealed off from the other by some saltwater-saturated sand at the bottom of the U-tube. High grade springwater with low oxygen content, and having had no contact with strong light, is inserted into each arm. The U-tube is placed in a soil-filled bucket, containing ice at the bottom to create an artificial environment of +4°C (39°F) temperature.

When the bucket is put out in the Sun, a positive temperature gradient is set up and, because there is greater contact with the outside atmosphere, the water level can rise on the open end of the U-tube. At night, when the temperature gradient decreases, the water level rises on the side with the capillary tubes, falling on the open side, and rising on the partially blocked side. (This



HIDDEN NATURE

experiment is illustrated on p. 202 (Fig. 15.3), the experiment originally being designed to show how sap rises and falls in a tree.)

## Producing energy from the ocean

Viktor Schauberger alluded to the simplicity of emulating the dynamics of true springs for generating energy, although he gave no details. Having gained some insight into Schauberger's thinking, Callum Coats described how this might be done, publishing the process, so that no commercial company would be able to patent the idea.

Describing the formation of true springs, we spoke of the deep groundwater having had its oxygen content removed by needy roots and organisms on its journey through the soil, but having instead a concentration of the female fructigenic carbonates. At its most dense at the +4°C (39°F) deep stratum, it is squeezed and can be lifted up to the highest mountain tops.

The water of the ocean deeps is in a similar condition of density at the +4°C (39°F) deep stratum, but also under high pressure because of the enormous weight of water above it. A long pipe would be lowered from the surface of the ocean to allow this oxygen-hungry water to rise in order to drive electric generators at the surface.

This would not be a viable system, however, without some essential additions that Schauberger added to increase the power of the rising abyssal water (Fig. 10.3). The pipe would be of double-spiral design, with vortex-inducing vanes similar to those used in the Stuttgart experiment (see Chapter 14). The bottom end of the pipe would have a tangentially-arranged vortex inducer, as well as a strainer to keep out marine creatures.

At a water level nearer to the surface, atmospheric air would enter through a one-way filter in order to introduce oxygen to the hungry abyssal water. (The filter would accept the smaller oxygen molecule, but exclude the larger water molecule.) On absorbing the oxygen, the rising water warms and rapidly expands with sufficient power to drive the generators, which would not be of the conventional design that destroys the water's structure, but with centripetal impellers that improve the quality of the water.<sup>2</sup>

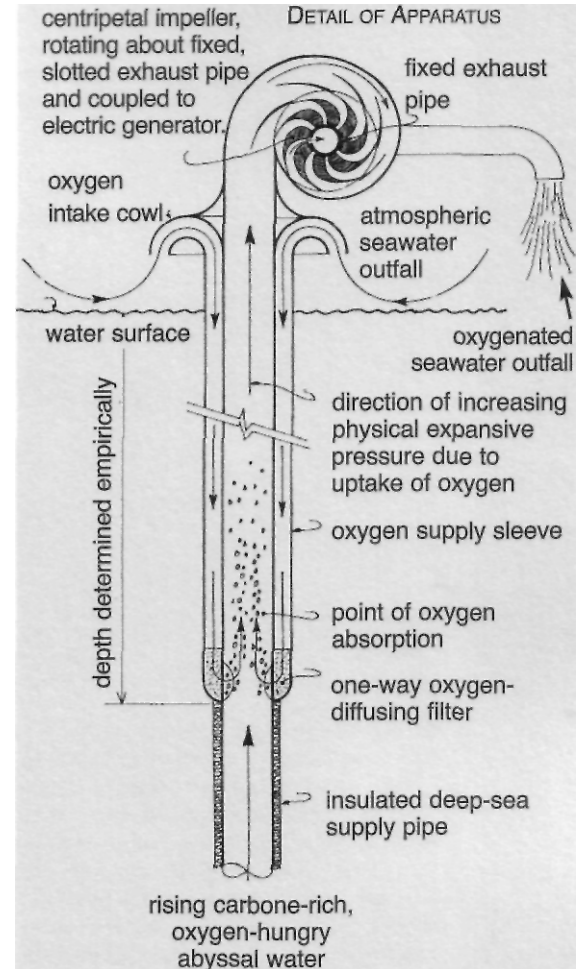


Fig. 10.3 (opposite). Free energy from the deep ocean.  
Callum Coats' development of Viktor Schauberger's idea.

Fig. 10.4 (above). Detail of apparatus in figure opposite.

# 11. Rivers and How They Flow

If we understood the importance of water both for the environment and for life, we would nurture and protect our rivers, which are the great arteries of the Earth. Healthy streams and rivers are water at its most active, powerful and playful. In our ignorance of how water needs to move, we restrict rivers with embankments and other unnatural constructions. We treat rivers as sewers for waste, and we extract the energy and spirit from their form.

For scores of thousands of years, since people started to settle on the land, our forebears were aware that their prosperity depended on the river. Soils are quickly depleted of their nutrients by agriculture, particularly if intensive. Remineralization by regular flooding of the river was vital to obtaining good crops. This allowed the great civilizations to grow and flourish, in Mesopotamia, the valleys of the Nile, the Yellow River and the Indus, to name a few.

Today's technocrats have a need to control this apparently chaotic behaviour of the natural river, by steering the flow, sometimes behind high banks, and disregarding the ecosystem, to the great loss of fertility of the surrounding fields. Modern artificial fertilization (NPK — nitrogen, phosphorus and potassium) cannot take the place of Nature's remineralization; in fact it often causes great problems through creating imbalances and pollution.

## Stages of a river

A river has three stages of life. Its youthful stage energizes the water as the steep landscape puts it through vigorous tumbling, spinning and intense vortical movements. The immature cold water is hungry, taking up minerals as it scours the rock, cutting gullies and steepening the sides of the valley, more especially when it is in spate. It is oxygenated in rapids and waterfalls. It is put through exercises that it will use well when it matures.

When the stream leaves the steep country, the flow slows, and some of the heavier rock matter it carried in suspension is deposited, to be picked up again when the flow accelerates. The water is now mature, having absorbed minerals and generative

energies, and if it is prevented from excessive warming by trees on its banks, it recharges the groundwater of the surrounding countryside. The richness of movement of the young stream is carried into the body of the meandering river. The water is creating its own form which in turn regulates its flow.

Entering the plains the river, in its natural way, would meander across the flat country, and when a bend twists back on itself, a shortcut will be created at flood time, leaving behind an oxbow crescent lake. It is in the plains country mostly that people try to manipulate the river, heavy with silt, by straight embankments to stop the river spreading where it wants to. These natural floods are not particularly destructive, and remineralize the soil which becomes much more productive. But technical man believes he can control Nature. The old river is now typically forced to perch sometimes 50 feet above the surrounding countryside. If the river should burst its artificial banks at this stage, the flooding is catastrophic. Lacking its normal twisting movement and positive temperature gradient which keep the silt in suspension, it is deposited, blocking the channel. Its natural path thus obstructed, it becomes angry and unpredictable. There are now very few major rivers which are allowed to flow naturally.

## Temperature and the movement of water

Viktor Schauberger made inspired studies of the natural flow in rivers. He found that the temperature gradient in moving water plays a very decisive role both in the way it moves and in the structure of the water masses within the river.

To regulate a waterway by means of the riverbank itself is verily to fight cause with effect... It cannot and should not be the task of the river engineer to correct Nature by violating her. Rather, in all watercourses requiring regulation his job should be to study the natural harmony of the river, and to emulate the examples that Nature provides in the way of healthy streams ... Every violation, however, rebounds on the perpetrator ... As water flows down a natural gradient, it does so according to a sublime inner law whose power our hydraulic experts are quite unable to comprehend ... The more the engineer, ignorant of the nature of water, tries to channel water by

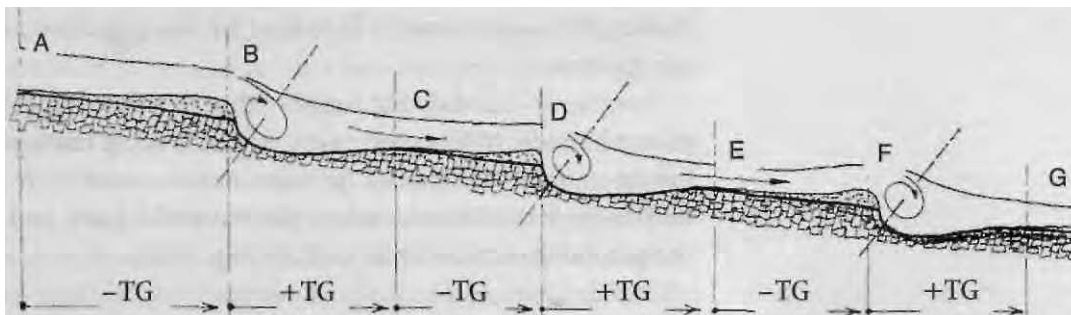
the shortest and straightest route to the sea, the more the flow of water weighs into the bends, the longer its path and the more destructive and the worse the water will become.<sup>1</sup>

The variations in the temperature of the water-body are so subtle, within a range of 0.1 °C to 2.0°C (0.04°F to 0.08°F), that contemporary hydraulic engineering practice has never felt they were significant. Viktor Schaubberger, however, considered the temperature variation absolutely essential for all natural water resources management. He insisted that no artificial constraints on the river could ever be successful unless these variations were taken into account, since whether a river removes, transports or deposits its sediment is dependent upon the water temperature and the temperature gradient predominantly active along its course.

### Creating a positive temperature gradient

When water descends a gradient, in the course of flow under natural conditions, it rhythmically first heats up and then cools down. The degree of heating depends on the amount of friction with the riverbed, the external temperature and the extent to which the water is directly exposed to the Sun. Only a minute change in temperature is required for water to pick up, transport or deposit its sediment, but the type of temperature gradient prevailing determines the action. A negative temperature gradient causes the deposition of sediment, and a positive temperature gradient provokes its removal. The temperature gradients alternating too suddenly can, however, cause the scouring or deposition of gravel to become chaotic.

Fig. 11.1. Alternate heating and cooling (breathing) rhythms in river flow. Friction with the river bed gradually warms the river (negative temperature gradient) so that it starts to deposit its suspended sediment. When this reaches its maximum, an overfall occurs, producing a horizontal barrel vortex that cools the water (positive temperature gradient), until the river gradually warms up again. Schaubberger likened this to the river 'breathing.'



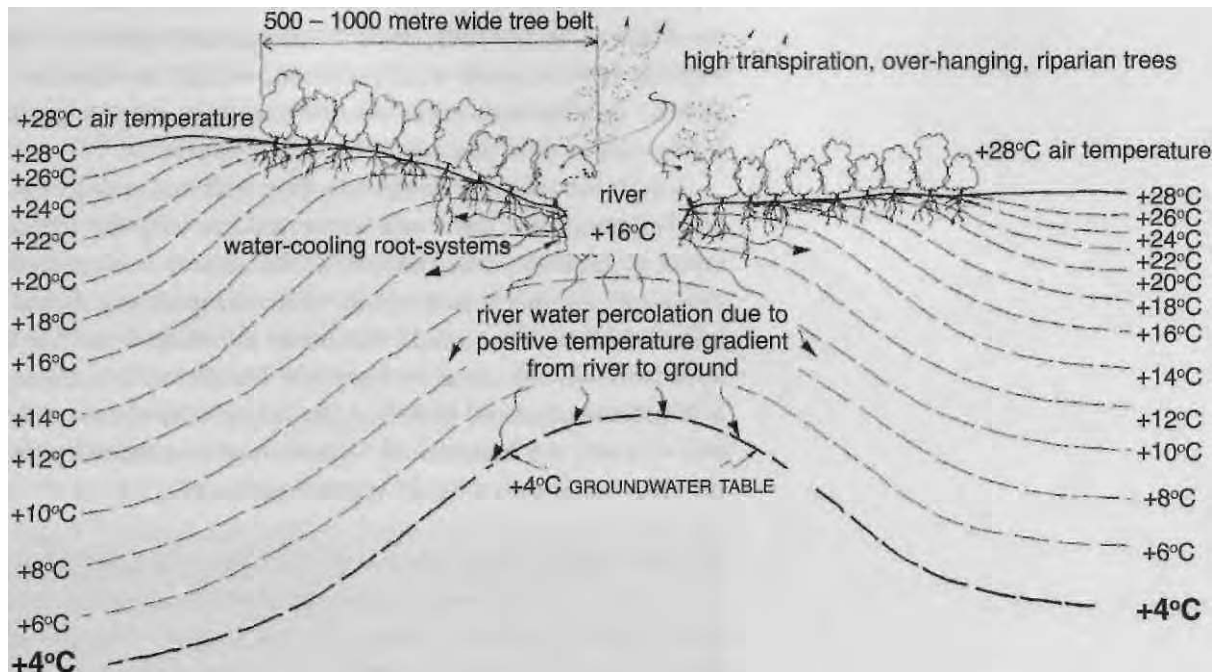
In Fig. 11.1, for example, from A to B the temperature gradient is negative. From A to B the water gradually heats up and in the process is unable to retain the sediment in suspension and drops it progressively as the water becomes warmer. At B, the zone of maximum deposition, the accumulated material results in an overfall that, in turn, creates a horizontal barrel vortex immediately downstream. This vortex, however, cools the water and therefore from B to C the temperature gradient becomes positive. The sediment is once more picked up and transported. Upon reaching C, the effect of the positive temperature gradient gives way to its negative counterpart and the suspended matter is again dropped, reaching a maximum at D.

This pulsation or alternation is like breathing; a positive temperature gradient representing the inbreath, the absorbing, material-collecting movement; the negative temperature gradient representing the outbreath, where the energetically transformed matter is exhaled from the system and deposited. In order to regulate a river naturally and successfully, it is essential to study the alternating sequence of the temperature gradients. A stretch of river with a positive gradient is less likely to flood, since only minor sediment deposition will occur. If the danger of flooding is to be reduced then a positive temperature gradient must be recreated or its duration extended. This can be done in four principal ways:

1. By shading and cooling the river through the replanting of trees, particularly at the bends, where the friction and therefore the warming tendencies are greatest. Tree species with a high evaporation rate should be planted. Through evaporation the sap in the tree is cooled and circulates down to the roots under the river bed, cooling the water as well. This kind of tree therefore acts like a refrigerator.

In order to maintain the health of the river, there should be a belt of trees 500 to 1000 metres wide. Rivers flowing through cleared, barren countryside should be reforested in order to re-establish healthy flow conditions, restore the nutrient supply and recharge the groundwater table in its vicinity (Fig. 11.2).

2. By the construction of appropriately designed dams in which the temperature of the discharge can be controlled according to the



prevailing air temperatures and the water temperatures of the flow downstream.

Current practice with most dams and water storage facilities is to release either cold bedwater from the bottom sluices or warm surface water over the top of the dam wall, down the spillway. This can have disastrous consequences unless the temperature of the water released or its possible effect on the downstream flow regime is taken into account. Warm water, for example, discharged into a stretch of river where the temperature gradient is only slightly positive, will effectively cancel the effect of the positive gradient, resulting in the automatic and almost simultaneous deposition of silt and sediment. The result will be flooding.

On the other hand if only the cold bedwater is released, it may overcool the lower reaches, causing excessive scouring and the transport of very heavy sediment loads which the lower flow regime may be unable to handle. This may be because of the slope of the bed-gradient and thereby the speed of flow, the width of the channel — wide, shallow channels dropping sediment more quickly, the temperature gradients operative lower down, etc. Each

Fig. 11.2. Groundwater recharge through river bank reforestation. The trees act like a refrigerator, cooling the ground, which allows a positive temperature gradient to draw water from the river to recharge the water table.



type of discharge eventually produces the same results — silting up followed by flooding. Such discharges also produce what has recently been termed 'cold pollution,' which can destroy downstream fish life and other aquatic creatures due to the sudden influx of far-below-normal water temperatures.

Viktor Schauberger designed a dam with outlet sluices at different heights on the dam wall to correspond with the temperature layers of the dam water (warmer at the surface, coolest on the bottom). An automatic monitoring of air temperature would determine which outflow would discharge the water from the dam at approximately the same temperature. The aim of this arrangement is to remove large and therefore disruptive temperature differences and to bring the external air temperature and the temperature of the river water into a closer approximation (Fig. 11.3).<sup>2</sup>

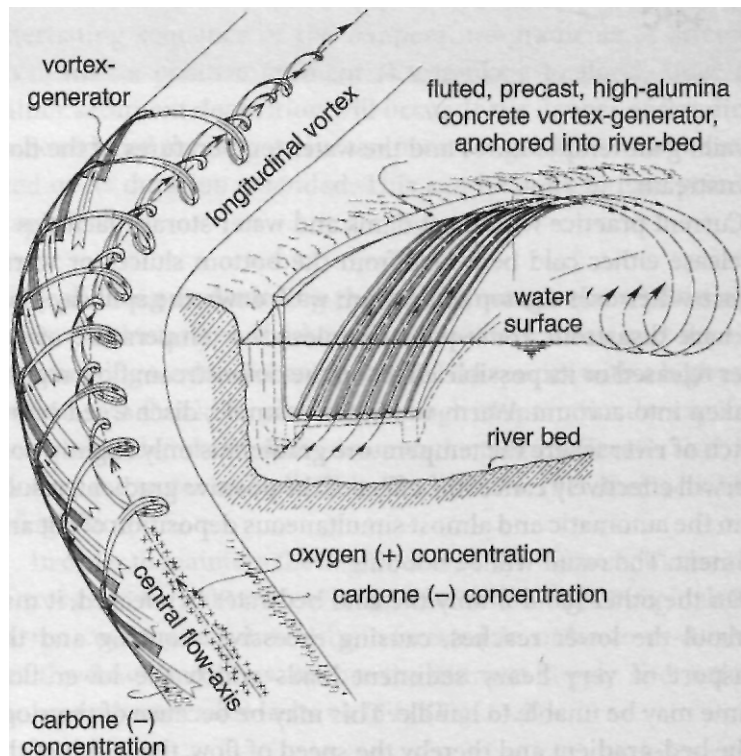


Fig. 11.3. An ingenious (but complex) method of freshening and re-energizing a river.

By installing pre-cast concrete guide vanes that generate a cooling longitudinal vortex on a river bend, which brings the growth-enhancing substances (carbone) on the riverbed and near the banks into contact with the oxygen in the centre-stream; the accumulated energies from this synthesis release nourishing sales into the river banks between the bends.

3. By installing flow-deflecting guides which direct the flow of water at the bends towards the centre of the river and simultaneously cause the creation of cooling longitudinal vortices. Viewed along the direction of flow, these induce anti-clockwise rotating vortices at left hand bends and clockwise vortices at right hand bends.

The flow-guide or vortex generator (see Fig. 11.3) is made of pre-cast concrete, its curved surface fluted with grooves running parallel to the direction of flow, to prevent any lateral slip. It is triangular in shape, the apex pointing downstream. The wider, upstream end of the triangle is horizontal and flush with the riverbed, so as to scoop up the onflowing water and curl it over centripetally (inwardly spiralling) into a vortex in the centre of the channel. This movement gathers up the suspended and dissolved growth-enhancing substances (carbones), from near the banks and the riverbed, allowing them to mix with the dissolved oxygen which in all healthy streams collects in the central flow axis.

These (negatively-charged) fructigenic carbones become energized when moved centripetally and are thus able to combine with the fertilizing (positively charged) oxygen. The oxygen is cooled by a positive temperature gradient, resulting in a freshening and reinvigorating of the water. At the shallower parts of the river between the bends, the accumulated energies from this organic synthesis allow the discharge of nourishing salts into the groundwater in the banks.<sup>3</sup>

4. By the implanting of 'energy-bodies' in midstream, anchored to the river bed, which re-energize the water by forming natural longitudinal vortices. These would be used where the flow-guides are inappropriate — in the straighter stretches of a channel for instance — and where the removal of sediment is desirable. Although never described by Viktor Schauberger in detail, these could take the form of egg-shaped longitudinal vortex-generators with neutral buoyancy achieved through small holes allowing penetration of the outer water. Schauberger may have applied this principle from observing the stationary trout.

Vortices may also be introduced by placing large (preferably metalliferous) boulders in the centre of the channel. Schauberger found that the boulders that 'floated' in a very cold stream contained metal oxides and silicates, so these stones would actually increase the

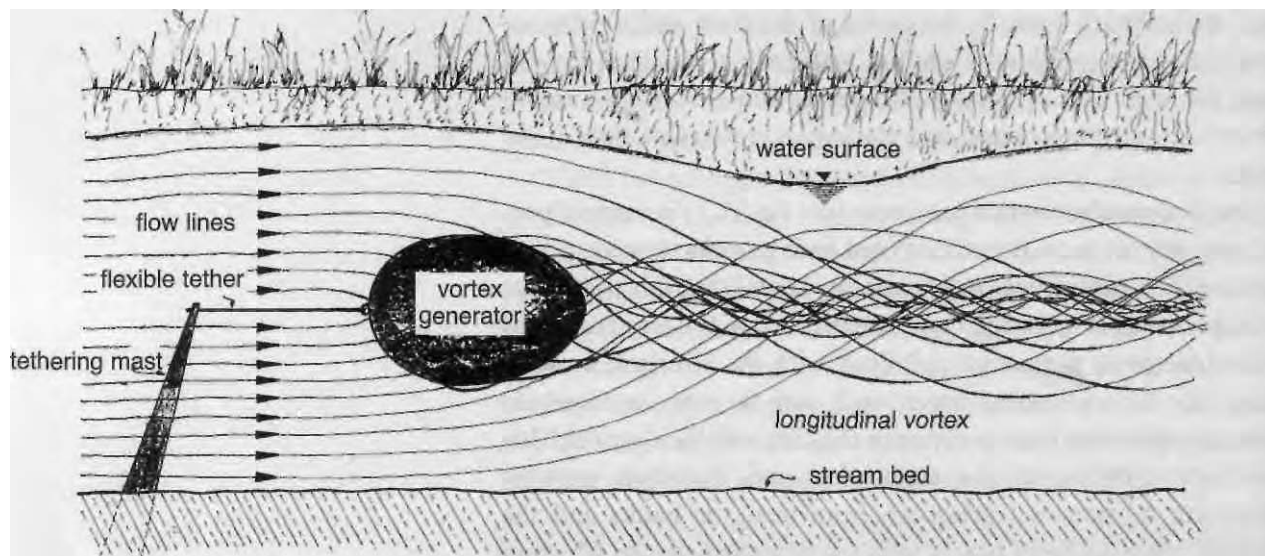


Fig. 11.4. An egg-shaped body to generate longitudinal vortices. Another way to increase vitality and electrical charge in streams.

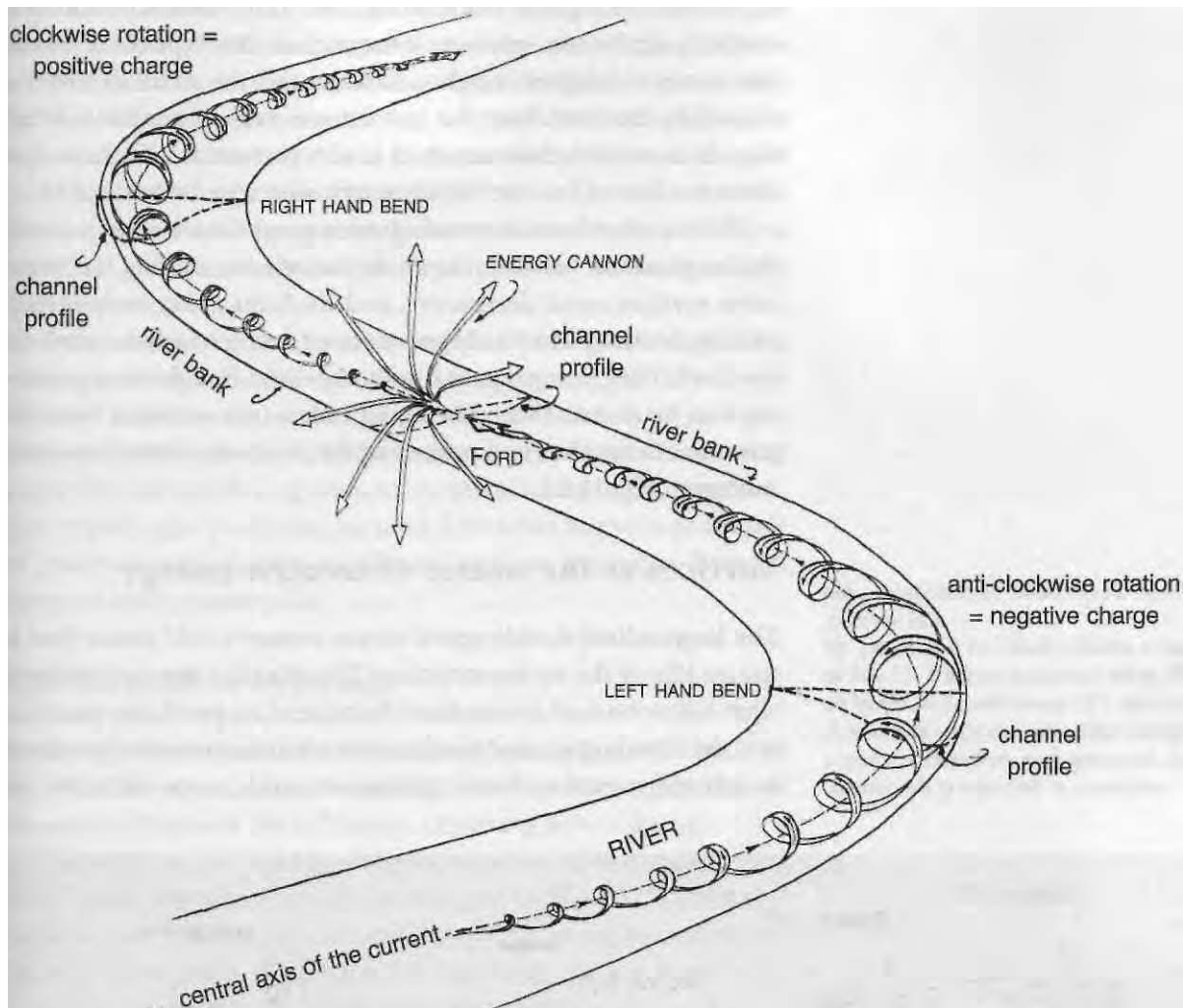
energy of the water. Water carries an electric charge. If the water is caused to rotate, a biomagnetic field would be created which would enhance the vitality of the life-enhancing elements (fructigens, dynagens and qualigens) and therefore the general health of the water.

Schauberger once admitted making use of 'energy-bodies,' when he secretly installed them during the night in a sediment-choked stream. By morning the sediment had disappeared, the channel bed deepened considerably and the natural flow of water restored. The engineers in charge of the stream's regulation were amazed.

## The formation of vortices and bends

We have seen that energy is always connected with movement. The natural movement of water is sinuous, convoluting and vortical. Without such movement there is no polarity. Vortices, however, cannot form without the existence of polarities. Through the action of vortices come rhythms, the pulsations that act as a gateway — a breathing process that the river performs for the environment.

There are three kinds of vortices that form in a river. The principal one, responsible for the river's health is the longitudinal vortex (see Fig. 8.2) which is naturally generated at river bends. The coldest water filaments are those closest to the centre and they,



being subject to the least turbulence, move fastest, pulling along the outer water filaments in their wake. The outer water filaments create the turbulence that keeps the riverbed clear of silt, becoming infused with trace elements and nutrients, and building up its internal charge of pure energy that is released as the longitudinal vortex weakens (Schauberger called this release the 'energy cannon').

Then there are the transverse vortices that form at right angles to the bank. These are caused as a lower layer of laminar-structured water slips faster than the layer above it. These mix the water, but at the same time cool it, because the water temperatures within the centre of these vortices are identifiably cooler than those without, the

Fig. 11.5. Energy release in the environment.

As the longitudinal vortex forms at a bend in the river (see Fig. 11.3), the water cools and grinds sediment, releasing nutrients into the river; when the vortex slows down after the bend, the water warms in the now shallower riverbed and begins to deposit its store of nutrients and trace elements; then just before a new vortex starts to form in the reverse direction at the next bend, energy is released into the environment; Viktor Schauberger called this the 'Energy Cannon.' If the river has been badly regulated, this discharge could be of damaging energy.

uppermost vortex train manifesting itself as the familiar backward-breaking ripples seen on rivers at the surface. This type of vortex also distributes the lighter weight sediment and the nutrient material carried by the river from the centre towards the river bank. While they do increase turbulence, their action is more as a brake to slow down the flow of the river which might otherwise be too rapid.<sup>4</sup>

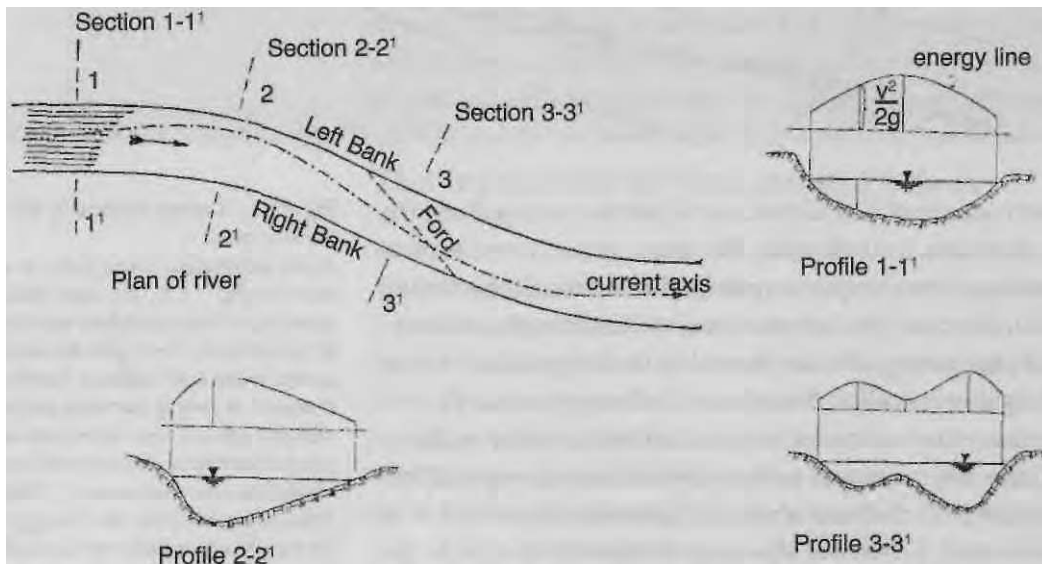
On the other hand, increasing water temperature often weakens the longitudinal vortices, the rising turbulence making the transverse vortices more destructive, and the banks may be breached, causing flooding. The third type of vortex acts vertically towards the river bed. They may gouge out potholes with a boulder as a grinder, but can be destructive by bringing radon-type energies from the ground into the river and projecting them into the immediate environment. (Fig. 11.5).

### Vortices as the source of creative energy

The longitudinal double-spiral vortex creates a cold dense flow in the middle of the vortex structure. This is called the core-water, or what Viktor termed an 'emulsion because of its particular qualities. It is the breeding ground for the most vitalizing energies produced by natural river flow. Finely ground minerals, trace elements and

Fig. 11.6. River bend formation in plan and section.

If the river is initially shaded on both banks, the profile of the channel at section 1-11 will be symmetrical. The curved line at the top of the diagram reflects the velocity of flow at each vertical, increasing from the banks, reaching a maximum at the centre of the channel.



organic substances are spun into this belt of rapidly rotating core water (emulsified) that is composed to a large extent of ionized elements. What this does is to enable new combinations and recombinations of the various elements and suspended substances. This is a process that Viktor called 'cold fermentation,' which is very much associated with longitudinal vortices. These are beneficial because the cooling makes the oxygen and silicates more passive and able to combine with carbonates, which then produce a fructigenic or growth-promoting effect.

Overheating of the water creates other types of vortices that are not so beneficial. These might be vortices forming laterally across the river (transverse vortices), or vertical vortices ascending to the surface from the river bed. In these the oxygen is heated, becoming aggressive, and producing low quality, germinating-inhibiting energies or pathogen-producing bacteria. This often happens as a result of poorly conceived river regulation, and can propagate harmful energies to the countryside.

## The formation of bends

A river will always follow a sinuous energy-generating path, because this is in its nature, unless mountains or other immovable objects prevent it. Rivers are the mirrors of an unseen flow of energy.

The water on the right bank heats up where it has been exposed to the Sun's heat (see Fig. 11.6 section and profile 2-2<sup>1</sup>); the water becomes more turbulent and begins to decelerate compared to the main body of water. The water flowing along the left-hand bank which is cooler and faster moving then overtakes the slower moving water and curls towards the right around it, due to the increasing turbulence and deceleration of the warmer water, eventually creating a bend. The faster flow will pull the heavier sediment centrifugally to the left, while sediment on the right is scoured out by the colder water. Meanwhile at this point the cross-sectional profile of the river becomes asymmetrical, due to the varying flows and temperatures, the coldest water flowing in the deeper section of the channel.

The cold water now flows on the other side of the channel; a bend is formed in the opposite direction due to the momentum of the cold water-masses, (see section and profile 3-3<sup>1</sup>). This rhythm of the river changing its course from left to right and right to left is an integral part of its pulsating flow. It is our interference of this

rhythm that causes the river to become aggressive and flood. The banks will then not receive their recharge from the river, and all life downstream will also suffer. Should any kind of adjustment have to be made to the course of a river, it is essential to know when to encourage a right hand bend, for to put a left hand one there would only disrupt the river's energy flow. Even on a long left or right hand bend, there is still an alternating left-hand right-hand motion, although the motion in the opposite direction to that of the bend may be very slight and of short duration.

This current crossover appears where the river is most shallow and where the slowing down of the flow allows suspended material to settle. So these fordable stretches become the major deposition zones for the river's suspended nutrients and minerals and where the river can transfer these to the river banks. Alternatively the bends are where the rocks and stones are ground down, the trace elements contained in them being taken up by the vortical flow for later nourishment. Viktor Schauberger used to say that this sediment actually helps to sustain the river in its wanderings towards the ocean; he called it 'the river's bread.' These vital nutrients will be absorbed into the groundwater table.

This fordable stretch is also the place where the energy nutrients created by the river are released into the environment, provided there is a positive temperature gradient in relation to the river bank. As noted above, Schauberger called it the 'energy cannon' (Fig. 11.5). It is the completion of the 'outbreath' part of the cycle. All the energies accumulated in the previous in-winding, longitudinal vortex have to be released before the water rotates in the opposite direction. By this means a river constantly renews its vitality and enriches the land through which it flows.

If the water is sufficiently cold, dense and dynamic, small particles of trace elements and minerals are released from these suspended stones as they grind together, and are partially or wholly dissolved, replacing those previously lost through transfer to the surroundings. In addition pure ionizing energy is released through the generation of the triboluminescence. A golden flash of light is produced when two crystalline stones of similar composition are struck against one another. As it takes place under water it cannot be related to normal combustion, electrical discharges or frictional heat, and must therefore be a process of cold oxidation not associated with the generation of heat.

This is probably the origin of the fabled 'Gold of the Nibelungs,' the 'Rhinegold' that supposedly lay on the bottom of the Rhine in days of yore and which gleamed during the hours of darkness. This legend is also to be ascribed to the phenomenon of triboluminescence. About 200-250 years ago, the water of the Rhine was probably clear enough for people to observe what appeared to be the flashing of gold on the riverbed. The Rhine today, however, is a thick, turbid, grey-green muddy brew, its life force having been extinguished by modern mechanistic methods of river engineering.

## Conventional river engineering

Viktor Schaubberger's most vigorous campaign was to try to persuade the Bonn government to restore the Rhine and the Danube to their natural courses. He was greatly disturbed by the way in which those mighty rivers' banks had been straightened, so that the water was not able to flow naturally. It was like constraining someone in a straightjacket. This had the effect of overheating the oxygen content, making it aggressive. The water becomes violent, prone to flooding and disease-promoting. Tree felling on the river banks has only exacerbated the problem.

Often the rivers have been regulated through trapezoid-shaped canals in the misplaced belief that the flow would be improved. In fact this almost lifeless body of water was unable to carry its sediment, which settled on the bottom, and the river has to be constantly dredged. Because the flow is uniform, no cooling longitudinal vortices can form and no energizing processes can take place.

The water becomes warmer, sluggish, insipid and murky. With its energies destroyed it becomes a stale and lifeless liquid. Instead of being a carrier, mediator, accumulator and transformer of life-energies, the river has become a corpse (Fig. 11.7).

## Hydroelectric power

Present methods of hydroelectric power generation destroy water in their own way. The present inappropriate design of dams we touched on earlier in this chapter. The water is thrust down cylindrical pipes under enormous pressure. Upon leaving these it is then hurled against steel turbine blades where it is smashed to

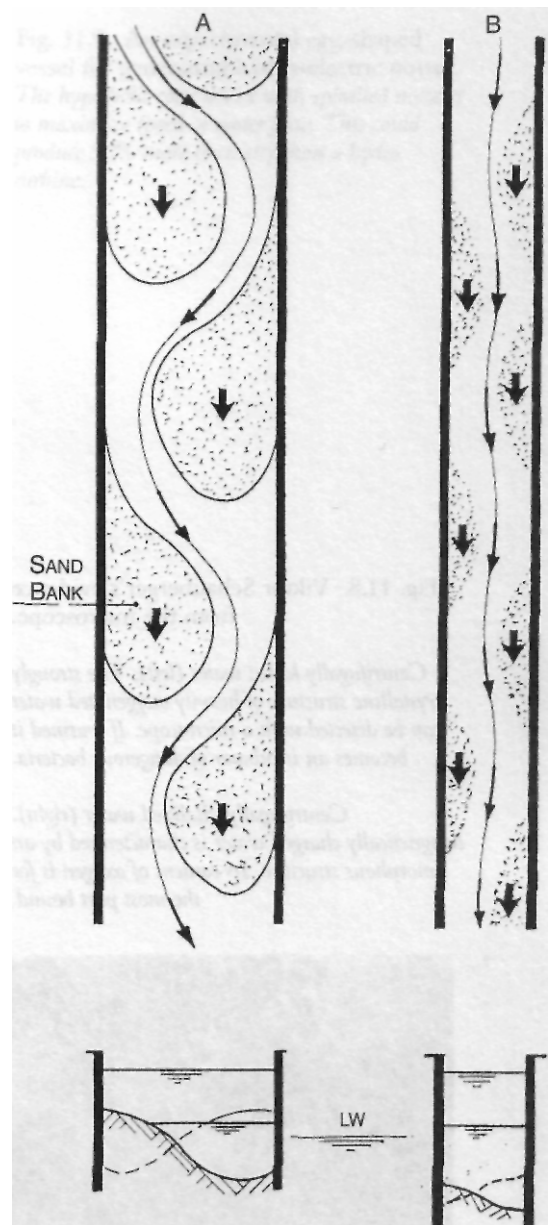


Fig. 11.7. Sand banks in conventional channels. From a textbook of conventional river engineering. The river still tries to dance and play, but confined to a straightjacket, it silts up and will have to be dredged, to avoid flooding.



smithereens. The physical structure of the water is literally demolished and all the dissolved oxygen, and even some of the oxygen in the water molecule itself, is centrifuged out of the water.

Viktor Schauberger had photographs taken through a microscope (Fig. 11.8) that show the marked difference in the structure of water that has been subjected to centrifugence on the one hand and centripetence on the other. The fragmented appearance of the centrifugally moved water is unmistakable. The slicing action of the blades causes severe friction and heating which makes the oxygen highly aggressive and it attacks the bare metal, severely pitting the surface, often destroying the blades' efficiency.

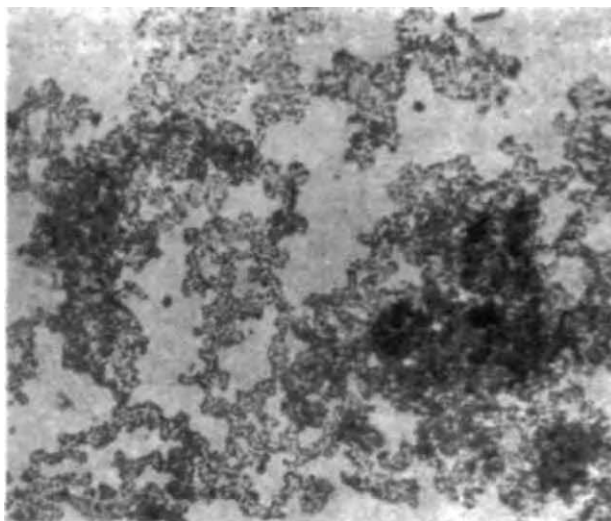
This fragmented and largely oxygen-deficient water, a virtual skeleton of healthy water when forcibly expelled into the river, has disastrous consequences for the fish and other aquatic life. Inevitably certain species of fish disappear once these power stations are commissioned, and other forms of life survive with difficulty.

The water is so depleted that it has to build itself up again completely before it can be of any benefit to the environment. So it seeks out new supplies of oxygen and other high quality substances wherever it can find them, including living things. With their particularly intimate contact with this 'ravenous' water, fish are especially prone to attack as it enters their very delicate gill systems and their body's tissues are attacked by oxygen-hungry carbonates. The soil bordering on the river is also leached of its

Fig. 11.8. Viktor Schauberger's evidence from the microscope.

Centrifugally killed water (left). The strongly crystalline structure of heavily oxygenated water can be detected with a microscope. If warmed it becomes an incubator of dangerous bacteria.

Centrifugally vitalized water (right). Magnetically charged water is characterized by an amorphous structure. Its content of oxygen is for the most part bound.



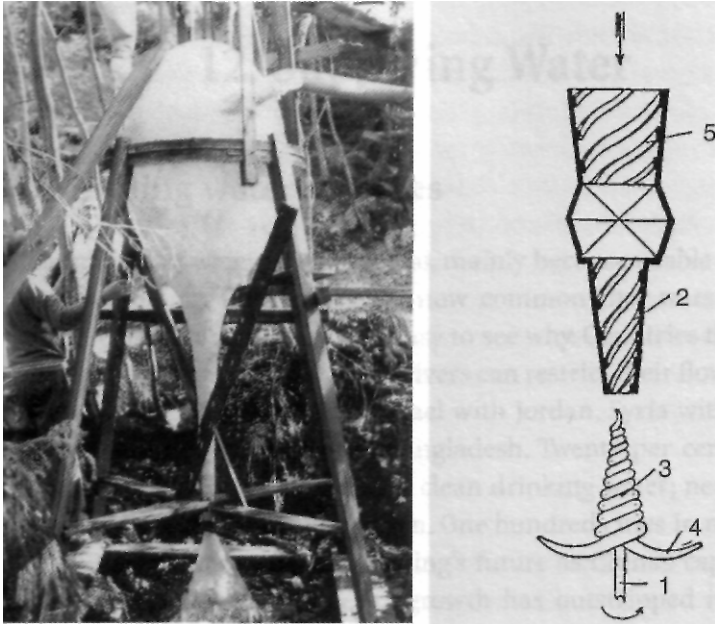


Fig. 11.9. An experimental egg-shaped vessel for generating hydro-electric power. The hyperbolic cone device with spiralled nozzles to maximize speed of water flow. This could produce 90% more electricity than a hydro turbine.

nutrients which the water hungrily consumes resulting in a large drop in soil fertility and productivity.

Viktor Schauberger showed how unnecessary is this extraordinarily destructive power-generating process. He devised a novel method in the early 1920s which can produce 90% more electricity from a given flow-volume without harm to the water. Using water from a nearby stream Viktor installed this device to light his forest warden's house, which was too remote to be connected to any other source of supply. The design shown in Fig. 11.9 is very simple, illustrating his belief that what is natural is silent, simple and cheap.

It operates by water being cooled, densified and energized as it passes through a rifled brass nozzle, in a vortical flow, thereby reducing both pressure and friction as the water is centripetally drawn away from the sides. The water is directed against a multiple-spiral, shell-like impeller attached to the shaft of a generator.<sup>5</sup>

# 12. Supplying Water

## Dwindling water supplies

The subject of water is very topical, mainly because usable water is in short supply. Predictions are now common that wars will be fought over access to water. It is easy to see why. Countries that control the headwaters of important rivers can restrict their flow downstream, like Turkey with Iraq, Israel with Jordan, Syria with Israel, Sudan with Egypt, India with Bangladesh. Twenty per cent of the world's population does not have clean drinking water; nearly half the world does not have sanitation. One hundred cities in northern China now ration water, and Beijing's future as China's capital has been under review because its growth has outstripped its water resources. Even those countries which have sufficient water treat it so badly that, when delivering it to homes, kill it with chlorine, fluorides and other chemicals, ostensibly to prevent disease; instead this depresses our immune systems and makes us more open to infection.

How has this come about? Water is in great abundance on this marvellous planet, but less than 0.5% is available as fresh water. The rest is salt water, inaccessible groundwater, or frozen in polar mountain ice. While the world's population is increasing by 85 million a year, cities are expanding at double that rate due to urbanization. Cities and industries consume the most water (industrial water consumption is to double by 2025).<sup>1</sup> Twenty-four countries, mainly in Africa, will not have enough water to meet 2025 projected needs.<sup>2</sup> And, if that is not critical, according to a recent UN report, world population could rise from 6.1 billion in 2000 to at least 8.2 billion by 2050.<sup>3</sup> Today, 1.2 billion people drink unclean water, and 2.5 billion lack proper toilets or sewerage systems.<sup>4</sup> And what will be the situation in ten years' time?

Globally, about 70% of water diverted from rivers or drawn from aquifers is used for irrigation. This is hugely wasteful; leaking pipes and channels, evaporation from reservoirs and from irrigation sprays means that about 60% of the water does not reach the plants' roots. China's greatest river, the Yellow River, has run dry and in several

years since 1985 has failed to reach the ocean.<sup>5</sup> The once mighty Nile, Ganges and Colorado Rivers barely reach the sea in dry seasons.<sup>6</sup> The introduction of industrial agriculture into India and Northern China has in those areas led to dangerous lowering of the water table.

The construction of large dams, whether for hydroelectric power or for irrigation does incalculable environmental damage, as well as annihilating viable human communities. Dams destroy ecosystems and sever the balancing of energy from one part of the landscape to another. Since 1970, when Egypt's Aswan High Dam came into operation, the number of commercially harvested fish species in the Nile dropped by two-thirds, and the Mediterranean sardine catch has fallen by 80%.<sup>7</sup>

## Water for profit

Traditional societies know how to manage their water, but increasingly the supplies of rural communities are being privatized by companies whose major priority is profit. In April 2000 the protesting citizens of Cochabamba in Bolivia suffered over 180 casualties at the hands of their police before their government revoked the right of International Waters of London to impose a 35% increase in water prices. The Bolivian government has now reconsidered its policy to privatize all public water supplies.

Vast new networks of supply and disposal pipes must be built in the cities if basic water needs are to be met. Governments, unwilling these days to invest in social infrastructure, are privatizing water utilities, and the results seldom benefit the consumer. A shortage in any essential commodity brings out the profiteers and extortionists. Pro-privatization propaganda reached a climax at the Water Forum meetings in The Hague in March 2000, but the abuses and inadequacies of commercial control have become apparent.

One study has shown that Swedish municipal water authorities delivered water at around a third of the cost, had operating costs of about half, and produced nearly three times higher return on capital than English private water companies of similar size.<sup>8</sup> However, since the economic downturn of 2001, several English private water companies have been experiencing financial difficulties. It makes complete nonsense that essential water supplies should be subject to the ups and down of the financial markets.

A great danger to our water comes from the globalization of sup-

ply. Multinational companies are unaccountable and self-serving with more interest in profits than in a sustainable environment. A group of water companies tried at the 2001 Water Forum conference to foist a new water order on the world, in effect to encourage water supply to be removed from public control. American companies are negotiating to build dams in India which would displace countless communities and destroy their environments. Three French companies already control more than 70% of the world's private market.<sup>9</sup> Increasing numbers of privatized water schemes are linked to ventures to extract more water through vast dams and reservoirs, with bulk water supply schemes that guarantee profits by requiring consumption regardless of need.

## Modern water treatments

### Chlorination

Because public water is not treated with the care required to keep water pulsating and alive, it degenerates, attracting pathogenic organisms. As a result, the authorities routinely treat it with chlorine to prevent the threat to the community of waterborne diseases. This powerful disinfectant removes all types of bacteria, beneficial and harmful alike, and in doing so, over a long period of time, destroys or seriously weakens many of the immune-enhancing microorganisms in the body. It is a major contributor of lowered immune resistance in older people. Medical authorities say that the amount of chlorine is so small that it could not do this, but they fail to take into account that the chlorine accumulates in the fatty tissue of the body, so that the dosage is cumulative, nor that there is a homeopathic action that amplifies the effect on the body.

Those of us who live in cities and are forced year-in and year-out to drink sterilized water should seriously consider the fate of that 'organism' whose naturally-ordained ability to create life has been forcibly removed by chemical compounds. Sterilized and physically-destroyed water not only brings about physical decay, but also gives rise to mental deterioration and hence to the systematic degeneration of humanity and other life-forms.<sup>10</sup>

### Fluoridation

The issue of adding fluorosilicates (fluoride) routinely to drinking water is one of the worst outrages in public health policy. This is not

the naturally occurring calcium fluoride that is present in some drinking water, usually at low levels of about 0.1 ppm (parts per million). It is a by-product of a number of industrial processes, initially the iron, copper, aluminium and now the phosphate fertilizer industries, and contains also a number of heavy metals; altogether a potent toxic cocktail, the disposal of which would be costly by current environmental standards.<sup>11</sup>

The solution to this problem of industrial waste disposal was to arrange for their addition to public water supplies. In parts of the USA, Canada, Britain, Ireland, Australia, New Zealand, and a few non-English speaking countries, like Chile, this is permitted, usually at levels of about 1 ppm (or 1 mg fluoride per litre of water), but many other countries decided the risks were too high to implement the policy. The addition of fluoride as a policy is justified by the claim that it reduces dental cavities, especially in children. Independent research actually proves otherwise, and shows that the body accumulates levels of fluoride in the bones and certain organs, and there is evidence of increased risk of cancer, brain function impairment, kidney malfunction and premature ageing.<sup>12</sup> At higher dosages, fluorosilicates are an effective rat poison.

Unfortunately fluoride is also added to many processed foods, fruit juice, milk and, especially toothpaste. Fluoride is released into food cooked in Teflon-coated cookware, so the actual intake may be significant, even if you don't live in a fluoridated area. For reasons that are difficult to comprehend, but which are clearly political in nature, many dental and health authorities seem to support this mass medication of whole populations, and politicians seem happy to go along with it.

Mass fluoridation started in the USA in 1945, backed largely by the Mellon family, owners of ALCOA, the biggest aluminium manufacturer, and one of the biggest fluoride wartime polluters. Starting with Grand Rapids, Michigan it was introduced within two years to a hundred cities. Basically a dirty tricks campaign that labelled opposers as crackpots (and during the McCarthy era as left-wing subversives), it has never completed convincing tests, nor produced adequate evidence of its efficacy or safety. 'It was a political, not a scientific health issue' and, like the agenda of the more recent genetically modified foods campaign, became a major US export.<sup>13</sup>

The World Health Organization and the American Medical Association were persuaded to back the policy. The FDA (US Food and

Drug Administration) has backed off slightly from its 100% endorsement of the product, due to public exposure of the scam, but today 130 million Americans in 9,600 communities continue to drink fluoridated water.<sup>14</sup> Like the USA, about 50% of the Canadian population has fluoridated water.

Mass fluoridation came to Britain in the 1950s, and currently 10% of the population is exposed, mostly in the West Midlands and the North-East. The present UK government policy is to require all water companies to adopt fluoridation. In Australia, some of the fluoride laws are so Draconian that people may be prosecuted for speaking out against water fluoridation.<sup>15</sup>

Barry Groves concludes, 'Fluoridation is the longest, most expensive and most spectacularly unsuccessful marketing campaign ever to come out of the United States.'<sup>16</sup>

Viktor Schauberger was very concerned about industrial pollution of rivers and lakes, but the addition of poisons to our domestic water supply was not an issue of the 1930s. Indeed, he insisted that the way we transport and deliver water destroys the invigorating qualities of healthy water, and he pursued enlightened research on ways of maintaining water's energy. Viktor predicted that one day a bottle of good water would be more expensive than a bottle of wine, and commented on our treatment of public water supplies:

If we have any common sense remaining, we should refuse to continue to drink water prepared in this way. The alternative would be degeneration into cancer-prone, mentally and physically decrepit, physically and morally inferior individuals.<sup>17</sup>

## Transmuting water's memory

Most communities make genuine efforts to remove physical pollutants from public water supplies, but there are so many organic toxins produced by industrial agriculture, that one is wise to consider good filtration to reduce the dangers of these pollutants and of heavy metals that, sadly, are now more common. There are now generally available good and affordable plumbed-in filters that remove most of the physical contaminants.<sup>18</sup> However, what our water treatment policies must urgently take on board is that the physical removal of a pollutant is only part of making water safe.

Typically, in modern cities, public water supplies are recycled as many as twenty times. Even if the physical contaminants have been removed, their vibrational imprint is still carried in the water in its memory bank, no matter how many times it is recycled. Just as water can carry restorative energies, such as in homeopathy, so it can transmit negative or destructive imprints that can cause disharmony or disease in the body.

The purpose of some of the better vortex treatment systems is to recluster the water, in a manner that superimposed natural vibrations will erase the memory of the water's previous abuse. The vortex, being the transmuting instrument or enabling gateway between different qualities or levels of energy, allows the water to absorb the etheric or cosmic level of energy that surrounds us all.<sup>19</sup> Rather as allowing brilliant sunlight and fresh air to fill a musty room will quickly transmute the stale energy, so the more refined energy always prevails over the coarser. We would recommend a combination of an efficient plumbed-in filter with a vortex-type re-energizing system (see Resources, p. 276).

## Tubular water movement

We described earlier Viktor Schauburger's almost mystical experience of when he felt his own consciousness enter the stream and how the water consciousness seemed to tell him how it wanted to move. Great pioneers of science have told of similar experiences as a kind of initiation. For Viktor it opened a wider perception about water's behaviour in quite different situations. For example, how water wants to move in a closed system like a pipe is quite different from its movement in a river. His genius allowed him to make the quite remarkable connection between the behaviour of water in a pipe or tube, and the movement of sap in a tree or blood in the human body.

## Water main material

Archeological research has shown that in ancient times, from the Babylonians to the Greeks, there was a greater understanding of water and its qualities. In those times, water mains were constructed of high quality wood or of natural stone. In time, these natural materials became more scarce, and the Romans experimented with different metals. Preoccupied with oxidizing corrosion, unfortunately they



often used lead which brought its own problems of lead poisoning, particularly in the wine goblets where the vinegar in the wine dissolved the lead.

Before the expansion of cities during the Industrial Revolution, many water mains in Europe, and even in New York, were constructed of wood, which allowed the water to breathe and to interact with its environment. After the water mains in Vienna were extended to new suburbs with steel or iron pipes, internally coated with tar, as opposed to the traditional wooden tubes, Schauberger found that the incidence of cancer more than doubled between 1920 and 1931.<sup>20</sup>

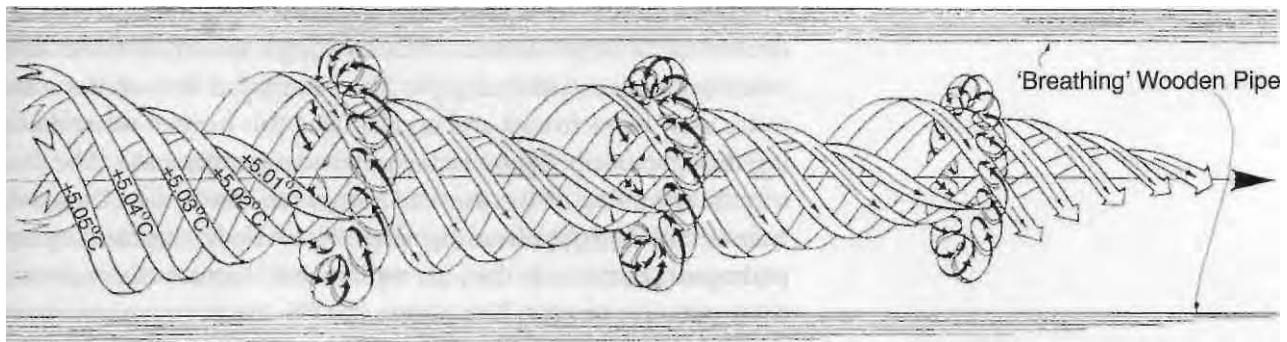
The laminar structure of water quickly disintegrates owing to the chaotic flow through a cylindrical pipe. Friction with the pipe walls heats up the water, decomposing the dissolved trace elements. As the surface of the iron pipes start to rust, oxygen is taken out of the water, and the rust deposits encourage disease-promoting bacteria. The accumulating rust in turn constricts the water flow, so that what is delivered is dead water, disinfected with chlorine.

#### The wooden water main

Schauberger knew that water can maintain its vitality and energy only if it is allowed to tumble about in a spiralling vortical manner. So in 1930 he set about designing a pipe that would actually encourage this movement. It was constructed of wooden staves, like a barrel, which allowed the moisture to seep through, transferring a cooling effect (as in sweating) to the water in the pipe. The spiralling movement was created by a series of guide vanes, which act like rifling in a gun barrel. These were made of silver plated copper to

Fig. 12.1. The double-spiral longitudinal vortex.

This is a longitudinal vortex showing the development of toroidal counter-vortices. These occur due to interaction with the porous pipe walls and have an effect similar to ball-bearings, enhancing the forward movement. Their interior rotation follows the direction of rotation and flow of the central vortex. These toroidal vortices transfer oxygen, bacteria and other impurities to the pipe walls, where the concentration of oxygen destroys the inferior, pathogenic bacteria.



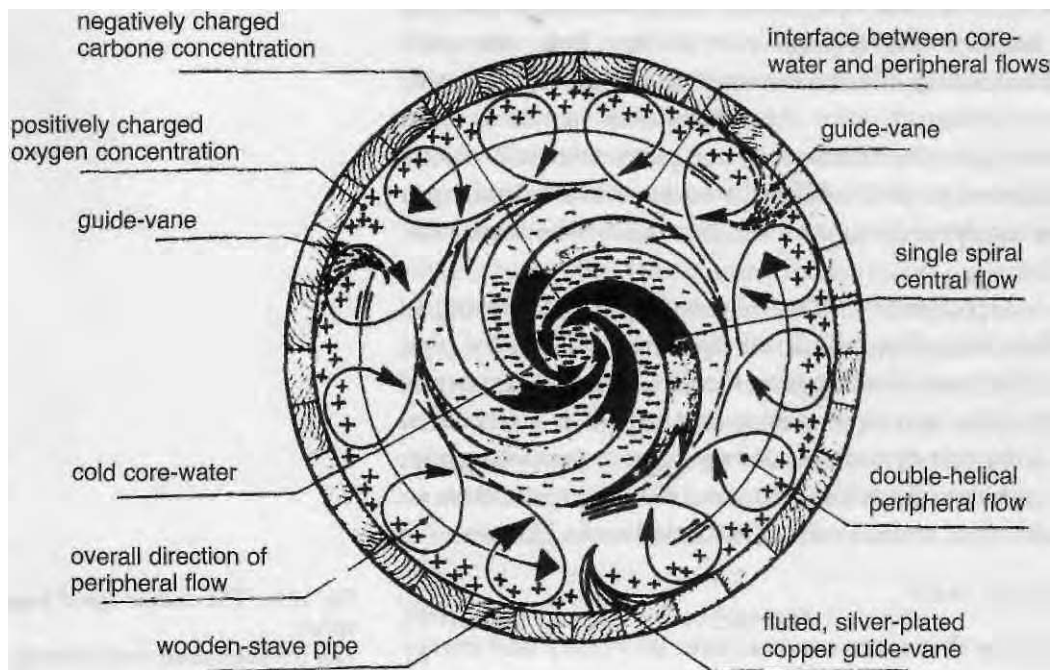


Fig. 12.2. Flow dynamics of the double spiral pipe (cross section).

enhance the subtle energies<sup>21</sup> and fluted so as to direct movement towards the centre, thus reducing the heating effects of friction.

Figs. 12.1 and 12.2 illustrate how this configuration sets up a double-spiral longitudinal vortex, creating a waterflow faster than a conventional cylindrical pipe. The centripetal flow of the main water body helps to cool and accelerate it, this heavier water drawing the specifically lighter outer water along in its wake. The centripetal spiralling of the toroidal 'doughnuts' created by the guide vanes extract oxygen from the main water body, transferring any pathogenic bacteria to the pipe walls where they are eliminated by the aggressive oxygen. The higher quality micro-organisms however, survive, because they require higher levels of oxygen.

HIDDEN NATURE

It is a brilliant design that imitates the natural pulsating flow of water in a natural vessel and which delivers water that purifies itself and cools through its motion, eliminating the need for any sterilizing or purifying additives. Ideally, these wooden water mains should be embedded in sand, allowed them to breathe, and protected from light and heat. In such conditions they should outlast a steel pipe.

## The Stuttgart tests

As the scientific establishment had never taken seriously his ideas on natural water movement, Viktor Schauberger in later life decided to have them subjected to rigorous tests by an independent authority. In 1952 he asked the Stuttgart Technical University to set up the experiments at his own expense. He approached Professor Franz Popel, director of the Institute of Hygiene who, knowing Schauberger's infamous reputation, at first refused, saying it would be a waste of his time.

The German Government had been irritated by Viktor's railing about its management of the River Rhine. So, hearing about Schauberger's proposal, it was happy to offer to cover half the costs, thinking that any genuine tests were bound to discredit him. As a result of this, Professor Popel changed his mind and agreed to test the various rifled and helical pipes that Viktor supplied.

The object of the tests was to compare how water moves through eight different kinds of pipe, the velocity of the water flow being affected by friction varying according to the form of the pipe. The configurations that produced the most friction were the straight pipes made of glass or of copper. Introducing a sinuosity to the pipe reduced the friction, while Viktor's special 'spiral helicoid' copper pipe directed the water flow in an involuting flow movement away from the walls, giving the greatest reduction in friction, to zero or perhaps even below (negative friction or acceleration) at specific velocities.<sup>22</sup>

Because of expectations of his peers, Popel's report played down the significance of the experiment, which in fact in these circumstances disproved the relevance of the Second Law of Thermodynamics, which states that energy in any closed systems must degenerate or run down. The implication of this was that a system can in certain circumstances generate energy spontaneously, that

once the initial impetus has been received, no further energy input is required. In other words, energy is not a constant. In this case it was increased through the emergence of fifth or sixth dimensional dynagens (see Chapter 2) created by what Schauberger called 'original' or 'cosmic' movement. Popel did, however, admit that in Schauberger's special pipe, friction at two specific velocities appeared to reduce to zero.

## The circulation of blood

It is a common experience for those who use the ancient practice of watching the breath when they meditate, of the strange sensation of 'being breathed;' that the process seems to be part of a 'greater breathing.' Viktor Schauberger would often insist in a similar vein, that a bird 'is flown and a fish 'is swum.' On many occasions he said that the heart is not a pump, that it 'is pumped.' He saw the heart, rather, as a regulator or of blood flow. The spurts of blood that the heart produces during contraction are more like the automatic reaction to having been full, like the outbreath of the lungs.

The Stuttgart experiment had established that when the water flow was in resonance with the configuration of the pipe, there was no friction. Similarly the blood being in resonance with the arteries and capillaries greatly facilitates flow. In addition the blood vessels have a natural pulsating, peristaltic action. About 1927, Professor Kurt Bergel of Berlin University recorded this automatic pulsation a few days after incubation in small warm blood vessels around the egg sac of a bird's egg, although no heart had yet been formed. Professor Bergel also rejected the popular theory of the heart as a pump, insisting that this function was carried out by 'the millions of highly active capillaries permeating the body,' and that 'health and disease are primarily dependent on the faultless or disturbed activity of the capillaries.'<sup>23</sup>

It appears that the pulsation of the capillaries initiate the circulation of the blood, augmented by the configuration of the blood vessels themselves.<sup>24</sup> The specifications for these would have been created with the original energy blueprint for hot-blooded creatures in general, and the human being in particular (see Chapter 2). Included in these specifications was even a provision that the viscosity of the blood would be reduced in the finer blood vessels, so

that its ability to flow freely would not be compromised! The same is found with sap at the tree's extremities.

A parallel may also be drawn between the veins and arteries twisting sinuously through the body, bringing nutrients to the tissues and organs and the streams and rivers, pulsating with eddies and spirals, winding their way through the countryside, nourishing the surrounding areas.

Temperature gradients also can influence the efficient circulation of blood. A strong positive gradient (where temperature decreases with movement in a given direction) between the inner core of the body and its outer extremities will stimulate the outward flow. This explains the invigoration of a cold shower. Conversely, a prolonged soak in a hot bath slows down the circulation, producing lethargy. The second is the result of the difference in the physico-chemical composition and therefore the energetic characteristics of arterial and venal blood.

Pulsation is assisted by the different electromagnetic charges carried by two principal types of blood. The positively-charged oxygen in the outward flowing arterial blood is gradually absorbed by muscles and skin, creating a partial vacuum. The negatively-charged, carbone-rich venal blood on the other hand returning from the extremities is ready to reabsorb oxygen from the lungs. The contraction of the heart muscle is a balancing response to opposite charges carried by the two types of blood in the relatively large heart chambers. It might also be said that the heart's pulsation is caused by our breathing in positively charged oxygen, (we then expel the negatively charged CO<sub>2</sub> and water), rather than the conventional belief that we breathe because the heart 'pumps.' The heart's real function is to stimulate pulsation in the blood flow.

The situation of the unborn child is different, for there is no temperature difference between the inner core and the outer extremities. It is likely therefore in the case of the foetus that the heart acts like a pump until it is born. After birth the heart would then assume its normal role as pulsator and balancer.

Callum Coats quotes research that calculates the total length of blood vessels in the average human adult to be about 96,500 km (60,000 miles)! On the basis of conventional hydraulic calculation it is inconceivable that the actual power output of the heart, about 1.5 watts, would be sufficient for this huge task.<sup>25</sup> Yet it does so.

## 12. SUPPLYING WATER

Moreover, Walter Schauberger calculated that the annual output of the heart would suffice to raise a weight of about 40 tonnes (44 tons) to a height of 1m (3.28ft).

The Stuttgart experiments showed that a specific configuration is required for frictionless flow to occur. Schauberger maintained that energy creates the vessel most conducive to its desired form of movement in a given situation; and that energy will always try to move frictionlessly in healthy, animate, organic systems. Seen in this light, the pulsating, almost frictionless flow of blood over these enormous distances becomes more comprehensible. It is important that further investigations should be pursued into the lines of research that Viktor Schauberger pioneered.

## Water storage

With good water becoming increasingly more scarce, it is important to understand how to preserve its quality. Water's enemy is excess heat and light. Water contains oxygen, a substance that is essential for the processes of growth and decay. Below a temperature of 9°C (48°F), oxygen is used for growth, above that, to promote decomposition. As the temperature rises above 10°C (50°F), the oxygen becomes increasingly more aggressive, promoting pathogenic bacteria which can give us disease when we drink the water containing them.

A tank or cistern that is above ground needs to be well insulated, and painted white to reflect the Sun's heat. If it is mostly below ground, the walls will not require insulation, but the top must be painted white. However, Viktor Schauberger urged us to observe the shapes that Nature uses to propagate and maintain life. Nature abhors squares (cubes), rectangles (water tanks) and circles (cylinders). He said that we should not be surprised that our dependence on these unnatural shapes for storage results in the deterioration of our water. This is probably impractical for larger containers, but we should try a more natural shape for smaller containers.

Because it is a living organism, water needs to be in constant movement to maintain its health. The only container that allows this is the egg-shape. The material of containment is very important, because water needs to keep cool; the best materials are natural stone, wood or terracotta. The ancient Greeks understood this, and

kept their water (and wine) in amphorae, egg-shaped vessels that allowed the liquid to breathe. In many amphorae discovered in archaeological digs, grains have been found to be preserved so well after 2000 years that they germinated when planted, proving the effectiveness of the egg-shape for preservation.

## PART FOUR



## The Life of Trees



# 13. The Role of the Forest

When someone dies the bell tolls. When the forest dies and with it a whole people, then no-one lifts a finger. Viktor Schauberger<sup>1</sup>

Only people who love it should care for the forest. Those who view the forest merely as an object of speculation do it and all other living creatures great harm, for the forest is the cradle of water. If the forest dies, then the springs will dry up, the meadows will become barren and many countries will inevitably be seized by unrest of such a kind that it will bode ill for every one of us. Viktor Schauberger<sup>2</sup>

Viktor Schauberger, who believed that the highest quality water depends on the forest, predicted that deforestation would bring water shortage and climate change. As equatorial deforestation has greatly accelerated since he died, it might be useful to summarize the effects of this devastation.

## Evolution of the forest

Plants have been around for 420 million years, which is only 9% of Earth's history. Without plants there could be no life, for plants are the essential link for converting the Sun's energy into food. Trees are the highest form of the plant, and the most efficient exchangers of energy between the Earth and the Sun. The forests are the main source of oxygen, an essential building block of life; they are the Earth's 'lungs.' There have been three periods when forests have flourished: in the Carboniferous Age 350 million years ago, when land vertebrates became established; in the Eocene, 60 million years ago, when primitive mammals first appeared, and in the last 500,000 years, when the cultures of modern man developed. It seems that in each case a boost in the oxygen content of the atmosphere, which the forests delivered, may have been the trigger for evolutionary explosion of Earth's life forms.

These extensive forests developed in the equatorial regions where the heat was available to prime a remarkable engine for moderating the extremes of temperature and the often chaotic nature of

the world's historical climate. In the first case they were evergreen forests, interspersed with enormous swamps. In the Eocene when the modern great mountain ranges were being uplifted, there were large tropical jungles, perhaps not too different from the modern ones which flourished on all the continents until the late nineteenth century, but with less complex fauna.

It is interesting to speculate what caused the forests to establish themselves at these periods. Viktor Schauberger recognized Nature as an intelligent system endowed with meaning and purpose that is concerned with evolving more complex life-forms and a higher level of consciousness. From that perspective it is possible that the establishment of forest might be seen as part of that purpose.

Forest cover varies with climate. Forests have been the natural cover of perhaps three quarters of the Earth's land surface during these periods of evolutionary expansion. This natural forest was an essential prerequisite for the development of the extraordinarily rich variety of fauna and flora (now called 'biodiversity') that makes this planet an important source of life in the Universe.

## Destruction of the forests

Either fortuitously or by design, there seems to be a large degree of tolerance in Earth's ecosystems for the amount of forest cover required to support a balanced climate — though what a great reduction of forest does to biodiversity and the quality of life is another question. Over the half a million or so years of humankind's time on Earth, our species has been responsible for reduction of the forest cover to about 25% of its optimum extent. The early agriculturists would burn clearings to grow their crops, and then move on to allow the fertility to be replenished. Early civilizations, some well documented and some which are now folk memories, felled vast tracts of forest.

Many of these lands became desertified, such as the Gobi, Sind, Arabian, Mesopotamian, North African and Kalahari deserts — probably through a combination of deforestation and climate change. Whole nations were uprooted and had to move elsewhere in their search for subsistence. The same is likely to happen today where great swathes of the rich equatorial forests have been cleared. Fortunately in those days there was somewhere else for the displaced to go, because the world's population was still relatively

small. Today, however, because of overpopulation and an unsustainable birth rate, any climate changes that produce crop failures can mean only starvation and the loss of life through conflict. In temperate climates, clear felling of forests does not normally lead to desertification, but it affects the biodiversity, the fertility and therefore the long-term health of the environment.

Ten thousand years ago the whole Mediterranean region was covered with forests, mainly of oak. Then about 5,000 years ago the forests of Lebanon provided the timber for the Phoenician empire. We don't know what happened to the forests of North Africa, but two thousand years ago these lands were so fertile that the Romans called them the breadbasket of the Mediterranean. They are now arid desert. A thousand years ago 80% of Europe was forested; today it is about 20%, much of which is monocultured industrial woodland, which lacks the biodiversity and the energy of natural forest. In North America, the forest extended from the Atlantic to beyond the Mississippi, and of course west of the Rockies.

Sometimes the forests were exploited to provide fast economic expansion, regardless of the cost to future generations. In order to provide a navy capable of ruling the seas, in the early sixteenth century Henry VIII ordered the felling of a million mature oak trees, virtually denuding England of its mature oaks. The world's forest cover was reduced from about 75% at its greatest to about 50% in medieval times. By 1900 it had dropped to about 35%. In the frantic rush to get rich quick, regardless of the consequences, the figure has dropped to 25% and every year we are still losing equatorial forest the size of Belgium.

Today, the unstable social conditions worldwide, and irresponsible political leadership favour greedy opportunists anxious to make their fortunes, often illegally, by logging many of the finest stands of prime forests on every continent. This destruction is likely to be seen in the future as dangerous planetary vandalism, because their consequences will bear heavily on the future global environmental balance.

## A moral tale

Easter Island, one of the most remote islands in the Pacific Ocean, was occupied by a people about whom we know little, but who had the most remarkable artistic skills (witness the giant statues they

left behind), and a sophisticated culture. It had a cover of forest, fertile soil, and at one time supported over 20,000 people. Towards the end of the thousand years of their occupation of the island, their society clearly deteriorated and they had felled all the trees, so that by AD500, there was no way to build a boat and leave the island. The people literally died out.

Of all the violations we have committed against the beautiful and fertile planet we call home, the destruction of the forests is the hardest to comprehend. The effects of such actions are so quickly apparent, in terms of soil depletion, or in extreme cases, of erosion of the living soil layer by rain or wind, and indeed, through climate change. The great floods of the Rhine in recent years, and the devastating floods in Bangladesh and the mud slides in Assam and Honduras have been caused demonstrably by deforestation in the mountains. In spite of this, the tree felling continues. When the European immigrants settled in North America, there was continuous forest from the Atlantic to the Mississippi.

Five thousand years earlier the great Midwestern prairies and the grasslands of Argentina were also forested. The deep soils of the temperate latitudes were created over hundreds of thousands of years by rich natural forest. (Grasslands do not produce deep soils.) And within a hundred years we have ruined these, first by intensive cultivation, and then by chemical poisoning. The American prairies, and the East Anglian wheat fields have lost on average half their soil depth. When in 1999, over 30,000 people died in mudslides in Venezuela, scientists blamed the weather! The obvious lessons are not being learned, which suggests that our 'experts' are completely out of touch with reality, a complaint frequently voiced by Viktor Schauberger!

We are told that the critical point may soon be reached when there will not be enough forest to produce sufficient oxygen to support high quality life. For the forests are the lungs of the Earth, breathing in carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) and exhaling oxygen (O). When the trees are felled, and again when they are burned, they contribute to the mass of carbon dioxide, the principal global warming gas. Recent analyses of fossilized amber have shown that their air bubbles contained 38% oxygen. Today the average oxygen content of air is 19%, which suggests that the human body was designed to operate at twice today's concentration of oxygen. In some larger cities the oxygen content has deteriorated to as low as 12%.

Crucially, though still little understood, forests create the environment for the propagation of water, the 'first-born' of the energies of life, as Schauberger puts it, and they moderate the climate, making it cooler in summer and warmer in winter. They are also responsible for the mineralization and fertilization of the surface soils, essential for the nutrition of higher life forms and, most important of all, the forests create the rich humus and bacterial life, the foundation of a rich biodiversity, which stores and recycles vast amounts of rainfall, preventing floods on lower land.<sup>3</sup>

## Tropical rainforests

Everyone who has the opportunity, before it is too late, should visit a tropical rainforest, for they are the priceless jewels of our ecosystem. Important not just for the incredible richness and variety of their fauna and flora, they have had a substantially modifying influence on the world's climate, helping to make most of the Earth pleasantly habitable and very productive. They were on four continents, but are now only about half their extent of 500 years ago: the South American is the most complete, at about 75% of its original size; the South-east Asian, from India, through Indo-China to Indonesia and Australia is about a third of what it was, and the African about 40% of its original size. The Central American has virtually disappeared.

More than twice as much of the Sun's energy reaches the Earth's surface at the tropics as in high latitudes where the Sun's angle above the horizon is very low. The tropical rainforests of the world act as heat pumps, transferring to higher latitudes some of the enormous energy they generate, thus evening out the temperature difference. Without them, the equatorial regions would be much hotter, and the higher latitudes much colder. The larger the mass of a tropical rainforest, the more effective it is as a heat pump.

Now that we know, from a study of the Amazonian rainforest, how the heat pump works, it is possible to conjecture that the African continent would not have been nearly as dry as it is today. In South-East Asia the destruction has reached cataclysmic proportions, with a free-for-all between corrupt local interests and greedy multinational companies who are also extracting minerals at a fast pace, particularly in Borneo, where most of the virgin forests, theoretically protected, are likely to disappear within fifteen years.

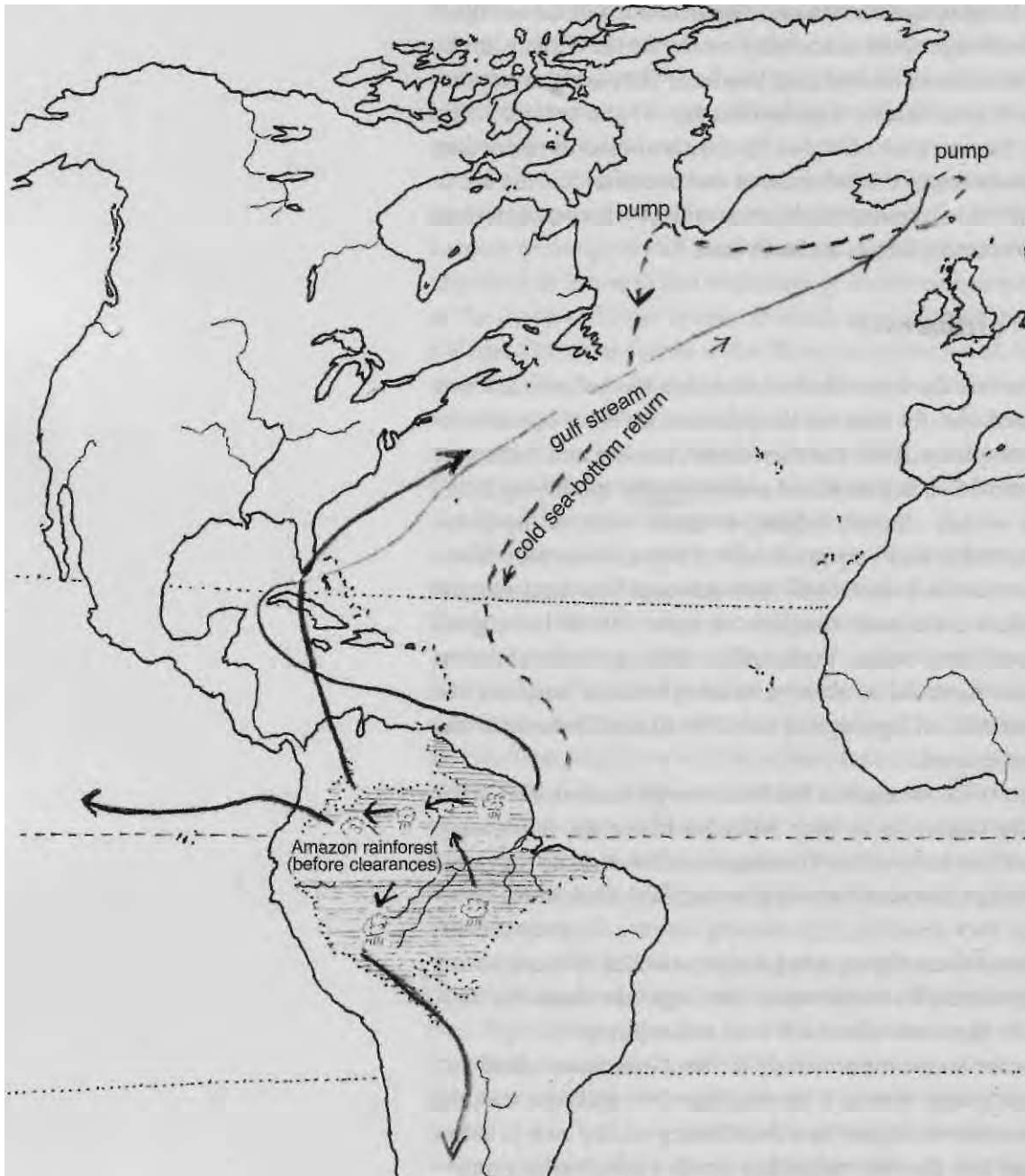


Fig. 13.1. The Amazon heat engine and the North Atlantic.

The Amazon Basin is the big heat engine that controls the climate of the Northern Hemisphere, but only when the tropical rainforest is largely complete. See Note 13.3 (p. 274) for how the Gulf Stream pump works, and the danger of its failure due to fresh water run-off from the Greenland icecap. Note 13.7 explains how the Amazonian heat engine works.

Within the last decade both droughts and storms have, for example in Australia, become consistently more severe. With the accelerated destruction of the forest, the climatic future of the region looks grim. Amazonia contains two-thirds of the world's surviving tropical rainforest, representing about 30% of all the biological material on the land.<sup>4</sup> You can imagine that when all four tropical rain forests were intact, they must have contained the greater part of the plant and animal life on Earth.

The released energy drives the great air masses across the Amazon basin to the Andes, recycling the rain and evapo-transpiration several times in a leapfrogging process (see Fig. 13.1). The airflow then splits into three: the southern part is deflected as far as Patagonia; the central part flows over the Andes into the Pacific, continuing west as the trade winds; the northern airflow crosses the Caribbean, and helps to drive the Gulf Stream north-eastwards to Europe.<sup>6</sup> Rainforests act as thermal engines, rainfall stimulators and as regulators of atmospheric and oceanic systems. They moderate the climate of the whole Earth and help to make it habitable.

The Amazon Basin, which comprises 7 million km<sup>2</sup> of rainforest, is the biggest and most efficient energy transformer on Earth<sup>7</sup>; it is self-maintaining when complete, but 25% has already been lost in the last 35 years. Five million km<sup>2</sup> lie in Brazil which has recently unveiled an accelerated development plan (see below) that would result in the loss of a further 20% by 2020 (a total loss of forest of 45%!). There is a critical size of the Amazonian rainforest below which this complex heat engine and rainfall distributor will fail. Some authorities claim that if it shrinks to much less than the present 75% of its original area, the forest will not be able to perform these critical functions effectively, resulting in more hostile weather patterns and drought across the globe.<sup>8</sup>

Areas that have been clear-felled put at risk the remaining forest for many miles from the edge of the deforested area, rendering the marginal area more susceptible to die-back due to the local increase in temperature. In fact, the Amazonian forest through deforestation is generally losing its ability to withstand the worldwide temperature increase created by global warming. At some point, perhaps in the next twenty years (or sooner under present Brazilian plan), a critical point could be reached, when massive die-back could cause this vital energy transformer to fail.

Preservation of this precious forest is a tough battle. In June 2000, the biggest landowners in Brazil who control 50% of the agricultural land, pushed a draft law through the Brazilian senate committee which would have allowed a 25% increase in annual rates of clearing and burning of the forest. An international email campaign amongst environmentalists, instantly mounted, generated hundreds of thousands of signatures, forcing the Congress to back down. Less than a year later however, the Brazilian government launched the much more ambitious Avanca Brasil plan to develop most of Amazonia, with new highways, even railroads; new settlements and extraction of minerals and timber. The whole region will be transformed in the next twenty years, with the remains of the forest chopped into strips and blocks with little chance of survival. This unbelievably irresponsible policy can be stopped only by mass international protest.

## Forestry

The death of the forests is only the tip of the iceberg and is a reflection of the deeper deterioration in humankind itself

Ernst Krebs

If a forest's climate changes over hundreds or thousands of years, the types of trees that grow in it will gradually change, without threatening the survival of the forest. However, if the rate of climate change accelerates, as it is doing today, certain species disappear before new species can take hold. The forest starts to lose its vitality and will gradually deteriorate into an arid wasteland.

The modern science of forestry began in the early nineteenth century. Napoleon in his passage over the Alps removed an unbelievable number of great trees, and the Swiss were determined to restore the damage. Less concerned with mass production than we are today, they insisted that planting must be of appropriate species. Though this sensitivity to landscape and the environment is still practised in Switzerland and Austria, in other countries forestry has deteriorated to the production of timber for cheap furniture, chipboard and firewood, as that is about all the poor quality of timber is good for.

Forestry today is about planting single species' woodland to be harvested within as short a time as possible (while the trees are mere adolescents) in order to maximize the profit. A redwood for



example, which has a lifespan of 2000 years, today is harvested after sixty years, before it can be fruitful, at about 3% of its potential. Without mature seed, the genetic base of the remaining seed has deteriorated to the point of infertility. The consequences of this madness are far-reaching, for as the biological diversity is depleted of its highest quality organisms, so too are the energies that support higher forms of life. The destruction of the forest brings with it the destruction of water, with appalling consequences.

## Monoculture

If you go into a typical plantation, it is impenetrable, dark, and feels dead — a veritable green desert. No birds sing nor animals scurry, and there is little opportunity for any other plants to grow. Those that do are removed on the theory that they take away nourishment from the trees. In fact their absence increases the competition. The individual trees are all of the same age and species; they vie with each other for space and for nutrients (of which there is a limited amount for each species), for their roots go down to the same level, creating a hard pan of salts which prevents access to the valuable minerals and energized groundwater below. There is only a certain amount of each element and chemical compound available which is suitable for that species and all the trees whose lives are wholly dependent on them must fight to get it.

It is hardly surprising that the wood from such a plantation is of very poor quality. You might compare the composition of a human community to a forest. If all the individual humans were clones of each other, and there were no elder statesmen or wise elders, how creatively barren and spiritually impoverished would be that community! These young trees are clear-felled, leaving a scene of devastation, with the valuable soil vulnerable to erosion. Students of forestry do not yet learn the purpose of a natural forest, nor about biodiversity, which is the keystone of Nature's order.

Without natural forest, higher forms of life on this planet would not have been able to develop. Apart from oxygenating the atmosphere and replenishing the water, both of which sustain life, it contains the vital pyramid of the different levels of life, without which creation would degenerate, as it is doing in our time. By a mysterious process, forests encourage rainfall; appropriate trees planted in

an arid or desert environment devoid of rainfall will often cause rain to fall, nourishing the trees, and starting the process of healing that environment.

## Biodiversity

A natural, undisturbed forest has a rich diversity in colour and form that brings a sense of inner tranquillity and peace. With our warped sense of order we see the profusion of life as chaotic, whereas in fact it is in the highest state of order. Order in Nature arises from a sensitive state of balance in a highly complex ecosystem. What we often recognize as ordered is usually sterile and uniform.

The natural forest is a community of vast numbers of species of plants, animals and micro-organisms which cannot flourish or even survive without each other. This interdependence is something we still little understand, and the tragedy is that, with the disappearance of the tropical rainforests, we shall lose the vital laboratory that is the most complex ecosystem on Earth. They contain literally millions of species of fauna and flora, most of which we have not yet been able to study. Science does not yet fully understand either the full importance of biodiversity, nor how it is achieved, yet its preservation is essential to our salvation. There is a rapidly decreasing number of places in the world to study it, and they are hastily being converted to monoculture or to arable land, the exterminators of biodiversity.

The rainforest has many layers of trees and shrubs, the high trees, the overstorey, protecting those below that need shade. The trees with deep root systems bring up valuable minerals and nutrients from below, beyond the reach of the more shallow-rooted. The micro-organisms on the forest floor thrive on the rich variety of leaves and provide valuable nourishment for all the plants.

The ground remains cool and moist due to the protection of the trees overhead and the rich spongy humus can retain up to 85% of the rain, which recharges the water table and allows the full circulation of groundwater. This essential element of the natural forest is an early victim to deforestation for, when exposed to the elements, the ground surface quickly deteriorates, its ability to hold water compromised — for warm ground sheds the rain like concrete — which results in floods in the lands below.

The trees that grow the tallest, or on the outer edge of the forest

are equipped to withstand the heat and direct sunlight. They in turn protect those that are more delicate and light-sensitive, and the young trees that need the CO<sub>2</sub>-rich environment and coolness of the lower layers of the forest.

Those trees and shrubs that are sensitive to light and heat are shielded from degenerative effects by varieties of tree whose structure is designed to resist the heating. By the time the mother tree dies, its young are ready to take over the role of their parents. Because trees are allowed to mature and live out their full cycle, their seeds are of the highest quality, which ensures that the forest stays in good heart. Nature here, with this rich variety, is in a productive state of balance, what Schauberger calls 'changeable, unstable equilibrium.'

Clearly only Nature, whose very foundation is interconnectedness, can truly create biodiversity, albeit slowly. Humanity, now the dominant species, if it is to survive, must replace its present methods of cultivation, for forestry or food, with radically different methods that are sustainable. The most promising experiments to this end have been made by Permaculture, an environmental movement founded by Bill Mollison and David Holmgren in Australia in 1974.<sup>9</sup> They have demonstrated how to create an integrated environment of plants that grow best in association with one another, protecting each other from pests.

In these artificially created natural habitats, horticulture, forestry and animal husbandry are combined into a harmonious and sustainable whole. Shelter belts of trees are planted to protect the cultivated plots. The available water, the microclimate and the soil conditions are taken into account. Each human community is in this way able gradually to become more self-sufficient. Permaculture methods have been introduced, with great success, into countries like India where the levels of poverty often restrict the ability of people to feed themselves. Natural methods of composting and fertilization are used instead of artificial fertilizers.

High quality hardwoods are still coming out of equatorial and temperate forests and used for fine furniture and musical instruments. Soon these resources will be exhausted. Where else are we to find such fine wood? Since mass production has become the norm, understanding has been lost of the natural processes required to produce high-quality timber. Vast areas of land are cleared of trees

completely, exposing the soil to the direct heat and light of the Sun. This raises the ground temperatures, the delicate soil-capillaries are destroyed which deliver nutrients and moisture to the soil — and the groundwater table sinks. Hardwoods will not be used in the replanting, as they require too long to mature for commercial exploitation. Reforestation is generally of softwoods such as pine, for contemporary forestry is not interested in quality or in long-term investment.

## Energy in the forest

The Sun's energy reaches the Earth's surface as a full spectrum of light waves. In a natural, mixed forest, this energy is transformed into creative growth, the various plants absorbing different parts of the spectrum. The outcome of this is the production of good water, a humus layer teeming with bacterial life (which is an efficient counter to pollution), and an overall coolness and feeling of harmony. In Nature, a function that maintains any system (e.g. a forest) in a state of stable health and balance is the outer expression of an inner creative force. It is significant that medicinal plants will grow only in a healthy forest where the biodiversity is greatest.

A monocultured woodland, on the other hand, absorbs only a part of the light spectrum, the balance being given off as ambient heat. The Sun's energy is provided to create balanced life forms. If it cannot fulfil its creative functions, it becomes destructive, in this case overheating the monocultured trees. The energies are not balanced, and this discord affects all the creatures. The pulsation and harmonious interaction of the energies are disrupted, encouraging disease and disharmony. Schauberger showed that highly ordered and diverse systems lose their stability when their environment suffers deterioration, indicating that we could expect moral and spiritual deterioration in the human community.

In the human body a blood temperature of 37°C (98.4°F) is regarded as being healthy. Should it rise to 38.5°C (103.1°F), symptoms of distress are felt and we become susceptible to infection by life-forms that are normally dormant in the body, but which become activated between, say 38.2°C (100.6°F) and 38.6°C (101°F). The body will usually respond with a fever, which drives the temperature higher, destroying the bacteria or virus that

brought the infection. Schauberger found that it is the same with trees. Their health is stable within a narrow range. When a tree becomes overheated, it becomes susceptible to parasites and fungal attack. It is not the parasites that cause the sickness, but the changes in temperature and energy balance.

# 14. The Life and Nature of Trees

## Trees in the biosphere

Humans have always had a very close interdependence with trees.<sup>1</sup> Hominids came on the scene at one of those rarer times in Earth's history when a forest environment predominated. For the greater part of our short time on the planet, our ancestors grew up among trees. First they would slash and burn small clearings in the forest in order to grow crops. Wood was the greatest single resource to allow population to expand; it was the principal source of fuel and of building materials. These early societies were intimately connected with their environment; their shamans mediated with the life forces and the guardian spirits. The wildwood was treated with reverence.

Part of the forest was earmarked for growing sustainable wood supplies. Mostly this was for coppicing, when the branches are cut just above ground level every five to eight years. This practice produces an abundance of multipurpose straight branches and is eminently sustainable, encouraging re-growth.

The elders and the shamans selected special stands of trees for ritual purposes, for worship and for thanksgiving. These sacred groves were their churches and cathedrals, with altars, nave and cloisters. Later, many groups moved onto the savannahs, but societies like the Druids (dru means wood, wid, knowledge) in Roman times had complex tree classifications and tree medicines. The wildwood is a magical place, and it is not surprising that there is an immense richness of lore about the healing properties of different types of tree.

There is an area in Gloucestershire, in the heart of England, still known as the Wychwood that was one of the last stands of primitive forest to disappear to the demands of building a wooden navy for English control of the seas. To this day there remains in this area an awareness of the magical qualities of the wildwood, and a memory of the rituals of healing and of working with the nature spirits.

The tree is at the top of the botanical ladder, and is like a gateway between the human and plant kingdoms. The forest is a community

with a hierarchy among the trees. Each area has its wise trees or grandfather/grandmother trees. The older parent trees succour and nourish the young saplings.

Water is born from the fusion of molecular hydrogen and oxygen below the surface of the Earth, through the medium of subtle energies. The tree, with its roots deep in the ground, is intimately connected with the evolution of water. As we have seen, water takes the form of blood, lymph, sap and milk, the life-giving and maintaining fluids which are the basis for the growth and development of all life. Every living organism is therefore a column or container of water.

## The form of a tree

All trees have a root system that absorbs nutrients from the soil and anchors the trunk; trunk and branches that define the shape of the tree and raise the crown to the sunlight; and leaves that perform the essential functions of photosynthesis, and making chlorophyll and carbohydrates.

The roots are the complement to the branches, securing the tree against wind and absorbing water that contains the energies and the minerals the tree needs to be healthy; they also play a vital part in the role of the tree as a biocondenser of energy. At the ends of the roots are magical organisms called protoplasms that convert the minerals from the inorganic to the organic state that the tree is able to use. There is a complex interaction between the roots and the bacteria, fungi and other micro-organisms in the soil, which is part of the energy exchange between the tree and the earth domain.

The trunk is formed for the most part from dead cells that give it rigidity and stability. The living parts are: the cambium that produces new cork or bark to offset what is shed on the outside; the phloem with fine capillaries that carry oxygen, nitrogen etc, down to the roots, and the xylem, whose coarser channels allow ionized minerals, salts, trace elements, carbonic acid or  $\text{CO}_2$  to flow upwards. Phloem and xylem are also found in the structure of leaves, where they perform a similar function.

The crown is the most noticeable part of the tree, comprising branches, twigs, leaves, flowers and fruit or nuts. The leaves receive from the earth minerals and trace elements,  $\text{CO}_2$  from the atmosphere and the Sun's energy to drive the process of photosynthesis;

the by-product of which is oxygen, vital for the sustenance of the animal kingdom and for other life-giving processes.

## Trees and humans — a symbiotic relationship

The life history of a tree is also the life history of water. Trees are the highest form of plant life, as human beings are of animals. Humans and trees are marvellously interdependent (see Fig. 14.1). Trees, through the process of photosynthesis, exhale the oxygen we need for survival, and in return absorb the carbon dioxide we exhale. Of their total production of oxygen, 60% is released in daylight, the balance being used by the tree or plant itself during the night to produce cool oxidations that help to build the actual structure of the plant. As with so many of Nature's interdependencies, this is a symbiotic exchange, a cooperative transaction. Were there no trees and other vegetation there would be no animal, human or micro-organic life on this planet. Through our mindless deforestation, we have already reduced the amount of oxygen and water available to us.

Fig. 14.1 (below). The symbiotic relationship of animal and vegetable kingdoms.<sup>2</sup>

<p><b>An ANIMAL is:</b>            A combustion or oxidation apparatus            Possesses the faculty of locomotion</p>		<p><b>A VEGETABLE is:</b>            An apparatus for reduction or deoxidation            Is rooted to one location</p>
<b>Burns</b>	carbon hydrogen ammonium carbonic acid water oxide of ammonium nitrogen oxygen Neutralized nitrogenous matter fatty matter starchy matters, gum and sugar heat electricity	<b>Reduces</b>
<b>Exhales or gives off</b>		<b>Fixes</b>
<b>Consumes</b>		<b>Produces</b>
<b>Produces</b>		<b>Absorbs Abstracts</b>
Restores its elements to air and earth Transforms organized into mineral matter		Derives its elements from air and earth Transforms mineral into organized matter

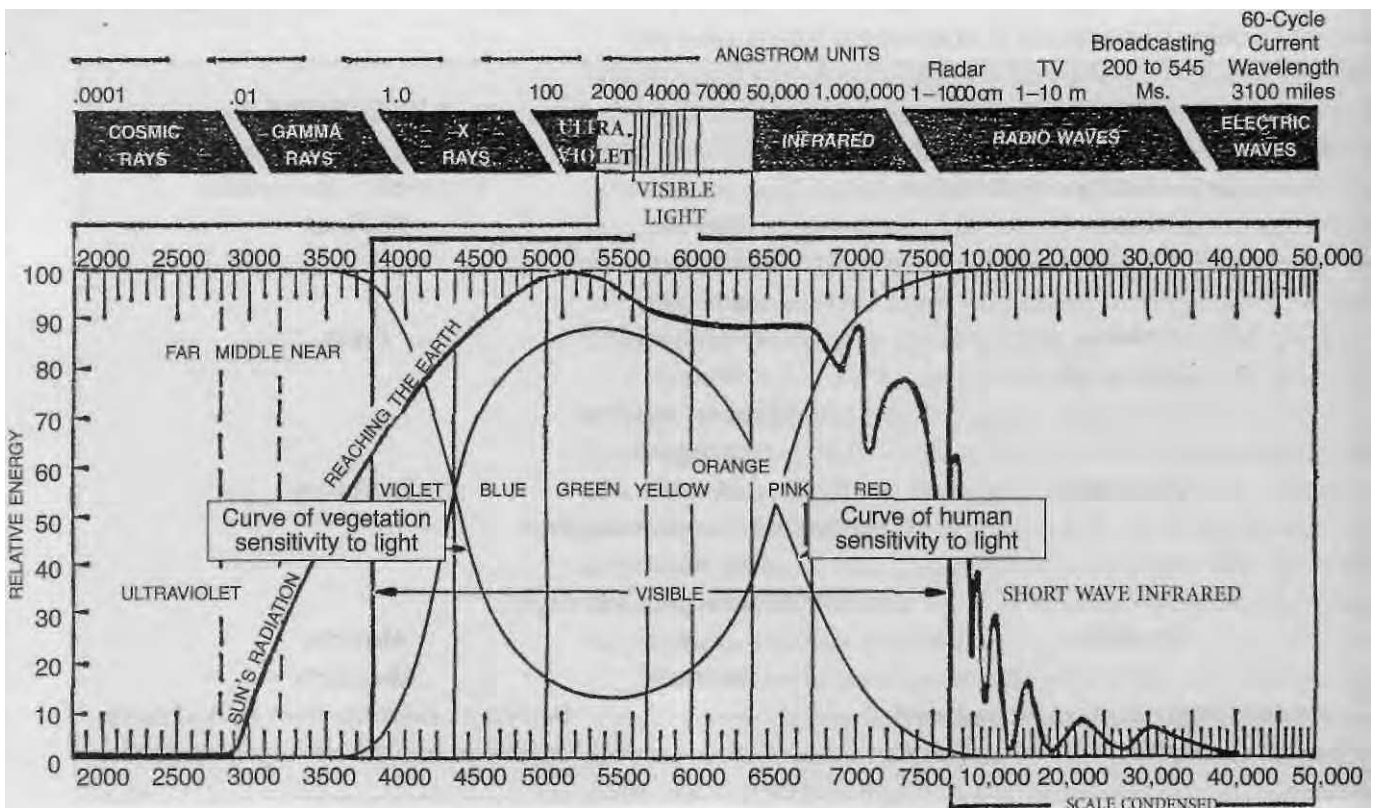


## Trees and colour

Another symbiotic relationship between trees and human beings is found with colour. The graph below (Fig. 14.2) shows the relative intensities of radiation in the electromagnetic spectrum, from the ultraviolet on the left through the visual spectrum to the infrared on the right. The darkest line shows the intensity of solar radiation relative to frequency or to the various shades of colour. In the visible part of the spectrum there is high human sensitivity to the green and low to the red and ultraviolet, whereas with the tree it is the opposite. A tree's sensitivity to light is a mirror to the human's.

The highest intensity of solar radiation is found in the green part of the spectrum. The tree cannot use these frequencies for its growth, for the greens induce dormancy. Whatever colour or frequency is not absorbed, is reflected. A red surface, for example,

Fig. 14.2. The electromagnetic spectrum.



absorbs all colours except its particular shade of red. Many metabolic processes are triggered by specific frequencies, and if the required frequency of light is not available in sufficient quantity, then the response is blocked.

A tree will absorb most in the ultraviolet or the red to infrared portion of the spectrum. It is insensitive to green light and, if placed under green light, appears to be in a state of suspended animation. The light sensitivity of the human eye on the other hand is exactly the opposite. It is insensitive to the ultraviolet and infrared frequencies, but very sensitive to the colour green.

Because we cannot observe any green in sunlight itself, without trees and other vegetation, green would be missing in our experience. Green is a very soothing, healing colour for humans, sedating the nervous system and psyche. Its absence in large cities can make us irritable and even violent. Trees and humans have a symbiotic relationship with colour.

## The physical nature of trees

The structure of the tree is a record of its various stages of growth, and this is mirrored in the movement of sap over the full span of the tree's existence. As the life energy of the tree recedes with ageing, the sap sinks lower and lower, progressively drawing back from the uppermost branches, which die off. In many cases this is accelerated by human activity and the tree is said to suffer from 'die-back.' Like an elderly human being, the tree's structure stiffens with age, and like an elderly human, its consciousness falls back through all the stages of its previous development, perhaps re-living its earlier experiences.

It is important in times of climate change to realize that the tree is probably the organism least adapted to rapid change. The average lifetime of a tree is the longest after rocks, and therefore many centuries must pass before any real adaptation to changed conditions can occur. Even minor environmental changes, to which other shorter-living things can adapt, can cause trees stress and vulnerability to disease, so that they wither and die.

As long as too much heat does not stress them, trees will moderate heat through their absorption of CO<sub>2</sub> and their evapo-transpiration. When the forest cover is substantial the trees distribute water vapour evenly through the atmosphere, ensuring a balanced

distribution of temperature. The evaporating area of a mature beech tree, for example, with some seven million leaves, totals about 1.47 hectares (3.6 acres).

Trees also break the strength of the wind, creating shelter for other life forms and lesser species of vegetation. The planting of shelter-belts (best in spiral form) reduces both the wind speed and the dehydration of the soil, creating microclimates that help the soil against erosion through the provision of additional humus and protection. Indeed shelter belts can influence the evaporation rate over cultivated land by as much as 30 metres upwind and 120 metres downwind, and Canadian research has shown that farms with a third of their land as shelter belts are more productive than farms of equivalent area where there are no trees at all.

These shelter belts also trap carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>), the heaviest naturally occurring atmospheric gas, found mostly in the lowest levels of the atmosphere, and an essential component of photosynthesis. Increased CO<sub>2</sub> under the right conditions will produce stronger photosynthesis. When trees and hedgerows between fields are removed, productivity falls, because this causes a fall in carbon dioxide. Trees should be revered as much as water, for together they are both are the givers of life.

## Tree classification

Trees can be classified generally into seven major categories. These can be subdivided according to latitude, altitude, whether they are light-demanding or shade-demanding species (the former having a thick, rough bark and the latter a smooth thin bark), and whether they are hardwood or softwood, broad-leafed, conifer, evergreen and so on.

Before we examine trees and their growth in relation to these categories in more detail, let us look at the specific contribution that trees make to the general environment. We give the example of a 100 year-old tree, whose extraordinary performance was calculated by Walter Schauberger in the 1970s in relation to the average output of European species:

During the course of its life, a hundred-year-old tree:

- a) Has processed and fixed the amount of carbon-dioxide contained in 18 million cubic metres of natural air in the form of about 2500 kg of pure carbon (C).
- b) Has photo-chemically converted 9,100 kg of CO<sub>2</sub> and 3,700 litres of H<sub>2</sub>O.
- c) Has stored up circa 23 million kilogram-calories (a calorific value equivalent to 3,500 kg of hard pit coal).
- d) Has made available for the respiration of human and beast 6,600 kg of molecular oxygen (O<sub>2</sub>).
- e) Against the forces of gravity, has drawn from its roots right up to its crown and evaporated into the atmosphere at least 2,500 tonnes of water, every tree is therefore a water-column and if such a column, which continually supplies and recharges the atmosphere with water, is cut down, then this amount of water is lost.
- f) Thereby fixing a mechanical equivalent of heat equal to the calorific value of 2,500 kg of coal.
- g) Has supplied a member of the consumer society with oxygen sufficient for 20 years, and its nature is such, that the larger it grows, the more oxygen it produces.

In view of such achievements, who in the future could value this tree merely for its timber?

The combustion of 100 litres of petrol consumes about 230 kg of oxygen. That is, after a trip of barely 30,000 km (18,640 miles) (9.6 lit/1000 km), this tree's entire 100 year production of oxygen has been squandered.

Driving an average size car 30,000 km (18,640 miles) = 100 years of oxygen production.

If a person chooses to breathe for three years, to burn 400 lit of petrol or heating oil, or 400 kg of coal, then the production through photosynthesis of 1 tonne of oxygen is required.

1 tonne of O<sub>2</sub> = the O<sub>2</sub> content of 3,620 m<sup>3</sup> of air (+15°C at latm)

The photosynthetic production of 1 tonne of oxygen necessitates:

- a) The building up of 0.935 tonnes C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>12</sub>O<sub>6</sub> (carbohydrate),
- b) which process requires 1.37 tonnes CO<sub>2</sub> (carbon-dioxide) and 0.56 tonnes H<sub>2</sub>O (water)
- c) The transpiration of 230 to 930 tonnes H<sub>2</sub>O
- d) Light energy equal to 527 x 10<sup>6</sup> quanta ( $v = 440 \times 10^{12}$ ) which represents 3.52 million kilocalories.

All this is no small achievement for a single organism!

[Source: Walter Schauburger]

## Light- and shade-demanding trees

There are two types of tree with very different requirements of light (see Fig. 14.3). The effect of light on tree growth has two principal energy outcomes. Partly it determines the structure of the timber and, secondly, it influences the form and character of the tree itself, depending on whether it is a shade-demanding or a light-demanding species; and these are also related to latitude and altitude.

Trees mirror the quality of light in their natural habitat. If the frequency of green is harmful to them, they will use green leaves as they will screen out or repel that frequency. In general, if the incident light has a greater proportion of high-frequency, high-energy, ultraviolet light, in other words hard light, the wood will be soft. Conversely, where there is a greater preponderance of low-frequency, low-energy, infrared, soft light, the wood will be hard.<sup>4</sup>

Australia's native timbers, notable for their hardness, are a good example of this. Because of Australia's position on the Tropic of Capricorn in the southern hemisphere, the intensity of infrared light is greatest when Australia experiences its high summer, and when the Earth is also at its closest to the Sun at Perihelion in early January. This is increased by the infrared radiation resulting from Australia's semi-desert condition. Along with other countries in the southern hemisphere, Australia is therefore exposed to more intense infrared light than countries in the north which experience more moderate conditions.

The new growth of many species of Australian trees presents a particular mixture of red, violet and blue hues, in order to resist the potentially harmful penetration of those light frequencies. In Europe and the temperate latitudes of North America, on the other hand, with their very different light conditions, most new growth is light green in colour, with some exceptions (like the copper beech).

To summarize: Softwood species, such as pine, are mostly found in zones of high-energy, high-frequency 'hard' radiation, at low altitudes in high latitudes, and at high altitudes in low latitudes. Conversely hardwood trees, with some exceptions, are generally found at low altitudes in low latitudes (tropical rainforests) and at low to middle altitudes at low to middle latitudes — zones of low frequency, 'soft' radiation.

Tree types are determined to a great extent by: latitude and altitude.

- (1) LIGHT-DEMANDING timbers — THICK, generally rough bark (e.g. oak, black walnut)
- (2) SHADE-DEMANDING timbers — THIN, generally smooth bark (e.g. beech, birch)
- (3) HARDWOODS — thick (e.g. oak, jarrah) and thin bark (e.g. walnut, cherry, maple, red alder)
- (4) SOFTWOODS — thick (e.g. redwood, pine, spruce) and thin bark e.g. (hemlock, fir, larch)

	GENERAL	DISTRIBUTION*
(5) CONIFEROUS (evergreen) (polar latitudes) (high altitudes)	(6) DECIDUOUS (intermittent) (median latitudes) (median altitudes)	(7) RAINFOREST (evergreen) (equatorial latitudes) (low altitudes)

\*These boundaries are not necessarily clearly defined.

High altitude trees such as spruce have a relatively short lifespan. Shortwave ultraviolet light, with its higher energy and intensity, has a faster dynamic motion with a smaller radius and shorter period tend to favour evergreens with soft wood. In contrast, low latitude or low altitude trees like the beech, where long wavelength, low-energy, low-frequency, less intense light predominates, has harder wood and a longer lifespan.

Contemporary forestry practice requires trees to grow rapidly in girth, putting on a profusion of branches. What this produces is a great quantity of poor quality timber, full of knots. The disregard by forestry of the light factor is one of the causes of the deterioration of forests.

The increase of tree diseases in both logged natural forests and in plantations is a direct result of the exposure to direct sunlight and heat of a shade-demanding species. There are two ways to determine whether a tree is a light- or a shade-demander:

Shade-demanding species have thin smooth bark; growing normally in the cooler inner forest, they do not need to insulate themselves from the heating effect of direct sunlight. Light-demanding trees on the other hand have thick, coarse, thermally insulating bark, which is Nature's way of protecting them from heat and direct sunlight.

Fig. 14.3. Tree type distribution.

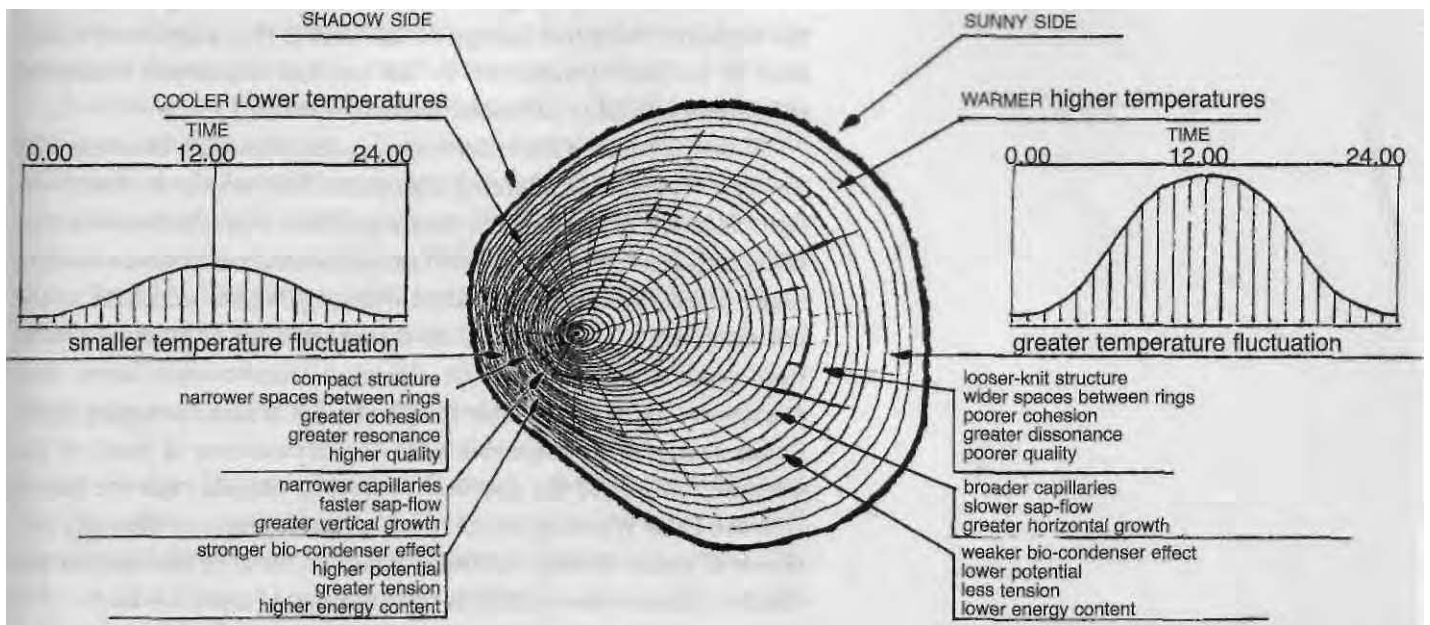
Shade-demanding trees grow additional branches to protect the trunk when exposed to light and heat, whereas light-demanders do not. The shade-demanding tree is rather like an introvert, reserved and extremely sensitive to external influences. They tend towards introspection, mental activity (predominant development of the tree's crown) and they are inwardly preoccupied and absorbed. They need a certain shielding and protection, peace and quiet to develop to maturity and their full potential.

The light-demanding trees on the other hand are the extroverts that can happily stand on their own, reflecting their need for light and space around them. They tend to be more physically active, with branches radiating outwards. They are independent, outgoing individuals, which are generally more capable of standing on their own feet without support.

Viktor Schauberger showed that the maintenance of an even inner temperature is vital to all trees, as to all organisms. When sunlight penetrates the trunk, the tree's metabolism is disrupted. It becomes overheated, the sap no longer flows as it should and the general structure of the tree becomes very coarse, leading to malformations, cancerous growths in the interior, and so on. All shade-demanding trees, and under certain circumstances light-demanders too, will do everything they can to maintain or reinstate their preferred inner temperature.

This can be seen after a forest fire, when the trees that survive quickly cover themselves with a profusion of small shoots. The fire has blackened their bark so that, instead of reflecting the heat, it absorbs it and other radiation. Without protective cover the interior of the tree would quickly overheat and the flow of sap would reduce, no longer reaching the highest branches.

Every species of tree has its particular pattern of energy frequencies, which determines its shape and supporting metabolism. If you like, Nature has given it a special niche in a particular environment. An increase in temperature changes its microclimate and the plant's naturally established metabolism can no longer operate healthily, and its wave pattern is disturbed. Instead of 'healthy tree,' there is 'sick tree + parasites.' It is important to understand that the parasites do not cause the sickness, but come as a result of it. Viktor Schauberger called them 'Nature's health police' because of their role in removing all organisms that are not evolutionarily viable. The tree will rid itself of parasites once its metabolism has returned to healthy balance.



## Light-induced growth

You can tell the age of a tree by counting the growth rings across the cut trunk. These annual rings also tell you something about the conditions under which it grew, and about the climatic variations. Conventionally, a wider space between rings is regarded as a good year for the tree, because it put on more growth; but greater quantity does not mean better quality. What it actually signifies is a tree under heat stress. This is best seen in Fig. 14.4; where the rings are widely spaced on the sunny side of the trunk, the heat caused the wood to expand; on the shaded side the metabolism has not been disturbed and the annual rings are close together.

In a tree that grows in the shade with good soil conditions, the sapducts are virtually straight, producing strong vertical growth, and the timber has what might be termed a 'resonant' quality.<sup>5</sup>

## Man-made depredations

Viktor measured the biomagnetic energies in a tree that are responsible not only for its physical upward growth, but also for transferring energies from the Earth to the atmosphere. The tree is in fact a

Fig. 14.4. Tree rings showing unbalanced growth.



biocondenser, reconciling the Sun's positive, affirming energy with the negative, receptive energy of the Earth. This important role is seen at its most productive in the tropical rainforest, where the enormous fecundity of Nature is best observed.

Biomagnetism, a life enhancing process that puts bioelectricity to work, is present in all living organisms. Man-made electrical systems interfere with Nature's biomagnetism. The shortwave emissions (microwaves) of the world's communication systems have, in many places, seriously interfered with organic life on Earth in the last sixty years. This is seen with the appearance of human cancers near radar establishments or electrical transmission lines, with microwave ovens or portable telephones.<sup>6</sup> It is also damaging trees. Radar seems to be responsible for the destruction of parts of the German forest, and the sub-arctic forest in Canada near the line of Defence Early Warning installations.<sup>7</sup> Viktor observed the early evidence of radar damage to trees; however, most of the destructive effects of microwave pollution have developed since he died.

Microwave transmitters operate with wavelengths between 2cm and 50cm, exposure to which can inflict biological damage. Microwaves have an energetically disruptive effect, triggering deteriorating changes in crystal structure. An example of the amount of free ambient energy being generated can be seen from the use of a neon-filled tube to test the system's working. Held parallel to the direction of transmission from a microwave transmitter, or a high-tension powerline, its spontaneous ignition confirms the ambient energy's strength.<sup>8</sup>

Similar disintegrative effects are found with domestic microwave ovens that operate on a wavelength approximately the same as that of radar. They generate vibrational heat in the molecules of the food.<sup>9</sup> Hydrogen, one of the constituent atoms of the water molecule, has a wavelength of 21cm, well within the bandwidth of current microwave transmissions. It is therefore likely to be damaged by the excessive microwave-induced heating. In the tree this leads to the breakdown of the structure of the sap, which like our blood, is about 80% water. This process also increases the amount of available oxygen within the tree, which results in unnatural metabolic acceleration. The tree, being rooted to the spot, unfortunately cannot escape the radiation emitted by microwave towers and high-tension transmission grids.

Even though we are more mobile, humans too can become

increasingly prone to blood disorders if exposed excessively to such radiation. People living in close proximity to high-tension cables have been shown to have a higher than normal incidence of disease. According to a study of the Commonwealth Scientific and Industrial Research Organization (CSIRO), an increase in tree ring width of Huon pines in Australia, more rapid in the last forty years than in any other period since AD 900, suggests that this internal microwave-induced warming is accelerating. We don't know what happened then; there may have been either a series of gigantic volcanic eruptions or a massive increase in cosmic radiation.

## The importance of photosynthesis

Nature works through pulsation, through inhaling and exhaling, like the ocean tides on the shore. The rising Sun draws up the tree's sap charged with trace-elements, gases and minerals, to support the process of photosynthesis and its conversion of CO<sub>2</sub> into oxygen (the inbreath). Photosynthesis, however, is intimately connected with the amount and the quality of the available light. When the level of light falls, then growth, photosynthesis and the creation of chlorophyll diminish and less oxygen is transformed and released into the atmosphere. Then the tide starts to ebb, and the sap ceases to transport the nutrients upwards.

We think of photosynthesis as the process of converting CO<sub>2</sub> to O<sub>2</sub> for us to breathe, but it serves two functions vital for the tree itself: to convert the nutritious sap into carbohydrates (which releases O<sub>2</sub>) and to produce evaporation in the form of oxygen and water to cool the tree and release oxygen into the environment. This is not the vaporization associated with sweating, but is the effect of energy concentration or densification. Magnesium is required, in addition to H<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub>, in order to make chlorophyll, the green protective pigment in the leaves, a third process which releases O<sub>2</sub>. These three processes all require light (see Fig. 15.6).

Exactly the same chemical formula that is required to produce chlorophyll, but without light (i.e. underground) also produces hydrogen (and magnesium carbonate). This free hydrogen is an essential ingredient for the production of water, the other being oxygen, which is provided by rainwater percolating into the ground. It is exciting to note that these two identical combinations of Mg, H<sub>2</sub>O and CO<sub>2</sub>, one with and the other without light,

are responsible for the two creators of life, water and photosynthesis (see Fig. 15.6).<sup>10</sup>

We have noted a correspondence between times in the past when forests predominated on the Earth, and with major evolutionary surges. It seems that trees have this magical role to fine-tune the proportion of atmospheric gases, particularly oxygen. The 'normal' proportions are O<sub>2</sub> (oxygen) 20.95%, CO<sub>2</sub> (carbon dioxide) 0.3%, N (nitrogen) 78.08% and rare gases 0.93%, though recent years have seen an increase in CO<sub>2</sub> and a decrease in O<sub>2</sub> due to human activities. When we say that life creates the atmosphere (effectively the 'greenhouse'), the symbiotic relationship is exceedingly complex and miraculous.

Fig. 14.5. Photosynthesis.

## PHOTOSYNTHESIS

Without plants there could be no life. Plants convert sunlight into food by a process known as photosynthesis. They extract carbon dioxide from the atmosphere, water from the soil and exhale oxygen:

- 1) Carbon dioxide (CO<sub>2</sub>) + Water (H<sub>2</sub>O) = Photosynthesis + O<sub>2</sub> ↑  
in this way carbon dioxide and hydrogen combine and molecular oxygen is released (vertical arrow)
- 2) CO<sub>2</sub> + H<sub>2</sub>O + LIGHT -> CH<sub>2</sub>O (theoretical carbohydrate) + O<sub>2</sub> ↑  
(C<sub>6</sub>H<sub>12</sub> O<sub>6</sub> = glucose, the simplest form of carbohydrate)
- 3) Mg + H<sub>2</sub>O + CO<sub>2</sub> + plus LIGHT -> Chlorophyll + O<sub>2</sub> ↑  
(green pigment + molecular oxygen)

The same elements in (3) above produce two important further reactions:

- (4) Mg + H<sub>2</sub>O + CO<sub>2</sub> - minus LIGHT -> MgCO<sub>3</sub> + H<sub>2</sub> ↑  
(magnesium carbonate + molecular hydrogen)
- or (5) Mg + H<sub>2</sub>CO<sub>3</sub> [carbonic acid] - minus LIGHT -> MgCO<sub>3</sub> + H<sub>2</sub> ↑  
(magnesium carbonate + molecular hydrogen)

In (4) and (5) the Mg can be replaced with calcium (Ca), which produces calcium carbonate (CaCO<sub>3</sub>) instead of magnesium carbonate, but with the same release of molecular hydrogen.

These two almost identical, but still different combinations of magnesium, CO<sub>2</sub> and H<sub>2</sub>O are the prerequisites for the two principal carriers of life, namely water and photosynthesis (creation of chlorophyll and carbohydrates). One of these takes place in daylight (the visible world) and the other in darkness (the invisible world). In the day zone, O<sub>2</sub> is released and the overall amount of oxygen increased, whereas in the night-zone, hydrogen is released, leading to the rebirth of water through its combination with oxygen.

## The creation of water

There is an important relationship between rainwater and trees. Raindrops absorb atmospheric oxygen, nitrogen and other trace-gases in their descent, but their downward spinning movement also generates intense bioelectric and biomagnetic fields. This creates an energy potential which is essentially life-endowing. When the raindrops fall on the leaves of the tree, the oxygen and other gases are absorbed along with the immaterial energies collected, stimulating activity and growth. For this reason plants respond with much greater vitality and activity after a fall of rain than to conventional systems of irrigation where these gases and energies are virtually absent, due to the far shorter fall distance.

It has frequently been observed that the planting of trees in arid or desert conditions causes an increase in rainfall. This is probably because chemicals that are a by-product of photosynthesis are emitted, which helps to generate clouds.<sup>11</sup> This is known to occur in the tropical rainforests, and it is likely to happen in other particularly warm areas. It is one of the most interesting feedback mechanisms that Gaia produces.

When the ground surface is cooler than the air (i.e. it has a positive temperature gradient) rainwater penetrates into the soil. The free oxygen is gradually absorbed by the surrounding soil, activating micro-organisms in the humus upper layers of the soil. As the rainwater sinks deeper into the substrata and continues to release the excess oxygen, it gradually cools towards the +4°C anomaly point. As we have seen, free hydrogen is now available with which the now very passive oxygen is able to combine in the cool conditions, giving birth to new water molecules.

This juvenile immature water, unpolluted by any other substances or ingredients, is born near the temperature when its density is highest, that is, about +4°C (39°F). It begins to rise up through the various energy-horizons (the most finely differentiated temperature strata), acquiring increasing 'information' in the form of subtle energies and resonances.

The water molecules become warmer as they ascend, absorbing salts, minerals and trace-elements on the journey. Becoming ionized in the process they can be taken up by the plants and their micro-organisms. Salt (sodium chloride), for example, is broken up

into its two components of chlorine (Cl) and sodium (Na), which develop opposite electrical charges when ionized. It is transformed from an 'inorganic' substance with no electric charge, into two substances which can be combined into organic form ready for combination with its complementary polarity.

The water has now become mature and can contribute life instead of seizing it, creating life-imparting macro water molecules whose nutrients are made more active by the increasingly available oxygen. As these molecules are drawn up through the capillaries of the plants or trees, their size is reduced, as energy and nutrients are passed to structures and chemical processes at different levels, contributing to growth activity. Their potency increases as the molecules become smaller until they are able to pass through the extremely minute foramen and stomata, when their energetic quality reaches a maximum. The greatest growth and maturation occurs at this workplace, the furthest extremities of the tree, plant or blade of grass.

## The maturation of water

The developmental journey from the deeper strata towards the surface transforms water from a seeking, 'taking' system into a ripe, information-rich 'giving' one, when it is ready to distribute the widest variety of ionized elements in homeopathic doses to the living systems of its environment. It is here that this alive water, rich with minerals and trace-elements, meets the next, young, 'taking,' information-seeking systems — the fine hair-roots of the plant systems and their micro-organisms, or 'microtransmuters.' The water is first taken up by the micro-organisms which transform the raw materials, elements, CO<sub>2</sub>, oxygen, nitrogen, etc. into larger molecules and fluid compounds ready for transport as larger molecules by the capillaries of the roots.

The roots eagerly use some of these nutrients for their own development, but the coarse macro-molecules are sucked towards the centre and deposited in order to build up the central structure of the plant or tree. This increasing, but slower flowing quantity of formative material is built into the tree structure up to the level of the ground-surface. Here is the threshold of the visible, energetic world, endowed with a higher dynamic and suffused with radiant, fertilizing energy of the Sun. This is the point where the two aspects

of the tree, the two systems of distribution, the seen and the unseen, meet and are united (see Fig. 15.6, p. 206).

In the human body, the arteries and veins narrow towards the capillaries and enlarge towards the heart. The blood circulation is managed by subtle differences in temperature and electric charge, by energy density and energetic activity. There are two principal, pulsating circulation systems; one to the lungs to renew oxygen and discharge CO<sub>2</sub> and water; the other from the heart to the rest of the body, delivering nutrients and oxygen to all parts of the body, on its return collecting and transporting CO<sub>2</sub> and waste matter.

The tree, however, has no pulsating heart. The 'pulsators' responsible for the movement of its sap are the Sun and the Moon. As the world rotates, the direction of the Sun's and the Moon's attraction fluctuates from above to below, through which a pulsation arises between inhaling and exhaling. During the day, the sap draws the energies up the tree ('inhaling'), while at night the energy withdraws to the root system (exhaling).

As the sap rises from the ground level, gradually the sap-ducts and capillaries begin to narrow and the coarser elements in the sap, unable to rise further, are built into the tree's structure at the point where their upward movement ceases. As the sap vessels get smaller, the faster the sap streams both upwards and downwards and the greater the homeopathic potential. Ultimately only the most minute particles, which are hardly to be counted as matter, stream up towards the crown or down to the roots with increasing spiral gyration, dynamic and energetic effect.

The growth activity is at a maximum at the extremities of crown and root zones, because all that is active here are the most highly potentiated homeopathic resonances and amounts of barely structured matter. This upward or downward stream of energy also has a nonmaterial, form-controlling aspect. At the outside edge of the growth process, the tree crown, energy radiates into the environment, a process of life giving life, while at the root zone the energetic polarity seems to be that of life seeking life.

A water molecule, when it reaches the crown, carries within it the highly active resonances of the trace elements previously taken up in the root zone. Refined to almost pure water again, with ultra-high potency and trace element overtone resonances, it arrives at the leaves' minute stomata. From these, it ascends into the atmosphere towards its energy and temperature anomaly

point at an altitude of 3-4000 metres. Here it is once more in a 'taking' mode, ready to take up the finer and more spiritual energies from the Sun and the cosmos.

This never ending water cycle over time brings a cumulative increase in 'information' which provides a fresh impulse for further processes and development that drive evolution.

# 15. The Metabolism of the Tree

All the processes that take place in water are reflected once again in the individual forms of vegetation. Viktor Schauberger

## Sap movement

Viktor Schauberger has transformed our understanding of the metabolism of the tree. He showed how the movement of the sap under the conditions of both natural growth and of unnatural light-induced growth is determined by the temperature gradient within the tree itself, and by the external light, heat and cold.

The solution, transport and deposition of nutrients, as we saw in Chapter 14, are functions of the temperature gradient. Salts and minerals are precipitated with cooling, when light and air are excluded; however, they are precipitated with heating when exposed to light and air. Under a positive temperature gradient, as the sap cools towards +4°C (39°F) or is maintained at this temperature, the highest quality nutrients are precipitated last. Under a strong negative temperature gradient and with light and heat, the opposite happens; only the lowest quality nutrients are expelled, the highest quality not being transported at all.

We saw that the growth of shade-demanding trees takes place largely in the crown where the air temperature is usually higher than at ground level. The tree's overall shape is cylindrical, with few lower branches, because there is no need to protect the trunk against light. Lacking horizontal lighting, the trunk does not suffer large temperature fluctuations, so it produces closely set annual rings. The temperature in the trunk reduces from the outside inwards, resulting in an even deposition of growth material, which means high quality and dense timber. These shade-demanders have a slender girth because of their strong vertical sap movement, high health and associated levitational energies, that in a mature tree enables it to withstand gales.

When a shade-demander is planted out in the open it has to cope with unnatural levels of light and heat, protecting itself as quickly as possible by sending out branches right down to the ground, at the



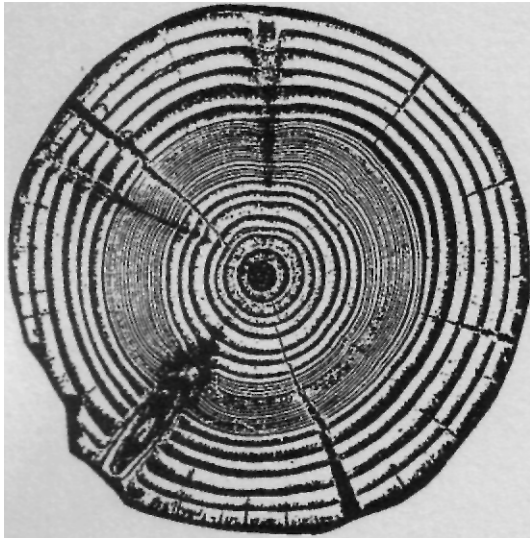


Fig. 15.1. Cross section through tree trunk. The tight inner rings show normal growth of a shade-demanding tree. The outer rings show evidence of too much exposure to sunlight, following its neighbours' removal.

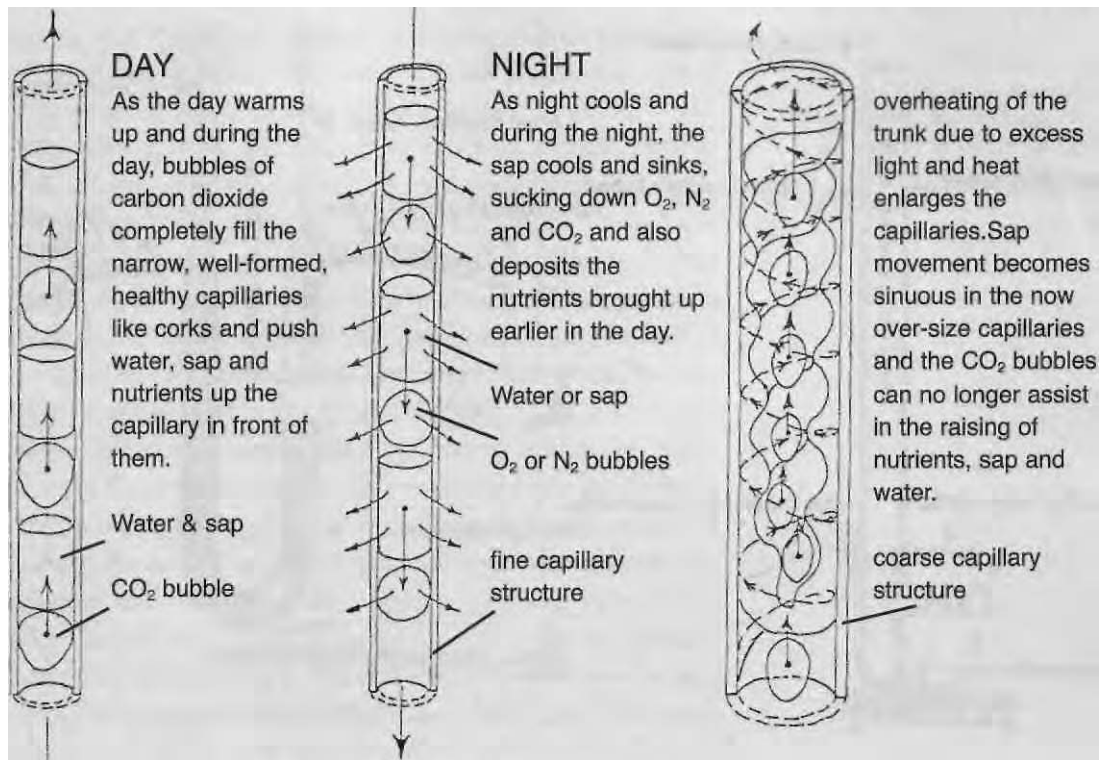
expense of its upward growth. It develops a cone-shaped form, with much growth of branches on the lower part of the trunk. These will tend to grow on the sunny side of the tree, leaving it unbalanced and misshapen.

In its early years, due to high light exposure, a plantation tree exhibits wide annual rings and abnormal lateral branch growth (see Fig. 15.1). Once it receives some protection from its neighbours, the need for lateral branch growth diminishes and it will tend to grow upwards. However, in commercial woodland, the trees are thinned after a prescribed period, those considered suitable for use in construction going to the sawmill and the remainder to the pulp-mill. This thinning out exposes the remaining trees to excess heat and light. All their growth energy is diverted to growing branches on the exposed part of the trunk, mainly on the sunny side, which produces knots and twisted, spongy grain.

The annual tree rings tell the story of a tree's exposure to light. In Fig. 15.1, the rings near the middle show that in its early years, this 33-year old tree was exposed to unnatural levels of light and heat. The healthiest growth was in middle third of the tree's life, revealed by the annual rings at their closest. Its last years show the stress it experienced when its protecting neighbours were removed.

High quality, resonant timber could be cut only from the area of closely spaced rings. A board cut from the full width of the trunk would warp as a result of the unevenness of the grain. For practical purposes the only source of good narrow-ringed timber that is firm and regular in its structure and less likely to warp, is a mature tree from a natural forest. A shade-demonder in a natural forest or a plantation that is suddenly exposed to light will show irregular annual rings, an off-centre heart, sometimes heartrot, and radial cracks (called 'shakes') like those shown in Fig. 15.1. Excessive heating, causing sponginess in the wood that often results in heart rot, and encourages bacteria and parasites causes the openness of the grain. This combination of conditions Viktor Schaubeger called 'tree cancer.'

The conventional theory is that the movement of sap is caused by osmosis, or by differences in pressure between air pressure and the pressure in the capillaries. However, the absorbent raising action of osmosis is limited, and cannot account for the rising of sap in the highest trees, which can exceed 91m (300ft). Mechanical suction cannot be responsible either, as the limit for drawing up water is



9.81m (32.18ft). Viktor Schauberger found that it had more to do with a metabolic process:

On many occasions I have already stated that the rising of sap in trees cannot be explained by the physical factors hitherto put forward alone, such as the effect of the external air pressure, etc., but that its explanation is to be found in the ongoing metabolic processes in constant pulsation in every cell of the tree and is therefore a result of the vital activity of the capillary tree-cell. Professor Kurt Bergel of Berlin came to similar conclusions in relation to the activity of the heart and the blood in animal life.<sup>1</sup>

The healthy movement of sap is stimulated both by the pulsating action and by the extreme fineness of the capillaries to be found in a completely naturally grown tree (Fig. 15.2). When the carbonic acid contained in the water and sap is warmed, it is converted into

Fig. 15.2. Rising sap.

As the day warms bubbles of CO<sub>2</sub> completely fill the narrow capillaries like corks, pushing water, sap and nutrients in front of them. As night cools, the sap sinks, sucking down the CO<sub>2</sub>, the sap and the nutrients.

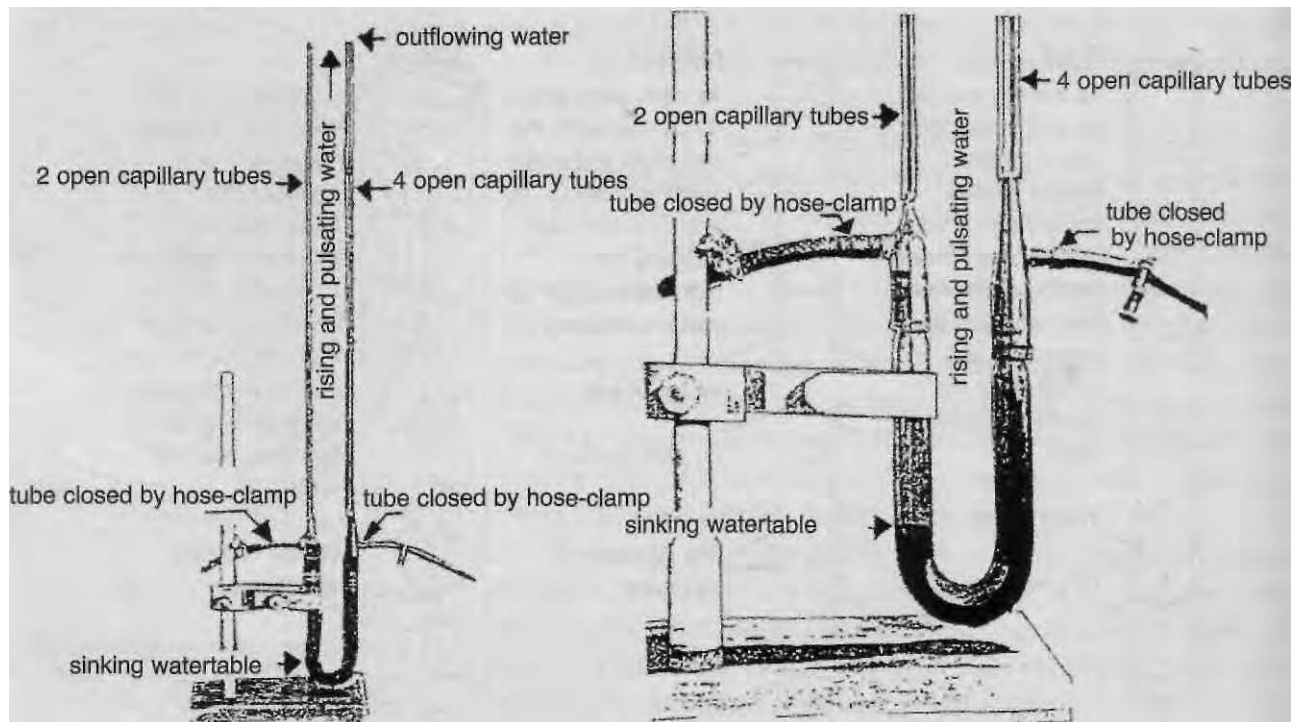


Fig. 15.3. Viktor designed this surprisingly simple but ingenious experiment that anyone can replicate with simple laboratory equipment, which consists of a U-tube, the bend of which is filled with pure quartz sand that is then saturated with salt water. This effectively separates and prevents communication between each side of the U-tube, but the salt water can be displaced laterally when pressure is higher in one arm.

The top of one arm has attached an adaptor to two fine capillary tubes, which allow contact with the air. The other arm has four fine capillaries attached to it. Both arms are now filled with fresh high quality spring water with little oxygen content, which has not been exposed to the Sun, or for long to the air.

The U-tube is then placed in an insulated container, e.g. a bucket, containing ice at the bottom, and then filled with good loam. The ice will create an artificial environment of +4°C (39°F) at the bend of the U-tube, helping to bring about a positive temperature gradient from the top of the loam downwards.

The container is then placed in the heat of the Sun and slowly as the +4°C (39°F) temperature is reached below and the higher water heats up, the water level in the arm with 4 outlets will rise and overflow as there is less resistance on that side, the water on the other side remaining level. The rise in the water level is assisted by the heat of the Sun converting the carbonic acid in the water into carbon dioxide bubbles that push the water bundles ahead of the them and pull the water behind, creating a pulsating effect.

During the night the water on the 4-capillary side subsides, the carbonates in the water having absorbed the oxygen and other gases from the atmosphere. This makes it specifically heavier, exerting pressure through the sand barrier on the other side of the U-tube, causing the water level in this tube to rise up its pair of capillaries.

This replicates the natural process of pulsation that happens with all liquids in Nature, a pulsation which is caused by temperature difference, pressure and suction. This experiment sets out to duplicate particularly the conditions under which sap rises in the daytime (the four capillaries representing the xylem tubelets), falling back at night time (the pair of capillaries approximate the delivery of the phloem tubelets).

To demonstrate the action of a natural spring, the adaptor with four capillaries is removed, leaving the shorter side open, so that the water rises and overflows on that side when the temperature difference is greatest between the +4°C (39°F) environment at the bottom of the bucket, and that at the surface of the loam. At night the water drops on the open side, rising on the side with the two capillaries.

carbon dioxide, which forms bubbles. These bubbles act like little plugs and, as they rise, push the intervening packets of water, sap, etc, ahead of them, pumping the water with the nutrients and the sap right up to the furthest extremities of the crown.

The sap rises during the day when the tree exhales oxygen through photosynthesis. When the Sun sets and the temperature drops, this process is reversed as it breathes in oxygen to help build up the root system and the trunk of the tree. Nightfall initiates the retreat of the sap, which becomes denser through cooling and is drawn towards the root-zone. The capillaries in the crown of the tree are evacuated, creating a partial biological vacuum as the CO<sub>2</sub> gas-bubbles condense and begin to sink (see Fig. 15.6).

The CO<sub>2</sub>, nitrogen, oxygen, starches, sugars, and trace gases formed during daytime photosynthesis are drawn down through the minute stomata and pores in the leaves, down the trunk, some of them reaching the hair-roots. Their purpose here is to nourish the life-functions of the tree during the night and provide the material for building the structure of the inner fabric of the tree as a whole. As the crown and the trunk cool down, the root-zone warms up and the opposite happens to what took place during the day. This keeps the soil warm during the night and in winter, and cooler during the day and in summer. The ground temperature in this way is prevented from overcooling or overheating, greatly benefiting the micro-organisms in the humus.

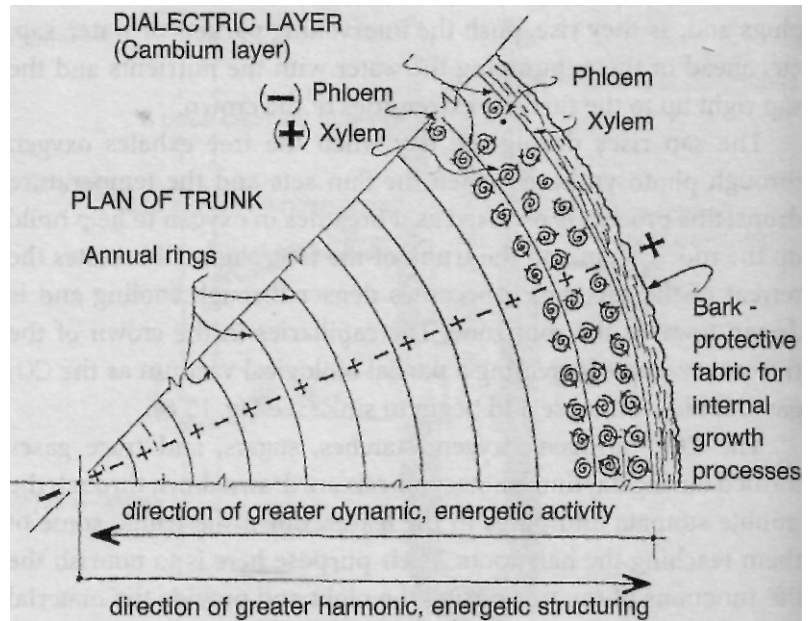
Light-demanding trees are able to work in the same way because they have thick bark or, in some cases, a light-coloured bark with a high reflective factor to protect them from the greater heat and light which would interfere with this delicately balance metabolic process.

The cambium layer (see Fig. 15.4, p. 204) is the active zone where the growth of the tree takes place through the interaction of two electrically charged fluids. The negatively charged phloem containing oxygen, carbon dioxide, nitrogen, etc, flows down the inner side of the dielectric, while the positively charged xylem, containing ionized minerals, salts, trace-elements, carbonic acid or CO<sub>2</sub>, flows up the outside. Between these two streams and through their interaction, the proto-annual ring is transformed into a proper annual ring. The life history of the tree is imprinted on these annual rings.

Fig. 15.3 (opposite). Rising sap experiment.

The constant pulsation in the capillary tube mimics the principle of rising sap in the tree, just like the pulsation that causes blood circulation in the body (a propos of which Schauburger also said 'There is no condition of equilibrium in Nature').

Fig. 15.4. Horizontal section through trunk.  
This shows how the growth rings act as charge separators or dielectric layers.



## Temperature gradients in the tree

Temperature gradients are important in tree metabolism. The areas of active growth in the outer trunk and in the branches need heat energy to sustain the formative elements in a productive, ionized and fluid state for the processes of combination and re-combination to take place.

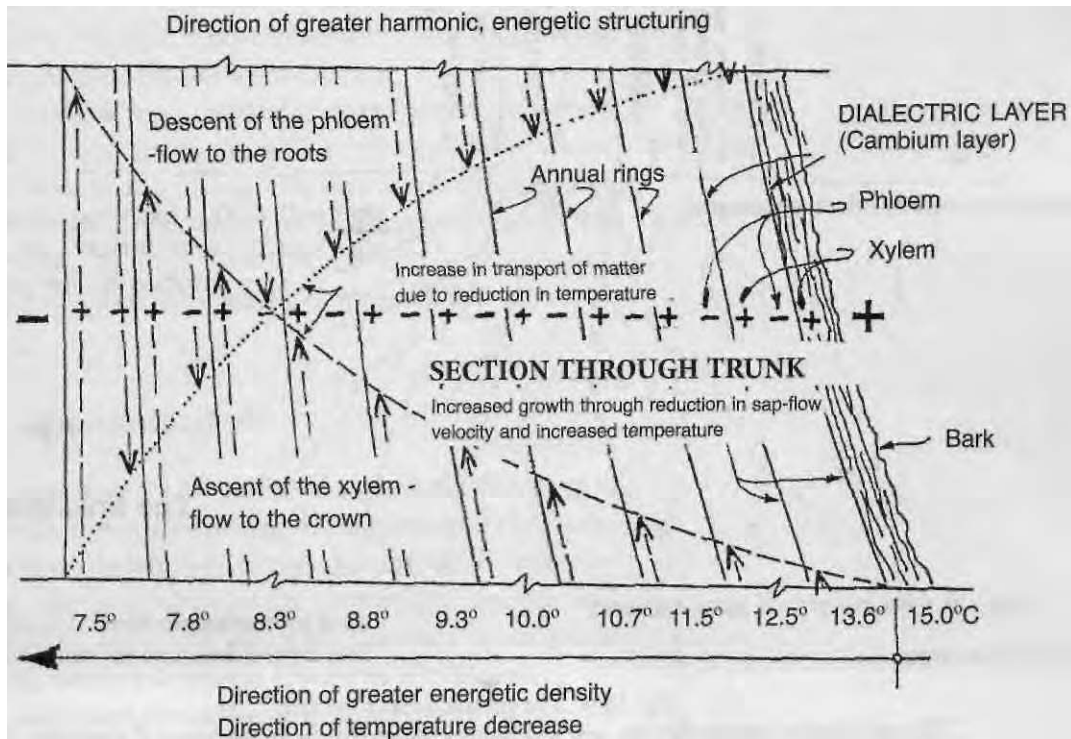
During the daytime, a positive temperature gradient is active from the outside inwards, the cooler, more internal sap rising faster, transporting the finest nutrients up to the top of the tree. They are taken to the foliage, for the small green shoots, flowers and reproductive elements required for the highest quality growth. Viktor Schauberger's measurements showed that this upward flow could be as fast as 3m (10ft) per hour, or 50mm (2ins.) per minute. The lower quality, coarser nutrients present in the outermost layers of the cambium ring (just inside the bark), needed for building the structure of the tree, are raised only as far as their fineness permits, the coarser being deposited in the trunk, the finer later in the branches. The effectiveness of this process depends on a negative temperature gradient being active from the outside inwards (cooler

outside > warmer inside) during the hours of darkness, in its function as depositor or precipitator.

With rising air temperatures, the point where the positive and negative temperature gradients meet within the tree shifts to deeper levels. The flow of the sap becomes more sluggish and the positively charged nutritive elements are held in near stationary suspension at various heights to await the arrival of the negatively charged elements from above. This may be the reason why the Amazonian rainforest stops producing oxygen towards midday. The positive nutrient-transporting temperature gradient soon changes to a negative one as the temperatures rise rapidly during the morning. This arrests the supply of nutrients; photosynthesis ceases and with it, the expiration of oxygen is interrupted.

With nightfall and the cooling air, the temperature gradient reverses to positive from the inside outwards, so that the outer layers of the tree become cooler than the inner. The crown cools faster, causing the sap to sink quickly. The higher temperatures of the Amazon rainforest cause fast evaporation, to bring accelerated

Fig. 15.5. Vertical trunk section. This shows ring temperature decreasing inwards, and the flow of nutrients in the xylem, upwards, descending at night.



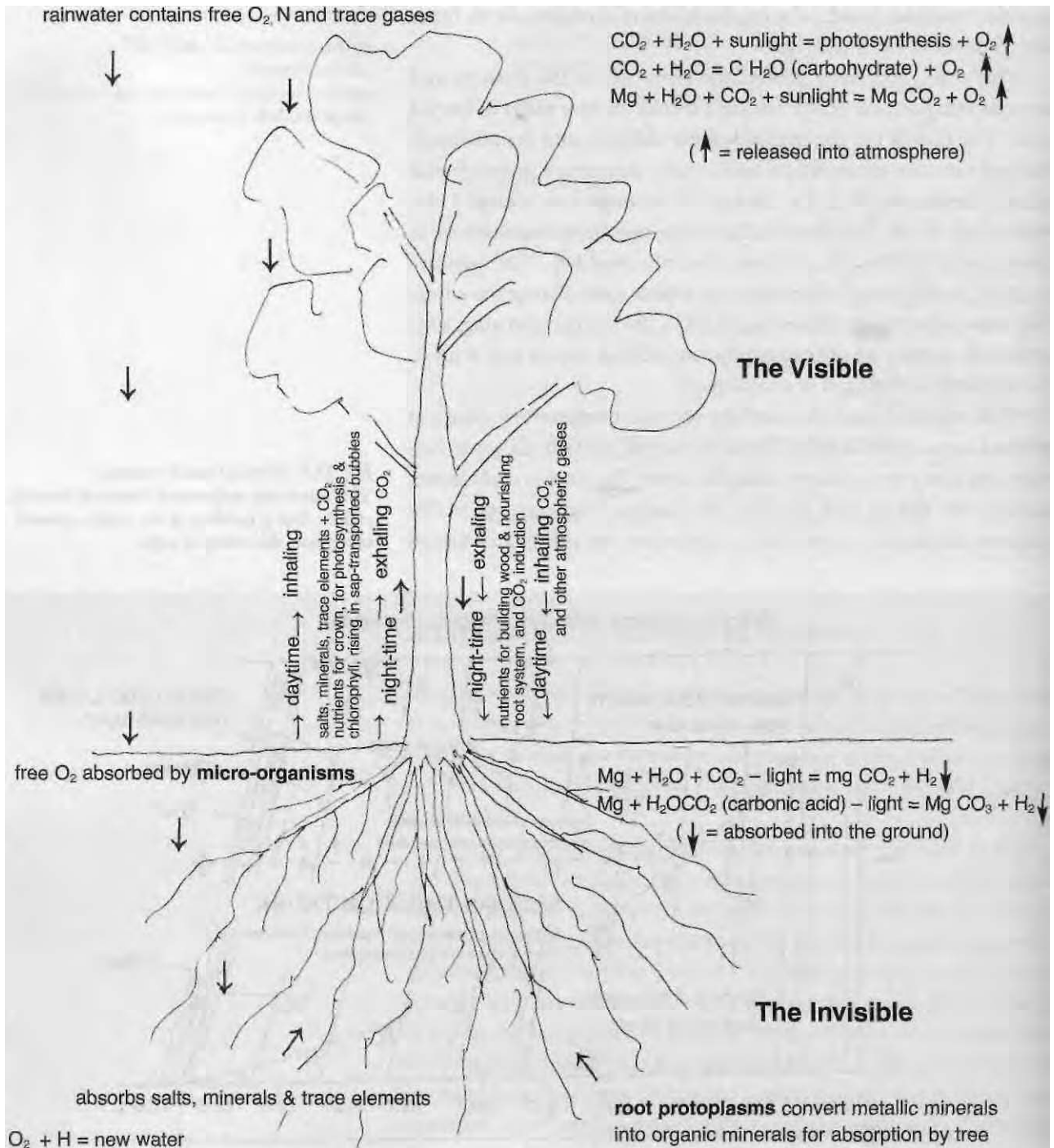


Fig. 15.6. The metabolism of the tree.

The vital exchange between the yang solar and the yin earth energies for the production of photosynthesis, chlorophyll and carbohydrates and its role in the production of water.

cooling of the sap which, sinking after midday, does not reverse direction until the following day. The oxygen and other gases contained in the negatively-charged phloem are drawn down towards the root-zone. By this means, oxygen is made available to assist decay in the upper reaches of the soil, and to stimulate growth around the root tips (Fig. 15.6).

During the night the descending phloem plays another important role. It interacts with suspended positively-charged xylem and because of the prevailing positive temperature gradient (Figs. 15.4 and 15.5) is drawn towards the exterior of the trunk. This produces new wood growth that is made denser and harder with winter cold, forming an annual ring.

In a commercial plantation a shade-demanding tree grows more branches in order to protect itself. The sap is therefore diverted from its normal progress up the trunk to nourish the spurious branches, twisting around the extra knots in the trunk. The excess heat also makes the sap ducts larger in diameter so that the carbon-dioxide bubbles are not able raise the fluids required for healthy growth. Insufficient nutrients are able to reach the crown of the tree, which is likely to suffer die-back; high quality timber is no longer produced, and the tree will have a limited lifespan. Sprouting foliage shows the height to which the sap is able to rise.

Because of unnatural high internal temperatures there is premature deposition of nutrients, a condition akin to arterio-sclerosis in the blood vessels of humans. The higher temperature also limits the rise of these coarse materials, which are deposited near the base of the trunk, causing a cone-shaped trunk. With its levitational energies thus weakened, such a tree more easily falls victim to storms.

## The tree as a biocondenser

We discussed earlier how the formative energies (which belong to the fourth and fifth dimensions) carry the blueprint for the evolution and physical manifestation of all organisms. This life-force carries with it an electrical charge. The process of growth and development of any organism requires that this life-force is enhanced or potentiated by a process known as biocondensing.

As part of its important role in Nature associated with the two creators of life, water and photosynthesis, the tree acts as a biocondenser,



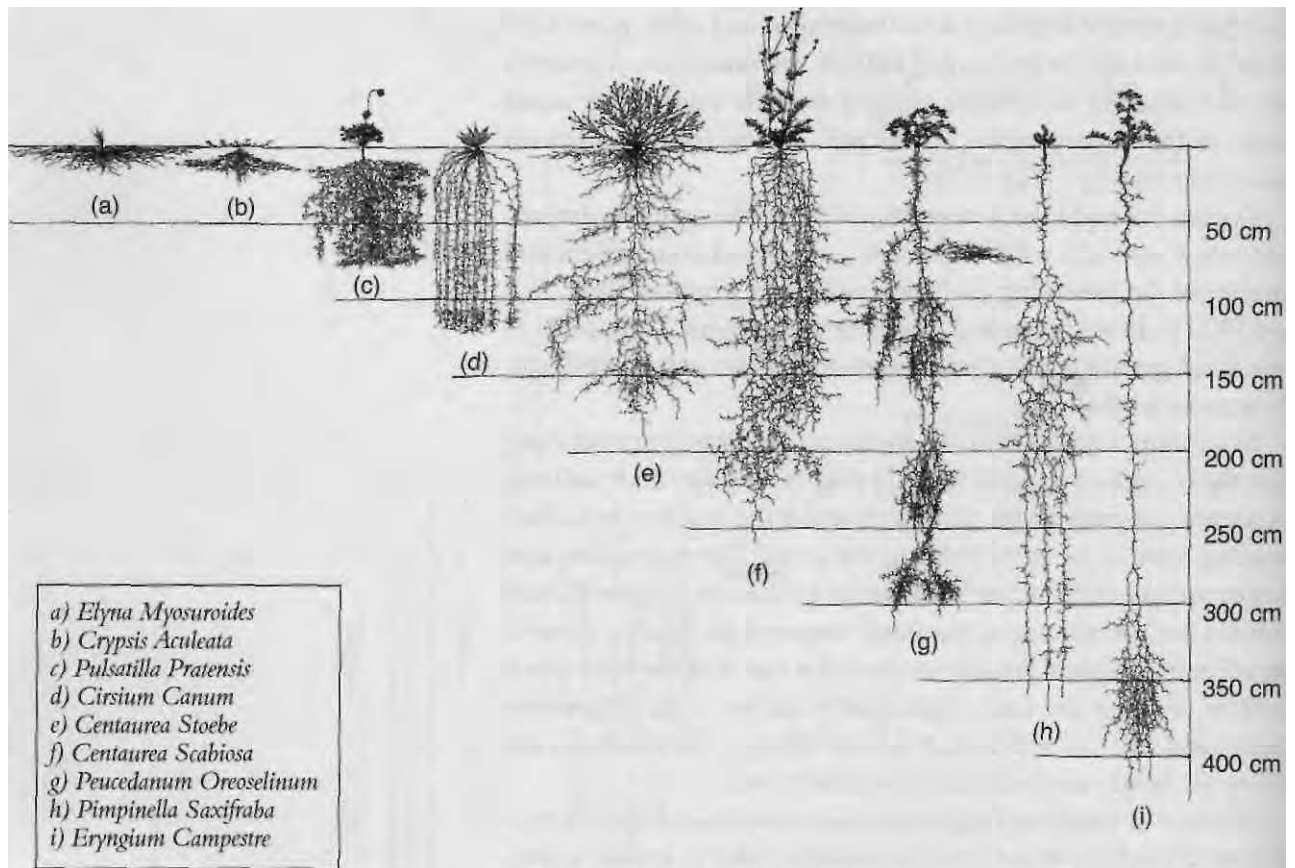


Fig. 15.7. Various root systems.

In the evolution of plants, first primitive ones (a & b) take root, making use of the low-grade nutrients at the warm surface. They allow a little soil and moisture to accumulate. As the soil cools off, the water table slowly rises, bringing up deeper minerals and nutrients. This allows higher plant forms to develop (c to i), which hold the soil together and encourage humus to form, which attracts micro-organisms that break down the soil, increasing the fertility and richness, causing the pioneer plants to die off.

whose purpose is to increase the potency of the life force towards the tips of both branches and roots.

In Chapter 7, we saw how the Earth may become charged with life energy through its terrestrial biocondenser. Trees work in a similar manner, the annual rings forming the dielectric separators between the electrically charged areas. When these are closer together, the potential (the dynamic energy) is increased, which occurs higher up the trunk. In the central part of the trunk some growth takes place, but the most energetic growth happens at the ends of the new shoots.

The diameter of the trunk reduces as the tree grows taller, which makes the annuals rings grow closer together, increasing the bioelectric potential. At the very top of the tree the potential is very high. Finally in the leaves themselves the energy potential is at its maximum. This is necessary for the critical process of evapo-transpiration to take place. The sap capillaries are extremely small, so that the substances

having only the finest materials with the highest of nutritive qualities remain, the coarser having been left behind to build up the structure of the lower part of the tree.

In addition, this refinement of the energy at the leaves gives it a kind of increased homeopathic potency; so that when they receive the highly energized drops of falling rainwater there is an immediate transfer of pure energy or life force. It is therefore hardly surprising that this is where the most intense growth takes place.

These areas of dense growth where the biocondensers are located are finely structured and susceptible to damage, either by being pierced, or disturbed by excessive warming. If this happens, the biocondenser fails, disease sets in and the tree dies.

By inserting copper probes, Walter Schauberger was able to record significantly high electrical charges between the cambium layer and the heart of the trunk, sufficient to light a small flashlight bulb. The healthier and more naturally had the tree grown, the brighter the light observed.

## Root systems

The root system, being the invisible part of the tree, has an aura of mystery. A germinating seed puts down a root into the darkness before it sends a shoot into the light. The root system is the complement to the canopy, and its energy exchange system is just as complex.

It is important to see the whole tree as an energy pathway that brings about a marriage of the negatively charged energies of the Earth (a receptive, female system) with the positively charged energies of the atmosphere and the Sun (a radiating, male system). Out of this union comes the primary manifestation of the organism, 'tree' — with its secondary life-enhancing processes of chlorophyll production and photosynthesis.

We are taught wrongly that there is a one-way transport of nutrients from the roots to the leaves. The very fine root tips, with their tiny capillaries, correspond to the new, growing leaves in the tree canopy, and at night the descending energies and nutritive elements contribute to the important processes that these root tips perform.

At the ends of the root tips are tiny protoplasts, little chemical factories that perform the important task of converting minerals from their natural metallic to the organic form that the tree is able

to absorb. They are also responsible for transferring yang energy and nutritive elements derived from the tree crown, to increase the vitality of the soil, without which the micro-organisms would be unable to flourish. In addition, they release hydrogen, which combines with free oxygen in the soil to give birth to new water. So it is clear that these protoplasms perform invaluable functions.

Even a gardener probably has only the vaguest idea of how a root system develops. To hold up the plant stem is one purely physical function. There is, in fact, the widest possible variety of root forms and systems, the diversity of which is essential to healthy micro-environment, because each species' roots go down to a different level in the soil, bringing up different nutrients and energies.

Trees are described as being flat-rooted, heart-rooted, tap-rooted and deep-rooted, the last evaporating more water than heart-rooted trees, and flat-rooted trees evaporating least of all. Each plant species, therefore, has its own particular root structure, which penetrates to a different soil horizon to withdraw the elements it needs. But other plants will share some of these nutrients also. Fig. 15.7 illustrates the wide variety of root systems.

When plants first appeared, about 420 million years ago, climatic conditions were inhospitable, with severe storms and heavy rain. Only the most primitive plants could gain a hold, feeding on the salts and metallic minerals. Although they had very little root growth, the stems above ground were able to trap some nutritive wind-borne dust to form very primitive soil, their shadows having a slight cooling effect on the ground, allowing some moisture to collect.

## Soil and nutrition

Cooling was the key to the appearance of water, and as the ground cover spread, the lowering temperature affected the deeper ground, allowing the water table to rise, bringing with it minerals, trace elements and nutritional substances nearer to the surface. This created the conditions for higher quality plants to evolve. Requiring better quality nutrition, these higher plants had deeper root systems that brought up minerals from a different horizon, but were no competition for the pioneer plants.

The more evolved plants held the soil together, trapping more moisture that helped to attract micro-bacterial activity to break down the mineral particles into finer dust, the first step towards the

humus that is necessary for even higher plant forms. The root systems become more complex, interweaving at different levels, so that they cannot easily be separated. Greater fertility brings a richer soil that is of too high a quality for the pioneer plants, which will now disappear. A more favorable microclimate in the higher soil increases the diversity of the bacteria, encouraging more complex root systems.

There is a magical and symbiotic relationship between the various root systems that we cannot easily observe below ground, more complex than the interrelationships of the plants above ground. With greater complexity, and the evolution of trees, the soil takes on the full yin energy potential of Mother Earth, and with it the creation of virgin water, an essential requirement for higher life forms.

This process of soil formation took several million years before larger plants, such as small bushes and trees, were able to gain a hold; and they had to go through thousands of years of evolution before a forest was possible. The forest is the most productive environment for the building up of soil and fertile humus. It is self-fertilizing and self-sustaining. The great forests were able, over a period of thousands of years, to build up twenty feet or more of soil depth. With our heedless disrespect for Nature's bounty, in one century we have allowed these great soil banks to be eroded and destroyed, first through deforestation, and then by careless tilling of the unprotected soil surface.

The web of life that evolves in a natural forest is so complex and sensitive that the removal of key species can cause a depletion of the energy that can lead to a progressive decline of the system, as more species fail for want of the sustenance that was provided by the missing species. A hole is created in the complex root network that is the interconnecting link between the deeper ground and the surface. The root system raises the water table. A missing species also means a hole is created in the water system that supplies the nutrients. Over time, a shortage of nutrients puts more plants under stress, leading to more species disappearing.

Something like this happens with our monoculture systems, for the nutrients are not able to rise through the crusty layer formed at the level to which all the same species' roots descend. This leads to depletion of fertility and all the energies associated with it; uniformity means sterility, something that Nature abhors.

PART FIVE



Working with Nature

# 16. Soil Fertility and Cultivation

Our primeval Mother Earth is an organism that no science in the world can rationalize. Everything on her that crawls and flies is dependent upon her and all must hopelessly perish if that Earth dies that feeds us. Viktor Schauberger<sup>1</sup>

## The crisis in intensive farming

When there was great enthusiasm in the 1930s for the much publicized glamour of industrialized agriculture, Viktor Schauberger was very aware of its pitfalls, developing a number of field tests which demonstrated the fallacy of the new technologies. Though he did not live to see the dramatic agricultural catastrophes of the 1990s, to a large extent he predicted them.

Intensive farming developed first in the Americas, where the limitless vast open plains could be cultivated or grazed in only very large units. At first in North America, and then on the South American plains, this meant enormous herds of cattle or highly mechanized crop cultivation. Because of the inevitable depletion of minerals and, as a consequence of monoculture, intensive farming of this kind soon leads to the widespread use of chemical drugs or artificial fertilization with animals, and herbicides with cultivation. By its very nature intensive agriculture is unsustainable, but it is a big and profitable international industry and, as we all know, we are living at a time where big profits count for more than human or ecological values.

There is a growing interest in sustainable cultivation, and there are many books on the topic. It is impossible to grow crops without a loss of fertility in the soil. We shall be examining different methods of fertilization from the inorganic to increasingly higher organic and energetic processes. Viktor Schauberger's whole research was deeply committed to improving food quality and soil fertility. He had original ideas about fertilization, but his most intriguing ideas were concerned with amplifying the subtle energies of the planet to bring about higher quality in the plants themselves.

## Ploughing methods

Viktor Schauberger's interest in soils was initiated during a visit to Bulgaria in the 1930s where he had been commissioned to build a log-flume. King Boris asked him to look into the decline in soil productivity and the shrinkage of the water table in the northern parts of the country since the introduction of modern mechanized farming methods. The southern part, on the other hand, was still fertile, with abundant moisture.

Viktor found that in the poorer southern part of the country, populated largely by people of Turkish origin, the fields were tilled with traditional wooden ploughs pulled usually by teams of women. These fields remained very fertile and productive, with high crop quality. In the north, however, the fields were ploughed with tractor-drawn steel ploughs. As he was aware of the destructive effect that steel and iron have on water in the soil, Schauberger attributed the disappearance of the water and the poorer yields to the use of the steel ploughs and the faster ploughing in the north. This knowledge led him to invent a new kind of plough and to do a number of experiments on improving soil fertility. Before going into this, however, we need to understand more about electromagnetism.

## Two kinds of electromagnetism

Viktor already recognized that in Nature there are two types of electromagnetism, just as there are two kinds of temperature change. The one that encourages growth and stimulates energies in all organisms he called biomagnetism or bioelectricity; the elements connected with this form of electromagnetism (diamagnetism) are copper, bismuth and gold.

The other, ferromagnetism, usually just called magnetism, when combined with an electric current, is the form that is commonly used in electric motors and dynamos for the generation of electricity. In Nature this form of energy is used to break down substances. In water's case it disintegrates the water particles into its constituent atoms. The elements of ferromagnetism are iron, nickel and cobalt.

## The golden plough

Wherever we look, the dreadful disintegration of the bridges of life, the capillaries and the bodies they have created, is evident, which has been caused by the mechanical and mindless work of Man, who has torn away the soul from the Earth's blood — water.

Viktor Schauberger<sup>2</sup>

Viktor observed how steel ploughs damage the soil. Drawn rapidly through the ground, the hard steel ploughshares generate minute ferro-electric and ferro-magnetic currents that decompose the nutrient-laden water molecules in the soil, in a manner similar to electrolysis, resulting in water loss. The surface tension of the water molecule is reduced, the soil loses its energy potential and its nutritive subtle energies are dissipated. This not only destroys the soil's subtler energies, but also converts the nutritive elements or removes them from the mature water molecule. The residual water becomes pure juvenile water that has no nutritive value.

Abrasion with the soil removes tiny particles of steel from the cutting surface of the plough, which break down to rust, an ideal breeding ground for harmful pathogenic bacteria. An increase in the iron content of soil inhibits its water retention. On the other hand, soils high in copper have the capacity to retain greater quantities of water.

The delicate soil capillaries that deliver nutrients and water to the surface, and some of the micro-organisms that process them are destroyed by the heat-producing friction and the compacting pressure of the steel plough. As the normal supply of nutrients from below is cut off and the water table falls, the soil fertility suffers.

Schauberger started to experiment with copper, initially as a plating of thick copper over a conventional steel plough. The destructive ferro-electromagnetic effects of the steel plough were thus replaced by beneficial bioelectromagnetic ionization, enhancing growth and soil fertility. Because of the remarkable results it achieved, this came to be known as the 'Golden Plough.'

Field trials were conducted near Salzburg in 1948 and 1949 to compare the results of the new plough with the conventional steel plough. Fields strips were ploughed, alternately using steel and



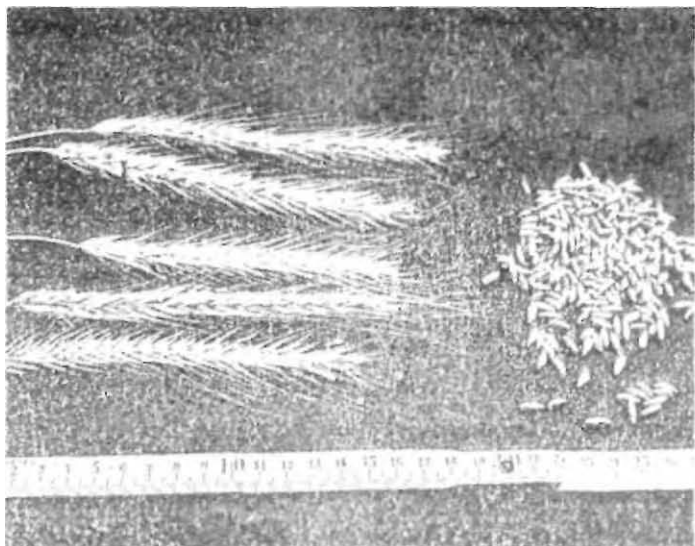


Fig. 16.1. 15 cm long ears of rye with up to 104 grains/ear.

Fig. 16.2. Potatoes grown on Alpine farm at Kitzbuhel, Tyrol.



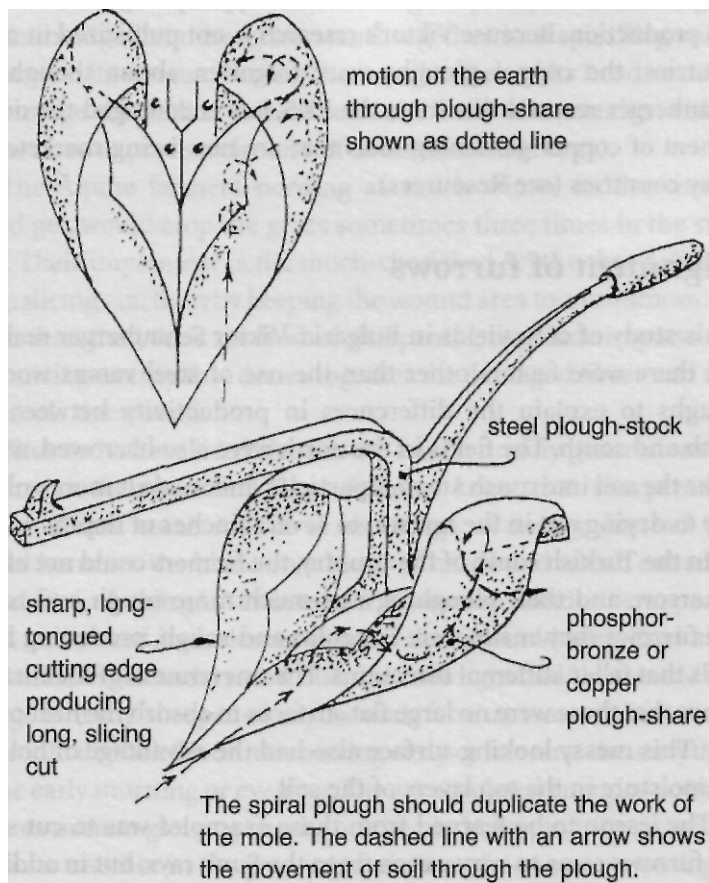
copper-plated ploughs. When the grain came up the differences between the alternate strips was quite apparent. Where the copper-plated plough had been used the water content and the nutrient energies of the soil had been increased, and the corn stood about 6-8 inches higher with a much fuller head. Some yields in the strips ploughed with copper-plated implements increased by up to 40% compared to the control strips where conventional steel ploughs were used. As all other factors of soil chemistry, orientation, furrow width, etc., were identical, the difference in yield was clearly due to the use of the copper plated plough.

With two crops there were spectacular results. 15cm long ears of rye produced an average of 104 grains each (Fig. 16.1). In another experiment in Tyrolean Kitzbuhel potatoes weighing nearly half a kilo, containing over twenty eyes' (the source of next year's crop), were produced (Fig. 16.2).

## The Bio-plough

The conventional ploughshare forms a pressure wave and makes a crushing cut that destroys the soil capillaries. Schauburger in 1948 encouraged a Hamburg engineer Jurgen Sauck to develop a sharp curved blade to create a long slicing cut before the soil is centripetally involuted in a figure of eight motion through the curving wings of the phosphor-bronze ploughshare, copying the burrowing

Fig. 16.3. The bio-plough, 1948.



action of the mole. This was called the bio-plough (Fig. 16.3) because it enhanced the energy in the soil. Its action was to rotate the soil through  $360^\circ$ , so that what was originally on the surface was returned to the surface. This minimized water loss and the sub-surface micro-organisms were never exposed to direct sunlight (heat) and could continue their work undisturbed.

These experiments clearly proved the great advantage of the copper-based ploughs. The great increase in productivity with their use would quickly recover the cost of replacing iron or steel ploughs. The trials had created a lot of interest, but Viktor came up against bureaucratic corruption that defeated his plans. Copper being in short supply just after the war, he had to go to the Ministry of Agriculture to obtain what he needed. It is alleged that the Minister was being seduced with large bribes by the chemical companies to introduce chemical fertilizers, and indicated that he expected Viktor to do the

same. Of course Viktor would not, so the copper ploughs never went into production. Because Viktor's research is not publicized in other countries, the copper ploughs were forgotten about, though the Schauberger research institute, the PKS, has encouraged the development of copper gardening tools that are now being marketed in many countries (see Resources).

## Alignment of furrows

In his study of crop yields in Bulgaria, Viktor Schauberger realized that there were factors other than the use of steel versus wooden ploughs to explain the differences in productivity between the north and south. The fields in the north were also harrowed, which broke the soil into much smaller particles and made it more vulnerable to drying out in the hot sun to several inches of depth.

In the Turkish south of the country, the farmers could not afford to harrow, and their ploughing was much more rough and ready. The furrows they made were irregular and rough, producing large clods that fell in different directions. The unevenness of the furrows meant that there were no large flat surfaces to absorb the heat of the Sun. This messy looking surface also had the advantage of holding the moisture in the top layers of the soil.

The lesson to be learned from these examples was to cut sinuous furrows so as to vary exposure to the Sun's rays, but in addition to give them a north-south alignment, so that the inclined surfaces of the furrows would be shaded for part of the day and exposed to the Sun only when it was low in the sky. This meant that the young growing sprouts had the maximum amount of moisture when most needed.

## Grazing and grass cutting

Conventional mechanical grass mowers have an effect on the grass similar to that of the standard iron plough on the soil. The inclined blade uses a crushing action that damages the capillaries of the grass stalks, and shreds the top of the stalks for several millimetres, allowing the grass to bleed and bacteria to enter. Instead of applying its energies to new growth, the grass stems have to heal the wounds, which can take a week.

Viktor Schauberger's observation of animals was profound. He

would watch the cows on the fertile high Alpine pastures. The grazing animal gathers the grass stems together in a spiralling movement with its tongue, cutting them with a jerk of its head so as not to damage the stalks. It then seals the ends of the stalks with its moist nose to prevent the loss of moisture and energy.

The Alpine farmers needing as much winter fodder as they could get, would crop the grass sometimes three times in the summer. Their implement is the much-cherished scythe that delivers a long, slicing cut, thereby keeping the wound area to a minimum. But more than that, their method of sharpening the blade imparts to it an ionizing energy that draws together the damaged fibres and rapidly seals the wound.

Those who have lived close to the land for many generations use Nature as their teacher. These farmers knew that sharpening a scythe with a stone robs it of its charge of energy. Instead they would hammer the blade on a block of hardwood which enhanced the electrical charge. Mounted on a wooden handle, wrapped in cloth and stored in darkness ensured that it would keep its charge.

Schauberger understood that the Sun's light and heat would discharge a newly sharpened scythe and, for that reason, these farmers would do their blade hammering early or late, and their scything in the early morning or evening. The accumulated energies could be seen as minute glowing sparks on the blade, leaping from one serration to another in the growing darkness of a summer evening.

We have lost this knowledge, and today soil fertility and productivity are in dangerous decline, ironically, because of the heavy use of artificial fertilizers as well as misguided techniques.

## Artificial fertilizers

Contemporary agriculture treats Mother-Earth like a whore and rapes her. All year round it scrapes away her skin and poisons it with artificial fertilizer, for which we have to thank a science that has lost all connection with Nature.

Viktor Schauberger<sup>3</sup>

The pioneer of modern artificial fertilizers was Justus von Liebig (1803-1873), a German chemist. His research into the elements and chemicals required by plants for growth found that four principal minerals were often deficient in agricultural soils. To increase fertility he advocated the supplementation of calcium (Ca) in the form of

lime, nitrogen (N), phosphorus (P) and potassium (K), the last three often referred to as NPK.

These products are soluble and mostly they are by-products of what Viktor Schauberg called 'fire-spitting technology' They are produced by heat, which is structure-disintegrating and energy-depleting and applied by either spraying or by powder diffusion.

Chemical companies were quick to manufacture these new products as a way of turning waste material to profit. Liebig later realized that the ingredients necessary for healthy plant growth were far more complex than simple NPK. Indeed he warned that dependence on these basic chemicals could irreparably damage the soil, but nobody was listening. The rapid spread in the use of artificial fertilizers led to a systematic depletion of soil fertility as it lost its organic base. A highly mechanized system of cultivation, using steel ploughs and artificial fertilizers reduced large tracts of mid-western America to dustbowls, forcing the ruined farmers to leave their land. The same is now happening in many third world countries, like India, where multinational chemical companies are demanding the replacement of traditional methods in favour of chemically dependent agriculture.

When the dependence on chemicals was first exported, it was called 'the green revolution,' because their use was linked to increased yields. However, this was quantity at the cost of continually decreasing quality, profit at the expense of life (see Chapter 5). Artificial fertilizers are stimulants to growth and act like narcotics on which the soil becomes reliant. The soil, now dependent on the chemicals — rather like drug addicts who as their physical condition worsens, require more and more shots to extend their lives a little further — is also dying.

In their finely powdered form, artificial fertilizers are moisture demanding, robbing the lower ground strata and the young plants of moisture. With insufficient moisture, transpiration is reduced and the plants' internal temperatures rise, making them more susceptible to disease. These fine powders block the vital capillaries, which supply naturally derived nutrients, mature water, and conduct rising immaterial energies. This makes it more difficult for the plants to absorb rain, resulting in rapid runoff and faster re-evaporation. Irrigation, with virtually worthless water, now becomes a necessity. It is not surprising that the crops grown in such conditions are neither particularly tasty nor nourishing.

Excess nitrogen can also introduce another problem — which makes ionized substances less available for root development, leading to further water shortage for the plants. Nitrates have negatively charged ions (anions  $^-$ ) that capture the positively charged ions (cations  $^+$ ) of elements such as magnesium and calcium, removing them from the root zone. Magnesium is essential for chlorophyll production.

Natures remedy is to bring in parasites (the 'Health Police') to remove the diseased organisms, requiring the application of pesticides and fungicides. After passing on a pesticide-treated crop to the consumer, the ground is fumigated with poisonous gases injected through plastic sheets, to eradicate these supposedly pernicious pests. Everything dies — earthworms, micro-organisms and beneficial bacteria alike. A diverse biosystem gives way to a lifeless desert. The green revolution was justified as a way of feeding the world, just as is biotechnology today. The holistic biologist Mae-Wan Ho gives many examples of how sustainable organic agriculture can be more productive than chemical farming, which is both unsustainable and destructive of life.<sup>4</sup>

# 17. Organic Cultivation

## Biological agriculture

The health of the topsoil is the most important factor in sustainable agriculture. Topsoil is created by decayed vegetable matter, and can vary in depth from a few centimetres to several metres. Forests created the deep soils of the world over millennia, and many of these have shrunk by as much as 80% in the last two hundred years through our disastrous agricultural practices.

Under natural conditions the friable soil is populated with an abundance of earthworms and other creatures and is usually capped with a layer of humus, formed of decomposing leaves and other vegetable matter, and colonized by a profusion of microbial and creepy-crawly life. This rich mixture of life forms makes up a processing factory essential to soil health and fertility, and everything should be done to help it flourish.

## Soil remineralization

In 1894 an agricultural chemist and contemporary of Justus von Liebig, Julius Hensel, published *Bread from Stone*, a valuable book describing the beneficial effects of fertilizing with rock dust, a by-product of road metal quarries. His book, posing a significant threat to this new chemical fertilizer industry, quickly disappeared, bought up and killed off by those who felt challenged by it.

Ideally ground in a cold process that retains its inherent energies, this rock dust is composed of finely ground, mainly igneous rocks (such as granite, basalt, etc.) with a broad mineral spectrum. Because of its great range of minerals, trace elements and salts, when spread on the ground, it encourages a wealth of different micro-organisms.

There has been limited use of rock dust in Switzerland for 150 years. However, its reintroduction has been encouraged by John Hamaker and Don Weaver who in 1975 brought out *The Survival of Civilization*.<sup>1</sup> They describe how important are mineral and trace elements to plant growth and quality, but also that trace elements

are a vital moderator of climatic extremes. They also tell how John Hamaker was able to increase the depth of the topsoil at his Michigan home, from about 10cm (4in) to about 1.2m (4ft) over a period of 10 years.

More recently in Western Australia, an experiment by Barry Oldfield for the 'Men of the Trees' showed a remarkable increase in the growth and health of seedlings planted with rock dust compared with those without. Rock dust is easily available as a by-product of road metal quarries.

An initial application of very fine rock dust will quickly attract micro-organisms, but a mixture of small and large grains will allow a slow release over a longer period. Rock dust has been shown to be a buffer against nitrate, sulphur dioxide and nitroxide, and it absorbs and fixes the negative ions while saving the positive ions for the plants' use. Normally rock dust is applied about every five years, the quantity depending on soil deficiency, although it is always beneficial.<sup>2</sup>

It is thought that the remarkable longevity (up to 140 years) and health of the Hunza people of Northern Pakistan is as much due to the mineral-rich glacial water, as to the clean mountain air. Callum Coats tells of his neighbours in Queensland who fertilized their fruit trees from a bucket of rock dust. Their dogs, who would eagerly drink rainwater from this bucket, while leaving their usual water bowls full, clearly knew what was best for them.

## Organic farming

Organic farming normally uses manure (generally cow's), farmyard slurry and composted vegetable matter to increase the soil's fertility. The introduction of chemical fertilizers in the nineteenth century was popular and soon supplanted the traditional organic method, because it was much less labour intensive, and appeared to give higher crop yields. A few farmers retained the traditional methods and, as the evidence has built up of the pollution of the water table and rivers by these chemicals, there has been a renaissance of organic farming in the last fifty years.

The sustainability of organic farming derives from the recycling of organic material to maintain its fertility, just as in a natural forest. Modern organic composting tends to use green vegetable matter rather than dried, interleaved with layers of earth. Significant



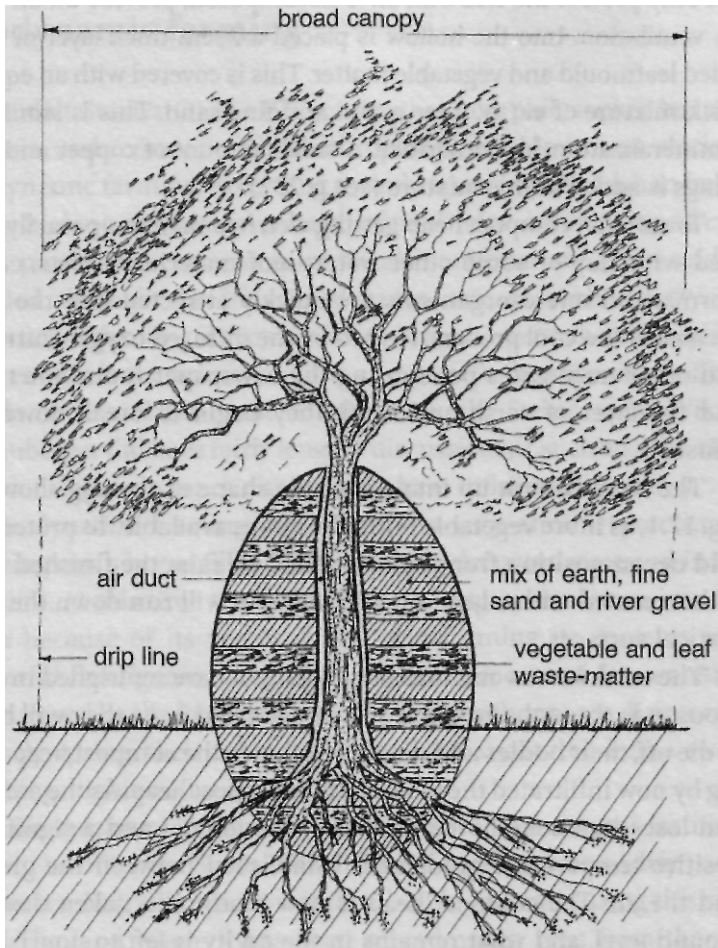


Fig. 17.1. The egg-shaped compost heap.

heat is generated in the pile in this way. Though the compost may seem to be of good quality, Viktor Schauberger believed that as the heat discourages earthworms, it will not be of the best quality. His preference is a cold process that produces a higher content of protein and other immaterial, fructigenic energies. He also believed it important to protect the compost from element-hungry juvenile rainwater that will tend to leach out some of the nutrients.

Although shown here on a small scale, the same principle can be applied to larger compost heaps. Schauberger preferred an egg-shaped compost heap built up under a large fruit-tree with a broad canopy as shown in Fig. 17.1.

A hollow is dug out of the ground round the base of the tree whose trunk is then wrapped loosely with several layers of newspaper, which

not only protect the tree but, once decomposed, provide an air duct for ventilation. Into the hollow is placed a 20cm thick layer of Sun-dried leafmould and vegetable matter. This is covered with an equally thick mixture of earth, river gravel and fine sand. This is similar to remineralization, just described. A small amount of copper and zinc filings is added to this mixture (see p. 232).

To stop the compost heap getting wet, it is then temporarily covered with clay or some other waterproof material. Insects, earthworms, and micro-organisms are quickly attracted into the heap because it is a cool process. Helped by the diffused oxygen, nitrogen and other trace gases penetrating the newspaper round the trunk and the layer of earth and sand, they begin to break down the refuse.

The heap is built up into the stable shape of the egg shown in Fig. 17.1, as more vegetable refuse becomes available. To protect the cold decomposition from being spoiled by rain, the finished heap is then coated with a layer of clay. Any rain will run down the near vertical surfaces.

The earthworms and microbes will now have multiplied in their thousands through the whole pile and aerated it. As they will begin to die off, their bodies add nutritive value to the compost heap, having by now infiltrated the whole of the compost heap. As the autumn Sun loses its strength, the ground starts to cool and a significant positive temperature gradient is established between the ground and the air. The compost heap is now ready; it is taken down to ground level, and what remains in the cavity is left to nourish the tree.

The material is spread evenly over adjacent fields towards evening, for under the positive temperature gradient — most powerful at this time — rain or dew will carry the nutrients into the ground. This method produces a far richer and higher-quality natural fertilizer, which not only maintains, but actually increases fertility. The host tree also benefits and will produce a copious crop of healthy, tasty and blight-free fruit. Such compost heaps may be built under different trees each year, eventually fertilizing all the fruit trees. If there are no suitable trees, similarly constructed heaps can be built as dome-like humps or barrel-shaped clumps, protected from rainwater and insulated from the heating effect of the Sun.

## Biodynamic farming

Dr Rudolf Steiner (1861-1925), a teacher and philosopher born in Austria, and founder of the Anthroposophical Movement, devised biodynamic farming. According to anthroposophy the human being is the highest expression on Earth of the Divine, incarnating all creative power and patterns of physical manifestation. The world is studied through the inner and outer natures of humanity. Its approach to farming is very similar to Schauberger's, the assumption that energy is the primary cause, and growth the secondary effect. While it has been mooted that Rudolf Steiner and Viktor Schauberger did have fairly lengthy discussions, if such was the case, it is not clear how much either might have influenced the other.

Biodynamic farming recognizes the very ancient practice of burying cow's horns filled with cow dung deep underground in the autumn. At this time the active Earth's energies are drawn into the horn because of its vortex shape, transforming its contents into powerful fructigenic energies by the cold process of fermentation encouraged by the low temperatures. The cow horns are disinterred in early spring, their contents having been converted into a sweet smelling, highly active substance.

This empowered material is the basis of the natural fertilizer known as '500 mix.' Since 1947, it has been increasing widely used, and over a 1 1/4 million acres are fertilized in Australia using this system. The land where it has been spread, when seen from the air, stands out clearly from neighbouring farms, due to the much greener pasture. Some cows from farms bordering Alex Podolinsky's did not eat for two or three days after they had broken into the biodynamic farm, so high was the quality of the grass they had consumed.<sup>3</sup>

The '500' mix fertilizer is produced according to an ancient Alpine tradition which Schauberger himself once observed being practised by an old mountain farmer who achieved amazing results from his fertilizer. The principle is like that of homeopathy. When a homeopathic medicine is made, the original remedy is stirred and shaken between the dilutions, which increase its potency. With the fertilizer a small quantity of the converted cow dung is added to water and stirred first in one direction and then in the other, so as to create vortices rotating about the vertical axis

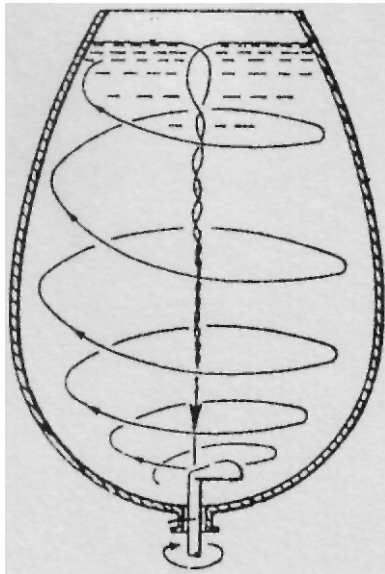


Fig. 17.2. Motor-driven mixing device with golf club-shaped impeller.

of the mixing vessel. A left-hand vortex builds up the positive energy and the right hand vortex creates a negative energy that draws in the inseminating  $O_2$ . The alternating energy charge builds up the inherent energies of the 500 mix. This recalls the alternating left and right hand bends in a river building up its energy in a longitudinal vortex (see p. 143).

This method of progressively raising energy is analogous to the Japanese art of sword making. The base material is heated in the furnace, and then beaten out or 'structured' with a hammer as it cools. It is then further heated to incandescence, folded over on itself, fused together and beaten out again. Each time the heating partially breaks down the structuring created by the beating. But with repetition, the structure is cumulatively enhanced and the level of chaos is diminished, ultimately producing a razor-sharp blade whose structure is both laminar and flexible. In a similar way, as the vortices are alternately formed and destroyed in making the fertilizer, the level of energy rises and the degree of chaos decreases until, after about an hour, the product is ready for use. This is sprayed on the fields towards evening within two to three hours of preparation and before the accumulated energies have dispersed.

In order to produce larger quantities of the 500 mix, motor driven paddles are used in cylindrical vessels. Viktor's son, Walter, found that the energies build up more strongly in an egg-shaped vessel, and he devised one (Fig. 17.2) using a simple blade like a gold golf club head as an impeller to infuse carbon-dioxide permanently into water under a partial vacuum.<sup>4</sup>

The farmer that Viktor watched also sang into the brew, rising tones as he stirred to the left and falling tones as he stirred to the right, adding crumbling pieces of aluminium-bearing clay into the water. The chanting builds up creative energy in the water's memory (see p. 108, homeopathy). After about an hour the mixture was ready to be spread over the fields. The following morning he did this by dipping a branch with small leaves into the barrel and then flicking the energized clay-water emulsion over the ground, rather like holy water is sprinkled with palm fronds on Palm Sunday.

Viktor Schaubergger's methods of producing natural fertilizer were similar to Rudolf Steiner's biodynamics, but they did not depend on the thousands of cow horns used by Podolinsky, which are available now only because of the high demand for beef. Ultimately such a supply is non-sustainable, when you consider that in

Costa Rica, a recent study showed that for every beef carcass exported, 2 1/2 tonnes of top soil were irretrievably lost through erosion. For a year's food, a meat eater requires the produce from about 1.6 acres, a vegetarian only 0.66 acres. (These are good arguments for switching to vegetarianism).

## The role of subtle energies in nature

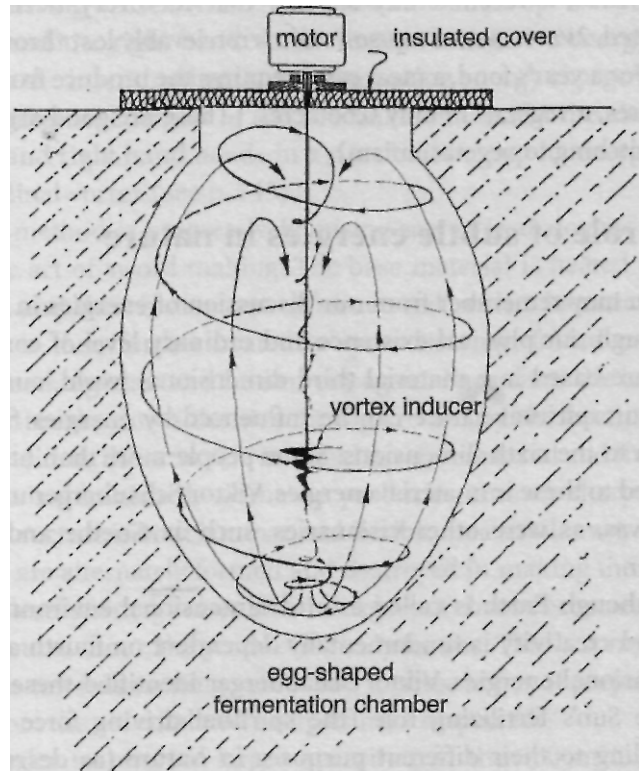
As you may remember from our discussion of energies in Chapter 2, though our physical existence and ordinary level of consciousness are based in a material third dimensional world, our psyche and our spiritual nature can be influenced by energies from the fourth to the sixth dimensions. Some people more than others are attuned to these immaterial energies. Viktor Schauberger undoubtedly was, as were other visionaries, such as Goethe and Rudolf Steiner.

Although Earth is called a third dimensional environment, all life and creativity is fundamentally dependent on fourth and fifth dimensional energies. Viktor Schauberger identified these aspects of the Sun's fertilizing role (the spiritual driving force of life), according to their different purposes in Nature (as described in Chapter 2). Dynagens generate higher intrinsic energy; fructigens are those subtle energies that produce greater fertility; qualigens create greater quality. Schauberger believed that there was no more powerful way to stimulate high quality growth than by seeding these dynamic energies directly on the soil. As in any area of creativity, the balance of the positive and negative, the male and female energies are all-important.

The Tibetans, who had a practice to bury so-called 'treasure vases,' knew long ago about the seeding of the soil with immaterial energies in certain propitious places. Filled with precious stones and metals, these containers were believed to discharge beneficial energies that enhanced and protected the environment. The Tibetans believed that gold and other precious metals were best left undisturbed in the ground as they help to balance the earth energy, just as the Hopis and the Australian aborigines regard places with uranium as sacred.

Schauberger's vision was to create a greater abundance of creative animating energy, of fertility and rising quality. To do this involved a process that sounds more alchemical than scientific. It

Fig. 17.3. Egg-shaped fermentation chamber.



required the mixture of small amounts of the male elements of silver, zinc and silicon, with the female gold, copper and limestone, brought together in a special container. For the more precious elements, gold and silver, only a few particles will easily raise the quality of the resulting fermentation. The copper and zinc are in the form of filings or powder.

As a container he used an egg-shaped fermentation chamber scooped out of the ground about 2m (6 1/2ft) deep, and lined with aluminium-bearing clay (Fig. 17.3). A wide range of organic material, kitchen refuse, animal and human waste, as fresh as possible, is now added, up to one third of the volume. The remaining space is then filled with well-oxygenated, juvenile rainwater or surface water, well exposed to the Sun. The top opening is now sealed, so that energies emanating from the interaction of cosmic and geospheric forces will not be dissipated. A bronze rod with a bi-metal (silver plated copper) vortex-inducer driven by a small motor is inserted through a hole in the cover.

The liquid is stirred in a clockwise (what Schauberger called 'planetary') motion:

'Planetary motion' produces an inward spiralling of the liquid, reducing the outward pressure on the peripheral wall-surfaces, while cooling and densifying. This planetary motion, or vortex, involves the natural, animating, centripetalizing acceleration of mass, which initiates higher-grade fermentation processes of an invigorating nature in the bipolar mixture of basic elements. The end-product is biomagnetism, a reproductive, regenerative and upwardly evolving form of energy.<sup>5</sup>

As well as the biomagnetism there is produced a cooling towards the pivotal +4°C (39°F) anomaly point due to the vortical movement in the liquid. The egg-shape ensures that the particles are thoroughly mixed and reduced to the smallest possible particles, homeopathic in their effect, which Viktor notes:

In terms of homeopathic principles and attempts to produce super-dilutions in order to still the 'specific' hunger of the plants, the more dilute the fertilizing agent, the more it approximates the character of the above ethericities, thus facilitating further interactions that in turn result in increased growth.<sup>6</sup>

There is a mystical dimension to this process, which is like mixing elements of Earth and Heaven. This produces a highly active negative or fructigenic potency, which combines with the water, making it crystal clear. It is also free of unattractive odours and indeed is sweet-smelling, like Podolinsky's '500 mix.' Viktor Schauberger claimed the fertilizer is so powerful, that two such fermentation chambers would be sufficient to permeate the soil over several square kilometres with fertile substances that will encourage germination.<sup>7</sup>

Viktor compares this process to winemaking, where sweet and turbid grape-juice matures into clear, relatively dry wine in a cool cellar. The maturation of good wine, however, may take a year or more, whereas this extraordinarily procreative liquid takes only two to three nights to prepare, weather conditions permitting. When broadcast over the fields in the evening, it absorbs the predominantly positive

atmospheric energies ready for fertilization by the Sun's energies the following day. As Schauberger observes: 'Thus, apart from a purely sexual process of procreation, a process of higher genesis here confronts us with the ability to endow quantity with quality.'<sup>8</sup>

## Cold fire

Viktor Schauberger has described an eerie experience he had with dynagen ethericities, which in this case produced what is known as 'cold fire,' a strange bioelectric phenomenon:

Over thirty years ago, walking in a virgin, Alpine forest, I came upon a flattish mound covered with vivid green grass and a profusion of bright flowers that did not seem to belong in those surroundings. It was close to a gamecock's courtship display ground, so I decided to spend the night in this remote spot, in order to witness these fine birds display at daybreak. Towards midnight, I was roused by a bluish-white flame curling up from the mound and jumped up to extinguish this incipient forest fire.

In the meantime the flame had grown a metre high and took on an egg-shaped form, similar to those that now and again issue from rock fissures and, like shining dewdrops, stand on the point of a rock. Many years ago a chief forester from Vienna, Walter Hackel, photographed just such a strange light over a metre in height. A copy of the photograph was unfortunately lost at the end of the war, or rather was stolen by looters of my apartment.

However, at that time I knew nothing of these things and so I backed away in horror, as I stood in this pitch-black darkness before an ever more powerfully flaring and heatless flame, which threw a pale glimmer into the surroundings. At first, like a man possessed, with my heavy mountain staff, I hit at the place from where tongue after tongue of this mysterious egg-light sprang up. When I noticed that this shaft of light sprang from the rock at only one point, I ceased to flail away at the supposed forest fire and loosened the surrounding soil. This, however, had no effect.

Then I held my hand in this egg-light and instead of feeling the anticipated heat, experienced an icy coldness and



saw the bones standing out on my hand. An icy chill ran down my back. I returned to the tree where my gun lay, released the safety catch and sat down in my former bivouac, waiting to see what else would happen. After about two hours the sky at last began to grey. A few hundred metres away the gamecock began his courtship, the actual reason for my early visit. I didn't move from my position, watching how this uncanny glow slowly extinguished, and suddenly the whole specter was over.

When at last daylight came, I returned again to the source of the flame and on every tip of the lush green leaves I saw oversize dewdrops, again in egg-shaped form, standing motionless like glittering candle flames. As the first rays of the Sun pierced the tangle of leaves, the grass-tips bent under the weight of the ur-water, which visibly grew as the Sun's heat increased.<sup>9</sup> One by one, the now finished dewdrops fell down.

Now I began to dig into the hillock with the tip of my mountain staff and underneath a peculiarly smelling layer of humus, I felt a resistance, which after further digging, turned out to be the almost undecomposed corpse of a chamois buck, which had a clearly distinguishable bullet entry hole above the left foreleg. There was, however, no exit hole. According to the time of year, it could have been shot only by poachers, since the hunting season was long past. It was only later that it became clear to me that the buck must already have lain underneath this mound for a longish period, because it was covered by a thick layer of humus upon which vegetation had apparently sprouted. On even closer inspection, I found a sort of mass grave before me.

The old hunters used to insist that chamois (as also happens with elephants) seek out special places to die where slow decomposition rather than putrefaction takes place. Sick wild animals are attracted to such places which remain equally warm or cold in winter and in summer, seeking either a cure or a painless death. Expressed scientifically, constant anomaly states prevail, which permit decay-free decomposition. This is why, as a particularly sly old forester explained, the high clergymen had themselves buried in a constantly cool church crypt, or why the more common

priests at least had a little roof built over their graves along the cemetery wall at the eastern side in order to protect them from rainwater. I realized later that, because of its free oxygen content, which activates decomposive forces, rainwater actually promotes decay or rusting.<sup>10</sup>

## Fertilizing energies

Schauberger's buried fermentation chamber is sited so as to be a meeting place for the male seminal energies of the Sun (acting perpendicularly to the Earth) and the female fertilizing energies of the Earth (acting horizontally at or near the Earth surface). The residues or fallout of their combination result in physical growth. As Schauburger describes:

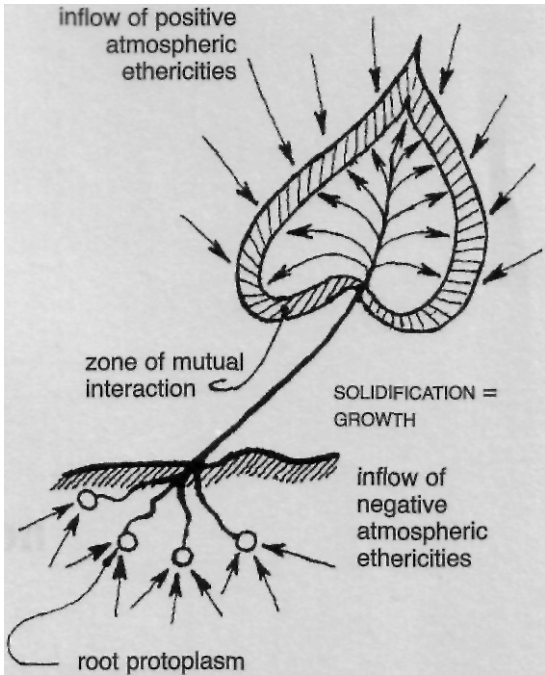
Having been created out of the most thoroughly rotted elements of former life, these emanations are the most natural fertilizers, which have metamorphosed their erstwhile spatiality (spatial volume) to such a degree, that they can only manifest themselves as highly dosed (concentrated) energetic matter.<sup>11</sup>

This is what sustainability is all about. Matter being the energetic waste products of higher (fourth or fifth dimensional) energies created through heat and light, their reconversion into energies make them the best possible natural fertilizers. There is virtually no limit to the charge that can be built up with these energies, as they are nonspatial.

The fertilizing energies (which may be a combination of dynagens, fructigens and qualigens) enter the plant itself through the root protoplasms, the little sacs or vesicles of proto-water or amniotic fluid attached to the root-tip. Like dew, another form of proto-water formed on the tips of blades of grass during the night and early morning, these vesicles, too, collapse if exposed to light and heat. This is why the greatest care must be taken when replanting small seedlings or saplings, which should be done only at night in order to keep injury to a minimum.

Absolutely essential to the plant, these delicate root protoplasms convert the nutritive energies and the minerals into a form that it can absorb. Viktor Schauburger's sketch (Fig. 17.4) illustrates the process, which he describes:

No plant is actually nourished by dissolved matter, but rather by the nutritive entities of geospheric origin, 'ascended' in a fourth dimensional state. These diffuse ethericities can enter the sap-stream only through the root protoplasts, where they are fertilized by diffuse oxygenic ethericities. The higher out-birth of this emulsion (ur-procreation) is an ethericity that belongs to fifth dimension. These concentrations of matter-energy emit negative, hyper-charged emanations in all directions and bind the positively-charged ethericities entering through the skin or the bark. Some of this emulsion solidifies and whatever is subsequently manifested, is what we call 'growth.'<sup>12</sup>



With these natural methods of fertilization there is therefore much that we can do to promote healthy and sustainable growth in agriculture. With this technology we have the ability to restore the soil, our only source of wholesome food, to its former state of high productivity and fertility, and even to increase it. These means are not only far cheaper than the use of harmful artificial fertilizers and noxious pesticides, but they increase both the quantity and quality of food. Schauberger held that conversion of agricultural practice to sustainable organic fertility, forestry to biodiversity and water resources management to take into account Nature's more subtle processes, would halt the present deterioration both of the environment and of the human condition.

First we have to understand how Nature works, and accept her laws. Schauberger's life was devoted to this challenge. Let us hope that his work will empower people to seek this goal, and to encourage the changes needed to change our materialistically oriented society. In Schauberger's own words:

A free people can grow only from a free Earth. Any people that violate Mother-Earth have no right to a homeland, because high-quality races cannot survive in soils destroyed by speculation, i.e. because they are divorced of all connection with the Earth. Human societies without roots perish. They have to experience the path of decay until, like unsuitable fertilizers, they give up their stubborn wills and only then will they be allowed to start again and re-enter the mighty course of evolution.<sup>13</sup>

Fig. 17.4. Viktor's energy exchange diagram.

## PART SIX



# The Energy Revolution

# 18. Harnessing Implosion Power

'In the whole machine there is no straight line and no circle.'  
(Viktor Schauberger's comment to a visitor to his workshop in 1936.)

Arthur C. Clarke, the futurologist, recently commented that we were on the verge of a breakthrough in how we access energy. This was before the giant aerospace company Boeing of Seattle announced new research with a practical anti-gravity device developed by the Russian scientist Evgeny Podkletnov.

The obvious area that would be affected is transport; space travel would suddenly become easy. Aircraft could carry us swiftly and silently without polluting the atmosphere. Surface transport could become swift and cheap. Building methods could be transformed; it could even help with advances in medicine.

But the principal gain would be virtually free, unpolluting energy, which could be produced even in our own homes. Gone would be the necessity to be dependent on an expensive national grid. These changes might not happen smoothly, because political and economic power revolves around the carbon industry, principally oil, and the utilities. Are these power brokers going to give up their control without a fight? Additionally our present, morally bankrupt societies seem always to give the military industries first choice of employing new technologies.

Because Podkletnov's invention was inspired by Viktor Schauberger's research, it might be interesting to follow how his discovery of anti-gravity came from devices he had developed through observing Nature.

## The beginnings of implosion research

During the 1920s, Viktor Schauberger had made a bit of money (as well as a reputation) by building his revolutionary log flumes. This enabled him to design a prototype power plant to extract energy directly from air and water, based on the powerful energies he had identified in Nature. The first experiments he undertook with a Viennese engineer, Dr Winter, in 1931-32 were inconclusive, and

made him realize he had to undertake much more precise observations of how the trout actually transmutes the energies of the stream into such powerful forward motion.

The principle of the trout turbine was that air and water should be directed through spiral shaped pipes with a specially shaped cross section that moved the substance in such a way as to transform it into a 'living' state. After a certain number of revolutions the air or water would be induced through a specific corkscrew motion into a highly energized state, from which the energy could be released. What Schauberger was producing was a reaction at the atomic level. However, instead of violently compressing atoms in hydrogen gas to create helium and an energy release, he was able to twist all the elements together in the quiet, but powerful, way that happens in Nature; this was more comparable to atomic 'fusion.'

As we have seen, one of Viktor's brilliant insights into Nature's methods was the concept of reciprocity. Many of Nature's processes depend on the alternating of complementary, but opposite, forms of energy, e.g heat and cold, gravity and levitation, electricity and magnetism, centrifugence and centripetence, both aspects of which combine to create a wholeness through their synthesizing, reciprocal action. Thus he found that alternating pressure and suction could be employed in this way on the axis of the machine to produce a powerful propulsive effect.

This 'biotechnical' fusion created what Schauberger called 'diamagnetic' or higher quality substances which had levitational tendencies that were the principal feature of the machines he designed at the beginning of the war. The first, built by a Berlin company in 1940, disappointed him because of the poor workmanship. So he moved assembly closer to home, to a Viennese plant where, in an unscheduled test, his first flying saucer-shaped prototype broke away from its anchoring bolts and smashed a hole in the factory's ceiling. The infuriated owner never forgave Schauberger and was uncooperative about testing a second model.

The German culture has a reputation for being open to new ideas. Indeed, a German industrialist who had heard about Schauberger's strange inventions recommended him to Hitler in 1934. Viktor made a strong impression on the Fuhrer who, after the interview, requested all assistance be given to his research in fuel-less energy production. The scientific establishment resented this upstart; indeed, the father of quantum physics, Max Planck, who

had been present at the interview, when asked his opinion of Schauberger's theories, retorted: 'Science has nothing to do with Nature.'

Professor Ernst Heinkel, who developed the innovative aircraft that bore his name, also heard about Schauberger's revolutionary power source, and stealing his confidential patent application, attempted in 1938 to incorporate it into his new jet aircraft, the under-performing HE 280. Heinkel persuaded the patents office to restrict Schauberger's technology to water purification projects, so that he would be free to develop Schauberger's innovations in his aircraft research. However, it dawned on him that the conventional aircraft frame was totally inappropriate for Schauberger's suction engine. The development in 1940 of Schreiver's 'Flying Top' in Heinkel's Rostock factory suggests that he had more success when the power generator was transferred to the new model of prototype flying saucer.

In 1943, the Schreiver saucer and its subsequent developments were moved to a secret location in Czechoslovakia to which Schauberger was from time to time seconded. Word of this new 'aircraft' reached Himmler's ears; he was drawn more to unconventional science as a source of new weapons development. Viktor's activities were at that time highly secret, moving from one project to another, but he was apparently not at that time given responsibility for research and development. However, in 1943 Himmler entrusted to the SS the role for developing German secret weapons.

The SS established production facilities for these new secret weapons in giant cave complexes in Poland and Czechoslovakia, safe from Allied bombs, using prisoners of war as labour. Had these underground facilities been set up earlier in the war, its outcome might have been different. The level of secrecy was extremely high; so much, indeed, that at one crucial location at the end of the war, the SS lined up 62 of the scientists and laboratory technicians, and shot them, to save the secrets of that complex 'free energy' atomic installation falling into the hands of the approaching Soviet troops.<sup>1</sup>

The SS decided in 1944 that Schauberger's machines were ready for production. They drafted him and ordered him, under pain of death, to employ prisoner engineers from the Mauthausen concentration camp near Linz to develop five projects. In addition to the high priority flying saucer programme, there was a water purifier, a high voltage generator, an air conditioner and a machine to

biosynthesize hydrogen from water. However, because of the success of the Allies' bombing, Schauburger moved his operations to Leonstein in Upper Austria, and the improved Repulsine was finally ready for testing the day the Americans arrived; the SS guards had disappeared the day before.

A British engineer, John Frost, who emigrated to Canada shortly after the war, developed a flying saucer project called the Avrocar at a Canadian aerospace plant, funded largely by US capital. It was to take off and land vertically, and to fly at high altitudes at 1,500 mph. They were having trouble with its stability and, realizing that the power plant was inadequate, approached Viktor Schauburger with a generous offer to buy his propulsion system. Viktor declined, because they refused to promise that his invention would be used only for the good of humanity. Schauburger reported that he had a second offer of \$3.5 million from an American company, which he refused for the same reason. This was not long before the Gerchsheimer consortium contacted him.

## The American consortium

Karl Gerchsheimer, initiator of the American consortium that tried (see p. 13) to extract Schauburger's secrets in 1958, as head of all civilian administration and logistics had been the most powerful non-military presence in the U.S. zone of Germany from 1945 to 1950. He was a Bavarian who thought he understood where Schauburger was coming from — he had read some of Viktor's papers, and felt he shared the same love of the mountains and their pure water.

Gerchsheimer formulated a plan with industrialist and financier Robert Donner to bring Viktor and his son to the U.S. to help develop radical power technology, although by that time Schauburger was in very poor health. In May 1958 the group assembled in a secret hideaway in the Texas desert. There were many delays and serious communication problems. Gerchsheimer and Donner had a disagreement with Donner's financial adviser, Norman Dodd, their production director, whom they fired in contentious circumstances. Viktor eventually became convinced, probably mistakenly, that the consortium was part of a U.S. government plan to make a very powerful atomic bomb by developing his research trail, and refused to cooperate.



Basically, they had different agendas; the Schaubergers, Gerchsheimer and Dodd all gave varying accounts of what actually happened. Gerchsheimer complained that Viktor's explanations of his theories were unintelligible and suspected that they were flawed. He gradually came to the conclusion that Viktor would not be able to deliver what they wanted. Viktor, for his part, rebelled when it was finally made clear that he must stay for eight years, whereupon he effectively refused to engage in any further communication.

Only after he and his son had agreed to sign a new contract (which was not translated into German for them), effectively consigning to the consortium all rights to his documents, designs and models and to any future ideas and inventions, was Viktor allowed to return to his beloved Austria, a broken man.

## A new kind of aircraft?

The Wright Brothers' plane a century ago had wings, a tail fin and rudders. All our commercial jet aircraft today are built on the same principles, but are far less fuel efficient, requiring hundreds of times the energy to push through the atmosphere. More and more power is expended to counter both the air resistance and the pull of gravity, at quite astronomical costs in terms of materials and development. It was to reduce the force of gravity that some of the large aerospace companies in the U.S.A. were undertaking research in the early 1950s. One researcher, Townsend T. Brown had designed a saucer-shaped craft whose weight was significantly reduced by energizing the skins with massive amounts of electricity and which happened also to make the craft invisible to radar.

Conventional scientific theory states that certain laws are inviolable, like the Second Law of Thermodynamics, Einstein's Theory of Relativity or the Law of Gravity. We learn this at school, and anyone who claims otherwise is treated with suspicion or derision. Researchers now working at the frontiers of science, such as in quantum physics, are discovering that these laws apply only under conventional physical conditions, though this is not yet widely accepted.

The discovery that the force of gravity can be reduced or even cancelled has profound implications for humanity. It is as though we can add another dimension to our world, one that had always been present, though not in our awareness. For many people

(especially conventional scientists who like events to be predictable) this may be a scary and unwelcome development.

The appeal of anti-gravity is powerful. Passengers travelling in a plane that was able to cancel out gravity would not experience any discomfort, no matter how fast it accelerated or changed course. It would revolutionize space exploration. Put to work in other fields, the absence of gravity would solve the problems of power transmission from engine to wheels, would facilitate fuel-less heating for homes and industry, and have many other uses, even in medicine. Predictions were being made in 1956 that a new kind of aircraft using anti-gravity would be developed within five years. All that was required to usher in an era of efficient, economical, clean and quiet, fuel-less propulsion, of free energy technology for industry and the home — was investment and a little encouragement from the U.S. government.

It never happened; or did it? All discussion about anti-gravity ceased in the U.S. in 1957. But that was the time when the research and development arm of the military-industrial complex went underground, or 'black' as the popular idiom has it, becoming completely unaccountable to government, with astronomical procurement budgets carefully hidden from the scrutiny of the legislative branch. This was justified for reasons of national security during the Cold War, and so it has remained ever since. In fact, America was following the example of Nazi Germany, where the initiative for developing new weapons was taken from the armaments industry in 1943 and entrusted to a very secret (mostly literally underground) programme run by the SS.

There have been various reports of secret aircraft being developed by the black side of the U.S. aeronautical industry. The most noteworthy was the triangular-shaped Northrop B-2 Stealth Bomber which has an electrogravic drive system; it had followed the Lockheed Stealth Fighter (the term 'stealth' signifying their invisibility to radar). Some believe that the B-2 has a system to reduce gravity; what is more accepted is that it envelops itself in a shield of static electricity which both acts like a cloaking device and reduces its air resistance. Since the B-2 went operational in 1993, twenty have been built at a cost of \$20 billion each.<sup>2</sup>

It has been suggested that test flights of experimental flying saucer aircraft may account for UFO sightings. While this is certainly possible, evidence is still lacking of the significant development of a

successful U.S. saucer programme. The evidence, however, for visitations by craft from extraterrestrial sources, and for the US government's undercover research with recovered alien craft is rather more tangible, despite continuing and complex official denials and disinformation campaigns.<sup>3</sup>

Nick Cook, in his book *The Hunt for Zero Point*, comes to the conclusion that the giant aerospace industry is essentially conservative. They could not take on the kind of anti-gravity research pioneered by T.T. Brown in the late 1940s because they would have lost their credibility within the science of aeronautics, and the industry would have suffered.

What I have learned is that there are two kinds of science. The stuff they teach you in college, and all the weird things they don't. This knowledge is dangerous. It's change with a capital C and it's not easy to get your head around. The aerospace and defense industry says it likes people who think out of the box, because they're the guys who give us the breakthroughs ... radar, the bomb, stealth and all that; but think this far out and they look at you like you're crazy. They might even put you away.<sup>4</sup>

The other, often overlooked, reason for conservatism in technology is the extent to which political and economic power is centred partly in transportation, but especially in the carbon fuel industry. As long as there is plenty of oil to be pumped, why risk destabilization of this power by investigating virtually free energy sources that would inevitably bring with it much more freedom for countless millions of people who are currently dependent on the expensive central distribution of oil products and electricity?

## Schauberger's search for free energy

However, in July 2002 *Jane's Defence Weekly* announced that they had seen secret research papers from Boeing, the aerospace giants, confirming positive development of a Russian device — which comprises rapidly spinning superconducting ceramic discs suspended in the magnetic field of three electric coils enclosed in a low temperature vessel.

The man behind this research is Dr Evgeny Podkletnov, a Russian scientist then working in Finland. When he first published details of his anti-gravity device in 1996, he was ostracized by his colleagues and then fired by his university, for the Law of Gravity is inviolable! He subsequently admitted that his father, a leading authority in hydro-engineering, had acquired original Schauberger papers at the end of the war.

The most creative pioneers of new scientific vision are essentially practical people who have an urgent need to see their ideas put into practice. Viktor Schauberger was no exception. Realizing that the machines our technology has developed are not only very inefficient, but that they are also largely responsible for the destruction of our environment, he set about designing appliances which used Nature's creative methods, but which were capable also of producing vastly more power at little cost.

Schauberger abandoned the Euclidean model of straight line and circle. All the functional surfaces of his machines employ the spirals, sinuosity and curves of the open forms of non-Euclidean geometry that are found in Nature. The egg-shapes and spirals that he employed produced life-affirming energies that stabilize, enhance and rehabilitate natural processes.

When Schauberger designed his prototype machines it was extremely difficult to perfect complex curvilinear surfaces. Now, with computer programmes, it is possible with ease to replicate Nature's eggs, spirals and vortices. A design breakthrough to designing benevolent systems would be theoretically simple; what is lacking is the insight and the imagination.

During the 1930s and 1940s, he developed a number of prototypes: of a machine which produced high quality spring water, a domestic air conditioning appliance, and various machines which produced prodigious amounts of motive power. All these machines worked on much the same principles, and had in common a virtually silent and inexpensive operation. All the important elements of Nature's repertoire come into their own, such as male and female ethericities, creative vortical movement, temperature gradients, bioelectricism and biomagnetism. As Schauberger commented: At the intersection of two temperature gradients atomic energy is released. Whether it is a formative or destructive energy is determined in each case by the type of movement and the composition of the alloys used to build the motion-producing machine.<sup>15</sup>

## The biological vacuum

I can generate suctional forces which act indirectly and are entirely undetectable. No current of air can be noticed; only an almost imperceptible cooling, as occurs when air is sucked in strongly with the back of the hand held in front of the mouth. It is therefore incorrect to say that I have copied the cyclones and typhoons of the tropics.<sup>6</sup>

The mechanical principle of all of Schauberger's machines is that of suction, the simplest form of which we experience when we place our hand over the plug hole in a bath of deep water; taking it away and replacing it illustrates the enormous power of suction. Professor Felix Ehrenhaft, who helped Viktor with his calculations, worked out that the power of suction, or implosion as it is called in energy terms, is 127 times more powerful than explosion.

Bathtub suction is powered by gravity, which is related to centrifugence, the complement to centripetence. In a similar way that the aircraft jet engine uses the interaction of suction and pressure on a common axis, Schauberger used the balance between centrifugence and centripetence on a common axis to produce a biological vacuum.

This is created by spinning the gas or liquid at high speed in a vortical manner so that it becomes dense and cool. If water were used, every 1°C of cooling would reduce the volume of the gases contained in the water by 1/273. However, if air containing an average amount of water vapour is used, the amount of compaction of air to water is in the ratio of 816 to 1. One litre of water at +4°C (39°F) weighs 1kg, compared to one litre of normal air which weighs 0.001226kg. This is the basis of implosion energy.

In 1939 the American airship the Akron was destroyed when its helium mysteriously reverted to water, reducing in volume 1800-fold in a massive implosion. This immense reduction in volume creates a biological vacuum that can be an ideal and environmentally harmless source of motive power. Gases are converted into water and those contained in the water are further transformed into energy in the process of continuous cooling which occurs in the formation of a biological vacuum.

Viktor's machines, besides spatially reducing physical matter, also converted it into immaterial energies, in reality a translation from the third to the fourth or fifth dimensions. Callum Coats writes:

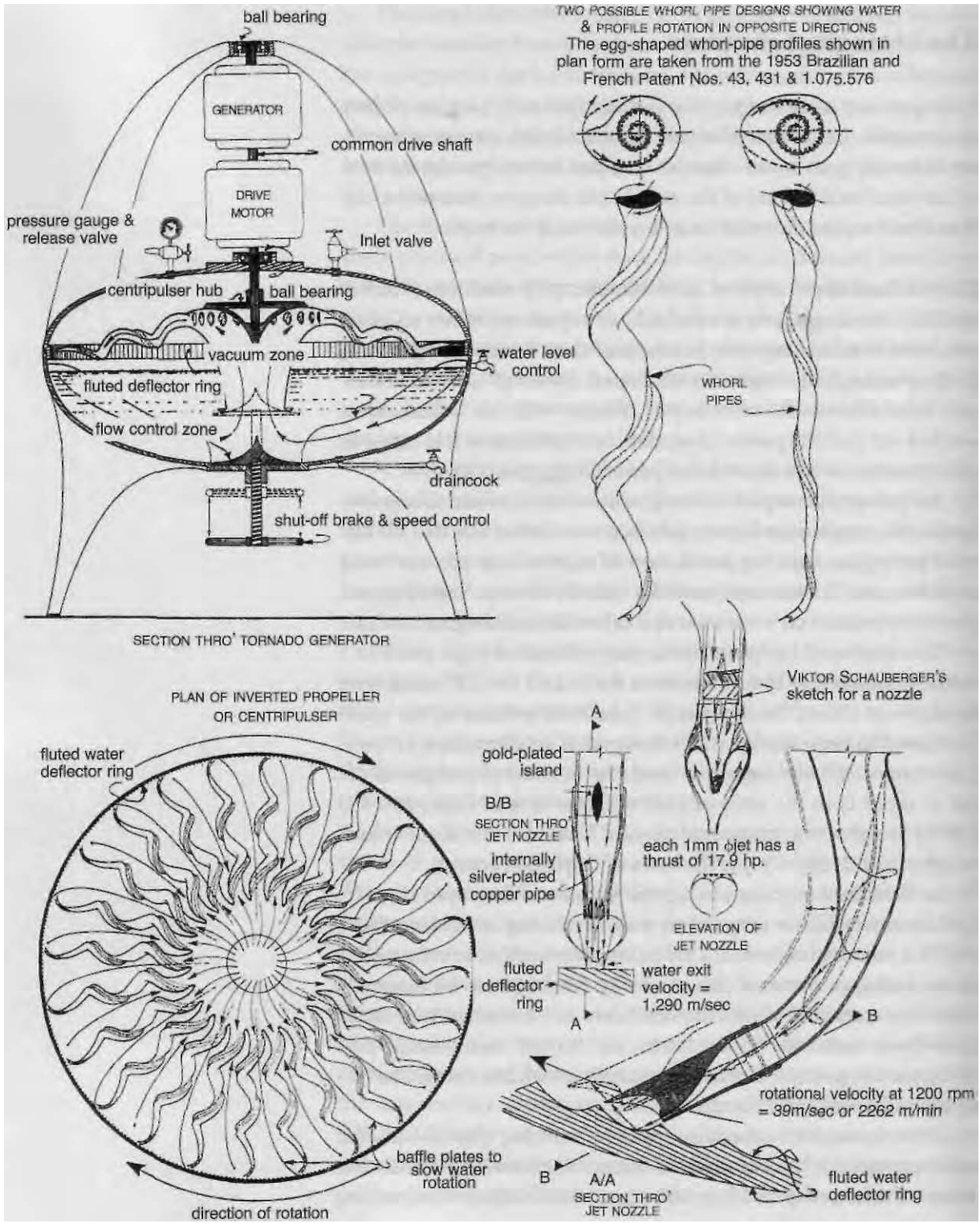


Fig. 18.1. Tornado home power generator. Schematic design based on patent applications and other data.

This higher realm of being is what Theosophical teaching refers to as the Taya point,' the point of extreme potency, the eye of the needle as it were, through which and from which all manifesting energies are propagated. Viktor called this process a 'higher inward fall,' noting in his diary of August 14, 1936:

I stand face to face with the apparent 'void,' the compression of dematerialization that we are wont to call a 'vacuum.' I can now see that we are able to create anything we wish for ourselves out of this 'nothing.' The agent is water, the blood of the Earth and the most universal organism.<sup>7</sup>

Viktor Schauberger demonstrated how to remove matter from the physical dimension, and to pack the resulting nonspatial other-worldly vacuum with almost unlimited amounts of pure, formative energy, the counterpart to the physical substance that had been transformed. Simply the appropriate trigger, usually light or heat, could unleash this huge potential and source of power.<sup>8</sup> He described his aim as follows:

I must furnish those who would protect or save life with an energy source which produces energy so cheaply that nuclear fission will not only be economical, but ridiculous. This is the task I have set myself in what little time I have left.<sup>9</sup>

## Nuclear fusion

The dichotomy between centrifugal and centripetal technologies is never clearer than with nuclear energy. Viktor frequently inveighed against the dangers of nuclear fission (explosive), and he came near to the unveiling the secrets of nuclear fusion (implosive), the Shangri-la of our technical age. The key to it was the extreme biological vacuum, achieved most nearly in his 'flying saucer,' described later. The process can be described as 'cold fusion.'

Walter Schauberger, with his physics and mathematical background was able to describe the process of conversion of matter into 'virtual' states in a way that other scientists could understand; in this way the approaches of father and son complemented each other. Richard St Barbe Baker, the prominent environmentalist and founder of 'The Men of the Trees' movement, impressed with the

potential of the Schauberger physics tried, sadly without success, to interest Clement Atlee's UK government in supporting Walter and Viktor's implosion research.

Instead, Baker brought Walter to England in 1950 to lecture to and dialogue with top scientists. First, at Oxford, there was a gathering of physicists, chemists and forestry researchers, who affected polite interest, but refrained from comment. However, at Cambridge Sir James Chadwick, who with Rutherford had first split the atom, was most impressed with Walter, introducing him to other atomic physicists.

A group of top atomic physicists at Birmingham showed lively interest in this new physics, and admitted to being inspired. A few weeks later Baker was again in Birmingham, and asked the scientists if they had held a postmortem on Schauberger's presentation. 'Yes, indeed,' they admitted; they had decided that it was 'unchallengeable.' 'Then what are you going to do about it?' asked Baker. 'Nothing,' was their retort. 'Why not?' 'Because it would mean rewriting all the textbooks in the world.'<sup>10</sup>

## The repulsator

Viktor started work on this machine (Fig. 18.2) early in the 1930s. It was designed to convert degenerated or distilled water into invigorating fresh water with the qualities of a mountain spring. A 10-litre egg-shaped vessel made of copper, with some active surfaces silver-plated, was used, insulated to retain the biomagnetic and bio-electrical energies. A powered impeller near the pointed base created alternating right and left handed vortices in the water body, duplicating the negatively and positively charged longitudinal vortices at the bends of naturally flowing rivers. It was inevitable that for his energy-generating machines Viktor Schauberger would choose the egg as it is the only closed shape that will naturally generate vortical movement.

The in-rolling and out-rolling movement allows the water to absorb carbon dioxide and various trace elements that are added in a specific order to approximate the chemical composition of mountain spring water. Some four litres of water are drained off while carbon dioxide is introduced. Once the motor has been started, the carbon dioxide is absorbed into the water. Through the vortical action and resultant cooling, it is changed into carbonic acid, which



creates a vacuum. When the water has cooled down to 4°C (39°F), cold oxidation takes place, allowing the assimilation of the trace elements and minerals.

The process takes three-quarters of an hour, and the water is then left to stand in a cold temperature for 24 hours. The water, when sipped slowly straight from the egg at a temperature of not more than 8°C (46°F) will neutralize any over-acidity in the body, allowing the cells, by taking up oxygen (which is passive at this temperature), to return to health.

## The implosion motor

This ambitious machine was designed as an electric power generator, though it did also produce high quality water. It worked on the same principle as the Repulsator, being first filled to exclude air and then drained sufficiently to allow the simultaneous introduction of carbon dioxide.

It was difficult to build, being dependent on a series of identical whorl pipe water jets conceived to replicate the shape of a Kudu antelope horn. This intriguingly shaped tube, which has an egg-shaped cross section, allows an almost perfect hyperbolic double spiral flow to manifest. The shape of the pipe and reducing diameter follow the proportions of the Golden section (see p. 69).

This configuration operates in the same way as Viktor's pipe in the Stuttgart experiment, where the shape of the pipe directed the water in an involuting flow away from the pipe walls, significantly reducing the friction. In the two forms of whorl-pipe shown in the diagram (see Fig. 18.1), the water rotates either in the same direction as the spiral twist of the pipe, or in the opposite direction, depending on which whorl-pipe is selected, the hydraulic efficiency of either being determined by experiment. In practice only one or other of the whorl-pipe configurations would be attached to the central hub.

This centrifugal/centripetal effect creates a double spiral motion to the water, cooling and condensing it; it also allows the energies to change polarities, eg from magnetic to bioelectric or from electric to biomagnetic. This change of polarities would convert resistance-producing energies into motion-enhancing ones, such as levitational and diamagnetic dynagens.

When the centripulser is rotated by the motor at 1200 revolutions per minute, the water is centrifuged down the whorl pipes while

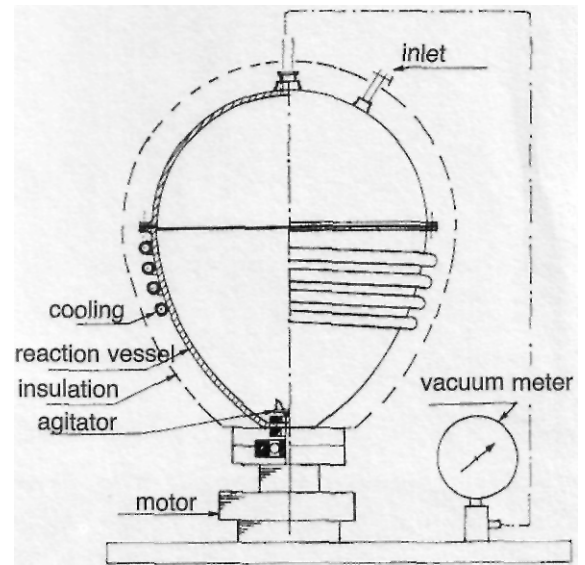
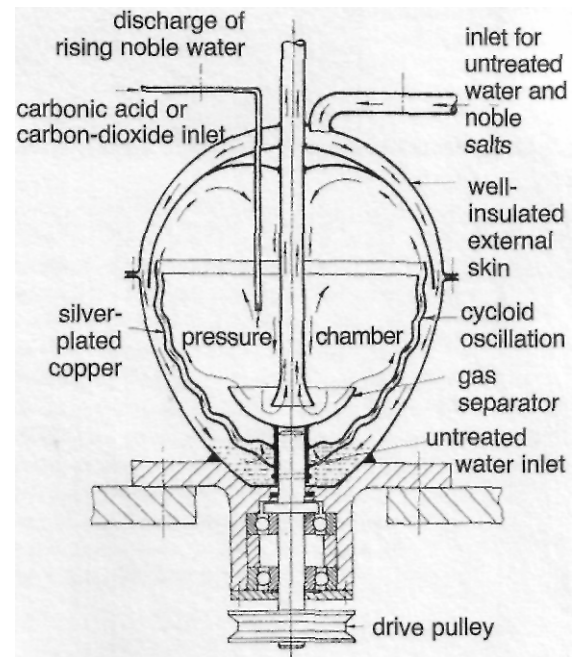


Fig. 18.2. The repulsator. For the biological synthesis of spring water:  
 (a) Alexandersson's (above)  
 (b) Schauburger's (below)



undergoing a double spiral centripetal contraction. It leaves the 1mm diameter nozzle (there are 4 per pipe) with tremendous force because of its density and high velocity. The exit velocity of the water is about 1,290m/sec, (four times the speed of sound), which makes it as solid and hard as steel wire.

The following is the eye-witness report of Gretl Schneider, who accompanied Arnold Hohl, one of Viktor's observers:

Mr Viktor Schauburger has demonstrated the machine to me. The previous huge construction is no more. It has been reduced to half its former size and in operation develops enormous power. I poured a pot of water into the bottom of it. The machine produced an almost inaudible sound and then a 'pfff' in the same instant and the water pierced right through a 4cm thick concrete slab and a 4mm thick super-hardened steel plate with such force that the water-particles, invisible to the eye due to their high velocity, penetrated right through all clothing and were experienced as lightning needle-pricks on the skin. Water glass was also passed through and solidified in 5cm long hairs on the outside of the casing, like bristles.<sup>11</sup>

Some of Viktor's machines did not need a starting motor, and would get going on their own with a few cranks of a manual starting handle. The heavy centripulser perhaps required one, but after gaining sufficient speed would produce sufficient energy to self-rotate. If the machine works as Viktor claimed, the generator should produce ten times more power than the motor needs, or a ninefold surplus of electric current. One of the problems with Viktor's machines was more how to stop them than getting them started. Another was keeping the machine anchored to the floor to stop the strong levitational energies that were generated from lifting it into the air.

## The repulsine and the flying saucer

As we described in Chapter 1, there were several models of this machine developed, the first in 1940 to investigate free energy production, later to validate Viktor's theories about levitational flight, but in the mid-1940s as prototypes of a new secret weapon of the Third Reich:

There are many rumours about what Schauberger was actually doing during this period, most of which suggest that he was in charge of developing 'flying discs' under contract to the army. It later became known that 'the 'flying disc' launched in Prague on the 19th of February 1945, which rose to an altitude of 15,000 metres in three minutes and attained a forward speed of 2,200 kph, was a development of the prototype he built at Mauthausen concentration camp. Schauberger wrote, 'I first heard of this event only after the war through one of the technicians who had worked with me.' In a letter to a friend, dated the 2nd August 1956, Schauberger commented, 'The machine was said to have been destroyed just before the end of the war on [Field Marshal] Keitel's orders.'<sup>12</sup>

This was a much larger version of a 20cm diameter one that Viktor built at the Schloss Schonbrunn which was called the Repulsine. It contained a small high speed electric motor capable of producing up to 20,000rpm at which point the auto-rotation of the centripulser was initiated. 'This machine generated such a powerful levitational force, that when it was started (in Viktor's absence), it sheared the six quarter-inch diameter high-tensile steel anchor bolts and shot upwards to smash against the roof of the hangar.'<sup>13</sup>

There were in fact two different types of the Repulsine. One was secured to the ground and designed to produce power by means of a horizontal shaft; the other to fly. Both produced strong levitational energy — hence the second anecdote above.

As the velocities produced by the centripulsing process increase, the air molecules become cooler and more condensed through the interaction of both centripetal and centrifugal forces. The reduction in volume may reach 1/816, when air is converted into water, and produces a powerful vacuum inside that rapidly draws in larger amounts of air, creating a secondary vacuum above the saucer. The extreme centripulsion and densation not only produce an antigravity effect, but also raise the energy level beyond the physical, so that the electrons and protons are compressed back into their fourth dimension origins.

All of these actions contribute to the levitational affect, enhancing the principal upwards force provided by the densely compressed atoms passing through the aerofoil slits of the turbine blades ('t') before being thrust out between the outer cowl ('A') and

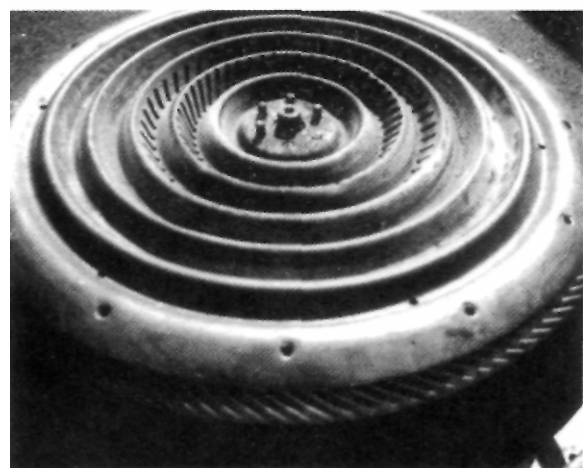


Fig. 18.3 & 4. Repulsator prototypes.

the inner cowl ('E') with explosive force, hurling the saucer into the semi-vacuum above it (see Fig. 18.5, opposite).

Callum Coats in his fourth volume of the Eco-Technology series, *Energy Evolution*, brings together Viktor Schaubergers notes, comments and discussions that have survived the appropriation of the Soviet and American authorities. In that fascinating volume the machines discussed are the Air-turbine machine, Water-driven and Air-driven implosion machines, the Repulsator, the Klimator and the Repulsine. Sadly, the text often refers to sketches that are missing.

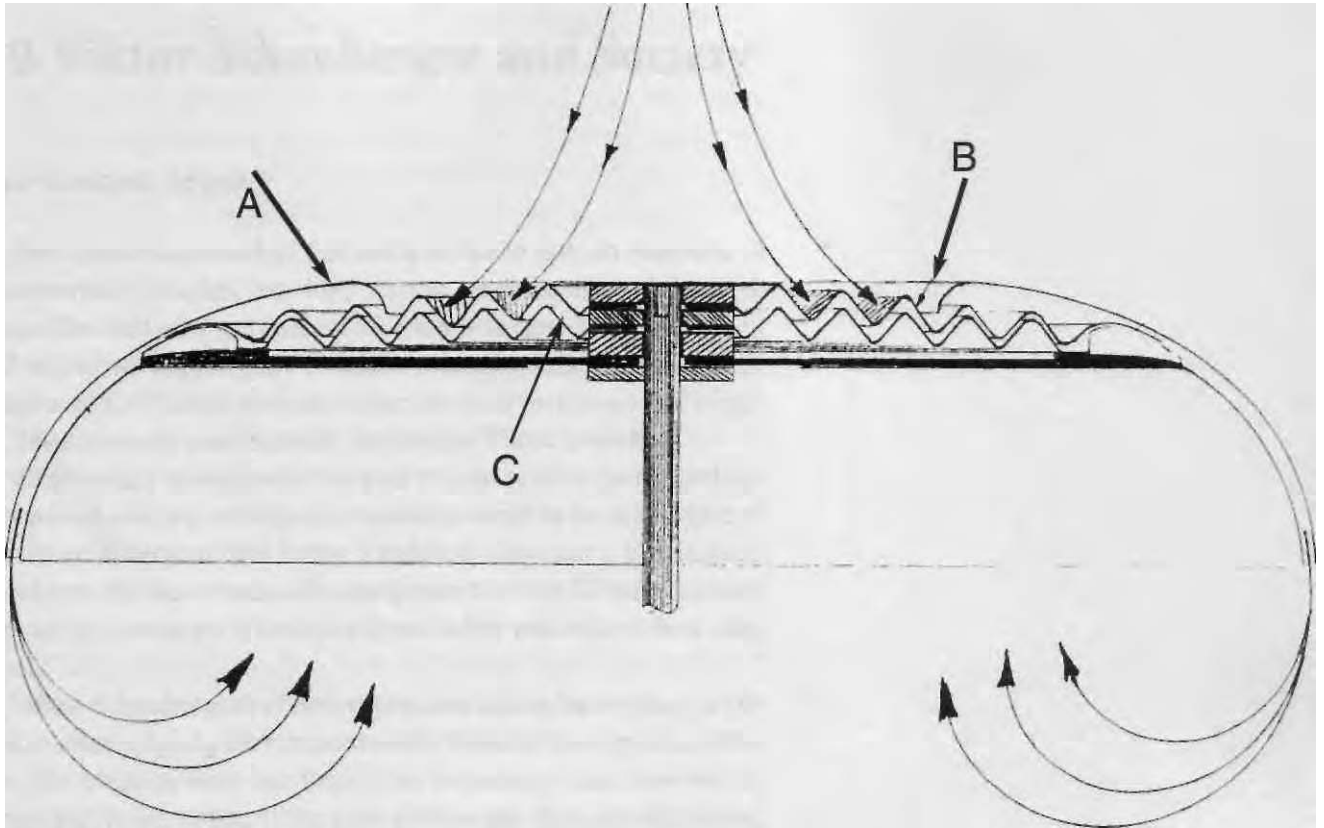
The Air-turbine machine created an artificial thunderstorm, operating on the principle of the tornado. Schaubergers envisaged this as a fuel-less silent engine to power an aircraft by creating a vacuum in front to pull it forward. The Water and Air-driven implosion machines operated on the principle of a powerful vacuum; he designed a submarine using a water-driven implosion motor. The Klimator was a cooling or heating machine designed for domestic air conditioning.

There is no doubt that Viktor Schaubergers produced a number of impressive and highly innovative machines for various purposes, and we have eye witness accounts of the operation of some, as well as some of his notes. However, any prototypes or working models were either destroyed in Germany during the war, or were expropriated from his flat by the Russians who first occupied Vienna, or confiscated by the Americans when they overran the Leonstein works at war's end, or by the Donner-Gerchsheimer consortium, who spirited him away to Texas in their ill-fated attempt to acquire his secret knowledge.

In the meantime it must be noted that there is no proof that any of them reliably produced over a significant period the power that was intended.

There are a number of people in America and Australia working on Schaubergers ideas, though the political climate has repressed development of their work. Let us hope that if these conditions improve, we might see modifications of some of Viktor's machines making their appearance. We shall be examining in the next chapter some of the new initiatives that have been inspired by Viktor's research.

The tragedy of Viktor Schaubergers life was of being born into a society with little interest in his dream of helping humanity become empowered and free. Instead, to his intense sadness and heartache



he found his inspired vision of working with Nature twisted towards the military aims of one of the most sadistic regimes of modern times.

American science could not take seriously someone with no education in science. Viktor Schauberger was hardly one to be considered as a contender for the stakes of space-age innovation. He merely observed Nature and talked about fish swimming in mountain streams, yet he was the one who cracked the anti-gravity challenge. As he himself remarked:

Implosion is no invention in the conventional sense, but rather the renaissance of ancient knowledge, lost over the course of time.<sup>15</sup>

Fig. 18.5. Cross section through flying saucer.

A — 1.2mm thick curved copper sheet, with central opening seen on Fig. 18.3. Between rilled plates B & C, air is drawn in due to the centripulser's high rate of rotation and subjected to powerful centrifugal and oscillating forces which cool and condense it. Transforming into water condenses air 816 times, causing a vacuum which accelerates the intake of more air. At revolutions of 20,000 rpm, vacuum and densification become intense, packing the molecules so tightly as to cause a levitational effect. The living vacuum thus created changes the atoms into a virtual state, compressing them back into their original 4th dimensional formlessness.

# 19. Viktor Schauberger and Society

## The human legacy

We have been concerned in this study so far to give an overview of Schauberger's insights into how Nature works at the subtle level. Viktor also had strong views on where our society has gone wrong and where we might start to make changes. First we shall seek insights on the human level and, later, we shall mention some ongoing developments and research inspired by Viktor's work.

Viktor was a natural scientist and visionary who challenged the very worldview of a culture that considers itself to be at the apex of human achievement. His is not a political view, nor a particularly moral one. He was continually exasperated by the literal blindness of those in power, their inability to see what was before their very eyes.<sup>1</sup>

Viktor Schauberger's observations and vision have given us the keys to disentangling the environmental mess we have got ourselves into. His insights were not limited to technology and how we do things, but to all of life. If we were able to see that our education, social organization, philosophy, religions, medicine and science were all based on seeing only a part-world, we would have a sense of how much more exciting and fulfilling life could be on this wonderful planet, if we could escape from our materialistic worldview and accept our place on Nature's interconnected plane.

But, like the crowd in Hans Andersen's tale going along with the naked Emperor's fantasies, we are all accomplices in this tragic charade. Schauberger put it forcefully:

If humanity does not soon come to its senses, and realize that it has been misled and misinformed by its intellectual leaders, the prevailing laws of Nature (with poetic justice) will reliably act to bring about a fitting end to this ineptly contrived culture. Unfortunately, the most frightful catastrophes or scandalous disclosures will have to happen before people become aware that it is their own mistakes that have led to their undoing. These can be rectified only with great

difficulty, precisely because it was those in power principally who committed them. Rather than question themselves, these institutions and individuals, ever protective of their own interests, would allow millions of their fellow human beings to perish before they would ever admit their errors.

A host of so-called experts is lined up against any systematic attempt to correct these errors. They are obliged to advocate the course they have championed, because it is their livelihood and they wish to be looked after until the end of their days. Yet, even this obstacle might be overcome if the mistakes could be restricted at least to a particular branch of industry. A thorough analysis of the most common mistakes made over the centuries reveals the enormous extent of the malaise arising from flawed principles and perverse practices. It reveals such grave cultural, technological and economic violations that no branch of industry is left untouched. Not even a partially unaware expert can absolve himself of blame, whatever his chosen field.

At the outset a powerful opposition must be reckoned with. It would be futile to expect any support from experts when, under these circumstances, it is obvious that nearly every one of them would be threatened. But this obstacle should cause no alarm, for we are not concerned here with the livelihood of a few, but with the survival of the whole of hoodwinked humanity. The attitude of many of our young people today certainly provides clear evidence that humanity is still morally healthy. They militate vehemently against the signs of decay emerging everywhere and refuse to continue to trot mindlessly down the road... that has led us into an economic and cultural cul-de-sac.

Opposition alone, however, achieves nothing. Our youth will achieve any practical success in their struggle only when the causes are identified and the errors are revealed that previous generations and we have made, so plunging the world into disaster.<sup>2</sup>

Schauberger wrote often of how balance is one of Nature's most urgent requirements. He would comment on how humanity is contravening Nature's law of balance. Amongst these imbalances are the enormous inequalities in wealth and opportunity in almost

every country on the globe; a totally unacceptable level of persecution, abuse and lack of human rights; the pursuit of mindless, hedonistic and materialistic activities; and above all a lack of compassion or respect for fellow human beings of whatever origin, and for the animal and plant kingdoms. These are not moral observations of humankind, but part of a detached view of why we are violating the health of Nature or the planetary biosphere.

In Chapter Two, you may remember, when we discussed how all material objects are composed of atoms and particles in constant motion, it becomes possible to understand that everything is energy. There are different kinds of energy; thoughts and feelings are energy. Energy has qualities as well as frequency. Energies and actions of differing qualities affect each other favourably or adversely. For example, the crucial ingredients of the human being's gift of free will are intention and commitment. The quality of the intention (self-important/greedy or loving/compassionate) affects the quality of all our actions and their outcomes. Healing of any kind or at any level is affected by the quality of the healer's energy. In one's experience this becomes quite clear, yet apparently it is beyond the ken of contemporary science. Viktor Schauburger was amazed that this basic knowledge was not part of our education.

Viktor was attuned to the wider field of knowledge, and felt that our educational system greatly contributes to our society's limited worldview. He did not specifically write about this topic, but the following quote from a recent study very much sums up what he felt, and helps us to understand where things have to change:

Our much-vaunted educational system specializes in instilling the known. There is a token and often grossly insufficient acknowledgment of the process of knowing. The knower is the Cinderella of almost every educational system. Self-awareness is actually obscured by conventional education, which cultivates a mentality of splitting, separating and compartmentalizing. Knowledge is gained of separate disciplines which are greatly divorced from the knower, isolated from each other and cut off from their connection to life lived in the world. As a result, by the time pupils leave school, if they are lucky their minds may have been fairly well-honed, but they are tuned to specialization and the particular, adept at putting things in boxes with labels, rather than being open to



the larger field of knowledge. Their energies may be well channeled, but they display only a fraction of the creative innocence and appetite for life and learning of a small child. (Ardui and Wrycza, *The Way of Unfolding*)<sup>3</sup>

## What of the future?

Viktor Schauberger realized that the human community had little time to change its ways and begin to follow Nature's laws, before the inevitable reckoning that Nature will require of humanity. He had a rather touching faith in the ability of the younger generation to overthrow the oligarchies of power. However, in the last fifty years, the ability of a controlled media, especially television, to manipulate and undermine cultural behaviour, and the apparent irreversibility of the drug culture, have discouraged hope of initiatives coming from the young.<sup>4</sup>

The years since Schauberger's death have also seen the tentacles of multinational corporations reaching into every country in the world, capitalism at its worst. The capitalist system which has developed in the past 500 years or so, has brought unprecedented wealth to millions across the world. This increase in people's individual incomes (which admittedly expands their choices) has come at the appalling cost of pulling humanity as a whole out of balance with its environment; it is the enemy of biodiversity, and therefore of Nature. Until our human society has more interest in moral and ethical concerns than in making money, we are probably stuck with capitalism, for state ownership of industry has not always proved particularly workable.

The other structure with which we seem to be saddled is so-called democracy, which despite its name, has proved to be nearly as corrupt a way of centralizing power as any totalitarian system. If we wish to participate in society, we are committed to some extent to collude with these systems.

If more choices were made on moral and ethical grounds, rather than self-interest, the capitalist system might be doomed. However, if we can begin to see that the engine that drives Nature and its evolutionary processes has its origin in the supreme spiritual centre and source of all creativity (of which Nature is the mirror), then our moral principles would have a more stable foundation. Nature has no morality; but its laws seem to have been designed by the

supreme consciousness to harmonize with the moral and ethical standards set by 'God' for humanity (e.g. The Ten Commandments). The most relevant of Nature's laws for us are perhaps the laws of Balance, of Biodiversity, and of Evolution towards higher consciousness.

On present performance, it is doubtful whether the human community can remain viable into the twenty-second century; the seeds of our self-destruction have been sown so widely. I have always felt that it would take a worldwide disaster to bring about the collapse of our corrupt systems, which could return decision making to the place where it really belongs - the local community, in respectful relationship to its natural environment; which, we must accept, has happened in the past.

Dr Dorothy Rowe, the distinguished psychologist, said in a recent interview: 'Ninety-nine percent of suffering isn't caused by natural disasters; it's caused by the ideas we hold. And if we believe these ideas are absolute truths, then we suffer and we force other people to suffer. But if we believe that our ideas are ideas we have created, then we know we're free to change them.'<sup>5</sup>

# Appendix

## Implementing Schauberger's vision

It is clear that many are now responding to Viktor's call to become familiar with Nature's laws and to work with them. They are recognizing that this is the only way to start turning back from the terminal disasters that otherwise surely await humankind. As with any significant changes of consciousness in human history, a few pioneers become the leaven through which all of society starts to wake up and, like a cosmic shift, the awakening becomes unstoppable.

What follows are examples of what these pioneers are up to. For the most part these are very practical projects, often to do with water purification, river management or energy generation. What these innovations often have in common is the influence of the spiral or of vortex energy. The one area that is missing is that of implosive energy generation. Without Viktor's models and detailed drawings, it is hard to see how anyone can crack that nut, unless someone in American or Russian intelligence leaks some vital notes (as with Evgeny Podkletnov).

There is, however, the theory of spontaneous or synchronistic origination, which some claim accounted for the simultaneous discovery of electricity and other significant technical breakthroughs. When the time is right and the need is great, perhaps some higher intelligence with a concern for human evolution has cooperated through Nature to sow simultaneously the necessary seeds in a number of fertile minds.

Contact addresses and websites for individuals and groups mentioned here, and others, are found in Resources, on p. 276.

### SWEDEN

Olof Alexandersson is a Swedish engineer who became interested in Viktor Schauberger's research in 1956 and wrote the excellent introductory book *Living Water: Viktor Schauerger and the Secrets of Natural Energy*. He did not meet Viktor, but developed a friendship

### HIDDEN NATURE

with his son Walter and met many of Viktor's old friends and colleagues. In 1963 he formed the Swedish Science Group for Biotechnical Technology which produced (among other devices) an 'apparatus for biological synthesis of spring water,' which was similar to Viktor's Repulsator.

This important research is being carried on today by the Institute for Ecological Technology (IET) in Malmo, Sweden. IET was formed by Olof Alexandersson as a foundation to continue the work of Biotechnical Technology. In the early 1980s IET organized an expedition to the Ouluanka Nature national park in Finland. Its aim was to verify Viktor's observations in an untouched natural environment. Later, IET replicated Schauberger's 'double water jets' experiment and (see p. 99) continued to work with the Repulsator.

Today IET is run as an association which evaluates, develops and applies Viktor Schauberger's ideas and theories. It operates a loose network, the IET-community, to help anyone who has an idea for a research project in the area, and runs networking seminars. IET helped with the organization of International Workshops for Natural Energies (IWONE 2001) in Leipzig and IWONE 2003 near Malmo, Sweden.

IET (which was known as the 'Malmo group') has replicated Schauberger's Stuttgart experiments, interpreting them in the light of modern chaos and self-organizing systems research. Ongoing projects are mainly in three areas: for the purification, improvement and desalination of water; for energy production using ideas from the turbine in the Repulsator; and propulsion methods for air and water vehicles.

#### AUSTRIA

After his father died, Walter Schauberger set up, in 1962, the Pythagoras Kepler School (PKS) at Engleithen in the Salzkammergut mountains of Upper Austria (Fig. A.1). Walter was a physicist and mathematician, and set out to validate mathematically his father's research.<sup>6</sup> His particular interests were harmonic theories (the monochord) and conceptions of non-Euclidean geometry (plane sections of a hyperbolic cone). He never published his research; however, Callum Coats, who studied with Walter at the PKS, is currently writing up some of Walter's work. It was intended that Walter's eldest son, a lawyer, Dr Tilman Schauberger should succeed him at the PKS but, in the event, Tilman died shortly after his father's death in 1994.



Fig. A. 1. The Pythagoras Kepler School at Engleithen.

As a result, Walter's younger son Jorg gave up his work in the Austrian media to help save his grandfather's work. Aided by his wife, he runs courses at the PKS for those who wish to learn more about the Eco-technology heritage. Every year, there are usually about six seminars in German, with participants from Austria, Germany, Switzerland, but also from Italy, Hungary, the Benelux Countries or from Scandinavia. Less frequently they now also run international seminars in English, bringing together people from all over the world who are engaged in Schauberger-inspired research, to share their findings. Speakers at these seminars are specialists or technicians in water or environmental issues who are willing to follow unorthodox ways of studying how Nature works. Members of the PKS now give lectures in many different countries round the world.

Water and the vortex are the present main topics of study at the PKS. However, they intend to test Viktor's ideas for river balancing with energy bodies and flow guides to help rivers flow naturally and to protect valuable land and property from flooding.

The Schauberger Archives are open for research by appointment — see the PKS website. The PKS copper gardening tools, books, cards and videos are on sale by mail order.

#### GERMANY

Although Viktor's contemporaries have long since gone, and also most of Walter's, there are still some who knew them. Dr Norbert Harthun has re-formed his Gruppe der Neuen (the New Group), whose aims are to explore Viktor and Walter Schauberger's theories and to interpret them in contemporary scientific idiom.

In 1967 the terms 'environmental pollution and 'environmental protection' were virtually unheard of. At that time nobody demanded a gentle technology, friendly to Nature. In that year Walter Schauberger, a scientist who was then a 'lone voice,' gave a lecture on 'Biologically Oriented Technology,' in the centre of the heavily polluted Ruhr (the main coal mining area of Germany). Inspired by Walter's message, Norbert Harthun, and a few other specialists, persuaded Walter to join the Gruppe der Neuen in Aachen to promote a technology that conformed with Nature's laws. The Group also decided to launch their own scientific bulletin Mensch und Technik — naturgemass to publish articles about the possibilities of a new science for working with Nature. This innovative journal has now been a leader in its field for 26 years.

#### HIDDEN NATURE

Members of the Group have given many lectures at home and abroad on the theme of how to restore good heart to Nature and the environment as part of a requirement for a high quality of life. The pioneering work of this and similar groups has initiated a change in awareness that was inconceivable thirty years ago. The 'Gruppe der Neuen' has remained consistently independent from institutions and sponsors. It is still active, and its website gives details of its published articles.

Implosion is a quarterly magazine founded in 1958 by Aloys Kokaly, generally aimed at the lay reader, which is still published quarterly or semi-annually by Klaus Rauber. It has been, without doubt, the richest repository of Viktor Schaubberger's writing (in German), and has been the source of substantial portions of the Eco-technology series.

## BRITAIN

John Wilkes, an artist and sculptor at Emerson College in Sussex, has pioneered the Virbela Flowforms, which are a series of formed basins, arranged on sloping ground, to stimulate a water flow into figure-of-eight vortical movements, causing the water to pulsate rhythmically (Fig. A.2). This movement simulates a mountain stream, energizing, restructuring and oxygenating the water. His first Flowform installed near Stockholm, Sweden in 1973, which is part of a biological sewage recycling system for a community of 200, has been a great success. The recently established Flow Design Research Institute, through the Virbela International Association, has contacts in 35 countries that have led to more than 1000 installations in over thirty countries, their purposes ranging from the aesthetic and educational to biological purification, farming, interior air conditioning and medical/therapeutic use. For further information, see Wilkes' *Flowforms: the Rhythmic Power of Water*.

Wilkes studied projective geometry under the distinguished mathematician George Adams, joining him at the Institut für Strömungswissenschaften (Flow Research Institute) at Herrischried in Germany, where he later collaborated with Theodor Schwenk (see *Sensitive Chaos*). It is tempting to believe that Schaubberger's insights about water probably share a common source with those of Adams. Certainly people often tend to link Wilkes' Flowforms with Schaubberger's vision of water.



Fig. A.2. Flowform.



Fig. A.3. Vortex energizer.

Fig. A.4. Triple harmonizer.



Implementations, a British group which markets the Schauberg-inspired copper gardening tools is also developing a full-sized phosphor bronze 'Golden Plough' in order to run tests to replicate the increases in fertility that Viktor found with his prototype.

A novel initiative combining healing techniques with the Schauberg vortex principle has been developed by the Centre for Implosion Research (CIR), in Plymouth. Specially imploded water is injected into a spiral-vortex cone-shaped copper pipe. The specific shape enables continual recharging of the imploded water from cosmic energy (the ether) always present in the environment, and is used to improve the quality of either standing water or drinking water supplies and to balance the energy in local environments (Fig. A.3).

The CIR also produces much smaller, 'personal harmonizers,' flat spiral shaped tubular forms inspired from the spiral carvings found at the great Neolithic ritual site at New Grange in Ireland (Fig. A.4). The small tubes contain imploded water, which is continually recharged by the environment because of their spiral form. Worn as ornaments or jewellery, they enhance the personal energy field and may be placed under a glass of water or a wineglass to improve the quality of the liquid. The great popularity of these devices is a compliment to their efficacy to improve energy or enhance individuals' sense of protection and of wellbeing (see [www.sulis-health.co.uk](http://www.sulis-health.co.uk)).

#### DENMARK

One of a number of vortex water treatment groups, Clean-Water has developed a very practical two-litre jug for home use. The Living Water Vortex Jug (Fig. A.5) employs in its screw-down lid a small motor to drive a silver impeller that forms a splendid vortex in the water for 3 1/2 minutes. It claims to erase impressions of the water's history of abuse, by superimposing more refined, constructive energies (see p. 156). The water is restructured, cooled, softened and purified, and has been very well received worldwide.

#### USA

The pioneer spirit is still alive in the USA, and we expect to add many to our list of American Schauberg innovators. The interest in permaculture and biodynamic farming predisposes many towards Schauberg's vision.

One such is Dan Reese, who developed Vortex Water Systems in Texas, inspired by reading Alexandersson's Living Water. They are

designed to solve the increasing problem of pollution of wells in the American South, by unwanted salts and minerals, and to restructure the water so that it feels smooth, uses less soap and tastes pure. The Vortex system (Fig. A.6) has no moving parts or filters, does not use chemicals and is driven only by the force of the well pump.

It was found that the system could be expanded to service as many as 76 homes from one well. A system is now being tested for removing mineral salts from a salt intrusion well and a larger farm system to help with the problem of cotton rot and to use less water to grow the same amount of crops. These will be major breakthroughs for the industry.

#### AUSTRALIA

As in the USA, many Australians are sympathetic to Schauberger's ideas. Many people depend on rivers for their water source. The author, Callum Coats, who has tested a number of Viktor's experiments, was inspired to design a well to receive water filtered from the river. A well should be dug about 5-10 metres from the river bank, depending on the size of the river, about 1.5 metres in diameter, the depth to correspond to the depth of the river bed. If the soil between the river and the well shaft is porous, the water will be filtered by the soil. If the soil is impervious, a channel connecting the river and well shaft should be dug and filled with fine sand to act



Fig. A.5. Living water vortex jug.

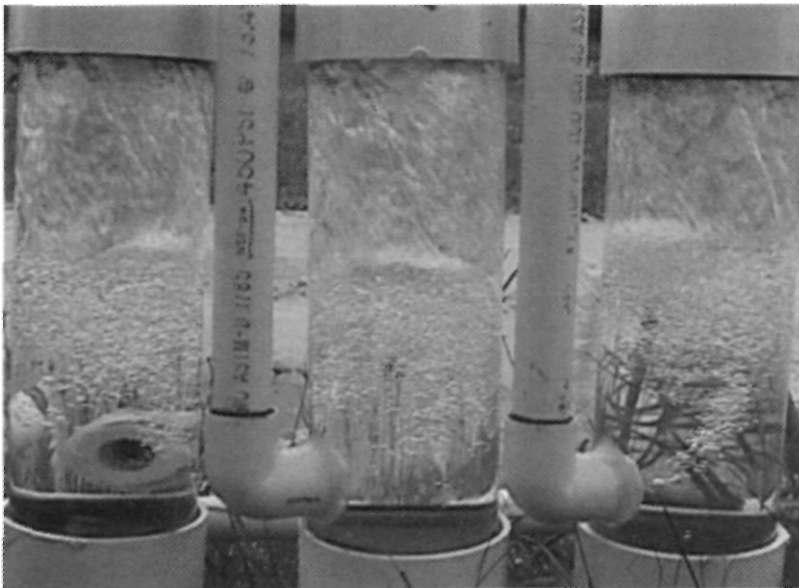


Fig. A.6. Vortex water system.



as a filter. The well shaft must be entirely covered at the surface, to keep the well dark and cool and discourage the growth of pathogenic bacteria. The pump should be well away from the opening to avoid pollution, and the opening should be raised if there is any chance of the river flooding and pouring into the well (see *Living Energies*, p. 202.) This system was first set up in 1972 and in recent contact with the present owner of the property (purchased in 1979) Callum Coats was told that the water supply had at all times functioned flawlessly, and still does.

Callum Coats is also involved in the making of a three-part video on Viktor Schauberger's theories in conjunction with Martin Selecki of 'Filmstream in Byron Bay, NSW, as well as in the production of a 50 litre water cooling egg-shaped container in association with Phil Sedgman of 'Living Water Flow-Forms,' also of Byron Bay.

# Endnotes

## Introduction

1. Living Energies, p. 28.
2. 'The Emergence of Biotechnology,' by A.Khammas, Implosion magazine no.83, p. 19.
3. The Schauburger Archives, Linz, Jan, 1952.
4. The scientific environment has considerably narrowed. Scientific research in the 1930s was largely government funded, and research for the most part was independent of commercial interest. Schauburger would be appalled by the present environment which, still identified with the material viewpoint, is now almost entirely dependent on industrial funding and the consequent demand that scientific research serves the needs of business and commerce. In addition, the anonymous 'peer review' system is a form of censorship against those who propose research that does not conform to convention, or which threatens the reviewer's own agenda.
5. Living Energies, p. 9. His arch enemies, the Viennese Association of Engineers, had hatched a plot to dispose of him in a mental hospital, under SS observation. Schauburger was to go into the Vienna University clinic for a routine examination of his WWI wounds. Before this, by coincidence, he had tea with an old friend, Mrs Primavesi and told her he would return in twenty minutes. When he did not, and she found he had not returned home either, she went to the nearby clinic, whose director she knew well, refusing to leave until Viktor had been found. He turned up in the portion of the hospital reserved for the mentally insane, trussed up in a straightjacket waiting for the lethal injection (the standard practice for the disposal of undesirables in that regime). Needless to say, she quickly extricated him. (Another theory is that the plot against him was ordered by Hitler himself, who had met Schauburger.)
6. See also Chapter 18, p. 252, for Richard St Barbe Baker's account.
7. Viktor Schauburger, Our Senseless Toil.

## 1. Schauburger's Vision

1. The Schauburger Archives.
2. Published in Die Wasserrwirtschaft, 20,1930.
3. Ancient Futures: Learning from Ladakh, by Helen Norberg-Hodge.

## 2. Different Kinds of Energy

1. A few years ago, it was established by precise calculation that the bumblebee's body weight prohibits it from flying, according to the laws of aerodynamics. (Just as well the humble bee wasn't told.) Clearly there is much that conventional science does not understand about Nature!
2. Teilhard de Chardin, priest-scientist, was the first to propose this, in answer to his ongoing question: 'How can the two realms of our experience, the outer and inner worlds, be reconciled?' David Bohm went further, insisting that matter and energy are one and the same. He described two orders, the Explicate Order being what we can measure and to some extent describe; and the Implicate Order which we cannot measure, and in our present state of knowledge and evolution, cannot adequately describe.
3. The implication of this natural law is that compassion will triumph over selfishness, generosity over greed, a law more evident higher up the evolutionary ladder. This outcome may at present look distant, but if we believe that it is meant to be, then our small attempts to make changes should gain the cooperation of all-powerful Nature. This is similar to the Christian belief that God will cooperate if only we take the first steps. Also, see 'Opposites working towards Balance' (p. 52).
4. The qualities of higher dimensions are: Fourth — Time (control of space/time); Fifth — Presence (outside of space/ time); Sixth — Potential (the creative state which is non-dimensional); Seventh — Gateway to the Divine.
5. These diagrams are from From Atoms to Angels by Paul Walsh-Roberts, a very accessible introduction to these concepts.
6. Another important by-product of quantum physics research is the work of US

physicist Hugh Everett, who in 1957 observed that when a measurement is performed on a quantum system, all possible outcomes of the measurement actually occur; this contrasts with the conventional view that only one of many possible states is ever observed. His proposal leads to the conclusion that the Universe is constantly dividing to give vast numbers of alternative universes that co-exist, but do not interact with each other, and that we live in a single one of these many universes.

7. For a good introduction to the dimensional shift and how it will affect us all, see Cori, The Cosmos of Soul (details in Bibliography).
8. See further particularly in Chapter 3. Calum Coats calls this resolution of apparently conflicting elements 'dialectic thinking,' by which unity is found (Living Energies, pp. 61-64, esp. table p. 63), and quotes Hegel defining this as, 'the process of thought by which such contradictions are seen to merge themselves in a higher truth that comprehends them.'
9. Living Energies, p. 74.

## 3. The Attraction and Repulsion of Opposites

1. The ozone layer filters out the harmful ultra-violet rays known as UVa and UVb. The UVc, which have a different wavelength, are allowed through, and play a large part in the growth of organisms (for instance, helping to build healthy bones).
2. Viktor Schauburger once commented wryly that instead of asking himself what caused the apple to fall to the ground, Sir Isaac Newton should have asked how it got up there in the first place!

## 4. Natures Patterns and Shapes

1. Your Body Doesn't Lie (Behavioral Kinesiology) by John Diamond MD, Harper and Row, New York, 1979.
2. This is the basis of the 'muscle test' to discover foods that may be toxic for someone. The subject holds the sample (maybe a bottle of wine) in the left hand, or to

their chest, while the 'tester' tries to push down the raised right arm of the subject, who tries to resist the pressure. If the arm has lost muscle tone, the food may have an undesirable effect on the subject.

3. Living Energies, p. 42.
4. If they are above absolute zero (-273°C).
5. BBC Wildlife magazine, June 2001.
6. See Bibliography: Backster; also Bird & Tompkins The Secret Life of Plants contains an evaluation of his work.
7. Cymatics: The Study of the Interrelationship of Wave-forms with Matter, by Hans Jenny, Basilius Press, Basle, 1966.
8. Democritus (460-370 BC)
9. Callum Coats shows scores of examples from Nature in Living Energies, pp. 51—53.
10. Harold S. Burr, Blueprint for Immortality: Electrical Patterns of life Discovered, Spearman, 1972.
11. Lawrence Edwards: The Vortex of Life: Natures Patterns in Time and Space, Floris Books, 1993.
12. Earth's diameter is 7,920 miles; the Moon's is 2,160.
13. Named after a twelfth century Italian mathematician born in Pisa, Leonardo Fibonacci or Filio Bonaccio. The son of an Italian customs agent based in Alexandria, he helped to bring Arabic numbers to the Roman world and popularized the modern decimal system of numbers. The series bearing his name progresses by adding the two previous numbers to make the next, e.g. 1,1,2,3, 5,8,13,21,34,55,89, etc. (It is said that he used it as a model for the growth of a population of rabbits.) Dividing a Fibonacci number by the number before it produces the Golden Mean proportion (the Golden Ratio) in increasing accuracy of decimal places, the larger the number.
14. Walter Schauburger's research of this phenomenon was groundbreaking.

## 5. Energy Production

1. There is controversy about whether human activities are the cause of global warming. Climate change goes through enormous cycles. In Britain, for example, from 1,000 years ago when it was much warmer than now (grapes were grown in Scotland), to 200-300 years ago when the ice on the Thames could support an elephant, with many fluctuations in be-

tween. We have insufficient records to say with certainty that the present accelerated warming world-wide is cyclical in its origin. However, there is little doubt that its increasingly severe impact is greatly compounded by the enormous output of carbon emissions (Observer, January 5, 2003). See also Chap. 13, note 1.

2. The average fuel consumption of a typical car allows a journey of 620 miles (1000km) for an energy expenditure of 1000kW, or one person's annual energy consumption. In terms of oxygen consumed, a car driven at 50kph requires 22.25kg of oxygen, roughly 750 times the amount needed by a human being for the same period. In eleven hours, the car has consumed the oxygen one human being requires for a year. Callum Coats calculated that to replenish the oxygen devoured by the world's roughly 450 million vehicles would require a healthy productive forest of 38 million km<sup>2</sup>, or 28% of the total world's total land area.
3. Kilowatt hours.
4. The ratio between created matter and the energies required to create it was established in 1984 by the Nobel awarded Swiss atomic scientist Dr Carlos Riebers as about 1:1 thousand million, effectively the proportion of the whole of reality of which we are aware.
5. Entropy has its counterpart — ectropy (sometimes called 'negentropy'). The laws of entropy or thermodynamics apply to the products of our mechanistic science as it is a 'closed' system. Nature, however, is an open system, and one finds in fact that entropic tendencies are held in check by the predominant ectropic ones, otherwise life could never have developed. Evolution is essentially ectropic or energy integrative rather than energy dissipative, as increasingly complex organizations harmonically stabilize more energy.
6. Weston Price: Nutrition and Physical Degeneration, 1938,1945,1998. As an experienced dentist, he noted the degeneration of jaw and bone structure, but also the deterioration in intelligence that ensued from a change to western diet.
7. Living Energies, p. 35.
8. See Living Energies, pp. 50-55 for further illustrations of spiral forms in Nature.
9. H.H.Price, Wyckham professor of Logic at Oxford (Hibbert Jour, 1949).

## 6. Motion — the Key to Balance

1. Viktor Schauburger, Implosion magazine no.51,p.22.
2. Viktor Schauburger, Implosion magazine no.48,1954.
3. A hyperbolic spiral represents the physically nonmaterial centre-less dynamic of Nature's outside>inward motion. The phi spiral is the dynamic of inside>outward physical and material growth.
4. Ibid. p. 56.
5. Dr Tilman Schauburger, Viktor's grandson and an expert on his work, described his grandfather's ideal spiral-vortical motion, the 'Cycloid Spiral Space-curve,' as goal-oriented, structured, concentrated, intensifying, condensing, dynamic, self-organizing, self-divesting of the less valuable, rhythmical (cyclical), sinuous, pulsing, in-rolling, centripetal (and out-rolling centrifugal) movement. This applies also to Figs. 12.1 and 12.2.
6. If the starting radius is 1 and the initial resistance is 1 on an inwinding path, when the radius is halved, the resistance is  $[V2]^2 = 'A$  and the rotational periodicity, frequency or velocity is doubled.

## 7. The Atmosphere and Electricity

1. High specific heat means that water is slow to heat up, but also slow to cool. Its heat retaining quality makes it good for heat storage systems.
2. The temperature neither decreases nor increases standantly, but fluctuates as we ascend through the various atmospheric layers, so that at a certain altitude, at around 7 miles (12km) for instance, the temperature is -76°F (-60°C), whereas around 31 miles (50km) it is 50°F (+10°C).
3. This increases by the inverse square of the separation. If, for example, the separation is 10mm, then the potential is 12. If the separation is reduced to 1/2, i.e. 5mm, then the potential is 22 (=4) and so on, as shown in Fig. 12.6. The smaller the separation, therefore, the greater the corresponding potential, which could be unleashed once the permittivity of the dielectric has been overcome. (Permittivity is the amount a substance can assist or resist the transfer of an electric charge.)
4. Pure water has a dielectric value of 81, which is 81 times greater than a vacuum

- (=1). A thin layer of pure water vapour may therefore have the capacity to resist the transfer of enormous charges, permitting the accumulation of very large voltages and potential. The concentric layers of water vapour with a temperature of 4°C may thus act like a spherical condenser, formed of nesting spheres which charge the Earth with energy.
5. Being in a lower dynamic and more harmonically stabilized energetic state, the greater density of water vapour at increasingly lower altitudes may well correspond through resonance to the lower wavelengths of the incident radiation, whose frequency has been reduced by contact with the braking effect of the atmosphere, thus creating the medium with which radio-waves are reflected back to Earth.
  6. For elaboration of how this can be demonstrated, the reader may read Coats' description of Lord Kelvins and Walter Schauberger's experiments (*Living Energies*, pp. 95-99).
  7. Leopold Brandstatter, *Implosion statt Explosion*, self-publication, Linz 10, Fach 20, Austria.
  8. *Living Energies*, p. 100.
  9. Kenneth David and John Day: *Water — The Mirror of Science*, p. 149, Heinemann Educational, 1964.
  10. A 1°C rise in temperature causes the retention, but not necessarily an even distribution, of an additional 1,000 million cubic metres of water vapour in the atmosphere (*Living Energies*, p. 100).
- ## 8. The Nature of Water
1. *Our Senseless Toil*, Pt.I, p. 11.
  2. See *The Divining Hand* by Christopher Bird.
  3. Davis, K.A. and Day, J.A., *Water — The Mirror of Science*, 1964.
  4. *Implosion* magazine, no.8., 1945.
  5. How to obtain safe drinking water is dealt with in Chapter 12.
  6. Viktor first came to the attention of hydrologists in 1922 with his revolutionary water-flume design for transporting logs inexpensively from inaccessible untouched mountain forests without the usual high rate of damage of conventional methods. This, his first encounter with opposition from the scientific establishment, is well described in both

*Living Water and in Living Energies*.

7. The extra 'e' enlarges the meaning of the usual carbon,' to include a whole range of elements used in forming the physical structures of life (see further on p. 51).
8. Viktor Schauberger, *Our Senseless Toil*, Pt.I, p. 4.

## 9. The Hydrological Cycle

1. *The Memory of Water — Homeopathy and the Battle of Ideas in the New Science* by Michel Schiff, Thorsons, 1995. Callum Coats has more on Benveniste's research and the controversy around it, in *Living Energies*, pp. 119-121.
2. The temperatures indicated on the following diagrams do not necessarily conform to actual temperatures, but are intended to demonstrate the process.

## 10. The Formation of Springs

1. The French for spring is source.
2. Callum Coats adopted an impeller design taken from Schauberger's 1936 patent for an air turbine.

## 11. Rivers and How they Flow

1. From Viktor Schauberger's treatise, 'Temperature and the Movement of Water' ('Temperatur und Wasserbewegung'): *Die Wasserwirtschaft*, No.20,1930.
2. Schauberger also pioneered new designs and built fourteen such dams. For information on this, see *Living Energies* pp. 159,160, and *The Water Wizard*, pp. 101, 121,122-34,209.
3. See also *The Water Wizard*, p. 207.
4. Schauberger established that turbulence was a natural automatic acceleration-restricting brake in flowing water, in a treatise he published entitled 'Turbulence.'
5. Callum Coats in *Living Energies*, pp. 176-7 describes one he saw.

## 12. Supplying Water

1. *The Ecologist*, May 30,1999.
2. International Water Management Institute.
3. *Guardian Weekly*, March 14,2001. The UN Department of Economic and Social Affairs estimated that six countries will account for half the increase: India,

Bangladesh, Pakistan, China, Indonesia and Nigeria. Their startling projection is based on the assumption that fertility will continue to decline. The population explosion would be even more dramatic but for the HIV/AIDS epidemic. The report noted that increased international migration would be one consequence. The pressure on food resources will be enormous, but the impact on water supplies for the developing countries will be nothing less than catastrophic.

4. *National Geographic magazine*, 'Earth's Fresh Water under Pressure,' Sep. 2002
5. *The Ecologist*, May 30,1999.
6. *National Geographic magazine*, *ibid*.
7. *The Ecologist*, May 30,1999.
8. *Ibid.*, Caspar Henderson.
9. *Ibid*.
10. Viktor Schauberger, *Our Senseless Toil*.
11. *Fluoride — Drinking Ourselves to Death?* by Barry Groves is a well-informed source of factual information on this subject. (Gill and Macmillan, 2001)
12. *Ibid*.
13. Waldblott, McKinney and Burgstahler: *Fluoridation: The Great Dilemma*, Coronado Press, 1978:288.
14. *Jour. Dent. Res.* 1990; 69:723-7.
15. 'Living in a democratic fluoridated country,' *Australian Fluoridation News*, Sep-Oct 1995;31(5).
16. Barry Groves, *Fluoride: Drinking ourselves to Death?*, p. 227. Gill and Macmillan, 2001.
17. Viktor Schauberger, *Nature as Teacher*, p. 5.
18. The best ones have a four-stage system: ceramic for bacteria, carbon for chemicals and organic contaminants, ion exchange for heavy metals, and block carbon for final cleansing; the filters being easy to change, every six months.
19. We discussed higher energies interpenetrating our physical world in Chapter 2.
20. *Our Senseless Toil*, Pt. II, p. 14.
21. The energies are essentially dynagens, or growth-promoting, created by the bio-metal composition — silver (male), and copper (female); the silver also has bactericidal properties. Dynagens are also produced by the centripetal movement of the main water body flowing down the centre, raising the overall vitality, life-energy and wholesomeness of the water.
22. Callum Coats describes these experiments in detail in *Living Energies*.

23. Our Senseless Toil, Pt. II, p. 34.
24. Heart specialists were recently astonished to discover that blood flow through the heart and arteries depended on a spiral movement (New Scientist, Feb. 6,2001).
25. 'Hydrodynamics of Blood Flow,' by Dr. Ernst O. Attinger, Div. Biomedical Engineering, University of Virginia Medical Centre, Charlottesville, VA 22901, USA.

### 13. The Role of the Forest

1. From the Schauburger Archives.
2. 'The Dying Forest' ('Der sterbende Wald'), by Viktor Schauburger, Pt. 1: Tau magazine. Vol. 151, Nov. 1936, p. 30.
3. The Gulf Stream, which gives north-west Europe an exceptionally mild climate, might fail for two reasons: (a) the inability of the failing Amazonian heat engine to push the stream from the Caribbean; (b) the cold, salty waters around Greenland power two 'pumps' which draw the warm Gulf Stream towards Northwest Europe, and send cold water back southwards. The heavy cold water streaming down the coasts of Greenland pours into the abysses, propelling forward me lighter and warmer Gulf Stream. Fresh water from the melting Greenland icecap could weaken the pumps and close down the Gulf Stream. An important new theory is that, within a few years of the failure of the Gulf Stream pumps off Greenland, a new mini ice age would quickly spread in the North Atlantic, with temperatures dropping by 10°F in north-eastern USA and in Western Europe (Woods Hole Oceanographic Institute Report, Nexus, Feb.2003 and especially see www.whoi.edu). Interestingly, over seventy years ago, Viktor Schauburger predicted that over-clearing of forest and critical mismanagement of water supplies would lead to a new ice age (in Our Senseless Toil).
4. Soil under forest floors retains ten times more water than nearby grassland. The Amazonian basin was almost devoid of humid tropical rainforest in the last glaciations. Clearing the forest produces high contrast between day and night temperatures, gusty winds and dry soil. Clear-cutting and burning cause dieback in neighbouring forest; water table disappears and desertification ensues.
5. 1.5 to 2 million animal species live in the forest canopy. A profusion of epiphytes

(ferns, orchids, and so on) takes up nutrients flushed down by heavy rain. All nutrients are retained within the entire system, and provide for the lateral expansion of the forest. Medicinal plants are common, many of which are as yet unresearched and may be lost forever. The tropical rainforest environment exhibits the highest levels of evolutionary development and biodiversity.

6. 'Destroy the Amazon — Destroy the World' by Peter Bunyard, The Ecologist, Jul/Aug 2002
7. The Amazonian Forest produces latent heat to drive air masses in three separate directions:
  1. Crossing the Caribbean to Florida, helps drive the Gulf Stream NE
  2. Over the Andes into the Pacific westerly, following the trade winds
  3. Southwards, towards Patagonia
 In the temperate latitudes, rainfall is derived from moisture-laden winds blowing in from the oceans. The tropical rainforests, on the other hand, particularly the Amazonian, actually create rainfall and recycle it. Only 25% of the Sun's energy heats the air. The remaining 75% is converted into 'latent heat' by evapo-transpiration, the mechanism through which water is pumped into the atmosphere from the leaves and stems of the plants. The humid air rises rapidly, forming cumulo-nimbus and layered clouds that irrigate areas further downwind, releasing the latent heat energy back into the atmosphere. Two-thirds of the world's rainfall is affected by these cloud systems that also produce most of the world's lightning in a narrow band on either side of the Equator, helping to power the outreach of surplus energy from Amazonia to neighbouring countries.
8. Except when the El Nino is operating a contrary wind system.
9. Permaculture Institute, P.O.Box 1, Pyalgum 2480, NSW, Australia. Permaculture International Ltd, P.O.Box 6039, South Lismore 2480, Australia.

### 14. The Life and Nature of Trees

- I. Viktor Schauburger insisted that we must understand more about the vital importance of trees for our environment. This chapter, except for the last section, is relatively standard information about trees which, as the highest form of the veg-

etable kingdom, have a mediating role with the animal kingdom.

2. From Design in Nature by J. Bell Pettigrew, Longman Green, 1908, p. 671
3. Adapted from Health and Light by Dr. John N.Ott: Devin-Adair, Greenwich CT, USA, 1973.
4. There is an intriguing exception to this rule. Balsa, the softest wood of all, grows in certain equatorial forests. This suggests that the wood-quality-determining frequency has proceeded past the point where hardwoods are created and has re-entered the resonant conditions of the softwood-generating frequencies, although one full octave below, because balsawood is a magnitude softer than the softest of normal softwoods.
5. Schauburger found that the quality of resonant timber could be improved by submersion in a highly energetic mountain stream. In fact, the timber for the famous Stradivarius violins that had superb resonance was from mulberry that had fallen into Alpine streams.
6. See Wertheimer, N., 'Electrical Wiring Configurations and Childhood Cancer': American Journal of Epistemology (Mar. 1979). Also: Perry, S. and Pearly, L., 'Power Frequency Magnetic Fields and Illness in Multi-Storey Blocks,' Public Health (1988) p. 102. See also: Dowdson, D et al., 'Overhead High Voltage Cables and Recurrent Headaches and Depression: Practitioner, 1988, pp. 435-6.
7. Cowan, D. and Girdlestone, R. in Safe as Houses? describe the German researcher Volkrodt's theory of the resonance similarity of some trees' leaves and needles to microwave receivers.
8. Ibid.
9. Girdlestone regards brief exposure to a microwave oven in good condition not to be dangerous. The problem, he says, is that acceptable emissions vary internationally; he quotes one German test in which nearly all the 101 ovens emitted more than the makers' guarantee, but passed the German requirements, while all would have failed the Russian standard.
10. Callum Coats gives a fuller description of photosynthesis in Living Energies, pp. 218-220, from which our table is reproduced.
11. See Bunyard, The Breakdown of Climate, p. 77.

## 15. The Metabolism of the Tree

1. Viktor Schauburger, *Our Senseless Toil*, Pt.II,p.34.
2. For greater detail on this experiment, see Viktor's description in *The Water Wizard*, pp. 50-52, or Callum Coats in *Living Energies*, pp. 131-32. Callum also describes another experiment designed by William Morgan in the 1860s that shows the action of true springs.
3. Diagrams from *Wurzelatlas; mitteleuropaischer Grunlandpflanzen*, Vol. 1, 'Monocotyledoneae' 1982, and Vol.2, 'Pteridophyta und Dicotyledoneae,' 1992, by L.Kutschera and E.Lichtenegger: G.Fischer, Stuttgart, Germany.

## 16. Soil Fertility and Cultivation

1. *Tau* magazine, Vol. 146, p. 11,1936.
2. *Our Senseless Toil*, Pt.I, p. 13.
3. From the Schauburger Archives.
4. *Genetic Engineering*, by Mae-Wan Ho, Gateway 1998, Gill and Macmillan, 2000.

## 17. Organic Cultivation

1. *The Survival of Civilization*, self-published by John Hamaker and Don Weaver.
2. Further detailed information on rock dust can be obtained from any of the following: Don Weaver, P.O.Box 1961, Burlingame, CA 94010, USA; Joanna Campe, ed. of *Remineralize the Earth*, 152 South St., Northampton, MD 01060, USA; Barry Oldfield, president,'Men of the Trees,' 3 Over Avenue, Lesmurdie 6076, W Australia; *Das Buch von Steinmehl* by Helmut Snoek: Orac-Pietsch, Germany.
3. Alex Podolinsky's work is fully elaborated in *The Secrets of the Soil*, by Christopher Bird: Harper, New York
4. Austrian Patent No.265991.
5. *Implosion*, No.45, p. 3.
6. Excerpt from a letter from Viktor Schauburger to Dagmar Sarkar in the mid-1950s; the diagram has been redrawn and annotated by Callum Coats for greater clarity.
7. An alternative egg-shaped amniotic liquid manure transformer is described on p. 273 of *Living Energies*.
8. Viktor Schauburger, *Implosion* magazine.
9. Viktor Schauburger uses the prefix ur-

indicate what he called the 'first born or basically primeval.

10. Schauburger Archives, Linz, January 1952.
11. Viktor Schauburger, *Our Senseless Toil*.
12. Excerpt from a letter from Viktor Schauburger to Dagmar Sarkar in the mid-1950s; the diagram has been redrawn and annotated by Callum Coats for greater clarity.
13. *Implosion* magazine, No.37, p. 8.

## 18. Harnessing Implosion Power

1. *The Hunt for Zero Point*, by Nick Cook, Century 2001. Nick Cook is a veteran aerospace researcher; he is Aviation Editor and Aerospace Consultant to *Jane's Defence Weekly*, the world's leading military affairs journal, and Industry/Defence Editor of *Interavia*, the aerospace trade publication.
2. *Ibid*.
3. For background, refer to *After 50 years the Cover-up Conspiracy goes on'* by Hamish Mackenzie (*Sunday Express*, June 16, 2002), on Dr Stephen Greer's 'Disclosure Project' to persuade Congress to set up an open hearing on the secrecy surrounding the US government's UFO and alien contact and research programmes. The big US corporations like Boeing, Lockheed Martin, Northrop Grumman would benefit most from alien technology.
4. *The Hunt for Zero Point*, Nick Cook.
5. Viktor Schauburger, *Implosion* magazine, no.71,p.12.
6. Viktor Schauburger, *Implosion* magazine, no.83,p.17.
7. *Living Energies*, p. 276. The Schauburger quote is from *Mensch und Technik*, year 24, vol.2,1993.
8. Callum Coats cites Russian research published in 1992, which describes space as multi-layered (layers, if you like, belonging to different dimensions); and a vacuum, not a 'curved void' as usually understood, but to be composed of elementary vacuum particles resulting from the conversion of actual electrons and protons into virtual states which exist, not in our space, but in a complementary layer. (*Living Energies*, p.276)
9. Letter to Aloys Kokaly in 1953 — *Implosion* magazine, no.29, p. 22.
10. From St Barbe Baker's Foreword to *The Schauburger Departure*, (September 28, 1980) which was the original title for what

subsequently became *Living Energies*.

11. Callum Coats commented that the water she poured in was probably charged with silicates, which Viktor considered essential to healthy water. The natural oscillating concentrative vortical flow in healthy streams also produced Viktor's 'emulsions' from the fine dispersions of minerals and trace elements (including silicates) which endow the upstream-moving water with the levitational energies that enable trout or salmon to negotiate high waterfalls.
12. A. Khammas in *Implosion* magazine.
13. *Living Energies*, p. 287.
14. These phenomena are discussed in greater detail in *Living Energies*, pp. 275-93, and particularly in *Energy Evolution*.
15. Viktor Schauburger, *Implosion* magazine, No.36,p.3.

## 19. Viktor Schauburger and Society

1. Increasingly, one is drawn to Gurdjieff's dictum, that humanity is asleep, or to change the metaphor, the blind are leading the blind.
2. *Our Senseless Toil*.
3. Unpublished ms. The authors are NLP trainers. Peter Wrycza's book *Living Awareness — Awakening to the roots of Learning and Perception* was published by Gateway in 1997. A few pioneers in education have attempted to redress this overemphasis on absorbing discrete facts that have no connection to the student, by adopting a more holistic, inclusive, approach. The most successful of these have probably been Maria Montessori (Montessori schools for the younger ages) and Rudolf Steiner (the Waldorf Schools) for the whole age range.
4. *Fast Forward into Trouble* by Cathy Scott-Clark and Adrian Levy (*Guardian Weekend*, June 14,2003) on how murder, fraud, and drug offences are plaguing the peaceful Buddhist idyll of Bhutan, only four years after the introduction of 46 cable TV channels.
5. Interview by Ursula Kenny in *The Observer*, September 1,2002, in connection with the publication of Dr Rowe's book *Beyond Fear*, Harper Collins, 2002.
6. A short biography of Walter Schauburger can be found on the PKS website.

# Resources

## Schauberger- & Ecotechnology-associated Websites & addresses

(For more up to date information, please look on our website: [www.Schauberger-books.org.uk](http://www.Schauberger-books.org.uk))

The Schauburger Institute & Research Centre, known as the PKS (Pythagoras Kepler School), of which Jorg Schauburger, Viktor's grandson, is the director:  
PKS, Kaltenbach 162,4821, Lauffen, Bad Ischl, Austria; [www.pks.or.at](http://www.pks.or.at)

Norbert Harthun, one of Walter Schauburger's colleagues still runs the group that is probably closest to Viktor Schauburger's work. Groupe der Neuen: [www.gruppederneuen.de](http://www.gruppederneuen.de)

Callum Coats, the principal authority in the English language, on Viktor Schauburger's research. He spent several years studying with Walter Schauburger and then, over a period of nearly twenty years, set about translating and editing most of the archive of Viktor's writing. He is the author of Living Energies and the editor of the four-volume Eco-technology series: [www.Schauberger-Ecotechnology.com](http://www.Schauberger-Ecotechnology.com)

The U.K. networking centre, run by Alick Bartholomew. Its purpose is to keep an up-to-date list of various research projects around the world, and to make available Schauburger books, CDs, videos & tapes:  
Sulis Health, The Hollies, Wellow, Bath, UK, BA2 8QJ; [www.Schauberger-books.org.uk](http://www.Schauberger-books.org.uk)

The Living Water Vortex Jug, and its little cousin the portable Aqua-Vortex (derivatives of Schauburger technology) oxygenate and restructure the water, improving its energy and taste. These, a plumbed-in filter that removes fluorides and most pollutants, and the Personal Harmonizers may be obtained through: [www.sulis-health.co.uk](http://www.sulis-health.co.uk)

Institute of Ecological Technology (the Swedish Malmo group) are the inheritors of Olof Alexandersson's research: [www.iet-community.org](http://www.iet-community.org)

The Schauburger Copper Gardening Tools are produced by Johannes Stadler at:  
PKS, 162 Kaltenbach, A-4821, Lauffen, Austria;  
e-mail: [stadler.cuprum@Eunet.at](mailto:stadler.cuprum@Eunet.at)  
— U.K. agent: Implementations, PO Box 2568, Nuneaton, CV10 9YR, UK  
[www.implementations.co.uk](http://www.implementations.co.uk)  
— US agent: Eco-Restorative Institute, 708 Gravenstein Hwy North #139, Sebastopol, CA 95472  
e-mail: [info@eco-restore.com](mailto:info@eco-restore.com)

Water Vortex Systems, PO Box 1295, Bandera, Texas 78003, USA  
[www.texashillcountrymall.com/vortex](http://www.texashillcountrymall.com/vortex)

Clean Water, in Denmark, is the manufacturer of the Living Water Vortex jugs. Their website is in Danish, Dutch, English & German: [www.Clean-ater.dk](http://www.Clean-ater.dk)

Dr Masaru Emoto's books — The Message from Water (see Bibliography) — may be obtained in the UK from Sulis Health, The Hollies, Wellow, Bath, BA2 8QJ (01225 833 150) [www.sulis-health.co.uk](http://www.sulis-health.co.uk);  
In the USA at: [info@holisticnetworker.com](mailto:info@holisticnetworker.com).  
Dr Emoto's website [www.hado.net](http://www.hado.net) contains background to the research, some photographs and networking information.

The Vortex and Implosion — professional & informative sites: [www.altenergy.org](http://www.altenergy.org) and [www.homepage.ntlworld.com](http://www.homepage.ntlworld.com)

Vortex World, [www.home3.swipnet.se/~w-58759](http://www.home3.swipnet.se/~w-58759)

William Baumgartner's site; implosion-on-line newsletter: [www.vortexscience.com](http://www.vortexscience.com)

Martin Chaplin of South Bank Univ. on water structure: [www.sbu.ac.uk/water](http://www.sbu.ac.uk/water)

Dr Patrick Flanagan's microclusters in water: [www.flantech.com](http://www.flantech.com)

Dr Jacques Beneviste's research on memory in water: [www.digibio.com](http://www.digibio.com)

David Dennard has put on his website chapters of his book The Pearl of Wisdom which deals with the power of the Vortex, which are worth reading: [www.whirlpower.cc](http://www.whirlpower.cc)

Orgone Labs for books & videos: [www.orgonelab.org/livingwater](http://www.orgonelab.org/livingwater)

Holis, a useful German website: [www.holis.de/nat/forelle](http://www.holis.de/nat/forelle)

Filmstream — Water videos: [www.filmstream.com.au](http://www.filmstream.com.au)

Geoff Egel's Encyclopedia of Free Energy, a.k.a. 'Solaris' and 'Research Triangle:' [www.geoffegel.tripod.com/turbine](http://www.geoffegel.tripod.com/turbine)

Frank Germano has an informative Schauburger site. He networks regularly with engineers worldwide, attempting to reconstruct Viktor's implosion devices. Main interests: the repulsive, the home power generator, the biotechnical submarine (adapted to air travel for an airship), the water energizers and whorl-pipes: [www.frank.germano.com/viktorschauburger](http://www.frank.germano.com/viktorschauburger).



# Bibliography

- Abram, David *The Spell of the Sensuous*. Random House, 1996; Vintage 1997. (A visionary view of humans' connection with the Earth and with Nature.)
- Alexandersson, Olof *Living Water*. Turnstone, 1982; Gateway 1984; Gill and Macmillan, 2002. {Good accessible portrait of Viktor Schauburger and his ideas about water; first published 1977 in Swedish.}
- Ardui, Jan and Wrycza, Peter *The Way of Unfolding* (unpublished ms).
- Ash, David and Hewett, Peter *The Vortex*. Gateway, 1990. (Many superstitions and mysteries may be explained in terms of energy. Good introduction to vortex theory.)
- Backster, Cleve *Primary Perception — Biocommunication with Plants, Living Foods and Human Cells*. White Rose Millennium Press, 2003 (or from [www.Sulis-health.co.uk](http://www.Sulis-health.co.uk)). (38 years after the first startling experiment which demonstrated plants' reaction to threats to their well being, this seminal and very readable book has finally appeared. It would be impossible to overestimate the importance of this research, for it goes to the heart of the basis of life — that all of life is interconnected and interdependent, and that all actions have wider consequences. It lifts a little the edge of the intricate web of life.)
- Bartholomew, Alick *The Schauburger Keys* ([Schauburger-books.org.uk](http://Schauburger-books.org.uk)). (A summary of Viktor Schauburger's worldview, originating as notes made during the writing of *Hidden Nature*.)
- Baker, Richard *St Barbe Dance of the Trees*. Oldbourne, 1956.
- , *I Planted Trees*. Lutterworth, 1944.
- , *My Life, My Trees*. Lutterworth, 1970; Findhorn, 1979. (One of the great pioneers of restoring our forests.)
- Bellamy, David *101 Ways to Save the Earth*. Lincoln 2003.
- , *The Bellamy Herbal*, Century 2003.
- , *Bellamy's New World: Botanical History of America*. BBC 1983; Smithmark 1985.
- , *The Changing World: The Forest*. Simon and Schuster Educ. 1991, Lincoln, 1999.
- , *The River*. Simon and Schuster Educ. 1991, Lincoln, 1999.
- , *The Rock Pool*. Random, 1988; Simon and Schuster Educ. 1991.
- , *The Road Side*. Random, 1988.
- , *How Green are You?* Random 1991; Lincoln, 1991.
- , *Jolly Green Giant*. Century, 2002; Arrow 2003.
- , *Tomorrow's Earth: A Squeaky-Green Earth*. Courage, 1992.
- Bird, Christopher and Tompkins, Peter *The Secret Life of Plants*. Harper, 1989.
- , *Secrets of the Soil*. Harper, 1989. (Two classics in the area of alternative science.)
- Blair, Lawrence *Rhythms of Vision*. Croom Helm, 1975. (The changing worldview of science.)
- Blossfeldt, Karl *Urformen der Kunst*. Wasmuth, 1935. (Superb photogravure plates of plant growth.)
- Bunyard, Peter *The Breakdown of Climate*. Floris Books, 1999. (Excellent description of how climate works and of the human causes of climate change.)
- , (ed.) *Gaia in Action*. Floris Books, 1996.
- Burr, Harold *Blueprint for Immortality: Electrical Patterns of Life Discovered*. Spearman, 1972. (A classic in its field)
- Carson, Rachel *Silent Spring*. Houghton Mifflin, 1962; Collins, 1964. (The book that inspired the environmental movement.)
- Coats, Callum *Living Energies*. Gateway, 1996; Gill and Macmillan, 2001. (The most authoritative study of V. Schauburger's research; took eighteen years to write.)

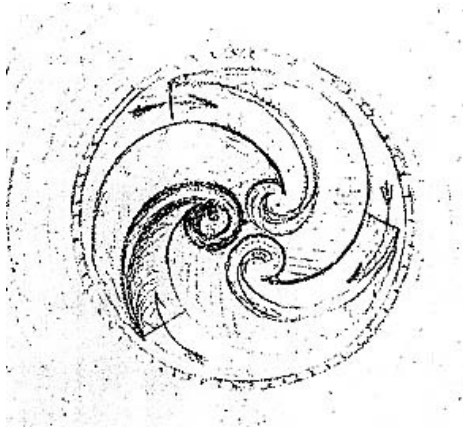
- Cobbald, Jane *The Spiral Dance — A Look at Viktor Schauberg's Life & Work*; — not quite published. (Viktor's descriptions of what he saw, his explanations of Nature's processes that he observed, and the inventions he developed as a result of his understanding.)
- Cook, Nick *The Hunt for Zero Point*. Century, 2001. (A veteran aeronautical editor investigates how the US military/defence programme might have benefitted from German WWII secret weapons development. A fascinating story of the search for anti-gravity and powerless flight which indicates that Schauberg was its pioneer.)
- Cori, Patricia *The Cosmos of Soul*. Gill and Macmillan (Gateway), 2001. (An introduction to cosmic science.)
- Cowan, David and Girdlestone, Rodney *Safe as Houses? Ill Health and Electro-stress in the Home*. Gateway, 1996. (A well-researched and useful guide to electromagnetic and geopathic stress.)
- Edwards, Lawrence *The Vortex of Life*. Floris Books, 1993. (Fascinating research into Nature's patterns, particularly on the geometry of bud growth.)
- Emoto, Masaru *The Message from Water*. Hado Publishing, Vol.1,1999, vol.2, 2001. (Remarkable photographs of ice crystals demonstrating water's ability to record resonances (hado) of different energy qualities, of thoughts, emotions and of music. Vol. 1 is more general, of social icons, vol. 2 more personal (e.g. family life), vol. 3 Love Thyself, the power of prayer. See Resources. Captions and brief text in Japanese and English.) For a fuller description of Emoto's research and ideas see:
- , *The Hidden Messages in Water, Beyond Words* Publishing, 2004. (In addition to the readable text, there is a good selection of photographs.)
- Gelbspan, Ross *The Heat is On*. Perseus, 1997. (A study of global warming issues.)
- Grohman, Gerbert *The Plant*. Steiner, 1974. (An anthroposophical study of the plant.)
- Groves, Barry *Fluoride, Drinking Ourselves to Death?* Gill and Macmillan, 2001. (Readable and a reliable authority.)
- Hageneder, Fred *The Spirit of Trees*. Floris Books, 2000.
- , *The Heritage of Trees*. Floris Books, 2001. (Impassioned and inspiring study of the lore of trees — spiritual, symbolic, historical and scientific.)
- Ho, Mae-Wan *Genetic Engineering, Dream or Nightmare?* Gateway, 1998. (Widely regarded as providing the most sustained and reasoned challenge to many of the scientific assumptions underlying genetic modification.)
- , *The Rainbow and the Worm, The Physics of Organisms*. World Scientific, 1993. (A holistic, campaigning biologist.)
- Jenny, Hans *Kymatik/Cymatics*. Basilims, 1945.
- Johnson, Steven *Emergence*. Scribner; Allen Lane, 2001. (How complex systems can arise spontaneously as part of Nature's evolutionary imperative.)
- Lattacher, Siegbert *Viktor Schauberg — Auf den Spuren des legendaren Naturforschers* (On the track of the legendary Natural Researcher). Ennstaler, 1999. (The first significant biography of Viktor Schauberg. It concentrates on his wartime activities.)
- Lovelock, James *Gaia, A New Look at Life on Earth*. Oxford, 1979.
- , *The Ages of Gaia*. Oxford, 1988.
- , *Gaia, The Practical Science of Planetary Medicine*. Gaia, 1991.
- , *Healing Gaia, Practical Medicine for the Planet*. Gaia, 1991; Harmony, 1991. (The scientist of Gaia who will never get his deserved Nobel prize because the Establishment doesn't like pioneers.)
- Lusar, Rudolf *Secret Weapons of World War II*.
- Manning, Jeane *The Coming Energy Revolution*. Avery, 1996. (A good overall assessment of alternative sources of energy)
- Marks, William *The Holy Order of Water*. Bell Pond, 2001. (A passionate study of water lore and science, from ancient Greece to our present challenges of pollution and ecological destruction.)

- Michel, John *City of Revelation*. Garnstone, 1972. (A classic of sacred geometry.)
- McKibben, Bill *The End of Nature*. Random House, 1989,1999.
- Milner, Edward *The Tree Book*. Collins and Brown, 1992.
- Ott, John *Health and Light*. Devin-Adair, 1973.
- Pedler, Kit *The Quest for Gaia*. Souvenir, 1979.
- Price, Weston *Nutrition and Physical Degeneration*. Price-Pottenger, 1935; Keats, 1989. (In the early 1930s, Dr Price and his wife recorded the physical and mental degeneration of indigenous communities all over the world which were experiencing the impact of modern culture and diet. A remarkable and seminal study.)
- Russell, Peter *The Awakening Earth*. Routledge, 1982.
- Schauberger, Viktor *Our Senseless Toil (Unsere Sinnlose Arbeit)*. Krystall, 1933; PKS, 2002. (A new German edition is now available from the PKS Institute in Austria, see [www.pks.or.at](http://www.pks.or.at))
- Also, in the Eco-technology series (Callum Coats, tr. and ed.):
- , *The Water Wizard*. Gateway, 1998. (A selection of Viktor's writings about the qualities of water in its natural state, problems with water supply and delivery, much on river flow and river regulation.)
- , *Nature as Teacher*. Gateway, 1998. (Thoughts about environmental catastrophe; correspondence with contemporaries and frustrations with establishment science.)
- , *The Fertile Earth*. Gill and Macmillan (Gateway), 2000. (Schauberger's writings on trees and forestry practice; fertilization of the soil, biodynamic agriculture, failure of contemporary farming; fertility and subtle energies in Nature.)
- , *Energy Evolution*. Gill and Macmillan (Gateway), 2000. (Viktor's writings about some of the principles behind the different kinds of suction and implosion machines he developed, for producing spring water; an air conditioner and free energy generation.)
- Schell, Jonathan *The Fate of the Earth*. Pan, 1982.
- Schwenk, Theodore *Sensitive Chaos*. Steiner, 1965. (A brilliant and original study of the behaviour of water; beautiful photographs.)
- , and Wolfram Schwenk *Water, Element of Life*. Anthroposophic Press, 1989. (A more philosophical father and son co-authorship.)
- Sheldrake, Rupert *A New Science of Life*. Blond and Briggs, 1981.
- , *The Rebirth of Nature*. Rider, 1990.
- Steiner, Rudolf *The Nature of Substance*. Steiner Press, 1966.
- Stevens, Peter *Patterns in Nature*. Little Brown, 1974, Peregrine 1978. (Hard to get hold of; generously illustrated — one of the best conceived books on this fascinating subject.)
- Thomas, William (ed.) *Mans Role in Changing the Face of the Earth*. Chicago, 1956. (Celebrated international anthropological symposium co-chaired by Carl Sauer, Marston Bates and Lewis Mumford.)
- Walsh-Roberts, Paul *From Atoms to Angels*. Gill and Macmillan (Gateway), 2001. (Very readable introduction to a spiritual study of the human.)
- Wilkes, John *Flowforms: the Rhythmic Power of Water*. Floris Books, 2003.
- Wright, Machaelle *Small Behaving as if the God in All Life Mattered*. Perelandra, 1981,1997.
- , *Co-Creative Science: Revolution in Science with real Solutions for Today's Health and Environment*. Perelandra, 1997. (Machaelle Wright founded Perelandra, a Nature research centre in Virginia, in 1977. She works with Nature intelligence with a conscious, coordinated programme and as an educational effort, demonstrating a new approach to health, horticulture and environmental balance.)
- Young, Arthur *The Reflexive Universe*. Delacorte, 1976. (A pioneer of holistic cosmological thought.)
- Zuk, Bill *Canada's Flying Saucers. The Story of Avro Canada's Secret Projects*. Boston Mills Press, Ontario.

# List of Illustrations

Frontispiece: Viktor Schauberg	2
Part One:	
1.1 The stationary trout	27
1.2 Centrifugal and centripetal movement	33
2.1 Different dimensions or levels of existence	46
3.1 Cosmic fertilization	50
3.2 Hydrogen symbol	51
4.1 Sonorous figures	57
4.2 Squaring the circle	65
4.3 Vesica piscis	66
4.4 Snail shell & hyperbolic spiral	67
4.5 Pine cone symmetry	68
Part Two:	
5.1 The fateful choice	78
5.2 Energy and form	81
5.3 A natural vortex	83
6.1 Spiral galaxy and hyperbolic spiral	87
6.2 Three basic forms of motion	88
6.3 The planetary vortex	90
7.1 Section through Earth's atmosphere	94
7.2 & 3 Increase in potential and charge density	95
7.4 Reduction in distance, increase in potential	96
7.5 The terrestrial bio-condenser	97
Part Three:	
8.1 Water drop pictures	107
8.2 Longitudinal vortex	113
9.1 Full hydrological cycle	118
9.2 Half hydrological cycle	121
9.3 & b Positive and negative temperature gradients	122
9.4 Asymmetrical river development	124
10.1 Seepage spring	128
10.2 True and high altitude springs	130
10.3 Free energy from the deep ocean	130
10.4 Detail of apparatus	131
11.1 Heating and cooling rhythms in river flow	137
11.2 Groundwater recharge	139
11.3 Ingenious method of re-energizing a river	140
11.4 Egg-shaped body to generate vortices	142

11.5	Energy release in the environment	143
11.6	River bend formation	144
11.7	Sand banks in conventional channels	147
11.8	Schauberger's microscopic evidence	148
11.9	Egg-shaped hydro-electric device	149
12.1	Double-spiral longitudinal vortex	157
12.2	Flow dynamics of double spiral pipe	158
Part Four:		
13.1	Amazon basin heat engine and N. Atlantic	172
14.1	Functions of animals and vegetables	183
14.2	The electromagnetic spectrum	184
14.3	Tree type distribution	189
14.5	Tree rings showing unbalanced growth	191
14.6	Photosynthesis	194
15.1	Cross section through tree trunk	200
15.2	Rising sap diagram	201
15.3	Rising sap experiment	202
15.4	Horizontal trunk section with dielectric layers	204
15.5	Vertical trunk section with ring temperature decrease	205
15.6	The metabolism of the tree	206
15.7	A variety of root systems	208
Part Five:		
16.1	15cm long ears of rye with up to 104 grains/ear	218
16.2	Potatoes grown on Alpine farm at Kitzbiihel	218
16.3	The golden or bio-plough	219
17.1	Egg-shaped compost heap	227
17.2	Motor driven mixing device with golf-club shaped impeller	230
17.3	Egg-shaped fermentation chamber	232
17.4	Viktor's energy exchange diagram	237
Part Six:		
18.1	Tornado home-power generator	250
18.2	a & b Alexandersson's and Schauburger's repulsator	253
18.3	a & b Repulsine prototypes	256
18.4	Cross section through flying saucer	257
A. 1 The Pythagoras Kepler School at Engleithen		
A.2	Flowform at Sundet in Norway	267
A.3	Vortex energizer	268
A.4	Personal harmonizer	267
A.5	Living water vortex jug	268
A.6	Vortex water system	268



alle Abb. sind Originalzeichnungen von V.S.

Ronald Engert

## Die Forellenturbine

*Freie Energie durch Implosion. Die Entdeckungen von Viktor Schaubberger.*

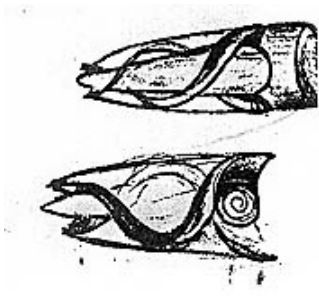
Der 2. Thermodynamische Hauptsatz der Physik besagt, daß ein geschlossenes physikalisches System nicht ohne äußeres Zutun aus einem Zustand geringerer Ordnung in einen Zustand höherer Ordnung übergehen kann. Dieser Satz, auch Entropiesatz genannt, sagt aus, daß es kein Perpetuum mobile geben kann. Jeder physikalische Vorgang geht automatisch in einen niedrigeren Ordnungszustand über, wobei Wärme der Zustand mit der niedrigsten Ordnung, d.h. der größten Entropie, ist. Dem Entropiesatz zufolge ist es unmöglich, thermische Energie in mechanische oder elektrische Energie umzuwandeln. Alle herkömmlichen Maschinen, die auf dem Prinzip der Verbrennung und der Umwandlung von höherwertigen Energieformen in Wärmeenergie beruhen, erhöhen die Entropie, d.h. die Unordnung und das Chaos in der Welt. So lautet auch die Prognose der konventionellen Wissenschaft, daß das Universum einer Wärmetod sterben wird, wenn alle höheren Energieformen wie etwa kinetische Energie auf ihren niedrigsten Ordnungszustand zurückgeführt worden sind.

Ein Außenseiter der Forschung, der österreichische Förster Viktor Schaubberger, beobachtete jahrzehntelang die Natur und kam zu dem Schluß, daß die Natur das ideale Perpetuum mobile darstellt, da sie aus sich selbst heraus Zustände höherer Ordnung - Organismen - erzeugt.

Viktor Schaubberger (1885-1958) war Naturphilosoph, Erfinder und Wegbereiter der »freie Energie«, der kostenlosen Maschinenkraft. Er entwickelte ein völlig neues Konzept der Natur, der Energie und letztendlich auch des Bewußtsein. Als Förster beobachtete er immer wieder die Natur, um herauszufinden, wie die Natur funktioniert, wie Wachstum, Bewegung und Leben entstehen. Daraus entwickelte er eine naturnahe Technologie, die ganz anders als die herkömmliche Technologie aufgebaut ist. Er konstruierte Geräte zur Erzeugung von Energie oder zur Fortbewegung, die ohne Treibstoff arbeiteten und weder Abgase noch Lärm verursachten. Diese Geräte – beispielsweise die Forellenturbine, die an die Funktionsweise der Kiemen einer Forelle angelehnt ist – kopierten die Natur und arbeiteten lediglich auf der Basis einer spezifischen Bewegung von Wasser oder Luft.

Sein Verständnis von Wasser, Luft und Erde ließen ihn zum Gegner der etablierten Wissenschaft und Technik werden und er wies immer wieder darauf hin, daß die heutige Technik, wie auch die moderne Landwirtschaft, der Wasserbau und der Waldbau, die Natur mehr und mehr zerstören. Er setzte dieser naturunrichtigen Technik seine Biotechnologie entgegen, die die Medien Luft, Erde und Wasser veredelt und qualitativ verbessert. Er entwickelte Verfahren zur Edelwasserherstellung, zur Bodenverbesserung, zur Wachstums- und Qualitätssteigerung von Nutzpflanzen und zur Renaturierung der Flüsse und Wälder.

Mit seinen technischen Entwicklungen, aber auch mit seinem grundlegenden Naturverständnis ist Schaubberger angesichts der heutigen ökologischen Situation der Erde aktueller denn je. Hierbei haben seine Entdeckungen nicht nur in der praktischen ökologischen Arbeit ihre Bedeutung, sondern auch in der Tiefenökologie, die vor allem den Bewußtseinswandel im Menschen selbst ins Auge faßt. Gerade das kognitive und emotionale Verständnis der Naturprozesse, die eigene Haltung gegenüber der Mitwelt, das Bewußtsein für die Schönheit und Genialität der Natur werden durch die Beschäftigung mit Schaubberger angeregt und auf eine naturgemäße Basis gestellt.



## Explosion und Implosion

Die heutige Technik arbeitet nach dem Wärme- und Explosionsprinzip. Bestes Beispiel ist der Verbrennungsmotor, indem hochwertige Rohstoffe - Mineralöle aus den Tiefen der Erde - verbrannt werden, um damit einen explosionsartigen Überdruck zu erzeugen, der den Kolben bewegt. Das Erdöl ist nach Schauberger ein entwicklungsfreudiger Rohstoff, d.h. ein Stoff, der zum Lebensaufbau auf der Erde notwendig ist. Öl besteht aus abgestorbenen Tieren, die seit Millionen von Jahren unter Licht- und Luftabschluß im Erdinnern lagern und sich dort sehr langsam umwandeln. Sie bilden Rohstoffe, die energetisch dafür verantwortlich sind, daß die Erde ihre Kraft behält und Wachstum möglich ist. Die heutige Technik zerstört diese Rohstoffe in der Verbrennung, um daraus Bewegungsenergie zu gewinnen. Diese Verbrennung erzeugt giftige Abgase und Lärm und verbraucht die für den Energiehaushalt der Erde notwendigen Stoffe.

Die heutige Technik beruht also auf einer Zerstörung und auf dem sogenannten Druckprinzip. Der Verbrennungsmotor bewegt durch Druck den Kolben, die Druckturbine erzeugt elektrischen Strom, der Propeller oder die Schraube erzeugen durch Rückstoß Fortbewegung, mit der Hydraulik werden Lasten gehoben, die Spaltung von Atomen erzeugt Hitze und Druck. Alle diese Methoden beruhen auf explosiven oder zentrifugalen Prinzipien und wirken strukturvergrößernd -bzw. auflösend. Die Strukturvergrößerung führt zu Druck und zu einem Reibungswiderstand, der wiederum in Wärmeenergie übergeht. Alle herkömmlichen Maschinen verlieren durch den Bewegungswiderstand, der im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wächst, 50-70% ihrer investierten Leistung. Abgesehen von der Zerstörung der verwendeten Rohstoffe ist ein solch schlechtes Leistungsverhältnis natürlich immens teuer.

Schauberger stellte dieser Zerstörungstechnologie nun eine völlig andere Methode entgegen. Seinen Beobachtungen in der Natur zufolge arbeitet die Natur für den Lebensaufbau nach dem Zugprinzip. In der Natur gibt es sowohl das Druckprinzip als auch das Zugprinzip. Das Druckprinzip wirkt auflösend, zersetzend und wird zur Auflösung abgestorbener Organismen (Pflanzen, Tierkadaver etc.) gebraucht; das Zugprinzip wirkt zusammenziehend, aufbauend; das Wachstum der Pflanzen, Tiere und Menschen beruht auf dem Zugprinzip und der damit verbundener Implosion.

Die Implosion ist das Gegenstück zur Explosion und wirkt strukturverkleinernd, verdichtend. Diese Verdichtung führt zu einer Abnahme des Reibungswiderstandes und einer Abkühlung. Thermische Energie wird also in höhere Energieformen - Bewegungs-, Wachstums-, Lebensenergie - umgewandelt und damit ist der Entropiesatz in Frage gestellt.

Der Entropiesatz gilt für geschlossene Systeme. Dieses feine Detail in der Formulierung des 2. Thermodynamischen Hauptsatzes ist entscheidend. Nur in geschlossenen Systemen gilt dieses Gesetz. Daß die heutige Physik nicht in der Lage ist, in offenen Systemen zu denken, ist Ursache für die Dogmatisierung des Satzes. Die Frage erhebt sich, ob die Natur ein geschlossenes oder offenes System ist.

Schauberger beobachtete in der Natur, in der Bewegung des Wassers und der Luft, den Wachstumsformen der Pflanzen und Tiere und gewissen unerklärlichen Phänomenen wie z.B. der Standforelle immer wieder die Wirbel- oder Spiralförmigkeit. Die Spirale ist schon mathematisch ein offenes System, das sich zwischen den beiden Polen Null und Unendlich bewegt ohne sie jemals zu erreichen. Die Spiralförmigkeit und die aus ihr ableitbaren Ei-, Tropfen- und Kelchformen sind die grundlegenden Abbildungsprinzipien in der Natur. Alles Leben geht aus dem Ei (im Falle der Tiere und Menschen, auch Samenformen der Pflanzen) oder dem Kelch (im Falle der Pflanzen) hervor. Wer genau hinschaut, findet die Eiform auch in dem Umriß vieler Bäume, in der Form unseres Kopfes und in vielen anderen alltäglichen Erscheinungsformen.

"In der Natur gibt es keine geraden Linien", war ein Ausspruch von Schauberger. Kurven, Wellen, gebogene und geschwungene Formen, die Herzform, die Nierenform, das Unregelmäßige und Asymmetrische sind die Merkmale des Lebens.

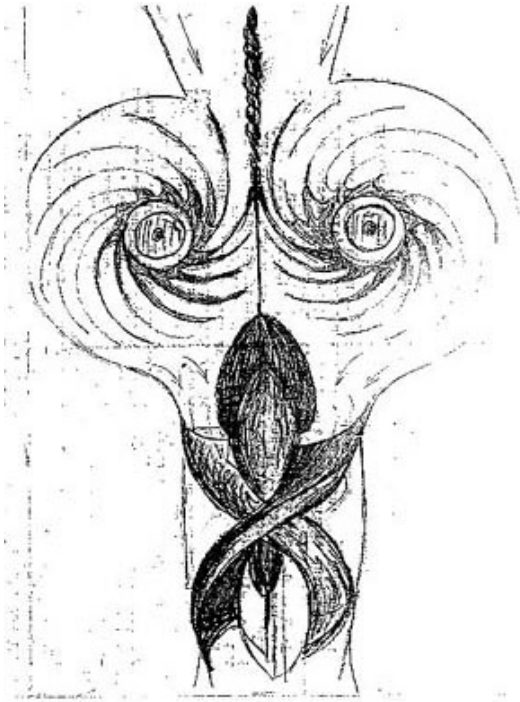
Unser Blutkreislauf beispielsweise beruht auf dem Prinzip der spiralförmigen Einrollung des Blutes. Durch diese Einrollung entsteht wieder die besagte Verdichtung des Mediums, es entsteht ein Unterdruck und das Medium nimmt ziehende Eigenschaften an. Die heutige Vorstellung, bei dem Herzen handele es sich um eine Druckpumpe, ist nach Schauberger eine irriige Annahme. Das kleine Herz könnte niemals das dickflüssige Blut bis in die feinsten Kapillaren der Hände und Füße und durch den gesamten riesigen Blutkreislauf drücken. Tatsächlich herrschen hier Zugphänomene vor. Durch die spiralförmige Bewegung bekommt das Blut - genauso wie das Wasser in den Bächen und Flüssen - einen achsmittigen Vortrieb. Der Licht- und Luftabschluß ist hierbei notwendige Voraussetzung, wie auch jeder Sauerstoffkontakt des Blutes unbedingt vermieden werden muß, um nicht eine tödliche Embolie herbeizuführen.

Schauberger hatte dieses Phänomen in den Gebirgsbächen beobachtet und spricht in diesem Zusammenhang nicht nur von der Trag- und Schleppkraft des Wassers, das im gesunden, naturrichtigen Zustand das Geröll im Bachbett mittransportieren kann, sondern auch von seiner Selbstreinigungs- und Vermehrungskraft. Wie auch in der Schulwissenschaft bekannt ist, hat das Wasser bei  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$ , dem Anomaliepunkt, seine größte Dichte und damit seine größte Tragkraft. Naturrichtig fließendes Wasser nähert sich immer dem Anomaliepunkt an, d.h. Wärme wird verzehrt und in Bewegung oder Wasserwachstum umgewandelt. Wachstum ist praktisch das Ergebnis der Implosion, der Strukturverdichtung. Naturrichtig fließendes Wasser fließt in Wirbeln, Wellen, Strudeln. Jeder Stein im Bachbett wirbe das Wasser ein, und in der Achsmittle der Spirale finden Prozesse statt, die mit dem mechanistischen Weltbild nicht mehr erklärt oder verstanden werden können. Spiral- und Hyperbelformen sind nur mit einer nicht-euklidischen Mathematik beschreibbar und es ist erstaunlich und bezeichnend zugleich, daß die heutige Mathematik und Physik praktisch keine nicht-euklidischen Strukturen beschreibt. Die nicht-euklidische Mathematik fristet ein unterentwickeltes Dasein am Rande der Institute. Bis dato gibt es in der offiziellen Schulwissenschaft keine Formel zur Berechnung der Eiform. Nur Walter Schauberger, Maschinenbauingenieur und Sohn von Viktor Schauberger, hat zusammen mit dem Mathematiker Trusnitz die Formeln zur Berechnung von Hyperbeln und Eiformen entwickelt und in einer konsequenten nicht-euklidischen Mathematik zusammengefaßt (siehe dazu: Tattva Viveka Nr. 10, Claus Radlberger: Der hyperbolische Kegel).

In der seelischen Achsmittle der Spirale werden nun nach Viktor Schauberger raum- und masselose Kräfte in die Materie gebunden. Diese Kräfte sind metaphysischer Zustandsart. Für Viktor Schauberger ist das Leben ein Phänomen, das über die materielle Ebene hinausgeht. Das Leben kommt aus einer metaphysischen, spirituellen Dimension und manifestiert sich im Wachstum und den Körpern der Lebewesen. Dabei sah er auch in dem Planeten Erde ein Lebewesen, und das Wasser bezeichnete er als das Blut der Erde. Zu bemerken wäre in diesem Zusammenhang, daß die planetare Bewegung der Erde auch eine Doppelspiralform beschreibt. Da sich die Sonne um ein Zentrum in der Galaxis (die Plejaden) bewegt, ist die Bahn der Erde um die Sonne keine Kreis- oder Ellipsenbahn sondern eine offene Spiralbahn. Zusammen mit der Eigenrotation bildet dies eine Doppelspirale. Auch hier also finden wir wieder die für den Lebensaufbau wichtige Spiralbewegung. In der Implosion der Aufbaubewegung entdeckte Schauberger nun noch eine dynamische Energie: die Levitationsenergie. Wie die Implosion das Gegenstück zur Explosion ist, so ist die Levitation das Gegenstück zur Gravitation. Nicht nur Schwere und Gewicht finden wir in der Natur, sondern auch Auftrieb und Erhebung. Das ist der Grund, warum die Bäume nach oben wachsen, warum wir aufrecht gehen, warum wir unsere Körper so leicht bewegen können. Die Blutbewegung erzeugt Levitationskraft; ebenso wie die planetare Bewegung die Erde in der Schwebelage hält, bekommt unser Körper durch die Blut- und Säftebewegung einen Auftrieb. Das Wachstum und die Körpermasse ist in diesem Sinne die Bremse, um unsere Geist-Körper-Einheit im labilen Gleichgewicht zu halten. Ohne Körper würden wir sofort ins Nirwana zurückgehen, wie Schauberger schreibt.

Mit dieser Levitationskraft kommen wir nun zum Kern der freien Energie, wie sie Schauberger in der Forellenturbine anwendete.





## Die Forellenturbine

Durch eine naturrichtige Bewegung der Medien Wasser oder Luft können Levitationsphänomene maschinell erzeugt werden. Hierbei werden die Medien gereinigt und veredelt.

Die Levitationskraft entdeckte Viktor Schaubberger, als er die Forelle beobachtete. Die Standforellen sind in der Lage, reißenden Gebirgsbächen bewegungslos zu stehen und sich das Futter "arbeitslos" ins Maul schwimmen zu lassen. In der Laichzeit überwinden sie meterhohe Wasserfälle, um an die Laichplätze im Quellgebiet zu gelangen. Wenn man die in der Strömung stehenden Forellen aufschreckt, fliehen sie nicht etwa stromabwärts, wie der mechanistisch geschulte Geist vermuten würde, sondern stromaufwärts, gegen die Strömung. Dies gelingt ihnen blitzartig mit einer sehr hohen Geschwindigkeit. Schaubberger fragte sich immer wieder, wie dies möglich sei. Eine Forelle, die man an den Angel mit der Strömung zieht, erstickt sogar. Welche Kräfte wirken hier?

Die Forelle nimmt Wasser durch den Mund auf und läßt es durch die Kiemen wieder austreten. In den Kiemen befinden sich Tausende von mikroskopischen Leitschienen, die das Wasser in eine starke Einrollbewegung bringen. Unter Mitwirkung bestimmter in den Kiemen lokalisierter Spurenelemente wird das Wasser energetisiert und "juvenile Neuwasser" aufgebaut. Dieses juvenile Wasser hat andere physikalische Eigenschaften als das Bachwasser und es kommt zu Reaktionen. Die Tropfenform des Fischkörpers schwebt in einem Mantel solcher Reaktionen, die wie ein Gegendruck zur Strömung des Baches wirken. Durch die Kiemenregulierung kann die Forelle dann entweder bewegungslos stehen oder blitzschnell stromaufwärts schwimmen. In den tausenden Einrollbewegungen des Wasser werden Implosionen (Neuwasserentstehung) und Levitationsenergien freigesetzt. Schaubberger spricht in diesem Zusammenhang von einem Seelenband, das von der Mündung zur Quelle geht. Dieses Seelenband ist der Fluß der Levitationsenergie, der umgekehrt zum Wasserfluß fließt. Neueste Untersuchungen haben gezeigt, daß die Länge eines Flusses immer 3,14mal so lang ist wie die Luftlinie von der Quelle zur Mündung ( $3,14 = \pi$ ). Der gesamte Fluß bildet also eine organische Einheit, die natürlich durch künstliche Staustufen oder Begradigungen nachhaltig gestört wird.

Die Forelle nutzt diesen Levitationsfluß und steht damit in der Strömung oder schwebt in Wasserfällen nach oben. Da gleiche Phänomene haben wir bei den Vögeln, wo durch die Federn Millionen von kleinsten Luftwirbeln erzeugt werden die den Vogel in einer Auftriebsenergie tragen. Schaubberger nannte dieses Phänomen auch "biologisches Vakuum", das durch die Verdichtung der Luft entsteht. Dieses biologische Vakuum bildet sich über dem Vogelkörper und ermöglicht ihm so den Flug. Schaubberger pflegte zu sagen, daß die Vögel nicht fliegen, sondern geflogen werden. Der Fisch schwimmt nicht, sondern wird geschwommen.

Die Forellenturbine kopiert diese Phänomene. Schaubberger entwickelte eine sogenannte "Mäanderscheibe", eine kreisrunde Kupferplatte mit einem Wellenprofil ähnlich wie es eine Wasseroberfläche aufweist, auf die gerade ein Tropfen oder ein Stein aufgetroffen ist. Eine zweite Platte befand sich umgekehrt darüber (s. Abb.). Das Wasser wurde nun von oben mittig in den Zwischenraum zwischen den sich drehenden Mäanderscheiben eingeleitet. Durch die

Kombination von axialer und radialer Bewegung in dem Wellenprofil erreichte er eine doppelspiralförmige Drehung des Wassers. Das Wasser trat dann am Rand der Mäanderscheibe aus und wurde in Doppeldrallrohre (s. Abb.) eingeleitet. Diese hatten einen konisch sich verjüngenden Querschnitt, ein spezifisch eiförmiges Profil und eine spiralförmige Verdrillung. Die Rohre selbst waren noch einmal spiralförmig zur Achsmittle der Maschine hin eingerollt. Das Wasser wurde damit in eine zentripetale Bewegungsrichtung gebracht. In der Kombination dieser Bewegungsformen erreichte Schaubberger ein Vorherrschen der Zugenergie, die unter anderem bewirkte, daß Wasser kontinuierlich von unten nachgesaugt wurde, das Wasser also nach einem erstmaligen Anstoß durch einen Anlasser nach und nach von selbst den Kreislauf durchlief. Das Profil und die Spiralförmigkeit der Rohre kopierten die natürliche Fließbewegung des Wassers und bewirkten dadurch eine Abnahme des Reibungswiderstandes, der schließlich negativ wurde, also ziehende Eigenschaften annahm. Im Bereich der Zugkraft wirkt laut Schaubberger nicht mehr der Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsende Widerstand, sondern die im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsende Leistung. Das Ende der Einrollung des Wasser bildete eine zentrifugale Anordnung der Rohre, wo eine Düse in Form einer Zugschraube (s. Abb.) das Wasser mit großem Druck auf eine Turbinenleitschaufel abstrahlte. An dem Turbinenrad konnte dann Bewegungsenergie ausgekoppelt werden. Schaubberger bezeichnete diese Apparaturen als lebende Maschinen, da sie den natürlichen Lebensaufbau kopierten. Sie arbeiteten auf der Basis eines rhythmischen Wechselspiels von Druck und Zug, sie pulsierten, weshalb er sie auch Repulsive und Repulsator nannte. Eine frühe Entwicklung, die als Flugscheibe in die Geschichte einging (s. Abb.), hatte einen nachgebildeten Kiemenring aus Aluminium, der die Verwirbelung der in diesem Falle verwendeten Luft bewirkte. Die Levitationsenergie bewirkte ein Aufschweben der Scheibe. Insgesamt entwickelte Schaubberger auf der Basis dieses Prinzips Implosionsmaschinen zur Erzeugung von Energie, Fluggeräte, Schiffe und Unterseeboote, sowie Heizungen und Beleuchtungsanlagen.

Okkult angehauchte Personen verbreiten heute die Theorie, daß die Nazis fliegende Untertassen nach Schaubbergerprinzip hatten, mit denen sie geflüchtet sind, andere behaupten, die Ufos arbeiteten nach dieser Methode. Diese unbeweisbaren Geschichten sollen hier nicht zur Debatte stehen. Tatsache ist, daß Schaubberger sein ganzes Leben der Konstruktion dieser Maschinen gewidmet hat, aber so oft angefeindet, bestohlen und behindert wurde, daß bis heute der eindeutige Nachweis für die Funktionstüchtigkeit der Geräte aussteht. Schaubberger selbst behielt seine Konstruktionsgeheimnisse für sich, und seine Modelle wurden von neidischen und gierigen Vertretern aus Wirtschaft und Politik durch unsachgemäße Behandlung zerstört oder kurzum entwendet. Dieses Schicksal ereilte ihn mit den Nazis ebenso wie mit den Amerikanern und Konzernen wie Siemens und Messerschmidt. Damals war die Zeit noch nicht reif für seine progressiven Entdeckungen. Schon in den fünfziger Jahren warnte er vor den Gefahren der zersetzenden Atomkraft und der unnatürlichen Behandlung von Land und Wasser. Sein Sohn Walter gründete bereits in den fünfziger Jahren die "Grüne Front", eine ökologische Bewegung in Österreich. Heute erst ist das Bewußtsein für die ökologischen Probleme unserer Feuer- und Explosionstechnologie so weit gewachsen, daß neuartige Ansätze auf offene Ohren stoßen. Schaubberger ist so neuartig, daß es einer gewaltigen Offenheit im Geiste braucht, um ihn zu verstehen. Das, was damals in den dreißiger und vierziger Jahren noch weggeleugnet werden konnte, kann heute nicht mehr verleugnet werden. Das Werk Schaubbergers ist mittlerweile weltweit bekannt und erlebt in jüngster Zeit eine große Renaissance. Möglicherweise ist die Zeit jetzt reif für diese Dinge. Die Erforschung und technische Entwicklung dieser Maschinen ist jedoch eine gewaltige Aufgabe, die viel Geld und Zeit kosten wird. Bevor aber das notwendige Bewußtsein einer neuen Sicht der Natur und der Physik der Natur nicht entwickelt ist, wird jeder maschinenbauliche Versuch der Herstellung solcher Geräte zum Scheitern verurteilt sein. Zuerst müssen wir uns in die Gedankenwelt Viktor Schaubbergers hineinversetzen, seine hinterlassenen Schriften und Zeichnungen immer und immer wieder studieren, bis wir den inneren Wesenskern der Natur und des Lebens verstehen. Auf jeden Fall bietet das Schaubbergerische Wissen einen Ansatz für eine Technologie für das 3. Jahrtausend.

Zum Abschluß sei ein Zitat von Schaubberger angeführt, um dem Leser den Originalton nicht vorzuenthalten. Wir empfehlen unbedingt das Studium dieser Originaltexte, die aus den am Ende angeführten Quellen entnommen werden können. Zur "Todestechnik" schreibt er: "Den Reigen in diesem Treiben schließt aber der Energietechniker. Die Kohle das Brot der Erde, und, wo es noch in ausreichendem Maße vorhanden ist, das Wasser, ihr Blut, sorgen für die Gewinnung von Energien. Wenige Jahrzehnte erst wühlt der Mensch in diesem zufällig gefundenen Reichtum. Immer weniger und schlechter wird das Triebwasser seiner Werke, immer gewaltiger werden die Katastrophen auf der Erde, weil ihr der Mensch die Kohlenstoffe - ihr Brot -, das Wasser - ihr Blut - gestohlen hat. Unentwegt arbeitet der Mensch aber weiter und immer größer wird sein Elend." (zitiert nach: Olof Alexandersson, Lebendes Wasser, S. 90f.)

Quellen:

*Alexandersson, Olof:* Lebendes Wasser. Über Viktor Schaubberger und eine neue Technik um unsere Umwelt zu retten. Ennsthaler-Verlag, Steyr 1998

*Coats, Callum:* Living Energies. Viktor Schaubberger's brilliant work with natural energy explained, Gateway Books, England 1996

*Viktor Schaubberger. Das Blut der Erde*, hg. von der Pythagoras-Kepler-Schule, Bad Ischl 1997 (CD-Rom, Originaltexte viele Bilder)

*Implosion. Biotechnische Schriftenreihe*, hg. vom Verein für Implosionsforschung und -anwendung e.V., Offenburg 1995-1998 (4x/Jahr erscheinende Zeitschrift mit Originaltexten von V.S.)

*Tattva Viveka. Forum für Wissenschaft, Philosophie und spirituelle Kultur*, hg. von Ronald Engert, Darmstadt 1994-1998 (3x/Jahr erscheinende Zeitschrift, u.a. mit Texten zu V.S.)

Adressen:

*Pythagoras-Kepler-Schule* (PKS, Sitz der Familie Schaubberger, Archiv der Arbeiten Viktor und Walter Schaubergers und Forschungs- und Seminarzentrum), Kaltenbach 162, A-4821 Lauffen, Tel. u. Fax. 06132-24814, e-mail: schaubberger@pks.or.at, Homepage: www.pks.or.at.

*Zeitschrift "Implosion"*: Verein für Implosionstechnik und -anwendung e.V., Windschlägerstr. 58, D-77652 Offenburg

*Zeitschrift "Tattva Viveka. Zeitschrift für Wissenschaft, Philosophie und spirituelle Kultur"*: Eschollbrücker Str. 4a, D-64283 Darmstadt, Tel. 06151-319051, Fax 319052, e-mail: syntropia@aol.com, Homepage: www.syntropia.de.

*Syntropia. Vertrieb für bioenergetische Produkte nach V.S.*, Eschollbrücker Str. 4a, D-64283 Darmstadt, Tel. 06151-319062, Fax 319052, e-mail: syntropia@aol.com, Homepage: www.syntropia.de

[ZURÜCK](#)

**Windmill based on  
Viktor Schauberger's Repulsine**

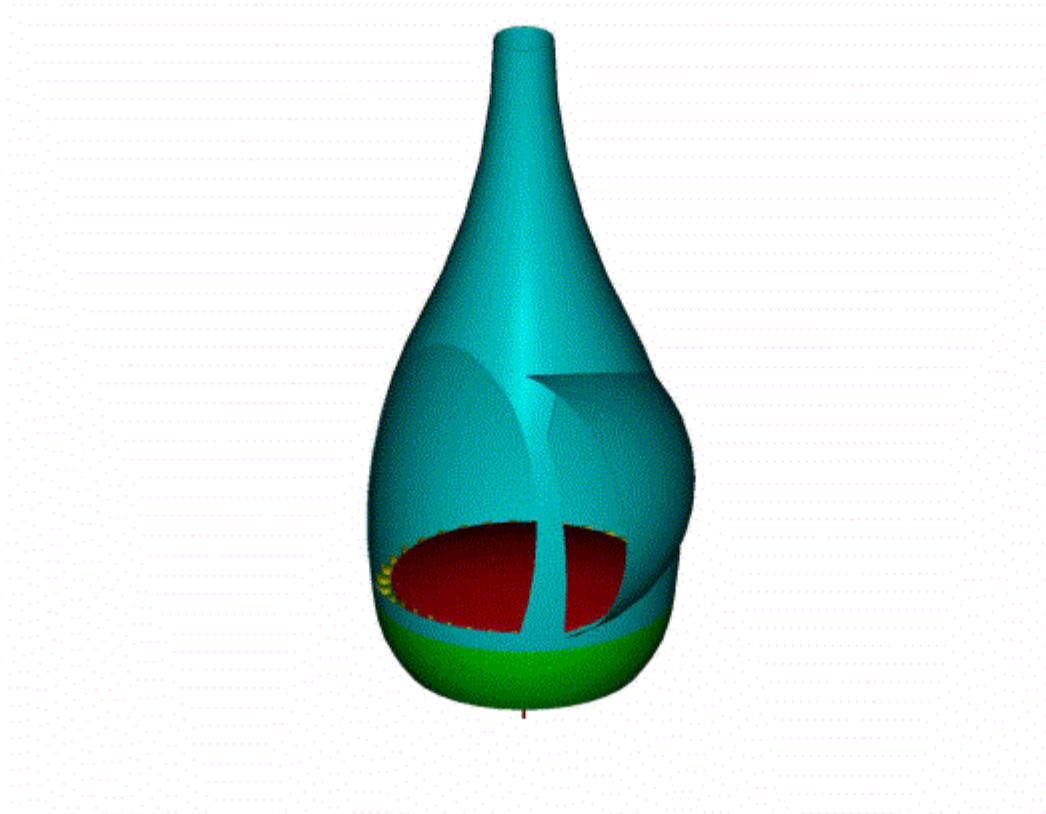
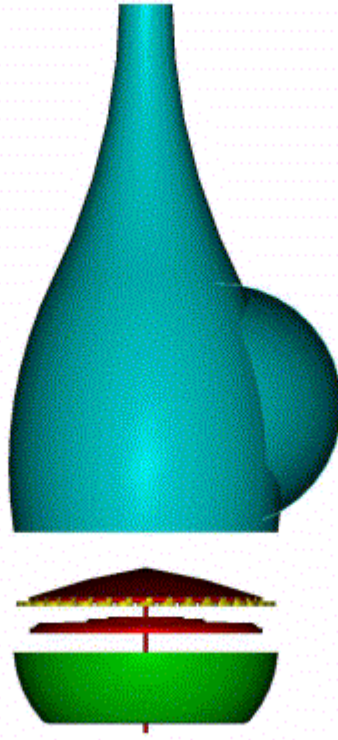


Figure 1 and 2, showing a cut up view of the windmill.



Here follows a short description on a wind mill based on Viktor Schauberger's Repulsin or the "UFO"-engine. In order to understand how this type of wind mill works we must know some of the basics in Viktor Schauberger's technology. Schauberger's idea was to use sub pressure as a source of energy instead of over pressure. He called this technique Implosion. The "Explosion technique" that we use today is literally explosive as it is based on high temperature and high pressure. However, Implosion is condensing and cooling. Implosion, is mother nature's technique and it collects or condenses low amounts of energy and build up higher forms of energy and life.

One secret of Viktor Schauberger's devices is the use of the Coanda effect. The Coanda effect is basically the same thing that happens on the low pressure side of an airfoil. The air sticks on the curved upper side and creates a sub pressure zone that lifts the airplane. You can read more about the Coanda effect and the Repulsin in the

["UFO-page" on Vortex World.](#)

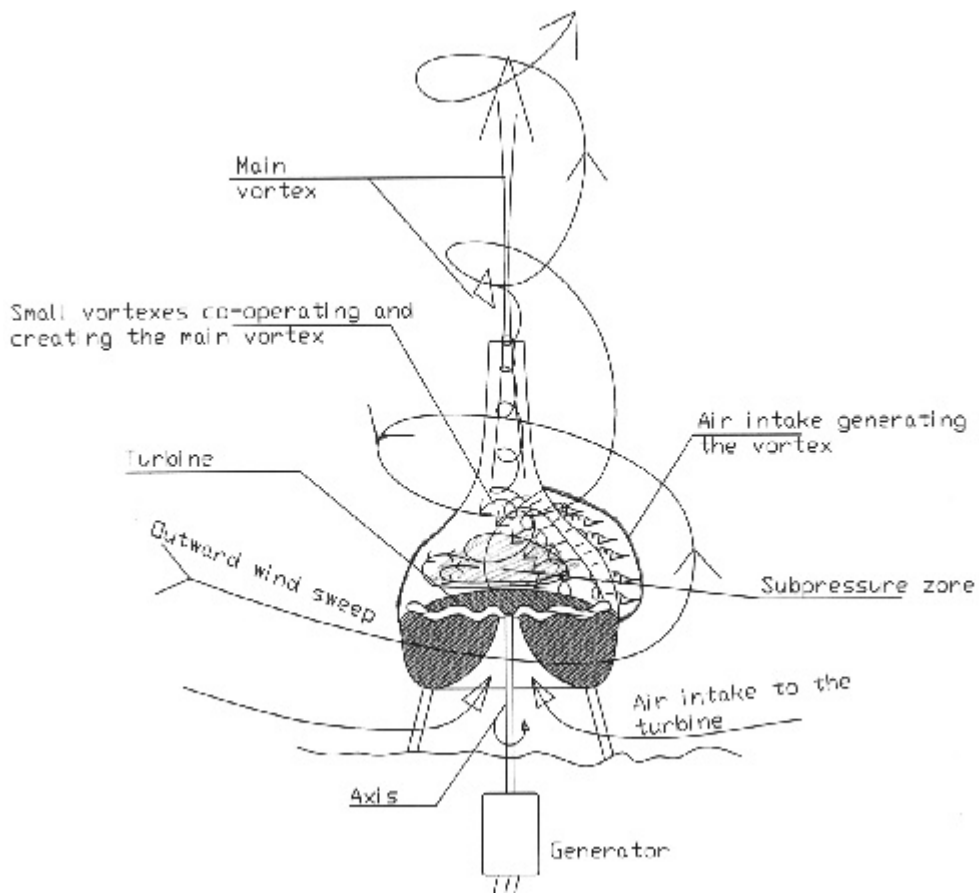


Figure 3, showing the main parts and the vortices inside the chamber.

The main idea with the wind mill is to create a vortex inside a chamber. This vortex creates a sub pressure that sucks air through a turbine and into the chamber.

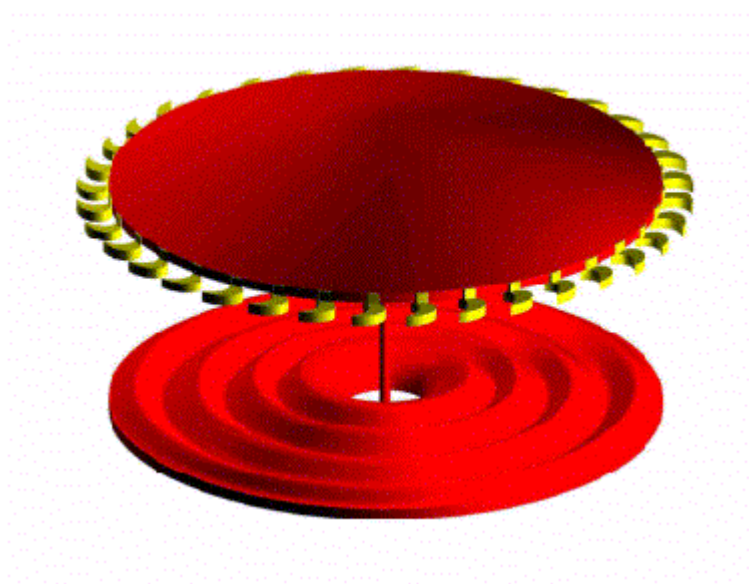


Figure 4, showing the three main parts of the turbine.

The turbine has three main parts: upper and under membrane (red) and the turbine vanes (yellow). The upper membrane is shaped as the end of an egg. This shape helps to form the main vortex as this circulates around it. The air is sucked through the membranes and blows on the turbine vanes as it passes into the chamber. The turbine vanes translate the impulse to the upper membrane and it starts to circulate around the axis. When the circulating speed reaches a critical level the air that rushes between the two membranes starts to spin around its own axis. This creates long threads of air that multiply the transversal energy. As the peripheral speed increases due to the larger radius the threads will be more and more twisted together. When they are leaving the membranes they will blow very hard on the turbine vanes creating a torque around the axis maintaining the rotation, and acting as a source of power to the generator.

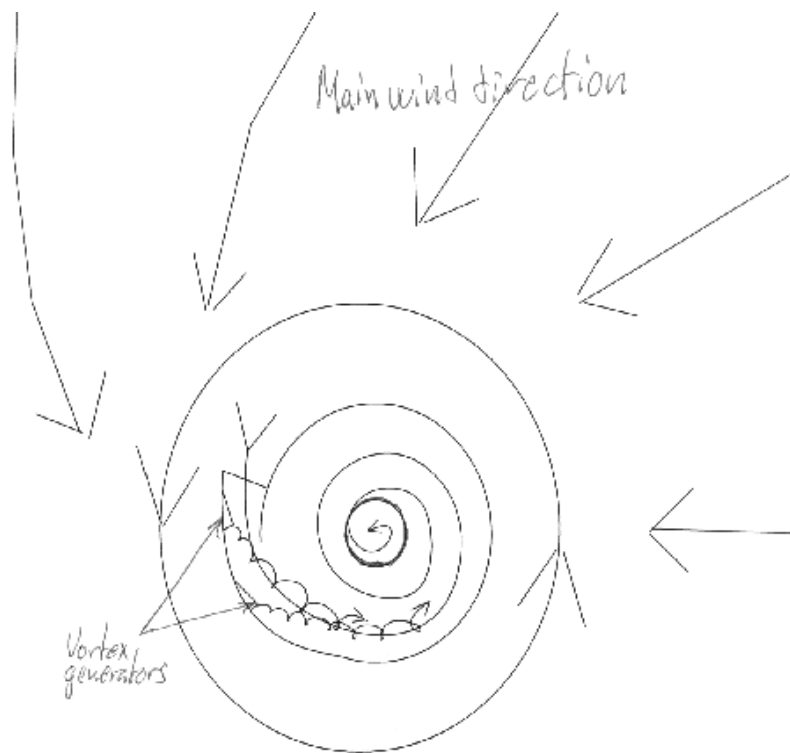


Figure 5, showing a top view on how the main vortex is generated. The main vortex is generated when the wind outside blows into the chamber through the "gill". When the air passes the gill, small vortex generator shapes many small vortices. See Fig. 5 in the picture below.

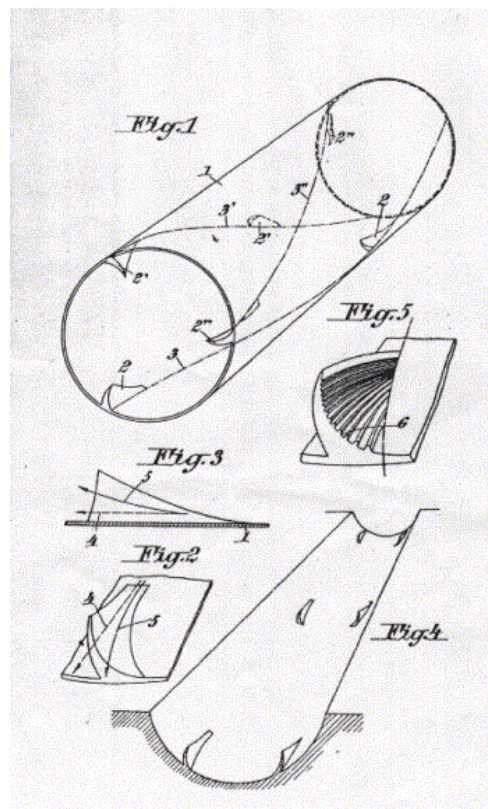


Figure 6, Viktor Schauberger's patent, Austrian patent number: 134543. When these small vortices pass into the egg-shaped and circular main chamber they start to twist together into the large main vortex, compare a vortex into a vortex. The wall of the chamber forces the main vortex to circulate and rise up to the circular window at the top. As the radius gets smaller the rotation speed of the main vortex increases. When the rotation speed increases the transversal speed increases generating a huge drag through the chamber. This effect is applied from the microscopic level up to the macroscopic level, generating a sub pressure in the lower central part of the chamber.

# Aufzeichnungen und Briefe aus Arnold Hohls Notizbuch

Viktor Schaubberger

[Gescannt aus: Mensch und Technik – naturgemäß;  
1993; Nr. 2; S. 1-76; Layout geändert]

## Inhalt

Vorbemerkungen der Redaktion .....	2
1 Brief vom 9. August 1936: Viktor Schaubberger an Werner Zimmermann .....	3
2 Brief vom 4. Februar 1936: Viktor Schaubberger an Werner Zimmermann .....	7
3 Ansichten über physikalische Grundlagen .....	9
3.1 Bewegung und Formen .....	9
3.2 Naturbeispiel Golfstrom .....	10
3.3 Biologische Technik .....	12
4 Zur Bedeutung des Wassers .....	13
4.1 Allgemeines .....	13
4.2 Qualitativer und quantitativer Wasserrückgang .....	14
4.3 Sterilisierung des Wassers .....	14
5 Zur Behandlung des Bodens .....	14
6 Zu Urzeugungs-, Entwicklungs- und Stoffwechselprozessen .....	15
7 Versuche und technische Anwendungen .....	19
7.1 Verhalten von Wasser mit Zusätzen .....	19
7.1.1 Hochquellwasser .....	19
7.1.2 Tiefsee-Meerwasser .....	19
7.1.3 Weiße juvenile Erde .....	19
7.2 Blutführung/Doppeldrallrohr/Heilwasser .....	19
7.3 Quellwasser künstlich herstellen .....	26
7.4 Allgemeines zu Apparaten/Maschinen .....	30
7.5 Kälte-/Wärme-Maschine .....	33
7.6 Vakuum-Turbine .....	34
7.7 Atomverwandlungsmaschine .....	35
7.7.1 Notizen vom 15. Juli 1936 .....	35
7.7.2 Notizen vom 24. Juli 1936 .....	35
7.7.3 Notizen vom 25. Juli 1936 .....	36
7.7.4 Notizen vom 27. Juli 1936 .....	36
7.7.5 Notizen vom 1. August 1936 .....	37
7.7.6 Notizen vom 11. August 1936 .....	37
7.7.7 Notizen vom 13. August 1936 .....	38
7.7.8 Notizen vom 14. August 1936 .....	38
7.7.9 Eine Augenzeugin berichtet .....	38
7.7.10 Hohls Besuchsrapport vom 14. - 17. August 1936 .....	39
8 Notizen vom 7. Juli 1937 .....	40
8.1 Gewinnung von Kraftstoffen .....	40
8.2 Unterschied zwischen Trieb- und Treibstoff .....	41
8.3 Schleppkraftbetrachtung .....	42
9 Benzin aus Wasser (Notizen vom Januar 1936) .....	48
10 Schlussbetrachtungen (Notizen vom April 1941) .....	52
Fakten aus dem Leben Viktor Schaubbergers: .....	56



## Vorbemerkungen der Redaktion

Als sich vor 25 Jahren die "Gruppe der Neuen" zusammenfand, war eines ihrer Ziele, die Erkenntnisse des Österreicher Viktor Schaubergers (geb. 1885, gest. 1958) einem interessierten Leserkreis zu vermitteln. Diese Aufgabe wurde im wesentlichen in den ersten 15 Jahren geleistet. Inzwischen neu hinzugekommene Leser haben u.U. den Namen und das Anliegen Viktor Schaubergers nie gehört. Dabei ist die Aussage des Österreicher nach wie vor von höchster Bedeutung. Tag für Tag wird die Menschheit mit Meldungen über Umweltprobleme konfrontiert. Häufig stehen die Probleme im Zusammenhang mit der Aufbereitung und Nutzung der atomaren und fossilen Energieträger Uran, Erdöl und Kohle aber auch im Bereich der chemischen Industrie stehen wir vor Umweltproblemen großen Ausmaßes. Das heißt, im Sinne Viktor Schaubergers haben wir nach wie vor nicht gelernt, umweltverträgliche Prozesstechniken und Energienutzungsverfahren zu entwickeln.

Vor einiger Zeit wurde uns nun eine Abschrift eines 1941 von dem Schweizer Arnold Hohl angelegten Notizbuches überreicht, welches Aufzeichnungen und Briefe Viktor Schaubergers aus den Jahren 1936 und 1937 enthält. Obwohl die Aufzeichnungen in vielen Passagen nicht unseren redaktionellen Maßstäben entsprechen, haben wir uns entschlossen, den uns vorliegenden Wortlaut auszugsweise originalgetreu wiederzugeben, um unseren Lesern eine Vorstellung von den Schwierigkeiten zu vermitteln, vor denen jemand steht, der Viktor Schaubergers Ideen in die Praxis umsetzen möchte.

Es ist Viktor Schaubergers Auffassung, dass, durch die konsequente Anwendung der von ihm entdeckten, d.h. in der Natur beobachteten Bewegungsart von Luft und Wasser, Stoffwechselprozesse (er spricht von Atomumwandlungen) ausgelöst werden, die

- a) eine Veredelung der beteiligten Stoffe bewirken und
- b) zur Gewinnung von Antriebsenergie für Maschinen aller Art genutzt werden können.

Von besonderer Bedeutung ist die Feststellung, dass Wasser mehr ist als die Verbindung von Wasserstoff und Sauerstoff zu  $H_2O$ . Die Fähigkeit, Stoffe zu lösen oder auszuschcheiden, je nach Umstand, macht Wasser erst zu dem, was es ist. Die vielseitigen Funktionen, die Wasser hat, findet man bei Schaubergers wie folgt ausgedrückt: Wasser, ein

- Akkumulator für kosmische Umbaustoffe und terrestrische
- Reststoffe

- Transformator
- organisches Ausgleichsprodukt

Auch auf Wasser wendet Schauberger den Begriff der Reife an: So wie wir im allgemeinen Sprachgebrauch von Unausgegorenem reden, wenn etwas noch nicht reif ist, so fordert Schauberger für ein biologisch gutes Wasser:

- es darf nur restlos umgebaute, ausgegorene irdische Reststoffe aufnehmen und behauptet: Wenn Wasser organische Rohstoffe (d.h. unausgegorene Stoffe) aufnimmt, beginnen diese im Körper zu faulen. Die Kategorisierung und Einteilung der Notizen in verschiedene Kapitel haben wir nach unserem Gutdünken vorgenommen.

## **1 Brief vom 9. August 1936: V. Schauberger an Werner Zimmermann**

Lieber Werner Zimmermann!

Schon seit frühester Kindheit war es mein sehnlichster Wunsch, die Natur zu verstehen und mich dadurch der Wahrheit zu nähern, die ich weder in der Schule, noch in der Kirche auffinden konnte.

So zog es mich immer wieder hinaus in den Wald, und stundenlang konnte ich das Fließen des Wassers beobachten, ohne müde oder verdrossen zu werden. Ich wusste damals noch nicht, dass das Wasser der Träger des Lebens oder der Urquell dessen ist, was wir als das Bewusstsein bezeichnen. - Ahnungslos ließ ich das fließende Wasser an meinen suchenden Augen vorüberrinnen und wurde erst nach Jahren gewahr, dass dieses rinnende Wasser unser Bewusstsein magnetisch anzieht, ein Stück mitnimmt, mit einer Kraft, die oft so stark wirkt, dass man das eigene Bewusstsein vorübergehend verliert und unfreiwillig tief einschläft. Und so begann ich nach und nach mit diesen Kräften des Wassers zu spielen und gab dieses sogenannte freie Bewusstsein hin, um es vorübergehend dem Wasser zu überlassen. Nach und nach wurde aus diesem Spiel ein tiefer Ernst, weil ich sah, dass man das eigene Bewusstsein aus dem Körper entbinden und in das Wasser einbinden konnte.

Nahm ich es wieder an mich, dann erzählte mir das dem Wasser geborgte Bewusstsein oft seltsame Dinge. So wurde aus dem Forschenden ein Forscher, der sein Bewusstsein sozusagen auf Entdeckungsreisen aussenden konnte, und so erfuhr ich Dinge, die der übrigen

Menschheit entgingen, weil sie nicht wusste, dass der Mensch in der Lage ist, sein freies Bewusstsein überall dorthin zu senden, wo das sehende Auge nicht hinblicken kann. Dieses sozusagen mit verbundenen Augen übende Sehen, gab mir schließlich die Verbundenheit mit der geheimnisvollen Natur, die ich nun langsam erkennen und in ihrem eigenen Weben verstehen konnte.

So wurde es mir nach und nach auch klar, dass wir Menschen gewohnt sind, alles verkehrt und unrichtig zu sehen. - Die größte Überraschung aber war, dass wir Menschen das Wertvollste nutzlos abfliegen lassen und von der großen Geistigkeit, die in uns einströmt, nur die Fäkalien behalten.

Nach und nach bekam ich als Jäger einen großen Respekt vor dem sogenannten Instinkt des vermeintlich niederorganisierten Tieres, das naturverbunden das weiterdenkt, was die Natur in unverfälschter Art in das Tiergehirn eingebaut hat. - Und so wurde es mir langsam klar, daß das dem letzten Gliede der aufbauenden Natur verbliebene Bewusstsein eine große Gefahr für den eigensinnig denkenden Menschen bedeutet und in Wirklichkeit das Unfreieste ist, solange der natürlich gewordene Mensch diese göttliche Gabe nicht zweckdienlich zu verwerten versteht.

Alles baut sich in der Natur stufenweise auf und so ist der sogenannte Verstand ein in der Regel vogelfreies Gebilde, das Tausenden Gefahren ausgesetzt ist und daher auch vielen Einrücken unterliegt, die gefährlicher sind, als der ahnungslose Mensch es nur ahnt. Dieser Zustand mure in erster Linie dadurch entstehen, weil der Mensch den falschen Rezepten folgte, die unsere großen Philosophen uns schenkten. So wurde der Mensch statt ein Schöpfer auf Erden, ein ganz gemeiner Spekulant, der sich von der Wahrheit und Wirklichkeit immer weiter und weiter entfernte, wodurch er mit der Natur alle bindenden Bande verlor und im wahrsten Sinne des Wortes vogelfrei wurde. Der Mensch gewöhnte sich an, alles auf sein Selbst zu beziehen und übersah, dass die wirkliche Wahrheit ein schlüpfriges Ding ist, das das ewig umbauende Hirn nahezu unbemerkt abgibt und meist nur dasjenige zurückbleibt, was wir durch viel Mühe und Arbeit uns eintrichtern und in uns haften bleibt, weil es zu schwer und zu kompliziert ist, um als freier Gedanke frei und unbeschwert abfließen zu können. Und so musste die aus diesen Gedanken entstehende Arbeit das Produkt dieser Fäkalienwirtschaft werden, die geradezu schon zum Himmel stinkt, weil die Basis schon verdorben und faul ist. Kein Wunder daher, dass es überall schief geht.

- Wahrheit gibt es nur in der allweisen Natur.

Und so wurden die Massen der Menschen unbewusst die Opfer der Vertreter eines Pseudowissens, die sich entweder zwischen den Menschen und die Erde oder sich zwischen den Himmel und den Menschen stellen und dasjenige vorwegnehmen, das wertvoll ist. Die einen binden die Hände in zwecklose Arbeit, die anderen den Geist an eine sinnlose Fessel, die sie Dogmatik benennen, die es in der Natur nicht gibt, weil dort ewiges Fließen, ewige Bewegung und daher auch ewige Wechselsinnigkeit herrscht.

Ob sich diese, die breiten Massen verführenden Führer selbst und damit die anderen unfreiwillig belogen, wird sich niemals klar feststellen lassen. Jedenfalls ist die Zeit nicht mehr ferne, wo die Menschen frei werden und der Ur-Zweck des Lebens aus eigenen Erkenntnissen auffassen lernen, weil nun das Mittel gefunden ist, den Menschen von der unseligen Habsucht zu befreien, deren Opfer die Überzahl der Menschen wurden, weil sie bedingungslos glaubten. Dieses Mittel ist eine Maschine, die mit dem Charakter der heutigen Maschinen in keiner Weise etwas Gemeinsames hat. Diese Maschine ist organisierte Natur und in der Lage, die verschiedensten Stoffe im aufbauenden Sinne zu verwandeln oder jede Materie, wie immer sie heiße, zu veredeln.

Das Produkt dieser Veredelung sind rein ätherische Stoffe, die eine hohe Qualität in sich tragen, so dass der Mensch seine Nahrung, sein Wasser, und die ihm notwendige Luft so aufnehmen kann, dass es fast keine Arbeit mehr hat, um das Genossene verarbeiten oder verdauen zu müssen. Und so wird sich der Mensch, der zum Räuber oder zum Fresser wurde, wieder langsam entmaterialisieren und dasjenige wieder werden, was er einmal schon war, die Krone der Schöpfung, das letzte Glied dieses organischen Gliedbaues, der Organisator und Schöpfervertreter auf Erden. Ein altes Sprichwort sagt, dass alles schon da war und alles zweimal zu geschehen hat, weil eben der Mensch zwiespältig geboren, und daher gut und schlecht, weise und zugleich auch unsagbar dumm ist.

Diese Maschine wird den Menschen, der von Natur aus kein Arbeitstier war, wieder wie einst arbeitslos machen, welche Arbeitslosigkeit aber mit dem heutigen Gebrechen der Welt so viel wie gar nichts zu tun hat, weil anstelle der heutigen Arbeit ein Dienst treten wird, der den Menschen seit jeher bestimmt war. Dieser Dienst an der Natur ist die Dosierung und die Organisation der blind in die Welt hineingeworfenen Stoffe, die der Mensch sinnrichtig so zu

verteilen hat, dass diese Energiekonzentrationen allerorts gleichmäßig wirken und dadurch eine Gleichheit auslösen, die dasjenige dann ergibt, was uns als die wahre Brüderlichkeit und gegenseitige Verträglichkeit vorschwebt. Durch diese vergeistigte Wiedergeburt, werden die Menschen sich von selbst angewöhnen, das aus der Erde wieder auferstehende Leben zu ehren und zu achten und sich in Zukunft hüten, wie Heuschrecken Stängel zu fressen, sondern das Beste nur naschen, wie die Bienen, die bekannter Weise dosieren und geben, wenn sie nehmen. Haben die Menschen einmal das Nehmen gelernt, dann werden sie auch das Geben erlernen und auf den Raum zu achten verstehen, dessen Macht und Kraft dem heutigen Menschen noch vollkommen schleierhaft ist, weil es ansonsten dem Wahnsinn der unorganischen Körperkraft nicht gäbe, mit welchen die Menschen derzeit versuchen, aus verheizten Aufbaustoffen für das Leben Kraft zu gewinnen.

Die nun gefundene Organ-Maschine wird dem Menschen jeden Wunsch erfüllen, den der aufbauwillige Mensch stellt, aber auch alles dasjenige vernichten, was unwahr, spekulativ und lügenhaft ist. Meine Aufgabe war es, diese Maschine zu finden. - Nun ergibt sich die gewaltige Aufgabe, den großen Menschen zu finden, der den nun kommenden Umbruch der Zeit für alle zu organisieren versteht. Bevor dieser Mensch gefunden ist, wird kein menschliches Auge diese wundervolle Maschine in ihrer wahren Wirksamkeit sehen, weil ich mir der ungeheuren Verantwortung voll bewusst bin, die mich zum Schweigen zwingt, solange ich nicht die Überzeugung habe, dass diese Maschine nur einen Dienst leisten wird, nämlich der Natur und erst mittelbar demjenigen zu dienen, was wir so allgemein als den "Menschen" benennen.

Helfen Sie mir, den gesuchten Menschen zu finden. Ziehen Sie von Land zu Land. Suchen Sie ohne Unterlass. Sparen Sie keine Mühe, um diesen Menschen zu finden. Sie nennen sich selbst einen "Wahrheitsapostel". Es ist meine volle Überzeugung, dass Sie es ernst und mit der Menschheit gut meinen. Die Natur verlieh Ihnen den zum Herzen gehenden Ausdruck der Sprache. Wählen Sie mir den Menschen aus, der nun noch notwendig ist, und dem ich das größte Geschenk anbieten kann, das je ein Mensch zu vergeben hatte. Glauben Sie mir und handeln Sie danach, was die Natur Ihnen eingibt und Sie werden den Ur-Zweck Ihres Lebens erfüllen, nämlich der Wahrheit zu dienen, denn ich habe die Wahrheit gefunden und will sie an alle vergeben. Gruß V.S.

## 2 Aus einem Brief V. Sch. an W.Z. vom 4. Februar 1936

Abgesehen von der ‚Benzinbereitung aus Wasser‘, die wir bezüglich der Auswertung besprechen werden, bin ich auf eine Sache gestoßen, die vielleicht die ganze Technik und Wirtschaft von Grund auf verändert. Am 22. des Monates habe ich ein Patent über Luftturbine bekommen. Das Prinzip dieser Vakuum-Turbine besteht darin, dass in einem Kapillarrohr und einem Doppeldrallrohr, das Elektromagnete eingebaut hat, ein künstliches Gewitter, beziehungsweise hohe elektrische Luftspannungen entstehen, die die Luftstoffe in elektrische Energien verwandeln, die sich in die Seitenwandungen entladen und von dort im Diffusionsweg als Wärme nach abwärts geleitet werden. Durch diese Umwertung von Luftstoff in Energien entsteht ein nach aufwärts gerichtetes, sich steigerndes physikalisches Vakuum und durch das nach unten zu sukzessiv verlaufende Wärmegefälle, ein starker Luftstrom nach aufwärts, der sich nach wenigen Minuten bis zur zyklonartigen Wucht steigert.

Nachdem auf diese höchst einfache Weise der Luftdruck nach aufwärts zu sukzessive abgesenkt werden kann, steigert sich der Gegenstrom der Luft bis über 200 km/Std. Ich erziele daher ca. 10 000 PS an Bremskraft auf einer schiefen Ebene der Propeller. Damit ist das betriebsstofflose und sich lautlos bewegende Flugzeug erfunden, weil durch das im Inneren der Maschine entstehende physikalische Vakuum vor dem Kopfende der Maschine, ein luftleerer Raum entsteht, wodurch die Maschine selbst vorgezogen wird. Dieser Sog kann durch entsprechende Gestaltung eines im Inneren der Maschinen angebrachtes Lungen- oder Kiemensystem beliebig gesteigert werden, so dass die Bewegungskraft und Geschwindigkeit des Apparates beliebig gesteigert werden kann, weil der rückstoßende Luftkolben der Betriebsstoff ist, der analytisch zerlegt, den physikalischen Gegenstrom auslöst, wodurch Saugkräfte entstehen.

Damit habe ich endlich erreicht, was ich seit 20 Jahren anstrebte, nämlich die Kohle, Öl und Wasserkräfte zu entwerten. Diese Stoffe sind für den Aufbau der Nahrung bestimmt, und es musste mit der sich steigernden Entnahme dieser Stoffe aus dem Organismus Erde zu Nahrungssorgen kommen, weil sich die Menschen fortwährend vermehren und immer mehr aus der Erde entnehmen, was zu ihrem Unterhalt dient. Die durch meine Maschinen umgebauten Luftstoffe bilden, da kein Verbrennungsvorgang mitwirkend ist, sehr hochwertige Stickstoffprodukte, die auf die Vegetation steigernd und treibend wirken. Damit habe ich den Techniker getroffen, der Stoffe, die zum Nahrungsaufbau bestimmt sind, im

Wege der warmen Verbrennung zu einer Bewegungsgestaltung benützt und daher den Naturaufbau bis zum Stillstand der Wachstumsprozesse stört.

Die künftigen Betriebsstoffe werden nur sauerstoffübersättigte Luftmassen sein, wodurch der mechanische und physikalische Luftdruck auf der Erde verringert und auch in den Tieflagen Höhenluftverhältnisse im Sinne der Vegetationssteigerung aufgewertet werden und zugleich tropenartige Umstellungen eintreten müssen, die der kommenden Eiszeit entgegenwirken. Diese Maschinen werden die ganze Weltwirtschaft vollkommen verändern und Kriege etc. überflüssig machen, weil zwangsläufig ein Überfluss an Vegetationsstoffen entsteht, der notwendigerweise aufgebraucht werden muss, soll es nicht in gegensinniger Weise wie heute, zu negativen Kraftüberschüssen und damit abermals zu elementaren Katastrophen kommen. Damit wird die Nächstenliebe und Duldsamkeit zum Gebot der Vernunft, weil sich steigender Umsatz in Wohlstand verwandelt, also die Nächstenliebe, die bekannter Weise durch Androhung von Hölle und Teufel nicht erreicht werden konnte, sich auf diese Art einstellen und sogar zum Spekulationsobjekt der Menschheit wird. Ich arbeite nun fieberhaft an der Vervollständigung dieser höchst einfachen und billigen Atmungsmaschine und hoffe, Ihnen schon Ende des Monats das fertige Werk präsentieren zu können...?

Und dann beginnt Ihr Werk, nämlich das Werk der Berg- und Tal-Predigt, der Ruf zur Vernunft, deren Ende die Umkrempelung der heutigen Wirtschafts- und Fehlordnung ist. Uns beide scheint das Schicksal zusammengeführt zu haben. Nochmals betone ich, dass sie sich auf mich 100%ig verlassen können, weil ich in der Lage bin, Ihnen Material zu liefern, das die ganze Welt zum Aufhorchen bringt und derart aufwühlend wirkt, dass man Ihnen von allen Seiten zuströmen wird, wenn Sie zu predigen beginnen.

Meine Aufgabe ist es, zu forschen und zu suchen, zu entschleiern, Ihre Aufgabe ist es, zu sprechen und zu klären und damit wird auch Ihr Wirtschaftsring dasjenige, was er sein soll, der Kraftpunkt, der sich wellenförmig verbreitet und alles umfasst, was noch einen Funken Vernunft hat.

Freundlicher Gruß Ihr Viktor Schauburger.

### 3 Ansichten über physikalische Grundlagen

#### 3.1 Bewegung und Formen

Verschiedenen Menschen wurde es klar, dass alle Lebens- und Bewegungserscheinungen auf chemophysikalischen und elektromagnetischen Ursachen fußen, die ihrerseits wieder von Plus- und Minustemperaturen ausgelöst werden. Wille und Gegenwille sind Funktionen der Temperaturen, die durch irgendwelche Erregung entstehen. Arbeit ist eine Funktion der Temperaturen, die über und unter dem Wende- oder Kreuzpunkt, respektive Anomaliepunkt liegen, in dem das Leben entsteht. Er gleicht der Gegenwart, die eine Funktion des mit höchster Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit vor sich gehenden Abfließens ist. Dieses Fließen ist ewige Gestaltungs-Bewegung, die ihrerseits wieder, die ständige Bewegungs-Gestaltung verursacht, und so kommen wir zum Trugschluss und zur Erklärung des Lebens, das zwischen Geburt und dem Begräbnis liegend, der Schein ist, der die Wirklichkeit in der Entwicklung verkörpert. Die Temperatur ist demnach die Differenz der Differenzen, aus denen sich die unendliche Bewegung der Entwicklung ergibt, die ihrerseits wieder das Produkt von Spannungen ist, die sich aus der Gegensinnigkeit der Bewegungsrichtungen ergeben.

Die Bewegung der Planeten spiegelt sich in der Bewegung der irdischen Körper und so besteht auch die Möglichkeit, durch eine bestimmte Körperbewegung den Gang der Planetensysteme zu bestimmen. Umgekehrt aber die Bewegung der Planeten in den Dienst der körperlichen Bewegung zu stellen und damit haben wir die Möglichkeit, die unendlich wachsende Bewegungskraft uns dienstbar zu machen. Gegensätze haben bestimmte Bewegungsrichtungen und finden ihren Ausdruck in der Wechselsinnigkeit des Stoffes der lebt und sich bewegt. Gelingt es nun, die gleichgerichteten Bewegungsstoffe zu dosieren und die so organisierten Stoffgruppen zueinander in gegensätzliche Bewegung zu bringen, so ergibt sich die Maximalbewegung, welcher die Minimal-Gestaltung harmonisch gegenübersteht, weil letztere die Summe in einem Punkt bedeutet, der seinerseits der Wendepunkt oder der Anomaliepunkt ist, aus dem sich die Gestaltungsbewegung aus der sich verkörpernden Bewegungsgestaltung ergibt.

Diese Körper-Gestaltung ist das Produkt der organischen Aufbauvorgänge und es wird klar, dass wir zur willkürlichen Konstruktion solcher Körperformen die von Natur aus bestimmten Grundformen benutzen müssen. Diese Grundform finden wir in der Ellipse, die in Bewegung gebracht, die spiegelbildliche Gegenform auslöst, die als die natürliche Gegenform auch die gegensinnigen Gefühle oder die wechselseitigen Temperaturen erzeugt, die ihrerseits wieder



die Spannungen und die dazu gehörige Bewegungsform auslösen. Da es sich hier um reine Entwurf-Formen handelt, kann es keinen Gleichgewichts-Zustand und damit das nicht geben, was wir als ‚Ruhe‘ verstehen. Diese scheinbare Ruhe ist in Wahrheit die höchste Bewegung und zugleich der Punkt der Verwandlung des Stoffes, die Urzeugung der rein geistigen Dimension, die sich blitzschnell in Bewegung und Gestaltung verwandelt, wodurch sich das Ding zwangsläufig in und an sich verkehrt und damit von innen heraus sich bewegt. Umgekehrt ist diese doppelsinnige Bewegung die Ursache des Lebens, das sich seinerseits wieder in und an sich verwandelt.

Gelingt es nun, irgendeinen beliebigen Stoff - z.B. Wasser - in ewiger Wandlung zu halten, so haben wir die unendliche Wachstumsbewegung vor uns, die ihrerseits wieder die Bewegungsgestaltung erzeugt, die wir im mittelbaren Weg nun in das verwandeln können, was wir in der heutigen Ausdrucksform als die ‚Kraft‘ bezeichnen. Damit nähern wir uns der Technik, die das künftige biologische Zeitalter auslösen und beherrschen wird. Das Grundprinzip dieser natürlichen Technik ist die widerstandslose Bewegung, die sich naturnotwendig aus der entwicklungsmäßigen Bewegungsgestaltung ergibt, die, um eine Stufe höher organisiert, von selbst den Platz auf dem sie gestanden, freigibt und so die Gegenbewegung des nachrückenden Körpers bringt.

### 3.2 Naturbeispiel Golfstrom

Eines der größten Naturbeispiele dieser organischen und widerstandslosen Bewegung finden wir beispielsweise im Golfstrom, der sich entgegen allen bisher bekannten Erklärungen in der Richtung des scheinbar größten Widerstandes bewegt, der aber genau betrachtet, das bewegende Element selber ist, wodurch bildlich gesprochen der Widerstand in Wirklichkeit die Bewegung und die Bewegung der Widerstand ist. Jede Bewegungserscheinung ist eine Lebenserscheinung, die durch ganz bestimmt abgetönte chemophysikalische und elektromagnetische Impulse ausgelöst, die morphologische Bewegung ergibt und aus diesem Grunde müssen wir auch die Golfstrombewegung von diesem Gesichtspunkt aus betrachten, wenn wir uns diese rätselhafte Bewegung in der Gegenbewegung erklären wollen.

Das erste, was uns bei dieser Bewegung auffällt, ist das Fehlen des Gefälles und die Verdrängung des kalten Meerwassers durch das warme Wasser, des sich nach Norden bewegenden Golfstromes. Die Ursachen dieser Bewegung sind auftretende Spannungsdifferenzen, die aus der örtlichen Lage durch die verschiedene Winkelstellung der

Sonnenstrahlen entstehen. Durch diese verschiedenen Winkelstellungen ergeben sich wechselsinnige Stoffwechselforgänge, die durch wechselseitige Temperatur- und Lichteinflüsse entstehen und wodurch stoffliche Umbauvorgänge eintreten, die zueinander in verschiedener Richtung abfließend, wieder Temperatur-Spannungen gestalten, die sich ihrerseits in Bewegung umsetzen müssen, weil sie den vorlagernden Widerstand verzehren. Um den tiefen Sinn dieser gegenseitigen Verzehrung zu verstehen, müssen wir uns in erster Linie darüber klar sein, dass wir mit Wärme und Wärme zweierlei Gestaltungsarten vor uns haben und dass beispielsweise die am Grunde der Polarmeere auftretenden Wärmerscheinungen mit denen auf der Oberfläche der Äquatorialmeere nicht identisch sind. Das Gleiche gilt in umgekehrter Weise für die auf der Oberfläche der Polarmeere auftretenden Kälteerscheinungen, die wieder im Gegensatz zu dem am Meeresgrund der Äquatorialmeere auftretenden Kälteerscheinungen stehen. Dem eigentlichen Wesen nach haben wir da und dort zueinander im diametralen Verhältnis stehende Stoffwechsel-Vorgänge vor uns.

Am Grunde der Polarmeere tritt infolge der Konzentration der oberflächigen Sauerstoffmassen, durch die dort herrschende Kälte, ein Mangel an diesen Stoffen auf, der durch Zufluss der an den Äquatorialgegenden übermäßig produzierten Sauerstoffmengen ergänzt werden muss. Umgekehrt muss der Mangel an Gegenstoffen (Kohlenstoffen), der durch die intensive Einwirkung der nahezu senkrecht einfallenden Sonnenstrahlen am Äquator auftritt, durch Zufluss von ätherischen Kohlestoffen aus dem Eismeer her ergänzt werden. Da sich nun die gegenseitig in der Vertikalrichtung diametral kreuzenden Stoffe schon am Wege ständig ausgleichen müssen, muss es gegen den Norden zu zu organischen Wärmerscheinungen und umgekehrt, dem Äquator zu, in der Meerestiefe zu organischen Kälteerscheinungen kommen. Je weiter sich die organischen Wärmestoffe vom Entstehungsherd am Grunde der Eismeere entfernen, um so schwächer werden sie und im selben Verhältnis werden sie von den gegensinnigen Stoffen verzehrt.

Das Umgekehrte geschieht mit den räumlich gestalteten Sauerstoffen, die sich gegen Norden bewegen müssen und dem organischen Kohlestoffherd zuströmen, dem sie schließlich zum Opfer fallen, wodurch im Wege eines kalten Oxidationsprozesses der Ausgleich am Grund der nördlichen Meere und dadurch die organische Wärme entsteht. Die Richtung dieser verkehrtdimensionalen Ausgleichsbewegung geht in zwei normal aufeinanderstehenden Dreiecksflächen vor sich, deren Hypotenusen sich in organischer Winkelform schneiden, so

dass eine ineinanderschraubende Bewegung entsteht, die im äußeren Bild einer Achterform gleicht, deren gegenseitige Abrundungen sich verkehrt-proportional gegenüberstehen.

Die Folge der organischen Verkehrung ist die subjektive Bewegung der Wassermassen und umgekehrt. Durch diese Verkehrungsbewegung kommt es zu einer organischen Wechselgestaltung der innerklimatischen Vorgänge, so dass an den Polen am Grunde der Meere im Winter frühlingsartige Gezeiten entstehen, welche die Wanderfische veranlassen, dorthin abzuwandern.

Die Ursache der nach Norden zu fast oberflächigen Wanderrichtung der Fische steht mit dem organischen Sauerstoffschwund im Zusammenhang. In umgekehrter Wanderrichtung muss sich das Bild dieser Wanderstraße verkehren, und aus diesem Grunde ist auch die Rückkehr der Mutterfische dem oberflächlichen Beobachter bisher ein Rätsel geblieben. Was sich in den Meeren in dieser Richtung abspielt, finden wir in der Atmosphäre in der genau normalen Gegenüberstellung, und so ergibt sich im Schnittpunkt dieser sogenannte Verkehrungsbewegung die irdische Gestaltung der Erde mit ihren den örtlichen Lagen entsprechenden Entwicklungsformen.

### 3.3 Biologische Technik

Dieses in ganz allgemeinen Zügen skizzierte Weltbild und seine Bewegung ist die Grundlage für die künftige oder die biologische Technik, welche in der Hauptsache auf der Möglichkeit beruht, den subjektiven Schwerpunkt mit Hilfe von Mutatoren durch eine inneratomare Umformung zu verlegen, so dass der Schwerpunkt innerhalb einer verkehrt-dimensionalen Fläche um sich und an sich zu wandern beginnt, bzw. immer an verschiedenen Punkten als sozusagen subjektive Gegenwart aufscheint. Die Voraussetzung dieses sich bewegendes Schraubenganges ist die planetarische Konstruktion von zueinander in einem gewissen Größenverhältnis stehenden Ellipsenkörpern, deren wechselsinnige Bewegungsrichtung zwei zueinander umgekehrt proportionale Energiekörper mit wechselseitigen Spannungen auslöst, wodurch ein um seine eigene Achse rotierender Kern entsteht, der ähnlich dem Dotter eines Eies im organischen Mittelpunkt im Lebens- oder Anomaliepunkt frei schwebt. Dieser organische Anomaliepunkt ist sozusagen der Nullpunkt des ellipsenartigen Gestaltungskörpers oder der Drehpunkt der zueinander verkehrtsinnig bewegten organischen und anorganischen Masse. Diese organische Bewegung ist die Ursache der ewigen Bewegungsgestaltung und die Ursache des ewig wechselnden Bildes von Tag und Nacht, Wärme und Kälte, Leben und Tod.

Jeder Stoff, wie er auch heie, ist natrlich entstanden, daher gttlicher Art, unsterblich und daher in ewig wandelbarer Gestaltung. Was uns gegenwrtig als rumlich sichtbarer Krper erscheint, baute sich in der Vergangenheit um, und kommt als umgewandelte Zukunft in geluterter Form wieder. Zwischen den rein geistigen und rein krperlichen Umbaudimensionen liegen die gestaltlichen und die unrumlichen Zwischendimensionen, welche die Umkehrung vermitteln. Ebenso sind Wrme und Klte, Licht und Dunkel, Zwischendimensionen dieser sich ewig umgestaltenden Formen und aus diesem Grund sind wir Menschen auch in der Lage, mit Hilfe dieser wundervollen Zwischenformen die Massen mit unbegrenzter Macht zu bewegen, wenn wir die einzelnen Zusammenhnge harmonisch zu organisieren verstehen.

Jede Bewegung ist eine Funktion der sogenannten Temperaturen, die sich zu gestalten beginnen, wenn wir das Ding in den organischen Lebenspunkt (Anomaliepunkt fr Wasser ist +4 Grad Celsius) setzen. Daher ist die wahre und einzig richtige Arbeit des gotthnlichen und daher schpferischen Menschen, - die Organisation des weltlichen Getriebes - das wir rumlich und energetisch (unrumlich) so zu gestalten vermgen, dass ein selbstndiger organisierter Kreislauf und dadurch die sich unendlich entwickelnde Bewegung entsteht, die wir als die sogenannte ‚Kraft‘ dann nutzen knnen. Diese Art Nutzung ist kein Raubbau, sondern vielmehr eine Untersttzung des dieses All beherrschenden und bewegenden Willens (Gottes).

Der Natur dienen heit, sie weise beherrschen und aus diesem Grunde werden Menschen, die dieser wundervollen Natur in Ehrfurcht untertnig sind, die geheimnisvollen Vorgnge erkennen und damit den Willen dessen verkrpern, der alles bewegt und belebt!

## **4 Zur Bedeutung des Wassers**

### 4.1 Allgemeines

Die Erkenntnis des Wassers ist die wahre Grundlage einer Kultur. Wasser ist der Urstoff oder die Ursache alles Entstehens und aus diesem Grunde der urschliche Akkumulator, der willig die irdischen Stoffe mit den kosmischen Stoffen aufnehmen und dem Krper in rein objektiver Art zu vermitteln mag...Dazu gehrt aber die Mglichkeit, diese Stoffe in das Wasser so einzubauen, dass die Urbestimmung in keiner Weise verndert wird und diese Vernderung erst in der Wirkung entstehen kann, die der organisch richtig aufgebaute Krper

vermittelt. Daher wohnt in einem gesunden Körper ein guter Geist, und umgekehrt kann man durch die Gesundung des eingebauten Geistes einen frohwüchsigen Körper aufbauen, erhalten und weiterentwickeln.

#### 4.2 Qualitativer und quantitativer Wasserrückgang

Mit dem Absinken des Grundwassers versiegen die Quellen, vertrocknen die Wasserläufe und verdurstet die Scholle. An anderer Stelle steigt das Wasser aus der Erde, treten Flüsse über die Ufer und versumpfen Ländereien. Qualitativer Verfall der spärlich gewordenen Wasserreste.

#### 4.3 Sterilisierung des Wassers

Ist das Wasser "hygienisch einwandfrei" gemacht worden, so ist man befriedigt. Niemand denkt daran, dass damit unserem Körper auch gewisse nötige stoffliche Energien vorenthalten werden. Durch Chlor gereinigtes Wasser führt zu Entzündungen an den Augen und Nasenschleimhäuten der Badenden. Durch solche Verfahren wird im Wasser ein Sauerstoff im "status nascendi" oder eine allotrope Form des gewöhnlichen Sauerstoffes erzeugt, wodurch jedes Lebewesen zugrunde geht. Wird anhaltend solches Wasser getrunken, so geht in unserem Körper das vor sich, was wir beim Sterilisierungsprozess des Wassers wünschen.

### **5 Zur Behandlung des Bodens**

Die heutige Wissenschaft hat keine Ahnung, was industriell verarbeitetes Eisen im Boden bedeutet, und dass es ohne organische Strahlung und Gegenstrahlung des Bodens kein Wachstum und keinen quantitativen und qualitativen Aufbau gibt. Calcium und Natrium sind gegenseitige Strahlungsproduzenten und was wir Kalium nennen, ist juvenile Erde, (juvenil = jugendlich). Düngt man mit dieser Erde den Boden und zieht auf dem Boden Korn, und gibt diese Frucht Hühnern zu fressen, so ist es unmöglich, das Blut dieser Hühner zum Gerinnen zu bringen. Fehlt aber der durch das Kalium in den Körper eingebaute Stoff (das Lebensvitamin), dann gerinnt das Blut schon im lebenden Organismus, beginnt zu faulen, und das nennt man den Krebs.

Jede Säure ist flüssiges Metall, und ohne Metall gibt es keine Energie oder keinerlei Lebenselektrizität. Metalle absorbieren Minus-Strahlen und umgekehrt. Strahlt der dem Sonnenlicht freigelegte Boden seine Metalle aus, so bleiben die entzündungswidrigen Kalkmetalle im Boden zurück und versteinern, verkarsten, verwüsten. Oben entzündet sich das Leben der Parasiten, die den sich entwickelnden Makroorganismus verzehren, statt ihm

als Mikroorganismus zu dienen. In der Natur herrscht das Gesetz der Wechselgesetzmäßigkeiten, woraus sich die individuelle Gestaltung entwickelt. Doppelwertige Metalle beginnen zu strahlen, d.h. erzeugen schon bei Tageslichteinfluss ununterbrochen fließenden Strom, verzehren die Lüfte, verwandeln Gase in Energien, die wieder fließende Wärme und Kälte erzeugen.

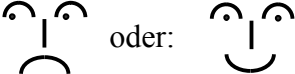

## **6 Zu Urzeugungs-, Entwicklungs- und Stoffwechselprozessen**

Wasser machen ist keine so einfache Sache, außer man heult oder lacht, wozu aber Gefühl gehört. Jeder Wassertropfen ist Neuland und eine Quelle unendlicher Kraft. Laut Wissenschaft sind Tausende von Pferdestärken in jedem Gramm Wasser. Ans Herausfischen wollen wir uns wagen. Diese Sache ist von größter Bedeutung, durchaus natürlich und daher auch einfach, weil doch das Wasser die Einheit verkörpert, aus dem dann das zahllos Vielfache entsteht. Die Wassereier sind in dem Metall und dem Mineral. Aus diesen Stoffen Wassereier erzeugen und ausbrüten lassen. Ein bisschen Wärme, ein bisschen Kälte, ein wenig Licht, ein wenig Dunkelheit genügt vollauf, um in dem Metall und Mineral soviel Gefühl zu erregen, dass sie ein chemisch reines Wasser erzeugen. Und ist es einmal soweit, dann beginnt das Ganze von selbst und ohne weiteres Zutun zu wachsen. Es kommt also nur auf das richtige Vorbereiten an.

Verwandlungsvorgänge/-erscheinungen, die aus Spannungsdifferenzen entstehen, und Wasser-Eier erzeugen, die übrigen Stoffe durchspülen und beleben, die minderorganisiert die Wiederauferstehung zu einem organisch höheren Lebewesen niemals erleben würden, wenn sie eben das juvenile oder jungfräuliche Wasser nicht zwingen würde, vor ihrem Aufstieg zweckdienliche Arbeit zu leisten. Diese Stoffe heben das Wasser und nicht das Wasser die Stoffe.

Das genau Umgekehrte erfolgt in luftiger Höhe, wo ebenfalls das juvenile Wasser es ist, das die sehr auftriebsfähigen Stoffe zwingt, das in der Atmosphäre urgezeugte Wasser sanft auf die Erde zurück zu geleiten, somit sozusagen die mechanische Auftriebskräfte besitzenden Himmelsstoffe immer wieder auf die Erde zurückkommen müssen, um anderen Stoffen zu helfen, auch in höhere Regionen und Entwicklungsstufen zu kommen. Und so wechseln in der Natur immer mechanischer Druck und physikalischer Zug rhythmisch ab, weshalb es in der Welt keine Ruhe gibt, und Druck und Zug immer im Verhältnis 2:3 stehen.

Diese Erkenntnis ist so einfach, dass es eine Kunst ist, nicht zu viel davon zu verraten, weil es durchaus kein Segen für die Menschen bedeuten würde, wenn sie in der heutigen Einstellung so plötzlich über diese elementaren Kräfte verfügen könnten. Die wichtigste Voraussetzung für die Wassererzeugung spielt der ‚Winkel‘, weil dadurch die Gefühle zum Ausdruck kommen, wie beim Lachen, das ja ohne diese (Mund-) Winkelziehung unmöglich wäre.

 oder:  dieser Winkel ist ‚Eins‘ in einlinearer Richtung, unendlich,

dem ‚ $\infty$ ‘ sehr ähnlich.

Diese unendliche Richtung ist das, was wir als Zeit bezeichnen. Wir haben nur noch organische Schleifen zu ziehen um Wassereier und daraus das Wasser erzeugen zu können, das seinerseits dann die Futter-Räume erzeugt. Diese Wassereier sind manchmal auch schon mit freiem Auge sichtbar, die weil es sich hier um Anomalieprodukte handelt und statt mit Wärme, mit Kälte auszubrüten sind. Ist so ein Brutvorgang einmal im Gange, dann schwindet die Wärme im Wasser, weil zu jedem Wachstumsprozess Wärme notwendig ist und so kommt es, dass Flüsse, die sich abkühlen, ihre Schleppkraft vergrößern und die "bösen" Steine, - die den Regulierern so schwer im Magen liegen, - weit in die Meere hinaus tragen und Neuland bilden. Im umgekehrten Sinne Wasserwüsten.

Eiweißbildung: Es kann in verschiedener Form und Gestalt erscheinen. Eiweiß in der Erde, also im festen, im Wasser im flüssigen und in der Luft im gasförmigen Zustand. Immer aber sind es Konzentrations- oder Urverbindungserscheinungen. Wir stehen vor Urzeugungsvorgängen. Fest, flüssig und gasförmig sind drei räumliche Formen. Konzentrieren wir in ein sinnrichtig dosiertes Gemenge dieser drei Stoffgruppen die sphärischen Stoffe durch geeignete Winkel, dann haben wir schon die natürliche Bildung von Eiweiß vor uns. Für die zielrichtige Auslösung des Vorganges, ist allerdings noch wichtig, dass wir die verschiedenen Spannungseigenschaften zwischen Wasser und Luft beachten und so müssen wir Zug und Druck, die physikalisch betrachtet, doch auch nur die Wärme- oder eine Kälteform sind, in wechselsinnig richtigem Rhythmus organisieren und das genügt, um jede beliebige Menge von Eiweiß künstlich, aber so wie die Natur, zu erzeugen. Diese Eiweiß-Stoffe können somit in der festen, flüssigen oder gasförmigen Urform erzeugt werden. Somit gibt es Wasser-, Luft- und Erd-Eier.

- Lufteier erzeugen Wasser.

- Wassereier erzeugen Erde.
- Erden-Eier erzeugen Energetische Eier.

Also haben wir auch die Möglichkeit, aus diesen Energie-Eiern eine fließende Kraftbewegung zu erzeugen und so stehen wir schon mitten in der Raumkraft, die tatsächlich aus solchen Eiern besteht. Diese Energie-Eier nähren sich wieder von Stoffen der Luft, also entsteht, wenn wir diesen Vorgang in Szene setzen, ein Vakuum, das aber durchaus nicht das ‚Nichts‘ ist, das die Wissenschaft mit einer Null zu bezeichnen pflegt.

Die bisherigen Schein- und Grenzwerte werden zu den tatsächlichen Ursachen, aus denen man beliebige Scheinwerte, aber auch maßgebende Elementarkräfte ableiten kann, wenn man die Dosierung und die Organisation dieser gefährlichen Gegensätze versteht und sie in rhythmisch schwingende Bewegung bringt. Da sich Zug und Druck ständig in einer mechanischen und physikalischen Gegengewichtslage gegenüberstehen, so haben wir nur den Rhythmus zu organisieren und schon stehen wir, der unendlichen Bewegung gegenüber, die ständig wächst und damit von einer heute unvorstellbaren, ja geradezu mystischen Erscheinung, die aber die natürliche Bewegung ist, die wir rund um uns überall feststellen können.

Wird im Wasser mittelbar Sauerstoff eingedrückt, so wird es kälter. Wird vom Wasser mittelbar Kohlensäure absorbiert, so wird es kälter. Die im Wasser befindlichen Gase verringern mit je 1 Grad C Abkühlung ihr Volumen um 1/273. Abkühlendes Wasser verwandelt seine Gase in volumenlose Stoffe. Diese juvenile Energie löst metallische und mineralische Feststoffe, wodurch Wärme gebunden wird, die ihrerseits wieder den schweren Sauerstoff aufnimmt.

Winterwasser hat wenig Kohlenstoffe daher wenig Sauerstoffaufnahme, oder das Winterwasser wird leichter und nimmt atmosphärische Gase auf, wenn es aus der Erde mangels entsprechender Minerale, keine Kohlensäure erreichen kann. Stark kohlenstoffhaltiges Quellwasser gefriert auch bei minus 32 Grad nicht. Diese Wässer nehmen im Sommer Sauerstoff auf und werden bei großer Außenwärme kälter. Kohlensäure ist unter Umständen schwerer als Luft und als Wasser. Sauerstoff ist unter Umständen leichter als Luft und schwerer als Wasser. Die Ursache dieser merkwürdigen Gewichtsveränderung ist der



Spannungsgrad des Gases. Daher die stets ändernden Gewichte des Wassers. Wobei man zwischen der spezifischen und absoluten Gewichtsveränderung wohl zu unterscheiden hat. Je höher das Wasser im Quellstrang steigt, um so schwerere Minerale legt es ab. Je mehr es sich erleichtert, um so schwerer wird es und um so leichter steigt es.

Durch eiserne Rechen und durch Turbinen wird Wasser energetisch entladen. Das heißt, das Wasser verliert seine Energiestoffe, wird polar und nimmt im Unterlauf seine verlorenen Energiestoffe aus dem umliegenden Boden. Daher zerstört solches Wasser seine Gerinne. Das Wasser wird sozusagen zu einem animalischen Magnet und reißt mit den Energiestoffen des Bodens auch Bodenbestandteile an sich. Im Winter reißt das Wasser Luftstoffe an sich, weil es stoffhungrig ist, kann aber mangels Entspannung nicht umbauen und wird daher leichter.

Umgekehrt kann auch die Atmosphäre Wasser an sich reißen, wenn das Wasser terrestrisch überladen ist. Das Aufdampfen bei großer Kälte, welcher Fall aber durch die inneratomare Ladung des Wassers bedingt ist. Wasser ändert seinen Siede- und Gefrierpunkt je nach der inneren Spannung. Wasser ist keine leblose Masse, sondern das Blut der Erde, das durch Energieausgleiche entsteht und vergeht.

Der Baum baut das Wasser auf. Daher ohne Wald kein Wasser. Letzteres entsteht durch Abstrahlungen, die das Vermittlungsmedium an der Wurzelspitze vermittelt. Dieses Protoplasma, fälschlich Saugnäpfchen genannt, sieht man an jeder Wurzelspitze eines Waldbaumes mit freiem Auge. Bei Belichtung geht es zugrunde und verschwindet. Der Säfte-Aufbau erfolgt durch Strahlungen, hat daher mit irgend welchen mechanischen Zug- und Druckwirkungen nichts zu tun. Das Gleiche gilt für unsere Blutzirkulation und das Steigen des Quellwassers. Hat Wasser keine inneratomaren Energien, dann kann es nicht steigen. Das Gleiche gilt auch für die Schleppkraft und das Absinken des Geschiebes.

Mindergespanntes Blut führt zu Ablagerungen oder respektiven Verkalkung der Leitgefäße. Zufuhr von Energiewasser lindert oder hebt diese Krankheit auf. Alle Nierenerkrankungen sind auf Entspannungserscheinungen zurückzuführen. Daher gehen Nierensteine sofort ab, wenn Edelwasser getrunken wird.

## 7 Versuche und technische Anwendungen

### 7.1 Verhalten von Wasser mit Zusätzen

#### 7.1.1 Hochquellwasser

Naturbeobachtung führt zur Erkenntnis, dass gesundes Wasser von inneren Kräften gehoben, bei richtiger Zusammensetzung aus der Erde sprudelt, wenn es reif ist. Solches hochwertiges Hochquellwasser weist in der absorbierten Luft ca. 96 % gasförmige, physikalisch gelöste ,C'-Substanzen auf. Gießt man in solches Wasser erwärmtes Regenwasser, gibt einige Tropfen Öl hinzu und schließt das Ganze ab, so explodiert nach kurzer Zeit der Inhalt des Gefäßes.

Vorgang: Die negative Atmosphäre des hochwertigen Quellwassers oxidiert, das heißt gleicht sich mit der stark sauerstoffhaltigen warmen und positiv geladenen Luft aus und explodiert, wenn diesem Ausgleich ein Hindernis in den Weg gestellt wird und ein niederorganisierter ,C'-Stoff anwesend ist, wie zum Beispiel Öl.

#### 7.1.2 Tiefsee-Meerwasser

Vor allem ist es der hohe Gehalt an physikalisch gelösten C-Stoffen und der Mangel an "O" bei Lichtabschluss, der diesem Wasser den eigenartigen Charakter verleiht. Tiefseewasser bei entsprechender Zugabe von ,O' Mengen und tieforganisierten ,C' Stoffen, wie Öle, wird rasch warm und sprengt seine Behälter. Elektrische Energie ist mittels einfacher Apparate auf direktem Weg aus der Tiefsee zu gewinnen.

#### 7.1.3 Weiße juvenile Erde

Hochquellwasser, das nie mit feuerbehandeltem Metall in Berührung gekommen, wird in natürliche Kalk- oder Marmorschale gefüllt und mittags (21. Juni am stärksten) die Sonnenstrahlen mit Brennglas ins Wasser gesammelt. Nach 10 - 15 Minuten bildet sich außen am Rand auf dem Wasser eine weiße juvenile Erde, die schwimmt. Düngen der Pflanzen bringt schnelleres Wachsen.

### 7.2 Blutführung/Doppeldrallrohr/Heilwasser

#### Blutführung

Untersucht man die Blutgefäße einer Schnecke, so sieht man, dass dieses Tier zwei verschiedene Blutsysteme von verschiedener Farbe hat. Äußeres System mit lichterem Blut. Inneres System mit dunklerem Blut. Die Beschaffenheit des äußeren Blutes kennzeichnet sich durch größeren Sauerstoffgehalt. Es ist wesentlich verschieden vom inneren Blut, welches einen höheren Gehalt an ,C' Stoffen aufweist. Suspensierte Stoffe in der Mitte, die gelösten

Stoffe mehr an der Peripherie des Kapillarsystem-Querschnittes. Die auf eine Gerade projiziert gedachte Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit ist an den Randzonen kleiner als in der Mitte, doch nur scheinbar. Die äußeren Blutpartikelchen beschreiben eine Bahn, die eine Schraubenbewegung innerhalb einer Schraube entspricht, während die inneren Teilchen nur eine einfache Schraubenbewegung ausführen. Die doppelte Schraubenlinie des inneren Systems lässt sich deshalb nicht wahrnehmen, weil sie nur ein Energieweg ist, er bestimmt den Charakter des Blutes.

#### Das Doppeldrallrohr

Das Doppeldrallrohr erfüllt im Quer- sowohl wie im Längsschnitt die Vorbedingungen, die ein Wasserleitungsrohr aufweisen muss, um gesundes Wasser zu führen. Die in einem Doppeldrallrohr geführten Wassermassen erfahren durch ein an der inneren hölzernen Rohrwandung angeordnetes, aus Edelmetall hergestelltes Schaufelsystem eine Bewegung derart, dass der einzelne Wasserfaden an der Peripherie eine Bahn beschreibt, die einer Schraubenbewegung innerhalb einer Schraubenlinie gleicht - Planetenbewegung im 2 - Achsensystem.

Durch diese Anordnung treten im Rohrquerschnitt Zentrifugal- und gleichzeitig Zentripetalkräfte auf, welche Körper, die schwerer sind als Wasser, mittig führen, Körper aber, die leichter sind als Wasser, gegen die Peripherie abdrängen. Die so geführten Wassermassen werden durch das an den Schaufelwandungen auftretende mechanische Reibungskräftepiel schwach erwärmt, wodurch es im inneren Umfang des Rohres zu einer Abspaltung von Sauerstoff und in weiterer Folge zu einer Anreicherung desselben an der Rohrperipherie kommt.

Gleichzeitig mit dem zerstreuten Sauerstoff werden auch alle Bakterien an die Peripherie des Rohres abwandern, da sie in der Querschnittmitte nicht die geeigneten Lebensbedingungen vorfinden. Mit den Bakterien gehen auch alle, das Wasser verunreinigenden Partikelchen gegen die Peripherie des Rohres ab, wodurch das Wasser auch gleichzeitig von suspendierten Anteilen mühelos gereinigt werden kann.

Sind die Bakterien entsprechend ihrem Sauerstoffbedürfnis nach den Randzonen abgewandert, so werden sie dort nach einer gewissen Laufzeit in dem vom Außeneinfluss vollkommen abgeschlossenen Wasser, von einer gewissen Sauerstoffkonzentration

überrascht. Hierdurch werden vorteilhafter gerade die gegen Sauerstoffüberfluss empfindlichen pathogenen Bakterien vernichtet, während die nicht-pathogenen Bakterien, die also der menschlichen Gesundheit nicht schädlich sind, zum Teil, erhalten bleiben.

Gleichzeitig mit der Abspaltung des im Wasser enthaltenen absorbierten Sauerstoffes, von den gleichfalls in jedem Wasser enthaltenen Kohlenstoffen, tritt ein Voreilen des inneren Wasserkernes ein, der bloß eine einfache Schraubenbewegung beschreibt, weil das Wasser durch vorbeschriebene Abspaltung des ‚O‘ vom ‚C‘ physikalisch entspannt wird. Dadurch kommt es zu einer mechanischen Beschleunigung und damit zu einer Selbstreinigung und energetischen Aufladung des mittig eilenden Wassers. Diese Aufladung führt zu Ausgleichsvorgängen zwischen den zentrisch eilenden schweren Körpern und dem energiereichen Wasser, wodurch bei gleichzeitiger Abkühlung des Wassers eine Lostrennung fester Stoffteile eintritt, die nun abermals an die Peripherie geführt werden. Dort gleichen sie sich mit dem ‚O‘ aus und vereinen sich in Form von Energie wieder mit dem mittig eilenden Wasser.

Jene Stoffteilchen, die den Weg zur Mitte nicht mehr fanden, werden durch den im Rohr herrschenden mechanischen Druck an die Rohrwandung gepresst, treten dort mit den Grundstoffen, die das Holz aufgebaut haben, in Ausgleich und verstopfen die Poren des Holzes, das auf diese Weise widerstandsfähiger wird, als z. B. Eisen. Hier handelt es sich um einen natürlichen Vorgang, den wir dem Prinzip nach bei der Entstehung aller Kapillare finden, die sich ja nicht nur selbst aufbauen, sondern sich auch gegen schädliche Einflüsse schützen.

Durch die Beschleunigung der Gesamtwassermassen im Doppeldrallrohr werden nun einerseits größere Wassermengen befördert, als in einem gewöhnlichen glattwandigen Rohr; andererseits kommt es durch die Wirksamkeit des Sauerstoffes zu einer weitgehenden Selbstreinigung und Selbstentkeimung des Wassers, wobei durch die Kontinuität der Energieaufladung das Wasser auf seinem Wege auch qualitativ immer besser wird.

Die Ursache hierfür ist folgende: Gleichzeitig mit der Beschleunigung erfolgt eine Abkühlung der mittig geführten Wassermassen, wodurch es in der die niedersten Temperaturen aufweisenden Wasserachse zu einer Konzentration der Kohlensäuregase kommt, die gegen die Peripherie des Rohres abnimmt. Andererseits konzentriert sich an der Peripherie der Sauerstoff, dessen höchste Aggressivität an der erwärmten Wandung auftritt, wodurch es vom

Rande gegen das Innere des Rohres zu Wechselbeziehungen und damit zu den vorerwähnten, das Wasser und auch das Holz aufwertenden Ausgleicherscheinungen kommt.

Im Laufe der Zeit wird schließlich sowohl für die mittleren räumlichen Verteilungsverhältnisse des im Rohr fließenden Wassers, als auch für die Ausgleichsvorgänge an den Rohrwandungen ein gewisser Gleichgewichtszustand und damit die Beendigung dieser Vorgänge eintreten, das heißt: das Wasser ist reif und gegen schädliche Außeneinflüsse fast unempfindlich geworden. Das Holz wird auch gegen äußere Einflüsse immun.

Befindet sich also einerseits der Sauerstoff im Randbereich des Rohres, so müssen sich andererseits die freien Kohlensäureteilchen infolge der dort herrschenden Wassertemperatur, im Randbereich des inneren Wasserkernes vorfinden. Die in gebundener Form enthaltenden Kohlenstoffe müssen sich in der Wasserachse ansammeln, welche, wie vorbeschrieben, mit Kohlenstoffen am meisten gesättigt ist.

Durch eine besondere Anordnung von eingebauten, speziellen Schaufelformen kommen die aggressiven Sauerstoffteilchen an die Grenzschicht, das heißt jene vom äußeren Rand des inneren Wasserkernes mit der aggressivsten Kohlensäure in stete direkte Berührung. Daraus resultieren ständige Energieentwicklungen, die infolge der gegen die Rohrachse zu tiefer werdenden Temperaturen an die mittig eilenden Wasserlassen weitergeleitet werden.

Im Querschnitt des Rohres entstehen demnach 2 Kreisläufe und zwar:

- a) der mechanische Kreislauf des Wassers
- b) der obigem entgegengesetzt gerichtete Energiekreislauf jener Energien, welche beim Zusammentreffen der aggressiven Sauerstoff teile mit der freien Kohlensäure auftreten.

Dieser Energiekreislauf stellt sich in Form eines steten elektrodynamischen Vorganges dar, der aber diesfalls nicht an der Wandung des Rohres, sondern an der Grenzschicht des inneren Wasserkernes auftritt, so dass es nicht zur Zerstörung der Rohrwandung, sondern zur Aufwertung des Wassers kommt.

Diese Doppeldrallrohre führen auch Körper, die schwerer als Wasser sind, in der Mitte und veredeln gleichzeitig das Fördergut, so dass z. B. minderwertige Öle im Doppeldrallrohr verbessert werden.

Auf solche Art und Weise transportierte Eisenerze liefern nach der Verhüttung ein hochwertiges Eisen, weil auf dem Transport der Sauerstoff des Erzes zur Bildung neuer Kohlenstoffe verbraucht wurde, die dann zum stofflich höheren Aufbau der Kohlenstoffsubstanz ‚Eisen‘ beitragen.

### Das Heilwasser für Mensch, Tier und Boden.

Solange der Mensch die organischen Zusammenhänge nicht gestört hatte und die Mutter Erde ihr Blut, d.h. Wasser, dem vegetabilen Leben noch im gesunden Zustand schenken konnte, war auch kein Anlass, darüber nachzudenken, wie man gesundes Wasser auf künstlichem Wege, aber so, wie es die Erde erzeugt, bereiten kann. Heute aber, wo fast alle Quellen entweder versiegt sind oder das Wasser schon an seinem Ursprung abgefangen und in falsch gebauten Rohrleitungen den Siedlungen zugeführt wird, der Boden und die gesamte Tierwelt auf verbrauchtes, schales und daher ungesundes Wasser angewiesen sind, ja sogar für den menschlichen Gebrauch mit noch niederorganisierten Stoffanteilen behaftetes, unreifes Wasser aus dem Schoß der Erde gerissen oder gesundheitsschädliches Wasser: durch chemische Zutaten sterilisiertes Oberflächenwasser, den Wohnstätten zugeführt werden muss, ist es hoch an der Zeit, Mittel und Wege zu finden, um Mensch, Tier und Boden vor dem Zerfall zu schützen. Dieser musste gesetzmäßig eintreten, wenn die Erde durch den inneren Zerstörungsprozess des Wassers, der durch heutige Wirtschaftsmaßnahmen bedingt ist, verdurstet.

Nur die Natur kann und darf unsere große Lehrmeisterin sein. Wollen wir an Geist und Körper wieder gesunden, so dürfen wir uns nicht nur auf mechanische oder hydraulische Nebenerscheinungen stützen, sondern müssen in erster Linie dafür Sorge tragen, die großen gesetzmäßigen Vorgänge zu ergründen, wie und auf welche Art und Weise Mutter Erde ihr Blut, das Wasser, bereitet und den Verbrauchsorten zuführt. Haben wir dieses Geheimnis gelüftet und ahmen wir getreulich nach, was durch Jahrtausende erprobt ist, dann sind wir unfehlbar und dann erst können wir sinngemäß in das große Lebenswerk der Natur eingreifen und im Übermaß die besten und edelsten Früchte ernten, die Mutter Erde in unzähligen Variationen mit Hilfe eines gesunden Blutes aufbaut und erhält.

Um das große Mysterium des Ursprunges alles Lebens zu ergründen, müssen wir uns abmühen, nicht nur den Raum zu studieren, sondern haben uns auch für das ‚Drunter und Drüber‘ zu interessieren, in dem das Wasser einem großen Gesetze gehorchend, seinen ewigen Kreislauf nimmt. Ist es uns auch unmöglich, die wundervollen Vorgänge im kristallinen Wasser mit den Augen zu erschauen und auch unmöglich, das Wasser auf seinen geheimnisvollen Wegen über und unter der Erde zu begleiten, so bleibt doch noch der mittelbare, der induktive Weg offen, um das zu erforschen, was wir nicht sehen können, aber unbedingt wissen müssen, wenn wir gesund bleiben und damit dem Zweck des Lebens, dem steten Aufbau dienen wollen.

Der Mensch hat an der Mutter Erde bisher nur Verbrechen begangen und damit nicht nur sich selbst, sondern auch seiner Umwelt Schaden zugefügt. Mit unendlicher Geduld hat sie seinen von Gier, Habsucht und Unverstand geleiteten Eingriff eine Zeitlang geschehen lassen. Nun, da es aber infolge der ständigen Durchwühlung und Durchlüftung der Erde zu einer inneren Zersetzung ihres Blutes und damit zu einem Absterben der uns ernährenden Scholle kommt, weil die Menschen nicht nur am inneren Kreislauf des Wassers ihre Pumpwerke ansetzen und der Erde das Wasser aus dem Schoß reißen, sondern auch das auf der Erdoberfläche fließende Wasser durch sinnloses Regulieren der Wasserläufe verderben, der Mutter Erde den Wald nehmen oder ihn organisch zerstören, geht es endlich auch dem Menschen selbst an den Kragen.

Dieser Moment musste kommen, um die Menschheit zur Einsicht zu bringen, dass nichts auf Erden ungestraft bleibt und sich jeder sinnlose Eingriff in das wundervolle Lebenswerk "Natur" letzten Endes am Menschen selbst wieder rächen muss. Das Märchen vom einstigen Paradies ist kein leerer Wahn. Wenn auch unsere Vorfahren schon ständig mit den Schwierigkeiten des Lebens zu kämpfen hatten, so hatten sie immerhin im Vergleich zur Jetzt-Zeit noch sorglose Tage. Wie wird es aber nach einem weiteren Menschenalter aussehen, wenn es in dem Tempo bergab geht, wie es bisher höher gegangen ist? Welcher Zukunft gehen unsere Kinder entgegen, wenn kein Mittel gefunden wird, um diesen schrecklichen Verfall aufzuhalten? Wir stehen heute schon vor Erscheinungen, die jeden ernst denkenden Menschen in seinem Innersten erschüttern muss. Welchen Zweck hat es doch, sich andauernd selbst zu belügen oder sich sinnlos der Hoffnung hinzugeben, dass es irgendwie von selbst wieder besser werde?

Wollen wir uns das Leben wieder schön und lebenswert gestalten, dann müssen wir den Hebel dort ansetzen, wo das Leben beginnt. Der Lebensursprung, die Ursubstanz, ist das Wasser, mit dem Geheimnis des Werdens. Das Wasser steigt aus der Erde, wenn es reif ist, das heißt, wenn es sich innerlich vollständig umgebaut hat.

Die Fassung der Quellen durch die Römer:

In einer bestimmten Höhe über dem Quellmund, auf dem seitwärts abgeebneten, gewachsenen Fels haben sie eine Abdeckung in Form einer starkwandigen Steinplatte gelegt. In die seitlich durch Keile abgedichtete Platte wurde ein Loch gehauen in welches die Ableitungsrohre so eingesteckt wurden, dass keinerlei Luftzutritt möglich war. Alle diese Quellfassungen haben wegen ihrer Einfachheit auf die Natur des Wassers Rücksicht genommen. Verwendung von Kalk, Zement oder Metallfassungen zerstören die Wasserzirkulation und Stoffwechselverhältnisse.

Leitungsmaterial:

Wo nicht Holz zur Verfügung stand, wurden Edelmetalle verwendet.

Nur reifes und dadurch gesundes Wasser kann gute Früchte zeitigen. So wie der Samen zu seiner Entwicklung Wärme, Kälte, Licht und Schatten und die damit verbundenen Energien braucht, ist dies auch beim Wasser der Fall, um sich innerlich auf- und umbauen zu können. Deshalb der lange Weg, um diese Gegensätze zu erhalten. In jedem Tropfen Wasser wohnt eine Welt von Möglichkeiten. Das Wasser gibt uns alles, was wir zum Leben nötig haben. Es muss aber mit Liebe gepflegt werden. Der Unterschied zwischen Quellwasser und atmosphärischem Wasser liegt im Stoffgehalt. Hochquellwasser hat außer gelösten Salzen einen verhältnismäßig hohen Anteil an Gasen in freier und gebundener Form; ca. 96 % Kohlenstoffgruppen in den absorbierten Gasen.

Unter ‚Kohlenstoffe‘ sind hier alle Kohlenstoffe des Chemikers, alle Elemente und ihre Verbindungen, alle Metalle und Mineralien, zu verstehen. Atmosphärisches Wasser, also Oberflächenwasser weist einen vergleichsweise hohen Gehalt an Sauerstoffen, jedoch nahezu keine oder nur niederorganisierte Salzformen, keine oder nur wenig freie oder wenig gebundene Kohlensäure und einen aus der Luft absorbierten Gasgehalt auf, der vorwiegend aus, in physikalischer Form gelöstem, Sauerstoff besteht.



Unter physikalischer Lösungsform ist eine höhere Form der Lösung verschiedener Stoffgruppen zu verstehen, als sie bei rein chemischen Lösungsformen auftritt. Bei der physikalischen Lösungsform sind bereits energetische Vorgänge mit wirksam gewesen. Unterschied zwischen Wasser mit höherem Prozentsatz an Kohlenstoffenergien und Sauerstoffenergien: Ersteres wird Kathoden-Wasser und das zweite mit Anodenwasser benannt. Kathodenwasser hat negative-, Anodenwasser hat positive Energieformen in sich. Diese Energieformen sind kennzeichnend für das, was wir als Sphäre, Psyche oder Charakter des Wassers bezeichnen.

Das aus der Erde sprudelnde Hochquellwasser besitzt überwiegend Kohlensphäre, somit negative Energieformen, beziehungsweise negativen Charakter.

Das aus der Atmosphäre kommende Regenwasser besitzt überwiegend Sauerstoffsphäre, somit positive Energieformen, bzw. positiven Charakter.

Das aus der Atmosphäre in die Erde absinkende Wasser braucht zu seinem inneren Umbau außer der Aufnahmemöglichkeit bestimmter Umbaustoffe und den notwendigen Licht und Luftabschluss, auch bestimmte Wegelängen und Zeitspannen, um den Umbauprozess richtig durchführen zu können, d.h. um innerlich reif zu werden.

Das Wasser ist reif, wenn die absorbierte Luft ca. 96 % Kohlenstoffsphäre und den dieser Sphäre zugehörigen Anteil an festen Kohlestoffen enthält. Von dieser inneren Reife hängt die Güte und die innere Steigkraft des Wasser ab. Je länger der zurückliegende Weg ist, um so hochorganisierter und qualitativ hochwertiger wird, das Vorhandensein entsprechender Umbaustoffe vorausgesetzt, seine innere Energie, sein Charakter.

### 7.3 Quellwasser künstlich herstellen

Als Förster und Jäger konnte ich oft beobachten, dass krank geschossenes Wild bestimmte Kräuter sucht und sein Wundbett in ganz bestimmte Wässer legt. Schließlich kam ich darauf, dass im Wasser sehr geheimnisvolle Kräfte stecken und so begann ich zu suchen und fand nicht nur diese merkwürdigen Kräfte, sondern auch die Mittel, diese Kräfte willkürlich ins Wasser zu bauen.

Zuerst versuchte ich das Ding an mir selbst, nachher gab ich das natürlich aktivierte Wasser verschiedenen Menschen zu trinken. Mit der Zeit wurden es 100-te von Fällen, die mit allen erdenklichen Leiden behaftet, gesundeten. Allen gab ich das aufgewertete Wasser zu trinken, das geschmacklich weit besser als das Wiener Hochquell-Wasser ist.

Ich besitze kleine Apparaturen, mit denen ich das Wasser nach seiner Qualität bestimme. Das aufgewertete Wasser fließt durch Drallrohre, ohne die Wandungen zu berühren, d.h. es fällt mitten durch und berührt metallische Körper, die am Ende dieser Röhren kegelförmig aufgestellt sind. An der äußeren Peripherie sind Drähte angebracht, die wechselseitig geschaltet sind welche die aus dem Wasser austretenden animalischen Ströme auffangen und in Elektroskope leiten. Ein Liter Wasser muss etwa 150 mal durch diese Apparatur geführt werden, bis die elektroskopischen Ausschläge ermüden. Neonröhren leuchten zuerst satt dunkelrot auf, um langsam heller und heller zu werden, bis das Wasser zu sterben beginnt und das Licht schließlich flackernd erlischt. 100.000-de von Volt trinken wir demnach in einem gesundem Wasser, das sich von einem hochwertigen Hochquellwasser durch gar nichts unterscheidet.

So kam ich schließlich darauf, schales Bach-, Regenwasser oder Aqua destillata in hochwertiges Trinkwasser zu verwandeln. Der Vorgang ist sehr einfach. Ein bisschen Lichteinfluss, ein bisschen Lichtabschluss, ein bisschen Wärme, ein bisschen Kälte rhythmisch geordnet genügt, um das elendste Wasser, das durch Mutatoren fließt, hochwertig aufzuladen, vielleicht könnte man dies auch mit ‚ionisieren‘ benennen. Dazu gebe ich die chemisch analysierten Stoffe, die man in jedem Quellwasser findet, und so kann man irgendeine beliebige Quelle und sei es die berühmteste Heilquelle, mühelos, - so wie dies in der Natur geschieht - nachahmen.

Dabei kostet der cbm Wasser nur etwa 10-12 österreichische Groschen und die Apparatur in Serie erzeugt, wenige 100 Schillinge. So kann sich jeder mit wenig Kosten seine Heil- und Hochquelle auf dem Dachboden installieren. Dem Wesen nach handelt es sich um eine absolute Lösung und eine Freimachung der in den Metallen und Mineralien konzentrierten Energien im Wege eines kalten Verbrennungsvorganges, kraft welchen alle Stoffe gelöst oder besser gesagt, in Gestalt von freiwerdenden Energien aus dem Muttergestein oder Muttermetall herausgefällt und ohne sie zu verändern, in das Wasser eingebaut werden können.

Zu diesem Zwecke muss das Wasser bei Lichtabschluss langsam an  $+ 4^{\circ} \text{C}$  angenähert werden, was durch indirekte Sauerstoffdrücke in zwischengeschalteten Mischgefäßen erfolgt. Die Salz-Zumengen sind so minimaler Quantität, dass man es nicht für möglich hält, dass derartige Wirkungen erfolgen. Wesentlich sind hierbei die Lösungen der metallischen Stoffe, die sich ins Wasser akkumulieren und so auf die einfachste Art und Weise, die gegensinnigen Metallstoffe dem Organismus zugeführt werden, ohne die es keine elektromagnetischen Lebensvorgänge gibt.

Jede Säure enthält gelöstes Metall. Durch die Aufnahme von zu stark sonnenbeschienenem Wasser, kommen die schweren Langstrahlen in überdosiertem Maße ins Wasser und die leichten Kurzstrahlen fehlen. Dadurch kommt es zu Entzündungserscheinungen, weil die Zufuhr der entzündungswidrigen Kalkstoffe durch die heutige Wasserbehandlung unterbunden wird. Die Folge dieser Mangelercheinungen sind Zwischenwachstumsvorgänge rein gestaltlicher Beziehung, die unter Druckerscheinungen stehen, große Kapillaröffnungen erzeugen, wodurch Müdigkeitserscheinungen durch Unterernährung auftreten und die Folge dieser sind, bei Überanwesenheit von Natriumstrahlungen, die belebenden Erscheinungen auf der einen Seite und die Verfaulungserscheinungen auf der anderen Seite.

Diese Urzeugungsvorgänge verursachen in späterer Folge den krebsartigen Zerfall der Gewebe, weil die kalkhaltigen Grundstoffe fehlen, die eben, wie vorher gesagt, durch Vakuumercheinungen die Kühllhaltung des Blutes ermöglichen.

Den besten Beweis hierfür finden wir in den freigestellten Schattholzarten, wodurch es durch die modernen forstwirtschaftlichen Übergriffe zu organischen Störerscheinungen und wie beim Menschen oder Tier zu krebsartigen Zerfallserscheinungen im Hochwalde kommt. Das Gleiche finden wir bei allen übrigen Vegetations-Arten, wo man allerorts dieselben Erscheinungen feststellen kann.

Unsere Ärzte haben eben wie die Techniker übersehen, dass die befruchtenden Stoffe von oben und die zu befruchtenden Stoffe von unten her kommen. Im Schnittpunkt der beiden Strahlenwege wird die Energie frei, die das kalte Licht oder das sogenannte Leben erzeugt. Mein Bestreben war es, aus den verschiedenen Energiekonzentrationen, nur die Energiestrahlungen frei zu bekommen und die ausgelaugten Schlacken auszuscheiden. Auf diese

höchst einfache Art und Weise, ist es gelungen, nur die edelsten Stoffe ins Wasser zu binden und dem Körper die Funktion eines Schlammstoffs zu ersparen.

Die erste logische Folge war eine Entschlackung des Organismus, weil das hochaktive Wasser selbst die kristallinen Schlacken löst und aus dem Körper hinaus führt und die zweite logische Folgeerscheinung war ein hochwertiger organischer Strahlungsombau und dadurch der Aufbau hochwertiger Gedanken mit denen man alle weiteren Naturvorgänge erfassen kann.

### Darauf kommt es an !

Aus einem versauten Schlammstoffs können keine hochwertigen Ideen entstehen und so ist es auch kein Wunder, wenn die Menschheit nicht nur gesundheitlich, sondern auch moralisch verfault. Die geistige Verstümmelung ist eine weitere logische Folge der heutigen Deduktions-Methoden, und so müssen eben auch hier Außenseiter kommen, um die Fach- und Sachverständigen auf ur-einfache Naturerscheinungen aufmerksam zu machen. Kein Vorgang ist einseitiger Art. Jeder Gewinn bedeutet auch ein Abfall. Die Abfallstoffe der Gedankenbildung sind die Samen, und so müssen die Menschen bei der heutigen Lebensanschauung nicht nur geistig, sondern auch sexuell impotent werden. Durch Zusammenwirken bestimmter Zusammenhänge kann organisch auf den Körper eingewirkt werden. Ich löse in neuester Zeit aus edelsten Bergkristallen die eingebauten Kraftstoffe, und die frei werdenden Strahlungsenergien akkumuliere ich dann in das Wasser. Auf diese Weise bekomme ich die Ureiweißstoffe oder die lebensanfachenden Vitamine.

Unsere Nahrung ist nach der bioelektrischen Kraft zu beurteilen. Der Genuss von mit vielen Sonnenvitaminen in reaktiver Gestalt eingebautem Wasser erzeugt angenehme Ermüdungserscheinungen, später eine Lösung der geistigen Kräfte, eine gewisse Kummerlosigkeit, bei Steigerung des Verantwortungsgefühls...

Unterscheiden zwischen kalkhaltigen und natriumhaltigen Nahrungsmitteln.

Die Bindung von Urstoffen im Wasser bringt harmonischen Gleichgewichtszustand in jedem Organismus.

#### 7.4 Allgemeines zu Apparaten/Maschinen

Was die meisten Menschen bisher erreichten, ist keine Kultur, sondern nur Zivilisation und ein Rückschritt von der wahren Kultur, ein Weg, der unbedingt notwendig war (ist), um durch Erfahrung wieder eine Stufe vorwärts zu kommen.

Vorwärts zu gehen, bedeutet, den weltlichen Vorgängen entgegen zu gehen. Was uns entgegen kommt, müssen wir sozusagen verzehren, in unserem Innern verdauen, und das Produkt dieses organischen Umwandlungsvorganges ist dann die geistige Klarheit (unräumliche Energiestoffe) oder die rein intuitive Erkenntnis des wirklichen Geschehens (und der Liebe unseres Vaters).

Was wir rein gedanklich gestalten, verzehrt und vernichtet. Aus diesem Grunde ist die heutige rein konstruktive Technik von verzehrender Wirkung.

Die künftigen Maschinen werden ihre Betriebsstoffe nicht vernichten, sondern innerlich wenden, wodurch dann nach außen hin die harmonische Bewegung entsteht, die den verbrauchten Stoff organisch verwandelt, hebt und um eine Oktave höher gestaltet, wodurch zu den zurückgebliebenen Stoffen die notwendige Spannung und damit die Möglichkeit der Wiederauferstehung zum nächsten leiblichen Leben vorhanden ist. Erde, Wasser, Luft (und Licht) sind Organismen, und dazwischen liegen die stets arbeitsbereiten Organe verschiedenster Art. Fügen wir diese Organe harmonisch zusammen, setzen wir jeder inneren Spannung die äußere harmonische Form gegenüber, dann beginnt sich das Ding in und an sich zu drehen und sich zu entwickeln, weil jedem Impuls in rhythmischer Folge der Expuls gegenübersteht, aus dem sich dann die harmonische Bewegung in der einströmenden und diffundierenden Gegenbewegung ergibt. Den stärksten magnetischen Längsspannungen müssen die gegenwirkenden elektrischen Breitenspannungen entgegenstehen. Aus diesem normalen Gegensatz bildet sich dann der harmonische Übergang in der goldenen Mitte.

Diese goldene Mitte ist der organische Winkel, die einzig richtige Richtung, auf der es kein Aufwärts, kein Abwärts, kein Seitwärts und kein Einwärts, sondern nur ein Gehen in sich und an sich gibt, das dem unendlichen Willen Gottes, der Alleinheit in der Einheit entspricht. Wenige Menschen werden den Sinn des Vorgesetzten verstehen! Einzelne Menschen werden aber ein unerklärliches Ahnen bekommen. Dieses Ahnen ist nichts anderes, als ein traumhaftes Erwachen, die beginnende Vergöttlichung der bisher tierischen Masse. Keine Geburt geht ohne Schmerzen vor sich. Jedem Sterben folgt eine Geburt. Was wir heute alle erleben,

ist eine Wende der Zeit. Wohl denen, die sie verstehen. Sie mögen sich finden, so lange es Zeit ist, denn wir gehen einem gewaltigen Geschehen entgegen. // Wien, im Mai 1936 VS  
 Im Begleitschreiben von VS an WZ vom 21. Mai 1936: „Diese Maschine (30 cm breit, 50 cm hoch) wird Wasser auf kaltem Wege verdampfen, reinigen und destillieren. Gleichzeitig wird sie Wasser auf beliebige Höhe emporheben, wozu nahezu keinerlei Kraft benötigt wird.“  
 Meine Maschine ist ein Körper, der in und an sich aus Düsen besteht, welche die Ventile der heutigen Maschinen ersetzen respektive ergänzen...Meine Maschinen nehmen nur den Impuls und zeigen die Wirkung im Sinne des Expulses, der nicht allein drückt sondern auch gleichzeitig zieht, wodurch eben durch die Wechselgesetzmäßigkeit dann die widerstandslose Bewegung entsteht, die den heutigen Widerstand als ‚Treibmittel‘ benützt...

Der Körper ist nur die Antenne und der Sender steht hinter demjenigen, was wir die Bewegung nennen. Diese Bewegung ist eine Funktion der Temperamente, die Plus und Minus in verschiedener Form und Gestalt in sich und an sich besitzen, und daher können wir auch durch die Veränderung der inneratomaren Gestalt den Schwerpunkt verlegen und damit dasjenige erreichen, was wir als die reine und widerstandslose Bewegung betrachten, diese Bewegung so lange Zeit aber nicht verstanden haben, weil wir selbst der Widerstand sind, der sich unter schwierigsten Verhältnissen zu bewegen hat, um sich entwickeln zu können.

20. Juni 36, VS an WZ: Lesen sie nochmals: Der Ochse und der Gamsbock. Dort finden sie die genau umgekehrten Voraussetzungen, nämlich das Freiwerden der Energie durch die Kälte. Hier ist zuerst Wärme durch Reiben erzeugt. Diese Wärme wird sofort vom Wasser absorbiert und so entsteht ein physikalisches Vakuum, das nun die inneratomaren Strahlen zum Austreten veranlasst. Durch die absorbierte Wärme wird der im Wasser befindliche noch freie Wasser-Sauerstoff aggressiv und die austretenden geosphärischen Strahlen werden durch das Vakuum aggressiv. Durch das Zusammentreffen der beiderseitig verkehrtsinnig erregten Strahlen, entsteht die Voraussetzung für die Hochzeit. Das Kind dieser Vermählung ist das organische oder das kalte Licht.

Gutes Samenkorn in guter Erde ergibt ein Mehrfaches seiner selbst an Frucht. Samenkorn wächst, Vervielfachung geht mit Hilfe von gegensinnigen Einflüssen vor sich. Diese Einflüsse sind höherer Organisationsform, die aus Erde und Kosmos kommen. Stoffe, die reif sind und entweder ab- oder auffallen müssen. Wenn Wasser inneratomar zerlegt wird, so bleibt zum

Schluss der Stoff Wasser, der W-Stoff zurück. Dieser W-Stoff ist die Polarität, die sich durch diese Einflüsse steigert, das Urkind, das von oben und unten zehrt und dadurch wächst. Die aus dem Wasser abgespaltenen Plus- und Minusstoffe trennen sich voneinander. Die in einem schlechten Wasser in geringen Mengen anwesenden Kohlestoffe, entfliehen sofort, weil sie sich entstalten. Die durch die Sonne eingebauten Phosstoffe (Phosphat ?; siehe S. 49 d. Bearbeiter) dispergieren, kommen in die Breitenspannung, werden hochaggressiv, lagern sich über dem Wirkstoff ab und warten der Dinge, die nun kommen. Das nun Kommende ist ein geosphärisches Gas, das mit großer Kälte eingelassen wird. Kohlenstoffe werden bei jäher Abkühlung hochaggressiv. Es kommt nun zwischen den hochaggressiven Phosstoffen (s.o.; d. Bearb.) und dem hochaggressiven ,C‘ zur Vermählung. Das daraus werdende überpotenzierte geosphärische Gasprodukt bindet durch entstehendes inneres Vakuum den Wasserstoff und kühlt rasch hochgehend ab, landet an einer organischen Anode, die nach aufwärts zu als eine Kathode ausgebaut ist.

Dieser Sender erzeugt durch Diffusion eine mechanische Breitenspannung und kühlt das Gasgemisch jäh ab. Dieses abermals hochaggressiv gewordene Gas wird bei seinem Austritt vom umlagerten Luftsauerstoff gierig absorbiert. Dieses ,O‘ hat ,H‘ und ,C‘ im Schlepptau, die im Wege einer Zentripetenz mitgerissen werden. Und nun kommt es darauf an, ob man den Vorgang 1. im warmen, oder 2. im kalten Oxidationsprozess abspielen läßt.

Im 1. Falle ergibt sich ein Überschuss an Wasser;

im 2. Falle ergibt sich ein Überschuss an Luft.

In beiden Fällen jedoch haben sich die beiden Produkte entwickelt, sind gewachsen und daher ist das Wachstumsprodukt ein Vielfaches der ursprünglichen Samenform.

Je besser die Erde, um so stärker geht das Wachstum vor sich und eine um so größere Mehrheit des Stoffes ergibt sich. Will man Luft erzeugen, so kommt das Wasser in die Minorität. Die Steigerung ist in diesem Falle das Gemisch Luft und die daraus sich abspaltende 4. Dimension - Die Bewegung als Stoff - . Aus dieser Bewegung entsteht schließlich die 5. Dimension: Das Strahlungsprodukt, der Geist. Dieser Geist kann sich vermaterialisieren. Umgekehrt kann man natürlich auch einen festen, flüssigen oder gasförmigen Stoff vergeistigen.

Ob man dieses oder jenes Zwischenprodukt erzeugen will, ist nur eine Frage der Dosierung der Zwischenvorgänge. Dosierung von Wärme oder Kälte. Das so oder so entstehende Organ

ist eine Folge der Organisation. Jedes Organ ist ein Hilfs- oder Zweckmittel, das verschiedener Hilfskräfte bedarf, um sich entwickeln zu können. In der höchsten Form ist das Entwicklungsprodukt das Vielfache der Urform, weil sich die Potenzen in dieser Form dann entwickelt haben. Die Potenzen sind nichts anderes, als die bipolaren Spannungen, die sich gegenseitig entspannen und ihrer gewünschten Form ausgleichen. Daher die vielfache Erscheinung. Die Funktion der Spannung oder Entspannung ist Wärme und Kälte. Das Produkt ist somit ein Produkt der Wärme oder der Kälte.

Den Ausschlag gibt der warme oder kalte Vermittlungsprozess. Die Gebäranstalt sind das Eis und die Düse. Die befruchteten Eier legen Düsen und umgekehrt entstehen aus Düsen - Eier. Die Strahlung ist die bipolare Einheit, das Urwissen, das sich in Eiweißen gestaltet. Da das Wissen auch bipolar ist, so entsteht der Raum, der Zwischenraum und die Schale. Die sich in der Hülle entwickelnde Kraft, ist die Raumkraft, die wieder wie alles bipolar ist.

Die Wärmespannung brütet die Gestalt und die Kältespannung die Entstaltung aus. Das Eine ist die elementare Bewegung und das Andere ist die elementare Umhüllung, also der vervielfachte Körper und die vervielfachende Seele.

#### 7.5 Kälte-/Wärme-Maschine

Ich besitze Apparate, die einen Wasserlauf von ca. 20° C in wenigen Minuten ohne Kälteeinflüsse üblicher Art (Eis oder Kühlmaschine) auf unter 0° C abkühlen...

Hauchartige Sauerstoffregelungen in zwischengeschalteten Gefäßen (mit Kupfer und Zinkplatten) genügen, um Tausende von Wärmekalorien in wenigen Sekunden zu vernichten, respektive in Kältestoffe zu verwandeln. Einfache Vorgänge der Natur, für Temperaturschwankungen von über 60° C...Es handelt sich um eine atomare Abspaltung der Luft oder Wasserstoffe ...

Ich lasse nun Apparate bauen, die Wärme und Kälte organisch erzeugen. Wärme und Kältdynamos mit 1/8 PS heizen und kühlen im kalten Verbrennungsprozess, ohne Feuer... Der Apparat ist Heiz- und Kühlschranks zugleich. Er hebt sich selbst durch organisches Vakuum das Wasser oder die Luft in jede Höhe, baut Wasser oder Luft immateriell um, destilliert das Ausgangsprodukt, so dass man jede beliebige Wasser- oder Luftart herstellen kann. Hauptsache: Richtige Stoffzusammensetzung. Studieren von Katalysatoren, die den Sauerstoff aus dem Wasser abspalten. Für Versuch Ätzkali und Zink, respektive Natrium be-



nutzt. Zur Abspaltung der Zusatzwärme Aluminium und Silizium mit Wasserglas gebunden. 1:1 unrichtig, weil zu hohe Temperatur. Gefühlsmäßig 2:3, wobei die C-Stoffe überwiegen müssen. Tourenzahl 4-9000. Grundgedanke in der Planetarbewegung, Saug- oder Druckkräfte auf der Gegenseite des Katalysators. Je nach Tourenzahl 350.000-fache Gewichts- respektive Drucksteigerungen. Apparat auch benutzbar für billigste Kunstbenzinerzeugung. Mit einem System, das faustgroß ist, wird man Wohnungen heizen oder bei bloßer Änderung der Düse beliebige Tieftemperaturen erzielen können. Nur kleine Bewegungsimpulse sind für die Inbetriebsetzung nötig. Kickstarter oder elektrischer Anlasser.

Wasser wird im Vakuum verdunstet, und auf kaltem Wege in den gasförmigen Zustand (durch Mutatoren) verwandelt. In dem nächsten Apparat wird die Luft in elektrozoische Energie verwandelt. So entsteht das organische oder physikalische Vakuum, das bei schon kleinen Maschinen pro Sekunde ca. 4 cbm Luft verbraucht, wodurch auf der Welle ca. 10.000 PS für Arbeit frei werden. Lässt man vor der Einsaugöffnung ein physikalisches Vakuum entstehen, dann wird die Maschine mit dieser Kraft vorgezogen und so ist das laut- und betriebsstofflose Flugzeug (im heutigen Sinn) gegeben.

Die Natur verwandelt Wasser in Luft und umgekehrt Luft in Wasser, beziehungsweise Erde. Gemeint sind damit die, die Verbindung Wasser oder das Gemenge Luft darstellenden Stoffe, die inneratomar durch Temperaturspannungen verwandelt werden.

#### 7.6 Vakuum-Turbine

Das Prinzip dieser Vakuum-Turbine besteht darin, dass in einem Kapillarrohr und Doppeldrallrohr, das Elektromagnete eingebaut hat, ein künstliches Gewitter, beziehungsweise hohe elektrische Luftspannungen entstehen, die die Luftstoffe in elektrische Energien verwandeln, die sich in die Seitenwandungen entladen und von dort im Diffusionsweg als Wärme nach abwärts geleitet werden. Durch diese Umwertung von Luftstoff in Energien entsteht ein nach aufwärts zu sich steigerndes physikalisches Vakuum und durch das nach unten zu sukzessive verlaufende Wärmegefälle, ein starker Luftstrom nach aufwärts, der sich nach wenigen Minuten bis zur zyklonartigen Wucht steigert.

Damit ist das sich lautlos bewegende Flugzeug erfunden, weil durch das im Inneren der Maschine entstehende physikalische Vakuum vor dem Kopfende der Maschine ein luftleerer Raum entsteht, wodurch die Maschine selbst vorgezogen wird. Dieser Sog kann durch

entsprechende Gestaltung eines im Inneren der Maschinen angebrachten Lungen- oder Kiemensystems beliebig gesteigert werden, so dass die Bewegungskraft und Geschwindigkeit des Apparates beliebig gesteigert werden kann, weil der rückstoßende Luftkolben der Betriebsstoff ist, der analytisch zerlegt, den physikalischen Gegenstrom auslöst.

## 7.7 Atomverwandlungsmaschine

### 7.7.1 Notizen vom 15. Juli 1936

An diesem Tage haben wir die Montage der Atomverwandlungsmaschine begonnen. Morgen oder übermorgen wird sie zum ersten Male laufen.---Einfach und wahr, das ist der Eindruck den man beim Sehen bekommt. Leider können wir den oberen Teil der Maschine auf ihrem jetzigen Standpunkt nicht voll in Betrieb nehmen, die Gefahr ist zu groß. Ich darf das Leben meiner Mitarbeiter nicht riskieren. Maschine zum Vollbetrieb fernsteuern, weil entweder ein heftiges Gewitter oder ein Zyklon entsteht. Entweder ladet sich das organische ‚H‘ nach unten ab, dann gibt es einen Kurzschluss - ein Gewitter - . Abladung des ‚H‘ nach oben ergibt den sich bei ungefähr 40 000 mA in Bewegung setzenden sphärischen Elektromagneten und damit die Einladung sphärischem Plus + Minus, also den Zyklon. Der Physiker Reynolds hatte einen Kurzschluss, der ihn und seinen Mitarbeiter innerhalb weniger Sekunden verbrannte. Wehe, wenn der Gedanke zuerst in der Querachse zündet. Es kommt ganz darauf an, wohin sich das ‚H‘ entlädt. Auf die Quer- oder auf die Vertikalachse? Dies entscheidet der stärkere Pol, denn auch hier handelt es sich um eine Bipolarität.

### 7.7.2 Notizen vom 24. Juli 1936

Die Maschinenteile wurden, soweit es sich um Konstruktionen handelt, unrichtig entworfen, und nun muss ich die ganze Arbeit leider vollkommen überholen lassen, weil ich die notwendigen Touren nicht bekomme. Der erste Versuch zeigte das wichtige Gesetz, dass die Sonnenstrahlen mit der Zunahme der Wärme an Kapazität abnehmen. Damit ergibt sich die Möglichkeit der künstlichen Erzeugung des kalten Lichtes oder des kalten Feuers und in weiterer Folge die absolute Heilung der Krebskrankheit.

Durch die organische Anordnung der Kathoden- und Anodensysteme in der Maschine bekomme ich die Planetenbewegung durch die Einstellung des Spannungswinkels von + 4° C, wodurch entweder das Licht die erste UR-Gestaltung oder die Bewegung, die erste Ur-Entstaltung zu wachsen beginnt. Schalte ich das kalte Licht und die warme Bewegung in

einem harmonischen Rhythmus, so habe ich die wachsende Bewegung, oder die lebendige Kraft, der legalen Macht. Die sogenannten kurzen Strahlen, sind nichts anderes, als harte nicht abgearbeitete Strahlungsenergien, die man in jeder Intensität durch die organische Maschine erzeugen kann. Damit ergibt sich die Mutation, die Umkehrung der Bewegungsgestaltung, also die wachsende Gestaltungsbewegung oder die kostenlose Kraft. Ich brauche deshalb für den Anfang eine Arbeitskapazität von auswärts, um die Maschine in die dynamische Bewegung zu bringen. Habe ich die nötige Tourenzahl erreicht, so beginnt die warme Bewegung zu wachsen. Kühle ich nun diese wachsende Massenbewegung im Doppeldrallrohr langsam ab, so bekomme ich die absolute Entstaltung, also reine Wärme- und Kälte-Energie und damit die Abspaltung des Ur. Dieses ‚H‘ ist die organische Polarität oder der irdische Bewegungsimpuls, der sich nun in Folge seiner inneren Entspannung verlagert, zuströmt. Auf dem Weg zum Pol reißt der negative Impuls die Luftstoffe an sich und so entsteht in der Luft das Vertikalvakuum oder der Zyklon.

#### 7.7.3. Notizen vom 25. Juli 1936

Diese Woche überholte ich die Maschine, die absichtlich oder unabsichtlich viele Fehlkonstruktionen hatte. Ingenieur kommt mir in Zukunft keiner mehr ran. Diese Leute sind letzten Endes unehrlich und dumm.

#### 7.7.4. Notizen vom 27. Juli 1936

Es ist vollbracht. - Ich habe endlich die Planetenbewegung. Wollte Maschine in Trümmer schlagen. Innen ging alles verkehrt, als ich mir's dachte. - Brennende Kerze wies den Weg, den die entstaltenden Stoffe gehen. Fensterbrett, Glatze, Mondbewegung. Nun ist alles gewonnen. Ich habe eine sehr schwere Woche hinter mir. Es scheint, als ob mir die Natur ihr letztes Geheimnis der Bio-Bewegung nicht geben wollte. Immer kam es anders als ich mir's dachte, immer fehlte noch was, es war zum Verzweifeln. Es fehlten mir die Funktionen des Mondes und die des kalten Lichtes. Ein glücklicher Einfall, fast war es eine Fügung, gab mir des Rätsels Lösung in die Hand. Zwei Fliegen mit einem Schlag:

1. Kaltes Licht,
2. Achsenbewegung des Mondes.

Mit dieser Maschine, die alle Stückchen spielt, ist es leicht, z.B. die Wärme- und Kälte-Apparatur in eigener Regie zu vertreiben, um Geld herein zu bekommen für weitere Forschungen auf anderen Gebieten. Das Geheimnis liegt in der spiegelbildlichen Verkehrung

dessen, was man heute als richtig hält und daher kann auch die Rechnung oder Berechnung nicht stimmen.

In den heiligen Wassern liegen eben die ewigen Kräfte der Luft und der Erde. Eines wächst aus dem anderen hervor und die Grenzen von diesen "Drei" sind: Die Überwindung der Schwerkraft und die Verdichtung des Lebens zur Materie, - Bewegungsgestaltung und Gestaltungsbewegung.

#### 7.7.5 Notizen vom 1. August 1936

Ich bin in der Lage, den Organismus dieser Maschine so zu gestalten, dass er mit dem Moment zu funktionieren aufhört, als man ihn öffnet. So, wie ein Lebewesen aufhört zu pulsieren, wenn man das Herz öffnet, genau so hört die Maschine auf zu funktionieren, wenn ein Neugieriger das Ding anatomisch untersuchen will.

#### 7.7.6 Notizen vom 11. August 1936

Diese Maschine ist ein Werkzeug, mit dem es möglich ist, Feststoffe, Flüssigkeiten und Gase so weit zu veredeln, dass das Fertigprodukt eine vielfache Qualität und eine vielfache Bewegungskapazität zeigt. Das Prinzip ist der Natur nachgeahmt, wo die Zerlegung (Analyse) - (Bewegungsgestaltung) und die Synthese (Gestaltungsbewegung) im Wege einer bio-dynamischen Bewegung erfolgen.

Zerlegt man z.B. Luft, so entsteht ein hochwertiges ätherisches Produkt, das sich in der Atmosphäre nicht mehr halten kann und mit großer Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit aufströmt. Das aufströmende Gas absorbiert die umliegenden Luftstoffe und so entsteht ein sich lotrecht bewegendes Vakuum oder eine zyklonartige Strömung.

Zerlegt man Süß- oder Meerwasser, so ergibt sich derselbe Effekt, und man kann die aufströmenden Wasserstoffgase entweder durch entsprechende Kohlestoffe oder Edelmetalle und Minerale durchströmen lassen, wodurch im ersten Falle eine benzinartige Substanz, im zweiten Falle je nach der Absorptionsmasse ein mehr oder minder hochwertiges Betriebswasser entsteht.

Die benzinartige Substanz kann brennbar oder auch unbrennbar gestaltet werden. Im letzteren Falle handelt es sich um eine nitroglyzerinartige Substanz, die man beliebig dosieren kann. Diese Substanz dürfte dem sogenannten griechischen Feuer entsprechen .

Das Heben der Flüssigkeit und die Abkühlung auf 4° C ergibt sich durch den Zerlegungsprozess und die ätherische Gestaltung des Zerlegungsproduktes von selbst.

#### 7.7.7 Notizen vom 13. August 1936

Ich bin nach 20-jähriger Bemühung im nahezu absoluten ‚Nichts‘, nämlich im beinahe absoluten ‚Vakuum‘ gelandet. Eine Vakuum-Maschine, die genau der Planetenbewegung angepasst ist und nur einen Anstoß benötigt, um so lange zu laufen, als die organischen Bestandteile der Maschine lebens- respektive bewegungsfähig sind. Motorenantrieb ist nicht unbedingt nötig, weil es vollkommen genügt, den Impuls der ersten Bewegung mit der Hand oder mittels Fußpedalen zu geben.

Das ganze Geheimnis liegt in der organischen Bewegungsgestaltung und in der Gestaltungsbewegung, wodurch sich die bi-polare Entwicklung, die Entartung der Materie, die Überwindung der Schwerkraft oder die Verdichtung der Materie, das körperliche Wachstum von selbst ergibt.

#### 7.7.8 Notizen vom 14. August 1936

Ich stehe vor dem scheinbaren ‚Nichts‘, vor der Kompression der Entstaltung, die wir so allgemein als das ‚Vakuum‘ benennen und sehe, dass wir aus dem ‚Nichts‘ alles was wir uns wünschen, zu gestalten vermögen. Helfer ist das Wasser, als Blut der Erde. Der universellste Organismus.

#### 7.7.9 Eine Augenzeugin berichtet

Gretl Schneider berichtet:

Herr V.S. hat mir die Maschine gezeigt. Der ganze große Bau von früher fällt weg. Sie ist auf die Hälfte ihrer früheren Größe reduziert worden und erreicht in ihren Funktionen eine ungeheure Kraft-Entwicklung. Ich habe unten in die Maschine einen Topf Wasser geschüttet. Es hat einen kaum hörbaren Laut gegeben und im gleichen Moment hatte es "pft" gemacht und das Wasser war durch eine 4 cm dicke Zementplatte und einem 4 mm dicken, extra gehärteten Stahlmantel, in solch einer Wucht durchgedrungen, das die in ihrer Geschwindigkeit für das Auge unsichtbaren Wasserpartikelchen, durch alle Kleider hindurch gedrungen sind und schlagartig wie Nadelstiche auf der Haut gespürt wurden. Wasserglas ist ebenfalls durchgedrungen und in 5 cm langen Haaren draußen an der Wandung wie Borsten erstarrt.

#### 7.7.10 Hohls Besuchsrapport vom 14.- 17. August 1936

Zerlegte Maschine: Der Grundkonsens ist augenfällig interessant. Wie ein Vesuv aus Gold und Silber mit mehreren Kratern, um die Spitze gelagert ca. 20 cm rund. Auffallend schwer - Vollmetall -. "Und das schwebt in der Luft", sagte V.S., obwohl es sich mit ca. 3000 Touren dreht. Das Gehäuse, da Vakuum-Anlage, gleicht einem römischen Wasserkrug aus Messing versilbert. "An der ganzen Maschine ist keine gerade Linie und kein Kreis", wiederholt V.S. Vakuum und Druck so groß, dass feinsten Wasserdampf durch eine Nute (1/100 aufeinandergepasst) austreten konnte, ja sogar Wasserglas trieb es hinaus und hing dann in langen Fäden außen herab. Feinsten Wasserdampf nur mit Spiegel feststellbar. Vernickelte Haube mit beweglichem Blechrohre, darinnen in Spiralförmig lauter kleine Schmetterlingsflügel aufgenietet waren. Bei Hinhören ein Rauschen wie in einer Muschel wahrnehmbar. Kein elektrischer Antrieb, sondern nur ein Hand- oder Fußpedal-Antrieb nötig. Bewegungsimpuls von Zeit zu Zeit zu wiederholen.

Maschine musste auseinandergenommen werden, um sie besser zu dichten und das Material zu überprüfen. Gußeinsatz in 5 Minuten so stark verrostet, als ob 14 Tage im Wasser gelegen. Temperaturen von + 4° bis 800°C. Tourenzahl 6.000 - 30.000 p. Minute.

,O' = Sauerstoff = Druckkraft, Trennung bewirkt Zentripetalkraft

,H' = Wasserstoff = Zugkraft, Verbindung bewirkt Zentrifugalkraft

O = Breitenspannung - Elektrizität

H = Längsspannung - Magnetismus

Wenn das Ei, das eine Henne ausbrüten soll, so gelegt wird, dass von unten ein ganz feines Röhrchen an das Ei führt, durch das Luft hindurch kann, dann brütet die Henne 3-4 Tage, dann legt sie es weg, nimmt ein Neues und so fort, weil sich so kein Huhn entwickeln kann. Das ist das Geheimnis der Düse.

Schneiden des Grases am frühen Morgen, weil mit dem Sensenschnitt etwas ganz besonderes verbunden ist. Das Gras, respektive der Halm ist ein Röhrchen oder eine Düse. Mit dem Sensenschnitt wird, weil aus Eisen, Luftsauerstoff angezogen/Wasserstoff frei. Der Wasserstoff aber verschließt augenblicklich die Düse, dass das Gras nicht verblutet oder verdunstet und die Wurzel nicht entkräftet wird. Wer bei Sonnenlicht mäht, zerstört die Wurzeln und der Acker verödet mit der Zeit.

## 8 Notizen vom 7. Juli 1937

### 8.1 Gewinnung von Kraftstoffen

In diesem Kapitel soll ein Weg gezeigt werden, Öl-, Kohle- und Wasserkräfte durch hochwertige Triebstoffe zu ersetzen, die als Spannungs- und Entspannungsabfälle aus dem Wasser und der Luft zu gewinnen sind. Wasser und Luft sind Dreikörpersysteme, die zueinander in einem wechselsinnigen Spannungsverhältnis stehen. - Darum bei der Zerlegung dieser beiden Stoffe gewisse Unterschiede zu beachten sind. Außerdem ist es notwendig, allgemein zu wissen, woher diese Stoffgruppierungen kommen, was sie sind und welchem Zweck sie dienen.

Wasser ist biologisch betrachtet ein Akkumulator und zugleich ein Transformator, das heißt, man kann in das Wasser unter gewissen Voraussetzungen bestimmte Stoffe einladen oder herausholen. Das Wasser ist daher ein Organ, das durch die Kathoden - und Anodensysteme Sonne und Mond ferngesteuert wird, wonach es je nach Umständen anoden- oder kathodenhafte Funktionen durchführen kann. Das Wasser unterliegt bei allen Lösungs- und Bindungsvorgängen verschiedenen Einflüssen. Die hauptsächlichsten Einflüsse, die zu Umbauvorgängen im Wasserinneren führen, sind a) Licht und Wärme, b) Dunkelheit und Kälte. Die Stoffwechselfvorgänge im Wasser werden also durch Tages- und Nachtwechsel oder durch den Lebensrhythmus der Erde gesteuert.

Umgekehrt werden Bewegungserscheinungen durch Stoffwechselfvorgänge ausgelöst und so haben wir ein praktisches ‚Perpetuum mobile‘ vor Augen, das mühelos nachahmbar ist, wenn man diesen unendlich vor sich gehenden Naturvorgang nur ein bisschen versteht. Die erste Voraussetzung, Wasser umzubauen, ist, dasselbe aller festen Stoffe zu entbinden. Ebenso müssen auch, soweit dies durchführbar ist, die bipolaren Gasstoffe zum Großteil entfernt werden. Diese stoffliche Reinigung des Wassers wird am einfachsten dadurch erreicht, dass man das Wasser entspannt, worunter wieder die Entfernung der Stoffe gemeint ist, welche das Wassergefüge in sich zusammenhalten.

Diese gewissermaßen organischen Magnetkräfte wurden bisher kaum beachtet. Wenige Menschen ahnen, dass das Wasser ein Akkumulator für hochgespannte animalische Energien oder für elektrozoische Stoffe ist. Diese Energiestoffe, welche sich zum Beispiel in unserem Körper entladen, wenn wir Wasser trinken, sind organische Plus- und Minus-Impulse, also

vitale Lebenserneuerer, darum ist es nicht gleichgültig, welches Wasser wir trinken oder zum Kochen verwenden.

Jede Wäscherei weiß, dass z.B. Aqua-Destillata und Regenwasser wesentlich verschiedene Fähigkeit hat, in Bezug auf die Anziehungskraft der Schmutzstoffe. Ob das Trinkwasser in unserem Körper Energien deponiert oder diese Erneuerungsstoffe auszieht, ist nur eine Frage der Einstellung oder des Willens, den das Wasser zum Zeitpunkt des Trinkens hat.

Nimmt man z.B. diese, das Wassergefüge zusammenhaltenden Energien aus dem Trägerstoff heraus, dann fallen sämtliche Feststoffe zu Boden und die meisten Gasstoffe entweichen nach oben. Der Reststoff ist je nach stärkerer oder schwächerer Entladung, ein mehr oder minder tief polarer Stoff, oder eine Mangelerscheinung, die den Willen hat, von irgendwoher Stoffe wieder einzuladen, weshalb dieser polare Stoff wie ein Magnet wirkt.

Stellt man sich diesen Entspannungsvorgang ins Extreme gedacht vor, so haben wir als Reststoff einen Ur-Stoff vor uns, der so tiefwertig ist, dass man die gigantischsten Stoffwechselforgänge auslösen kann, weil durch den Umbau geradezu katastrophenartige Umwandlungsvorgänge auftreten, die man selbstverständlich in den praktischen Arbeitsdienst stellen kann, wenn man die dazugehörigen Maschinen baut, in denen sich die Kontraste nutzbringend austoben können. Was, abgesehen vom praktischen Vorteil, noch verschiedene andere Annehmlichkeiten nach sich zieht, weil z.B. keine Naturkatastrophen mehr entstehen können, wenn man die Katastrophen im ‚status nascendi‘ zum Betrieb von Maschinen benützt.

## 8.2 Unterschied zwischen Trieb- und Treibstoff

Benützt man unklugerweise die Triebe, die in der Natur zur Vermehrung bestimmt sind, zum Treiben von Maschinen, dann darf man sich nicht wundern wenn sich statt Wiegen, die Säрге vermehren. Wie unvernünftig die sogenannten sachverständigen Menschen handeln, sehen wir am besten im Bemühen, Wasser durch Korrektion der Ufer zu leiten, oder im Bemühen, das Wasser durch Begradigung der Gerinne oder durch Verengungen des Profils in die Meere zu treiben. Naturfremde Menschen bauen Dämme, die aus Stoffen bestehen, welche die Katastrophen, die sie verhindern wollen, an den Haaren herbeiziehen müssen. Wäre dies nicht traurig, müsste man lachen, wie verkehrt sie handeln, unsere weltfremden Wasserapostel.



Das Bett, in dem das Wasser fließt, ist der Profil- und Kurvenform nach ein negativer oder ein spiegelbildlicher Abdruck der im Wasserinneren wirkenden Kräfte. Ein Wasserstrom, der sich zu stark in die Kurve legt, Mäander bildet, oder gar Ufer frisst oder zerstört, ist krank. Wird ein solcher Wasserstrom vom Ufer aus roh und brutal reguliert, dann wird das ursprünglich ‚gütige‘ Wasser immer kränker, immer böswilliger und gefährlich, bis es stirbt und scheinbar verschwindet, um in vielfach gesteigerter Masse und innerlich geladen mit Rache wiederzukommen, um den Menschen, der ihm seine Gesundheit genommen, ja sogar sein Dasein verhindert hat, rücksichtslos zu treffen.

Woher kommt die unheimliche Kraft im Wasser? Was sind die ebenso gütigen, wie rücksichtslos strafenden Götter? Um diese nach verschiedenen Seiten hin wirkenden Kräfte kennen zu lernen, müssen wir genauestens beobachten lernen, das Farbenspiel und sogar die Ur-Sprache des Wassers verstehen. Es ist eine Lebewelt, von deren Macht/Kraft sich die Sachverständigen keine Vorstellung machen. Göttergleiche Gebilde oder Lebensenergien mit Rammpfählen, Zementmauern etc. im Zaum zu halten versuchen, können nur Menschen probieren, die keine Ahnung von einer Lebenskraft haben, die Berge versetzt und Dreck in gütige Nahrung wieder verwandelt.

### 8.3 Schleppkraftbetrachtung

Je geringer die Schleppkräfte eines Wassers sind, um so mehr fehlen solchen Wasserarten die inneren, sein Gefüge zusammenhaltenden Spannungen. Die Folge dieser Spannungsverluste ist der Aus- und der Abfall seines Geschiebes, das dem richtig geführten Wasserlauf die Wegzehrungsstoffe bietet. Was an diesen Geschiebestoffen seine innere Wertigkeit an seinen einstigen Erzeuger wieder abgegeben hat, wird am Ufer sorgfältig deponiert, von der Sonne sorgsam zerlegt und so wieder in das erneuernde Kreisen des Lebens geführt. In einem gesunden Wasser ziehen die Wasserfäden von den Ufern zur Mitte und zugleich in die Tiefe. Ruhig und glasklar ziehen solche im Normalprofil liegenden Flüsse dahin und wimmelndes Fischleben zeigt die Güte so gearteten Wassers an.

Schwindet durch unrichtige Profilierung, durch eine sinnlose Begradigung oder zu direkte Sonnenbestrahlung die Schleppkraft durch die inneratomare Entspannung des Wassers, dann wächst das Geschiebe von unten nach oben und einer Vertiefung folgt eine Verflachung und Verbreiterung seiner Ufer, weshalb das seichte und warmwerdende Wasser die letzten inneren Haltstoffe verliert, schal und müde wird, dahin sich windet, dorthin sich schleppt, um wieder Stoffe zu finden, die ihm sein Dasein gestatten.

In dieser Verfassung überwältigen die ‚sachverständigen Verführer‘ das Wasser und zwingen es in verengte, begradigte Gerinne. Das Wasser fließt durch die Verkürzung in steilere Bahnen gelenkt und von Mauern zusammen gepresst, freilich nun schneller und trägt sogar sein Geschiebe brav und fleißig. Diese Art von Schleppekraft ist aber nur von ganz kurzer Dauer. Nach einer geraumen Zeit ändert sich das Bild wieder gewaltig. Das mechanisch beschleunigte Wasser beginnt knapp unter der Regulierungsstelle, sein Geschiebe wieder zu landen. Durch diese Verlandungen müssen nun abermals Verbreiterungen entstehen, die man nach jeder Verengung wahrnehmen kann und so wird das vorher beschriebene Übel um ein bedeutendes schlimmer.

Diesen Verbreiterungen wirkt man nun durch Dämme entgegen, und nun ist dem Wasser die Möglichkeit endlich gegeben, alles mit einem Schlag wieder zu vernichten. Bei Tag ist das sonnenbeschienene Wasser ein lockeres und stoffhungriges Gefüge, in das die Sonne ihre Stoffe eindrückt. Bei Nacht ändert sich die Temperatur und damit die Spannung, wodurch Differenzen entstehen, die als Unterlebenserscheinungen neuer Nahrungsenergien bedürfen und von der Seite her, den umliegenden Boden bestehlen, sich dasjenige nehmen, was sie zu ihrem Unterhalt und zu ihrer Vermehrung notwendig haben. Die Entladung und die Ungütigwerdung des umliegenden Bodens ist die Folge einer unsachgemäßen Regulierung des Wassers.

Frühmorgens, wenn die Sonne wieder erscheint, treten Befruchtungsvorgänge in diesen Differenzerscheinungen auf und was hochwertig ist, geht nach aufwärts und im Wasser bildet sich die nächsthöhere Lebenserscheinung, die wir als das Bakterienleben bezeichnen, welche durch Überfruchtungsvorgänge, die wir früher beschrieben haben, entstanden ist. Solange nun genügende Ergänzungsstoffe von den Ufern her noch vorhanden sind, die sich als Energiestoffe kilometerweit in das Wasser zurückladen, wenn sich die ursprüngliche Strahlungsrichtung durch die Änderung der Polarität gewechselt hat, wird sich das Strömungsbild allgemein gesehen wenig verändern.

Verarmt aber der umliegende Boden, dann beginnt das Wasser, welches von der Breiten- spannung her keine Lebensstoffe mehr zurückholen kann, seinen inneren Hunger aus der Längsachse zu stillen und so wird das Wasser seine Lebensenergien von der Richtung her holen, die dem Ursprung zu näher liegt, das heißt, das Wasser beginnt sich nach aufwärts zu

entladen und nun beginnt, durch den Spannungsabfall bedingt, eine sich wieder verstärkende Verlandung an den Stellen, die ursprünglich reguliert oder durch mechanische Einflüsse gezwungen wurden, ihre Geschiebe ein Stückchen weiter zu tragen. In den unteren Lagen bilden sich trotz der von oben her kommenden Nachladung zuerst zungenartige Ablagerungsgebilde, die sich immer mehr und mehr verbreitern und so schließlich das ganze Gerinne versanden.

In früheren Abhandlungen wurde klar und eindeutig bewiesen, dass in einem mittleren Gerinne die Schleppkraftverluste, die durch die innere Entspannung des Wassergefüges entstanden sind, rechnerisch ausgedrückt etwa 30 - 50 Millionen PS oder rund 20 - 40 Millionen kW betragen.

In der Natur geht bekanntlich nichts verloren, sondern erscheint immer in potenzierter Form wieder. Jeder Stoff ist bipolar und daher können sich die immer wieder zurückkehrenden Energien im guten und bösen Sinne potenzieren. Wenn irgend ein Wasserlauf nach heutiger Methode reguliert wird, gibt dieser Wasserlauf keine Ruhe mehr und Jahr für Jahr steigen die Kosten für die Erhaltung der regulierten Gerinne. Diese altbekannte Erscheinung ist genügend Beweis, dass sich die Güte eines so regulierten Wassers nicht steigert, sondern verringert. Die wasserlos gewordenen Geschiebeteile liegen nun im direkten Bereich der sengenden Strahlen der Sonne. Die zwischen Tag- und Nachtwechsel eintretenden Stoffwechsellerscheinungen im Steine, führen zu dessen Zerfall. Die vom Boden und von oben her ein- und ausladenden Geschiebeteile laden sich um, und so kommen die Stoffe, welche bei normalem Entwicklungsgang die Lüfte im mittelbaren Wege über das Wasser und die Pflanzen bekamen, direkt oder unmittelbar in die Atmosphäre, wo es nun zu gewaltigen Differenzzuwachserscheinungen kommt, weil der unbedingt in der Natur notwendige Vermittlungsweg gestört wurde. Diese minderwertigen und daher für den Luftaufbau ungeeigneten Differenzstoffe oder die niederen Rassen, die von der Sonne vergewaltigten Massen, stellen sich Unheil brütend nach seitwärts und warten des günstigen Momentes wo sie sich in ihre irdische Heimat oder auf die Erde zurückladen können.

Dieser Fall wird durch die Aufbaustörungen der Lüfte gegeben. - Da durch die vorerwähnten Störungen das harmonische Gleichgewicht in den Lüften ins Wanken kommt und überstarke Abladungen der Überlebensstoffe nach wieder höheren Regionen erfolgen, kommt es in den Lüften zu Entspannungserscheinungen, die aber nunmehr ganz anders gerichtet sind, wie die

vorbeschriebenen Entspannungsvorgänge im Wasser. Durch die Entspannung der Lüfte, kommt es zu Verdichtungserscheinungen der restlichen Luftstoffe, in die sich nun die niederen Rassenstoffe einbauen und mit dem plötzlich niedersausenden Wasser in die Erde zurückfallen.

Nun ergibt sich ein Fall, der von allergrößter Bedeutung für die späteren Auswirkungen ist und daher genauestens beachtet werden muss. Nach Regen folgt Kühle. - Dies deshalb, weil der fallende Regen diejenigen Stoffe an sich zieht, die für den weiteren Ausfall noch zu minderwertig waren. - Handelt es sich um gütige Stoffe, dann wirken sie auf der Erde im potenziert gütigen Sinne. - Sind sie aber ungütige Stoffe, dann zeigt sich die potenzierte Ungütigkeit in einem rasch vor sich gehenden Zerfall.

Um von diesen elementaren Kräften, welche in unrichtig regulierten Gerinnen den Wasserlauf und das Wasser vernichten, eine Vorstellung zu bekommen, müssen wir wieder einige rechnerische Vergleiche ziehen und abermals auf die schon früher erwähnten Schleppkräfte zurückgreifen, um ein halbwegs brauchbares Vorstellungsbild zu bekommen. In einem Gerinne, das etwa  $500 \text{ m}^3/\text{s}$  Wasser führt, gehen rund 60 Millionen PS oder rund 50 Millionen kW verloren, wenn sich so ein Gerinne in heißen Tagen auf etwa  $22^\circ \text{ C}$  erwärmt. Diese Schleppkraft-Energien sind im Wasserganzen auftretende Zugkräfte, welche bestrebt sind, aus dem Geschiebe negative Kraftstoffe herauszuziehen, damit im Verein mit den, durch die Sonne eingebauten, Phosstoffen Ausgleichs- und damit Neuwasserbildungen auftreten können, die notwendig sind, damit das sich im Tal ausflachende Gefälle durch wachsende Gewichtsmassen überwunden werden kann. Diese Energieabladung der gewissermaßen weiblichen Stoffe aus dem Geschiebe kann aber nur bei ganz bestimmten Temperaturabstufungen in der vertikalen Achse vor sich gehen, das heißt, die oberflächlichen Wassermassen müssen zu den Sohlenwassermassen in einem bestimmten Temperaturgefälle stehen.

Wird das Wasserganze zu warm und gehen die Spannungsunterschiede in schlecht regulierten Gerinnen verloren, so können keine Schwerwassermassen in die Tiefe sinken und dadurch keine Ausgleichs- und Neuwasserbildungen entstehen. Das keiner Vermehrung unterliegende Wasser stirbt am Weg langsam ab und schließlich ist das Bachbett trocken. Das Gegenteil der Schleppkraftenergien sind Stoßkräfte, die auftreten, wenn plötzlich große Regenmassen die lange Zeit trocken gelegenen Gerinne wieder ausfüllen.

Diese Stoßkraftausbildung wollen wir nun etwas näher beschreiben, weil wir diese bisher ganz unbekanntes Kräfte auch für die organischen Maschinen notwendig brauchen, die unmöglich erklärt werden könnten, wenn man sich nicht durch ähnliche Beispiele die ungemein geheimnisvollen Entwicklungsvorgänge klarmachen könnte. Durch die jähe Abkühlung der Lüfte nach einem Platzregen oder nach einem Hagel kühlt sich das Wasser rascher ab als der umliegende Boden. Die Folge dieser ungleichmäßigen Abkühlung ist eine auftretende Spannung, die horizontal verläuft.

Im rasch abkühlenden Wasser ziehen sich die früher eingebauten Phosstoffe zusammen. Die in dem Geschiebe eingebauten weiblichen Energiestoffe beginnen unter plötzlicher Kältewirkung auszustrahlen. Durch diese innere Spannungsumstellung kommt es in den gegensätzlichen Stoffen zu heftigen Ausgleichen und durch sehr plötzlich auftretende Wechselausgleiche zur Zeugung von Jungwassermassen, beziehungsweise zu einer starken Wasserstoffausscheidung, welche ihre Differenzstoffe aus dem umliegenden Boden und aus der auflagernden Luft sucht. Es ergibt sich eine Druckspannung, die von der Mitte des Wassers nach seitwärts und aufwärts verläuft. Diese zur Wasserlaufrichtung quer verlaufenden Spannungsausgleiche hindern das abflutende Wasser in seiner normalen Achsenbewegung und so bilden sich quer laufende Wasserberge, die unter Umständen bis 80 cm Höhe erreichen. Diese Kräfte sind um ein Vielfaches größer, als das im scharfen Gefälle flutende, mit Schlamm stark vermischte schwere Wasser.

Geringe Temperaturschwankungen im Wasserquerschnitt, die zum Beispiel durch bebaute oder verwaldete (entwaldete ?; d. Bearbeiter) Ufer entstehen, legen nun diese querlaufenden Wasserwalzen schräg und stürzen diese schweren und mit Druckspannungen hochgeladenen Wassermassen gegen die Ufer und zertrümmern in dieser gefährlichen Verfassung selbst meterdicke Mauern, weil die Poren wasserdurchlässig werden und im Boden oder Mauergefüge abermals Ausgleiche entstehen, die geradezu explosiv wirken! Diese im Wasser auftretenden Explosionen sind experimentell nachweisbar und wirken, da es sich hier um hochgespannte Hydrolysenausgleiche handelt, unter Umständen ähnlich wie flüssige Luft. Schleppkräfte sind in der Längsachse auftretende Zugkräfte. Druckkräfte sind in der Querachse auftretende Stoßkräfte, die im potenzierten Verhältnis zu den ersteren stehen. Diese in die Breite wirkenden Hemmungskräfte verhindern normal das zu rasche Fließen im zu starken Gefälle und stellen sozusagen die ferngesteuerte Bremse im Wasser dar. Diese hydraulische Bremse im Wasser wurde vollkommen übersehen.

Ähnliche Vorgänge bewirken in unserem Inneren zum Beispiel den Blutkreislauf. Die ganze Säftebewegung ist auf ähnlich wirkende Schlepp - und Stoßkraftbildung zurückzuführen. Der hohe Wellengang in südlichen Meeren nach Sonnenuntergang, die starken Brandungserscheinungen und alle Ebbe- und Fluterscheinungen sind auf diese inneren Kräfteausgleiche zurückzuführen.

Die Golfstrombewegung ist letzten Endes eine Folge dieser ungeheuren Stoßkräfte, die durch eine Art Wassergewitter entstehen, zuerst vertikale Böen auslösen, die sich dann nach irgendeiner Richtung hin ausbreiten und 1000 km weithin wirken. Die Sturm-, Orkan- und die bekannt gefährliche Zyklon-Bildung in der Atmosphäre sind auf ähnliche Ursachen zurückzuführen, und diese bisher ungenutzten, oder zum Teil unfreiwillig ausgelösten, Elementarkräfte werden in Miniatur-Maschinen statt Zerstörungsarbeit künftig nützliche Arbeit verrichten.

Je mehr solche Maschinen laufen, um so weniger Katastrophen können entstehen, und die Mutter Erde wird in Zukunft in aller Ruhe wieder die Triebstoffe aufbauen können, die heute törichte Menschen in Maschinen verbrennen. In der Natur gibt es nur das gewisse ‚Entweder – Oder‘, das ‚Ich kann leben‘ oder das ‚Wir zerstören‘. Das ‚Ichleben‘ ist von außen her, belebte Masse. Das ‚Wirleben‘ sind höherentwickelte Rassen, die gut oder schlecht auf die ‚Ichleben‘-Anschauungen einwirken können, wenn der Mensch den gewaltigen Aufbau, der mit der Ausgestaltung des Menschen noch lange nicht zu Ende ist, richtig oder unrichtig beeinflusst.

Es wäre absolut unrichtig zu sagen, dass es nach diesem Leben kein Nach-Leben gibt. Dieses Nachleben ist aber eine Erscheinung, die im Zuge zum Göttlichen hin, sich zusammengruppiert - kein Ichbewusstsein mehr hat, sondern von wieder höheren Kräften durch Längs- und Querspannungen absorbiert wird, - entweder sich höher richtet oder tiefer richtet und alles vernichtet, wenn der tölpische Mensch durch sinnlose Ein- und Missgriffe auf Erden diesen urgewaltigen Entwicklungsgang stört, um die Kräfte auszunutzen, die die Natur ausbilden und daher das Fundament der gesamten Lebensgestaltung sind. Was nützt es zu sagen, dass diese naturfremden Menschen zu unwissend und daher bis zu einem gewissen

Grade auch unschuldig sind, wenn hundert von Millionen Menschen, diesen Unverstand büßen auf das bisschen Lebensfreude verzichten müssen, bloß weil die sogenannten wissenden Menschen unwissend sind.

Einzelne Menschen werden nun sagen: ja, warum nicht sofort heraus mit dem wirklichen Wissen! Diesen wieder kurzsichtigen Menschen kann nur das Eine geantwortet werden: Elementare Kräfte in Miniaturmaschinen dienstbar zu machen, bedeutet den Blitz in den Fäusten haben. Blitze zu schleudern, vermochten bisher nur Hochentwickelte. Was würde entstehen, wenn tölpische Menschenmassen, die doch derzeit ihre ganze Spannkraft verschwenden, - um Zerstörungsmittel gegen die Menschen zu finden, - diese gigantischen Ur-Kräfte sozusagen in der Tasche tragen. Aus diesem Grunde haben die durchsehenden Menschen eine ungeheure Verantwortung und so wollen wir äußerst behutsam weitergehen und die Richtung zeigen, wie man heutige Zerstörungskräfte in Nutzkkräfte verwandelt.

## **9 Benzin aus Wasser (Notizen vom Januar 1936)**

Man nehme ein gut isoliertes, womöglich eiförmiges Gefäß aus Ton oder zur Not Eichenfass, das die Außentemperatureinflüsse möglichst abwehrt, aber die Atmung des Gefäßes nicht behindert, oder die Diffusionswirkungen nicht stört. Man schraube in das Gefäß 3-teilige Düsen, deren obere Düse aus Kupfer besteht, während die untere aus einem gegenpoligen Metall, etwa Silber angefertigt ist. Diese Öffnungen müssen möglichst kleinkalibrig und schraubenförmig gedreht sein, damit einerseits ein mechanisches Zusammenhalten des mit tunlichst hohem Druck durchgepressten Gases gewährleistet ist, und andererseits eine sehr starke Zerstäubung erfolgt, wenn das an der unteren Düsenöffnung austretende Gas unter starkem Temperaturabfall in das gegensinnige Eiprofil eintritt. Die Düsenflächen stehen zueinander in einem gegenseitigen Größen-Verhältnis. Die drei Düsenöffnungen verjüngen sich gegen die Austrittsöffnung zu im gleichen Verhältnis. Die untere Düsenkombination ist um die Hälfte kleiner als die obere. Knapp unter und über den beiden Düsenkörpern, die nach außen gut isoliert sein müssen, sind verstellbare Wechselstrahler in Eiform angebracht, die einander genähert oder von einander getrennt werden können, um die auftretenden Spannungsdifferenzen regeln zu können. Auch diese Wechselstrahler sind nach außen zu abschirmen, so dass die Elektronenrichtung zueinander gewährleistet ist.

Diese Wechselstrahler müssen aus doppelpoligen Metallen hergestellt sein und es ist am einfachsten, Kupferkörper zu versilbern oder Silberkörper mit einer Kupferoxydulschicht zu

überziehen. Das Wesentliche dabei ist, dass diese Körper unter dem wechselseitigen Temperatur-Einfluss zu strahlen beginnen und ein animalischer Strom fließt. Diese Ionisation ist bei der hier eine maßgebende Rolle spielenden Hydrolyse mit Hochspannung und komplexen Absortionsvorgängen, bei welchen analytische und synthetische Elektro-Osmose-Phänomene auftreten müssen, äußerst wichtig.

Das möglichst eiförmig gehaltene Fass oder das unglasierte Tongefäß wird nun bis zur Hälfte mit gut gesonntem Meerwasser oder einem durchgesonnten oder angesäuerten Süßwasser, möglichst Regenwasser, gefüllt. Von der Sonnenbestrahlung und dem Aussäuerungsgrad hängt der Erfolg ab. Mangel an Sonnenstrahlung kann durch Beigabe von Wasserstoff-superoxyd etc. ersetzt werden, wobei aber Quarzlampebestrahlung notwendig ist. Das Einfachste ist die Sonnenbestrahlung. Die Ausgangstemperatur soll zwischen +12 und +17°C sein. In dieses durchsonnte Wasser kommen nun ganz geringe Mengen von Silber oder Zink, respektive Kupferfeilspäne. Diese können eventuell auch in die Düsenflächen gegeben werden, die vom eintretenden Gas umströmt werden. In diesem Fall müssen die Körperchen eine Größe haben, dass die Düsenöffnungen nicht verstopft werden. Das wechselseitige Verhältnis der beiden verschieden poligen Metalle muss empirisch ermittelt werden.

In das Wasser kommt außerdem Braunkohle in geringen Quantitäten und kleiner Würfelform, außerdem Phosphatsalze, etwa Magnesium oder sonstige Stoffe, die wir in jedem Quellwasser vorfinden können. Diese Salze dürfen jedoch nicht allzu sehr dem Tageslicht ausgesetzt gewesen sein. Schweflige Wasserarten und etwas Zusatz von Kalisalpeter erhöhen als Zusätze die Kapazität des Fertigstoffes. Je vielseitiger die Zusätze, deren Dosierung empirisch ermittelt werden muss, weil die wechselnden Jahreszeiten das Ganze oft sehr maßgebend beeinflussen, um so besser und hochwertiger ist das fertige Gemisch.

Ist dies alles geschehen, dann wird das Gefäß licht- und luftdicht verschlossen. Nun wird abwechselnd bald von oben ein Schuss Kohlensäure, bald von unten ein Schuss Luft oder Sauerstoffgas so zugeführt, dass keinerlei Druck im Inneren entsteht. Das von oben eingeführt ,C'-Säuregas erniedrigt seine Temperatur und wird ruckartig vom sich abkühlenden Wasser absorbiert. Hat das Wasser sozusagen dieses ionisierte Gasgemisch eingeatmet, dann wird ein Stoß Sauerstoff zugeführt, der sich aber nur im Wasser verteilen darf und sich an der oberen Fläche des Wassers konzentriert, so dass ein schichtweise nach oben zu sich verdichtendes Raumgefüge entsteht, durch das die von oben kommenden Kohlenstoffgase diffundieren



müssen. Ist der Vorgang richtig, dann entsteht oberhalb des Wassers ein äußerst starkes Vakuum, das das nachfolgende Kohlensäuregas noch mehr zerstäubt und abkühlt, wodurch die notwendige Steigerung einerseits und die Polarität andererseits zwischen Gas und Wasser ausgelöst wird.

Mit dieser wechselseitigen Steigerung beginnen die eingeführten Stoffe zu zerfallen, wobei sich die Temperatur des Wassers langsam auf 4° C erniedrigt. Dieser Temperaturstand muss durch wechselseitige Zufuhr von Gasen gehalten werden, wobei sich ein leichtes Schwanken am Manometer zeigt, ein Zeichen, dass das Wasser regelrecht zu atmen und zu pulsieren beginnt. Tritt Überdruck auf, so ist dies ein Zeichen überhandnehmender Wärmeentwicklung und tritt Unterdruck auf, so ist dies ein Zeichen einer starken Steigerung der Kohlenstoffgase und hier beginnt die Gefahr einer Explosion, die vermieden werden kann, wenn die Temperaturlage bei 4° C gehalten wird, was ohne weiteres durch die mehr oder minder starke Dosierung des Sauerstoffstromes geregelt werden kann. Zutaten von ganz geringen Mengen Öl oder sonstigen Fettstoffen erhöhen die Wertigkeit des Gemisches aber auch die Gefahr der Explosion. -Aus diesem Grunde ist es für den Anfang nicht ratsam, derartige Stoffe zuzufügen.

Zeigen sich keinerlei Reaktionen mehr und haben sich alle Zutaten vollständig gelöst, so ist es angebracht, das Gemisch etwa 2 Stunden ruhig stehen zu lassen, wobei immer die Temperatur von 4° C eingehalten werden muss, was am einfachsten in einem Kellerraum geschieht, der diese Temperatur hat. Wo gute Keller zur Verfügung stehen, kann das ganze erleichtert werden, weil der vorgeschilderte Prozess durch einige Gegenstöße von ‚O‘ und ‚CO<sub>2</sub>‘ nur angefacht zu werden braucht und das Ganze dann einem Gärungsprozess überlassen werden kann, wie wir ihn bei der Wein- oder Mostbereitung zur Genüge kennen. In diesem Falle lohnt sich aber ein gut isoliertes Mischgerät, das auf der einen Seite einen Zink –oder Silberlöffel und auf der Gegenseite einen Kupferlöffel angebracht hat, im Anfang des Prozesses leicht umrührend zu bewegen. Die Abdichtung nach außen kann durch eine Quecksilberdichtung oder durch ein eingeschobenes Zwischenrohr geschehen. Die eingebaute Kohlensäure muss über 90 % haben und es müssen im Fertiggemisch ähnliche Verhältnisse bestehen, wie wir sie in allen Wasserarten finden, die aus guten Hochquellen entspringen, nur dass es sich hier um wesentlich andere Lösungsprodukte handelt, als wir sie im Quellwasser finden. Dem Prinzip nach besteht aber da wie dort kein Unterschied.

Hierbei gilt, dass Stoffe, die unter Lichteinflüssen entstanden sind, bei Lichtabschluß und Temperaturniedrigung zerfallen oder umgekehrt. Durch diesen Wechselzerfall ergeben sich bei gegensinnigen Einflüssen Wechselbildungen und dieses Kommen und Vergehen wird hier künstlich ausgelöst und wechselseitig so gesteigert, bis es zu einer vollständigen Lösung und schließlich zu der Synthese kommt, die wir beabsichtigt haben. Das einer Nachreaktion unterzogene Fertiggemisch hat bei Erwärmung einen leichten Petroleumgeruch, brennt aber nicht. Wird aber dieses Gemisch in einer Düse zerstäubt und durch den niedergehenden Kolben nur leicht zusammengedrückt, dann ergibt sich eine Explosion und damit haben wir erreicht, was wir wollen, nämlich ein Sprengwassergemisch, das ein ausgesprochener Sicherheitsstoff ist, in der Kolbenmaschine aber einen höheren Bewegungseffekt erzeugt als die aus Erdölen gewonnenen Destillationsprodukte, ‚Benzin‘ genannt. Eine elektromagnetische Zündung wird überflüssig und wir haben auf diese Art und Weise einen Stoff, der in Dieselmotoren verwendet werden kann.

Für Großbetriebe wird dieses Gemisch am besten in speziellen Rohren hergestellt, die das Meerwasser auf seinem Weg abkühlen und biodynamisch bewegen. Auf diese Art können beliebige Mengen sozusagen im Fließverfahren hergestellt werden. Da man in diesen Rohren beliebige landwirtschaftliche oder forstwirtschaftliche Abfallstoffe zerlegen kann, ist dieses Verfahren wohl das Einfachste und Beste, weil hierbei keinerlei Arbeit angewendet zu werden braucht, sondern nur vorgegärte Abfallstoffe in Meerwasser oder gesalzenem Süßwasser einem vollständigen Gärungsprozess während der sich abkühlenden Fließbewegung unterzogen werden müssen.

Zutaten von Rübenschnitzeln, Obstabfälle, Zitronenschalen etc. steigern die Wertigkeit des Gemisches, weil es sich hier um einen ganz simplen Naturvorgang handelt, der dem Wesen nach immer dasselbe ist, nämlich dass alles, was einmal gewachsen ist, lebt und sich bewegt, pulsiert, gärt und sich um- und aufbaut, wenn nur das Ding morphologisch bewegt und damit dem Anomalie- oder Lebenspunkt angenähert wird. Jedes Gas kühlt sich pro Grad C Temperatursenkung auf Kosten seines Volumens ab und schließlich erreicht man auf diese höchst einfache Art und Weise das Entstehungsvolumen oder die 4. Raumdimension oder den Zustand der Energie. - Hierbei gilt, dass man zwar das Raumgefüge und das Volumengefüge wohl zu unterscheiden hat, also weder Gestaltungsgebilde, noch Entstehungsgebilde auftreten

dürfen, wenn man in irgendeiner Flüssigkeit positive oder negative Energiesteigerungen sozusagen akkumulieren will. Dies geschieht beim Anomalie- oder Neutralitätspunkt, bei dem sich Raum und Volumen entstalten und daher als Energie unräumig erscheinen.

## **10 Schlussbetrachtungen (Notizen vom April 1941)**

In der Natur gibt es nur Formen und Düsen. Daraus ergeben sich alle Gestaltungsformen oder Entstehungsformen, wenn man Düse und Gefäß in verkehrt symmetrischer Anordnung organisiert und darin die wechselseitigen Gasstoffe richtig dosiert, Druck und Zug und, was die Hauptsache ist, das Temperaturgefälle sinnrichtig organisiert, wodurch es im Schnittpunkt zum Freiwerden der gewünschten Energie kommt, die man zu akkumulieren vermag, wenn sich das Ding während seiner Bewegung abkühlt und dadurch homogen gestaltet. Auf diese Art und Weise gelingt es selbstverständlich auch, gewöhnliche Luft in animalische Elektrizitätsstoffe zu zerlegen, oder ein künstliches Gewitter zu erzeugen, dessen Umbaustoffe sich in Metalleiter entladen, wodurch ein physikalisches Vakuum und damit im Rohr ein Gewitter erzeugt werden kann, das der Wucht eines Zyklons nicht nachsteht.

Ist es bei der künstlichen Benzinbereitung noch notwendig, geringe Mengen von Erdstoffen zu verwenden, so erübrigt sich bei der sogenannten Luftturbine überhaupt jeder Betriebsstoff und damit ergibt sich die Beendigung der Krise, die eintreten musste, wenn der naturfremde Mensch Stoffe in seinen Maschinen verbrennt, die von Natur zum Aufbau der Nahrungsmittel bestimmt sind.

Das als merkwürdig betrachtete Verhalten der Flüssigkeiten unter dem Einfluss von Licht, ist der ganz natürliche Dauerzustand des ewigen Kommens und Gehens, der Aufbau vom Kleinen ins Große und umgekehrt, dessen notwendige Harmonie uns Goethe so schön erklärte, da0 wir faktisch nur seine Werke gelesen haben, um den Dauerausgleich zu schaffen, den alle Moleküle notwendig haben, um in einem Zustand einer gesitteten Ordnung zu leben. Raum und Volumen sind verkehrtsinnige Gegensätze, die sich gegenseitig verzehren oder beleben, je nachdem man das Eine durch das Andere verbrennt oder durch die gegenseitige Steigerung und Polarisierung in und an sich veredelt. Die heutige Technik hat irrtümlicherweise den ersteren der Vorgänge gewählt und es ist daher kein Wunder, wenn es an allen Ecken und Enden den Krebsgang geht.

Goethe sagt: "Die Triebräder der Natur sind die Polarität und die Steigerung und wer genügend zu lösen versteht, auch genugsam zu binden vermag." Was im Lichte geboren, zerfällt in der Kühle des Bodens, steigt auf und kommt als Strahl wieder, um das zu beleben, was an der Grenze zwischen Raum und Volumen zu neuem Leben bereit steht. Jedes Blatt ist ein animalischer Elektromagnet von einlinearer Gestaltung, der zieht und strahlt, je nachdem ihn die Sonne bestrahlt oder die Kühle umschmeichelt. Dieses große Wechselgesetz finden wir auch im Wasser, das in sich ständig seinen Raum und sein Volumen verändert. Den Raum gestaltet das Licht und die Wärme. Das Volumen ist ein Produkt von Dunkel und Kühle. Verstehen wir das gegensätzliche Verhältnis zwischen Raum und Volumen zu dosieren und in sich zu organisieren, dann wird die Substanz Wasser ‚Der Raum‘ und das gestaltlose Volumen seine Erfüllung, die sich bei Wärmedruck blitzschnell verwandelt und dadurch die Bewegung gestaltet, um den darüber liegenden Zwischenraum zu erfüllen.

Verkehrt aber der naturfremde Mensch diesen sinnvollen Vorgang und verbrennt er gar die Stoffe, die das Leben bedingen, dann darf er sich auch nicht mehr wundern, wenn die Sonne dasjenige verbrennt, was ihr als Zwischenraum und dem Menschen als Lebensunterhalt dient. Das Leben spielt sich in 3 Sphären ab:

1. In der Kohlensphäre
2. In der Atmosphäre
3. In der Stratosphäre

Die Verbindung zwischen diesen Sphären wird durch das Wasser hergestellt. Andererseits bilden die verschiedenen Aggregatzustände des Wassers die Brücken für den Auf- und Umbau, der vom Wasser geführten Grundstoffe, die von der Stratosphäre in das Innere der Erde und umgekehrt vom Erdinnern in die Stratosphäre gelangen. Der rein mechanische Kreislauf der Körperform Wasser ist dem sogenannten Energiekreislauf entgegengerichtet. Dem Aufsteigen der ‚C‘ Stoffe mit dem Träger Wasser steht das Absinken des Sauerstoffes gegenüber. Im Schnittpunkt der Wege dieser zueinander entgegengesetzt gerichteten Strömungen wird Energie frei. Die Energieausgleichsvorgänge können in Folge der ständigen Veränderung der Tag- und Nachtdauer zu keiner Ruhe kommen, so dass es ständig zu Verschiebungen der einzelnen mikroklimatischen Verhältnisse und dadurch wieder zu Verschiebungen der Quantität und Qualität der Grundstoffe kommen muss.

Folge der ständigen Wechselwirkungen ist einerseits der Umbau der in den einzelnen Zonen befindlichen Wasserarten, andererseits der ständige Umbau der Vegetationsformen, in denen

das Wasser, durch dieses innere Kräftespiel ununterbrochen bewegt, seinen Weg zieht. Dem inneren Kräfteausgleich steht nun die Wirkung des Wassergewichtes gegenüber. Durch den Wechsel in der Größe der Kraftkomponenten muss es zum steten Steigen und Fallen der Wasserteilchen, zum sogenannten Pulsieren des Wassers kommen. Jede Neubildung und jeder Aufbau leitet sich aus kleinsten Anfängen her. Eine Weiterentwicklung in den ersten Stadien vermag sich nur im Wege eines sich richtig abspielenden Kreislaufs im Innern der Erde zu vollziehen. Jede höhere Vegetationsform baut sich gesetzmäßig aus der ihr vorangegangenen niederen Vegetation auf. Der Träger der Stoffe und Vermittler der Lebensvorgänge in der sogenannten Wurzelzone ist das Grundwasser. Dieses erhält den Impuls zu seiner Bewegung durch den Temperaturabfall, der seinerseits wieder durch die inneren Stoffwechselfvorgänge der hierfür ausschlaggebenden Grundstoffgruppen verursacht wird.

Der Impuls der Bewegung des Wassers ist daher ein Produkt der Ausgleichsvorgänge zwischen den im Wasser enthaltenen Gegensätzen, die im Wasser selbst den entsprechenden Widerstand finden. Durch diesen Widerstand zwischen Kohlenstoff- und Sauerstoff-Ausgleichsvorgängen entstehen wieder Temperaturschwankungen und damit der Impuls zur Bewegung, die Pulsation des Wassers, das auf diesem Wege bald Salze löst, bald Salze ablagert, transportiert und Energien bildet und umwandelt. Der Sinn und Zweck dieser ewigen Umwandlungsvorgänge ist der Aufbau und die Erhaltung der verschiedenen Vegetations- und Körperformen, die ihrerseits wieder die Brücken für den Aufbau und die Erhaltung der Energien darstellen. Die zwischen Innen- und Umgebungstemperatur ständig bestehenden Spannungsunterschiede sind nichts anderes als Kraftformen, die den Kreislauf des Wassers schließen und zugleich wieder neu anfachen. Die Entwicklungsformen sind also

1. materieller und
2. immaterieller Natur.

Stein, Pflanze, Tier, Mensch, Planet und Sonne sind Organismen, die Körper und Seele haben. Jeder Licht- und Wärmestrahle bedarf einer Körperform in der er sich bilden, respektive organisieren kann. Jeder Körper braucht eine innere Energie, die ihn auf oder umbaut. Zerfällt ein Körper, so werden auch wieder jene Kräfte frei, die ihn gebildet haben. Sie gehen nie verloren. Verlieren sie mit dem verfallenden Körper ihre Heimat, so nimmt sie willig das in, auf und über der Erde ewig kreisende Wasser auf und führt sie wieder zu einem neuen Leben. Wohin wir also blicken, ist das Leben, ewiger Auf- und Umbau. Schauen wir ins

scheinbar Leere, so blickt uns ein Meer seelischen Lebens, vergangener und kommender Generationen entgegen. Jeder materiellen Vegetationsform steht immer eine immaterielle Form, das Licht, die Wärme, die Strahlung gegenüber.

Jede Änderung der Sphäre verändert äußere und innere Gesamtverhältnisse, ändert das Gewicht und die innere Strahlungsintensität des Wassers und damit die Bewegungsrichtung des Trägers des Lebens. Störungen der inneren und äußeren Gesetzmäßigkeiten führen zu einer Störung der Bildung des gesamten Lebensaufbaues.

Das Schwinden des Wassers respektive seine substantielle Umwandlung ist ein sehr ernstes Warnungszeichen, weil sich mit der inneren Zusammensetzung auch der Charakter des Wassers und damit der Charakter aller Lebensformen, einschließlich der Menschen, ändert. Der qualitative Rückgang unserer Vegetation, voran der qualitative Verfall der höchsten Pflanzenorganisation, des Waldes, der psychische und moralische Verfall der Menschheit, ist nur eine folgerichtige Erscheinung der Störung der physikalischen Zusammensetzung des Wassers und eine Störung der Geosphäre, hervorgerufen durch die Wühlarbeit des Menschen im Organismus ‚Erde‘. Was wir jetzt erleben ist keine Krise, sondern das Absterben des Ganzen, d.h. der durch die Störung des Wasserhaushaltes in der Natur einsetzende qualitative körperliche Verfall sämtlicher Organismen.

Gleichen Schrittes damit geht der moralische, seelische und geistige Zusammenbruch der Menschheit, der schon so weit ist, dass die Menschen trotz aller Warnungszeichen den Ernst der Situation noch immer nicht erkennen und ärger als die Tiere ihre letzte Rettung in der Dezimierung der Menschenmassen mit der Waffe sehen, die unsere Priester samt den Fahnen, unter denen unsere Kinder verbluten sollen, sogar noch segnen.

Die Entscheidung, ob wir diesen letzten Weg gehen oder uns in der letzten Stunde vor der eigenen Selbstzerfleischung bewahren können, liegt nur bei uns selbst, beziehungsweise bei den Männern der Wissenschaft und des Staates, die eine geradezu fürchterliche Verantwortung auf sich nehmen, wenn sie aus eigennützigen Interessen, ohne den Ernst der Situation zu berücksichtigen und ohne wirkliche Hilfe bringen zu können, weiter auf ihrem Standpunkt verharren.

**Fakten aus dem Leben Viktor Schaubergers:**

Viktor Schauberger (30.06.1885 - 20.09.1958) war Förster wie seine Vorfahren. Die Beobachtung der Edelforellen im reißenden Bergwasser brachte ihn auf die Idee der Konstruktion einer neuartigen Holzschwemmanlage. Als Revierförster des Fürsten von Schaumburg-Lippe baute er seine erste Anlage, in der Hölzer transportiert wurden, die im frisch geschlagenen Zustand schwerer als Wasser sind. Er wurde dadurch über die Grenzen Österreichs hinaus bekannt. Nach einem kurzen Staatsdienst, der sich daraus ergab, widmete er sich überwiegend der Erforschung der chemo-physikalischen Grundlagen des Lebens.

Außer Forschungsarbeiten in eigenen Labors sind zu nennen:

- 1937: Forschungsarbeiten bei Siemens in Nürnberg zum Thema: Natur-Energiekonzept.
- 1941: Versuchsreihen bei Messerschmidt in Augsburg und in einer Fabrik im Sudetengau.
- 1943: Zusammenarbeit mit einem Expertenteam, das sich aus Wissenschaftlern, Technikern und Konstrukteuren aus dem Konzentrationslager Mauthausen rekrutiert, in der SS-Ingenieurschule Wien, Schloß Schönbrunn.
- 1951: Beauftragung des Instituts für Gesundheitstechnik an der TH Stuttgart zu Untersuchungen an geraden und gewendelten Drallrohren.

# Messung verschiedener physikalischer Größen am hyperbolischen Schauberger-Trichter

B. Kuth, J. Schauberger, P. Winkels

Institut für Gravitationsforschung (IGF), Am Heerbach 5, 63857 Waldaschaff

10. Januar 2002

## 1 Zusammenfassung

Vom 16.11. bis 18.11.2001 wurden im Labor der Pythagoras-Kepler-Schule (abgekürzt: PKS) in Bad Ischl Messungen an dem hyperbolischen Schauberger-Trichter von Mitarbeitern des *Instituts für Gravitationsforschung* und Jörg Schauberger (als Vertreter der PKS) durchgeführt.

Motiviert wurden die Messungen durch Berichte von anomalen physikalischen Phänomenen in Verbindung mit Wirbeln, wie sie beispielsweise in [1] und [2] zu finden sind. Insbesondere wurde berichtet, dass bei dem Betrieb bestimmter Maschinen, die von Viktor Schauberger entworfen und konstruiert worden sind, z. B. bei der Repulsine und beim Heimkraftwerk, Levitationskräfte aufgetreten sind. Wir wollten im Rahmen unserer Messungen untersuchen, ob auch an dem relativ einfachen Wirbelphänomen des hyperbolischen Schauberger-Wirbels anomale physikalische Effekte beobachtbar sind, insbesondere, ob eine Veränderung der Gewichtskraft von Probekörpern festgestellt werden kann.

Interessante und nicht ohne weiteres erklärbare physikalischen Effekte wurden bei bestimmten Temperaturmessungen (siehe 2.1) und bei der Messung der elektrischen Feldkomponente des elektromagnetischen Feldes (siehe 2.2) beobachtet. Die Messungen, die darüber hinaus noch durchgeführt wurden, insbesondere die Gewichtskraftmessungen zeigten keine ungewöhnlichen physikalischen Effekte.

Die Ergebnisse unserer Messungen möchten wir mit diesem Bericht zur Diskussion stellen. Wir haben bisher insbesondere für das anomale Verhalten des elektromagnetischen Feldes keine Erklärung gefunden, gehen aber nicht unbedingt davon aus, dass es keine Erklärung gibt. Wir sind gespannt, ob durch die Diskussion der Ergebnisse eine Erklärung im Rahmen der akzeptierten Physik gefunden werden kann.

## 2 Beschreibung der durchgeführten Messungen

Die in diesem Bericht beschriebenen Messungen wurden an Wirbeln, die in einen sog. hyperbolischen Schauberger-Trichter erzeugt wurden, durchgeführt. In Abbildung 1 ist der hyperbolische Trichter, an dem die Messungen durchgeführt wurden, und die dazugehörige Experimentieranordnung zu sehen.

Im unteren Teil der Konstruktion, in die der Trichter eingebaut ist, befindet sich ein Auffanggefäß. In diesem Gefäß befindet sich eine Tauchpumpe, die als Umwälzpumpe arbeitet und Wasser in den oberen Vorratszylinder pumpt.

Die Stromversorgung der gesamten Anlage kann über schaltbare Sicherungen, die von hinten bedient werden und die sich von hinten gesehen oben rechts in der Konstruktion befinden, an- und abgeschaltet werden. Mit dem im Bild sichtbaren Schalter wird eine Zeitschaltuhr eingeschaltet, über die die Pumpe betrieben wird. Während den Messungen war die Einschaltphase der Zeitschaltuhr auf mehr als eine Stunde eingestellt.





Abbildung 1: hyperbolischer Trichter,  
Experimentieranordnung

Gemessen wurden folgende Größen am hyperbolischen Wirbel:

1. Temperaturen an verschiedenen Positionen
2. Elektromagnetische Feldstärke
3. Gewichtskraft eines Probekörpers
4. Magnetostatische Feldstärke
5. Elektrostatische Feldstärke

Auf die Anordnung der Messgeräte und die Auswertung der Messergebnisse wird in den folgenden Unterkapiteln detailliert eingegangen.

## 2.1 Temperaturmessungen

Nach Aussagen von Viktor Schauburger kommt es bei Wirbelphänomenen zu ungewöhnlichen Temperaturverläufen. Hinter einem Wirbel soll die Temperatur beispielsweise  $0,1^{\circ}\text{C}$  bis  $0,2^{\circ}\text{C}$  *geringer* sein als im Bereich vor dem Wirbel. Diese Aussagen wollten wir im PKS-Labor anhand des hyperbolischen Schauburger-Wirbels überprüfen.

Für die Temperaturmessungen standen ein elektronisches Thermometer mit einer Genauigkeit von  $\pm 0,2^{\circ}\text{C}$ , drei elektronische Thermometer mit einer Genauigkeit von  $\pm 0,15^{\circ}\text{C}$  und zwei Quecksilberthermometer mit einer Genauigkeit von  $\pm 0,05^{\circ}\text{C}$  zur Verfügung. Die beiden Quecksilberthermometer haben einen konstanten Gangunterschied von  $0,1^{\circ}\text{C}$ . Dieser Gangunterschied ist bei den in diesem Bericht aufgeführten Messungen bereits berücksichtigt worden.

Es wurden auf zwei unterschiedliche Arten Temperaturmessungen durchgeführt, auf die in den folgenden beiden Unterkapiteln eingegangen wird.

### 2.1.1 Messung am Einfluss und Ausfluss des hyperbolischen Trichters

Mit Hilfe der beiden Quecksilberthermometer wurden Temperaturmessungen am Einfluss und Ausfluss des hyperbolischen Trichters durchgeführt. Die Ergebnisse können Tabelle 1 und Abbildung 2 entnommen werden. Sowohl in Tabelle 1 als auch in Abbildung 2 wird nur der Zeitbereich, in dem die Anlage betrieben wurde, aufgeführt.

Im Rahmen der Messgenauigkeit konnte über die Betriebszeit des Wirbels kein Temperaturunterschied zwischen ein- und ausfließendem Wasser festgestellt werden. Die Temperatur am Ein- und Auslauf stieg parallel an aufgrund der Abwärme der Umwälzpumpe. Der Temperaturwert von  $12,5^{\circ}\text{C}$  am Einlauf nach 10 Min. muss als Messfehler interpretiert werden. Die Raumtemperatur hat sich während der gesamten Messung kaum verändert.

Zeit	Anmerkungen	Thermometer Einlauf	Thermometer Auslauf	el. Thermometer Außentemperatur
min		°C	°C	°C
kein Wert	unmittelbar vor Einschaltung	14,40	11,90	14,10
0	eingeschaltet	11,50	11,40	14,10
1		11,50	11,50	14,10
2		11,60	11,60	14,00
3		11,70	11,70	14,00
4		11,80	11,70	14,00
5	Ventil etwas geöffnet	11,80	11,80	14,00
6		11,90	11,90	14,00
7		12,00	11,90	13,90
8		12,00	12,00	14,00
9	Ventil etwas geschlossen	12,10	12,05	14,00
10		12,50	12,10	14,10
11		12,20	12,15	14,10
12	Abschaltung der Anlage	12,30	12,25	14,10

Tabelle 1: Ergebnis der Temperaturmessung am Ein- und Auslauf des hyperbolischen Trichters

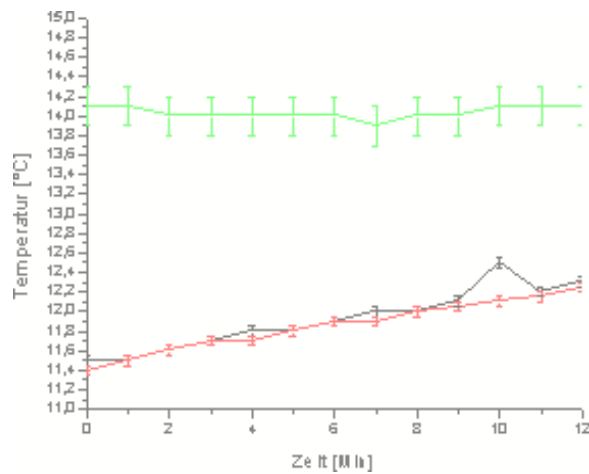


Abbildung 2: Temperatur am Ein- und Auslauf und Raumlufttemperatur gegen Zeit

## 1.1.2 Temperaturmessung innerhalb des Wirbels

In einer weiteren Messung wurden die Temperaturdifferenzen in der äußeren Wirbelschicht gemessen. Die ungefähre Position der Messpunkte kann Abbildung 3 entnommen werden. Eines der elektronischen Thermometer mit einer Genauigkeit von  $\pm 0,15^\circ\text{C}$  wurde am Einlauf befestigt. Die beiden Quecksilberthermometer wurden mittels einer Halteanordnung in eine Position zueinander gebracht, in der die Quecksilbervorratsbehälter beider Thermometer im oberen Bereich des Wirbels gerade in die oberste Wirbelschicht eintauchen.

Die roten Punkte in Abbildung 3 entsprechen der ersten Position der beiden Thermometer, die blauen Punkte entsprechen der zweiten Position der beiden Thermometer, nachdem die Halteanordnung abgesenkt wurde.



Abbildung 3: Position der Messpunkte zur Messung der Temperaturdifferenzen innerhalb des Wirbels

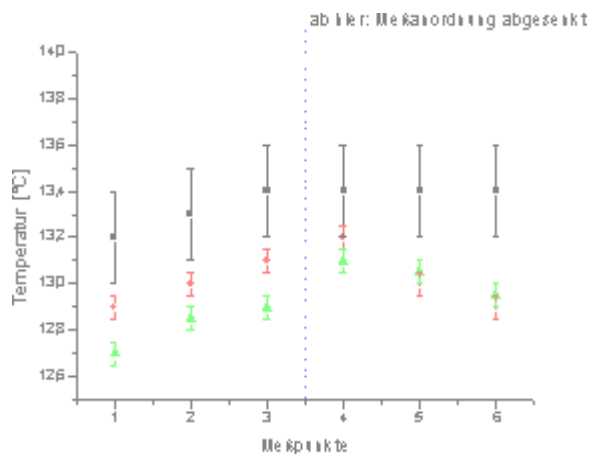


Abbildung 4: Ergebnisse der Temperaturmessungen innerhalb des Wirbels (schwarz: Temperatur am Einlauf, rot: Temperatur oberer Messpunkt, grün: Temperatur unterer Messpunkt)

Die Ergebnisse der Temperaturmessung in der obersten Wirbelschicht können Abbildung 4 entnommen werden. Bei der Einschätzung der Ergebnisse müssen zwei Punkte berücksichtigt werden:

>Die Ablesung der Temperaturen wurde dadurch erschwert, dass die Skala der Thermometer durch das Plexiglas des hyperbolischen Trichters abgelesen werden musste.

>Die Halterung der beiden Quecksilberthermometer musste per Hand so positioniert werden, dass die Quecksilberbehälter beider Thermometer in die oberste Wirbelschicht eintauchen. Eine starre Befestigung war nicht möglich, da die Wirbelausbildung nicht identisch erfolgte.

Die Fehler, die durch die beiden gerade genannten Punkte hinzukommen, lassen sich nicht quantifizieren. Daher wurde in Abbildung 4 nur der Gerätefehler berücksichtigt.

Das Ergebnis der ersten drei Messungen lässt den vorsichtigen Schluss zu, dass es innerhalb der obersten Wirbelschicht über die Flussstrecke des Wassers zu einer leichten Abkühlung kommt und zwar um mindestens ca. 0,25°C und höchstens um ca. 0,5°C; das ist die Differenz während der ersten drei Messungen zwischen dem Temperaturwert am Einlauf und dem Temperaturwert am unteren Messpunkt.

Nach der Absenkung der Halteanordnung bleibt die Temperatur am Einlauf nahezu konstant, während sich die Temperaturen an den beiden Messpunkten im Wirbel zunehmend annähern. Bei diesen Messungen konnte im Rahmen der Gerätegenauigkeit innerhalb des Wirbels keine Temperaturunterschiede festgestellt werden.

Die Ergebnisse dieser Messungen sind unserer Einschätzung nach interessant genug, um weitere Messungen zu motivieren. Dabei sollte folgendes berücksichtigt werden:

- > Die Ausbildung des Wirbels sollte soweit stabilisiert werden, dass die Position der Halteanordnung der Thermometer weder zwischen zwei Zyklen noch innerhalb eines Zyklus verändert werden muss.
- > Die Messungen sollten mit hochpräzisen Thermoelementen erfolgen. Die Messdatenaufnahme sollte elektronisch erfolgen.
- > Die Temperaturmessungen sollte an möglichst vielen Punkten erfolgen.

## 1.2 Messung der elektromagnetischen Feldstärke

Über eventuelle Veränderungen des elektromagnetischen Feldes in Verbindung mit Wirbelbewegungen war uns bis zu den Messungen in Bad Ischl nichts bekannt. Da wir im Rahmen unserer Möglichkeiten möglichst vollständig die möglichen Veränderung physikalischer Größen in Verbindung mit dem hyperbolischen Schauberger-Wirbel messen wollten, haben wir ebenfalls mit Hilfe einer Maschek EMS-100-Sonde raumauflöst die elektrische und magnetische Komponente des elektromagnetischen Wechselfeldes im Bereich zwischen 5 Hz und 400 kHz beobachtet. Die verwendete Sonde besitzt in den verwendeten Messbereichen einen Gerätefehler von 5%. Über eine Infrarot-Lichtleiterverbindung war die Aufzeichnung der Messwerte mittels Laptop möglich. Diese Messungen haben unserer Ansicht nach die interessantesten Ergebnisse zu Tage gefördert. Sie werden im folgenden detailliert vorgestellt.

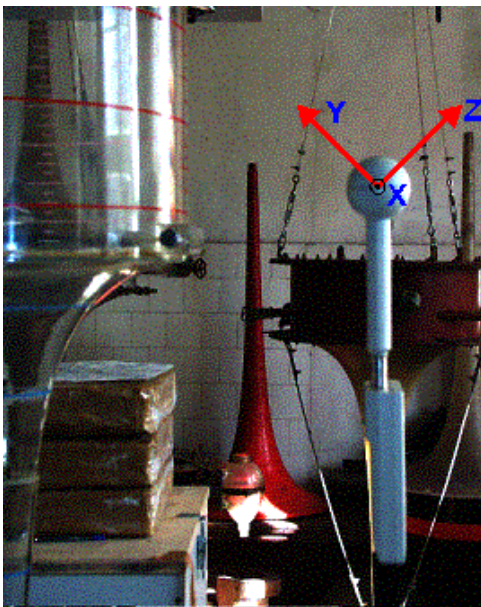


Abbildung 5: Position der ESM-100-Sonde seitlich, mit Angabe des Koordinatensystems



Abbildung 6: Position der ESM-100-Sonde frontal

Abbildung 5 und Abbildung 6 können die Position der ESM-100-Sonde während der Messung entnommen werden. Außerdem kann Abbildung 5 die Position der X, Y und Z-Achse der ESM-100-Sonde entnommen werden.

Im Anhang 1 befinden sich die Ergebnisse der Messungen in grafischer Darstellung. Zu der Darstellung ist folgendes anzumerken:

> Den Farben der Kurven sind folgende Achsen zugeordnet: schwarz: x-Achse;  
rot: y-Achse; grün: z-Achse.

> Auf der x-Achse ist standardmäßig ein Zeitraum von 6 Minuten und auf der y-Achse ein Messbereich von 0 bis 20 V/m abgetragen. In den Abbildungen, in denen diese Einteilung nicht zweckmäßig war, erfolgte die Skalierung in roter Farbe.

> Die verschiedenen Betriebsmodi der Anlage sind durch gepunktete, senkrechte Striche voneinander getrennt. Folgende Betriebsmodi wurden unterschieden:

“ *Anlage ein*: die Stromversorgung der Anlage wird eingeschaltet, die Umwälzpumpe wird aber noch nicht eingeschaltet, ein Wirbel wird noch nicht aufgebaut.

“ *Start*: die Umwälzpumpe wird gestartet; die Wirbelbildung erfolgt.

“ *Anlage aus*: die Stromversorgung der gesamten Anlage und damit auch die Umwälzpumpe wird ausgeschaltet, alternativ dazu:

“ *Anlage aus/ein*: die Stromversorgung der gesamten Anlage und damit auch die Umwälzpumpe wird ausgeschaltet. Die Anlagenstromversorgung wird sofort wieder eingeschaltet. Die Umwälzpumpe bleibt aber ausgeschaltet.

“ *Wasser aus oberen Zylinder*: das Wasser ist nach Abschaltung der Umwälzpumpe aus dem oberen Zylinder abgelaufen.

“ *Wasser aus Trichter*: das Wasser ist nach Abschaltung der Umwälzpumpe aus dem gesamten hyperbolischen Trichter abgelaufen.

Interessante und mehrmals in ähnlicher Weise aufgetretene Effekte wurden in zwei Betriebsphasen beobachtet, die in den folgenden Kapiteln detailliert beschrieben werden. In einem weiteren Kapitel werden die nicht reproduzierbaren beobachteten Anomalien, für die wir bisher ebenfalls noch keine Erklärung haben, beschrieben. Dann folgt noch ein Kapitel mit Zusammenfassung und Ausblick.

### **2.2.1 Phase zwischen Ausschalten der Umwälzpumpe und Wasser aus Trichter**

Die Phase beginnt mit dem Abschalten der Umwälzpumpe entweder durch das Abschalten der gesamten Anlage oder durch das Abschalten oder sofortige Wiedereinschalten der gesamten Anlage. Sie endet damit, dass das gesamte Wasser aus dem hyperbolischen Trichter abgelaufen ist. In dieser Phase existiert in dem Trichter ein ausgebildeter Wirbel, der aber zunehmend zusammenbricht, da die Umwälzpumpe ausgeschaltet ist und kein Wasser mehr nachgeliefert wird.

Bei den Messungen, dargestellt in den Abbildungen 12 bis 18 (aufgenommen am 17.11.2001, vormittags), und 26 bis 28 (aufgenommen am 18.11.2001 vormittags), ist ein starker Abfall der y- und z-Komponente des elektrischen Feldes zu beobachten, nachdem die Umwälzpumpe abgestellt wurde. Die Feldstärke bleibt während des gesamten Zusammenbruchs des Wirbels konstant, bis das Wasser vollständig aus dem hyperbolischen Trichter abgelaufen ist.

Aus den Messungen, dargestellt in den Abbildungen 27 bis 29, geht hervor, dass der Effekt den 50 Hz-Bereich des elektromagnetischen Feldes betrifft.

Dieser Effekt tritt nur in Verbindung mit einem Wirbel auf. Das geht aus der in Abbildung 30 dargestellten Messung hervor. Hier wurde das Wasser so in den Trichter geführt, dass kein Wirbel entstand.

### **2.2.2 Phase nach Ablauen des Wassers aus dem hyperbolischen Trichter**

Diese Phase beginnt, wenn das Wasser vollständig aus dem hyperbolischen Trichter abgelaufen ist. Die Umwälzpumpe ist abgeschaltet. Die Stromversorgung der Anlage ist abgeschaltet und war kurz abgeschaltet und wurde wieder eingeschaltet.

Auch hier liefern die im letzten Abschnitt schon aufgeführten Messungen, dargestellt in den Abbildungen 12 bis 18 (aufgenommen am 17.11.2001, vormittags), und 26 bis 28 (aufgenommen am 18.11.2001 vormittags), die deutlichsten Resultate. Bei allen diesen Messungen steigt die y-Komponente des elektrischen Feldes erst über Minuten wieder an. Die anderen Komponenten bleiben weitgehend konstant.

Bei den Messungen, dargestellt in den Abbildungen 19 bis 22 (17.11.2001, nachmittags) und 23 bis 25 (18.11.2001, vormittags) ist dieser Effekt auch zu beobachten. Er ist aber deutlich schwächer. Außerdem zeigt sich der Effekt nicht nur für die y-Komponente sondern auch für die z-Komponente.

Diesen Effekt finden wir erstaunlich: der Wirbel im hyperbolischen Trichter ist vollständig abgebaut, das Wasser im unteren Auffangbehälter ist zur Ruhe gekommen. Das elektrische Feld steigt aber nur langsam wieder an, ohne dass wir bisher einen beobachtbaren Prozess benennen können, der dafür verantwortlich ist.

Aus den Messungen, dargestellt in den Abbildungen 27 bis 29 geht hervor, dass auch dieser Effekt den 50 Hz-Bereich des elektromagnetischen Feldes betrifft.

### 2.2.3 Weitere Beobachtungen und Anomalien

Aus den Messungen, dargestellt in Abbildung 23 bis 26, geht hervor, dass der Effekt nicht auf den Betrieb der Messgeräte im Raum zurückgeht. Die Variation der Betriebszustände der Geräte hatte keinen Einfluss auf den Effekt.

Die Messung in Abbildung 22, die einen Zeitraum von 35 Minuten umfasst, zeigt ein Anstieg der y- und z-Komponente des elektrischen Feldes nach 12 Minuten wieder einen ebenfalls sehr langsamen Abfall. Auch diesen Verlauf können wir uns bisher nicht erklären. Es wurde allerdings auch nur einmal eine Messung über einen Zeitraum von 35 Minuten durchgeführt. Über das Langzeitverhalten des Effektes kann daher noch keine Aussage gemacht werden.

Der Verlauf des elektrischen Feldes zwischen dem Start und dem Ausschalten der Umwälzpumpe ist unregelmäßig.

### 2.2.4 Zusammenfassung und Ausblick

In zwei Betriebszuständen der Experimentieranlage konnten Effekte beobachtet werden, für die wir bisher im Rahmen der anerkannten Physik keine Erklärung gefunden haben.

Aus den Messungen ergibt sich die Vermutung, dass der Wirbel im hyperbolischen Trichter das elektromagnetische Streufeld im Raum, insbesondere das 50 Hz-Streufeld, das von der Stromversorgung der Experimentieranlage ausgeht, beeinflusst. Die Unterschiedlichkeit der Beobachtungen weist aber darauf hin, dass möglicherweise an den Effekten nicht nur das von der Experimentieranlage erzeugte Feld beteiligt ist. Vor allem die Veränderung der Messergebnisse am 18.11.2001 zwischen 10:38 und 10:57 brachte uns auf die Idee, dass eventuell das 50 Hz-Streufeld von elektrischen Geräten, die in der Wohnung über dem Labor betrieben werden, auch einen Einfluss auf die Messungen hat.

Falls aufgrund der vorliegenden Resultate tatsächlich keine Erklärung im Rahmen der anerkannten Physik gefunden werden kann, ist folgendes zu prüfen:

- > Zunächst muss wirklich ausgeschlossen werden, dass die Effekte nicht durch die Funktionsweise des Messgerätes, also der ESM-100-Sonde hervorgerufen werden. Die Demonstration der Abschirmung, dargestellt in Abbildung 18 zeigt allerdings, dass die Reaktionszeit der Sonde im Sekunden und nicht im Minutenbereich liegt. Ein einfacher Trägheitseffekt der Sonde kann also ausgeschlossen werden.
- > Es muss geprüft werden, ob die Effekte auch auftreten, wenn ein hyperbolischer Trichter aus einem anderen Material als Plexiglas verwendet wird. Als weiteres Material wäre beispielsweise Kupfer denkbar.
- > Es müssen Experimente in einer EMV-Kabine (Faradayschen Käfig mit hoher Dämpfung des elektromagnetischen Feldes) gemacht werden, um Störquellen aus der Umgebung auszuschließen.

- > Es müsste geklärt werden, wie eine definierte Strahlungsquelle des elektrischen Feldes beschaffen sein müsste und wie diese Strahlungsquelle bezogen auf den Wirbel zu positionieren ist, um die Effekte zu reproduzieren.

Wenn experimentell geklärt ist, dass die Effekte keine Messartefakte sind, nicht auf die Randbedingungen der Messung zurückgehen und wie die Effekte gesichert reproduziert werden können, dann können beispielsweise folgende Experimente angeschlossen werden:

- > Ermittlung des Frequenzbereichs, in dem die Effekte auftritt.
- > Ermittlung, wovon die Stärke der Effekte abhängt.
- > Durchführung ähnlicher Experimente mit komplexeren Wirbelstrukturen.

Weiterhin ist dann zu klären, wie der Effekt theoretisch zu erklären ist. Mit der gebotenen Vorsicht kann gesagt werden, dass ein noch unbekanntes Medium oder eine noch unbekanntes Feldeigenschaft durch den Wirbel zu einer verstärkten Absorption des elektrischen Feldes angeregt wird. Diese zusätzliche Absorptionsfähigkeit nimmt dann über Minuten hinweg wieder ab.

### 2.3 Messung der Gewichtskraft eines Probekörpers

Eine eventuelle Gewichtskraftveränderung eines Probekörpers wurde mit der Waage Kern KK 600-3 gemessen, die eine Genauigkeit von  $\pm 1,5$  mg besitzt. Der Probekörper, der in Abbildung 7 zu sehen ist, ist mit einem Nylonfaden an dem in Abbildung 8 gezeigten Balken befestigt. Ein Gegengewicht ist auf der anderen Seite des Balkens befestigt und befindet sich auf der Waage.

Das Ergebnis der Messung kann Tabelle 2 entnommen werden. Es ist keine signifikante Abhängigkeit der Messergebnisse vom der Entstehung des stabilen Betriebs oder des Abbaus des Wirbels zu erkennen. Auch bei folgenden Messungen wurde keine Abhängigkeit der Gewichtskraft von Betriebszustand des Wirbels festgestellt. Die Messwerte schwanken zwischen 2 mg und 4,5 mg. Diese Schwankungen sind auf Luftbewegungen innerhalb des Raumes und die Messgenauigkeit der Waage zurückzuführen.

Unsere Vermutung geht dahin, dass diese Wirbelform eventuell nicht komplex genug ist, um die von Viktor Schaubberger beobachteten Levitationskräfte zu erzeugen. Die Wasserführung innerhalb beispielsweise der Repulsine oder des Heimkraftwerks ist tatsächlich viele komplexer als in dem hyperbolischen Wirbeltrichter. Da zur Zeit an dem Nachbau einer Repulsine gearbeitet wird und das in der PKS noch vorhandene Modell eines Heimkraftwerks im Laufe des Frühjahres 2002 restauriert werden soll, ergeben sich eventuell Möglichkeiten, auch an diesen Maschinen Gewichtsmessungen vorzunehmen.

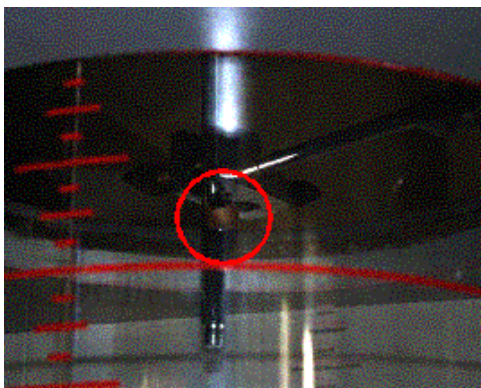


Abbildung 7: Position des Wägbalkens



Abbildung 8: Position des Probekörpers oberhalb des Wirbelmundes

Zeit	Anmerkungen	Waage
[min]		[mg]
kein Wert	unmittelbar vor Einschaltung	2,00
0	eingeschaltet	2,00
1		fehlt
2		2,00
3		3,00
4		2,00
5	Ventil etwas geöffnet	2,00
6		2,00
7		3,50
8		2,00
9	Ventil etwas geschlossen	3,00
10		3,00
11		4,50
12	Abschaltung der Anlage	4,00
1	5 Min nach Abschaltung	2,00
2		2,00
3		2,00
4		2,00
5		3,00
6		2,00
7		0,00
8		3,00
9		2,00
10		3,00
11		3,00
12		2,00

Tabelle 2: Messung der Gewichtskraft

## 2.4 Messung des magnetostatischen Feldes

Mit einem Dreikanal-Gausmeter 9950 der Fa. F.W. Bell und zwei zugehörigen Hall-Sonden wurde an zwei Stellen das magnetostatische Feld gemessen. Eine Hall-Sonde wurde im Bereich des linken Einflusses angebracht (siehe Abbildung 9), die zweite Hall-Sonde wurde oberhalb des Wirbelmundes angebracht (siehe Abbildung 10). Die Ergebnisse der Messung können Tabelle 3 entnommen werden. Auch hier zeigten sich keine Auffälligkeiten im Abhängigkeit vom Betriebszustand des Wirbels.

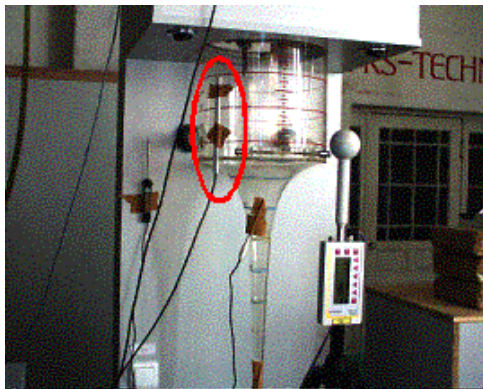


Abbildung 9: Hallsonde im Bereich des linken Einflusses

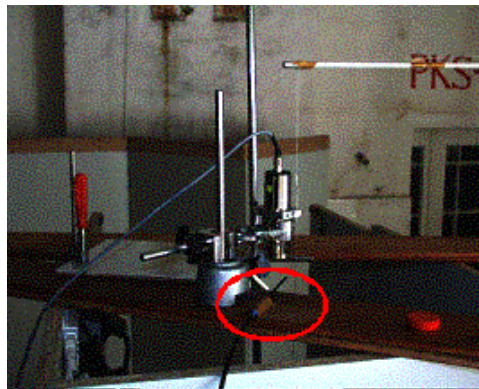


Abbildung 10: Hallsonde oberhalb des Wirbelmundes



Zeit	Anmerkungen	Hall-Sonde oberhalb Wirbelmund	Hall-Sonde am oberen Einlauf
min		uT	uT
kein Wert	unmittelbar vor Einschaltung	28,8	37,9
0	eingeschaltet	28,3	38,2
1		28,7	38,2
2		28,9	37,9
3		28,8	38,3
4		29,0	37,9
5	Ventil etwas geöffnet	28,9	38,0
6		28,9	37,9
7		28,9	37,9
8		28,8	38,0
9	Ventil etwas geschlossen	28,7	38,2
10		29,2	38,1
11		29,1	37,9
12	Abschaltung der Anlage	29,0	37,9
15	5 Min nach Abschaltung	29,1	38,0
2		28,7	38,1
3		28,6	38,3
4		29,0	37,9
5		28,8	37,9
6		28,9	37,9
7		29,0	38,0
8		29,0	38,0
9		29,0	38,0
10		28,9	38,1
11		29,0	38,1
12		29,2	38,1

Tabelle 3: Messergebnisse der Magnetostatikmessung mit zwei Hall-Sonden

## 2.5 Messung des elektrostatischen Feldes

Das elektrostatische Feld wurde oberhalb des Wirbelmundes mit der Sonde XX gemessen (siehe Abbildung 11). Auch hier ergaben sich keine signifikanten Zusammenhänge mit dem Betriebszustand des Wirbels.

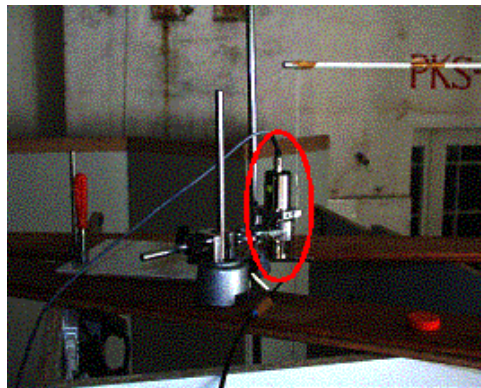


Abbildung 11: Sonde zur Messung elektrostatischen Feldes

## 3 Anhang 1

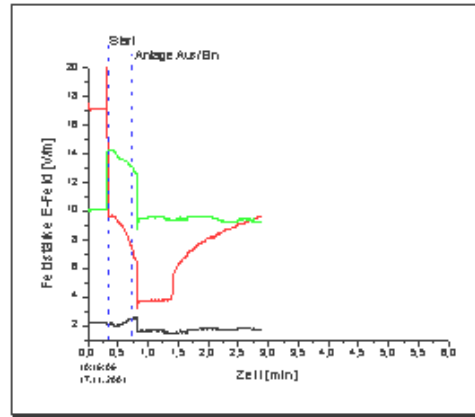
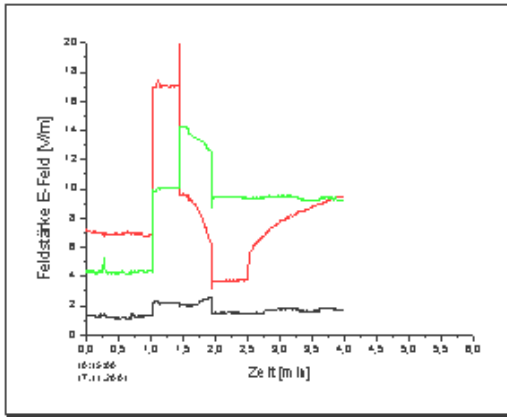


Abbildung 12: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen Abbildung 13: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen

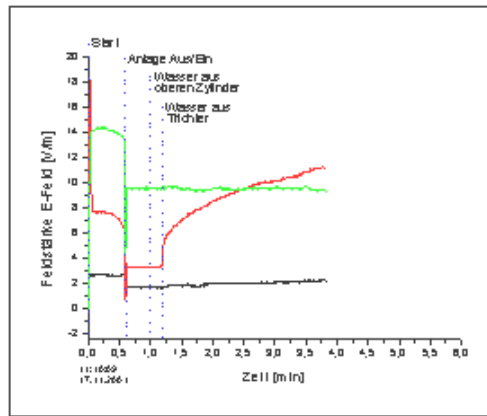
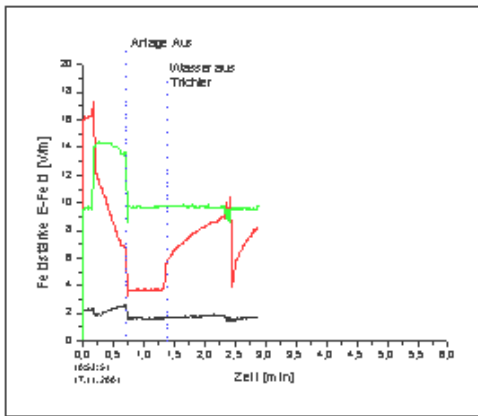


Abbildung 14: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen Abbildung 15: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen

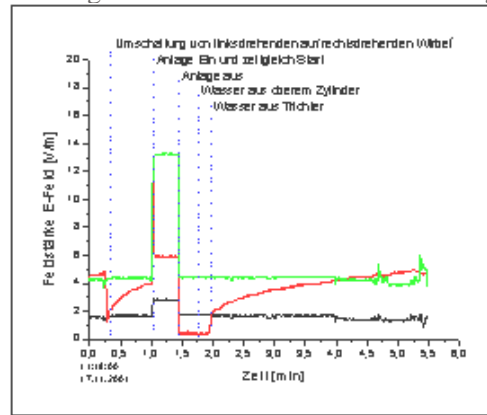
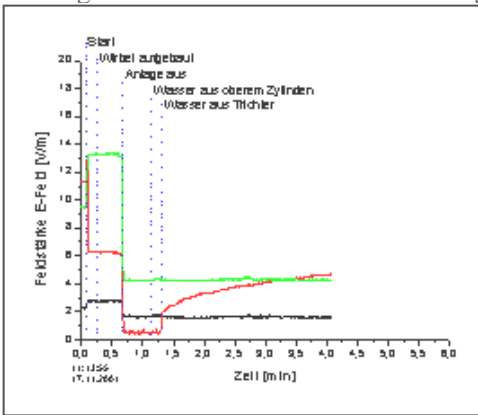


Abbildung 16: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen Abbildung 17: Veränderungen nach ca. 4,5 min. durch Positionswechsel der Personen im Labor

Anhang 1 (Fortsetzung)

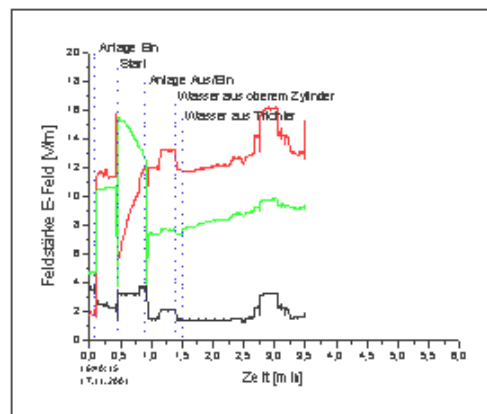
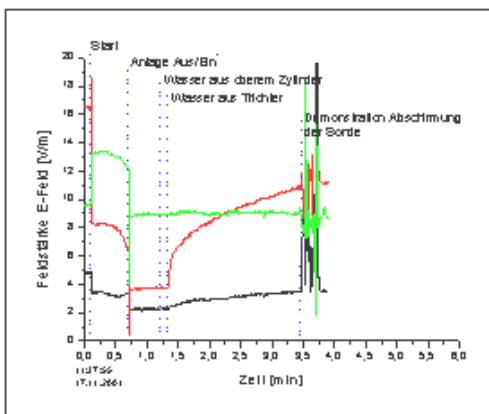


Abbildung18: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen Abbildung19: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen

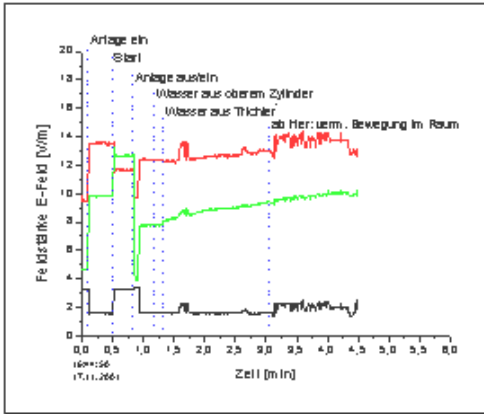


Abbildung20: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen

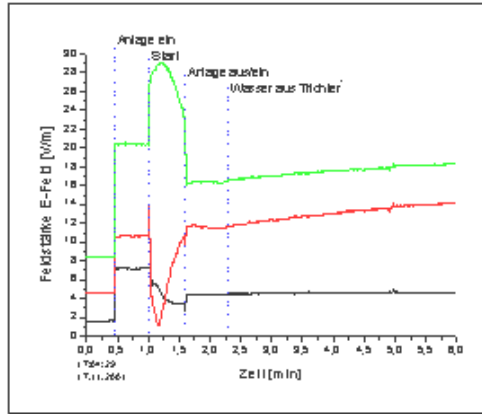


Abbildung21: Ausschnitt aus Messung in Abbildung 20

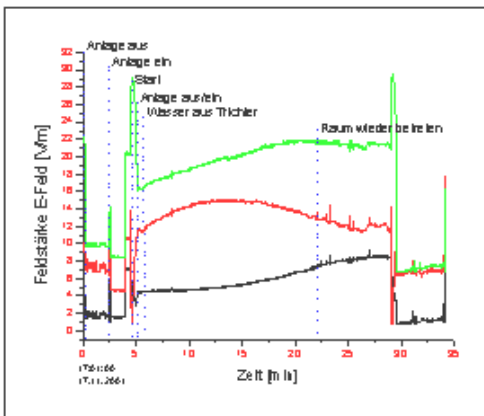


Abbildung22: keine zusätzlichen Anmerkungen

Anhang 1 (Fortsetzung)

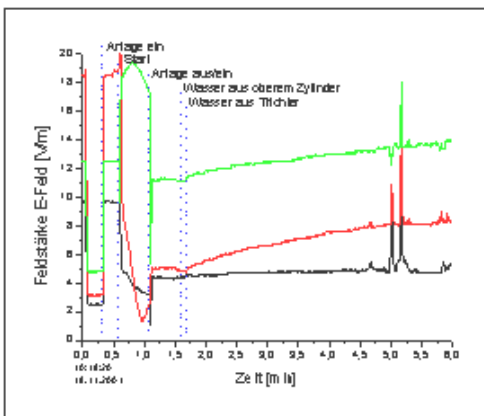


Abbildung23: alle Geräte ein,  
EMF-Antenne montiert

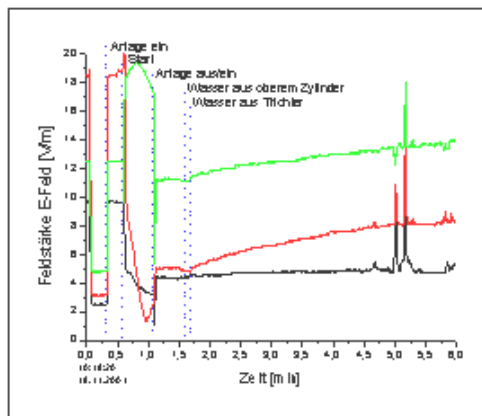


Abbildung24: alle Geräte ein,  
EMF-Antenne abmontiert

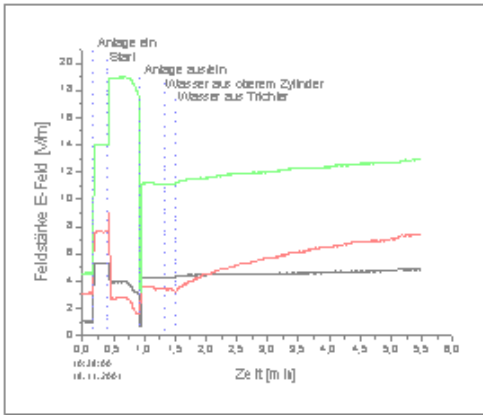


Abbildung 25: alle Geräte noch an Position, aber ausgeschaltet

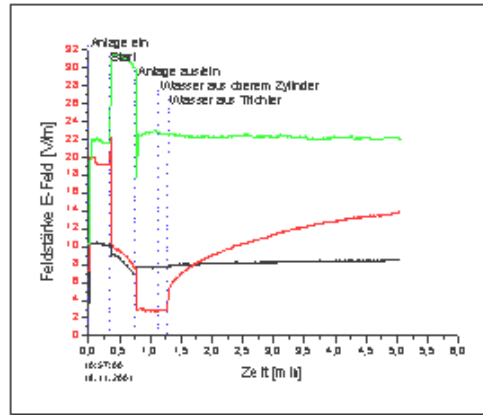


Abbildung 26: Spektrum-Analyse ein, sonst alle Geräte aus

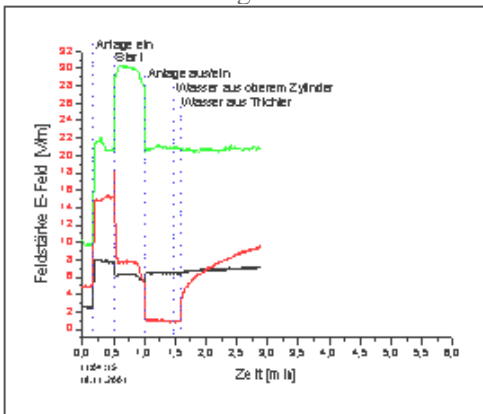


Abbildung 27: EMS-100-Filtereinstellung auf Low

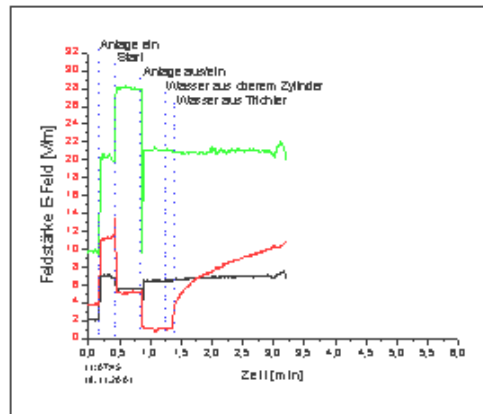


Abbildung 28: EMS-100-Filtereinstellung auf 50 Hz

#### Anhang 1 (Fortsetzung)

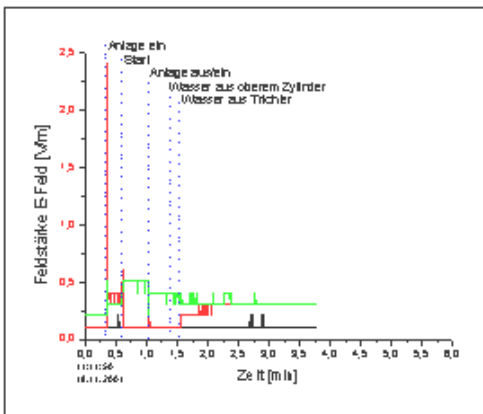


Abbildung 29: EMS-100-Filtereinstellung auf High

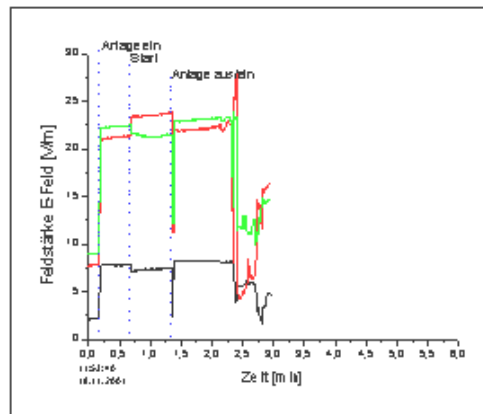


Abbildung 30: Wirbelbildung verhindert, nur Zirkulation im oberen Zylinder des hyperbolischen Trichters

## 4 Literatur

- [1] Olof Alexandersson, „Lebendes Wasser“, Ennsthaler Verlag, Steyr/Österreich, 1998, ISBN 3 85068 377 X
- [2] Callum Coats, „Naturenergien verstehen und nutzen“, Omega-Verlag, Düsseldorf, 1999, ISBN 3 930243 14 8
- [3] Claus Radlberger, „Der hyperbolische Kegel“, PKS Eigenverlag, Bad Ischl, 1999, ISBN 3 9500686 1 9

## Die Lebenskurve



### Viktor Schaubergers Entdeckung der Levitationskraft

Viktor Schaubberger gilt als einer der wichtigsten Wegbereiter der »freien Energie«. Hierbei handelt es sich um unbekannte Formen der Energiegewinnung, die anders als die herkömmlichen Methoden ohne teure, umweltbelastende Rohstoffe auskommen. Die freie Energie entspringt aus der »Lebenskurve«, der naturrichtigen Massenbewegung.

Ein Seher der Neuzeit, der intuitiv begabte Viktor Schaubberger (1885-1958), der in den österreichischen Hochwäldern als Förster arbeitete, wunderte sich bei seinen Naturbeobachtungen immer wieder über unerklärliche Phänomene wie die auf den höchsten Berggipfeln entspringenden Hochquellen oder die Standforellen in den Gebirgsbächen. Wie konnte das Wasser auf diese hohen Berge hinaufgelangen, um dann quicklebendig und quirlig aus einem Felsen zu quellen? Wie schafften es die Forellen, flußaufwärts über reißende Wasserstürze zu steigen und in diesen quasi schwerelos zu schweben?

Schaubberger, in einer Försterfamilie mitten in der Natur aufgewachsen, ließen diese Fragen nicht los. Seiner einzigartigen naturverbundener Intuition und seinem praktischen Verstand verdankte er schließlich die Entdeckung der Energie, die das Wasser mit Auftriebs- und Levitationskräften ausstattete, und er sah diese Energie überall in der Natur, in der Erde, in den Pflanzen und Tieren und in dem Organismus des Menschen. Es ist die Energie des Lebens: *die* Lebensenergie, die er in der Bewegung der Materie erkannte: in dem Schwingen der Flußläufe, in den zykliden Spiralraumkurven der Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft, in den Formen der Organismen.

Bedeutend für Schaubberger war die Bipolarität der Natur, die sich in den polaren Zug- und Druckkräften beobachten läßt. Die naturrichtige Bewegungsart für Aufbauprozesse beruht auf dem Vorherrschen des Zugprinzips. Wenn man die Naturbewegung richtig kopiert, so lassen sich mit geringstem Aufwand sehr starke Sogkräfte freisetzen, die »nahezu kostenlos«, blitzschnell und ohne Umweltbelastung immense Energiemengen gewinnen lassen und durch bremsende Druckwirkungen reguliert werden können. Diese naturrichtige Bewegung nannte Schaubberger die »Lebenskurve«. Die gegenwärtige Wissenschaft und Technologie ist laut Schaubberger nicht im Einklang mit der Natur und bewegt falsch, denn sie unterstützt ausschließlich das Druckprinzip, das sie mit Hilfe von Explosionstechnologien, wie etwa dem Verbrennungsmotor, nutzbar machen will.

### Technik

»Die alten Griechen erkannten schon oder richtiger gesagt *n o c h*, daß »Technik« vom Altgriechischen »technao« herstammend, wörtlich übersetzt Selbstübertreibung, also Selbstbetrug bedeutet.« (1,22)1

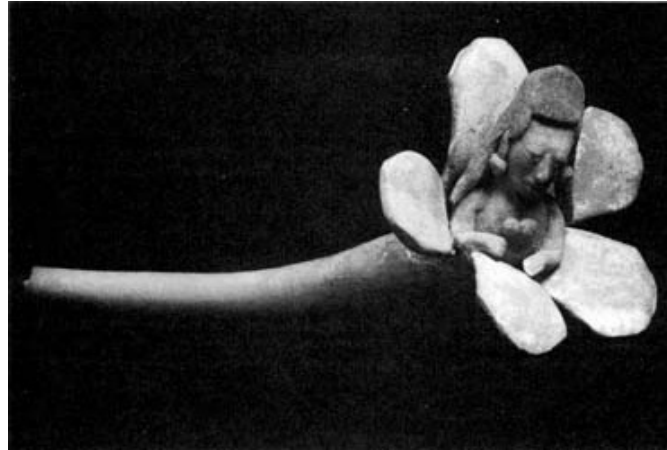
Dieser Satz ist repräsentativ für Schaubberger. Seine Kritik an der heutigen Technologie ist fundamental. Die heutige Technik und Wissenschaft fußt seiner Ansicht nach auf völlig falschen Gesetzmäßigkeiten. Sie benutzt eine zentrifugale, explosive Drucktechnologie, die in der Natur Abbau- und Zersetzungsprozessen dient, für den Wirtschafts- und Kulturaufbau. Diese Energieformen für den wirtschaftlichen und kulturellen Aufbau zu verwenden, ist nach Schaubberger grundfalsch. »Wer es verkehrt macht, muß naturgesetzmäßig die progressive Massenzerstörung und dadurch unbeschreibliche Not- und Elendsteigerung in Kauf nehmen.« (4,36)

In der technischen Anwendung zeigt sich in der heutigen Massenbewegung (z.B. Antriebsmotoren, Propeller, Heizungen, Turbinen, Stromerzeugung, Pflüge usw.) ein allgemeines Problem. Aufgrund des Charakters der Energie wächst der Bewegungswiderstand im Quadra zur Bewegungsbeschleunigung. Dieses Wachstum des Bewegungswiderstandes ist in der etablierten Physik ein bekannter Faktor, der als unvermeidbar angesehen wird. Genau hierin besteht jedoch der Selbstbetrug, denn eine Arbeit, die das Quadrat an Widerstand erzeugt, betrügt sich gewiß selbst um ihr Ergebnis.

Schaubberger stellt dem entgegen, daß dieses Phänomen durchaus vermeidbar ist und lediglich auf einer falschen Bewegungsart der Masse beruht. Jede Bewegung, die ein Stoff ausführt, bringt nämlich innenmolekulare Spannungsänderungen mit sich und ruft atomare Energien wach, die in unmittelbarer Verbindung zu physikalisch nicht meßbaren oder wahrnehmbaren höherwertigen Energieformen stehen. Schaubberger nennt sie die »astralen« oder »metaphysischen« Energien. Die atomaren Energien äußern sich in zwei Richtungen: als aufbauende, **be**-lebende und als zersetzende, **ent**-lebende. Eine **richtige** Bewegungsart der medialen Massen führt zu einer

Leistungsaufschraubung, die im Quadrat zur Bewegungsbeschleunigung wächst. Dies weist auf eine Technologie hin, die mit Hilfe geringster äußeren Aufwandes hohe Mengen an Energie freisetzen kann.

## Natur



Die Natur diente Schauburger als Vorbild für diese Art der Massenbewegung. Überall in der Natur läßt sich beobachten, wie die Natur Masse z.B. Wasser, bewegt, wie organische Materie wächst, wie in der Natur Energie gespeichert und freigesetzt wird. Genau auf diesen Beobachtungen des Naturmenschen Schauburger beruhen seine Erkenntnisse. Hinzu kommt seine Eingebundenheit in eine generationenal Tradition von Förstern der Alpenhochwälder sowie seine intuitive Fähigkeit, seine naturreligiöse innere Haltung und sein Erwissen der alten germanischen Religion und Kultur.

Seine – geistige – Naturbeobachtung beruht auf dem grundsätzlichen Verständnis, daß alle Energie eigentlich aus höherwertigen, metaphysischen Energieformen entspringt, die er als Lebensenergie bezeichnet. Unsere irdischen materiellen Formen sind dabei das Ausfallprodukt dieser nach oben strebenden, levitierenden Energie, die überflüssige oder nicht ausreichend geläuterte Energie nach außen abstrahlt, wo sie sodann unter dem Einfluß des Sonnenlichts und der Temperatur erstarrt und zu Materie in unserem Sinne wird. Diese Lebensenergie bewegt sich in zyklischen Spiralraumkurven, in einer Aufschraubbewegung, zentripetal, d.h. der edelste und hochwertigste Teil befindet sich im Zentrum der Spirale. Schauburger vergleicht dies mit einem Blütenkelch. Die Blütenblätter sind das materielle Ausfallprodukt und das Edelste, der Fruchtkolben, befindet sich in der Mitte.

Gemäß Schauburger gibt es in der Natur grundsätzlich zwei polar entgegengesetzte Energiebewegungsarten. Er nennt sie die »naturnrichtige« und die »naturunrichtige« Energiebewegungsart. »Da es bekanntlich in der Natur nur Bi-polaritäten oder die sich gegenseitig steigernden Gegensätze gibt, fragt sich, welche Bewegungsart dient dem Lebensauf- und welche dem Lebensabbau.« (2,23) Die naturnrichtige Bewegung (Verlagerungs-)art funktioniert widerstandslos, druck- und wärmefrei, implosiv, strukturverkleinernd, anziehend und zentripetal. Er nennt sie auch die weibliche, negativ geladene Energie. Diese Energie arbeitet mit allotropen Fettstoffen und höherwertigen Atomenergien, die levitierend, d.h. auftreibend und damit aufbauend wirken und mit physisch nicht wahrnehmbaren Strahlungsformen in Verbindung stehen. Die naturunrichtige Energiebewegungsart arbeitet mit Widerstand, druck- und wärmeerzeugend, explosiv, strukturvergrößernd, abstoßend und zentrifugal. Dies ist die männliche, positiv geladene Energie. Sie arbeitet gravitierend, damit rückstoßend und zersetzend. Hierher gehört die heutige Form der Atomenergie, die Schauburger als die niederwertige, weil zersetzende, bezeichnet. In der Natur gibt es beide Energien, um dort erfüllen sie auch ihren Zweck. Die zersetzende Energie ist wichtig, um Altes und Krankes, das nicht mehr heilbar ist, also alles Sterbend oder Gestorbene, wieder in den Energiekreislauf zurückzuführen, um das neu Entstehende, Geläuterte zu nähren.

Um Energie oder Bewegung zu erzeugen, ist es daher naturnrichtig, die aufbauenden, levitierenden Kräfte zu nutzen, die durch einen geeigneten Bewegungsanstoß freigesetzt werden. Diesen Bewegungsmodus nennt Schauburger die »Lebenskurve«. Es ist dieselbe Bewegung, die ein nicht begradigter Fluß in seinen Mäanderformen vollzieht, die sich in den Wellen und Wirbeln einer Baumrinde beobachtet läßt, der ein Apfel oder unsere Herzen ihre Gestalt verdanken.

Die Komplementarität der Druck- und Zugkräfte wirkt zusammen, um diese naturnrichtige Bewegung und Freisetzung höherwertiger Energien hervorbringen, wobei das Zugprinzip das dominante ist. »... sorgt man für ein **rhythmisches** Wechselspiel der beiden Bewegungsteilkräfte (gegenseitlich wirkenden Bewegungskomponenten, das sind die vorerwähnten Zug- und Druckkräfte) vor, dann hat man nicht nur die so gut wie kostenlose Maschinenkraft-urzeugung in der Hand, (...) sondern zudem auch das Geheimnis der willkürlichen Wachstumsregelung entdeckt.« (3,31)

»In der Natur gibt es keine geraden Linien«, war ein Ausspruch Schaubergers, und demzufolge ist unsere moderne Technologie, weil zersetzend und geradlinig, natur- und lebensfeindlich. Schaubergers Anliegen war es immer, den grundlegenden Irrtum der heutigen Technologie aufzuzeigen und die Menschheit über die ungeahnten Möglichkeiten einer naturnrichtigen Anwendung der Massenbewegung aufzuklären. »Denn«, sagt Schauburger, »kennen die Menschen erst einmal den bisher gemachten Fehler, dann werden sie ihn aus ureigenem Interesse korrigieren und damit ist jeder Kampf ums tägliche Brot, die eigentliche Ursache dieses Krieges, von selbst behoben.« (2,38)

## Die spirituellen Implikationen von Schaubergers Naturbetrachtung



Wiewohl Schauberg sehr aktiv auf dem Gebiet der Wasserwirtschaft, der Antriebstechnik, der Landwirtschaft und ähnlichen praktischen Arbeitsbereichen war, ist doch sein spirituell-geistiger Hintergrund die unverzichtbare Voraussetzung für seine praktischen und naturwissenschaftlichen Erkenntnisse.<sup>2</sup> Eine intuitive, ganzheitliche Schau der Natur ließ in der Person Viktor Schaubergs eine Naturphilosophie erblühen, die mit nichts vergleichbar ist, was wir aus der herkömmlichen Philosophie und Wissenschaft kennen. Diese Naturkunde ist so anders und so eigentümlich, daß es einiges an Studium und Vertiefung in seine Gedankenwelt braucht, um dieses reichhaltige und alles verbindende Wissen zu erfassen. Es ist, als ob plötzlich Bereiche unseres Gehirns aktiviert werden, die bis dahin brachlagen und als unbekannter Kontinent unserem mechanistisch-linearen Denken einen mit Unbehagen und Distanz gepaarten Respekt einflößten.

### Woher hat Schauberg dieses Wissen?

Abgesehen von seiner bereits erwähnten intuitiven, seherischen Begabung weist Schauberg auf das Wissen »der Alten« hin. Hierbei bezieht er sich mehrmals auf die altgermanische Naturreligion, die im deutschen und nordeuropäischen Raum bei den Bewohnern abgelegener Gegenden noch bis in unser Jahrhundert lebendig geblieben ist und erst nach dem Zweiten Weltkrieg mehr und mehr verloren ging. Schauberg selbst kommt aus Plöckenstein. Er berichtet davon, das dieses Völkchen, das rund um den Plöckensteinsee im Bayerischen Wald im Schnittpunkt dreier Grenzen lebte, in seinen Sitten und Gebräuchen noch viel von dem traditionellen Urwissen um die richtige Bewegungsart erhalten hatte (Aufsatz ›Das Kuckucksei‹, Implosion 115, S. 58).

Neben diesen regionalen und z.T. noch existenten Quellen bezieht sich Schauberg auch auf mythologische bzw. vorgeschichtliche Aussagen. Er geht davon aus, daß die alten vorgeschichtlichen Kulturen (die älter als die griechische sind), noch im Besitz dieses Wissens waren. So erwähnt er z.B. mehrfach die Tabula smaragdina des Hermes Trismegistos, eines altägyptischen Weisen, in der nach seiner Auffassung genau die naturrichtige Methode beschrieben wird: »Mische die Stoffe des Himmels und der Erde naturrichtig, denn dann wirst du zeitlebens glücklich sein.« (3,14)

Auch das sagenumwobene Atlantis wird erwähnt, ebenso wie der Gral und die Gulla, jenes »geheimnisvolle Gefäß, in der sich jede Flüssigkeit sei es nun Wasser, Milch etc., frisch und lebendig erhält.« (4,62)

Die sagenhaften Berichte aus den Mythen der Menschheit, die von Reichtum, Glück, Gesundheit und »paranormalen Fähigkeiten« sprechen, beruhen nach Schauberg auf dem Wissen um die naturrichtige Massenbewegung. Sie sind nichts Mystisches, sondern eine andere, verlorengegangene Massenbewegungsart.

Im folgenden Zitat finden sich einige Hinweise, mit welchen Gebräuchen sich die Menschen zur Natur in Beziehung setzten.

»Zu diesen uralten Sitten und Bräuchen zählt, um die wichtigsten aufzuzählen, die letzte Ölung, das Tonsingen, das Sonnenpflügen, die Hügelgrabbestattung etc. Gepflogenheiten, die schon wiederholt beschrieben wurden, die nichts anderes waren, als naturnotwendige Vormaßnahmen, die, mit der **repulsiven** Fruchstofforganisation in unmittelbarem Zusammenhang stehend, einstigen Kulturvölkern nicht nur die Nährfreiheit, sondern auch eine Bewegungsfreiheit sicherten, gegenüber der z.B. die heutigen Arten der maschinellen Fortbewegungsart zu Land, zu Wasser und in der Luft geradezu kindische Spielereien sind.« (4,50)

### Die metaphysische Wirklichkeitsebene



Entscheidend für das ganze Verständnis Schaubergers ist sein metaphysischer Ansatz. Der Gesamtzusammenhang der Naturphänomene erschließt sich nur, wenn man die höheren Wirklichkeitsebenen, die physisch nicht mehr meßbar oder wahrnehmbar sind, miteinbezieht. Tatsächlich ist die materielle Ebene unserer Körper und der Naturstoffe nur die sekundäre Ebene, die von den höheren feinstofflichen Ebene abhängt und von ihnen erschaffen wird.

»Sie werden erkennen, daß die physikalische Erscheinungswelt – sei es nun jede bisher unerklärliche, physisch wahrnehmbare Verlagerung der Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft, unsere eigene selbtherrliche oder originelle Bewegungsfähigkeit, die Überwindung unserer Körperschwere, die Atmung, die Be-leuchtung und die Er-leuchtung (Orientierung), die feuerlose Temperierung, kurzum die belebenden Funktionen, heißen sie wie immer – auf die höchsten Realitäten zurückzuführen sind, die wir – ohne bisher gewußt zu haben, wie und aus w: sie entstehen – die »Astralen« [nennen].« (3,6-7)

Die physische Erscheinungswelt ist auf höchste, astrale Realitäten zurückzuführen. Alle Lebenssymptome, wie etwa die Körpertemperatur, d aufrechte Gang etc. sind keine Produkte materieller Wechselwirkungen, sondern gehen aus der Levitationsenergie hervor, die an dieser Ste als das ›Astrale‹ bezeichnet wird.

»Was wir rund um uns sehen oder sonstwie wahrnehmen können, hat seine Entstehung und sein kurz vorübergehendes Dasein den wirklich Realitäten zu verdanken, die als das Ursächliche weder greifbar oder meßbar, ja nicht einmal wahrnehmbar sind.« (3,10)

Das Ursächliche sind die astralen Realitäten, die Schauberger als ›wirklich‹ bezeichnet. Sie entziehen sich der dreidimensionalen Wahrnehmung.

»Denn das Leben bleibt als meta-physische Energiefunktion ewig. Und was sich als ziemlich uninteressantes und unreales Erscheinungsbild ständig ändert, ist nur das Futteral für die einzige Realität, der Körper, den die wirklichen Realitäten – originell – bewegen und dadurch beleben.« (3,14)

Das Leben hat Ewigkeitscharakter. Der Körper, sich ständig wandelnd und vergänglich, ist nur das äußere Gewand des inneren Lebens, der Seele. Der Unterschied von Körper und Seele kommt auch in folgendem Satz zum Ausdruck:

»... daß es nur die Überschreitung der Bewegungs-geschwindigkeit ist, die den Astralleib zwingt, das Seelenfutteral zu verlassen. Richtiger ausgedrückt, die übermäßige Innenschwungssteigerung bei Überschreitung der zulässigen Grenzgeschwindigkeit beutelt, wie der Volksmund sagt, die Seele aus dem Leibe. Und da astrale Gebilde ohne einen Körper nicht existieren können, fährt ersteres mit über Affengeschwindigkeit ins Nirwana zurück.« (2,45f.)

Die »Überaffengeschwindigkeit« könnte eine Anspielung auf die Überlichtgeschwindigkeit und auf Einstein sein, dessen Formel  $E=mc^2$  von Schauberger mehrfach kommentiert wird.

Um nun noch einmal etwas konkreter auf die metaphysischen Energieformen einzugehen und um zu zeigen, wie sie mit den materiellen Energien aufs engste verbunden sind, sei eine Stelle zitiert, die sich vordergründig mit der Landbearbeitung beschäftigt, aber ein hohes Maß an metaphysischen Aspekten aufzeigt. Hier teilt Schauberger einige Details der Wirkungsprinzipien mit, und man kann sehen, wie die metaphysische mit der physischen Energie in Wechselwirkung steht:

»Pflügt man hingegen den Nährboden mit dem druck- und wärmelosen, formvollendeten und naturrichtig legierten Biopflug, dann wird die genau gegenteilig wirkende Energieart schon meta-physischer, daher physisch ihrer ungewöhnlichen inneren und äußerlichen Geschwindigkeit wegen unwahrnehmbaren Gestalt frei, die hier die höherwertige genannt wird. Und je rascher dieser leichtgängige, weil fast reibungslos durch den Boden gehende Biopflug geführt wird, umso weiter ausstrahlende Edelstoffkonzentrationen durchdringen die umliegenden Grundwassermassen, die in sich die sogenannten Vitaminmoleküle (Edelstoffkonzentrate), Aufbau- und Auftriebsenergie im stat nascendi tragen.

Die biologische Folge dieses atomaren Feinstoffbeschusses ist eine re-aktive Schwungssteigerung infolge Freiwerdens der dort eingesparten (gebundenen) Edelenergieanwärter, die sich in diesem Fall in selbtherrlich ausstrahlende Edelenergiestoffkonzentrate verwandeln. Weitum alles bestrahlen und mit immer größer werdendem Aktionsradius die immer wirkungsvoller werdenden Impllosionen



(Edelstoffausgeburten) verursachen.

Der Grundbaustoff dieser relativ höchstwertigen Edelenergiekonzentrate ist naturrichtig vergäres **Fett**. Irdische Lebensüberreste, die nicht, wie der weitverbreitete Irrglaube lehrt, zu Staub und Asche zerfallen, sondern je nach ihrer Bewegungsart im Schoße der Erde in meta-physische also physisch unwahrnehmbare – Atomenergiearten verwandelt werden.« (3,49f.)

Die metaphysischen Energiearten sind aufgrund ihrer sehr hohen Geschwindigkeit nicht wahrnehmbar. Sie verwandeln sich in Edelstoffe, indem sie Implosionen (= Edelstoffausgeburten) verursachen. Die Edelstoffe nennt Schauberger Vitaminmoleküle. An anderer Stelle schreibt er diesen Edelstoffenergien eine bakteriophage Qualität zu, d.h., aus diesen Rohstoffen bilden sich bereits wieder organische Strukturen. (3, 3,37-38; 4,4)

Hier wird genau die Schnittstelle von feinstofflicher und grobstofflicher Umwandlung beschrieben. Die metaphysischen Energien sind Läuterungsenergien, die das Leben und das Bewußtsein tragen können. Sie durchdringen die Edelstoffkonzentrate, die in Fett vorliegen, und ermöglichen Aufbau- und Wachstumsprozesse. Es ist ein Kreislauf zwischen Fett, Metaphysischem und Wasser, aus dem der Aufbau der Stoffqualität hervorgeht (der Boden wird fruchtbarer, das Wasser bekommt Heilwirkung, Leben entsteht).

Der gesamte Naturzusammenhang ist nur zu verstehen, wenn man diese Komponente des Geistigen, des Lebens als metaphysische Qualität in die Betrachtung mit aufnimmt. Hierbei ist zu betonen, daß Schauberger entgegen der herkömmlichen naturwissenschaftlichen Anschauung die Existenz der geistigen Ebene miteinbezieht, aber auch entgegen der kirchlichen Lehre die materielle Ebene als ebenso wertvoll und göttlich betrachtet wie die geistige.

Nur der Kreislauf zwischen Stoff und Geist führt – anhand der rhythmischen Bewegung der Bewegungsteilkräfte Druck und Zug – zu Leben. Die Massenbewegung und das Medium sind die Geburtshelfer des Geistigen, sie dienen der Läuterung, also der Konzentrierung, Akkumulierung und Reinigung.

Die geistige Energie gibt das, was den Läuterungsvorgang nicht bis zum Ende mitmachen konnte, nach außen ab, wo es als Materie erscheint um erneut in den Veredelungsvorgang aufgenommen zu werden. Das zentrale Element ist hierbei das Wasser, das die Lebensenergie (»die Edelstoffkonzentrate – Aufbau- und Auftriebsenergien im statu nascendi«) in sich trägt, um die Organismen zu nähren. Schauberger nennt es das »Fruchtwasser der Erde« und die »physische Erstgeburt«.

Da die Schulwissenschaft streng innerhalb des physisch wahrnehmbaren Rahmens bleibt, sind bestimmte Naturphänomene wie z.B. das Wachstum oder auch die Entstehung von Wasser unerklärbar. So kommt die Wissenschaft denn auch zu der Behauptung, daß es ein Perpetuum mobile nicht geben kann, weil man aus Nichts keine Energie gewinnen kann. Schauberger weist wiederholt darauf hin, daß die Natur das Perpetuum schlechthin ist. Die mechanistisch unerklärbaren Wachstumsprozesse zeigen dies. Diese Prozesse beziehen ihre Energie aus den metaphysischen Realitätsebenen.

»Denn das vermeintliche Nichts, das durch irgend eine molekulare Umwandlung entsteht, ist in Wirklichkeit eine raum- und gestaltlose, oder richtiger ausgedrückt, eine physisch unwahrnehmbare, daher metaphysische Feinstoffkonzentration höher- oder niederwertiger (**belebender** oder **entlebender**), bio-logischer, also re-aktivierter Wirkungsart. – Nennen wir sie hier kurz die Levitations-energie, die von allen Seiten her in physisch belebte Gebilde einstrahlt und »originell« antreibt. D.h. mit der zur Futtersuche notwendigen Trag- und Schleppkraft (Überwindung des eigenen Körpergewichts) versieht, das Ganze **beleuchtet** (sehend macht), **erleuchtet** (orientiert) und selbstverständlich originell, also feuerlos temperiert.« (4,14)

## Das Wasser ist die physische Erstgeburt

Die Schnittstelle zwischen metaphysischen und physischen Realitätsebenen ist für Schauberger das Wasser. Das Wasser entsteht praktisch aus diesen feinstofflichen Energien, die sich zu stofflichem Wasser verdichten.

»Da Energien oder Geister ohne Körper (Akkumulatoren) nicht existieren können, scheidet sich sozusagen die erste körperliche Aufgeburt – wie wird erst später näher erklärt – aus, und damit ist in rohen Zügen die Herkunft des vermeintlich unergündlichen Wasserentstehungsgeheimnisses z.T. entschleiert.« (3,17)

»Das Wasser ist das Blut der Erde. – Die physische Erstgeburt, die das Astrale, das **Ur**-produkt, die einzige Realität beherbergt, die es originell auf die höchsten Bergspitzen hebt, von denen dann das zurückfließt, das den Rückweg ins Nirwana noch nicht mitmachen konnte, um sich auf seinem Abweg mit Hilfe der originellen, sich um seine eigene Achse **ein**-spulenden Bewegungsart zu vermehren, zu veredeln und sodann seinen aufbauenden und auftreibenden Atomenergieüberschuß in den umliegenden Friedhof vergangener Vegetation zu senden, um das den naturrichtigen Bewegungsanstöße Harrende zu neuem Leben aufzuwecken.

Und diesem edlen – tausendfachen Segen auf Fluren und Feldern verteilenden – Grundstoffträger des universellen Lebens rückt der von der modernen Agrarwissenschaft irreführende Bauer mit dem Gerät zu Leibe, das der Lebenskraft ihr Dasein verleidet. – Und so kam es und mußte es kommen, daß der von allen guten Geistern verlassene Bauer vor seiner von Gott verdamnten Scholle steht, weil er das zerstörte, in dem **Gott** im statu nascendi steckt.« (3,52)

Das Wasser, daß auf den Bergspitzen entspringt, ist dann das, was »den Rückweg ins Nirwana noch nicht mitmachen konnte«. Durch die naturrichtige einspulende Bewegung vermehrt und veredelt sich das Wasser, um dann diese aufbauenden Energien an die Umgebung abzugeben. Auch eine naturrichtige Erdbewegung bewirkt das gleiche. Durch richtiges Pflügen werden im Erdreich diese Aufbauenergien erweckt. Die falsche Bewegungsform des herkömmlichen Pfluges verhindert dies. Deshalb ist der moderne Bauer »von allen guten Geistern verlassen«. Gute Geister nannten die germanischen Vorfahren die aufbauenden Energien. Die aufbauende, lebenspendende Energie ist »Gott im statu nascendi«. Hier erkennt man die gottesbewußte Grundhaltung Schaubergers.

Nachdem das Wasser eines der Hauptthemen Schaubergers ist, behandelt er es entsprechend ausführlich. Zu den technologisch-wirtschaftlichen Aspekten sei nur so viel ausgeführt, daß Schauberger in der natur~~un~~richtigen Bewegung des Wassers die Ursache für den Qualitätsverlust der Gewässer sah. Durch den Verlust an belebenden Energien sterben die Tiere und Pflanzen im Wasser ab und machen Krankheitskeimen und parasitären Lebensformen Platz. Der Verlust der Levitationskraft des Wassers führt zum Absinken des Grundwassers

»Überall dort, wo Wasser nach hydraulischen Prinzipien, sei es nun eine moderne Wasserlaufregulierung oder durch Druckturbinen geführt wurde, starben nach kurzer Zeit die Forellen und die sonstige höhere Tierwelt ab. Und an Stelle dieser begann sich das pathogene Leben, d verschiedenen Parasiten und Zerstörungskeime, zu beleben.« (1,18)

Um noch einmal zu verdeutlichen, wie der richtige Vorgang funktioniert und wie die metaphysischen Überwerte, das Wasser und das Fett auf den körperlichen Überresten miteinander in Beziehung stehen, sei hier noch eine diesbezügliche Stelle zitiert.

»Was verstehen Sie eigentlich unter diesem Begriff: Aufbau- und Auftrieb-energien im Wasser?

Darunter verstehe ich die stufenweise Auferstehung der metaphysischen Überwerte, die aus naturrichtig dissoziierten irdischen Überresten – physischen Fettstoff-konzentrationen – entstehen und als allotrope (vielförmige) Energiestoffgebilde, die das geosphärische Mutterwasser ausscheiden, wieder erstarren.« (3,4)

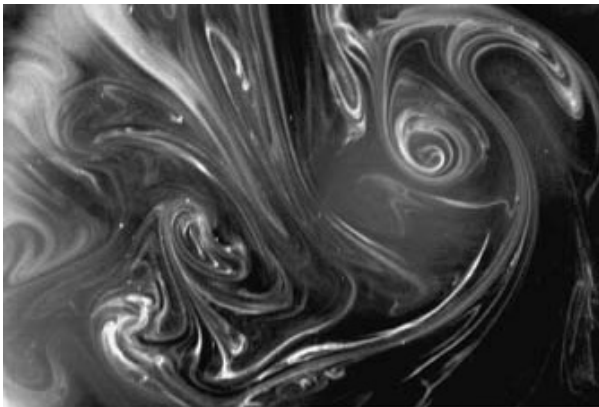
In der folgende Passage zeigt sich noch einmal deutlich der Zusammenhang des alten Wissens der germanischen Spiritualität mit der Naturerkenntnis. Die bildhafte Betrachtungsweise dieser alten Kultur bezeichnete die aufbauenden und abbauenden Energien als »gute und böse Geister«. Schaubergers moderne Erklärung zeigt, daß es sich bei diesen Beschreibungen nicht um abergläubischen Dämonismus handelt, sondern um wirkliches Urwissen.

»Wasser ist also nur dann der Ursprung allen Lebens, wenn man es naturrichtig bewegt. Denn im anderen Fall bauen sich im selben Medium die böse-artigen, das Medium und dessen Umgebung zersetzenden, niederwertigen Energie-arten auf, die die Alten »die bösen Geister« nannten.

Nun verstand ich auch, warum meine Vorväter ständig im Konflikt mit hohen Kirchenfürsten waren. Alle neuartigen Glaubensansichten bedingungslos ablehnten und fest und treu an den altgermanischen Anschauungen hängen, laut denen die guten und die schlechten Geister rund um uns, in den Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft stecken und uns so oder so beeinflussen, je nachdem wir ihre Fortentwicklung durch ein naturrichtige Bewegung fördern oder durch moderne Bewegungsarten stören.« (1,7)

Hier drückt sich die Spannung aus, die zwischen den altgermanischen Anschauungen einerseits und der Kirchenlehre andererseits bestand und die die Familie der Schaubergers in einen ständigen Konflikt mit der Kirche brachte. Gleichwohl unterließ es Schauberger nicht, zwischen Jesus und der ihn vertretenden Kirche grundsätzlich zu unterscheiden, wie es in den folgenden Zitaten zum Ausdruck kommt.

## Jesus wußte um die naturrichtige Bewegung



Obwohl Schauberger selbst mehr der germanischen Naturreligion zugeneigt war und von dort den größeren Teil der Anregungen und Erkenntnisse für seine Naturphilosophie bezog, war er dennoch in der Lage, auch das Wirken Jesu Christi im Einklang mit den naturrichtiger Prinzipien zu sehen.

»Die Alten nannten sie die »**rekreierende**« oder »die erfrischende« (veredelnde) Bewegung, mit der man entwicklungsreife Rohstoffbestände, z.B. einen Fruchtsaft innerhalb einer Stunde in edelsten Wein verwandeln kann. Es handelt sich um einen höher-wertigen Gärprozeß, der nicht durch Temperaturdifferenzen, sondern durch die vorerwähnte erfrischende, die bewegten Massen dem Anomaliepunkt annähernde Bewegungsart ausgelöst wird. Die heutige Wissenschaft löst unfreiwillig den anderen Gärprozeß aus, bei dem statt edlem Wein der Essig entsteht. Wenn Sie also das Meßopfer naturrichtig bringen wollen, haben Sie sich erstens kelchartiger (ei- oder ur-förmiger) Gefäße und zweitens der Doppelschraubenwellenbewegung zu bedienen, die prinzipiell Christus in den Mittelpunkt seiner weltbewegenden Bewegungslehre – es ist die »verinnerlichende« und die Geisteskraft stärkende – stellte.« (3,4)

»Niemand geringerer als Christus selbst hat die naturrichtige Umwandlung von Wasser in Wein und Brot in Geist **nur** mit formvollendeten **Ur-**formen (extremen Eiformen bestimmter Legierungsart) gelehrt und inmitten seiner – wahrhaftig die Welt bewegenden – Bewegungslehre, die der Vergeistigung des Ebenbildes Gottes dient, gestellt.« (3,51)

Die Eiform bzw. die Kelchform ist nach Schauberger die grundlegende energetische Struktur in der Natur. Zwei weitere Zitate mögen zeigen, wie Form und Leben bzw. Materie und Geist zusammenhängen und in diesem universalen Zusammenhang Religion mit Naturwissenschaft verbunden wird.

»**Jede** lebendige oder – richtiger gesagt – das Leben gestaltende Bewegungsart entspringt und mündet in der **Urform**, worunter man hier, die extreme **Ei** form zu verstehen hat.« (4,27)

»Macht man diesbezüglich [bezüglich der Bewegung] einen Fehler, dann erreicht man das genau Verkehrte des Gewollten. – Nämlich, statt der Verwandlung einer Materie in Geist, den alles zerstörenden und zersetzenden Ungeist.« (4,31)

Es ließe sich also sagen, daß die zeremonielle Verwandlung, die Christus beim Abendmahl vollzog, ein grundlegendes Paradigma der Veredelung und Erhebung der Materie zum Geist ist, die durch geeignete Bewegungen und Formen aufgelöst wird.

Obwohl Schauberger die Lehre Christi als naturrichtig anerkannte, hatte er gegenüber der Lehre der Amtskirche starke Vorbehalte. Ähnlich wie bei den wirtschaftlichen Machthabern und der modernen Naturwissenschaft findet er auch bei der Kirche Irrlehren, die naturunrichtige Ideen und Konzepte verbreiten.

Insbesondere die kirchliche Lehre von der Staubwerdung des Körpers ist für Schauberger ein folgenschwerer Irrtum. In Wirklichkeit nämlich verfällt der Körper zu Fettstoffen, die ihrerseits wiederum unverzichtbar für den Aufbau neuer Lebensenergie und die Verkörperung neugeborener Lebewesen sind, indem in den höherwertigen Fettstoffkonzentraten die reinsten und edelsten Energien akkumuliert sind, die unmittelbar mit der metaphysischen Ebene im Austausch stehen. Durch das Verschweigen dieser Sachverhalte und durch die Aussage, daß sich der Körper in wertlosen Staub umwandelt, wird den Menschen die lebensrichtige Haltung gegenüber ihrem Körper verhindert. Das Leben wird zu einem mehr oder weniger wertlosen Unterfangen, das in einer fremd und sinnlos gewordenen Natur schrittweise zu Staub zerfällt und nach dem Tod des Organismus nicht weiter existiert.

»Die Kirche behauptet, daß die irdischen Lebensüberreste nach ihrer Bestattung zu Staub und Asche zerfallen. Ich kann beweisen, daß dies nicht wahr ist. – Erstens kann sich nichts ohne seinen eigenen Abfall fortentwickeln und zweitens ist die Fortentwicklung nach Erlöschen der physischen Lebensfunktionen nicht zu Ende. Nach Eintritt des Todes beginnt unter gewissen Voraussetzungen der Um- und Aufbau des **Be**-lebenden oder des **Ent**-lebenden. – Mit anderen Worten: der Aufbau von bisher unbekannt gewesenen Energien. – Der Rohstoff für diesen unterschiedlichen Energie- oder Läuterungsstoff-aufbau ist das **Fett** des in die Erde zurücksinkenden Kadavers.« (4,8f.)

## Die naturrichtige Bewegung des Geistes



Schauberger bezieht die von ihm in der Natur beobachtete Bewegungsart auch direkt auf die Sphäre des Geistes. Damit trägt er seinem ganzheitlichen Ansatz Rechnung, der analoge Prinzipien auf allen Realitätsebenen zu sehen vermag. Schauberger sieht in der Verstandestätigkeit sogar die Hauptursache der bestehenden schlechten Verhältnisse.

»Um auch der letzten Ur-sache auf den Leib rücken und das bisherige Übel tatsächlich an der Wurzel fassen und ausmerzen zu können, ist notwendig, sich mit dem Wesen und der Herkunft des Verstandes, im besonderen aber mit der positiven Gedankenbildung näher zu befassen.

Verstand, als Ganzes betrachtet, ist das Produkt von Intuition und Gedankenbildung.

Rein technisch betrachtet ist der Gedanke energetisierter **Druck**. Intuition, vom gleichen Standpunkt aus betrachtet, energetisierter **Zug**.« (4,41)

Hier unterscheidet Schauberger zwischen Gedanke und Intuition. Während der Gedanke zum Druckprinzip gehört, stellt die Intuition eine Form der Anziehung dar. Der Gedanke ist ein aktiver, analysierender und bestimmender Vorgang, der auf sein Objekt einwirkt. Die Intuition ist aufnehmend, synthetisierend und mimetisch (sich ähnlich machend, anpassend), und richtet sich an dem Objekt aus. Der Ausdruck »positive Gedankenbildung« weist darauf hin, daß Schauberger die Gedanken der positiven, männlichen, zersetzenden Kraft zuordnet. Analog dazu handelt es sich bei der Intuition um die negative, weibliche, aufbauende Kraft.

»Durch die heutige Schulbildung, die das **Nach**-denken schon dem Kleinkind aufzwingt, mußten sich die Gedankengänge (die Entwicklungsgefäße) auf fast ausschließlich positive Gedankenentwicklungen einstellen. – D.h. es mußten sich nach und nach Strukturlockerungen und damit Charakterschlechterungen ergeben.

Nachdem aber jeder primäre Ausfall einen sekundären Abfall auslöst, mußte auch der Gedankenabfall, es ist dies der Fortpflanzungskeim, überpositiv geladen sein. Wirkungsmäßig betrachtet, mußten die fortpflanzenden Kettenreaktionen immer gewalttätigere Menschen ergeben. D.h. es mußte sich nach und nach das Verhältnis zwischen innerem Drang und Sehnsucht zu Gunsten einer sich langsam entwickelnden Brutalität im Denken und Handeln verschieben, wodurch auch die primären Kettenreaktionen in dieser Richtung hin eine Verstärkung erfuhren.

So ist dann auch zu erklären, daß die Intelligenz, von denen das Schicksal eines Staates und der Handlungen seiner Bewohner fast ausschließlich abhängt, auf sonst nichts mehr dachten, als immer wirksamere Maschinen, Geräte, Werkzeuge oder Waffen zu ersinnen, die, ihrer Denkart entsprechend, ausnahmslos auf ein positives, zerstörende Energien erzeugendes Temperaturgefälle eingestellt waren. « (4,42)

Die positive Gedankenentwicklung, das **Nach**-denken, hat bestimmenden und identifizierenden Charakter. Weil sich jedoch dieser Anspruch der Kontrollierende zu sein, nicht im Sinne von Schöpfung umsetzen läßt, da die erschaffende, erzeugende Lebensenergie ihren eigenen Gesetzen unterliegt, wird er in die Richtung der Zerstörung gelenkt, weil dort die Kontrolle über die Objekte gegeben ist. Das Denken hat für Schauberger ein gewalttätiges Element und führt deshalb zu immer mehr Brutalität und zu technokratischem, verdinglichem Wissen.

Die Gewichtung auf das Denken bzw. das Druckprinzip bringt auch den Verlust der paranormalen – seherischen – Fähigkeiten mit sich: »... Menschen, die man zum **Nach** denken zwang und ihnen dadurch die Empfangsmöglichkeit der **Vorsehungsgebote** nahm.« (4,10)

## Die irregeführte Menschheit

Das Anliegen Schaubergers war es, die Menschheit über ihren technischen Fehler aufzuklären und die naturrichtige Bewegung zum Nutzen der Natur und der Menschen wieder einzuführen. Die naturunrichtige Bewegung, die den im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsenden Bewegungswiderstand erzeugt, ist quasi ein doppeltes Verlustgeschäft. Obwohl man sich mit maximalem Aufwand bemüht, erreicht man nur minimale Wirkung. Demgegenüber ist die naturrichtige Bewegung, die die im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsende Leistungssteigerung erzeugt, eine doppelte Gewinnrechnung. Durch minimalsten Aufwand lassen sich maximale Wirkungen erzielen. Es ist daher nicht ohne weiteres als ungerechtfertigt zu bezeichnen, wenn Schauberger von der irregeleiteten Menschheit spricht. Schauberger stellt sich die Frage, wie diese Verirrung des menschlichen Wissens geschehen konnte. Seiner Meinung nach handelt es sich um eine absichtliche Irreführung seitens der Machthaber, um die Volksmassen unter Kontrolle zu behalten, denn eine Bevölkerung, die all ihre Energie in ihr Überleben steckt, muß, hat keine Idee für höhere Ansprüche. Wenn es so sein sollte, daß das naturrichtige Wissen vom Leben gezielt verborgen und unterbunden wurde, dann handelt es sich sicherlich um eines der größten Verbrechen an der Menschheit, unter der die Menschen bis heute leiden haben.



Wir haben in diesem Artikel nicht die ganzen technischen und wirtschaftlichen Aspekte dargestellt. Erst unter Berücksichtigung dieser rein praktischen und materiellen Dimension wird deutlich, in welchem immensen Ausmaß sich dieses technische Mißverständnis auf allen Ebenen des Lebens zerstörend auswirkt.

»Diese, die Todesfurcht verstärkenden Androhungen [seitens der Kirche, die Bestrafung nach dem Tode betreffend] bekommen eine ganz andere Bedeutung, wenn man sie – uralten Überlieferungen entsprechend – als Mittel zum Zweck betrachtet, sogenannte »Wilde«, jedenfalls Freiheitsliebende, zivilisieren und zugleich ins harte Arbeitsjoch zwingen zu können. – Das Letztere dadurch, daß man ihnen naturwidrige Arbeitsarten lehrt, wodurch sie sich ihr täglich notwendiges Brot umso mehr **ver**-dienen, als sie, durch die dadurch auflebende Not gezwungen zum Arbeitsfleiß gezwungen werden.« (4,11)

»Es muß allerdings zugegeben werden, daß das einst zu lösende Doppelproblem, muskelstarke Geistesarme ins Arbeitsjoch zu spannen, vorübergehend geradezu genial gelöst wurde. – Dadurch daß man durch eine verkehrte Bewegungslehre den Qualitätstoff-aufbau unterband und so indirekt eine Art geistige Kastration infolge zunehmender Massen, bei dadurch zunehmendem Mangel an Geistesstoffprodukten, als eine Massenvertrottung entstand.« (4,15)

## Aussichten

Man mag sich die Frage stellen, warum diese naturrichtige Technologie unsere Gesellschaft noch nicht revolutioniert hat. Warum gibt es

immer noch diese verkehrte Technik, die qualitätsvermindernd wirkt und uns und die Natur krank macht? Warum hat sich die bio-genetische Bewegungsart nicht durchgesetzt?

Darauf dürfte es mehrere Antworten geben. Liest man die Lebensgeschichte von Viktor Schauberg, dann kann man sich vorstellen, daß allein schon aufgrund der Machtinteressen der jeweiligen Obrigkeiten eine sinnvolle und effektive Erforschung und Nutzbarmachung dieser Technologie nicht möglich war und ist. Schauberg mußte sich sein ganzes Leben mit den Parteigängern der Macht und des Geldes auseinandersetzen, die auf alle erdenkliche Art versucht haben, Schauberg seine Geheimnisse zu entreißen und für ihre Zwecke einzusetzen. Obwohl Schauberg immer wieder Kooperationsbereitschaft gezeigt hat, sind durch die unlauteren Absichten seiner Partner Experimente immer wieder gescheitert, Prototypen durch unsachgemäße Bedienung beschädigt worden, Unterlagen und Bauteile durch Plünderungen und Diebstähle verschwunden. Direkt nach dem Ende des Krieges fingen sogleich die Amerikaner an, sich für Schaubergs Arbeiten zu interessieren. Sie zitierten ihn schließlich in die USA, von wo er als gebrochener Mann mit dem Kommentar zurückkam: »Sie haben mir alles genommen.« Er starb kurze Zeit später, ohne je sein Lebenswerk zu Ende geführt zu haben. In seiner Nachfolge sind nun begeisterte idealistische Anhänger seiner Naturlehre bemüht, die Einzelteile zusammenzusetzen, um irgendwann einmal das vollständige Bild wiederzufinden. Bis dahin sind die verschiedenen Ansätze – die technisch-praktischen, die philosophisch-theoretischen und die geistigen – Versuche, ein Mosaiksteinchen nach dem anderen zu rekonstruieren. Schauberg selbst formuliert sein Programm in zwei prägnanten Punkten:

»Die vordringlichsten Hauptaufgaben, die nun schleunigst und naturnüchtern zu lösen sind, wären:

- 1.) die sofortige Nahrungsmittelvermehrung auf einer naturgesunden und qualitätsverbessernden Entwicklungsbasis,
- 2.) naturnüchtere Antriebsmittel für Maschinen aller Art, die jeden Verbrennungsprozeß entwicklungsfreudiger Rohstoffe ausschließen.

Mit diesem – in zwei Punkten zusammengefaßten – Wirtschaftsprogramm ist eine derartige Fülle von notwendigen Vorarbeiten verbunden, daß vorerst einmal das Prinzipielle natürlicher, daher ganz neuartiger Arbeitsmethoden allgemeinverständlich aufgezeigt werden muß.« (4,15)

Das Aufzeigen, die Lehre dieser Arbeitsmethoden, und sicherlich mit ihnen der geistigen und philosophischen Grundlagen, ist also die vordringliche Aufgabe, die sich uns stellt.

## Schlußfolgerung

Eine große Herausforderung stellt die Konzeption Schaubergs sicherlich an die Adresse der heutigen Naturwissenschaft und Technologie. Schauberg mußte sogar eine eigene Sprache entwickeln, um das mitteilen zu können, was er in der Natur gesehen hat. Dies und seine Einbeziehung wissenschaftlich nicht bewiesener »meta-physischer Energien« macht es vielen Naturwissenschaftlern schwer, seine Erkenntnisse zu akzeptieren. Gleichzeitig findet der Geisteswissenschaftler einen leichteren Zugang, sind doch Schaubergs geistige Prinzipien philosophisch durchaus tragfähig.

In diesem Artikel sollte die Bedeutung des spirituellen Wissens hervorgehoben werden. Außerdem sollte gezeigt werden, daß auch und gerade in der Naturwissenschaft spirituelles Wissen notwendig ist. Die materielle und die geistige Ebene sind beide existent. Sie stehen in einer vielschichtigen und äußerst bedeutsamen Wechselwirkung und können nur gemeinsam verstanden werden. Schauberg besaß das Wissen des Mystikers, aber dieses Wissen ist eben nichts mystisches, sondern eine notwendige Grundlage, um die Wirkungsweise des Lebens und der Natur zu verstehen. Diese Informationen sind in allen spirituellen Traditionen der Menschheit zugänglich.

Die moderne Naturwissenschaft und Technik muß sich von dem mechanistischen und empiristischen Paradigma lösen, will sie nicht die Natur und das Leben immer weiter zerstören.

Schauberg sagt selbst, daß die metaphysische Ebene die eigentliche Realität ist. Diese ist überhaupt nicht mit der traditionellen Naturwissenschaft zu erfassen. Die spirituelle Dimension ist selbst für das Verständnis materieller Prozesse unerläßlich. Man sollte nicht versuchen, die Technik Schaubergs auf mechanistische Weise zu kopieren. Auf diese Weise ist der Schlüssel nicht zu finden. Deshalb ist es im Grunde notwendig, sich völlig von dem wissenschaftlichen Paradigma zu lösen und die Welt Schaubergs wirklich als eine völlig andere zu akzeptieren. Dies wird immer zu Konflikten mit der amtierenden Wissenschaft führen, denn es bedeutet die Auflösung derselben in dem Sinn wie sie heute existiert. Schauberg war nie diplomatisch, sondern sagte seine Meinung gerade heraus. Sie war zu anders, als daß der Versuch, Verständnis zu erheischen, Sinn gemacht hätte. Zudem lehnte er die moderne Wissenschaft rundherum ab und war strikt dagegen, daß sein Sohn Walter Ingenieurwesen studierte.

Es sieht so aus, als könne heute der Philosoph Schauberg besser verstehen als der Techniker. Gleichwohl sind beide Spezialisierungen unpassend, denn es geht um eine zutiefst ganzheitliche, interdisziplinäre Schau.

Was Schauberg uns mit seinem Weg noch gezeigt hat, ist, daß es auch ohne die Erlangung akademischer Grade möglich ist, zu Wissen und Erkenntnis zu kommen, und daß es sogar notwendig ist, nicht mehr in der Reaktion auf diese herrschenden Paradigmen zu verharren, sondern das völlig Neuartige zu versuchen.

Wenn irgendwann die Erkenntnis und die Umsetzung des Schaubergschen Wissens erfolgreich in der Menschheit verankert ist, können wir vielleicht mit Schauberg sagen, daß von nun an »kein vernichtendes Feuer mehr notwendig ist, aus dem die entwicklungsgefährlichen Temperaturarten entspringen, um Wohn- und sonstige Räume zu beheizen, kein elektrisches Licht mehr nötig ist, um Beleuchtungszwecker zu dienen, keine technische Maschine mehr gebraucht wird, die das mediale Gefüge entwicklungs-freudiger Aufbaustoffe sprengt und verbrennt« (3,34f.), denn dann haben wir eine neue, naturnüchtere Technologie, die das besser macht.

Anmerkungen:

1 Alle Zitate aus: *Implosion – Biotechnische Nachrichten*, Bd. 112-115, 1995-1996, Herausgeber: Verein für Implosionsforschung und Anwendung e.V., Windschlägerstraße 58, 77652 Offenburg. *Implosion* erscheint vierteljährlich und kann bei o.g. Adresse bezogen werden. In den Heften 112-115 findet sich der vierteilige Aufsatz von Viktor Schauberger: »Die Entdeckung der Levitationskraft«, der diesem Artikel zugrunde liegt.

Die Quellenangaben zu den Zitaten (z.B. 1, 22) beruhen auf folgendem Schema: Die erste Zahl betrifft den Teil des Aufsatzes (1-4), die zweite Zahl ist die Seitenzahl.

Bei Schauberger's Aufsatz handelt es sich um eine neuentdeckte Arbeit, die aus dem erst kürzlich freigegebenen Nachlaß stammt.

2 Leser, die sich speziell für die naturwissenschaftlichen Aspekte von Schauberger's Naturlehre interessieren, können bei der Redaktion einen ergänzenden Anhang bestellen, der in den wichtigsten Zügen einige der technisch-naturwissenschaftlichen Grundgedanken Schauberger's vorstellt.

3 Zur Technologie dieser Effekte siehe *Implosion* 116, a.a.O., insbesondere der Aufsatz »Feuerlose Wärme, kaltes Licht, kostenlose Maschinenkraft, Edelstoffdüngung«, S.27-37.

## Anhang:

### Die bio-genetische Bewegungsart

Im folgenden sei nun repräsentativ ein längerer fortlaufender Abschnitt aus dem Aufsatz Schauberger's vorgestellt, in dem die wichtigsten bio-technischen Aspekte seiner Naturphilosophie zum Ausdruck kommen, wie sie bereits im vorangegangenen Artikel angesprochen wurden. Man beachte insbesondere, wie Schauberger das Spektrum der Wirklichkeit in die nicht physikalisch wahrnehmbaren Bereiche erweitert und nur durch dieses ins »Astrale« erweiterte Spektrum in der Lage ist, den Gesamtzusammenhang der Naturphänomene zu erfassen. Geistige und stoffliche Aspekte verquicken sich dabei, und man kann erkennen, wie beide Sphären notwendig sind, um eine konsistente Erklärung der physikalischen Naturphänomene zu leisten.

Um die Tiefe und Konsistenz dieses Abschnitts zu verdeutlichen, sei es erlaubt, die darin enthaltenen Gedankengänge in ihren wichtigsten Zügen mit Erläuterungen zu versehen.

»Unter dem Begriff der »bio-genetischen« (widerstandslosen) Bewegungsart verstehe ich nichts anderes als die »originelle« Erd-, Blut- und Säftebewegung, die dem Aufbau der höherwertigen Energiearten meta-physischer (raum- und gestaltloser – also trägerstofflosen), physisch unwahrnehmbarer Wirkungsart dient.«

Schauberger antwortet hier auf die Frage seines Gesprächspartners, was denn die widerstandslose – bio-genetische – Bewegungsart sei. Der Begriff »originell« ist ein von Schauberger in diesem Zusammenhang systematisch verwendeter Terminus, der den Gedanken verdeutlichen soll, daß es sich bei den aus der Bewegung entstehenden Energie- und Stoffformen um Ur-zeugungen handelt, d.h. um Energien und Medien, die aus den metaphysischen Ebenen auf die physische Ebene materialisiert werden bzw. umgekehrt diese metaphysischen Energien entstehen lassen (von lat.: origo, Ur-sprung). Er wird im weiteren Verlauf von der Blutbildung sprechen, die sich dieser Ur-zeugung verdankt.

»Mit Hilfe dieser widerstands-losen, weil druck- und wärmefreien Massenbeschleunigungsart ist es möglich, alle normal unlöslichen Stoffe, Minerale etc. im kalten Strömungswege zu verflüssigen. – Sodann in den gas-luft-förmigen und schließlich in den ätherischen und energetischen Entwicklungszustand zu überführen.«

Hier zeichnet sich das etwas breitere Spektrum Schauberger's ab, für den das klassische fünfte Element der Elementelehre – der Äther – ein unverzichtbarer Bestandteil der Theorie ist. Feste Stoffe werden verflüssigt, gasförmig gemacht und schließlich bis in den ätherischen Bereich überführt. Dort werden sie zu »Energiearten (...) meta-physischer Wirkungsart.«

»Es handelt sich um das genau umgekehrte Hydrierverfahren, das bekanntlich mit großem Wärmepressur – siehe das Kohleverflüssigungsverfahren – mit Hilfe bestimmter Katalysatoren möglich ist, um damit letzten Endes den reaktiven Überdruck – die Explosion erzeugen zu können.

Das Endprodukt des bio-genetisch im kalten Strömungsweg durchgeführten Verflüssigungsverfahrens von allotropen Fettstoffarten aller Art ist das Gegenteil der Explosion, also die Implosion.

Da es sich bei jedem biologischen Bewegungsvorgang um reaktivierte Läuterungsprodukte handelt, sind verhältnismäßig geringe Rohstoffmengen nötig, um hochaktive Energiestoff-Konzentrate zu erhalten. «

Explosion und Implosion werden als die zwei gegensätzlichen Bewegungsarten gegenüber gestellt. Das herkömmliche Hydrierverfahren arbeitet mit Wärmepressur und explosiv. Das neue Verfahren arbeitet druck- und wärmefrei implosiv.

»Alle Nahrungsmittel werden in den sie verzehrenden Organismen biogenetisch zwecks Blutbildung bewegt.«

Hierin drückt sich die fundamentale Erkenntnis Schauberger's aus, daß alle Auf- und Abbauprozesse in der Natur durch spezifische Bewegungen hervorgebracht werden. An dieser Stelle ist das Thema die Blutbildung im menschlichen Organismus. Dieselben Bewegungsprinzipien finden sich aber auch in der Bewegung des Wassers, das von Schauberger folgerichtig als das »Blut der Erde« bezeichnet wird. Die Bewegung erzeugt die Blutbildung (Aufbauprozess).

»Diese juvenile Blutbildung ist notwendig, um die aus den Nahrungsmitteln mit Hilfe der biogenetischen Bewegungsart frei werdenden Atomenergien höherwertiger (levitierender = aufbauender und auftriebender) Art akkumulieren zu können, aus denen, durch die wiederum biogenetische Blutbewegungsart, ätherische und energetische Feinstoffgebilde in schon Strahlungsart entspringen.«

»Juvenile Blutbildung« besagt, es handelt sich um Verjüngungsvorgänge. Es ist eine der Eigenschaften der aufbauenden, levitierenden Energie, daß sie juvenil ist. Das Blut entspringt aus atomaren Aufbauenergien. In gleicher Weise entspringt das Quellwasser aus der Erde.

Die »Atomenergien höherwertiger Art« sind das polare Pendant zu den heute naturunrichtig verwendeten niederwertigen, zersetzenden Atomenergien, die durch Kernspaltung (Kern-Zersetzung) frei werden. Die höherwertigen Atomenergien sind die Levitationsenergien.

»Diese nach allen Seiten hin ausstrahlenden und jeden Widerstand wärmelos durchschlagenden Überwerte beeinflussen die Innenschwingung der Vitamin-Moleküle entwicklungsgünstig. – D.h. es entstehen so die höherwertigen (zusammenziehenden) Spannungsarten, aus denen dasjenige frei wird, was einzelne Forscher »fließenden Magnetismus« nannten, der – um nach Goethe zu sprechen – das »Ewig Weibliche«, alles Hinanziehende ist. – Dasjenige, das zu seiner Auftriebssteigerung das Positive im Flüssigen und Gas-Luft-Förmigen bindet und so die originelle Aufbau- und Auftriebskraft erhält.«

»Die Innenschwingung der Vitamin-Moleküle« wird durch die Bewegung und durch die höherwertigen Feinstoffgebilde aufbauend angeregt. Die Auftriebssteigerung kommt aus dem Spannungsverhältnis zwischen negativer und positiver Ladung zustande, wobei die negative Spannung die anziehende ist.

»Was z.T. bei Austritt in den atmosphärischen Luftbereich als das noch für höchste Fortentwicklungszwecke Untaugliche, im gegenfallenden Licht der konzentrierende Strahlen sendenden Sonne erstarrt, sich abermals manifestiert, das ist das Wachstum, das sozusagen die Düse, das Sendegerät für höherartige Wertigkeiten, also eine Art Himmelsleiter für das Höheraufsteigende ist.«

Durch die Berührung mit der Luft und den Einfluß der Sonnenstrahlen wird die Energie gebremst und erstarrt zu dem, was wir auf der physikalischen Ebene »Körper« nennen. Das Wachstum ist also das Abfallprodukt dieser höherwertigen energetischen Entwicklungsprozess die über die grobstoffliche materielle Ebene hinausgehen.

»Was als das gewissermaßen Entseelte am Druckpol (After) ausgeschieden wird, fällt auf die sich auch bio-genetisch bewegende, daher ständig gebärende Erde und wird überwölbt, d.h. unter Licht- und direkten Wärmeabschluß gebracht. – Und damit beginnt sozusagen die Wiederbeseelung.«

Das Ausfallende besteht aus Fettstoffenergien, die wiederum notwendig sind, um neue Aufbauprozesse in Gang zu setzen. Dies betrifft die Ausscheidungen des Körpers in Form von Kot, aber auch Kadaver. Diese Fettstoffenergien sind also unverzichtbarer Bestandteil des Naturkreislaufs. Es fällt auf, daß Schauburger in seiner natürlichen Sicht keinerlei moralistische Vorbehalte gegenüber den toten Körpern oder den Exkrementen hat. Im Gegenteil, sie sind in Form von Fettstoffen die Grundlage der Aufbauenergie. Das Fett ist zusammen mit dem Wasser die primäre Schnittstelle zwischen der grobstofflichen und der feinstofflichen Ebene.

»Damit entsteht auch hier ein innerer Um- und Aufbau. Und das Endprodukt dieses abermaligen Verflüssigungsvorganges ausgeschiedener Fettstoffbestände im Medium Mist ist die irdische Aufbau- und Auftriebsenergie, die sich in das Blut der Erde (Grundwasser) bindet, das durch diesen sekundären Umbauprozess als Akkumulator der wie vor geschildert freiwerdenden Energiewertbestände entsteht. Wird also Mist (Dünger) bio-genetisch durch besonders konstruierte und legierte Bodenbearbeitungsgeräte, Pflüge, Kultivatoren, Eggen etc. bewegt, so entsteht die physische Erstgeburt, der Träger der juvenilen – das Gewicht des Seelenkörpers überwindenden – Levitations-Energie.

Die »physische Erstgeburt« entsteht durch die naturrichtige Bewegung aus metaphysischen Energien. Diese physische Geburt («der Seelenkörper») trägt die Levitationsenergie (meta-physische Energie). Schauburger nennt sie an anderer Stelle »die Seele«.

Schauburgers Energiebewegung findet auch auf die Landwirtschaft Anwendung. Gemäß Schauburger könnte die Landwirtschaft bei naturrichtiger Bearbeitung die Erträge in eminenter Weise steigern und dadurch das Weltelend ein für alle mal beheben. Schauburger gibt in diesem Zusammenhang an, daß die alten Kulturen der vorgeschichtlichen Zeit um diese Dinge wußten und die naturrichtige Bewegung anzuwenden wußten, was die Überlieferungen von sagenhaftem Reichtum und Überfülle an natürlichen Produkten zu erklären vermag.

»Bewegt man dieses Medium Wasser (Blut der Erde) bio-genetisch weiter, dann werden wiederum höherwertige Energien frei, die das Medium Luft ausscheiden, wodurch infolge Volumensvergrößerung der konzentrierende Luftdruck entsteht. Das schon metaphysische Reaktionsprodukt der biogenetischen Luftbewegung ist als Implosionsprodukt der emporziehende Unterdruck, die höchstwertige Zugkraft, das »organische« Vakuum, die beste und billigste Bewegungskraft, die es auf diesem Planeten gibt. – Mit v.e. Konzentrationsdruck gepaart, das jedes Gewicht Überwindende, die Levitationskraft als Funktion höchstwertiger Atomenergien ist.« (2,35-37)

An anderer Stelle in diesem Aufsatz beschreibt Schauburger, daß bei der Umwandlung von Luft in Wasser eine 2000fache Volumenverkleinerung bewirkt wird. Dieser enorme Unterdruck führt zu einer Sogwirkung, die als Antrieb benutzt werden kann. (3,19) Zur Energiemengenregulierung empfiehlt Schauburger dazwischengeschaltete Bremspropeller, die je nach Wunsch die Sogkraft regulieren. Ironischerweise handelt es sich bei Schauburgers Bremspropeller um genau den Propeller, den die heutige Wissenschaft als Antriebspropeller für Flugzeuge verwendet. Auch hier findet sich also die naturrichtige Verwendung bei Schauburger, da die zentrifugale Funktionsweise des Propellers sowie die spezifische Form der Rotorblätter zu einem im Quadrat zur Bewegungsbeschleunigung wachsenden Bewegungswiderstand führt. Die natur-unrichtige Verwendung durch die herkömmliche Technologie führt dazu, daß ungeheure Energiemengen verbraucht werden müssen, um ein ausreichendes Wirkungsquantum zu erzielen. Es sei hier erwähnt, daß Schauburger ein Zugschraube entwickelt hat, die mit dem Implosionsprinzip arbeitet, also nicht durch den Rückstoß aus der gedrückten Luft, sondern mittels der Anziehung aus dem Vakuum der gesaugten Luft Bewegung erzeugt. Diese Zentripetenzschraube dreht die Luft naturrichtig spiralförmig nach innen, wodurch die extrem hohen Geschwindigkeitsgrenzwerte erreicht werden, die notwendig sind, um Luft in Wasser umzuwandeln. Aufgrund der naturrichtigen Bewegung wächst die Leistung im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung. Es genügt ein geringfügiger Bewegungsanstoß,

um diesen Prozeß in Gang zu setzen, der dann praktisch keine weitere Rohstoff- oder Energiezufuhr mehr benötigt, fast lautlos funktioniert und keine umweltbelastenden Abfälle, Abgase o.ä. produziert.

[ZURÜCK](#)



Ronald Engert

## Die Entdeckungen Viktor Schaubergers

### Erde, Wasser und Luft im Spiegel einer ethischen Technologie

Der Österreicher Viktor Schaubberger (1885-1958) war Förster, Naturphilosoph und Erfinder. Schaubberger ist heute durch seine »Freie-Energie«-Maschinen bekannt geworden, Apparaturen, die ohne fossile Rohstoffe oder Atomspaltung Energie erzeugen, auf die er entwickelte als naturverbundener Forstmann vor allem auch zahlreiche Methoden für die Landwirtschaft und den Umgang mit Wasser, um dem heutigen Raubbau an der Natur, den er immer wieder mit drastischen Worten anprangerte, entgegenzutreten. Schaubberger entwickelte ein völlig neues Konzept der Natur, der Energie und letztendlich auch des Bewußtseins. Als Förster beobachtete er jahrzehntelang die Natur, um herauszufinden, wie die Natur funktioniert, wie Wachstum, Bewegung und Leben entstehen. Er war ein Mensch, der die Natur verstehen konnte und der durch seine Familie noch in der uralten Tradition der keltisch-germanischen Kultur stand. Er war seherisch begabt und konnte so die Geheimnisse des Wassers und der Natur erfahren. Sein Natur- und Technikverständnis unterschied sich grundlegend von dem unserer heutigen hochindustriellen Zivilisation. Unsere heutige Kultur beruht auf einer technologischen Entwicklung, die die Natur zerstört und den Menschen ihren Lebensraum nimmt. Schaubbergers naturnahe Biotechnik wirkt genau umgekehrt: anstatt Abgase erzeugt sie Heilwasser und reine, frische Luft, anstatt hochwertige Rohstoffe wie Öl, Holz oder Kohle einfach zu verbrennen erzeugt sie organische Substanzen bzw. Energiewerte, die die Umgebung beleben und die Qualität der Vegetation verbessern, anstatt den im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsenden Bewegungswiderstand ruft seine Biobewegung den im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsenden Leistungszuwachs hervor. Alte vorgeschichtliche Kulturen wußten nach Schaubberger um diese Zusammenhänge und waren in der Lage, mit geringstem Aufwand sagenhafte Ernteerträge hervorzubringen, Bauwerke wie die Pyramiden und die alten riesigen Tempel zu erstellen, und insgesamt paradiesische Zustände zu erschaffen. Leider ist dieses Wissen aus verschiedenen Gründen verloren gegangen. Im Zuge seiner Forschungen entwickelte Schaubberger auf den unterschiedlichsten Gebieten neuartige Methoden und Techniken: in der Landwirtschaft, bei der Kompostierung, Wasserveredelung und Waldpflege, bei der Konstruktion von Heimkraftwerken, Beleuchtungs- und Heizungsanlagen, sowie von Fluggeräten und Schiffen. Zugleich ist sein Werk für Fragestellungen der Philosophie höchst interessant.



### Lebendiges Wasser

Das wichtigste Element war für Viktor Schaubberger das Wasser. Die Fließformen des Wassers mit seinen Einwirbelungen, Mäandern, Strudeln, Spiralen und Wellenbewegungen sind Ausdruck des von Schaubberger entdeckten lebensaufbauenden Bewegungsprinzips, daß grundsätzlich von der lebensabbauenden Bewegungsart zu unterscheiden ist. Die lebensaufbauende Bewegung war für Schaubberger in diesem Sinne eine naturrichtige Bewegung, die der Natur entspricht. Die heutige Technik benutzt die lebensabbauende Bewegung, die in der Natur zum Abbau von organischen Resten benutzt wird, für den Wirtschaftsaufbau. In diesem Sinne handelt es sich bei den technischen Bewegungsmethoden (Verbrennungsmotor, Propeller, Schraube, Turbine u.a.) um naturwidrige Bewegungen, die der Natur und dem Leben schaden. Schaubberger stellte sich immer wieder die Frage, wieso die Quellen auf den Gipfeln der Berge entspringen, wo sich doch das Wasser laut Schwerkraft am tiefsten Punkt befinden müßte. Auch war er fasziniert von dem Phänomen der Standforellen. In reißenden Gebirgsbächen kann man Forellen beobachten, die in der starken Strömung bewegungslos stehen und sich das Futter ins Maul schwimmen lassen. Erschrickt man sie, fliehen sie nicht etwa stromabwärts, sondern schnellen mit unglaublicher Geschwindigkeit flußaufwärts davon. Welche Kraft wirkt hier? Nach Jahrzehnten des Beobachtens und Einfühlens kam Schaubberger die richtige Idee. Es mußte eine Auftriebskraft geben, die als polares Gegenstück zur Schwerkraft, zur Gravitation, funktioniert: die Levitation. Schaubberger erkannte, daß diese Kraft überall ist, im Wasser, in den Pflanzen, in den Tieren und Menschen. Es ist die Kraft, die dem Wasser ermöglicht zu steigen, und die uns Menschen das Leben ermöglicht. Die lebensaufbauende Bewegung ist eine spiralförmige,

schwingende, ziehende Bewegung, wohingegen die lebensabbauende, zersetzende Bewegung eine träge, geradlinige, drückende Bewegung ist. Die zersetzende Bewegung ist ein wichtiger Bestandteil der Natur, wenn es darum geht, abgestorbene organische Substanzen wie z.B. Laub oder Tierkadaver aufzulösen und in den Naturkreislauf zurückzuführen. Viel wichtiger ist jedoch die heutzutage praktisch nicht erforschte aufbauende Levitationsenergie, die das Wachstum, die Bewegungsfreiheit, die Orientierung der Lebewesen und letztendlich auch den Geistesaufbau hervorbringt. Schauberger unterscheidet in diesem Zusammenhang zwischen zwei grundsätzlichen polaren Bewegungsteilkräften, die sich ergänzen: Druck und Zug. Die Levitation ist eine Zugenergie, die ihre Kraft aus den feinstofflichen, metaphysischen Bereichen bezieht, d.h. Bereichen, die nicht materiell wahrnehmbar oder meßbar sind. Er bezeichnet diese Bereiche als den Ursprung der Lebensenergie, die sich als organische Materie äußert, jedoch mehr als diese ist. Die Zellbildung basiert auf dem Zugprinzip, ebenso wie unsere Atmung und unser Blutkreislauf. Die gesamte Vegetation beruht darauf und somit ist die richtige Anwendung der Zugenergien unabdingbar, will man die Gaben der Natur, die Pflanzen und Früchte, richtig kultivieren. Insbesondere die Art und Weise, wie wir das Wasser bewegen, ist lebensentscheidend, denn Wasser ist die Grundlage des Lebens. Das gleiche Prinzip gilt jedoch auch für die Erde und die Luft.



### »In der Natur gibt es keine geraden Linien.«

Dieser Ausspruch von Schauberger ist programmatisch. Die heutige Wasserwirtschaft führt Wasser immer in begradigten Formen. Flußbetten werden ebenso geradlinig angelegt wie Wasserrohre im Haushalt. In der Natur läßt sich jedoch beobachten, daß sich das Wasser seinen Weg immer in Mäanderform sucht, d.h. in Schlangenlinien, und sich in dieser Bewegung fortwährend einspiralisiert. Nach Schauberger ist das die richtige Fließform des Wassers, in der es sich energetisch aufladen kann und erfrischt und veredelt wird. Zwingt man das Wasser, in geradlinigen Rohren anstatt in Wendelrohren zu fließen, verliert es seine Trag- und Schleppkraft. Wird es schal und stirbt langsam ab. Schauberger bezeichnete das Wasser als »das Blut der Erde«. Es war für ihn ein »anorganischer Organismus«, ein »Lebewesen«, das wiederum Teil eines größeren Lebewesens, der Erde ist. Ähnlich, wie in unserem menschlichen Körper das Blut fließt, den Körper reinigt und mit Nährstoffen versorgt, so tut dies das Wasser für den Körper der Erde. Das Wasser ist der Träger der Lebenskraft. Es entspringt auf den Spitzen der Berge in sprudelnden Quellen, und jeder weiß, daß Hochquellwasser das reinste und gesündeste Wasser ist. Nachdem es lange Zeit im Innern der Erde unter Luft- und Lichtabschluß gereift und veredelt wurde, kommt es an die Erdoberfläche, wenn es dazu bereit ist. Die Qualität des Wassers steigt sich mit jedem Stein, um den es fließt, mit jeder Kurve, in der es schwingen kann, und es strahlt feinstoffliche Energien überall an die Umgebung ab, um die Vegetation zu nähren. Naturrichtig fließende Gewässer bewegen sich nicht nur in der Mäanderform, brauchen nicht nur die Steine des Anstoßes, sondern befinden sich auch immer im Schatten. Bäume und Sträucher säumen das Ufer und spenden dem Wasser den lebenswichtigen Schatten, den es braucht, um seine Qualität, die aus einer bestimmten Ladung entspringt, zu erhalten. Der Sonne ausgesetztes Wasser wird aggressiv und zerstört das Ufer. Beschattetes Wasser wird kühl, nähert sich dadurch der größten spezifischen Dichte bei  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  und bewegt sich aufgrund der Einrollung in der Achsmittte am schnellsten, während die organischen Kleinstschwebstoffe, Energiestoffträger von höchster Qualität - organische Reststoffe und Spurenelemente -, am Ufer ausgeschwemmt werden, sich dort ablagern können und dadurch die Umgebung mit neuen Aufbaustoffen versorgen. Insbesondere der Kühlungseffekt, der nicht nur durch den Schatten hervorgerufen wird, sondern primär eigentlich aus der Spiralbewegung hervorgeht, hat für Schauberger größte Bedeutung. Der Anomaliepunkt des Wassers bei  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$  gilt ihm als der qualitativ beste Zustand des Wassers, weil es hier die höchste spezifische Dichte hat, somit die größte Trag- und Schleppkraft, und dadurch in der Lage ist, die Geschiebestoffe wie Sand und Geröll mitzutragen, die wiederum durch die stete mechanische Zerreibung ihre Spurenelemente und organischen Einschlüsse an das Wasser abgeben. In diesem Sinne bezeichnet Schauberger die Geschiebestoffe als die Wegzehrung des Wassers, die verloren geht, wenn das Wasser begradigt und überhitzt wird. Reifes Wasser - und somit zur Verwendung geeignetes Wasser - ist nach Schauberger nur Wasser, das von selbst aus der

Erde kommt. Tiefbrunnen sind somit nicht geeignet, weil das Wasser noch nicht reif ist, und Regenwasser ist ebenfalls nicht ideal, weil es keine geosphärische Spannung hat. Gute Quellen erkennt man daran, daß sie sowohl im Winter als auch im Sommer gleich stark fließen, egal, ob Trockenheit oder starke Niederschläge herrschen.



## Holzschwemmanlagen

Wie wichtig die richtige Fließform und Temperatur des Wassers ist, demonstrierte Schauberger mit durchschlagendem Erfolg an seinen Holzschwemmanlagen. Holzschwemmanlagen dienen in den Bergen dazu, Baumstämme aus den Hochwäldern ins Tal zu befördern. Normalerweise werden diese möglichst geradlinig angelegt, um das optimale Gefälle auszunutzen. Schauberger nun legte die Schwemmanlagen nicht geradlinig an, sondern baute sie entlang der kleinen Gebirgsbäche, die sich mäandrierend ins Tal schlängelten. Die Fachwelt war überzeugt, daß eine derartige Anlage überhaupt nicht funktionieren könne. Der erste Versuch erbrachte jedoch einen überwältigenden Erfolg, steigerte sich doch die Transportmenge des Holzes um ein Vielfaches.



### Was war geschehen?

Schauberger hatte die Rinne der Schwemmanlage mit einem eiförmigen Querschnitt konstruiert, in mäandrierenden Kurven angelegt und zusätzlich mit kleinen »Flossen« versehen, die das Wasser in die richtige Einrollung brachten. Des Weiteren wurde alle paar hundert Meter frisches, kaltes Wasser zugeführt. Alle diese Komponenten führten dazu, daß sich das Wasser in der Mitte der Rinne konzentrierte und dort einen Spiralsog bildete, der die Hölzer sehr schnell und ohne Berührung der Wände abschwemmte. Da sich die Hölzer nicht mehr verkanteten und die Fließgeschwindigkeit in der Sogmitte enorm hoch war, gingen die Holzmassen mit großer Geschwindigkeit zu Tal, ohne beschädigt zu werden. Durch die Spiralbewegung des Wassers und mithilfe der zusätzlichen Zuführung von frischem Kaltwasser erreichte Schauberger, daß sogar Hölzer transportiert wurden, deren spezifisches Gewicht schwerer als das des Wassers ist.

### Die Levitationsenergie

Über den Kühlungseffekt hinaus bewirkt aber die Spiralbewegung noch einen anderen Effekt, der in der heutigen Wissenschaft völlig unbekannt ist: die Levitation. Die Levitationsenergie, die Lebensenergie, ist es, die bewirkt, daß die Bäume nach oben wachsen, die es dem Vogel ermöglicht zu fliegen und der Standforelle, im reißenden Gebirgsbach bewegungslos in der Strömung zu stehen. Das Schwingen der Vogelflügel, das Wiegen der Bäume im Wind, der Tanz und das Spiel des Menschen sind naturrichtige Bewegungen, die den Aufbau der Levitationsenergie bewirken. Es handelt sich hierbei um einen Qualitätsstoffaufbau, um hochwertige Substanzen wie heilendes Wasser, Luft und

Erde zu gewinnen und den Lebewesen zur Verfügung zu stellen. Die Levitationsenergie entspringt aus einer bestimmten Bewegung. Jede Bewegung ruft molekulare bzw. atomare Schwingungsänderungen hervor. Je nach Bewegungsart entstehen aufbauende (auftriebende) oder abbauende Energiearten. Die Erklärung der Levitation führt in chemische und physikalische Bereiche aber auch in feinstoffliche Regionen jenseits unserer dreidimensionalen, wahrnehmbaren Realität.

### Naturrichtig fließendes Wasser erzeugt Levitationsenergie

Die Levitation resultiert aus der Implosion. Die Implosion muß als Gegenstück zur Explosion verstanden werden. Sie wirkt zusammenziehend und strukturbildend. Z.B. beruht die Zellbildung, und damit das gesamte Wachstum, auf Implosion. Die Explosion wirkt ausdehnend und strukturauflösend. Die Implosion ist ein Spannungsgefälle, daß durch bipolare Strukturen

entsteht, zwischen denen sich ein Diffusionswiderstand (Haut, Rinde etc.) befindet. Die bipolaren Elemente sind der Sauerstoff und der Kohlenstoff. Bei bestimmten Temperaturen (zwischen +4° und +9°C) und unter Licht- und Wärmeabschluß findet ein höherwertiger Gärprozeß statt, bei dem keine Oxydation sondern eine Reduktion erfolgt. Der Kohlenstoff verzehrt den Sauerstoff. Schauberger schreibt dazu: »Wir haben es also mit grundsätzlich verschiedenen Gärprozessen zu tun, die temperaturgesteuert die entwicklungsfördernden oder entwicklungshemmenden Energiearten zeugen, wobei es im ersten Fall zum Ausfall des Fruchtwassers, im zweiten Fall zur Zersetzung und zur Verwesung der physischen Erstgeburt (Wasser), zusammenwirkend zu einer Emanationsstoffabstrahlung kommt, die auch umliegendes Grundwasser genau so wie beispielsweise elektrischer Strom zersetzt, wonach es dann nach der Trennung der bipolaren Grundstoffwerte zu knallgasartigen Explosionswirkungen, im zweiten Fall zu einer sogenannten Implosion kommt, die zellbildend wirkt.« (Viktor Schauberger, Die Entstehung des Wassers, in: Implosion Nr. 116, 7) Der entwicklungsfördernde Gärprozeß führt zur Entstehung von Wasser - Schauberger nennt es das Fruchtwasser der Erde -, der entwicklungshemmende Gärprozeß führt zur Verwesung. Diese Energien strahlen in die Umgebung ab und wirken dort entweder aufbauend oder zersetzend. Die naturrichtige und aufbauende Technik muß also den Implosionsweg gehen und nicht den Explosionsweg, wie ihn unsere heutige Technik mit der Explosions- und Feuertechnologie beschreitet. »Hier sei nur vorweg erwähnt, daß der durch die Implosion vor sich gehende LEVITATIONSstromaufbau biomagnetische, also zusammenziehende Funktionskräfte besitzt und genau so wie der Erdmagnetismus längsachsig, also in einem naturrichtig fließenden Wasser entgegen der Fließrichtung dem Wasserursprung, der Quelle zufließt und z.B. die in dieser höherwertigen Energiestoffkonzentration stehende Forelle ins Schlepptau nimmt. Dieser Fisch ist durch seine beweglichen Kiemensysteme imstande, diese Levitationskraft so zu steuern, daß er entweder bewegungslos im reißenden Quellwasser steht, stromaufwärts abschnellt oder inmitten frei überfallender Wassermassen aufschweben kann, wenn sich diese Fallwassermassen, durch vor dem Wasserfall ausgebildete Sogkurven bedingt, an sich und in sich, um ihre eigene Achse in zykliden Spiralkurven bewegen können, wodurch auch hier die ideelle (seelische) Achse entstehen kann, aus der sich - wie in unserer Blutbahn - die bisher unerforscht gewesenen Emanationswerte verästeln, die den Körper beseelen, wodurch er sein Körpergewicht, soweit dies zu seiner freien Bewegungsart notwendig ist, mühelos überwinden kann, vorausgesetzt, daß sein Blut die artbedingten Anomaliezustände, die Indifferenz und damit die Fieberfreiheit, erhalten kann. - Also, mit anderen Worten gesagt, gesund und damit fort- und aufpflanzungsfähig ist.« (ebd.) Der Kernpunkt der Levitationsenergie ist also die durch die zyklode Spiralkurve des Wassers entstehende »seelische Achsmittelpunkt«. In dieser Mitte der Spirale bilden sich Energien, die nicht mehr mechanistisch zu verstehen sind und die Schauberger als seelische Energie bezeichnet. Es ist die Energie, die uns das Leben gibt und es uns ermöglicht, unseren Körper entgegen der Schwerkraft mühelos zu bewegen. Genau diese Energieform, die Schauberger durch jahrzehntelange Beobachtung der erwähnten Standforellen entschlüsselte, vermochte er schließlich maschinell zu kopieren. Er betonte immer wieder, daß diese Biotechnologie im Grunde sehr einfach zu handhaben ist, wenn man erst einmal das Prinzip verstanden hat. Leider hat er aus patentrechtlichen Gründen die eigentlichen Schlüsselinformationen nicht öffentlich gemacht und schließlich mit ins Grab genommen. Dennoch besteht heute die Möglichkeit, das Prinzip wiederzuentdecken, einerseits durch das reiche Schrifttum, das Schauberger hinterlassen hat, andererseits durch andere Forscher, die auf der selben Spur sind.

### Schaubergers technische Entwicklungen

Aufbauend auf seinen Beobachtungen über das Fließverhalten des Wassers entwickelte Schauberger nach und nach verschiedene Maschinen, die sich dieses spiralisierende Prinzip zu Nutze machten. (siehe [Information über Viktor Schaubergers Freie-Energie-Maschinen](#)) Innerhalb eines luft- und lichtabgeschlossenen Gehäuses brachte er entweder Wasser oder Luft in die zentripetale, einspiralisierende Bewegungsrichtung, indem er es über sogenannte Mänderscheiben (zwei aufeinanderliegende Scheiben, die das Wellenprofil einer Wasseroberfläche haben, auf die ein Wassertropfen auftrifft) und durch Spiralwendelrohre mit ovalem, eiförmigem Querschnitt führte. Nach einem von außen gegebenen Anstoß bewegte sich das Medium (Wasser bzw. Luft) in einem Kreislauf durch diese Anlage, der - erst einmal in Gang gekommen - ohne weitere Energiezufuhr oder Treibstoff immer schneller wurde und über Turbinenräder zur Energiegewinnung genutzt werden konnte. Durch die naturrichtige Fließbewegung des Mediums entstand kein Reibungswiderstand. Die zentripetale Einrollung bewirkte außerdem, daß schließlich der Druckwiderstand negativ wurde, das Medium also ziehende Eigenschaften annahm. Darüber hinaus entwickelte er Geräte zur Wasserveredelung und erreichte damit so große Erfolge, daß er in ganz Österreich als Heiler bekannt wurde und täglich von zahlreichen kranken und notleidenden Menschen aufgesucht wurde, die nach Genuß des Wassers geheilt wurden. Im Bereich der Forst- und Landwirtschaft zeigte Schauberger mit der Konstruktion von Bio-Pflügen und Gartenbearbeitungsgeräten aus Bronze völlig neuartige Konzepte auf, um die Erträge und die Qualität der Ernten zu erhöhen und zu einem naturrichtigen Umgang mit der Natur zu gelangen. Er wies auf den Zusammenhang von Wald und Wasser hin und warnte immer wieder davor, den Wald und den Acker mit den bisherigen naturwidrigen Methoden zu behandeln, die zum Absterben der höheren Pflanzen- und Tierwelt und zu einem Verschwinden des Wassers führt. Zunehmende Verkarstung ganzer Landstriche weltweit sowie das Absinken des Grundwassers in an sich fruchtbaren Zonen sind die sichtbaren Symptome der naturwidrigen Technologie unserer Tage. »Es werden Zeiten kommen, in denen ein Glas reines Wasser mehr kosten wird als ein Glas Wein.« kommentierte Schauberger.

### Druck und Zug

Der Lehrmeister Schaubergers war die Natur. Wachstum, Bewegung, Veredelung, Fortschritt sind die genuinen Merkmale der Natur. Die Natur und das Leben funktionieren auf harmonische und lebensfördernde Weise ohne Gift, Lärm und Schmutz zu produzieren. Die heutige Technologie hingegen arbeitet nach dem gegenteiligen Prinzip. Die naturrichtige Bewegungs- (Verlagerungs-)art funktioniert nach dem Zugprinzip, widerstandslos, druck- und wärmefrei, implosiv, strukturverkleinernd,

anziehend und zentripetal. Diese Energie arbeitet mit organischen Fettstoffen und höherwertigen Atomenergien, die levitierend, d.h. auftreibend und damit aufbauend wirken, und mit physisch nicht wahrnehmbaren Strahlungsformen in Verbindung stehen. Die naturunrichtige Energiebewegungsart arbeitet nach dem Druckprinzip, mit Widerstand, druck- und wärmeerzeugend, explosiv, strukturvergrößernd, abstoßend und zentrifugal. Sie wirkt gravitierend, damit rückstoßend und zersetzend. In der Natur gibt es beide Energien, und dort erfüllen sie auch ihren Zweck. Will man jedoch in der Technik und Wissenschaft die abbauenden Druckenergien verwenden, um dem Menschen das Leben zu verbessern bzw. zu sichern, so führt dies zu ständiger Zerstörung und Qualitätsminderung. Um Energie oder Bewegung zu erzeugen, ist es daher naturrichtig, die aufbauenden, levitierenden Zugkräfte zu nutzen, die durch einen geeigneten Bewegungsanstoß freigesetzt werden. Dann ist es möglich, den Lauf des Wassers zu kopieren und zur Heilung der Erde und der Menschheit beizutragen. Gemäß Schauberger haben diese beiden unterschiedlichen Ansätze eben auch Auswirkungen auf die Umgebung und die Stoffe, mit denen sie tun haben. Die Bewegung wirkt sich in den Molekülen aus und verändert ihre Schwingung. Daraus entstehen Strahlungen atomarer Art, die entweder aufbauend oder abbaue auf die Umgebung wirken. Druckturbinen zersetzen das Wasser und führen zu einem Qualitätsverlust, Sogturbinen, wie sie Schauberger entwickelte, bauen das Wasser auf, d.h. sie erzeugen Heilwasser. Zentrifugale Pflüge, wie sie heute in der Landwirtschaft verwendet werden, entladen und zersetzen den Boden, zentripetale, einrollende Pflüge nach Schauberger, die zudem aus Beryllium-Kupfer (Bronze) und nicht aus Eisen sein müssen, werten den Boden auf und führen zu deutlichen Ertrags- und Qualitätssteigerungen. Es ist lebenswichtig, das Wasser, den Boden und die Luft zu erhalten, denn anderenfalls wird der Niedergang der menschlichen Zivilisation unaufhörlich fortschreiten. Mit der naturgemäßen Technik könnte die Menschheit nicht nur die Nahrungsmittel- und Bewegungsfreiheit, d.h. üppigen Pflanzenreichtum und die kostenlose Maschinenkraft, erlangen, sondern auch eine geistige Erhebung, die uns wieder mit den höheren Ebenen des Lebens in Verbindung bringt. Das alles würde zu einer tiefgreifenden Veränderung der Gesellschaft führen, in der die heute fest gefügten Herrschaftsverhältnisse keinen Bestand mehr hätten. Mit dem Wegfallen des Überlebenskampfes, der Rohstoffknappheit und der Sklavenarbeit würden den Machthabern die Mittel fehlen, mit denen sie die Bevölkerung in Abhängigkeit und Kontrolle halten. Nicht von ungefähr hatte Schauberger sein ganzes Leben mit Institutionen und Personen zu kämpfen, die sich seines Wissens aus unlauteren Gründen bemächtigen wollten. Nicht von ungefähr wurde dieses Wissen in der Frühgeschichte der Menschheit unterbunden und durch naturwidrige Lehrsätze ersetzt. Erst wenn viele Menschen mitarbeiten und sich um diese natürliche Weise der Energiegewinnung, die »freie Energie«, bemühen, kann die Menschheit wieder in die ihr angemessene Position versetzt werden: eine Gemeinschaft von freien, glücklichen nicht von Not und Elend getriebenen Individuen.

[\*\*ZURÜCK\*\*](#)

[\*\*ZWEITER TEIL \(Der Maulwurfflug und das Regenwurmsanatorium\)\*\*](#)

### ***Wichtiger Hinweis***

© Das Copyright der Originalabhandlungen von Viktor Schauberger und dessen Sohn Dipl. Ing. Walter Schauberger, liegt bei Ingeborg Schauberger, A-4821 Lauffen (Bad Ischl), Engleithen, oder deren Rechtsnachfolger.

Alle Rechte vorbehalten. Kein Teil dieser Schriften, Zeichnungen und Informationen darf ohne schriftliche Genehmigung des Vereins für Implosionsforschung und Anwendung in irgend einer Form reproduziert oder übersetzt werden. Beiträge der namentlich gezeichneten Mitarbeiter müssen nicht immer mit der Meinung des Herausgebers übereinstimmen.

Das Copyright für namentlich gekennzeichnete Beiträge verbleibt beim jeweiligen Autor, Der Herausgeber übernimmt keine Haftung für praktische Umsetzungen, die auf den Veröffentlichungen der Zeitschrift basieren.

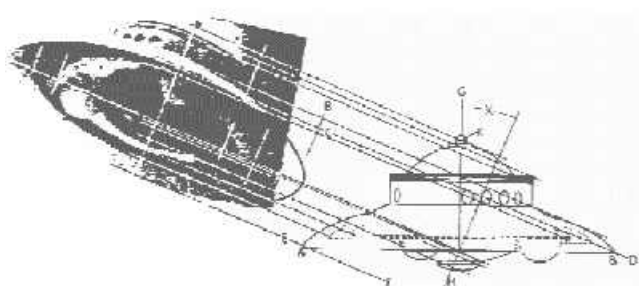
Die Implosion wird als Manuskript gedruckt.

Implosion - Biotechnische Nachrichten, erscheint viermal jährlich.  
Jahresbezugspreis 40.- DM (Übersee: 60.- DM); 300.- ATS; 40.- SFR; einschließlich Porto.

Herausgeber: Verein für Implosionsforschung und Anwendung e.V.  
Redaktion: Klaus Rauher, Geroldseckstr. 4, D-77736 Zell a.H., Tel/Fax 07835-5252  
Email: klaus.rauber@t-online.de; Internet: implosion-ev.de

#### Bankverbindungen:

Deutschland: Sparkasse Haslach-Zell, Konto-Nr. 00-260-15728, BLZ: 664 515 48  
Österreich: Raiffeisenverband Salzburg, Filiale Alpenstraße,  
Konto-Nr. 93-050-482, BLZ: 35240  
Schweiz: Migrosbank Kreuzlingen, Konto-Nr. 16910.425.7/07, BC: 8410  
PC-Konto: 90-2601-6



Viktor Schaubberger,

Salzburg, im Winter 1949

## ***Die Entdeckung der Levitationskraft***

Es geht hier nicht darum, meiner Person so viel Wichtigkeit beizumessen, daß es notwendig ist, den Anderen die Geschichte meines Lebens zu erzählen. - Der Grund hierfür ist, mit dieser Lebensgeschichte die Voraussetzungen aufzuzeigen, ohne die es niemals zur Entdeckung der eigentlichen Lebenskraft gekommen wäre. Diese, das Leben und dessen "originelles" Bewegen ermöglichende höher-wertige Energieart soll und darf nicht abermals verloren gehen. - Denn es ist diejenige, denen die alten Kulturvölker die sagenhaften Ernteerträge und ihre körperliche und geistige Freiheit zu verdanken hatten. - Was wir heute in den Schulen etc. lehren und lernen, ist entweder Volks- oder Selbstbetrug. Und je eher wir einen dicken Strich unter diese tragische Verirrung ziehen, um so besser ist es für uns und unsere Nachwelt.

Einem alten Förster- und Järgeschlecht entstammend, das sich um das Jahr 1200 am Plöckensteinersee in Oberösterreich ansiedelte, bzw. von den Passauer Kirchenfürsten in diese Waldwildnis verbannt wurde, war es schon von frühester Jugend an mein sehnlichster Wunsch, auch wieder ein Förster zu werden.

Diesem Wunsche stellten sich aber von allem Anfang an allerhand Hindernisse entgegen. In erster Linie schien ich meinem Vater, einem fast 2 Meter großen und breitschultrigen Mann, den die Wildschützen und Schwärzer wie den Teufel fürchteten, für diesen, damals sehr gefährlichen Beruf zu schwach. Oder, wie er sich auszudrücken pflegte, "zu z'nichtig".

Zweitens wollte er mit allen seinen 6 Buben hoch hinaus. Sie sollten die Herren wieder werden, die ihre Vorfahren waren, bevor sie zur Urfehdeschwörung von ihrer festen Donaубurg weg nach Passau gelockt, dort von den bischöflichen Söldnern auf Befehl überwältigt, z.T. gerichtet, bzw. als Landpfleger in die bayrischen Urwälder verbannt wurden.

"Meinetwegen kannst du ja Forstmann werden. Aber, wenn schon, dann nur unter der Bedingung, daß du die höhere Beamtenbahn einschlägst. Also fleißig lernst und die höheren Schulen wie deine Brüder absolvierst." dekretierte mein Vater.

Als ich dann die zum gewählten Beruf notwendige Mittelschulvorbildung hatte, machte ich mit dem mir widerlichen Lernen Schluß und stellte so viele Lausbübereien an, daß man mir ein Zeugnis gab, das mich automatisch ausschloß. - So glaubte ich am raschesten dem angestrebten Ziel näher zu kommen.

Mein Vater las dieses Abgangszeugnis und zugehörigen Schulbescheid-, faltete das Ganze ruhig zusammen, gab mir die Belege zurück und wies mich sodann aus dem Zimmer mit der Weisung, ihm ja nicht wieder unter die Augen zu kommen. Ich wußte, daß ich von nun an von meinem Vater keinerlei Hilfe mehr zu erwarten hatte.

Nahezu ein Jahr lang lebte ich zum größten Teil in einer Hütte, die ich

mir im Walde baute, fing Vögel und fischte und verwilderte nach und nach derart, daß meine Mutter schließlich kategorisch eingriff und meinen ältesten Bruder - damaligen k.u.k. Forst- und Domänenverwalter in einem Salzburger Wirtschaftsbezirk - veranlaßte, mir die forstliche Praxiszeit zu ermöglichen.

Eine Verwandte ermöglichte mir den Besuch der Försterschule, die ich mit gutem Erfolg absolvierte. Und kurz darauf legte ich zum vorgeschriebenen Zeitpunkt die dazugehörige Staatsprüfung mit sehr gutem Erfolge ab.

Damit war der Weg zur Erreichung des Endzieles offen, das ich nach dem ersten Weltkrieg, den ich von Anfang bis Ende mitmachen mußte, auch erreichte. - Ich erhielt eines der abgelegensten, aber schönsten Reviere als Revierförster zugewiesen und war restlos glücklich. - Mit meinem Vater söhnte ich mich kurz vor seinem Tode aus, indem ich ihm versprach, mich privat weiter zu bilden.

Eines Tages wurde das gesamte Forstpersonal in die Forstamtskanzlei zitiert, wo uns mitgeteilt wurde, daß im Auftrage des Generalbevollmächtigten des Fürsten, - Grafen Henkel-Donnersmark - die Reviere notwendiger Ersparungen wegen zusammengelegt und, soweit sie sich nur als Jagdbezirke verwenden lassen, von Jägern betreut werden.

Jeder Forstbeamte hat Vorschläge zu machen, wie man ev. die Erträge steigern könnte, was praktisch nur durch Holztransportverbilligungen möglich wäre. - Eine Pragmatik, wie z.B. im Staatsforstdienst, könne sich ein Privatbetrieb nicht mehr leisten. - Von diesem kommenden Abbau werden selbstverständlich in erster Linie die jüngeren Förster betroffen, von denen ich der jüngste, also der am gefährdetste war. - So lautete der Auftrag des Generalbevollmächtigten, den sich der Fürst nahm, als die bisherige - auf bürokratischer Verwaltungsbasis stehende - Hofkammer endgültig versagte. - Andererseits der Fürst außerstande war, das alljährlich steigende Defizit aus eigener Tasche zu bezahlen.

In schweren Gedanken versunken ging ich nach dieser traurigen Mitteilung ins Revier zurück. - Die Lage schien hoffnungslos. - Denn - fragte ich mich, - wie soll ich als junger und unerfahrener Förster ein Problem lösen, demgegenüber die gewiegtsten Verwaltungsbeamten, die der Fürst konsultierte, restlos versagten.

Kurze Zeit darauf wurde über Antrag der lokalen Betriebsleitung eine Waldbahn projektiert und vom Bauchef der Forstdirektion Gmunden, Hofrat Ing. Brucker, in Angriff genommen. Aber schon nach wenigen Kilometern zeigten sich so unüberwindliche Hindernisse, daß dieses Vorhaben wieder eingestellt und die bereits gelegten Schienen abgerissen und abtransportiert wurden.

Damit war die letzte Hoffnung, mein Revier forstlich aufschließen zu können, geschwunden. Und nun war guter Rat wirklich teuer.

"Wenn dir einmal so recht schwer und bange zu Mut ist und du gar nicht mehr ein und aus weißt in deinem Leben, dann gehe zum Wasser, in dem du mich findest, wenn ich einmal nicht mehr da bin, und dir raten oder helfen kann. So lange du aber noch klein bist, mußt du das Wasser meiden. Denn im Wasser befinden sich die Seelen der Abgestorbenen. - Die guten und die bösen Geister, die kleine Buben zu sich ins Wasser ziehen, die sich neugierig über Wässer beugen." So belehrte mich meine Mutter, nachdem mich kurz vorher unsere Magd in letzter Sekunde aus dem großen Brunnentrog fischte, der vor dem Forsthaus unter einem mächtigen Kirschbaum stand, von dem die Blüten ins Wasser fielen, mit denen ich Schifferl spielte.

Und so saß ich oft und gerne, zu einer kurzen Rast, am kristallklaren Waldbach, der über tiefe Schluchten hinweg, seine frischen Wässer hinaus ins Tal führte, in denen es oft und oft goldig-gelb aufblitzte, wenn sich ausgereifte Kieselsteine gegenseitig rieben. - Forellen bewegungslos standen und zur Laichzeit mühelos selbst frei überfallende Wassermassen mit Hilfe der, das Wasser selbst am Steilhang im labilen Gleichgewicht haltenden Innenkräfte der quallenden (quellenden) Wässer - überwandten. Selbst kopfgroße Steine aus den tiefen und ruhig stehenden Forellentümpeln bei starkem Frost aufschwammen, weil sich die Sauerstoffmassen des Wassers an der Oberfläche konzentrierten und damit die bi-polaren Spannungen so wuchsen, daß normale Gewichte gewichtslos wurden.

So saß ich wieder einmal vor diesem rätselhaften Wesen "Wasser", das die moderne Wissenschaft als eine chemisch-tote Substanz betrachtet, die mit diversen Beimengungen verunreinigt ist, da war das Langgesuchte, die Problemlösung da. - "T r a g e n d e s" Wasser allein kann hier die Situation ändern.

Unter diesem Begriff verstanden meine Ahnen - "z i e h e n d e s", sich ständig beschleunigendes und dadurch ständig in der Nähe seines Anomaliepunktes (+4°C) erhaltendes, also spezifisch dichtes = trag- und schleppkräftiges Wasser.

Wasser, das imstande ist, seine Wegzehrung mitzuführen, die im Geschiebe steckt, das liegen bleibt, wenn durch natur-widrige Bewegungsarten die v.e. Trag- und Schleppkraft des Wassers verloren geht.

Mit "ziehendem" Wasser schwemmt meine Ahnen die schweren Buchenholzmassen aus den weitabgelegenen Revierteilen ins Tal, die eines Tages nicht mehr schwammen, weil man die



natürlichen Kurvensysteme änderte, die sich das Wasser, das ewig Bewegliche mühevoll aufbaute und die der moderne Wasserfachmann durch seine hydraulischen = druck- und wärmesteigenden Regulierungsmethoden mit enormen Steuermittelgeldern nach und nach zerstörte.

Das Geheimnis der naturrichtigen Massenbewegung im Wasser barg, wie ich rein intuitiv erkannte, der ufermäßige Bewegungs-widerstand. Mit anderen Worten erklärt: die das Medium in zyklischen Spiralraumkurven ein-spulende Zug - spirale. Daher - ohne Widerstände keine Bewegung.

Vom Widerstands-einfluß hängt die Bewegungs-kraft und von dieser die Trag- und Schleppkraft des Blutes der Erde, des Wassers ab.

Wasser ist also nur dann der Ur-sprung allen Lebens, wenn man es naturrichtigt bewegt. Denn im anderen Fall bauen sich im selben Medium die bösen-artigen, das Medium und dessen Umgebung - zersetzenden niederwertigen Energie-arten auf, die die Alten "bösen Geister" nannten.

Nun verstand ich auch, warum meine Vorväter ständig im Konflikt mit hohen Kirchenfürsten waren. Alle neuartigen Glaubensansichten bedingungslos ablehnten und fest und treu an den altgermanischen Anschauungen hängen, laut denen die guten und schlechten Geister rund um uns, in den Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft stecken und uns so oder so beeinflussen, je nachdem wir ihre Fortentwicklung durch eine naturrichtige Bewegung fördern oder durch moderne Bewegungs-arten stören.

Visionär sah ich meinen verstorbenen Vater am Schwemmbach stehen, wie er seinen Holz- und Schwemmknecchten das naturrichtige Verlegen des Gerinnes zeigte. D.h. die künstlichen Bewegungs-widerstände schuf, die, so merkwürdig dies auch klingen mag, das Wasser beschleunigten, dadurch frisch, spezifisch dicht und schwer, also trag- und schleppkräftig machten.

Von diesem Tag an wurde ich sehend und begann, meine Umwelt mit ganz anderen Augen als bisher zu betrachten. Und fast jeder Reviergang in diesen, von menschlichen Ein-flüssen fast gänzlich verschonten, weit abgelegenen Wald- und Jagdgebieten, brachte neue Erkenntnisse. Und als dann im nächsten Herbst der Fürst, diesmal zum ersten Male mit seiner Frau zum Jagdaufenthalt erschien, besaß ich die Sicherheit, das bisher unlösbare Transportproblem naturrichtig lösen zu können.

Der Fürst war ein großer und gefürchteter Spötter. Er machte alles, was man ihm zu tun empfahl. Aber wehe, wenn das ihm angeratene fehlschlug.

Und so war auch sein erster Weg in mein Revier zu der verunglückten Waldbahn. Stellte diese und jene Frage und erwähnte schließlich, daß er die unfähigen Leiter zum Teufel jagen werde. Wenige Tage später war der bisherige Forstamtsleiter entlassen. - Und jeder Revierförster hatte von nun an persönliche Rechte, jedoch auch die volle Verantwortung zu tragen. - Niemand ahnte, daß seine junge Frau seine Ratgeberin war.

Für die Jagd schien sich der Fürst in diesem Jahre kaum zu interessieren. - Fuhr von Revier zu Revier und ließ sich von zuständigen Revierförster genau informieren. - Niemand wagte, ihm die Wahrheit zu sagen, die im wesentlichen darin bestand, daß korrupteste Zustände in der bisherigen Leitung herrschten.

Auf seine Frage, ob sich die Gutseinkünfte soweit verbessern ließen, daß sich der Besitz selbst erhält, mehr fordere er nicht, wenn nun endlich Ordnung eintritt, die ein von ihm bestellter Vertrauensmann herstellen wird, jedoch die örtlichen Verhältnisse nicht kennt, antwortete ich überzeugungsgemäß, daß dies ohneweiteres möglich ist, wenn man ein Schwemmprojekt durchführen läßt, das ich bis ins kleinste Detail ausgearbeitet habe. - Auch für die Funktion volle Verantwortung übernehme.

Der Fürst interessierte sich jedoch nur ganz allgemein für diesen Vorschlag, stellte verschiedene Fragen, ging längere Zeit sinnend auf und ab, stieg dann in seinen Wagen, grüßte zurück und fuhr ab.

Und nun kommt eine Episode, die scheinbar gar nicht in den Rahmen des hier zu Sagenden paßt, jedoch für alles Weitere den Ausschlag und meinem Leben eine ungeahnte Richtung gab.

Wenige Tage nach obiger Aussprache und Inspektion des Fürsten Adolf zu Schaumburg-Lippe erschien der Forstamtsjäger mit einem Dienstzettel des den bisherigen Forstamtsleiter ersetzenden Oberbeamten, in dem die Weisung stand, Ihre hochfürstliche Durchlaucht die Fürstin an der genau festgesetzten Stelle um Schlag 4 Uhr des gleichen Tages zwecks Abschluß des im letzten Jagdrapport gemeldeten, dort und dort stehenden Kapitalhirsches zu erwarten.

Niemand hatte bisher die junge Frau gesehen und niemand wußte, daß sie Interesse an der Jagdausübung hat. Frauen waren in Försterkreisen im Allgemeinen als Jagdausübende nicht gerne gesehen und so wartete ich mit gemischten Gefühlen der Dinge, die da kommen.

Punkt 4 Uhr des bestimmten Tages fuhr - der Kutscher in großer Parade - die Gutsherrin vor. Ich sah eine junge blasse, schwarzhaarige, äußerst schick gekleidete und jedenfalls bildschöne Frau, die lässig im Wagen zurückgelehnt, meine Vorstellung entgegennahm und mich mit halb geschlossenen Augen scharf fixierte.

Ich ersuchte die Fürstin, aus dem Wagen zu steigen, da wir nahe beim Ziel seien und das letzte Stück zu Fuß zurückzulegen ist. Schon sprang sie, bevor ich ihr die Hand bieten konnte, aus dem Wagen, gab mir lachend die Hand und sagte: also lieber Förster sehen Sie zu, daß ich zu meinem morgigen Geburtstag - es ist der Wunsch des Fürsten - den Kapitalen erlege.

Ich nahm ihren Stutzen und die dazugehörige Munition vom Wagen, ließ dafür mein Gewehr zurück und forderte die Gutsherrin auf, mir möglichst lautlos zu folgen. - Der Kutscher erhielt den Auftrag, bei der nahegelegenen Jagdhütte auszuspannen und den Abruf zu erwarten.

Eine Zeitlang ging die Fürstin wortlos hinterher. Dann hielt sie mich am Rock fest und meinte: "Sie halten mich offenbar für eine große Jägerin. Ich muß Sie aber diesbezüglich eines besseren belehren. Ich habe mein ganzes Leben lang noch niemals auf ein Wild geschossen und erst heute Früh das Gewehr ausprobiert, das mir der Fürst zu meinem morgigen Geburtstag schenkte." Ich sah die Fürstin so von der Seite her an, kratzte mir hinter dem Ohr, worauf sie herzlich lachte und meinte, daß es schon schief gehen werde.

"Wenn Sie sich - Durchlaucht - streng an meine Anordnungen halten und mir nach altem Jägerrecht auch sonst bedingungslos gehorchen, dann werden Sie jedenfalls auf den stärksten Hirsch im weiten Umkreis heute schießen. - Ob Sie ihn treffen, ist eine andere Frage. - " Sie verbeugte sich lächelnd und erklärte, daß sie sich bedingungslos dem gestrengen Führer und Lenker unterordnen werde. - Damit war das Eis gebrochen. - Und nach kurzer Zeit standen wir vor dem, am Alpenrand befindlichen, für diesen Zweck hergerichteten Hochstand, von dem aus die Fürstin ihren ersten Schuß auf Wild abgeben sollte.

Die Fürstin sah der steilen Leiter entlang hinauf, dann entlang der Leiter herunter, sah dann mich an und erklärte seelenruhig, daß sie da hinauf in ihrem Leben nicht kommen könne.

Ich werde Sie auf den Arm nehmen und hinauftragen, war meine Antwort. Sie erklärte sich eingedenk des abgegebenen Versprechens einverstanden. Und so faßte ich die Fürstin unter, forderte sie auf, sich an mir festzuhalten und schon stieg ich, mit der nicht ganz leichten Last langsam hinauf und setzte sie aufs schwankende Brett. In diesem Moment fuhr ein Windstoß ins Geäste, die den Hochstand leicht bewegten. Rasch bitte hinunter, denn mir wird totenübel rief die Fürstin und würgte mich beinahe ab, so fest klammerte sie sich an meinen Hals. - In wenigen Minuten stand sie wieder auf festem Boden.

Wie aber nun weiter? Mitten auf der Alm befand sich ein sogenannter Erdansitz. Eine gutgetamte Vertiefung, aus der man die ganze Almwiese als guter Kugelschütze leicht bestreichen konnte. Ich hatte zwar wenig Hoffnung auf irgendwelchen Erfolg, steuerte jedoch trotzdem auf diesen Tiefstand zu und erklärte der Fürstin die zu erwartende Situation, wenn ich den Hirsch mit der Muschel an- und herbeirufen werde.

Da noch reichlich Zeit war, ließ ich die Fürstin einige Anschlagübungen machen, worauf sie erklärte, in sitzender Stellung am sichersten abkommen (treffen) zu können. Und so empfahl ich

ihr, sich fest in die Ecke zu setzen, richtete ihr eine gute Gewehrauflage und damit war alles Erdenkliche getan, was unter diesen Umständen vorzusehen war.

Nun begann es langsam dämmerig zu werden. Ein kühler Wind begann uns von der vermutlichen Austrittsstelle des Wildes entgegen zu ziehen. Weit und breit ließ sich nichts sehen. Auf den umliegenden Höhen begannen die Hirsche zu röhren, was die Fürstin offensichtlich ängstlich machte und mich daher aufforderte, etwas näher zu rücken.

Und dann nahm ich die Muschel, die ich gut beherrschte. Schon nach dem ersten Anruf antwortete die tiefe Stimme des Recken auf dem gegenüberliegenden Hang. Dann hörte man starkes Brechen des langsam herankommenden Rudels, das der unruhig werdende Platzhirsch ständig durcheinander sprengte.

Da merkte ich, daß die Fürstin das Jagdfieber mächtig packte und derart zu schütteln begann, daß an ein sicheres Schießen nicht zu denken war. Na - dachte ich mir - auch das noch und drückte der Fürstin die auf- und abhüpfenden Schenkel etwas unsanft nieder. Dies war sie nicht gewohnt. Ärgerte sich und damit war das Fieber auch schon vorüber. Nun hieß es rasch handeln. Und schon machte ich den Sprengruf auf der Muschel nach. Und schon stand der Hirsch, wie aus Fels geformt, am Waldesrand.

Rund um ihn trat das starke Kahlwildrudel aus. Ein brunftiges Alttier drängte sich Liebesgunst fordernd an den Hirsch, der es mit seinem Geweih ungnädig abschlug. Die Erbeste machte einen so komischen Seitensprung, daß die Fürstin beinahe hell aufgelacht hätte. Dann frug sie: "Soll ich schießen?" - Ich antwortete kurz: "Warten".

Da ich mich mit der Muschel nicht mehr rührte, begann sich der Hirsch für sein Rudel wieder mehr zu interessieren und nahm ein schwaches Schmaltier aufs Korn, das seitwärts äste. Langsam näherte er sich der Auserkorenen, die flüchten wollte, als sie die Absicht ihres Herrn und Gebieters merkte. - Es war zu spät - und war wahrscheinlich in der nächsten Sekunde schon Mutter. Ich sah die Fürstin von der Seite an, die etwas rot wurde, als sie meinen Blick merkte, jedoch sofort reagierte, als ich sie aufforderte, sich schießfertig zu machen. Aber schon wieder begann ihr ganzer Körper vor Fieber zu schlagen. Warten zischte ich hinüber und drückte ihre abermals wippenden Schenkel rücksichtslos nieder. Und wieder ärgerte sich die Fürstin. Dadurch war das Fieber wieder verschwunden.

Nun hieß es aber rasch handeln. Ich nahm die Muschel und rief den Hirsch mit einem gegen den Boden zu gerichteten schwachen Trenzer an. Schon war der nach v.e. Beschlag hindösende Hirsch wieder hellwach. Federnd kam er, das ganze Terrain absuchend, Schritt um Schritt näher. Waden - flüsterte ich hinüber - bis er breit steht.

Im nächsten Moment bot uns der Kapitale sein breites Blatt. - Jetzt könnten Sie es versuchen. - Haben Sie gestochen? Ja. - Na dann ruhig zielen. Im nächsten Moment brach der Schuß - den der Hirsch waidwund quittierte und sodann in hoher Flucht schräg über die Alpenwiese abging.

Nun erst packte die Fürstin das Fieber wieder, um das ich mich jedoch nicht mehr weiter kümmerte, sondern gespannt in den Wald hineinhorchte. - Nichts war zu vernehmen. - Also muß der schwerkranke Hirsch nahe dem Waldesrand am Steilhang stehen, den zu nehmen ihm offenbar schon schwer fiel.

Ich nahm Gewehr und Patronen, bat die Fürstin mich an der Anschußstelle zurück zu erwarten, und ging dem Hirsch langsam und vorsichtig nach. - Es war so wie ich vermutete. - Im Feuer des Fangschusses brach der stärkste Hirsch des Jahres zusammen.

Nun rief ich die Fürstin, die atemlos ankam und überreichte ihr streng waidmännisch zeremoniell den schweißgenetzten Bruch. Als sie ihren breitrandigen Ausseerhut abnahm, um den Bruch zu befestigen, sah ich erst im mittlerweile aufgehenden Mondlicht, wie schön diese Frau war, die es verstand, als Bürgerliche die Frau des regierenden Fürsten Schaumburg-Lippe zu werden.

Nun rasch den Hirsch aufbrechen und nach Hause. Mühsam zogen wir gemeinsam den schweren Hirsch etwas vor und legten ihn aufs Geweih. Während ich den Hirsch aufbrach, hielt die Fürstin den Lauf.

War es die vorhergegangene Aufregung oder der starke Brunftgeruch des alten Platzhirsches oder sonst etwas, daß der Frau plötzlich die Nerven versagten. Ich kam gerade noch zurecht, um sie aufzufangen und ohnmächtig ins herbstliche Almgras zu legen.

Was nun tun? Blitzschnell blätterte ich im Geiste das Forstschullehrbuch: Erste Hilfe bei Unglücksfällen durch. - Wie man ohnmächtige Fürstinnen ins Leben zurückruft, war nicht enthalten. - Aber, das "tragende" frische Quellwasser wird helfen. - Rasch war ich mit einem Hutvoll zur Stelle und wusch der Fürstin Gesicht und Schläfe. – Alles vergebens. - Vielleicht hilft ein kalter Bauschen aufs Herz? - Ja, aber, -- ? Ich legte mein Ohr auf die Brust und horchte. - Es schlug noch. Im Rucksack hatte ich ein Reservesacktuch. Dann tat ich einen schweren Schnauer und plazierte den kalten Bauschen kunstgerecht aufs Herz. - Kurzum, ich brachte die Fürstin zum Bewußtsein. Nachdem sie sich wieder erholt hatte, hupte ich dem Kutscher, der auch schon schwer besorgt war, und nachdem der Hirsch am Jagdwagen lag, ging es im scharfen Trab heimwärts.

Nichts bringt Menschen näher, als ein interessantes Jagderlebnis. Nächsten Tag erschien die Fürstin im Jagdhaus, erzählte, daß kein Mensch glaube, daß sie den starken Hirsch eigenhändig erlegte und teilte mir zugleich mit, daß ihr der Fürst mein Revier für diese Jagdsaison reservierte. Sie hatte in diesem Herbst noch manches gute Stück erlegt.

Bei diesen langen Pirschgängen war reichlich Gelegenheit, die schwierige Situation des schwer passiven Gutsbesitzes zu besprechen. Das Ende vom Lied war die Ausschaltung des bisherigen bürokratischen Hofkammerapparates mit all seinem verderblichen Anhang. Dies alles wäre ohne Eingreifen dieser tatkräftigen Frau, die rücksichtslos wegschob, was ihren Interessen schadete, nicht möglich gewesen. Und so kam es schließlich zu Ausbau der Steyringer Schwemmanlage, die insofeme großes Aufsehen erregte, weil es gelang, den Holztransport selbst in schwierigsten und mit keinem anderen Mittel aufschließbaren Gebieten - um über 90% zu senken. Im kommenden Jahre war der bisher schwer passive Forstbetrieb hochaktiv. - Leider wurde infolge dieser rationellen und nach jeder Richtung hin neuen Betriebsführung später keinerlei Rücksicht auf die forstpflegerischen Maßnahmen genommen und - die damals gute Holzkonjunktur ausnützend - zuerst der z.T. schon überständige Altholz- und später sogar auch der kaum mannbare Jungwald rücksichtslos niedergeschlagen. - Dieser unerhörte Raubbau wäre unmöglich gewesen, wenn die politische Bezirksforstinspektion funktioniert hätte.

Schon im ersten Jahr nach der Fertigstellung dieser Großanlage mit angeschlossenem Sägewerk erschien der damalige Landwirtschaftsminister Rudolf Buchinger in Begleitung des Sektionschefs (Generaldirektor Ing. Eduard Loew), des Bauchefs der öst. Bundesforste Hofrat Ing. Josef Glatz, Oberforstrates Hagmüller und ließ sich die Anlage zeigen.

Wenige Tage später wurde ich ins Landwirtschaftsministerium geladen, wo mir dann im Parlament in Anwesenheit des damaligen Finanzministers Dr. Viktor Kienböck ein 4-facher Hofratsgehalt in Goldwährung angeboten wurde, wenn ich zwecks Ausbau ähnlicher Schwemmanlagen in den Staatsdienst als nur dem Landwirtschaftsminister unterstellter Konsulent übertrete.

Ich hielt mir Bedenkzeit vor und fuhr nach Steyring zurück, wo ich dem Fürsten und seinem kaufmännischen Direktor vom obigen Angebot Mitteilung machte.

Am 24. September 1924 wurde ich abermals telegrafisch nach Wien gerufen und machte dortselbst im Auftrage des Fürsten zu SchaumburgLippe folgenden Gegenvorschlag:

Ein Konsortium, bestehend aus dem Fürsten und einer reichsdeutschen Holzhandelsgesellschaft übernimmt den ganzen Einschlag der österreichischen Staatsforste. Vor allem die Nutzung der sogenannten unbringbaren Urwaldforste Österreichs im Ausmaße von ungefähr 25 Millionen Festmeter wertvollster Oberaltholzmassen um 50% billiger, als die Gestehungskosten in leichtbringbaren Waldgebieten dem Staat kosten.

Als bankmäßige Sicherstellung für die Einhaltung dieses Staatsvertrages deponiert der Fürst ein Vadium von 35000 engl. Goldpfund.

50% der bürokratischen, für jeden rationellen Betrieb unbrauchbaren Staatsforstbeamten können pensioniert oder sonstwie verwendet werden. Die restliche Beamtenschaft hätte die forstpolizeiliche Aufsicht bei Einhaltung der forstpflegerischen Vorschriften zu übernehmen.

Beide Minister schlugen dieses Anbot ab und wiederholten ihr obiges Anbot, das ich nach langem Zaudern annahm. Meine Aufnahme mußte des außergewöhnlichen Gehaltes und der sonstigen Ungewöhnlichkeiten wegen vom Parlament genehmigt werden.

Schon nach kurzer Staatsdienstzeit erkannte ich, daß die ganze Regierung dem bürokratischen Beamtenapparat gegenüber machtlos war, die jede Form einer Entpragmatisierung ablehnte und auch jeden Kommerzialisierungsversuch mit allen zur Verfügung stehenden Mitteln bekämpfte. Nach ungefähr 2 Jahren unterlag ich dem geeinten Beamtendruck und wurde, nach Erklärung der Finanzprokurator, daß der v.e. Vertrag, als den guten Sitten widersprechend, rechtsungültig sei, mit Hilfe eines gefälschten Protokolls (noch in meinem Besitz) entlassen.

Bemerkenswert hierbei war, daß die Staatsforste und Schaumburg-Lippe meine Patentrechte anfochten, wonach ich nach dieser Richtung und auch wegen der unrechtmäßigen Entlassung wegen Prozeß führen mußte. Den Patentprozeß verloren beide Gegner,- worauf mir die diesbezgl. Rechte vom Staat abgekauft wurden, die er niemals auswerten konnte, weil niemand das eigentliche Wesen dieser Schwemmanlagen kannte.- Schließlich wurde mir ein neuer und noch besser dotierter

Vertrag (alle Verträge befinden sich noch heute in meinem Besitz) angetragen, mit der Bedingung daß ich keinen zivilen Rechtsanwalt zu Rate ziehen dürfe.

Zwei Juristen des Ministerium, die ich um Beratung bat, rieten, diesen raffiniert verklausulierten zweiten Vertrag an meiner Stelle nicht zu unterschreiben. Diese beiden Herren waren: Hofrat Dr. Glatt und Dr. Egger.

Als ich auf das hin den zweiten Vertrag ablehnte, bot mir Landwirtschaftsminister Thaler einen hohen Abfindungsbetrag an, wenn ich ein leeres Blatt Papier in blanko unterschreibe.- Gen. Direktor Loew ist hierfür Zeuge.- Auch dieses Angebot lehnte ich ab und machte schließlich das Gegenangebot, mit einer Million Schilling zu garantieren, daß eine Probeanlage, die unter vollkommenem Ausschluß aller Staats

forstbeamten mit Hilfe einer großen Baufirma errichtet wird, 1000 Festmeter in 8 stündiger Arbeitszeit auf 52 Kilometer liefert, sortiert und ordnungsgemäß lagert. Da es bisher auf diesem Gebiete nur möglich war, mit etwa 170 Mann etwa 90 Festmeter zu manipulieren, hielt man dieses Anbot als sowieso undurchführbar und ging pro forma darauf ein.

Die v.e. Million Schillinge wurde vom Chef der Österreich-Ungarischen.Baugesellschaft Ernst Steinhard deponiert und damit waren die öst. Bundesforste in der selbstgestellten Falle.

Nach ungefähr 8 Monaten war die Anlage fertig.- Und 4 Tage später wurde die Anlage mit einer mittleren Tagesleistung von ca. 1400 Festmeter pro 8-studentag ordnungsgemäß übergeben.- Im Kolladierungsprotokoll der steirischen Landesregierung wurde diese Anlage als ein technisches Wunderwerk genannt und Baumeister Ernst Steinhard wurde für die tatkräftige Leitung ( er hat die Anlage erst nach ihrer Fertigstellung gesehen) zum Technischen Rat ernannt.

Nun war die Generaldirektion der öst. Bundesforste, die zu dieser Zeit ein ehemaliger Mehlhändler und noch heutiger Generaldirektor Preindl leitet, an der Reihe, den schweren Schaden gutzumachen, der mir zugefügt wurde.

Generaldirektor Preindl, lud ohne mein Wissen den Technischen Rat Steinhard zu sich und erklärte, der Baugesellschaft größere Anlagen zur Durchführung zuzuweisen, wenn er mich bewege, in seine Dienste überzutreten.

Ich war einverstanden mit diesem Antrag.- Und als alles soweit in Ordnung war, neue Aufgaben zu übernehmen, erklärte Preindl von v.e. Vereinbarungen, die mündlich abgeschlossen wurden, nichts zu wissen.- Steinhard war so unvorsichtig gewesen, bei den mündlichen und der Forstbeamtenschaft wegen vertraulichen Verhandlungen keinen Zeugen zuzuziehen. (Steinhard lebt heute in England).

Ministerialrat Ing. Ehrenberger bekam Auftrag, die klaglos funktionierende und noch heute arbeitende Schwemmanlage Neuberg zu diskreditieren und schließlich wurde sogar eine Geheimbroschüre herausgegeben und als Warnung an alle ausländischen Forststellen (Ministerien) etc. versendet.- Denn zu dieser Zeit stellte sich schon klar heraus, daß die moderne Forst- und Wasserwirtschaft schwerer Bewegungsfehler wegen das bedingungslose Absterben der Wässer und Wälder verursache. Und Ministerialrat Ehrenberger, den ich öffentlich schwer angriff unterlag jämmerlich, weil mir selbst ausländische Ingenieure öffentlich recht gaben.

Der einzige, der mir gegenüber seine Versprechungen und getroffenen Abmachungen genau einhielt, war der Jude Steindhard,- mit dem ich große Projektierungen und Anlagen im Ausland durchführte und beim Umbruch seine Firma und sein Vermögen restlos verlor.

Und nun kommt ein Kapitel, das insoferne interessant ist, weil ich auf Grund der Entdeckung der Ur-wasser-entstehung mit reichsdeutschen Industriellen und in diesem Zusammenhang zum ersten Male im Juli des Putschjahres 1934 zu Adolf Hitler mit Wissen des österr. Bundeskanzler Dr. Dollfuß geladen wurde.

Den Anlaß hierzu gab eine schwere Auseinandersetzung, die in Anwesenheit des vorgenannten Staatschefs mit den höchsten Leitern der Forst- und Wasserwirtschaft in der Reangasse 6, IV. Stock stattfand.

Ich wurde von mir gutgesinnten Ministerialbeamten aufgefordert, in der Hochschule für Bodenkultur einen öffentlichen Vortrag darüber zu halten, daß die behördlichen Vorschriften auf den Gebiete der modernen Forst- und Wasserwirtschaft natur-un-richtig, daher falsch und im höchsten Maß wirtschaftsgefährlich sind.

Dieser Vortrag wurde im letzten Moment, als schon der Vortragssaal bis zum Bersten gefüllt war, vom Ordinarius Dr. Olbrich abgesagt, weil man schwere Tumulte fürchtete.

Auf das hin wurde Bundeskanzler Dr. Dollfuß ersucht, einer sachlichen Auseinandersetzung zwischen den höchsten Forst- und Wasserwirtschaftsbeamten und mir persönlich beizuwohnen.- Auf meine Erklärung und darauffolgender Beweisführung, daß die forstwissenschaftlichen und wasserwirtschaftlichen, also gesetzlichen Vorschriften die Ursachen des Sterbens der Wälder, Wässer, Fluren und Felder sind, forderte Dr. Dollfuß die anwesenden Herren, etwa 25 an der Zahl auf, diese schwere Anschuldigung zu widerlegen.- Kein einziger kam dieser Aufforderung nach.

Wenige Tage später wurde ich amtlich vor das versammelte Professorenkollegium der beiden Fachgruppen in die Hochschule für Bodenkultur geladen, wo ich gefragt wurde, wie nach meiner Ansicht das Wasser geführt und gelenkt werden müsse.

Ich antwortete kurz und bündig: "so wie der Saubär beim Laufen brunzt". Das Professorienkollegium war zuerst sprachlos.- Dann forderte mich der Rektor auf, mich etwas dezenter auszudrücken, da man nicht im Walde, sondern in einer Hochschule sei.- Ich erklärte sodann, daß Wasser in ganz besonders geformten Profilen geführt werden müsse, deren Grundriß gleich dem Längsriß u.s.w. gleich sein müßten.Niemand verstand. Nun sprang der weltberühmte Hydrauliker Dr. Forchheimer auf, ging zur Tafel und erklärte an Hand meterlangen Formeln, daß ich absolut recht habe, daß man Wasser so führen müsse wie der Saubär brunzt.- D.h. etwas näher erklärt, Horizontal- und Vertikalkurven sich rhythmisch wechselnd ineinanderfügen müssen.- Und zwar so, daß unter keinen Umständen ein hydraulischer Massendruck

entstehen könne.- Der bekannte Gelehrte Wilhelm Exner rief mich darauf zu sich und ersuchte mich, die dort gegebene Erklärung niederzuschreiben und in ein Couvert gesteckt, ihm persönlich zu übergeben. Er prüfte den Inhalt, ließ das Ganze versiegeln und deponierte es als Vorstand der Akademie der Wiener Wissenschaften, um mir das Prioritätsrecht der- wie er sagte vielleicht wirtschaftswichtigsten Entdeckung für alle Zeiten zu wahren.

Bundeskanzler Dr. Dollfuß bot mir nach einer langen Unterredung, die in Anwesenheit des späteren Wiener Bürgermeister Dr. Ing. Neubacher, Dr. Weiß und Dr. Leopold in einem separierten Zimmer eines Wiener Restaurants stattfand, das Landwirtschaftsministerium an, das ich ablehnte, weil es unmöglich gewesen wäre, in einer christlichsozialen Regierung eine

naturrechtliche Behandlung des wichtigsten Lebensfundamentes Wasser aus rein religiösen Gründen zu erklären und durchzuführen.- Wie dies gemeint ist, wird sich später von selbst erklären.

Um die weitere Entwicklung zu verstehen, muß eine Entdeckung kurz gestreift werden, die ich zu dieser Zeit machte.- Die näheren Zusammenhänge werden erst später näher erklärt.- Hier geht es nur darum, alle Voraussetzungen aufzuzeigen, die nach und nach zur Erkenntnis des Wesens der eigentlichen Lebenskrafturzeugung über dem Umweg der - "originellen" - Massenbewegungsart führten.

Viele Beobachtungen zeigten immer wieder, daß es lediglich von der Bewegungsart abhängt, ob sich das Wasser (Blut der Erde) vermehrt und verbessert.- Immer weniger wird und schließlich abstirbt, wenn man es -hydraulisch- d.h. nach bisherigen Regulierungsvorschriften bewegt.

Nichts lag näher, als die natürliche Bewegungsart in von Menschen noch unbeeinflussten Quellbächen genau zu studieren und zweckentsprechende Versuche durchzuführen.

Dabei stellte sich immer wieder heraus, daß die erste Voraussetzung zur Fort- und Aufpflanzung (Vermehrung und Qualitätsverbesserung) des eigentlichen Entwicklungsfundamentes, eine druck- und daher wärme-lose Fortbewegungsart, also gewissermaßen, die anti-hydraulische Wassermassenbeschleunigung ist.

Überall dort, wo Wasser nach -hydraulischen- Prinzipien, sei es nun eine moderne Wasserlaufregulierung oder durch Druckturbinen geführt wurde, starben nach kurzer Zeit die Forellen und die sonstige höhere Tierwelt ab. - Und an Stelle dieser, begann sich das pathogene Leben, die verschiedenen Parasiten und Zerstörungskeime zu be-leben. Was für die Fauna gilt, gilt auch für die Flora-, war die weitere Überlegung. Daraus ergab sich auch, daß sämtliche Nutz- und Trinkwasserleitungen natur-un-richtig, also falsch konstruiert, und was besonders schwer ins Gewicht fällt, materialmäßig unrichtig sind, weil durch Feuer vorbeeinflusstes Eisen der Katalysator für analysierenden, d.h. die Struktur eines organischen Gefüge ausdehnenden, zersetzenden- also elektrischen Stromartenaufbau ist.

Nach und nach gelang es, die naturrechtliche Wasserbewegungsart, wenn auch umständlich und kostspielig, daher für praktische Zwecke noch ungeeignet, zu kopieren.

Das kristallklare, vollkommen bakterienfreie, auffallend erfrischende und stark harntreibende Wasser war bedeutend besser im Geschmack als das weltberühmte Wiener Hochquellwasser an der Quelle, das bekanntlich durch die derzeitige Führungsart, soweit es sich um eiserne Druckrohrleitungen handelt, an Güte verliert.

Kein Wunder, daß dieses lt. fachlicher Untersuchung einwandfreie Wasser für Trink- und Kochzwecke sehr beliebt war. Aber schon nach kurzer Zeit zeigten sich auffallende Erscheinungen, die vor allem das weibliche Geschlecht, soweit es sich um jüngere Semester handelte, bewogen, dieses Pulverwasser, wie man es nannte, nicht mehr zu trinken. Es stellte sich nämlich eine nahezu unbezähmbare Geschlechtstriebverstärkung ein, gegen die ältere Semester beiderlei Geschlechtes nicht das geringste einzuwenden hatten.- Und als sich nun gar nach und nach herausstellte, daß dieses Wasser alte Frauen auffallend verjüngt und senile Greise ihre Potenz wiederum erhielten, wieder jung und leistungskräftig wurden, füllte sich mein Laboratorium zusehens.- Zudem stellte sich heraus, daß es keine Krankheit gibt, die nicht irgendwie zu schwinden begann. Und so begannen Ärzte und Wiener Spitäler in erster Linie unheilbare Kranke zu Versuchszwecken zu mir zu senden. Ein bekannter Arzt (Dr. Felzmann) nahm sich besonders der mit bisherigen Mitteln unheilbaren Kranken an und so nahm der Ansturm so zu, daß eines Tages die geheime Staatspolizei Wien in meinem Laboratorium Wiener-Gürtel 32 erschien und auf höheren Befehl diesen Betrieb einstellte, nachdem sich noch rasch ein Lues- und ein Malariakranker, einige Geheimpolizisten, die mir selbst noch unheilbare Krebskranke sandten, welche auch eine bedeutende Besserung erreichten, - kurierten. In diese Zeit fielen erwähnungswerte Ereignisse.- Vor allem medizinischer Art. - So wurde z.B. ein alter Mann, den das Kaufmännische Spital sandte und der nur mehr eine -jedoch versteinte Niere besaß, innerhalb ca. 6 Wochen steinfrei, - 51 Steine von Grieß- bis zur großen Erbsenform gingen durch bloßen Genuß dieses Wasser ab.

Eine Frau, die jahrelang gelähmt und bettlägerig war (sie hieß Frau Prinzhorn) erschien eines Tages bei mir, allerdings noch mit zwei Stöcken und erklärte, daß ihr erster Besuch dem galt, der ihr unbekannter Weise den Gebrauch ihrer Füße wiedergab.

Ein schwer an Anginapektoris leidender Mann machte nach einer ca. 6 wöchentlichen Wasserkur eine kleine Hochtour.

Krebskranke, die wahnsinnige Schmerzen litten, waren, wie von Zauberhand berührt, schmerzfrei.- Lues- und Malariakranke verloren die typischen Merkmale ihrer entsetzlichen Krankheit. Leukämiekranke (Weißblütige) erreichten ihr normales Blutinhaltsverhältnis wieder. Und so wären viele Fälle aufzuzeigen, die verschiedene Ärzte in Staunen versetzten.

Abschließend soll hier nur ein Fall noch erwähnt werden, der mein an Abwechslung reiches Leben abermals in eine neue Richtung lenkte.

Eines Tages kam der bekannte Kaffee-industrielle Julius Meinl zu mir, der sich aus gewissen Gründen sehr für das Wasser interessierte.- Aus dieser Bekanntschaft ergab sich die Bekanntschaft mit dem steinreichen Kaffee-industriellen Ludwig Roselius aus Bremen, der als Mann einer sehr jungen Frau nach Wien kam, um wiederum voll leistungsfähig zu werden.

Der Erfolg war derart, daß er mich nach Bremen einlud und mir dort ein großes Haus zur Erzeugung des Wunderwassers zur Verfügung stellen wollte.

Eines Tages spürte er starke Schmerzen im Bein.- Und eine Untersuchung durch Professor Sauerbruch Berlin erforderte die sofortige Abnahme des einen Beines.

Wenige Tage später erklärte Professor Sauerbruch der jungen Frau Roselius, daß jede Hoffnung - es handelte sich um einen schweren Krebsfall - vorüber sei. Seine Frau rief mich in Wien im Auftrage Roselius an, ob ich ihm Wasser per Flugzeug senden könne.- Ich verlangte auf Anraten meines Arztes das Einverständnis Sauerbruchs, der erklärte, man möge dem Todeskandidaten jeden Wunsch erfüllen.

Am nächsten Tag gingen die ersten Flaschen im für diesen Zweck gemieteten Flugzeug ab.- Und jeden weiteren Tag folgten weitere Sendungen.

Prof. Sauerbruch konnte sich, wie ich ständig unterrichtet wurde, die plötzliche Besserung nicht erklären.

Nach wenigen Wochen erschien Roselius in Wien und machte eine etwa 6 wöchentliche Nachkur und legte mir in dieser Zeit einen Vertrag auf kommerzionelle Auswertung dieses - in seiner chemischen Zusammensetzung dem Wunderwasser zu Maria Lourd sehr ähnlichen - Wassers vor, den ich aus verschiedenen Gründen ablehnte.

Ein jüdisches Konsortium machte mir den Vorschlag, am Semering ein großes Sanatorium für altersschwache Männer zu bauen, in dem junge blonde Mädchen das die Jugendkraft wiedergebende Wasser kredenzen.

Selbstverständlich schlug ich auch dieses Anbot rundweg ab.- Niemand konnte sich diese ausgesprochen "spezifischen" Heilungserfolge, wie eingeweihte Ärzte diese rätselhaften Fälle nannten, erklären.- Über meine Erklärungen, daß es sich hier um ganz selbstverständlich atomare Überkräfte, also höher-wertige Atom-energien handle, hatte man nur ein geringschätziges Lächeln.

Da kam eines Tages ein Telegramm an, das mich zu Adolf Hitler rief. Mein Rechtsanwalt Dr. Josef Führer, Wien, verständigte vorsichtsweise Bundeskanzler Dr. Dollfuß, der ohne weiteres sein Einverständnis zu dieser Berliner Reise gab.

Wenn ich der Einleitung, die diesem Ereignis vorausging, etwas mehr Raum als vielleicht sachlich notwendig widme, so geschieht dies aus dem Grunde, um das tönernen Fundament zu erkennen, auf dem diese Riesenorganisation des dritten Reiches stand.



In Berlin angekommen, holte mich ein Offizier irgend einer Wirtschaftsabteilung ab. - Führte mich in irgend ein Büro, wo man mir mitteilte, daß mich am nächsten Tag der Führer zu sprechen wünsche. Dies war am 22. Juli des Jahres 1934. Also wenige Wochen nach dem Röhmputsch, bei dem Hitler einige 70 Personen umlegen ließ. - Daher eigentlich Vorsicht notwendig gewesen wäre, die ich leider nicht übte. Aber vielleicht waren auch diese Unvorsichtigkeiten, wie so manches in meinem Leben Merkwürdige, schicksalsbedingt.

Nach v.e. Mitteilung forderte man mich auf, eine schriftliche Verpflichtung abzugeben, daß ich über diese Unterredung strengstes Stillschweigen zu wahren habe. - Ich unterschrieb mit dem Vorbehalt, daß mir daraus keinerlei Schaden entsteht, bzw. Verpflichtungen auferlegt werden.

Am nächsten Tag meldete ich mich zur vorgeschriebenen Zeit 12.07 Uhr im Vorraum der Reichskanzlei, wo mir das Nationale abgenommen und ich sonach nach Waffen untersucht wurde. - Man verlangte, dass ich Stock und Aktentasche zurücklasse. - Diesem Auftrag kam ich nicht nach, weil ich den Stock zum Gehen und den Inhalt der Tasche für die Unterredung benötigte. - Man gab sich damit zufrieden und so führte mich ein Mann in den ersten Stock und ersuchte mich, in einem Vorzimmer zu warten.

Wenige Minuten später erschien ein Uniformierter und bat mich zum Führer, den ich zum ersten Male in meinem Leben, am oberen Ende des großen Saales, in den ich trat, an einem großen Schreibtisch sitzen sah.

Hitler stand sofort auf und kam mir entgegen. - Ich grüßte und stellte mich vor. - Er dankte und ersuchte mich, an einem hinter mir stehenden Tisch, den ich beim Eintritt nicht bemerkte, Platz zu nehmen.

In diesem Moment erblickte ich den dort sitzenden Ministerialdirektor Wiluhn, mit dem ich vor Monaten eine schwere sachliche Auseinandersetzung hatte, weil ich gelegentlich einer Diskussion bemerkte, daß die moderne Wissenschaft die Hauptschuld an diesem wirtschaftlichen und kulturellen Niedergang - schwerer Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler wegen - machte.

Es handelte sich damals um ein großes Holzbringungsprojekt, das mir angetragen wurde. Ich ignorierte den verbissene Mienen zeigenden Oberbeamten und erwartete, mir Hitler genau betrachtend, dessen Gesprächseinleitung.

Ich habe - begann Hitler nach wenigen Sekunden, - Sie zu mir bitten lassen, weil ich viel von Ihnen hörte. Wenn ich richtig orientiert wurde, fuhr er fort, so behaupten Sie, daß die Technik der Entwicklung schade. - Möchten Sie mir - sprach er weiter, als er mein Nicken sah - darüber näheres sagen.

Herr Reichskanzler! - die alten Griechen erkannten schon oder richtiger gesagt n o c h, daß Technik, vom Altgriechischen "technao" herstammend, wörtlich übersetzt Selbstübertreibung, also Selbstbetrug bedeutet. - Und zwar insoferne, weil man darunter, naturrichtig definiert, eine Bewegungs-(Verlagerungs-)art zu verstehen hat, bei der bekannterweise der Bewegungs-Widerstand im Quadrat zur technischen Bewegungs-geschwindigkeits-steigerung wächst.

Die Ur-sache dieser Widerstandskraft-steigerung atomarer - reaktiver Funktionskraft ist die druck- und wärmesteigernde, also reibungs-vergrößernde Volumensvergrößerung.

Reibung erzeugt bekanntlich elektrischen Strom. Elektrischer Strom hat zersetzende Wirkungskraft, die mit der gewaltsamen Reibungssteigerung progressiv wächst. - Ich wartete einen Moment, um die Wirkung meiner Einleitung beobachten zu können. - Hitler, der mich durchdringend ansah, bat mit einer nervösen Handbewegung, fortzufahren.

Am meisten - fuhr ich fort - ist von dieser elektrischen Bewegungsartauswirkung das W a s s e r gefährdet. Und aus diesem Grunde muß es auch wirtschaftlich und damit kulturell den progressiven Krebsgang gehen, als diese technischen hydraulischen oder gar dynamischen Massenbewegungsarten forciert werden. Denn - Herr Reichskanzler - jede

Bewegung ist nur das Mittel zum Zweck - Reaktionen auszulösen, die die molekularen Schwingungs- und dadurch Temperatur-änderungen auslösen, die ihrerseits wieder unterschiedliche Spannungsarten aufbauen, aus denen dann, je nach Bewegungs- oder

Beschleunigungs-art medialer Massen, ein aufbauender (auftriebender) oder ein abbauender (rückstoßender) Feinstoff-abstrom in Strahlungszustand entspringt, der Pendel, Wümschelruten sichtbar, die organische Lebewelt unsichtbar, also meta-physisch bewegt, - Richtiger gesagt - bewegt und im zweiten Fall bewegt (beeinflusst) - dies oderjenes zu tun, d.h. wieder in Bewegung zu setzen. Daraus - entwickelte (erläuterte) ich weiter entstehen über dem Umweg v.e. Reaktionsfolgen ( Kettenreaktionen) Auswirkungen, von deren Macht und Größe man sich - ohne Kenntnis dieser Naturvorgänge - keine Vorstellung machte. Daher infolge eingangs erwähnter Fehl-bewegungen das alles in Erscheinung treten mußte, was wir heute in wiederum progressiver Steigerung zu erleben beginnen.

Bewegen ist also die fundamentalste Entwicklungs = Läuterungsvoraussetzung. Daher hängt von jedem kleinsten Bewegungs-anstoß Wohl und Wehe der arbeitenden Menschheit ab. Infolge der vorerwähnten ungeheuer langsamen Fortentwicklung von Ur-sache und Wirkung, die an und für sich dasselbe, jedoch in sich qualitative und quantitative Gegensätze sind, werden Mißgriffe erst nach Generationen wirksam.

Eine direkte Verbesserung oder Verschlechterung als Folge dieser oder jener Arbeitsart-verrichtung oder deren Steigerung ist demnach ausgeschlossen. - Denn in der Natur gibt es nur mittelbare, also bio-logische, d.h. ~ e - aktive Wirkungssteigerungen. Damit erledigt sich jedes vermeintliche Äquivalent, materielle oder feinstoffliche Energie-konzentrations-erhaltung von selbst. Denn - alles - ist dem ewigen Stoff wechsellvorgang - dem panta rhei - bedingungslos unterworfen, da dieser ewige Fluß das fundamentale Mittel zur stofflichen L ä u t e r u n g (allgemein Entwicklung genannt) ist.

Demnach - warf Hitler ein - müßte es nach Ihrer Ansicht auch eine reibungslose und daher widerstandslose Massenbewegungs-art geben!

Damit war der Kontakt hergestellt und nun legte ich erst so richtig los. Erklärte dem deutschen Staatschef die ungeheure Auswirkung dieser entwicklungs-schädlichen Energiestoffherzeugung, die durch die heutigen - ausnahmslos und ausschließlich die verkehrte Bewegungsart verwendenden - Maschinen, Fördergeräte und der Form, wie auch der Material ~ Legierungsart nach natur-un-richtigen - Bodenbearbeitungs- und Erntegeräte ausgelöst werden. Und nun machte ich den großen Fehler, indem ich es mir nicht verkneifen konnte, zu sagen: je rascher also die Räder der technischen Maschinen laufen, umso früher gehen wir naturgesetzmäßig durch einen fortentwicklungsgefährlichen Energiestoffabstrom physisch und psychisch zugrunde.

Hitler erkundigte sich um die sogenannten Wasseraufwertungsapparate, die ich ihm an Hand konstruktiv einwandfreien Unterlagen erklärte, worauf er aufstehend sagte: "Und wie kann ich Ihnen da helfen?" - Ich antwortete, daß es im Interesse des ganzen Volkes notwendig wäre, eine große Versuchsanstalt ins Leben zu rufen, die als schärfste Konkurrenz bisheriger zeigen würde und müßte, welch' tragischem Bewegungs- und Erregungs-irrtum die bisherige Wissenschaft auf allen Wirtschaftgebieten zum Opfer fiel. Im stetig steigenden Ausmaße sich und die ihr vertrauenden Volksmassen betrog.

Hitler dachte einen kurzen Moment nach, sah mich überlegend an - und drückte auf einen geheimen Knopf, der sich unter der Tischplatte befand.

Kurz darauf trat der Staatssekretär Ing. Keppler ins Zimmer. Diesem gab der Reichskanzler den dezidierten Befehl, alle Voraussetzungen für die Beweisführung des Vorerwähnten sofort zu schaffen. "Alles nähere wollen Sie mit Herrn Staatssekretär besprechen." - Hitler gab mir die Hand und damit war ich entlassen. - Keppler lud mich ein, mit in sein Zimmer zu kommen. - Wiluhn blieb beim Reichskanzler zurück.

Als wir ins Zimmer Keplers traten, läutete das Telefon, dessen Erledigung längere Zeit dauerte. Als das Gespräch erledigt war, kam auch Wiluhn ins Zimmer, setzte sich mit zum Tisch und frug mich: "Wie kamen Sie da herein?" - Ich antwortete kurz und schroff. "Durch die Haustür." - Hierauf öffnete Wiluhn seine Mappe und zeigte Keppier mehrere Schriftstücke, worauf mich auch Keppler von unten bis oben in einer nicht mißzuverstehenden Art und Weise zu messen begann. Und meinte: "das ist ja wirklich unglaublich." - Erst ein Jahr später erfuhr ich, daß es sich um Schriftstücke handelte, die der Leiter der Wiener Wasserversuchsanstalt Ministerialrat Ing. Ehrenberger verfaßte und die in allen Ministerien der umliegenden Staaten als Warnung verteilt wurden. - So wurde z.B. u.a. erklärt, daß die von mir erbauten Schwemmanlagen Ingenieure

entworfen und durchgeführt hätten. - Ich also gar nicht berechtigt sei, diese als mein Werk zu empfehlen.

Ich stand nach dieser mir damals unverständlichen Behandlungsart wortlos auf, nahm Hut und Stock, knallte die Türe zu und verließ das Regierungsgebäude. - Als ich in den gegenüberliegenden Deutschen Hof trat, teilte mir der Portier mit, daß seitens der Regierungskanzlei angerufen und ich verständigt, bzw. ersucht werden soll, gleich wieder in die Kanzlei zurückkommen zu wollen, die ich eben verließ. Ich antwortete: "Sagen Sie den Herren dort, sie können mich kreuzweis ..... ging auf mein Zimmer, packte und wollte mit dem nächsten Zug wegfahren. - Im letzten Moment wurde ich ersucht, nächsten Tages zu Geheimrat Plank kommen zu wollen, den Reichskanzler Hitler als Begutachter zur Prüfung dieser Angelegenheit bestimmt habe. - Ich folgte diesem Ruf nur, um nicht den Anschein zu erwecken, kneifen zu wollen.

Geheimrat Plank, ein kleines unansehnliches Männchen, frug mich, wieso ich auf die Idee käme, die Wissenschaft als an diesem Wirtschaftsniedergang schuldtragend zu betrachten.

Ich erklärte, daß die heutige Hydraulik die Innenkräfte des Wassers durch unnatürliche, daher falsche Führungsarten in modernen Regulierungsarten und vor allem durch die das Wasser zentrifugierenden Druckturbinen so zerstöre, daß es nicht nur zum Absterben der in diesem Medium lebenden Nutztiere, sondern auch zum Verderben und Absterben des Wassers selbst käme. - Und nun verwies ich als Beispiel auf die im reißenden Wasser bewegungslos stehenden, die eigene und die Schwerkraft des spezifisch dichten, schweren Quellwasser mühelos überwindenden Forellen. Auch das rätselhafte Schweben des Wassers am Steilhang erwähnte ich. - Als Plank erklärte, daß es sich da offenbar um chemische Vorgänge handle, für die er nicht zuständig sei. frug ich den Gelehrten, ob die kalten Lichterscheinungen, die bei abkühlendem Wasser deutlich zu bemerken seien und von sich reibenden Kieselsteinen herkommen, auch chemischen Ursprunges seien. - Das Ende vom Lied war, daß ich ersucht wurde, die Chefchemiker des Kaiser-Wilhelm-Institutes aufzusuchen, die nach langem Hin und Her erklärten, daß es sich zweifellos um bisher unbekannte - physikalische - Phänomene handle, für die nur der Nobelpreisträger Plank zuständig sei.

Schließlich landete ich, von Tür zu Tür geschickt, bei einem äußerst sympathischen Herrn, der Atomtechniker war. - Dieser ließ sich von haus aus auf keine Debatten ein und meinte: "Sie sind sehr unvorsichtig. Hätten Sie einige Jahrhunderte früher gelebt, so hätte man Sie wohl schon längst verbrannt. - Geben Sie acht, daß Sie sich auch heute die Finger nicht verbrennen.

Ich dankte ihm für seinen gewiß wohlgemeinten Rat und erklärte ihm, daß sich doch endlich jemand finden müsse, der den Mut hat, der Wahrheit die Ehre zu geben, bevor es wirklich zu spät sei. Denn - fuhr ich fort - wer das Entwicklungsfundament, das Blut der Erde, das Wasser durch verkehrte Bewegungsmaßnahmen zerstört, zerstört Leben und Gedeihen der ganzen Welt. - Der Mann zuckte die Achseln, gab mir die Hand und meinte: "Jedenfalls wünsche ich Ihnen das Allerbeste." Wenige Stunden später war ich wieder in Wien. Und hier warnte mich der damalige Handelsminister Dr. Hans Schürf, ja nicht mehr nach

Deutschland zu fahren, da ich sonst an der Grenze verhaftet würde.

In der nächsten Zeit war ich viel im östlichen Ausland. - Als die dortigen Projektierungen von Holztransportanlagen und deren Durchführungen zu Ende waren, widmete ich mich wieder der Erforschung der inneren Wasserkräfte.

Schließlich gelang es mir durch eine schon im 17. Jahrhundert entdeckte Methode, die elektrischen Kräfte des Wassers frei zu gestalten und am Elektroskop festzustellen. Ungefähr zu dieser Zeit bemühte sich ein deutscher Physikprofessor Dr. Hoffmann vom Ohminstitut in Bad Gastein, diese vermuteten Energien, die ich schon längst als Läuterungsprodukte der Wasserbewegung erkannt hatte, vergeblich nachzuweisen.

Der Mann übersah, daß Feinstoffgebilde in schon Strahlenform eine derartige Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit und Durchschlagkraft besitzen, daß es erst möglich ist, ihre Existenz festzustellen, wenn man deren Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit durch besondere Widerstände, am besten durch erstarrte Energiestoffkonzentrationen höchster Art - durch organische oder anorganische F e t t - stoffe bremst.

Es würde zu weit führen, das nähere diesbezüglich zu erklären. Eines Tages erschienen Herren der Geheimen Staatspolizei, durchsuchten das Laboratorium nach versteckten Sprengstoffen und frugen nach dem künstlich erzeugten Petroleum nach, das in Anwesenheit des Chefchemikers Dr. Mark, den seinerzeit Dr. Dollfuß zu mir sandte, vor seinen Augen aus Meerwasser und sonstigen Zutaten entstand. Dieses Experiment führte mein damaliger Atlas Dr. Ing. Winter nach meinen Anweisungen durch.

Ferners erkundigten sich die Herren um das organische Kupfer, das in meinem Laboratorium erzeugt wurde und das der Gerichtschemiker Dr. Zuckerkanndl als edelstes Metall erklärte, das er jemals sah.

Ich antwortete, daß es sich diesbezüglich um Fehlversuche handelte, die jedoch ohne weiteres verständlich seien, wenn man einmal versteht, was Wasser ist, wie es entsteht und welche Rolle das Blut der Erde im gesamten Wachstumsvorgang spielt.

Schließlich erschien Sektionschef Dr. Leopold mit einem geheimen Staatspolizisten und begann, mich zu verhören. Frug mich, wieso mich russische Agentinnen besuchten, welche Verbindungen ich zu Deutschland habe und dergleichen.

Ich antwortete, daß ich von russischen Delegierten gebeten wurde, den Neuberger Film leihweise zur Verfügung zu stellen, da man sich für diese Holztransportmethoden interessiere und mich einlud, solche Anlagen in Rußland zu bauen. Ferners erwähnte ich, daß ich es sehr merkwürdig fände, daß sich der Chefchemiker für die Erzeugung des besten und billigsten Zersetzungsproduktes, den besten Sprengstoff den es wohl gibt, weil er kalt explodiert und der vor seinen Augen erzeugt wurde, nicht interessierte. - Glaubte, daß ein Petroleumfetzen ins Wasser ausgewunden worden wäre.

Wenige Tage später besuchte mich eine mir flüchtig bekannte Dame und riet mir, schleunigst nach Deutschland abzuhausen, da ich in Kürze zuverlässig verhaftet würde.

Es handelte sich, wie ich später erfuhr, um eine österreichische Konfidentin, die in deutschen Diensten stehend, alles Notwendige durch die Frau eines hohen österreichischen Staatsbeamten erfuhr, welche die Freundin des Staatssekretärs Ing. Keppler war. - Dies jedoch nur so nebenbei, um die charakteristischen Kreuzverbindungen zu illustrieren, die das Vorgesagte und auch das im Nachstehenden Aufgezeigte erklären. - Volksbetrug, der in der letzten Auswirkung im Selbstbetrug endete. Betrogene Bürger, die sich auf Polizeigewalt stützen und ihr reguläres Gehalt als Taschengeld benützen. Im Übrigen vom Spionagedienst leben.

Ich lehnte jeden Gedanken an eine Flucht ab und so begnügte man sich mit der amtlichen Einstellung des sogenannten Wunderwassers, das ein gewisser Franz Keppler nach meinen Rezepten tagtäglich erzeugte und - was ich nicht für meine mich eigentlich interessierenden Versuche benötigte - an Kranke kostenlos verteilte.

Nun kommt ein Kapitel, das sich meistens im Ausland abspielte. Eines Tages kam ein gewisser Jourschewitz, ein Balte, der in Paris lebte zu mir und frug mich, ob ich bereit wäre, mit einem sehr einflußreichen Franzosen - namens Graf Maxence Polignac - einem Duzfreund vom deutschen Außenminister von Ribbentrop - in geschäftliche Verbindung

zu treten. Es handle sich um die Erzeugung eines außergewöhnlich leitungsfähigen Wassers, das man für irgendwelche Geheimzwecke brauche, jedoch nicht herzustellen vermöge.

Mich interessierte der Fall und so erschien wenige Tage darauf der französische Graf und deponierte 10.000 \$ zu meiner freien Verfügung, worauf ich die obigen Zwecken dienenden Versuche aufnahm.

Zur Konstruktion der dazu notwendigen Apparaturen und zweifellos zur Aufsicht stellte mir Polignac auf seine oder seiner Auftraggeber Kosten einen Ingenieur namens Labrosse bei.

Da im Späteren viel von einer ganz bestimmten Kurvenkonstruktion gesprochen wird, deren Form und Materialart das eigentliche Entwicklungsgeheimnis, den bewegungstechnischen Läuterungsvorgang und dessen Produkt, die bi-polare Energiestoffkonzentration birgt, ist es

notwendig, einen Zwischenfall einzuschalten, der sich unmittelbar vor Übernahme obenerwähnter Problemlösung in Bulgarien abgespielt hatte.

Durch den bulgarischen Botschafter (Name ist mir entfallen) wurde ich von König Boris eingeladen, Bulgarien mit dortigen Forst- und Wassersachverständigen zu bereisen, um die Ursachen der ständig zunehmenden Wüstenbildung, besonders bei Burgas am schwarzen Meer gegen Richtung Sofia, zu ergründen.

Es konnte schon nach einer mehrwöchentlichen Begehung und Bereisung der v.e. Gebiete einwandfrei festgestellt werden, daß die Ursache dieser ständig zunehmenden Bodenvertrocknung und dadurch bedingten Ab- und Aussterbens jeder Vegetation der - "eiserne" Pflug war, den

der Vater König Boris - bekanntlich ein Koburger - aus Deutschland einführen ließ. Denn dort, wo noch der Jahrtausende alte indifferente Holzpflug in türkischen Siedlungen von den Frauen langsam durch die Erde gezogen wurde, war noch Vegetation, wenn zwar nicht besonderer Güte, jedoch immerhin noch vorhanden. In diesen Oasen wurde sogar noch Getreide gebaut, während rund herum kaum ein kümmerlicher Grashalm zu finden war.

Nach Beendigung dieser Begehungen wurde ich vom König empfangen, der mich hochinteressiert um das Ergebnis frug.

Ich sagte dem König die unverblümete Wahrheit und machte ihn außerdem auf mehr oder weniger große Diebereien aufmerksam, die seine Beamten vom Sektionschef bis hinunter zum Waldheger machten. Wenn Sie da - Majestät - nicht gründlich durchgreifen, geht das Land wirtschaftlich zugrunde.

Der König war sichtlich und jedenfalls nicht angenehm überrascht. Sah längere Zeit gedankenvoll zum Fenster hinaus und meinte dann, daß er leider da nichts ändern könne. Denn ein scharfes Eingreifen gegen seine nahezu allmächtigen Beamten, die ja die ständigen und die eigentlich Regierenden seien, und die Aufdeckung des ungewollt durch seinen Vater angerichteten Schadens, würde ihm zuverlässig die Krone kosten.

Boris ersuchte mich dann, in einer öffentlichen Versammlung, die er anrangieren lasse, wenigstens auf die Gefahren einer - im doppeltem Sinne aufzufassenden - Raub-bauwirtschaft des Waldes aufmerksam zu machen. Auch auf die unheilvollen Folgen hinzuweisen, die durch das Beweiden der dortigen Laubwälder - darunter sehr wertvolle Edeleschenbestände - durch Ziegen entstünden. Denn wie wichtig Wald und die in diesem entspringenden Wässer sind, weiß doch am besten jeder naturverbundene, seine Felder mit zahlreichen Schöpfkrädern bewässernde Bulgare.

Ich warnte auch in dieser großen Volksversammlung vor hydraulischen Turbinen und Pumpen, die infolge natur-widriger Wasserbewegungen das Blut der Erde und damit jede gesunde Landwirtschaft fundamental zerstören. Die bisher unbekannt gebliebene Ur-sache dieses durch heutige Maschinen, Fördergeräte und Pflüge etc. ausgelösten progressiven Niedergangs, ist die Störung der sogenannten "Lebenskurve", die zu erklären der eigentliche Zweck dieser Veröffentlichungen ist.

Durch diese kurze Zwischenschaltung eines auch für mich sehr lehrreichen Ereignisses, kann auch das weitere wieder etwas besser verstanden werden. Ein wirkliches Durchschauen der Gründe eines unvermeidlichen Zusammenbruches aller Länder, die sich der unheilvollen T e c h n i k verschrieben - siehe vor allem Deutschland -, war leider erst nach vielen und sehr bösen Erfahrungen möglich. Und nun wollen wir wieder zum angeschnittenen Thema: Forschung nach einem stark leitungsfähigen Wasser zurückkehren.

So, wie mich Graf Polignac durch seinen - kein Wort sprechenden - Ingenieur bewachen ließ, wurde auch Labrosse ständig bewacht.

Es war meine Absicht und auch der gute Wille vorhanden, die mir gestellte Aufgabe zu lösen, ohne jedoch die Konstruktions- und Materialart der vorerwähnten Lebenskurve zu verraten, auf die es bei jeder B e - lebung, die nur durch die -"originelle" Be-wegungsart möglich ist, ankommt.

Und diese naturrichtige Bewegungs-kunst ist im Laufe der Jahrtausende so verschüttet worden, daß fast jedermann zum ersten Male von der Existenz dieser b e - lebenden Kurve hier hört. Zum ersten Male aufmerksam gemacht wird, daß die moderne Wissenschaft, die bekannlich eine von Menschen erfundene Massenbewegung und -beschleunigung zum Energiestoff-aufbau E(Energie) (Masse) mal c l (Lichtgeschwindigkeit) verwendet, die dem Ab-leben und der Zerstörung (Zersetzung) dienende d e - zentralisierenden technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen Schwingungsarten ausschließlich und ausnahmslos auf allen vier Wirtschaftsgebieten (Forst-, Land-, Wasser und Energie-wirtschaft) verwendet. Das diesbzgl. Nähere und geradezu Erschütternde wird später erklärt. Denn ohne entsprechende Einbegleitung wäre es vergebene Mühe, diesen unheilvollen Bewegungs-irrtum der heutigen (modernen) Wissenschaft erkennen und in seiner Tragweite verstehen zu wollen.

Eines Tages konnte ich meinem Auftraggeber das gewünschte Wasser geben, das - in Paris untersucht - das leitungsfähigste war, das man bisher zur Verfügung gehabt hätte. Zu welchem Zwecke man es benötigte, habe ich nie erfahren.

Alle Anzeichen wiesen darauf hin, daß Labrosse die Konstruktionsdetails der "-Lebenskurve-" in seine Hand zu bekommen suchte.

Um ganz sicher zu gehen, fertigte ich ein der "Originalkurve" ähnliches Modell an und versperrte dieses vor den Augen Labross in meinem Schreibtisch und ging kurz darauf weg, nachdem ich mich - es war an einem Samstag - von Labross bis nächsten Montag verabschiedete.

Labrosse erklärte, noch arbeiten zu wollen, was er auch tat. Spät Nachmittag öffnete er meinen Schreibtisch und skizzierte das Modell genau ab, legte das Modell wieder auf seinen Platz, versperrte den Schreibtisch, und ging darauf, wie er glaubte, unbeobachtet ab.

Ich wurde vereinbarungsgemäß von der Aufpasserin verständigt und rief sofort Grafen Polignac an, zu mir zu kommen, da ich ihm sehr dringendes mitzuteilen habe. Polignac kam und nun teilte ich ihm das Vorgefallene rückhaltlos mit. Forderte ihn auf, mit mir zu Labrosse ins Hotel Meisel & Schaden zu fahren und dort den Dieb zu überführen.

Polignac kam meiner Aufforderung sofort nach. Wir trafen Labrosse beim Packen, dem Polignac das von mir Erfahrene in französischer Sprache, die ich nicht verstand, in sichtlich scharfer Art vorhielt. Labrosse erklärte, sich diese infame Verdächtigung nicht gefallen zu lassen, worauf ich kurz entschlossen zur Türe ging, um die Polizei zu holen.

Labrosse wurde blaß, griff in seinen Koffer und übergab Polignac die kopierte Lebenskurvenskizze, die ich vor den beiden Herren zerriß, ihnen erklärte, daß es sich hier nur um einen wertlosen Diebsfang handle. und mit dieser Beweisführung jede weitere Zusammenarbeit auch mit Polignac zuende sei. Und damit war wiederum eine lehrreiche Episode vorbei.

Kurze Zeit darauf schlug eines Tages die Laboratoriumsglocke an. Und als ich öffnete, stand eine zierliche und gut angezogene, mittelalterliche Frau vor mir, die mich zu sprechen wünsche.

Ich bat sie näher zu treten und erfuhr, daß sie eine Schweizerin namens Grete Schneider aus Zürich sei. Nach einigem hin und her erklärte sie. daß sie von München aus Auftrag habe, mich nach Nürnberg einzuladen, wo mir Julius Streicher ein Laboratorium zur ungestörten Fortarbeit mit einer entsprechenden Dotierung zur Verfügung stellen würde.

-31 -

Schon nach kurzer Bekanntschaft gestand mir diese Frau, daß sie auch

Konfidentin sei und eine Million Mark bekäme, wenn sie die richtigen "Lebenskurven" - ihrem Auftraggeber, einem Münchner Ingenieur namens Puschel übergeben würde.

Mich interessierte auch diese Sache, da ich in Österreich schon so zahlreiche Gegner hatte, daß eine gedeihliche Weiterarbeit in Wien so gut wie unmöglich war.

Und so ließ ich mir das Visum ausstellen und ging kurz darauf nach Nürnberg ab, wo ich bei Verwandten Unterkunft fand.

Wenige Tage nach meiner Ankunft in Nürnberg wurde ich zu Julius Streicher eingeladen, mit dem ich eingehend über den, der Wissenschaft unterlaufenen Massenbewegungs- und Erregungsfehler sprach, der darauf antwortete, daß es sich da zweifellos um eine absichtliche Irreführung der modernen Wissenschaft durch die Feuertechniker handle, um die Massen durch einen solcherart herbeigeführten progressiven Wirtschaftsniedergang bedingungslos in die Hand zu bekommen.

Ich nahm dazu keine Stellung, da ich Politik als den Gestank einer schlechten Wirtschaft grundsätzlich ablehne und wurde dann von Gauleiter Streicher zu einer am selben Abend anberaumten Besprechung mit den maßgebendsten Fachleuten dieser Stadt eingeladen, die auch im Gauhaus stattfand.

Als ich am Abend ins Gauhaus kam, waren bereits 10-15 Herren anwesend, die mich, wie ich sofort bemerkte, keinesfalls mit freundlichen Augen betrachteten.

Der Gauleiter hielt eine kurze Ansprache, in der er betonte, daß die Hohenpriester der alten Kulturvölker zweifellos eine andere Wissenschaft und vor allem eine wesentlich andere Weltanschauung und Weltbildvorstellung hatten, denen sie zusammenwirkend, die hohe Kulturstufe zu verdanken hatten.

Abschließend erwähnte er: "Ich habe einen Forstmann, er wies auf mich, eingeladen, der die Behauptung aufstelle, in der Lage zu sein, hohe Temperaturen mit Hilfe verhältnismäßig geringfügiger Impulsgebung auf bisher unbekannt gewesene Art zu erzeugen.

Hierauf forderte mich Streicher auf, den anwesenden Wissenschaftlern und Fachleuten, es waren auch die höchsten Beamten der Siemenswerke mit ihrem Generaldirektor anwesend, näheres mitzuteilen.

**Temperatur** - hub ich an. ist bekanntlich das Produkt einer molekularen Innenschwingung.

Diese Innenschwingung naturrichtig regeln bedeutet, die Entwicklung an fundamentaler Stelle zu fördern. Insoferne, als in diesem Fall höherwertige Grundstoff-ausgleiche stattfinden, deren Produkte wieder höhergewertete Spannungen ergeben, aus denen dann die relativ höchstwertigen Energiestoff-konzentrationen, die zur Auf-pflanzung notwendigen Keime entstehen, die aus der Umgebung Aufbau- und Auftriebsenergien anziehen, wonach dann erst die Entwicklung der der corpuscularen Fort-pflanzung dienenden Schößlinge (Keimlinge) als rohstoffliche Vermehrungsgebilde in Erscheinung treten.

Es handelt sich also hier nicht um eine Atom-zertrümmerung, sondern in diesem Fall um eine atomare Um-wandlung, die ich in meiner seinerzeitigen Broschüre - "Nicht Atomzertrümmerung, sondern Atomumwandlung" näher erklärte.

Die Wissenschaft hat, - fuhr ich fort - in Unkenntnis des Begriffes "Bewegung" den schwersten Bewegungs- und dazu -gehörigen Erregungsfehler gemacht, den es gibt. Sie hat - im Glauben an eine Äquivalenz, bzw. an eine konstante Energie- und Material-erhaltung - diejenige Massenbeschleunigungsart kultiviert, die die Aufgabe in der Natur hat, im Wege einer progressiven Zerstörungskraftsteigerung diejenige Energienart ( $E = m \cdot c^2$ ) aufzubauen, die dem Abbau und Rückstoß des für nächst höhere Fortentwicklungszwecke Ungeeigneten dienen.

Diese Massenbewegungsmethode baut daher auch die in die verkehrte Richtung wirkenden Reaktiv-kräfte, den, wie es in der Wissenschaft so schön und treffend heißt, im Quadrat zur (verkehrten) Bewegungsgeschwindigkeits-steigerung wachsenden Bewegungs-widerstand auf. Und diese atomare Bremskraft hat jeder Techniker, Hydrauliker und Dynamiker zudem auch noch zu überwinden, was selbstverständlich eine sinnlose Antriebstoff-verschwendung bedeutet.

Es handelt sich also nicht nur um die Verwendung der zerstörendsten Energieform für vermeintliche Kulturförderungs-zwecke, sondern überdies auch noch um eine unglaubliche Rohstoffverschwendung, um diese v.e. Ziele erreichen zu können.

Ich verwies, daß es einfach unverständlich sei, das vernichtende Feuer und die aus diesem gefährlichsten Vernichtungsherd entspringenden Temperatur-arten für Aufbauzwecke zu

verwenden und kam schließlich auf den Begriff: Elektrizität zu sprechen, die man erzeugt und verwendet, ohne zu wissen, was eigentlich diese ist.

Es kam zu einer äußerst erregten Diskussion, die Streicher mit dem Befehl beendete, daß die Siemenswerke sofort mit dem Bau der Apparatur zu beginnen haben, die für oder wider beweist.

Generaldirektor Knotek (oder so ähnlich) kam diesem Befehl des Gauleiters sichtlich ungerne nach.

Am nächsten Tag wurde ein Protokoll verfaßt, in dem ich die Verpflichtung einging, alle Konstruktionsdetails etc. genau anzugeben. Die Siemenswerke verpflichteten sich, keine Versuche in meiner Abwesenheit mit diesem Gerät zu machen.

Mit der Durchführung der Arbeiten wurden die Oberingenieure Paschen und Moor unter Aufsicht bzw. Kontrolle eines Münchner Ingenieurs namens Punschel betraut. Welche Rolle letzterer spielte, wurde mir nie klar.

Nach mehreren Wochen war das Gerät fertig. Eines Morgens erhielt ich telephonischen Anruf, daß das Gerät explodiert sei und ich umgehend ins Werk kommen soll.

Dort angekommen zeigte sich, daß keine Explosion stattfand, sondern überstarke Energien atomarer Wirkungskraft frei wurden, da die Impulsgebung zu stark, die Zugwirkungen zu schwach eingestellt wurden.

Infolge Auftretens einer enormen Hitze, die Siemensingenieure maßen ca.  $4000^{\circ}$ , schmolzen die stählernen Innenteile im Bruchteil einer Sekunde. Die kupferne Glocke, etwa 1.5 mm stark, blieb unversehrt. Dies war der eindeutige Beweis, daß keine Explosion stattfand, die man voreiligweise Streicher meldete.

Als der Gauleiter Streicher, ein bekannt hemmungsloser Mann von dieser Falschmeldung erfuhr, wurde er so rabiat, daß ich ernstlich für das Leben der Direktors fürchtete, der diese erstattete.

Die Siemenswerke bekamen neuerdings Befehl, eine Apparatur zu bauen und mir diese unversucht auszufolgen, da ich mich weigerte, die Siemenswerke noch einmal zu betreten, die einen eklatanten Vertragsbruch begingen.

Ich fuhr sodann nach Wien zurück und bekam nach mehreren Wochen seitens der Siemenswerke die Einladung, zur Vorführung in ihr Werk zu kommen. Ich lehnte dies ab und ersuchte um die Ausfolgung des Gerätes, die erst nach neuerlichem Eingreifen Streichers nach meiner Rückkunft nach Nürnberg erfolgte.

Bei sodann folgenden Versuchen, die in Anwesenheit eines Ingenieurs namens Rafael - einen Wiener, den ich mir zwecks weiteren Konstruktionsarbeiten mitnahm, weil ich den dortigen Ingenieuren auf Grund gemachter Erfahrungen mißtraute - durchgeführt wurden, zeigten sich so gefährliche Abstrahlungen, daß ich einsah, daß man mit diesem Gerät keine Raumheizung riskieren kann. Es handelte sich um ausgesprochene Zersetzungsenergien atomarer Art, die alles durchschlugen und durch Mauern hindurch goldene Ringe am Finger zerstörten. Ähnliche Wirkungen, wie sie hochtourige Kaplan-turbinen auslösten, die bei unrichtiger Legierungsart bekanntlich stählerne Leitschaufeln in kurzer Zeit durchlöchern.

Um das diesbezüglich Weitere zu verstehen, muß ein Zwischenereignis eingeschaltet werden, das ich in dieser Zeit in Wien erlebte.

Durch einen gewissen Holder, den Schwiegersohn der Großholzhändler Regenstreit erfuhr der englische Bankier Victor Sasson von der Wirkung des früher erwähnten Edclwassers.

Eines Tages erschien Sasson mit dem Munitionsfabrikanten Mandl aus Hirtenberg und zwei Chemikern, sowie einem englischen Aristokraten bei mir und ersuchte mich, einer Wasseraufbereitung mit seinen Begleitern beiwohnen zu dürfen.

Die Herren waren über die Umwandlung eines jauchigen Wassers, das Sassons Wagenlenker aus der Wien unter Aufsicht seines Herrn entnahm, derart erstaunt, daß mir Sasson eine sehr



hohe Summe anbot, wenn ich bereit sei, mit ihm nach England zu gehen und ihm dort die kommerziellen Auswertungsrechte zu übertragen. Zeuge Ministerialrat Dr. Ing. Ottokar Haertl, den der damalige Landwirtschaftsminister Reiter zu diesen Umwandlungsversuchen delegierte.

Ich lehnte das Angebot Sasson aus verschiedenen Gründen ab und ebenso lehnte ich es ab, nach Rumänien zu gehen, wohin mich der damalige Staatschef Antonescu zwecks Regulierung der dortigen Flüsse, zwecks Bau von Holzschwemmanlagen und Trinkwasserversorgungen persönlich lud. Ebenso lehnte ich eine Einladung Mussolinis ab, die mir Fürst Rüdiger Starhemberg überbrachte.

Allen diesen Herren ging es anscheinend mehr um die Erzeugung atomarer Zerstörungskräfte für Kriegszwecke, als um einen naturrichtigen

-37-

Aufbau mit Hilfe höher-wertiger Atom-energien, die ich zwar damals schon erkannte, jedoch in deren Erzeugung noch zu unsicher war, um irgendwelche Verpflichtungen diesbezüglich übernehmen zu können.

Dies war auch der Grund, warum ich nach Nürnberg wieder zurückging. wo ich bei einem Nichttechniker - nämlich beim Leiter der medizinischen Abteilung des Krankenhauses, Professor Kötschau, die Möglichkeit zur Fortsetzung v.e. Forschungen fand.

Dort besuchte mich der Brigadeführer Croneis im Auftrage des Ministers ließ, der mir mitteilte, daß man die Absicht habe, eine große Holzförderungsanlage zwecks Aufschließung der bayrisch böhmischen Urwälder vom Arbersee nach Regensburg und Sägewerke dort selbst zu bauen.

Für diesen Ausbau sollten 10 Millionen Mark zur Verfügung gestellt werden.

Croneis bot mir eine Wartegebühr von ca. 800 Mark monatlich an. da damals mit Cechien eine kritische politische Situation den Baubeginn unmöglich machte.

In diese Zeit fiel auch eine große politische Versammlung, bei der alle Kapazitäten der deutschen Forst- und Wasserwirtschaft anwesend waren und gegen dieses Projekt stimmten. Das Ende dieser. in Regensburg stattfindenden Tagung war die Aufschiebung der Projektdurchführung auf ruhigere Zeiten.

Sämtliche Sach- und Fachverständigen erklärten. daß es sich um utopische Vorstellungen eines Laien handle. der von atomaren Innenkräften der chemisch-toten Substanz Wasser zu sprechen. bzw. verwerten zu können, die dazu notwendige Vorbildung nicht habe.

Schon im 17. Jahrhundert soll eine Versuchsapparatur existiert haben, mit der es gelang. geheimnisvolle Energien aus fließendem Wasser frei zu machen.

Eines Tages gelang es, einige hundert Volt, später mehrere tausend und schließlich bis zu 2 Millionen Volt aus einem aufgewerteten Wassertropfen frei zu machen und exakt zu messen.

Kurz darauf war es soweit. diese Spannkraft zu bündeln und durch eine Drahtleitung in Vakuumröhren zu führen, die mit einem dunkelroten, stark pulsierenden Lichtschein aufleuchteten, der an der Innenperipherie der Vakuumbirne erschien.

-38-

Streicher, der von dieser Entdeckung durch Prof. Dr. Kötschau erfuhr. erschien mit einem großen Stab von Wissenschaftlern und Politikern und stellte an diese, besonders an den Rektor der Hochschule von Rostock die Frage, was er von diesen Versuchen halte.

Der Rektor erklärte, daß es sich da um Fluoreszenzen chemischen Ursprungs handle, die ziemlich uninteressant seien. Als ich ihn frug, ob man chemische Reaktionen mit einem Draht fernleiten kann, verneinte er dies, worauf ich diese Möglichkeit bewies. - Auch nachwies, daß diese Strahlenbündel jeden Widerstand durchschlagen und sich nur durch dicke Fettstoffschichten isolieren bzw. bremsen ließen.

Führt man diese Feinstoffgebilde in Strahlenform in Benzin oder brennbare Gase, so zünden sie. Ferner wies ich nach, daß sich diese bisher unbekannt gewesene Energieform in Leydenerflächen summieren (verstärken) und bei starker Funkenbildung entladen läßt.

Erhöht man die Fallgeschwindigkeit des Wassers, so erhöht sich die Kapazität des nach allen Seiten hin abstrahlenden Feinstoffs, der ausgesprochen - elektrischen - Charakter hat, weil er umliegendes Wasser, das er durchströmt, zersetzt.

Beschleunigt man hingegen die Fallgeschwindigkeit durch die Ausschaltung des atmosphärischen Luftwiderstandes eines Wassertropfens oder dünnen Wasserfadens, dann ändert sich die Lichtfarbe und die Charakterart des meta-physischen Energiestoff-abstroms.

Der Lichtschein bekommt eine bläulich-grüne zitternde Farbe und diese Energieart eine zusammen-ziehende (struktur-verkleinernde) Wirkung.

Damit war der Beweis erbracht, daß es neben elektrischen (analysierenden) auch magnetische (zusammenziehende) Synthesenströme raum- und gestaltloser Zustandsart gibt.

Die Ersteren dienen dem Aufbau des Feuers, Die Letzteren, - wie sich kurz darauf herausstellte. dem Aufbau des juvenilen Wassers.

Daraus ergab sich die weittragende Erkenntnis, daß es lediglich von der Bewegungsart der Medien (Erde, Wasser und Luft). die niemals einzeln, sondern stets in v.e. Dreiverband aufscheinen. wobei sich nur das gegenseitige Verhältnis zueinander ändert, abhängt, welche Energieart über dem Umweg unterschiedlicher Temperatur- und Spannungsarten entspringen, wobei es auf die Materialart des Gerätes auch ankommt. ob wasser-erzeugende oder wasser-verzeugende (wasserersetzen) Energiearten aufleben und funktionell wirksam werden.

-39-

Damit war praktisch gesehen, schon der naturrichtige Weg zur Er- oder richtiger gesagt Urzeugung der höher-wertigen Atom-energien gefunden, die bisher aus dem einfachen Grund nicht entdeckt werden konnten. weil man glaubte, daß - trotz der technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen im Quadrat zur Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit von medialen Massen wachsenden Bewegungs-widerstände - zusätzliche, im gleichen Verhältnis wachsende LEISTUNGS- also atomare Aufbau- und Antriebs-energien - also sogenannte "Levitationskräfte"- nicht existieren, da es sich doch in diesem Falle um ein Perpetuum mobile handeln würde, w e n n deren Er- oder Urzeugung keine zusätzlichen Antriebsmittel erfordert.

Da nun nachweisbar die zur Fallgeschwindigkeitssteigerung notwendige Voraussetzung durch ganz bestimmt konstruierte und legierte Geräteformen so gut wie kostenlos zu erreichen ist, wenn man Medien und deren bipolaren Inhaltwerte zentri-petal bewegt und dadurch eine physikalische E i n - drehung d.h. eine spezifische Verdichtung durch die Annäherung der bewegten Massen an den Anomaliepunkt + 4°C erzielt, war auch schon die Spaltung eines gas-luft-förmigen Geflüges - die inagnutolytische Dissoziation - und mit dieser deren Synthesenprodukt, die langgesuchte höherwertige Atom-energieart erforscht.

Diese Erkenntnis fiel kurze Zeit vor Kriegsbeginn. Ich fuhr der immer drohender werdenden Lage wegen nach Wien zurück und befasste mich dort mit der Ordnung des Letztentdeckten und begann schließlich mit mir zweckdienlichen Versuchen aller Art. - Eines Tages bemerkte ich, daß ich beobachtet Lind z.T. schon beschattet (von der geheimen Staatspolizei überwacht) wurde.

Im Jahre 1940 wurde ich auf Grund meines Ansuchens um Freigabe von Kupfer und sonstigen Baurnaterialien nach Berlin zu General Udet gerufen. der mich frug, ob es mir möglich sei, die höher-wertigen Z u g - kräfte. so nannte ich die von mir entdeckten Levitationsenergien, für Flugzeugzwecke zu verwenden. - Ich antwortete, daß dies zweifellos möglich, ich aber noch nicht so weit sei.

Udet bewilligte mir das angeforderte Material und nun begann ich mit einem Berliner Ingenieur namens Kämpfer zuerst rein konstruktiv und sodann praktisch an der mir vorschwebenden Z u g - schraube zu arbeiten. Ich nannte dieses Gerät die "Repulsine". die ein gewisser Ingenieur Müller aus Berlin in Wien konstruierte.

Eines Tages erschienen zwei geheime Staatspolizisten und forderten mich auf, mitzukommen. Das nähere werde ich in Wien am Morzynplatz 4 hören.

Nach Ankunft bei dieser Polizeistelle wurde mir mitgeteilt, daß mein Compagnon Ing. Kämpfer wegen Verschiebung von verdächtigen Zeichnungen und Sonstigem verhaftet wurde und bereits in Berlin hinter Schloß und Riegel sei.

Und nun begann ein stundenlanges Verhör, ob ich von diesen Schiebungen etc. Kenntnis habe? - Ich konnte mühelos den Nachweis erbringen, daß ich von all dem nichts wußte, und so wurde ich schließlich mit der Weisung entlassen, die bei mir befindlichen Konstruktionszeichnungen zwecks fotografischen Aufnahmen sofort ins dortige Amt zu bringen.

Von nun an hatte ich mich dauernd und periodenweise zu melden, bzw. alles zu berichten, wenn sich evtl. irgend etwas Ungewohntes abspielen sollte. Ansonsten wurde ich anständig behandelt. - Eine Zusammenarbeit mit dem Technischen Amte, zu der ich wiederholt aufgefordert wurde, lehnte ich mit dem Hinweis ab, daß es sich hier um keine technischen druck- und wärme-steigernde, sondern um bio-technische druck und wärmelose, also der heutigen Wissenschaft völlig unbekannte Massenbewegungsarten handle.

Bei einer Unterredung mit dem amtierenden Vorstand des Technischen Amtes erklärte ich unvorsichtigerweise, daß die heutige (moderne) Wissenschaft die zerstörenden Energiearten für einen vermeintlichen Wirtschafts- und Kulturaufbau verwende und daher die Ursache dieses katastrophalen Wirtschaftsniederganges sei.

Kurze Zeit darauf wurde ich ins Wirtschaftsministerium Fischböck zu einem Ministerialbeamten geladen, der mich trug, wie ich die im vorstehenden Absatz erwähnte Behauptung beweisen könne.

Ich antwortete: "So wie man z.B. Kohle mit Hilfe hohen Drücken und Wärmegraden hydrieren (verflüssigen) kann, gelingt es, diese Umwandlung von festen, in den flüssigen Entwicklungszustand (nicht identisch mit dem wissenschaftlichen Aggregatzustand) auf kaltem Wege mit Hilfe ganz bestimmter Konstruktions- und Materialarten."

Das gleiche - fuhr ich fort, gilt für die Umwandlung von z.B. Wasser in Luft, wodurch eine etwa 2000fache Volumensvergrößerung und dadurch ein, dem natürlichen Luftdruck ähnlicher, beliebig regulierender Überdruck und dadurch eine feuerlose Bewegungskraft zustande kommt.

Das Interessanteste ist jedoch die Rückumwandlung von Luft in Wasser, wobei infolge einer auch wieder 2000fachen Volumensverkleinerung ein elementarer - wiederum regulierbarer Unterdruck - das sog. "organische" Vakuum, die wohl beste und billigste Maschinenantriebskraft entsteht.

Dieser Umwandlungsvorgang vollzieht sich blitzschnell, wenn die dazu notwendige Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit z.B. des Mediums Luft samt Inhaltsstoffen (Vitamin-Molekülen) erreicht wird, was selbstredend mit einer technischen, hydraulischen oder dynamischen Beschleunigungsmethode des im Quadrat zur Geschwindigkeitssteigerung wachsenden Bewegungs-widerstandes wegen, von Haus aus unmöglich ist.

Dazu ist, erklärte ich weiter, eben die "andere" - die druck- und wärmelose - oder kurz genannt - die "Reaktionsbewegung" zu deutsch die "erfrischende" Massenbeschleunigungsart notwendig. - Es ist diejenige, die z.B. die im reißenden Wasser bewegungslos stehenden, blitzschnell stromaufwärts fliehenden und zur Laichzeit, inmitten frei überfallenden Wassermassen aufschwebenden Forellen verwenden, wenn sich diese Wassermassen in zykliden Spiralraumkurven um ihre ideelle Achse in doppelten Schraubenlinien an sich und in sich drehen.

Der mich verhörende Ministerialrat begann nervös auf seinem Stuhl hin und her zu rücken, weil ich ihm jeden Einwand glatt widerlegte, worauf er mich ersuchte, ihm eine schriftliche Erklärung zwecks seiner Begutachtungsmöglichkeit geben zu wollen.

Diesem Wunsche kam ich, soweit ich dies für nötig hielt, nach. Kurze Zeit darauf wurde ich in den Amtsräumen des Baudirektors Luz dem Physikprofessor Dr. Thiering gegenübergestellt, dessen Art und Wesen mich so anwiderte, daß es nach kurzer Zeit zu einem äußerst heftigen Zusammenstoß kam.

Damit schien der Fall erledigt.

Eines Tages erhielt ich die Vorladung von der Pensionsanstalt Wien V. Blechtumstraße 5, mich wegen vorzeitiger Pensionierung zu melden, um die ich über Aufforderung v.e. Baudirektors ansuchte, da ich meine Dienstjahre vollendet hatte und als Invalide für meinen Beruf untauglich wurde.

Die Pensionskasse forderte mich auf, zu dem Anstaltsarzt wegen der Invaliditätsgrad-Untersuchung zu gehen.

Als ich dort erschien, teilte mir der Arzt mit, daß eben ein telefonischer Anruf erfolgte, laut dem er mich ins allgemeine Krankenhaus zu senden hätte.

Dort angekommen wurde ich in die Anstalt Dr. Pözl (psychiatrische Abteilung) weitergesandt, wo ich scheinbar schon erwartet wurde und mich sofort ausziehen mußte.

Nach etwa 3 stündigem Warten im nackten Zustand, was nach Mitteilung des mich untersuchenden Arztes notwendig gewesen sei, begann er mit seiner Untersuchung, die darin bestand, daß ich im halberfrorenen Zustand mit dem Zeigefinger die Nasenspitze und mit der rechten Ferse das linke Knie und mit der linken Ferse das rechte Knie bei geschlossenen Augen rasch hintereinander zu treffen hatte. - Dabei passierte es mir, daß ich infolge körperlichen Frostes wegen, das Ziel einige Male verfehlte.

Schließlich forderte er mich auf, mich anzuziehen und den mir in die Hand gedrückten Zettel auf Zimmer X abzugeben.

In diesem Zimmer wurde mir mitgeteilt, daß ich einige Zeit zur Beobachtung in der Anstalt zu bleiben habe. Man nahm mir Geld und sonstiges ab und deponierte das Ganze in einem Papiersack, den ich zu unterschreiben hatte und sodann versiegelte, bzw. blombierte.

In diesem Moment faßten mich zwei rückwärts an mich herangetreten Wärter unter und führten mich ziemlich rasch und unsanft in den ersten Stock wo ich im nächsten Moment in einem vergitterten Gang stand. Dort kam mir ein Wärter entgegen und forderte mich auf, in den gegenüberliegenden Raum zu treten. Dort wurde ich gewogen, nachdem ich meine Kleider abgegeben und Anstaltsgewandung bekommen hatte. Sodann aufgefordert, in Zimmer Nr. Y zu treten und den mir in die Hand gedrückten Aufnahmezettel dem Zimmerwärter zu geben.

Als ich dieses Zimmer betrat, sah ich, daß ich in einer Irrenanstalt inmitten etwa 50 - 70, wie ich glaubte ausschließlich Verrückten war. In Wirklichkeit waren es aber meist solche, die als Unliebsame auf dieser Durchzugstation nach München zum Empfang der Strychninnadel waren.

Ich war dermaßen erschrocken, daß ich eine Zeitlang nicht zu sprechen vermochte. Dann suchte ich den Zimmerwärter und gab ihm den Zettel mit der Frage, wo ich mich denn hier eigentlich befinde? Er sagte: "unter Narren" und wies mir ein Bett in einem kleinen Zimmer an, wo nur 1 Mann lag, las, mich kurz ansah und interessiert weiterlas. Nach und nach wurde es Abend. Das Abendessen rührte ich nicht an. Eine Zigarette nach der anderen rauchend saß ich verzweifelt am Bett, bis die Aufforderung zum Niederlegen vom diensthabenden Wärter kam. Die Beleuchtung blieb. Und so sah ich, daß mich aus dem gegenüberliegenden Saal ein Patient ständig beobachtete. Schließlich kam er zum Bett und frug mich, warum und wieso ich da hereingekommen sei. Er hieß Hochstädter und war ein Punktschweißer, der infolge schlechter Elektroden seine Lizenz verlor, Krach schlug, mit der Anzeige drohte und schließlich wie ich und so viele dort landete, wo es kein Recht und kein Erbarmen mehr gab.

Hochstädter beschwor mich ja bei der Morgen stattfindenden Untersuchung nicht renitent werden. "Eiskalt überlegen und ruhig auf jede Frage antworten. Denn sonst spreche ich mir das Todesurteil selbst. Hier entscheidet nur der Arzt. Niemand kann einem helfen." So instruierte mich dieser einfache und kluge Arbeiter, der so eine Art Berater aller Neuangekommenen war und es mit jedem, soweit er normal war, ehrlich und gut meinte. Denn bei den anderen und politisch Verfemten. war keine Aussicht auf eine Entlassung.

Nächsten Morgen stand ich vor meinen Richtern. Sechs Ärzten, bzw. 4 Ärzten und 2 Ärztinnen, von denen die eine Frau Dr. Förster-Westermayer an diesem Tage den Vorsitz führte, d.h. in der Mitte saß und keine Fragen stellte.

Plötzlich stand die Vorsitzende auf und forderte mich auf, näher zu treten, bis ich unmittelbar vor ihr stand. Da flammte ein greller Lichtschein auf und in meine Augen. Ich war wie geblendet. Augen offen halten, kommandierte die Untersuchende. Nach einer kurzen Zeit steckte die Ärztin ihre Lampe ein, sah mich längere Zeit an und frug mich, warum und wie ich hierher gekommen sei. Ich erzählte kurz den Hergang. "Haben Sie sich politisch betätigt?" Ich verneinte. Wo ist, sie wandte sich zum Oberwärter, der Aufnahmeschein dieses Patienten?

Der Oberwärter suchte längere Zeit und meldete schließlich, daß kein Schein mehr da sei. Die Ärztin sah ihren Kollegen eigenartig an und sagte zu mir: "Gehen Sie in Ihr Zimmer. In kurzer Zeit werde ich Sie nochmals untersuchen."

Nach etwa 1 Stunde kam sie mit einem jungen Arzt, der in ihrer Anwesenheit die neuerliche Untersuchung begann. Gegen Abend komme ich wieder. Dann gingen beide wortlos ab. Abends kam der junge Arzt allein. Setzte sich zum Bett und frug mich um meinen Beruf und sonstiges Leben. Sie müssen, meinte er, einflußreiche Feinde haben. Ich gab weisungsgemäß keine Antwort. "Darf ich nachhause schreiben, frug ich den Arzt? Schreiben können Sie, aber keine Zeile verläßt dieses Haus. Darf ich telefonieren? Nein, war seine Antwort. Und nun bat ich ihn so lange, bis er mir sagte, er werde mit seiner Vorgesetzten Frau Dr. Förster-Westermayer sprechen. Er komme bald wieder. Sie dürfen ausnahmsweise in Anwesenheit des Wärters kurz sprechen.

Ich ging mit dem Wärter in eine Zelle und rief eine bekannte Frau an, die Gott sei Dank zuhause war. Ich bat sie, mir etwas Wäsche von zuhause bringen zu wollen und erwähnte kurz, daß ich bei Prof. Pözl auf der psychiatrischen Abteilung sei. In diesem Moment nahm mir der Wärter die Sprechmuschel weg und bekam daher von gegenüber keine Antwort mehr.

Nächsten Tages war die Frau, die ich anrief, in der Anstalt und setzte es durch, mich sprechen zu dürfen. Sie sagte mir kurz: um Gotteswille seien Sie vorsichtig. Ich sprach mit dem Nervenarzt D. Er meint, die Sachlage sei in Anbetracht meiner ewigen Unvorsichtigkeit toderntst.

Dann war diese Unterredung zuende. Nach dem Essen kam Frau Dr. Förster-Westermayer ins Zimmer und sagte mir: "Wenn Sie mir in die Hand versprechen, um 7 Uhr abends wieder zurück zu sein, können Sie auf meine Verantwortung nachmittags in die Stadt - in die frische Luft gehen," - meinte sie vielsagend. Ich gab ihr die Hand und damit das feste Versprechen, Schlag 7 Uhr zurück zu sein. Ich bekam meine Zivilkleider und wurde vom Wärter aus der versperrten Abteilung gelassen. Eine halbe Stunde später war ich bei Professor Wagner-Jauregg, dem Vorgänger Prof. Pözl, den ich von früher kannte. In wenigen Minuten informierte ich den weltberühmten Arzt, der bekanntlich die Tötung Irrer oder die dazu gemacht wurden verweigerte und daher pensioniert wurde.

Er untersuchte mich. Stellte diese und jene Fragen. Und meinte: ich werde tun, was ich kann. Machen Sie sich aber keine all zu großen Hoffnungen, denn diese Stätte verlassen heute leider nur ganz wenige und nur die, die noch einflußreichere Freunde haben. Er gab mir noch ein Nervenberuhigungsmittel und dann ging ich wieder zurück und meldete mich bei meinem Schutzengel wieder. Ich wußte, daß geschah, was nur möglich war. Und das gab mir die innere Ruhe wieder. Ich erlebte Dinge, die vielleicht schicksalsbedingt auch notwenig waren.

Es verging nun kein Tag ohne Untersuchungen. Bald dort, bald da hieß es mit zwei Wärter truppweise sich auf Herz und Nieren untersuchen zu lassen. Immer wurde ich gesund befunden. Leider, sagte die FörsterWestermayer. Ich staunte und fand dafür keine Erklärung. Eines Tages kam ich vom Fußspezialisten zurück. Na endlich meinte die Ärztin. Sie haben einen Spreizfuß. Ich wunderte mich und protestierte. Sie meinte, sie sei froh daß der Professor dies konstatierte.

Dann wurde es ruhig. Ich sah, wie Leute kamen und für immer gingen. Jeden Tag wurden die zum Tod Verurteilten verlesen. Jeder wußte, wohin es ging. Manche stemmten sich dagegen. Geschulte Wärter brachen jeden Widerstand im Handumdrehen. Dann fuhr der schwarze Kastenwagen zu und kam immer wieder, um wieder mit seiner neuen Ladung - wie wir sagten - ins Jenseits zu fahren. Die Großtransporte gingen über Steinhof, in die Nähe Münchens.

Nach ungefähr 12-tägigem Aufenhalt brachte mir der Wärter meine Kleider und forderte mich auf, mich umzuziehen. Dann wurde ich zur Ärztin geführt, die mir verschiedene Verhaltensmaßregel mitgab. Dann fuhr ich nach Hause.

Zwei Tage später war wiederum eine amtliche Aufforderung da, mich an der gleichen Stelle bei Dozent Pichler zu melden. Ich ging mit zwei Zeugen zu ihm und weigerte mich neuerdings, in die versperrte Abteilung - unter Berufung des mir vor zwei Tagen ausgestellten Attestes zu gehen.

Die Wärterin kam schließlich mit dem Bescheid ich könne nachhause gehen, um dort weitere Weisung zu erwarten.

Nach wieder 2 Tagen kam neuerdings Vorladung. Ich erfuhr, daß von Berlin Auftrag da sei, mich persönlich von Professor Dr. Pözl untersuchen zu lassen.

Ich ging zur Untersuchung. Pözl frug mich, was denn mit mir eigentlich los sei. Nahm sich 2 Ärzte und führte die Untersuchung peinlich genau durch. Dann diktierte er kurz und bündig, daß ich geistig gesund sei und er sich dem Gutachten des früheren Ärztekonsilium anschließe. Von da an hatte ich in dieser Hinsicht Ruhe.

Aber - kaum war ich wenige Tage zuhause, erschienen einige uniformierte Sicherheitsdienst-Offiziere und zwei Zivilisten in meiner Wohnung und teilten mir mit, daß ich diese nicht mehr verlassen dürfe. Zu keiner Türe und zu keinem Fenster gehen darf. Ich mußte ein Zimmer frei machen, in dem der dienstfreie Bewachungsmann ruhte. Und so wurde ich wieder ca. 10 Tage Tag und Nacht bewacht.

Endlich kam ein SD-offizier wieder und teilte mir mit, daß die Wache abgezogen wird. Ich soll jedoch nie Abends ausgehen oder in ein fremdes Auto steigen. Von da an wurde ich wieder überschattet.

Eines Tages wurde ich wieder in das Amt der Technik geladen, wo ich endlich durch Unvorsichtigkeit des Gauamtsleiters erfuhr, daß mich der Ingenieur- und Architekten-Verein ins Irrenhaus stecken ließ, weil ich immer wieder behauptete, daß die heutige Wissenschaft die Ursache des gesamtwirtschaftlichen Zusammenbruchs ist. Die moderne ForstLand- Wasser- und Energie-wirtschaft auf einer absolut falschen Bewegungs- und Erregungsbasis stehe.

Ich ging sofort zur Gestapo und meldete das eben Erfahrene. Der Gauamtsleiter war in 24 Stunden verschwunden und blieb verschwunden.

Bei der Firma Kertl, Wien IV. Starhembergerstr. 25 ließ ich eine sehr komplizierte Apparatur bauen, die sich später als fehlerhaft erwies. Wie ich sie abholen lassen wollte, erklärte mir Kertl, daß dieses Gerät auf Befehl des O.K.W. nicht ausgefolgt werden dürfe. Ich ging zur maßgeblichen Stelle und beschwerte mich. Man antwortete, man handle befehlsgemäß. Und damit war ich entlassen.

Nun ließ ich durch Dr. Graf Thun-Hohenstein die Klage wegen Beschlagnahme meines Eigentums einbringen. Nach längerer Zeit erschien Oberregierungsrat Lehmann-Harle und erklärte das diesbzgl. Patentansuchen als geheim und es wurde durch ein, beim Rüstungsinspektionsamt abgefaßtes Protokoll mir jedes Recht entzogen, selbstständig an der Sache weiterzuarbeiten. (Protokoll noch heute in meinem Besitz).

Nun setzte ein Tauziehen zwischen dem Oberkommando der Wehrmacht und den Parteistellen ein. Die Gestapo wollte sich auch einschalten, wurde jedoch von der Rüstungsinspektion brüsk abgelehnt. Als der mich ständig verhörende Gestapobeamte zwecks Information beim Rüstungskommando vorsprach, wurde ihm von Major Schwärzler mitgeteilt. daß derartige Besuche unerwünscht sind.

Eines Tages wurde ich in die Rüstungsinspektion zitiert und mir dort die Beweisführung befohlen, daß ich imstande bin, starke Lichteffekte aus fallenden Wassertropfen (Wasserfäden) freizumachen.

In einer Wiener Fabrik wurde ein freistehendes Objekt beschlagnahmt, das derart vergittert wurde, daß jedes Betreten der durch Sicherheitsschlösser versperrten Halle unmöglich war. Die Gestapo hatte außerdem eine ständige Wache zu stellen. Eine neue Wasserleitung wurde gelegt, die mir beinahe zum Verhängnis geworden wäre. Andererseits machte ich eine zusätzliche Beobachtung, die die Rostschleierbildung auf Feldern (das Kindbettfieber der ständig

gebärenden Mutter Erde) erklärte, wodurch sich dann später die naturrichtig legierte und formenmäßig richtige Pfluggestalt ergab.

Aber davon später. Als alle Vorbereitungen getroffen waren, wurde der -lag der Beweisführung von Berlin bestimmt, da zu dieser Offiziere des O.K.W. und höhere Parteifunktionäre kommandiert waren.

Den Versuchsraum durfte ich nur unter Gestapoaufsicht betreten. Als ich die dazugehörige Apparatur einspielen ließ, zeigte sie keinerlei Effckt. Gelingt es - das war mir sonnenklar. den Fehler nicht zu finden. so werde ich als Schwindler verhaftet und ins K.Z. gesperrt.

Wiederholte Zerlegung des Gerätes brachte keinen Erfolg. Ich war infolge dieser zwecklosen Bemühungen. fast schon soweit. das Ganze aufzugeben. als ich rein per Zufall, vielleicht war es wieder eine Fügung. bemerkte. daß das von der einfallenden Morgensonne beschienene Wasser aus dem Leitungshahn, den mein Atlas zufälligerweise offen stehen ließ, auffallend rot gefärbt ist.

Näheres Zusehen ergab die Feststellung, daß es sich um Rostabwaschungen aus der neugelegten Wasserleitung handle. Blitzartig schoß es mir durch den Kopf, daß dieser Rost keine aufbauenden Energien aufkommen läßt.

Nun hieß es vor allem diese rostigen Rohre gut durchwaschen, d.h. den starken Wasserdruck unter Sandzufuhr wirken lassen. Nach mehrstündigem Durchwaschen zeigten sich bereits ganz schwache Lichteffekte und am nächsten Tage brachte ein, mit Bangen gemachter Versuch vollen Erfolg. Es war auch höchste Zeit, weil gegen Mittag desselben Tages die Prüfungskommission angesagt war, die auch pünktlich eintraf. Es waren von Berlin zwei sachverständige Staboffiziere, eine Offiziersdelegation der Rüstungsinspektion, einige S-D-Offiziere, Gestapobeamte und etwa 6 Überwachungsorgane anwesend. Ein derzeit zufällig in Salzburg anwesender - seinerzeitiger Gestapobeamter - war damals auch anwesend und Zeuge. Er heißt Löw.

Die Apparatur funktionierte ausgezeichnet. Und keiner der Anwesenden konnte dafür eine Erklärung finden. Die Folge dieser Vorführung war, daß das Ganze als streng geheim und die Patentansuchen als beschlagnahmt erklärt wurden.

Kurze Zeit darauf wurde ich mit meinen Geräten nach Augsburg in die Messerschmittwerke kommandiert, um den Versuch zu machen, eine Flugzeugmotorkühlung auf strömungstechnischen Weg zu erreichen.

Nachdem in der Halle 11. die Versuchsapparatur aufgestellt war, ließ sie ein belgischer Ingenieur anlaufen, während ich beim Essen war und die etwa 60 cm im Durchmesser große Membran wurde an mehreren Stellen aufgerissen.

Es wurde zwar, so gut es ging, wieder fachgemäß gelötet. Mit der naturrichtigen Spannung war es aber so ziemlich vorbei.

Der Versuch wurde jedoch trotzdem durchgeführt, wobei ich aber ausdrücklich auf v.e. Spannungsverlust und auf die Unmöglichkeit hinwies, die Apparatur auf die Touren zu bringen, die notwendig waren, um Heißdampf, der eine Eigengeschwindigkeit von etwa 500 m/sec. hat, durch eine Zug - kraftsteigerung so überbeschleunigen zu können, daß er seinen radial-achsiale Druckkraft verliert und dadurch in sich zusammenfällt. D.h. sich wiederum in den wasserflörmigen Zustand zurückverwandelt, den er durch die physikalische Druck-steigerung erreichte.

Durch diesen Druckzusammenfall. verliert der Dampf selbstverständlich auch seine Temperatur, die ein maßgebender Druckfaktor ist und damit wäre ein neues Ei des Columbus auf den Kopf gestellt worden, - w e n n die beiden Physiker, die den Versuch kontrollierten, ehrlich und anständig geblieben wären.

Solange die Tourenzahl mit der künstlichen Wärme-erzeugung im richtigen Verhältnis war, waren die Physiker außerstande, auf elektrischem Wege Siedetemperaturen zu erreichen, weil ich den Druckkessel durch meinen genügend zugkräftigen Rotor unter Unterdruck hielt. Daher das Wasser schon bei etwa 30 - 40° seinen Verdampfungskreislauf begann.

Nun wurden die Leute ungeduldig und stellten von mir unbemerkt, so hohe Temperaturen ein, daß meine Zugkraft zu schwach wurde. Als ich ein plötzliches Ansteigen der Temperatur im Kessel bemerkte, ging ich etwas zu rasch mit der Tourenzahl höher. Konnte aber die drucksteigernden Reaktionen nicht mehr aufhalten. Und als ich dann mit einem Ruck mit der Tourenzahl auf über 4000 U/sec. hinaufging, gab's einen Krach und die Apparatur war im nächsten Moment ein verbogener Blechhaufen. Es hatte sich die eine Lötstelle geöffnet, wodurch das hochtourige Gerät zu streifen begann. Im nächsten Moment war die Membran zerrissen.

Die Messerschmidwerke weigerten sich die Apparatur zu bauen, die durch Verschulden eines ihrer Angestellten zerstört wurde, da sie vor dem v.e. Membranaufriß, die doppelte Tourenzahl aushielt, als in diesem Fall notwendig war. Man wollte bloß das Prinzip dieser Kühlmethode kennen lernen und glaubte, das gesteckte Ziel schon erreicht zu haben, daß man das Gerät in meiner Abwesenheit zerlegte und sodann nicht mehr sorgfältig zusammenbauen konnte, weil es an der dazu notwendigen Zeit mangelte. So kam es zum Bruch des Gerätes und auch zum sofortigen Abbruch jeder Zusammenarbeit durch mich. Die Physiker mußten eine ihnen rätselhafte Wärmeenergiezerstörung - wie sie es nannten, - bestätigen. Auf was es aber dabei hauptsächlich ankam, erkannten sie nicht. Und so blieb das beste und billigste Motorkühlungsverfahren bis heute unentdeckt. Es war scheinbar schicksalsbestimmt, daß erst die geeignete Zeit da ist, die den unhaltbaren Zusammenbruch dieser unseligen Technik und Wissenschaft auf der ganzen Linie auslöst.

Dies bestätigt auch das nächste Erlebnis. Nach meiner Rückkunft aus Augsburg meldete ich den Sachverhalt wahrheitsgemäß der Gestapo, die mir wenige Tage später mitteilte, daß ich als Dienstverpflichteter mit einer meiner Apparaturen nach Neudeck bei Karlsbad in das Rüstungswerk Wildfang abzugehen habe. Außerdem wurde ich auch von diesem Befehl seitens Berlin verständigt.

Dort wurde mir erklärt, daß das Werk im Aufbau sei und ich mich zu gedulden hätte, bis meine Versuchsarbeiten aufgenommen werden können. Ich soll spazieren gehen und als Wartegebühr zahle man ca. 1200 M. In Wirklichkeit stand ich dort unter steter Bewachung.

Nach etwa 3-monatlicher Wartezeit, wurde ich dieses Herumsitzens überdrüssig. Zudem erfuhr ich, daß dauernd Versuche und Untersuchungen im Geheimen stattfanden, zu denen der leitende Werksingenieur ein ungünstiges Gutachten abgab, das ich durch eine irrtümliche Mappenzuteilung in die Hände bekam.

Ich erklärte Wildfang, daß ich Neudeck sofort verlassen und nach Wien zurückkehren werde.

Wildfang rief die Gestapo Karlsbad an und forderte meine Verhaftung, die man jedoch ablehnte und mich zu einem Verhör bestellte. Dieses Verhör fand noch am gleichen Tage statt. Und da meine Angaben richtig waren, gestattete man mir die sofortige Rückfahrt nach Wien, von wo ich dann wenige Tage später nach Rostock in die Heinkelwerke abging.

Diese Episode löste General Hoffmann aus, der meinem patentamtlichen Berater, Hofrat Ing. Buchmann, Wien VII. Kenjonstr. 20 schrieb und ihn aufforderte, als Staatsbeamter eine eidesstattliche Erklärung abzugeben, ob und inwieweit meine Entdeckungen seriös und für praktische Verwendungen geeignet sind.

Dies geschah nach dem plötzlichen und unerwarteten Tod General Beckers, der erklärte, meine Sache in der Heeresinspektionsstelle sachgemäß entwickeln zu lassen. Damit waren aber die Parteistellen nicht einverstanden, die den Generalbevollmächtigten Ing. Todt beeinflussten, sich der Sache anzunehmen. Die ein gewisser Architekt Seifert, der von mir ständig Informationen holte, z.T. veröffentlichte, zu denen Todt das Vorwort schrieb.

Nach Rostock fuhr ich in Begleitung eines Direktor Meditsch, der mit Becker und später Professor Heinkel, sowie auch mit der in diesem Zusammenhang ermordeten Baronin Matthen-Eppstein, der Taufpatin Hermann Görings, die Vorverhandlungen pflog.

Nach meiner Ankunft in Rostock rief ich einen bekannten Ingenieur an, der in den Heinkelwerken als Kältetechniker dienstverpflichtet war und bat ihn, mich noch am selben Abend im Hotel zu besuchen.



Hat Sie - so begrüßte mich derselbe - der alte Fuchs nun auch in seine Gasse gelockt, - als ich ihm sagte, daß ich zu Heinkel eingeladen wurde. Ich erfuhr sodann für mich sehr Wissenswertes und nahm mir vor, diesmal besonders vorsichtig zu sein.

Nächsten Tages wurde ich in Begleitung des Direktors Franz Meditsch, Salzburg, von Prof. Heinkel, der einen Stab von Konstrukteuren und Physikern um sich hatte, empfangen.

-51 -

Sie haben, so begann Heinkel, - eine Z u g - schraube entdeckt, die sich doch, abgesehen von einer - das bewegte Medium abkühlenden und dadurch verdichtenden Wirkung - auch für Flugzeugantriebe möglicherweise verwenden ließe. Könnten Sie uns darüber etwas näheres sagen?

Ihre Information - Herr Professor gab ich zur Antwort. - stimmt ebenso wie Ihre Vermutung bezüglich Verwendungsmöglichkeit.

Der heutige Propeller ist, wie die Natur beim Ahornsamenflügel dies am besten zeigt, eine D r u c k - und damit eine Brems-schraube, die den Zweck hat, das schwere Samenkorn fallschirmartig langsam zum Boden und so vom Wind seitlich abtragen zu lassen. Kein Vogel hat so ein Radel am Kopf oder kein Fisch am Schwanz. Nur der Mensch benützt diese natürliche Brems- als Förderschraube. Bei der Bewegung des Propellers steigt auch der Widerstand im Quadrat zur Umlaufgeschwindigkeit. Auch dies ist ein Zeichen, daß dieses vermeintliche Fördergerät natur-un-richtig konstruiert und daher falsch am Platz ist.

Dieser atomare Bewegungs-widerstand ist keine gesetzmäßige, also unabwendbare Begleit- oder Folgeerscheinung, sondern nur der Beweis für eine natur-un-richtige Bewegungs-art von flüssigen oder gas-luftförmigen Medien.

Ich sprach sehr langsam und beobachtete die Wirkung genau, die meine Mitteilungen auf meine Zuhörer machten,

Da konnte sich der Chefkonstrukteur nicht mehr zurückhalten und sagte: "Wenn ich Sie recht verstand, so stellen Sie die unglaubliche Behauptung auf, daß sozusagen das Krongesetz der heutigen Technik ein Irrtum ist".

Ich antwortete: "Dieser reaktive Bewegungs-widerstand tritt bei einer naturrichtigen Massenbeschleunigung nicht nur nicht in Erscheinung, sondern es entsteht an Stelle dieses eine zusätzliche LEISTUNGS-steigerung infolge Auflebens eines atomaren Synthesestoff-aufstroms. der als nahezu kostenlos zu erzeugender Drehstrom dieselbe Funktion wie der elektrische in jedem Generator hat."

Damit ist. ich wandte mich wieder dein Chef des Hauses zu, das Prinzip meiner Entdeckung erklärt.

Das hieße ja, meldete sich der ältere Physiker, daß es ein Perpetuum gäbe und lächelte seine Kollegen in nicht mißzuverstehender Art an.

Tja - antwortete ich, nennen Sie mir bitte irgend etwas in der Natur, das, - naturrichtig betrachtet, z.B. eine Kartoffel, die man in die sich bewegende Erde im Frühjahr legt, wonach man dann im Herbst ohne etwas zu tun zu müssen 8 - 10 Kartoffeln pro Keim ernten kann, - kein Perpetuum Mobile ist? Um dies zu verstehen, muß man allerdings wissen, Herr Doktor, - w a s man unter dem Begriff- naturrichtige oder noch richtiger gesagt - "o r i g i n e 11 e" - Bewegungs-art zu verstehen hat.

Der Physiker machte eine spöttische Miene, worauf sich endlich der Professor Heinkel selbst meldete und sagte: Was Sie uns da mitteilen, hat zweifellos Hand und Fuß. Wir wollen aber hier nicht weiter theoretisieren, sondern rasch und praktisch weiterkommen. Wenn das stimmt, was Sie da sagen, biete ich Ihnen eine Zusammenarbeit 50 zu 50% an. Ich finanziere die Durchführung und Sie geben mir Ihre Entdeckung zur weiteren Entwicklung.

Fahren Sie ins Hotel und bringen Sie uns die Belege, die ich kurz prüfe und morgen Früh beginnen wir mit der Arbeit. - Geben Sie mir bitte dies schriftlich und ich werde mir die Sache 24 Stunden überlegen.

Was ich sage, das halte ich, antwortete Heinkel. - Ich zeige Ihnen einen Teil, aus dem Sie ungefähr dem Prinzip nach sehen können, um was es sich da handelt. - Ich gab ihm die Auslaufkurve und erwähnte: Genau so, wie mit dieser eigenartigen flügellosen Doppelschraube die Geschwindigkeit der austretenden Luft im Quadrat zur Umlaufgeschwindigkeit widerstandslos wächst, so ist es auch mit der dazugehörigen Einsogschraube, die Sie sehen werden, wenn unser Vertrag notariell behandelt vorliegt.

"Lassen Sie die Skizze da und morgen beginnen wir mit der Arbeit. Herr Chefkonstrukteur Schwärzler - ein Landsmann von Ihnen, er war auch Österreicher (Tiroler) - wird Sie zum Mittagstisch führen."

Damit war die Unterredung zu Ende.

Ing. Schwärzler gab sich alle erdenkliche Mühe, mehr zu erfahren. Gab zu, daß schon mit der einen Schraubenhälfte ein beachtenswerte Luftstrom entstehen müsse, weil diese Auspuffschraube jedenfalls das mit quadrierter Geschwindigkeit ausstößt, was die Gegenschraube einsaugt.

Im Prinzip bin ich mir über Ihre Entdeckung klar. Denn dreht man die uns zur Beurteilung vorgelegte Doppelschraubenform um, dann hat man ungefähr das Gegenbild vor Augen. - Ich erkannte, daß der Mann Auftrag hatte, möglichst viel herauszubekommen und brach weitere Erörterungen ab.

Nächsten Tages meldete ich mich in der Tags zuvor bestimmten Abteilung zur Besprechung des Vertragsentwurfes. - Da erklärte der eine Physiker, Heinkel hätte es sich anders überlegt und könne vor genauer Kenntnis der Sache keine bindende Erklärung abgeben.

Mir gefiel die ganze Sache von Haus aus nicht und so gab ich dem etwas verblüfften Mann die Hand und ging ab. - Direktor Meditsch blieb noch zurück, um sich die tags zuvor überreichten Zeichenskizzen rückausfolgen zu lassen und kam dann wutschnaubend nach.

Sie haben den Leuten viel zu viel gesagt. - Die sind der Meinung, die Sache nun ohne Sie machen zu können. - Lassen Sie den Leuten, lachte ich Meditsch an, ihren Glauben. - Sie werden mit ihm nicht selig werden. - Mir gefällt die ganze Blase nicht und ich bin froh, daß ich nicht in diesem Nest bleiben muß.

Am Nachmittag desselben Tages fuhren wir weg. - Und geraume Zeit später erfuhr ich von meinem Bekannten, daß man wohl verschiedene, jedoch zwecklose Versuche in den Heinkelwerken mit der nebulösen Zugschraube, wie man sich dort dann auszudrücken pflegte, machte.

Es hätte keinen Zweck, verschiedene Erlebnisse zu erwähnen, die ich meistens in Berlin noch machte. - So wurde ich beispielsweise zum Chef der marinären Versuchsanstalt gebracht, wo ich abermals die Beobachtung machte, daß alle Fach- und Sachverständigen den ganzen Fall als eine Art persönliche Beleidigung betrachteten. - Dies mit Recht, da ich doch jedem zierlich unverblümt sagte, daß ich es einfach nicht verstehen könne, wie man mit einer Bewegungs-art, bei der der Bewegungs-widerstand im Quadrat zur erwünschten Geschwindigkeits-steigerung wächst, für praktische Zwecke verwenden kann! Es doch nur genau verkehrt zu machen habe, um den - atomaren - Leistungseffekt nahezu kostenlos - zusätzlich - zu erhalten. - Denn im einen Fall entsteht eine auftreibende (bzw. aufziehende) Reaktivkraft, deren Entstehungsursache der modernen Wissenschaft ebenso, wie die

Entstehungsvorgänge des Wassers, dem Akkumulator dieser raum- und gestaltslosen Läuterungsprodukte, unbekannt geblieben ist. - Unbekannt bleiben wird, solange man glaubt, daß der Fortentwicklungsgang mit Erlöschen der subjektiven Lebensaufbaufunktionen zu Ende ist.

Mit der Episode Heinkel war mein Bedarf an unangenehmen Erfahrungen mit den besten Technikern der Welt (Reichsdeutschen) gedeckt. Diese Menschen sind ausgesprochen mechanistische Denker und es ist sehr selten., daß man unter ihnen einen intuitiven Empfänger findet.

Nun lernte ich eine andere Gattung Menschen kennen, die wie die Natur unsagbare Grausamkeit mit oft rätselhafter Güte und einer beispiellosen Kameradschaftstreue paarten.

Eines Tages traf ich einen alten Bekannten. Einen Sudetendeutschen, den ich zu meiner Überraschung in einer SS-Uniform stecken sah.

Dieser Mann war, wie fast alle Auslanddeutschen und Grenzvölker, ein ausgezeichneter Menschenkenner und nüchterner Beobachter, der meine Beobachtungsergebnisse ziemlich genau kannte und ein eifriger Leser der sogenannten "Taufhefte" war, die ein Schweizer (Zimmermann) herausgab und in denen ich seinerzeit viel schrieb. Diese Taufhefte wurden beim Anschluß Österreichs an Deutschland

verboten und der Herausgeber Zitzmann, Nürnberg, mit 8 Monaten Gefängnis bestraft, weil er v.e. Verbot zu wenig einhielt.

Ich bin, erzählte er mir, Lehrer in der Waffen-SS-Ingenieurschule und das wäre der einzige Ort, Ihre Sache auszuarbeiten. - Erstens stünden

Ihnen dort ausgezeichnete Fachleute und zweitens die besten deutschen Maschinen zur Verfügung, die es zur Zeit gibt. - Wenn Sie wollen, werde ich mit meinem Kommandeur Dr. Schröder, zufälligerweise ein Biologe, diesbezüglich sprechen.

Ich erwiderte ihm, daß ich mir dies überlegen werde und damit war der Fall erledigt. - Denn am selben Tage erfuhr ich, daß ich mich an einem genau bestimmten Tag beim Kommandeur des Konzentrationslagers, Standartenführer Ziareis, in Mauthausen zu melden habe.

Laut schriftlicher Weisung hatte ich mich beim Amt der Technik Linz am 20. April 1943 zu melden, um von dort nach Mauthausen ins Konzentrationslager gebracht zu werden.

Von dort war schon Weisung da, daß ich mich gegen 16 Uhr am Eingang des Lagers zu melden habe.

Als der Wagen, der mich nach dort brachte, am Schlagbaum hielt, wurde der Kommandeur vom Wachhabenden angerufen, der Durchfahrt mit der Weisung befahl, daß ich mich im Offizierskasino zu melden habe.

Wenige Minuten später betrat ich einen großen Raum, in dem ca. 20 SS-Offiziere anwesend waren und, wie mir die Ordonnanz erklärte, die mich dorthin brachte, den Geburtstag und zugleich die Beförderung des Kommandanten Ziareis feierten, - also schwer besoffen waren.

Der noch einzig Nüchterne war der Adjutant, ein älterer Hauptsturmführer, dessen Name mit entfiel. Dieser führte mich sofort zu Ziareis, der mit glasigen Augen am oberen Ende der Haupttafel saß und mich nach der Vorstellung aufforderte, neben ihm Platz zu nehmen.

"Tja mein Junge - jetzt bist du da. - So geht es allen, die im Dritten Reich nicht parieren. Entweder --- Ziareis machte eine längere Kunstpause - wirst du nun rasch und fleißig arbeiten, oder - erpausierte abermals - wirst du gnadenlos aufgehängt. Merke dir, hier wird kein Spaß gemacht."

Dann ließ er mir Wein und Zigaretten vorsetzen und befahl dem Adjutanten, den Häftling Göz, seines Zeichens Maschineningenieur aus München, sofort stellig zu machen.

Ziareis stellte, so weit es sein Zustand noch zuließ, verschiedene Fragen und erklärte, daß er die Geschichte mit dem fliegenden Unterseeboot auf Befehl Berlins rasch und gründlich zu klären habe. Ich werde die besten Ingenieure und Facharbeiter zugewiesen bekommen und, fügte er hinzu, wir haben sehr gute Leute hier, die selbstverständlich umgelegt werden, sollte tatsächlich an der Sache etwas dran sein. - Hüte dich aber, mich hinters Licht zu führen. Es wäre - er machte abermals eine Kunstpause - dein Ende.

In diesem Moment führte ein schwerbewaffneter Wachtposten einen einarmigen Mann ins Zimmer, der sich mit überlauter Stimme als Häftling Nr . ..... zur Stelle meldete.

Ziereis befahl ihn mit einer Fingerbewegung zu sich. - Du bist doch Maschineningenieur, fuhr er den Mann an, der wie eine Statue dastand und mit Ja antwortete. - Setze dich dorthin, er wies auf einen Seitentisch, und - befahl er seinem Adjutanten - lasse ihm Wein und Wurst geben.

Zu mir gewandt: "Spreche mit dem Mann und sage mir, ob du ihn brauchen kannst." Ich sprach mit dem Mann, der mir auf den ersten Blick höchst unsympathisch war, und erklärte dann Ziereis, daß ich dies nicht ohne weiteres beurteilen könne. - Ich ahnte nicht, daß dieses Scheusal, das, wie ich später erfuhr, das ganze Vorleben Ziereis, der auch ein Münchner war, kannte und eine Art Vertrauensstelle einnahm, meine Aufsicht war.

Als ich wieder zu Ziereis zurückging, saß eine starke Frau mit kurzen Hosen und nackten Knie bei ihm, die er mir als seine Frau vorstellte. - Damit war die Debatte zuende. - Denn seine Frau erklärte, für heute sei ausgefeiert. - Faßte den auf sehr schwankenden Beinen stehenden Kommandeur unter und schon war er weg.

Nun setzen sich einige neugierige, mehr oder weniger stark betrunkene SS-Offiziere zu mir und wollten allerhand wissen. - Aber schon war der Adjutant da und befahl einer Ordonnanz, mich in mein Zimmer zu führen. - Erklärungen werden hier keine abgegeben. - Dies galt seinen Kollegen und ebenso mir.

Ein sehr hübsches Wohn- und angeschlossenes Schlafzimmer mit Bad war im K.Z. Mauthausen zu meinem Erstaunen mein Quartier.

Eine halbe Stunde später trat der Adjutant ins Zimmer und teilte mir mit, daß ich im Offizierskasino von nun ab zu essen, mich jedoch mit niemandem über das Wesen meiner Entdeckung zu unterhalten habe. - Morgen um 9 Uhr kommen Sie bitte in die Kommandatur.

Kurz nach 9 Uhr am nächsten Tag fuhr der Kommandeur vor und ließ mich kurz nachher durch seinen Adjutanten rufen. - Er erwähnte kurz, daß Tags zuvor eine Doppelfeier mit eben Folgen war, es war ihm sichtlich peinlich, daß ich ihn in dieser üblen Verfassung sah, und ging dann sofort sehr nett und korrekt zum Thema über.

Ich habe strengen Befehl, Ihnen alle Voraussetzungen zu schaffen und werde Ihnen ein halbes Hundert Ingenieure aller Länder vorführen lassen, von denen Sie sich nach freier Wahl Ihre Mitarbeiter aussuchen können. - Auf einen Wink traten ungefähr in Dreierreihen etwa 40 Häftlinge in den Raum und nun wurde ich aufgefordert, selbst Auslese zu treffen.

Was sollte ich da mit mir unbekanntem Menschen, von denen die meisten nicht einmal deutsch verstanden, machen. - Ich frug diesen und jenen, die mir ihrem Aussehen nach am besten gefielen, und schließlich - es blieb mir ja nichts anderes übrig - bezeichnete ich etwa 6 Mann, von denen ich später nähere Auswahl treffen wolle. - Die Ausgesuchten gingen links, die anderen rechts ab. - Mir wurde gesagt, daß am nächsten Tag die Arbeit beginnt. - Damit war auch ich entlassen.

Nächsten Tag wurde ich von zwei Posten, wie ich später erfuhr 2 Ingenieure, geholt und ins eigentliche schwer bewachte und ganz abgeschlossene Lager zu einer schwer verriegelten Türe geführt, die z.T. der eine, z.T. der andere Posten mit separaten Schlüssel aufschlossen und mir sodann den Vortritt in das Verließ ließen, in dem ich mit bleichen Gesichtern meine Leute und auch den v.e. Maschineningenieur Göz vorfand.

Im Raum, der ansonsten nett eingerichtet, sehr sauber und reinlich war, herrschte ein entsetzlicher Gestank. - Ich verlangte, daß wenigstens die Fenster geöffnet werden. - Dies sei, so erklärte der eine Posten, unmöglich, da strengste Klausur vom Kommandanten selbst anbefohlen worden sei.

Ich ersuchte ihn, dafür zu sorgen, daß die verschraubten Oberlichter zumindestens geöffnet werden, da ich sonst keine Minute länger bliebe.

In diesem Moment trat Ziereis selbst in den Raum, dem ich dasselbe sagte und der sofort die Entfernung der Kübel und das Öffnen der Oberlichter anordnete.- Jedoch zu den Häftlingen gewendet, erklärte er, daß er alle zusammen umlegen ließe, wenn einer es nur wage, mit der Umwelt in Verbindung zu treten.

Was Sie an Zeichenrequisiten etc. benötigen geben Sie dem Kanzlei Unteroffizier an und Sie - herrschte er den Schreiber an - haben sofort alles aus der Bauabteilung zu besorgen.

Als Ziweis weg war ersuchte ich die beiden Posten, die mit gezogener Pistole rechts und links der Türe saßen, den Raum zu verlassen, um mit meinen Leuten allein ein offenes Wort sprechen zu können.

Die Posten erklärten, den Befehl meiner Überwachung zu haben. Ich erklärte, keine Angst zu haben und ersuchte den einen, dies auch

dem Kommandeur oder seinem Adjutanten zu melden.

Nun wurde im Beisein der beiden Posten, die erklärten, vor Zurückziehung ihrer bisherigen Befehle am Platz bleiben zu müssen, das notwendige Arbeitsmaterial mit den Häftlingsingenieuren durchbesprochen und der Kanzleiunteroffizier verließ dann den Raum, um erst wieder zu kommen, wenn alles Notwendige da sei. - Wie, dachte ich mir, wird das enden.

Als ich am nächsten Tag das Verließ wieder mit meinen Leuten betrat, die mittlerweile Befehl hatten, mich mit den Leuten allein zu lassen, fiel mir das ganz verstörte Gehabe des Häftlingsingenieurs auf, der dazu auch noch ganz geschwollene Backen hatte.

Auf meine Frage, was vorgefallen sei, wollte der Mann mit seiner Antwort nicht heraus. - Schließlich erklärte er, schwer geschlagen worden zu sein, weil er sich einige Formeln von der Hütte herausgeschrieben und diese in seinen Requisiten aufbewahrt hatte. Der Schreiber des Kommandeurs nahm frühmorgens eine genaue Durchsuchung vor, fand die Formeln und glaubte, daß dies Geheimzeichen seien, die andere Häftlinge durch die offenen Oberlichter zugeworfen bekämen.

Ich sah nun, daß hier energische Abstellung aller Schikanen notwendig war, um überhaupt zu irgend einer Arbeit zu kommen, die ich mir selbst noch nicht gut vorstellen konnte. Ich erwähne dies alles, um die kleinlichen Verhältnisse zu schildern, die ich dort vorfand. Als dann der wichtigtuende Schreiber ins Zimmer kam, erklärte ich ihm, daß er ein Idiot sei, der mathematische Formeln mit Geheimzeichen verwechsle, - meine Leute, ich betonte das Wort "meine", nicht mehr anzurühren habe, für die ich allein die volle Verantwortung trage. Im übrigen habe er in meiner Anwesenheit hier nichts mehr zu suchen.

Der Mann warf einen bösen Blick auf meinen zukünftigen Konstrukteur und verschwand. Nun setzte ich mich zu meinen Leuten und erklärte ihnen leise, daß ich selbst unter Druck stehe und sie mögen mir voll vertrauen. - Fürs erste einmal zuzuhören, was ich will und verlange, und mir dann ehrlich zu sagen, ob sie da mittun wollen. - Ich sah, daß sie mir mißtrauten, gab ihnen einige Aufgaben durchzuführen und ließ sie dann für diesen Tag allein.

Als ich sie nächsten Tages frug, was sie beschlossen hätten, erklärten sie mir, daß alle diejenigen, die zu Geheimerarbeiten befohlen werden, nach Fertigstellung der Arbeiten der Geheimhaltung wegen liquidiert würden. - Es also das Todesurteil bedeuten würde, wenn sie meine Wünsche voll und ganz erfüllen. Denn daß es sich da um eine ausgesprochene Geheimerarbeit handele, sähen sie schon an der strengen Klausur und an der besseren Behandlung. - Also bevorzugte Todeskandidaten seien.

Ich sah, daß es vollkommen zwecklos war, in irgend einer Weise zu einem Ziel zu gelangen und erklärte meinen Leuten, so will ich die mir zur Verfügung gestellten Häftlingsingenieure nennen, daß ich mit dem Kommandeur reden werde, sie wieder ins gewöhnliche Lagerleben zurückzustellen und ich mir andere aussuchen werde.

Da gab mir der älteste meiner Leute, ein reichsdeutscher Dr.-Ingenieur, der im Spanienkrieg Kommandeur der ostasturischen Armee war und sich später als ein bekannter Mathematiker und Statiker entpuppte, hinter dem Rücken des Häftlings Göz ein Zeichen, das zur Vorsicht mahnte. - Und nach und nach bekam ich heraus, daß dieser Einarmige eine Art Capo, das ist ein Angeber sei, der gefürchteter als der brutalste SS-Mann war.

Die größten Widerstände aber hatte ich zu überwinden, als ich diesen Häftlings-Ingenieuren - und durch die Bank vorzüglichen Technikern - sagte, daß die heutige Technik auf einen schweren Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler sich stütze. - Daher die Ursache dieses furchtbaren Elendes sei, das wir alle erleben. - Deshalb, weil die Techniker in Unkenntnis der Bewegungs- und Erregungs-unterschiede, die entwicklungsgefährlichsten Energien, die es auf diesem Planeten überhaupt gibt, im Schweiß ihres Angesichts erzeugen.

Und damit hatte ich Menschen, die soviel wie keine Aussicht mehr hatten, jemals ihren Beruf wieder ausüben zu können, also Hoffnungslose waren, schwer beleidigt. Sie erklärten mit Ausnahme meines späteren Konstrukteurs, mit einem Utopisten nicht arbeiten zu wollen. - Daraus kann man ersehen, wie schwierig es ist, auf diesem Gebiete vorwärts zu kommen.

Nächsten Tages stellte ich 3 Mann zurück. - Ich sah sie nie wieder. Je länger ich im Lager war und rund herum alles genau beobachtete, desto klarer wurde es mir, daß in dieser Situation an eine ernstliche Arbeit nicht zu denken sei.

Einige 10.000 jeden Tag, ja jede Stunde um ihr bisschen Leben bangenden und zum größten Teil ihre Vergewaltiger fanatisch hassenden und nach außen hin sich demütig gebarenden Häftlingen standen wenige hundert Wachmannschaften gegenüber, die - das Gewehr ständig im Arm - jede verdächtige Bewegung mit einem Schuß zu quittieren Berechtigung hatten.

Täglich wurde diesen Wachmannschaften eingedrillt, daß sie es mit ärgsten Volksverbrechern zu tun hätten, die zu erledigen jedem einzelnen oberste Pflicht und Selbstverständlichkeit wäre. - Junge und unreife Burschen trieben alte Männer, die im Sommer meist mit nacktem Oberkörper arbeiteten, mit Ochsenziemern oder mit zurecht geschnittenen Stöcken zur Arbeit an. - Und andererseits merkte man wieder, daß diese wenigen in steter Angst vor einem Überfall durch die oft zur Verzweiflung getriebenen Massen waren. - Ich habe keinen einzigen, ob Mann oder Offizier, gekannt, der nicht lieber an die Front gegangen wäre, statt in diesem Lager unter strengster Disziplin Dienst zu machen.

Die einzigen, die vielleicht eine gewisse Ausnahme machten, waren die sogenannten "Prominenten". - Alteingesessene Häftlinge, meist gewesene Politiker, Homosexuelle oder Aristokraten, die fast jeder irgend einen Schwindel, d.h. einen leichten Dienst hatten und mit allem Möglichen, vor allem mit Gold, das Juden mit ins Lager brachten oder ihnen aus dem Mund gebrochen wurde, handelten.

Es war mir immer unverständlich, woher diese Leute z.B. Tabak in jeder Menge und oft bester Qualität hernahmen, mit dem sie ebenfalls schwunghaften Handel trieben. - Aber alle diese Dinge wurden ja zum wiederholten Male von ehemaligen Lagerinsassen erzählt und beschrieben, so daß es auch überflüssig wäre, von den grausamen Strafen zu sprechen, die jeder Häftling - mit Ausnahme dieser v.e. Prominenten, die zu schlau waren, um sich erwischen zu lassen oder schon zu viel wußten - bei kleinsten Vergehen zu gewärtigen hatten. - Dies wird nur deshalb erwähnt, weil mir der Besitz von großen Mengen Gold, das auch meine Leute besaßen, beinahe das Leben gekostet hätte. - Aber darüber später.

Eines Tages überraschte mich mein Konstrukteur mit einer Arbeit, die mich stutzig machte.

Der Mann hatte begriffen, auf was es mir hauptsächlich ankam. Nämlich auf die widerstandslose Bewegungs-art, bei der statt des reaktiven Bewegungs-widerstandes die Leistungskraft einer naturrichtig konstruierten und legierten Maschine im Quadrat zur ständig zunehmenden Tourenzahl bei gleichzeitiger Abnahme der dazu notwendigen Antriebskraft wächst.

Tags darauf wußte auch schon Ziweis von dieser Sache, wodurch ich die Bestätigung hatte, daß ich vom Häftling Göz überwacht wurde.

Ziweis ließ mich rufen und erklärte mir, daß er mir eine neue Arbeitsstätte zuweisen und Präzisionsmaschinen heranschaffen lassen werde.

Diese neue Arbeitsstätte wurde auch gleich besichtigt. - Sie lag unmittelbar neben dem Krematorium. - Große und verhältnismäßig lichte Räume, obwohl unterirdisch gelegen, die sich auch als Aufstellungsplatz für schwere und hochtourige Maschinen geeignet hätten.

Ich lehnte das Beziehen dieser Arbeitsstätte rundweg ab, worauf ich Ziereis, der sich mir gegenüber stets freundlich und sehr entgegenkommend verhielt, von der anderen Seite her kennen lernte.

Bevor er seinen bekannten Wutanfall bekam, der ihn hemmungslos machte, lenkte ich ein und machte ihm ruhig klar, daß ein weiteres Arbeiten aus dem einfachen Grund unmöglich sei, da im ganzen Lager nur verseuchtes Wasser anzufinden wäre, das sich für Veredelungszwecke nicht eignet. - Abgesehen davon müßte ich zur gegebenen Zeit von Außen her meine alten Mitarbeiter zuziehen, weil ich für Experimente absolut ungeeignet nur die besondere Gabe habe, die Innenvorgänge einer medialen Substanz zu durchschauen.

Ziereis blieb im Hof des großen Lagerraumes stehen und überlegte. Dann gab er Befehl, daß sein Wagen vorzufahren habe. - Raus,- donnerte er den erschrockenen Mann an, der ihm den Wagen brachte. Rein - brüllte er meine drei Männecke an, und mir gab er wortlos zu verstehen, daß ich mich neben ihn zu setzen habe. - Dann fuhren wir in einem wahrhaft höllischen Tempo aus dem Lager ins Tal. - Wenige Minuten später befanden wir uns in einer gut getarnten Rüstungswerkstätte. - Sind hier die geeigneten Maschinen, die Sie brauchen, vorhanden? - fauchte mich Ziereis an.

Ich ging mit meinen drei Leuten von Maschine zu Maschine und frug sie, ob das alles vorhanden sei, was sie allenfalls zur praktischen Durchführung des konstruktiv Festgelegten bräuchten. - Sie bejahten, was mir aber nicht in den Kram paßte. - Denn ich war entschlossen, mit meinen Leuten das Lager Mauthausen überhaupt zu verlassen. Glücklicherweise passte auch Ziereis die Verlegung unserer Tätigkeit außerhalb des Lager-, nicht.

Ich werde Ihnen eine separate Baracke außerhalb des Lagers, jedoch noch im Lagerbereich aufstellen lassen, erwähnte Ziereis während der Rückfahrt. - Ich dachte mir: kommt Zeit, kommt Rat und gab keine Antwort.

Nächsten Tages ersuchte ich Ziereis, nach Wien fahren zu dürfen, weil ich Verschiedenes von Zuhause bräuchte. - Er gab mir die Bewilligung sichtlich nicht gerne, aber, wie er sagte, im Interesse der Arbeit, die ihn nun selbst lebhaft zu interessieren begann. - Denn, meinte er, was wäre da alles möglich, wenn Sie wirklich Recht haben, daß sich die heutige Technik und Wissenschaft grundsätzlich irrt. - Der bisher als unvermeidlich betrachtete Bewegungswiderstand nur eine Folge des Bewegungs-fehlers wäre. - Aber kommen Sie mit. - Und so führte er mich in die Kommandatur, verbat sich jede Störung, bot mir höflich Platz an, schob mir eine Schachtel Zigaretten zu und meinte, jetzt wollen wir uns einmal offen über Ihre Entdeckung unterhalten.

Sagen Sie mir, - hub er nach einiger Überlegung an, - wie war, angenommen Sie hätten Recht, es möglich, daß die Wissenschaft so irrt und ausgerechnet die Bewegungsart kultivierte, die die reaktiven Gegenkräfte - siehe z.B. den im Quadrat zur Geschwindigkeit wachsenden Widerstand - erzeugt?

Standartenführer! - haben Sie schon einmal darüber nachgedacht, was eigentlich Politik ist? - Politik, fuhr ich fort, im Altertum die "Schlauköpfigkeit" genannt, hatte den Zweck, Menschen durch Vorspiegelung falscher Tatsachen so natur- und weltfremd zu machen, daß sie nach und nach verkehrt zu denken und schließlich natur-unrichtig, also falsch zu handeln (arbeiten) begannen. - So gelang es, Mitmenschen durch eine N o t -steigerung als bio-logische = reaktive Folge verkehrter Arbeitsmethoden so abhängig zu machen, daß sie um des notwendigen Futters wegen zu einer Art zweibeinigen Arbeitsochsen wurden, die sich im Schweiß ihres Angesichtes ihr täglich notwendiges Brot v e r -dienten. D.h. dessen Entwicklung durch naturwidrige Arbeitsarten schon im embryonalen Zustand störten, ja sogar z.T. zer-störten.

Dies gelang vor allem durch Gesetzgebungen, Aufstellung von Dogmen, Normen, Lehr- und Grundsätzen und dergleichen. Alles Dinge, die es in der Natur nicht gab, sondern nur in der Vorstellung naturfremder Lehrer und Dogmatiker.

Nichts war einfacher, große Massen dadurch bedingungslos beherrschen zu können, daß man ihnen eine naturunwahre Weltanschauung, Weltbildvorstellung u.s.w. beibrachte, mit ihrer Angst vor dem Tode und den Geschehnissen nach diesem spekulierte, kurzum die primitiv Denkenden, daher zu niederer Arbeitsdiensleistung Geeigneten systematisch von der Natur entfremdete, bis

sie buchstäblich verbindungslos zwischen Himmel und Erde hängend ihren gerissenen Lehrern nach jeder Richtung hin untertan wurden.

Sagen Sie mal - unterbrach mich Ziereis - haben Sie nicht im ähnlichen Sinn seinerzeit mit dem Führer gesprochen, an dem Sie merkwürdigerweise einen großen Schutzpatron haben, ohne den Sie wohl schon längst erledigt worden wären.

Ich bejahte und erwähnte, daß er mir da durchaus nichts neues sagte, da ich von der Gestapo im Vertrauen und um ihren Aufsichtsdienst zu erleichtern bereits aufmerksam gemacht wurde, daß Hitler persönlich, ja sogar schriftlich - man zeigte mir sogar den diesbezüglichen - Befehl einer ständigen Überwachung gegeben hat.

Sind Sie Nationalsozialist? frug Ziereis. Ich antwortete: Nein. - Sind sie sonstwie politisch interessiert? - Ich antwortete wiederum nein. Im Gegenteil, Standartenführer, ich lehne jede Politik, in meinen Augen nichts anderes als eine teils bewußte, teils unbewußte Irreführung, bedingungslos ab.

Sind Sie religiös? - Nein. Ich betrachte naturrechtliche Arbeit, d.h. tatkräftige Unterstützung des gewaltigen Schöpfungswerkes, also wahren Naturdienst, als Religion. - Ich habe mit sehr klugen Jesuiten über diese Thema gesprochen, auch mit Philosophen mich eingehend unterhalten und jeder von diesen Theologen, Philosophen, Professoren, Doktoren haben, wie auch alle Politiker, die sich in dieser Richtung ernstlich mit mir vertieften, - den Kürzeren gezogen.

Haben Sie soviel studiert? Meines Wissens sind Sie ja nur ein einfacher Forstmann. - Ich lehnte Studium schon von frühester Kindheit ab. Und heute - Standartenführer - betrachte ich schulmäßiges Studium als ein Verbrechen wider sich selbst. - Bzw. alle weltlichen und geistlichen Lehrer als betrogene Betrüger. - Und die Politiker, die sich auf diese sogenannten Wissenschaften stützen, d.h. die heutigen Gesetzgeber, als Kollaborateure, die keine Ahnung haben, was sie den blindgläubigen Mitmenschen damit antun.

Und so ging es in diesem gegenseitigen ehrlichen Frage- und Antwortspiel weiter, bis mir schließlich Ziereis mitteilte, daß ihm die Leitung dieser Sache von Berlin aus entzogen und ein SS-General, dessen Name mir auch entfiel, - er wurde nach Kriegsschluß zum Tode verurteilt - von nun an mein unmittelbarer Vorgesetzter sei. Ich hätte die Sache schon noch ins richtige Geleise gebracht. Nun aber können sie mich alle ... für die ich ja nur den Henker zu spielen habe, schloß Ziereis sichtlich verbittert.

Und nun sagen Sie mir ehrlich, was Sie eigentlich in Wien wollen. Ich antwortete: "Von hier wieder loskommen, denn ich halte dieses Leben hier einfach nicht aus."

Ziereis stand auf, ging zum Fenster, sah lange Zeit in Gedanken versunken hinaus und meinte dann: Ich danke Ihnen für Ihre offene Sprache und - ich werde Sie, soweit ich kann, unterstützen, daß Sie von hier wegkommen. - Ich werde sogar versuchen, Ihre Leute mitnehmen zu dürfen, was jedoch nur möglich ist, wenn Sie als Unternehmer Arbeitskräfte gegen Bezahlung der vorgeschriebenen Tarifsätze anfordern."

Nächsten Tages fuhr ich nach Wien und setzte mich umgehend mit Ing. Rudolf Karger, Lehrer in der SS-Ingenieurschule (Krafttechnische Lehranstalt) in Verbindung.

Karger sprach noch gleichen Tages mit seinem Kommandeur Sturmbannführer Dr. Schröder, der mich einlud, ihn umgehend zu besuchen.

Dr. Schröder, der Kommandeur der SS-Ingenieurschule, war Biologe, und so wurde ein Kontakt rasch hergestellt. - Er versprach, die Sache dem vorgesetzten Brigadeführer vorzutragen, der zu verfügen hat. D.h. mir die Bewilligung geben kann, als Unternehmer die Werkshallen und sonstigen Einrichtungen dieser Lehranstalt benützen zu dürfen.

Der Brigadeführer (Name entfiel mir - er verübte in Steyr bei Kriegsende Selbstmord) wies mich an eine Versuchsabteilung, die innerhalb der Lehranstalt ihre Laboratorien hatte. - Ich sah dort eine der vielen Anstalten, die allerhand probieren, jedoch kein Fundament für ihre sog. Forschungsarbeiten haben. - Mit Scheuklappen versehen, über ihren, in der Schule gespannten Horizont nicht hinaussehen und daher auch außerstande sind, wirklich Neues zu bringen.



Ein junger Ingenieur war gleich Feuer und Flamme. - Ich lehnte aber ab und ersuchte Dr. Schröder, in seinem Bereich arbeiten zu können, was jedoch erst möglich sei, wenn ich die Bewilligung erhalte, meine Leute aus Mauthausen frei zu bekommen. Schröder erwiderte, daß er mir seine Ingenieure, Mathematiker, Statiker etc. zur Verfügung stelle, also die Mauthausener Häftlinge nicht bräuchte. - Dr. Schröder war sehr ungehalten, als ich an meiner Forderung festhielt und so betrachtete ich den Fall für erledigt, obwohl er sich eine Apparatur ansah, die ihn stark interessierte und sich, wie alle Kommandeure, eine rasche Beförderung versprach, wenn er Neues bringt.

Ich hörte monatelang nichts mehr. - Eines Tages wurde ich zu Schröder eingeladen, der mir mitteilte, daß Berlin nicht abgeneigt sei, meinem Wunsche unter besonderen Voraussetzungen nachzukommen. Ich wartete weiter. - Pendelte nun zwischen Wien und Mauthausen hin und her und so kam ich innerhalb eines Jahres soweit, den rückwärtigen Teil der Repulsine in Angriff zu nehmen.

Da erschien plötzlich der Musterungsbefehl für die letzten Jahrgänge 1884, 85 u. 86. Am 4. Mai 1944 fand die Musterung statt, bei der ich, wie fast alle, für tauglich befunden wurde.

Ich ging zu Schröder und teilte ihm mit, daß ich mit meiner Einberufung als ehemaliger Offizierstellvertreter zu rechnen habe, daher das Besprochene gegenstandslos geworden wäre.

Schröder antwortete, daß er mich sofort als Dienstverpflichteten der Waffen-SS anfordern werde, wonach ich dann als Zivilist in seinem Bereiche wie abgemacht arbeiten könne. - Ich war einverstanden, erklärte jedoch, jeden Militärdienst solange es geht abzulehnen. Wenige Tage später wurde ich neuerdings bei einer SS-Formation gemustert und als für arbeitsdiensttauglich befunden.

Anfangs Juni erhielt ich die Einberufung zur SS-Panzerdivision Breslau. - Ich war außer mir und ging sofort zu Dr. Schröder, der sichtlich auch erstaunt war und mich zur einberufenden Wehrmachtsstelle sandte. - Dort erfuhr ich, daß meine Einberufung ordnungsgemäß und gesetzmäßig seitens Berlin angeordnet wurde. - Also dagegen nichts zu machen sei, solange Berlin diesen Befehl nicht wiederruft.

Dr. Schröder versprach, sofort ein Fernschreiben nach Berlin zu senden. Dieses blieb, wie ich später erfuhr, bei v.e. Brigadeführer hängen. - Und so blieb nichts anderes übrig, als termingemäß einzurücken.

Als ich mich beim SS-Ergänzungskommando Breslau meldete, sah mich der Feldwebel (Oberscharführer) erstaunt an. - Studierte meinen Einberufungsbefehl und meinte: "Kamerad, du hast dich um 20 Jahre verspätet." - Nun war es an mir, ihn erstaunt anzusehen. - Für Freiwillige ist das Höchstalter 42 Jahre und du bist bald 60. - Na, antwortete ich, dann kann ich ja wieder zurück nach Wien fahren. - Nein, meinte er, so einfach ist die Geschichte nun auch wieder nicht. Denn Befehl ist Befehl. - Oder - kommst du vielleicht aus einem K.Z.? Ich antwortete: ja und nein. - "Aha," meinte er, "Strafkompanie?" Nein - antwortete ich, ich wurde gemustert und war in Mauthausen dienstverpflichtet. - Soso, also letztes SS-Aufgebot! Hast du sonstige Papiere? Ich gab ihm meinen Wehrdienstschein. - Als er diesen las und meine einstige Charga sah, meinte er: "Nun weiß ich Bescheid. Bist sozusagen erste Schwalbe für den SS-Volkssturm. - Kannst da ein großes Tier, vielleicht General werden. - Er schrieb mir nun einen Schein und sandte mich in das Sammellager, das in einer Schule einquartiert war.

Dort angekommen wurde ich zu einem Obersturmführer (Oberleutnant) geführt, der mich auch erstaunt musterte und mich frug, was er mit mir anfangen solle.

Meiner Meinung nach ist das Ganze eine Verwechslung oder ein Irrtum - gab ich zur Antwort.

Ich werde nach Berlin schreiben, erwiderte der Obersturmführer und dann wird sich die Sache schon klären. - Nun gab er Befehl, mir ein Zimmer anzuweisen, wo ich als Zivilist solange wohnen sollte, bis von Berlin Weisung kam.

Dieses Zimmer lag im 3. Stock der als Sammellager eingerichteten Schule und so hatte ich nun Zeit und Gelegenheit, das Abschleifen der Neueingerückten im Kasernenhof von Früh bis Abend

zu betrachten. - Ein Volksdeutscher (Rumäne) wurde mir als Putz zugewiesen, der gut deutsch sprach und mich gründlich in die Geheimnisse des SS-Dienstes einweihte.

Nach etwa 6 Wochen brüllte eines Vormittages der Spieß am Kasernenhof meinen Namen. - Ich meldete mich vom Fenster aus und nun rief er mir zu, daß ich sofort zum Kommandeur zu kommen habe. Als ich mich in der Kommandatur meldete, notierte der Adjutant, ein Obersturmführer, mein Nationale und führte mich zum Sturmbannführer (Major). Sie werden noch heute kriegsdienstmäßig ausgerüstet und haben sich als Sturmscharführer um 4 Uhr bei mir zu melden. - Abtreten. ...

Schlag 4 Uhr stand ich mit 8 Sternen auf Kragen und Schulter und schwer bewaffnet vor meinem nunmehrigen Kommandeur, der mich kurz musterte und meinte: "Sie gehen als Kompaniekommandant mit einer Truppe Fallschirmspringer an den italienischen Kriegsschauplatz ab".

"Sturmbannführer! Dies ist ja ganz unmöglich: Erstens bin ich invalid und zweitens kenne ich als ehemaliger Österreicher kein deutsches Kommando!"

Das hat nichts zur Sache, fuhr mich der Kommandeur an. - Die Kompanie wird Ihnen am Bahnhof übergeben. Und mit ihr nach Laibach zu fahren, wo Sie weitere Instruktionen bekommen, das werden Sie wohl treffen.

Und nun werde ich Ihnen die Kompanie übergeben, die im Vorhof angetreten stand. - Ich ersuchte den Sturmbannführer, mich nicht vor meinen Untergebenen zu blamieren, da es fast 40 Jahre her ist, seit ich Soldat war, und so übergab er das Kommando einem preußischen Oberscharführer, der mir die Kompanie als gestallt zu melden hatte. Und nun machte ich den ersten Lapsus. - Insoferne, als ich wie einst gewohnt salutierte, statt die Hand zum Hitlergruß zu heben. - Der Kommandeur drehte sich wütend ab, die Augen rechts stehende Kompanie grinste. - Der Adjutant gab dem Interimskommandanten einen Wink; ein zackiges Kommando und mit "Ogen rechts" marschierte meine Kompanie im Paradeschritt ab.

Abends 10 Uhr übernahm ich die Kompanie am Breslauer Bahnhof und fuhr mit ihr in Richtung Wien ab, wo wir morgens 8 Uhr am Nordbahnhof ankamen.

Ich gab meinem Stellvertreter den Befehl, die Kompanie, durchwegs junge Freiwillige aus Holland, Belgien und Frankreich, zum Ostbahnhof zu führen, von wo ich um 22 Uhr weiter zu fahren hatte. Der Oberscharführer marschierte ab und ich fuhr mit der Elektrischen zur Ostbahn.

Als die Kompanie dort ankam, ließ ich sie zuerst einmal die schwere Rüstung ablegen und überlegte nun, was sozusagen mit dem angebrochenen Tag anzufangen sei. - Denn ich konnte die 140 Mann nicht bis 10 Uhr Abend vor dem Bahnhof stehen oder sonstwie herumlungern lassen.

Da meldete sich mein Vertreter mit 3 Mann, die mich baten, ihnen doch 24 Stunden Urlaub zu geben, um sich Wien anschauen zu können. Der Gedanke kam auch mir nicht ganz ungelegen, da ich die Zeit benutzen konnte, erstens zu Dr. Schröder und zweitens nach Hause zu gehen, da ich ja in Hadersdorf wohnte.

"Wenn ihr mir versprecht, morgen Schlag 21 Uhr 15 hier wieder am Bahnhof zur Abfahrt bereit zu stehen, erteile ich euch 24 Stunden, d.h. bis morgen Abend Urlaub". - Im nächsten Moment hörte ich im Chor: "wir versprechen". - Ich befahl abtreten und wenige Sekunden später waren meine Jungen - wie vom Erdboden verschlungen - verschwunden.

Ich deponierte meine Rüstung und ging zu Dr. Schröder. - Als ich mich bei seinem Adjutanten, den ich gut kannte, meldete, lachte er und meinte, daß mich die Uniform um 20 Jahre verjüngte und, was machen Sie hier und von wo und zu welchem Zwecke kommen Sie hierher. - Hat man Sie vielleicht schon von Breslau nach hier transferiert?

Ich erzählte ihm, daß ich auf dem Weg nach Italien sei etc, und so meinte er darauf: "na und wo haben Sie mittlerweile Ihre Kompanie gelassen?"

"Die habe ich auf 24 Stunden beurlaubt." - Zuerst meinte er, ich mache einen Witz. - Als er sah, daß ich im Ernst sprach, meinte er: "Mensch, das kostet Sie ja das Leben. - Wien wimmelt von Deserteuren und bilden Sie sich ja nicht ein, daß morgen auch nur ein Mann, es sind noch dazu durchwegs Ausländer, zurückkommt. - Und dann werden Sie gnadenlos - wir sind doch bei der Waffen-SS und nicht bei der Landwehr - an die Wand gestellt. - Verschwinden Sie rasch, damit Sie der Kommandeur nicht bemerkt, der Sie glatt verhaften und einsperren läßt - Es ist ja unerhört, was Sie da angestellt haben."

Ich ging schwer betropft ab und wartete mit Bangen des nächsten Abends. - Schon um 6 Uhr am Abend des nächsten Tages war ich am Bahnhof, vor dem ich rastlos auf und abging, um einen meiner Leute vielleicht dort anzutreffen. - Es war zwecklos, weil ich keinen einzigen, außer dem v.e. Oberscharführer kannte. - Es wurde 19.20 Uhr. Und schließlich schlug die Turmuhr 21 Uhr. - Noch eine Viertelstunde. - Plötzlich knallten neben mir die Hacken zusammen und schon meldete mir mein Preuße die Kompanie - zur Stelle. - Ich sagte nur ein Wort: "wo". - Vor dem Bahnhof! - Als ich aus diesem trat, standen die Jungens in voller Kriegsrüstung - nach der Schnur ausgerichtet wie eine Mauer da und leuchteten mich mit frohen Augen an. - Ich sage es ehrlich, mir wurden vor Freude die Augen naß. - Na, frug ich, habt ihr euch Wien angesehen? - Ein gemeinsames "Ja" scholl mir entgegen. - Und - frug ich weiter - wars schön? - Wunder schön wars und wir danken Ihnen, Sturmscharführer. - Na, es freut mich, daß ihr euer gegebenes Wort so prompt eingehalten habt. - Wir sind doch deutsche Soldaten, meinte einer der Jüngsten.

Um 10 Uhr Abends fuhren wir ab. Gegen 9 Uhr des nächsten Tages wurde ich in einer Station (Name habe ich vergessen) zum Bahnhofskommandanten gerufen, der mir mitteilte, daß wir umstradiert werden. - Denn der vorhergehende Zug wurde beim hohen Viadukt ... von Partisanen in die Luft gesprengt und fast alle Insassen kamen ums Leben. - Sie hatten Glück, daß Sie sich um 24 Stunden verspäteten. Denn laut Meldung habe ich Sie schon zum gestrigen Sammeltransport erwartet.

Wir fassten sodann Munition, und als schwerbewaffnete Feldgendarmen zustiegen, die uns durch die Karawanken zu begleiten hatten, fuhren wir auf einer noch freien Strecke weiter.

Nach einigen Intermezzos - ernstliche Partisanenangriffe waren infolge gesteigerter Abwehr des tags zuvor schweren Verlustes wegen nicht möglich - kamen wir in Laibach an, wo man sofort die feindliche Einstellung der Einheimischen merkte.

Mein Vertreter führte die Kompanie an den vorläufigen Bestimmungsort, von wo aus die Weiterleitung erfolgte. Ich ging meines Fußleidens wegen langsam nach. - Wütend über die Sinnlosigkeit, mich als invaliden 60-Jährigen zu solchen Experimenten zu zwingen, machte ich dem dortigen höheren Frontoffizier den Standpunkt klar, der mich sofort zu einem höheren Militärarzt sandte. - Und nach dessen Untersuchung war auch schon meine Kriegsdienstverpflichtung zu Ende. - Ich wurde als selbstverständlich kriegsdienstuntauglich und nur für zivile Hilfsdienste tauglich umgehend zurückgesandt.

In Wien angekommen ersuchte ich den Kommandeur der SS-Ingenieur-Schule, Dr. Schröder, Breslau, von obigem Befund verständigen zu wollen. Ließ mir die Berechtigung geben, bis zur Erledigung wieder in Zivil gehen zu können, weil ich den Stock nicht entbehren konnte und damit war praktisch diese Episode zu Ende. - Von der SS kam ich jedoch nicht los. D.h. ich hatte nun als Dienstverpflichteter den weiteren Anordnungen Folge zu leisten.

Sturmbannführer und kurz darauf Obersturmbannführer Dr. Schröder war Biologe und als solcher irgendwo in Deutschland ich glaube als Lehrer einer Mittel- oder Hochschule tätig gewesen.

Daß ihn meine neue Auffassung über Biologie lebhaft interessierte, war selbstverständlich. Er unterstützte mich auch, so weit und gut er konnte, war aber überzeugter Nationalsozialist und daher mit Leib und Seele Militarist. Ansonsten ein anständiger Mensch.

Dr. Schröder setzte es auch durch, daß ich meine Leute aus dem K.Z. abholen und nach Wien in die Ing.-Schule der Waffen-SS bringen konnte, wo sie zuerst wie Schwerverbrecher behandelt und sofort in den festesten Bunker gesperrt wurden.

Nun begann zwischen Dr. Schröder und mir eine ernste Spannung. Ich stellte mich auf den Standpunkt, daß mir als Unternehmer, der die Kosten übernahm, die für zugewiesene Häftlinge

üblich waren, alle Rechte und Pflichten zukämen und verlangte eine entsprechende Unterkunft in einem Zimmer, das man meinetwegen vergittern und bewachen lassen könne.

Dr. Schröder gab mir widerwillig, jedoch meinem unumstößlichen Verlangen nach und schließlich wurde mir ein Zimmer - schwer vergittert und schwer bewacht - zur Verfügung gestellt. Zugleich hatte ich die persönliche Haftung zu übernehmen, daß mir kein Häftling durchgeht.

Diese Verpflichtung wäre mir kurz darauf um ein Haar teuer zu stehen gekommen.

Als Arbeitsraum erhielt ich ein liches und schönes Kellerlokal, eigentlich war es Tiefparterre, und sogar Heizmaterial zugewiesen, was damals schon eine große Rarität war. - Die Häftlinge erhielten auf ausdrücklichen Befehl Ziereis SS-Verpflegung. Auch sogar Zigaretten, nur Wein zu geben weigerte sich Dr. Schröder grundsätzlich.

Das gesamte SS-Offizierskorps war über die - wie man es nannte Bemutterung solcher Staatsverbrecher empört. - Ich erklärte, den Leuten, die mir äußerst wertvolle Dienste leisteten, nicht jeden Tag 25 auf den Allerwertesten aufmessen lassen zu können. - Und sooft ich diesbezüglich angeschossen wurde, schoß ich kurz und energisch zurück.

Die Arbeit ging gut voran, die Häftlinge hielten sich musterhaft und damit waren sie und durch sie auch ich unantastlich. Denn schließlich wollte man ja das Arbeitsergebnis haben.

Die rein militärische Oberaufsicht hatte zuerst ein Obersturm - und später ein zu diesem Zweck von Berlin zukommandierter Hauptsturmführer, dem ein junger Untersturmführer, quasi als persönlicher Adjutant, eigentlich war es ein mehr oder weniger ständiger Aufseher, zugeteilt war.

In die Arbeit selbst ließ ich mir absolut nichts dreinreden und so ergab sich auch nach dieser Richtung hin eine Spannung, umso mehr, da ich mir jede Einmischung in den Arbeitsgang strikte verbot. Auch keine näheren Auskünfte über Details gab.

Da kam plötzlich ein schwerer Rückschlag. Der schon vorerwähnte Häftling-Ingenieur Göz, der einzige Kriminelle - die übrigen Häftlinge waren sogenannte "Politische", - hielt auf Befehl Ziereis die Verbindung mit dem Konzentrationslager aufrecht. - D.h. ging unter Postenbegleitung monatlich einmal nach Mauthausen, um Kleider, Wäsche etc. auszutauschen.

Eines Abends rief mich gegen 22 Uhr eine Ordonnanz zum Gerichtsoffizier, einem Sturmbannführer (Major), in seine Kanzlei. Ich zog mich an und ging zu ihm.

Haben Sie - fuhr er mich an - Ihre Häftlinge beisammen? Ich antwortete: Meines Wissens ja. Sie werden bei Nacht streng bewacht und bei Tag waren sie da.

Und - er sah mich lauernd an - wo ist Häftling Göz? In Mauthausen, war meine Antwort, mit dem verlässlichsten Posten. - Dreh'n Sie sich um. - Ich drehte mich um und hinter mir stand der Häftling Göz. Und hinter diesem mit Doppelposten bewacht, in schweren Hand und Fußketten der Posten.

Ja, frug ich höchst überrascht, woher kommt ihr beide hierher. Diese beiden Verbrecher wurden von der SS-Polizeistreife in einem Gasthaus aufgebracht - antwortete der Gerichtsoffizier und gab Befehl, die beiden abzuführen.

Und nun kam ich ins Verhör. - Aus diesem sah ich erst den Haß, den mir meine humane Behandlung den Häftlingen gegenüber seitens des SS-Offizierskorps eintrug. - Mich keiner Schuld bewußt antwortete ich auf alle Fragen in ebenso scharfer Art, als diese gestellt wurden.

Eine noch bei Nacht in meiner Anwesenheit gemachte Kontrolle ergab einwandfreie Ordnung. - Sie bleiben auf Ihrem Zimmer und haben bis auf Widerruf die Kaserne nicht zu verlassen - befahl der Gerichtsoffizier.

Nächsten Tages gegen 5 Uhr nachmittags wurde ich abermals zum Gerichtsoffizier gerufen, wo mir kurz mitgeteilt wurde, daß ich mit Häftling Göz, dem v.e. Posten, die beide in Ketten gelegt auch wieder anwesend waren, per Auto nach Mauthausen abtransportiert werde. Abführen. - Nach diesem Befehl zogen zwei Posten die Pistolen und führten die beiden Vorgenannten ab. -

Mich forderte ein SS-Offizier auf, mitzugehen. - Wenige Minuten später befanden sich die beiden Häftlinge im Bunker und ich verblieb im Vorraum, wo der Gefängniswärter Dienst tat. - Die Ausgangstür wurde vom letzteren verschlossen.

Nach ungefähr einer halben Stunde kam der diensthabende SS-Offizier und teilte mir mit, daß der Transport erst nächsten Tages per Bahn abgeht. - Ich solle mein Zimmer aufsuchen und um 7 Uhr Morgens zum Abmarsch an die Bahn bereit sein. - Melden Sie dem Gerichtsoffizier, ersuchte ich den Diensthabenden, daß ich mich weigere, mit Leuten auf der Straße zu gehen, die schwere Hand- und Fußketten tragen. - Der Diensthabende sah mich eigenartig an, gab keine Antwort und ging ab.

Nächsten Tages kam ein Untersturmführer und holte mich ab. - Beim Tor standen zwei schwer bewaffnete Posten und die beiden Häftlinge ohne Ketten. Knapp vor Abmarsch kam Befehl, daß der Häftling Göz zurückzubleiben habe. - Er wurde abgeführt und wir, der frühere Posten inmitten zweier Begleiter und ich von v.e. Untersturmführer begleitet, gingen ab und fuhren mit dem Personenzug nach St. Valentin und von dort nach Mauthausen.

Sooft ich das Klosett besuchte, ging der Untersturmführer mit und so wußte ich Bescheid, daß ich ein Verhafteter war.

In Mauthausen angekommen mußte ich mit dem zweiten Häftling vor der Kommandatur warten. - Nach kurzer Zeit kam Zierys heraus und ließ den früheren SS-Mann, einen Rottenführer, ab und in den Bunker führen.

Sie - wandte er sich zu mir und schüttelte den Kopf - gehen in Ihr altes Zimmer und erwarten dort weitere Befehle. - Ich gab keine Antwort, grüßte auch nicht, wies auch eine Frage, die der mich begleitende Untersturmführer stellte, mit einer Handbewegung ab und ging in das mir zugewiesene Zimmer, das ja im Bereich des K.Z. und automatisch schwer bewacht war.

Gegen Abend wurde ich von einer unbewaffneten Ordonnanz abgeholt und in wenigen Minuten stand ich vor einem etwa 60 jährigen SS-General, der mich kurz musterte und nicht unfreundlich frug, wie alt ich sei.

Ich antwortete: nicht ganz 60 Jahre. - Na, meinte der General, da könnten Sie auch schon vernünftiger sein. - Ich gab kurz zur Antwort, daß ich mir keiner unvernünftigen Handlung bewußt sei, worauf er kurz abwinkte und mich frug, wie weit in Wien die Arbeit vorangeschritten sei.

Ich war stark verärgert und gab eine kurze Antwort. - Darauf brach der General, wie ich später erfuhr ein geschäftlich stark interessierter Mann, das Zwischenverhör ab und entließ mich.

Nächsten Tages wurde ich zum Hauptverhör gerufen. - Anwesend waren: der v.e. SS-General, der oberste Chef aller Konzentrationslager (Name ist mir entfallen), Gauleiter von Oberösterreich Eigruher und Zierys.

Zierys frug, wie das mit Göz war. - Ich antwortete wahrheitsgemäß, daß ich Göz, wie bisher immer, um Wäsche etc. ins Lager sandte. Ich hatte keine Ahnung, daß der Mann große Mengen Gold in seiner Prothese mitrug und den Posten, der vor seiner Hochzeit stand und verschiedenes brauchte, bestochen hatte, mit ihm auf der Rückfahrt zu Weibern zu gehen, wobei er unglücklicherweise zu der Frau eines SS-Führers geriet, die ihn zur Anzeige brachte. - Und so flog die Sache, die sich ohne mein Wissen zutrug, auf.

Also eine blöde Weibergeschichte - mischte sich der Gauleiter Eigruher ein, - machen wir Schluß damit, meine Herren. - Schauberger soll wieder nach Wien fahren und weiter arbeiten und diesen Göz sperrst du, er wandte sich an Zierys, ordentlich ein. - Damit war die Sache zu Ende.

Als ich Tags darauf wieder in die Adjudantur der SS-Ing.-Schule trat, war man höchst überrascht, daß ich in Mauthausen nicht verurteilt wurde.

Desselben Tages erschienen zwei riesige Unterscharführer, ließen sich Göz in den Arbeitsraum führen, öffneten einen großen Sack, den der eine aufhielt. - Und der andere faßte den schreienden Göz beim Kragen, steckte den Zappelnden in den Sack, den sie sodann zubunden, über die Schulter warfen und mit Göz dann mit einem Schwung auf den LKW warfen. - Der eine

setzte sich zum Sack und der andere zum Lenkrad. Göz versuchte in Mauthausen, das bei mir Gesehen zu verwerten. - Spielte bei Kriegsende eine große Rolle und wurde kaum nach einem halben Jahr von der Polizei Urfahr verhaftet und dürfte sich seither im Kittchen befinden.

Durch diesen Vorfall wurde der Goldhandel im K.Z. Mauthausen offenbar, wodurch ich noch einen Mann verlor, der unmittelbar nach seinem Rücktransport nach Mauthausen Selbstmord verübte. - Nun erst ging die Arbeit ruhig vonstatten, für die sich nun auch der Biologe Dr. Schröder stark zu interessieren begann.

Gelegentlich einer der vielen Debatten stellte ich dem wissenschaftlichen Biologen die Frage, was er eigentlich unter dem Begriff Bio-logie verstehe. - Es kam die erwartete Antwort: die Lehre des oder vom Lebenden. - Damit war aber auch schon seine Wissenschaft über Biologie zu Ende.

Um nun das Weitere zu verstehen, ist es notwendig, das Vorspiel aufzuzeigen, durch das die Waffen-SS, zu der ich bisher keinerlei Verbindungen hatte, sich plötzlich so zu interessieren begann.

Als ich noch in Nürnberg mit der Erforschung um die Herkunft und die Entstehungs-Ursachen des Wassers beschäftigt war, erschien eines Tages eine Münchnerin und teilte mir mit, daß ihr Verwandter, der SS-Führer Himmler, ein ehemaliger landwirtschaftlicher Verwalter, sich für biologische Entwicklungsvorgänge stark interessiert, jedoch äußerst vorsichtig wurde, weil er sich mit Schappeler, dem bekannten Postmeister von Auroldmünster, der sich mit ähnlichen Dingen befasste, blamierte.

Ich antwortete ihr, daß ich Schappeler nicht kenne, wohl verschiedenes von ihm hörte, auch wisse, daß sehr hochgestellte Personen, z.B. auch der ehemalige Deutsche Kaiser viel Geld für die Schappeler'sche Idee opferten, aber keinerlei Urteil über diesen jedenfalls geheimnisvollen Mann abgeben könne.

Im weiteren Verlauf des Gespräches gab mir diese Frau zu verstehen, daß es ihr ein Leichtes wäre, eine nähere Verbindung mit diesem mächtigem Manne herzustellen, wenn ich ihr Näheres mitteilen würde.

Irgend etwas hielt mich ab, auf diesen Vorschlag näher einzugehen. Und damit schien der Fall Himmler zuende zu sein.

Sei es nun, daß durch eine Anzeige des Vorfalles "Göz" im Zusammenhang mit der viel Staub aufwirbelnden Goldaffäre Himmler neuerdings oder sonstwie aufmerksam wurde, eines Tages erschien der Bruder Himmlers mit dem Kommandeur der Krafttechnischen Lehranstalt und direktem Vorgesetzten Sturmbannführer Schröder im Arbeitsraum und teilte mir mit, daß er vom SS-Führer Auftrag habe, sich über das Wesen meiner Entdeckung genau zu erkundigen.

Ich gab die gewünschten Erklärungen ab und erwähnte, daß die biogenetischen Entwicklungsvorgänge so gut wie unbekannt sind und eine Erforschung dieser nicht nur die gesamte Landwirtschaft, sondern darüber hinaus die ganze Wissenschaft revolutionieren wird.

"Was meinen Sie damit?" frug der Bruder Himmlers. Ich meine damit, daß es lediglich von der Bewegung der Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft, die nie vereinzelt, sondern stets in diesem v.e. Dreierverband auftreten, ankommt, ob der Lebens- oder der Zerstörungswille in Gestalt höher- oder niederwertiger Energie-arten entsteht.

Wie meinte Himmler, kann durch Bewegung, die ja selbst eine Energieäußerung ist, neuerdings Energie entstehen?

Darauf müßte ich Ihnen, gab ich zur Antwort, die Frage stellen, was man naturrichtig unter dem Begriff Bio-genetik versteht.

Na - warf Schröder, der mitanwesend war, ein, die zum Leben führende Bewegung. - Gewiß Sturmbannführer, - aber da es bekanntlich in der Natur nur Bi-polaritäten oder die sich gegenseitig steigernden Gegensätze gibt, fragt sich, welche Bewegungsart dient dem Lebensauf- und welche dem Lebens-abbau?

Das würde, wenn ich Sie recht verstanden habe, - mischte sich der Brigadeführer und Kommandant der SS-Lehranstalten ein - bedeuten, daß es keine Äquivalenz und damit keine konstante Energie-Erhaltung gäbe.

Äquivalenz bedeutet Gleichklang und dieser Stillstand. - Da es nun erwiesenermaßen eine Art von ewiger Bewegung, siehe die Erd- und die Gestirnebewegung etc. gibt, die von keinem Gefälle, sondern nur von Spannungsunterschieden abhängig ist, - siehe Blut- und Säftebewegungen - so erklärt sich der Begriff Bio-genetik im engeren und damit der Begriff Biologie umfassend betrachtet von selbst. - Nach dieser meiner Antwort sahen sich die drei Herren zuerst gegenseitig an und nach einer kurzen Besprechung, die sodann soweit von mir entfernt stattfand, daß ich das Gesprochene nicht verstehen konnte, verabschiedeten sich die Herren äußerst freundlich.

Es mögen etwa 10 - 12 Tage nach diesem Besuch verstrichen bzw. vergangen sein, als eines Tages Sturmbannführer Dr. Schröder in die Offiziersmesse kam, wo ich auf Befehl Schröders mein Mittagssmahl stets einnahm, sich zu meinem Tisch setzte, an dem auch Hauptsturmführer Lindner saß, dem seit wenigen Tagen die militärische Aufsicht meiner Abteilung zustand.

Schröder bestellte sich einen Kaffee, bot mir eine Zigarre an und nach einigem Hin und Her meinte er: Soviel aus Ihren Papieren hervorgeht wurden Sie schon im Jahr 1914 wegen besonderer Tapferkeit vor dem Feinde aussertürlich zum Offizier eingegeben? Warum sind Sie damals nicht Offizier geworden?

Ich wurde zum Leutnant eingegeben, weil ich meine Batterie in Abwesenheit des Kommandanten und sonstiger Offiziere aus einer russischen Umklammerung im letzten Moment herausrieb. - Dieser Beförderungsantrag wurde vom Offizierskorps der Batterie wärmstens befürwortet und schließlich vom damaligen Kriegsminister genehmigt. - Da ich dem Mannschaftsstand als damaliger Rechnungsunteroffizier 1. Klasse Feuerwerker angehörte, war es notwendig, bei meinen zivilen Vorgesetzten anzufragen, ob die Offizierscharge der Zivilstellung entspricht. Forstrat J. Feßl - Leiter der Herrschaftsverwaltung Steyrling - antwortete, daß die Zivilstellung Förster = Unterbeamter dem Offizierscharakter nicht entspräche. Als ich als schon Leutnant zum Divisionskommandanten gerufen wurde, der mich frug, was er da nun machen solle - griff ich an den Kragen und mit zwei Rucks lagen die zwei goldenen Sterne in meiner Hand und im nächsten Moment auf dem Schreibtisch des Divisionärs. Eigentlich - meinte darauf der Divisionär - sollte ich Sie nun vor das Kriegsgericht stellen. Aber ich kann Sie verstehen. - Er machte mir den Vorschlag, als Kadettoffizier-Stellvertreter, zu dem er mich ernennen könne, das Weitere abzuwarten. - Ich dankte und bat, meine alte Charge behalten zu können und wurde kurz darauf zum OffizierStellvertreter - eine ausgesprochene Frontcharge - befördert.

Haben Sie alle diese Papiere? - Als ich bejahte, befahl mir Schröder, diese wegen beabsichtigter Ernennung zum Sonderführer (Verwaltungsrat = Major) zu bringen.

Sturmbannführer! Dazu bin ich erstens zu alt und zweitens glaube ich nicht, daß es möglich ist, die heutige Wissenschaft, die die eigentliche Ursache dieses entsetzlichen Krieges ist, soweit zu kriegen, daß sie den schweren Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler einsieht, demzufolge die niederwertigsten Energiearten entstehen, die man derzeit, d.h. seit Beginn des technischen Maschinenzeitalters, für vermeintlichen Wirtschafts- und Kulturaufbau verwendet. - Es daher wirtschaftlich um so rascher bergab gehen muß, als diese unselige Wissenschaft Scheinerfolge erreicht. - D.h. praktisch gesehen, Deutschland, das Land der besten Techniker der Welt, muß naturgesetzmäßig wirtschaftlich zuerst zugrunde gehen, also diesen Krieg verlieren. Und für mich würde diese Ernennung bedeuten, sich den Baum auszusuchen, an dem ich mit vielen anderen SS-Offizieren aufgehängt würde. - Ich geriet in Rasche und meinte noch: "Ich habe zuviel in Mauthausen gesehen, um den Wunsch zu haben, SS-Offizier zu werden."

Schröder stand butterrot im feisten Gesicht auf und ging dem gegenüberstehenden Hauptsturmführer zunicke ab.

Lange Zeit ließ sich Schröder nicht sehen. Zwischendurch schlug Fliegerbombe auf Fliegerbombe rund um die krafttechnische Lehranstalt ein und schließlich verursachten schwere Treffer die Einstellung meiner Arbeiten.

Die einzelnen Abteilungen wurden verlegt. Nach einigem hin und her erfuhr ich, daß der Gauleiter Eigruber in Oberösterreich ein Sensenwerk beschlagnahmte, wohin ich mit meinen Leuten kommen sollte. Ich bekam Befehl, mir das Werk anzusehen, ob es sich für meine Zwecke eignet.

In Leonstein mit einer Kommission angekommen sah ich, daß es vor allem an Präzisionsmaschinen fehlte. Diese werden, wurde mir bedeutet, sofort von den Steyrerwerken angeliefert.

Damit war auch schon der Fall entschieden. - Man wollte einige hundert Mann aus dem K.Z. Mauthausen anfordern, um dieses Werk nach Ausquartieren der Zivilpersonen in ein K.Z. (Unterabteilung Mauthausen) zu verwandeln. - Stacheldrahtumgürtung, Wachtürme und derlei Scherze.

Ich saß schon ziemlich fest im Sattel, weil man hoffte, das fliegende U-Boot mit meiner Hilfe als eine der wirksamsten Geheimwaffen zu erhalten und so fügte man sich, erstens die Zivilbevölkerung in ihren Wohnungen zu belassen, zweitens das Hämmerwerk zu verschonen, da ich erklärte, mit der dortigen Werksschlosserei genügend Arbeitsstätten zu haben.

Die militärische Überwachung erhielt ein Sonderkommando unter dem Befehl des Hauptsturmführers Lindner, der seines Zeichens Uhrmacher im Zivilberuf war und von den Dingen, die mich besonders stark interessierten, überhaupt nichts verstand. Außerdem machte ich ihm vom ersten Tag an klar, daß er in der Werkstätte, in der ich souverän regierte, keinerlei Rechte besitze. - Er könne zwar meine mir nun als zivilen Unternehmer zugeteilten Häftlinge - Ingenieure und Facharbeiter - überwachen, ohne daß jedoch die Wachen ein Recht besäßen, die Arbeitsstelle mit oder ohne Waffen zu betreten.

Den Untersturmführer und die anderen Wachechargen verwendete ich zum raschen Einholen der notwendigen Arbeitsbehelfe und so kam nach kurzer Zeit ein recht netter und ruhiger Landaufenthalt zustande. Offiziere, deren Frauen, die Häftlinge und ich aßen gemeinsam an einem Tische und so verwandelte sich das vermeintliche K.Z. in ein fideles Gefängnis, in dem sich das größte Problem jedes Gefängnisses, nämlich das sexuelle, auch ganz von selbst löste. - Also meine Leute keinerlei Ursache mehr hatten, die Ferne zu suchen, wenn doch das Gute in unmittelbarer Nähe lag. - Damit war jede Bewachung so gut wie überflüssig. - Ich nahm volle Verantwortung und damit war das SS-Sonderkommando so gut wie ausgeschaltet.

Eines Tages stand Obersturmbannführer Dr. Schröder mit seinem Atlas in meinem Zimmer. Wo - fuhr er mich an - sind die Häftlinge? - Ich antwortete: die schlafen. - Was - brüllte Schröder - am hellen Tag? - Ja, denn sie halten Mittagsruhe, die von 12 Uhr bis 14 Uhr vorschriftsmäßig dauert.

Er verlangte, sofort in deren Aufenthaltsraum geführt zu werden. Ein großes, helles, unvergittertes, selbstverständlich auch unversperrtes Zimmer.

Schröder stellte sich mitten ins Zimmer, musterte die verschlafenen Gesichter meiner Leute und verlangte dann, die Arbeitsstätte zu sehen, die gut eingerichtet und nach jeder Richtung hin musterhaft war.

Und wo ist der Wachraum? Rund um das Gebäude haben die Posten Tag und Nacht Dienst zu machen, damit niemand in den Bereich der geheim gehaltenen Arbeitsstätte gelangen kann. - Und die Häftlinge? Wer bewacht diese und sorgt dafür, daß sie nicht bei Nacht und Nebel abhauen?

Daß dies nicht der Fall ist, hatte ich mit meinem Leben. - So habe ich es in Mauthausen auf Befehl Ziereis unterschrieben. Na, erinnern Sie sich gefälligst an den Fall "Göz", antwortete bissig Schröder. - Obersturmbannführer! Hier werden keine Juden liquidiert, ergo dessen gibt es auch kein Gold - und keinen Posten, der sich damit kaufen ließe, sondern nur mich, den einzig allein verantwortlichen Zivilisten.

Sie selbst sandten mir erst kürzlich 8 Mann invalide SS-Leute, über die ich nach Belieben verfügen und sie für ev. Arbeiten verwenden könne. - Sie sind eingeteilt, Holz zu hacken, weil sie für meine Spezialarbeiten unbrauchbar sind.



Na - meinte Schröder - das wird nun anders. Zeigen Sie mir nun alle hier zur Verfügung stehenden Räume.

Ich ging mit ihm durchs Werk, in das ich Zutritt hatte. Hier - er wies auf zwei große Hallen, in denen Schmiedehämmer standen - wird die SS-Ingenieurschule eingerichtet. "Sie bekommen Mannschaften zugewiesen und mit diesen lassen Sie diese beiden Hallen räumen. Es ist Holz und sonstiges zu fassen, ein Fußboden zu legen, die Wände sind zu weißen, kurzum, das ganze ist raschestens wohnbar herzurichten."

"Die Häftlinge werden ab sofort in diese feste Kammer, dem Härteraum des Sensenwerks gesperrt und von nun an wieder Tag und Nacht bewacht."

"Dann machen Sie rund herum für etwa ... SS-Führer Quartier. Ich selbst werde in der nahen Ortschaft wohnen." - Er sah mich dienstlich an und trug mich, ob ich alles gut verstanden habe. Ich antwortete: "Ja, aber all das, was Sie eben anordneten, ist unmöglich durchzuführen".

Erstens ist die Umgebung sehr schlecht auf SS zu sprechen und würde eine Entfernung der festgefügt Sensenhämmer die Zerstörung einer jahrhundertealten Arbeitsstätte bedeuten. - Zweitens würde der Sensenwerksbesitzer eine Entschädigung verlangen, die in gar keinem Verhältnis zum Erreichten stehen würde. - Drittens ist eine Verpflegung schon heute sehr schwierig. - Für hunderte Mann unmöglich, da das Land hier arm ist.

Die Häftlinge in das feuchte und dunkle Kellerloch sperren würde Empörung in der ganzen Umgebung hervorrufen. - Abgesehen davon würde jede Arbeitslust erlöschen. - Wie Sie wissen, Obersturmbannführer, hat SS-General Pohl diesbezüglich strenge Weisungen an Standartenführer Ziereis erlassen, der mich dafür verantwortlich machte, daß die Arbeitskraft der Leute ungeschmälert erhalten bleibt. - Sogar gegen Berlin SS-Verpflegung angeordnet.

Ich begleitete Schröder ein Stück zur Bahn, wo wir schon wieder gemütlich miteinander sprachen. Plötzlich stellte er die Frage, was ich unter Düngung verstehe. - Bzw. was ich von Kunstdünger halte. Man wüschte dies höheren Ortes zu wissen.

Tja, antwortete ich, das ist nicht mit 5 Worten zu beantworten. Um es kurz zu machen, Kunstdünger ist, soweit es sich um Hochofenschlacken handelt, eine Katastrophe. Denn das Hochofenfeuer hat den unterschiedlichen Energiestoff-Konzentrationen, als die jede Materie zu verstehen ist, das Wesentlichste, nämlich die ätherischen Öle die eigentlichen Energiestoff-Anwärter - geraubt. Und die beraubten Schlacken nehmen die vergärten Energiewerte, die das Wasser am Steilhang als Levitations- (Aufbau- und Auftriebs-) -werte im labilen Gleichgewicht erhalten, mit reaktiver Kraftverstärkung an sich, da es sich eben um bio-logische, also richtig betrachtet re-aktivierende (bzw. re-aktivierte) Steigerungskräfte handelt."

Die bio-logische, also selbstverständliche Folge der v.e. Hochofenschlackenstreuung ist Absinken des geosphärisch geladenen aufwärts gravitierenden (also levitierenden) Wassers. Vertrocknung und Verkrustung des Nährbodens, Absinken der Keimzone, langsame Versteppung und schließlich Verwüstung des einst edelste Früchte tragenden Bodens ist die weitere, selbstverständliche Folge.

Und was ist dabei der eigentliche Dünger? frug Schröder dazwischen. Ich antwortete kurz: Das FETT in jeder rohstofflichen Konzentrationsform, das sich verflüssigt, wenn man die Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft druck- und wärmelos mit naturrichtig geformten und legierten Bodenbearbeitungsgeräten um ihre eigene Achse widerstandslos bewegt.

Dr. Schröder blieb überrascht im tiefen Schnee stehen. Und, - meinte er, worin besteht nun der von Ihnen entdeckte Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler?

Einer der vielen, richtiger gesagt, auf allen Wirtschaftsgebieten gemachte Massenbeschleunigungsfehler ( $E=m \cdot C^2$ ) ist der natur-unrichtig geformte und natur-unrichtig legierte "eiserne" Pflug, der Kultivator, die Bodenfräse, die Egge und auch sämtliche Erntemaschinen, soweit sie den Halm drücken (quetschen).

Und nun hielt ich ihm der Reihe nach die schweren Massenbeschleunigungsfehler und deren Reaktionsfolgen vor Augen, die biologisch als Spätschäden aufscheinen müssen und daher erst

meist in der dritten Generation bemerkbar werden, der es dann unmöglich ist, die Sünden der Großväter zu erkennen.

Obersturmbannführer! Nehmen Sie bitte zur Kenntnis, daß wir unter derzeitigen Wirtschaftsverhältnissen bedingungslos zugrunde gehen müssen. Das eintritt, was ich dem Reichskanzler Adolf Hitler im Juli des Jahres 1934, dem österreichischen Bundeskanzler Dr. Dollfuß in Anwesenheit seiner höchsten Forst-, Land-, Wasser- und Energiestoff-Verwirtschaftler und Unzähligen, ja jedem, der mich frug, offen und ehrlich sagte.

Unter gegenwärtigen Landwirtschaftsverhältnissen muß Jahr um Jahr die Bodengüte zurückgehen, weil die heutige Wissenschaft den Qualitätstoffaufbau systematisch und progressiv steigernd unterbindet. Die Wälder müssen infolge des vermeintlichen Lichtzuwachses, der in Wirklichkeit schon eine Krebswucherung (Strukturvergrößerung mit beginnendem Qualitätsverfall) ist, aussterben. - Das Blut der Erde muß infolge einer druck- und wärmesteigernden Regulierungsart und besonders in allen hochtourigen Druckturbinen entarten, verderben und verfaulen.

Und in allen technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen Arbeitsstätten werden das vernichtende Feuer und die aus diesem Vernichtungsherd entspringenden niederwertigen Temperaturen, die Voraussetzungen gefährlichster Spannungsarten, für vermeintliche biogenetische, die Wirtschaft und die Kultur fördernde Bewegungszwecke verwendet, die in Wirklichkeit das Mittel zur Urzeugung der entwicklungsgefährlichsten Urkräfte, Zersetzungsenergien mit schon atomarer Wirkungskraft sind.

Nun werden Sie auch verstehen, warum ich mich weigerte, wirtschaftlicher Verwaltungsrat nach dem bisherigen Wissenschaftsschema zu werden.

Denn, wenn der mit allen nur erdenklichen Rechten ausgestattete Führer und Reichskanzler Hitler außerstande war, seinem diesbezüglichen erlassenen, vor mir und sonstigen Zeugen gegebenen Befehl Nachdruck zu verleihen, wie wäre es dann einem SS-Major möglich gewesen, diesem entsetzlichen und selbstverschuldeten Wirtschaftszusammenbruch Einhalt zu gebieten. Hätte ich da nicht etwa den Galgen verdient, wenn ich - eines goldenen Kragens zuliebe - meiner Berufung, als letzter Warner zu wirken, untreu geworden wäre.

Obersturmbannführer! Für mich ist Bio-genetik die aufbauende, d.h. die mittelbar die höherwertigen Atomenergien urzeugende Bewegungs- und damit zwangsläufig verbundene reaktivierende (also biologisch wirkende) Massenbeschleunigungsart, die Lebenspflicht, also - als Dienst am Schöpfungswerk - Gottesdienst. Es wäre Verrat an mir selbst, würde ich Ihnen und jedem anderen gegenüber die Wahrheit nicht sagen. Nämlich daß wir als betrogene Bürger einzig und allein dieses entsetzliche Unglück verschuldet haben, das wir nun erst im Anfangsstadium zu verspüren bekommen.

Dr. Schröder verabschiedete sich tiefernst geworden und ich sah ihn nicht wieder.

Ich glaube nicht, daß er derjenige war, der zu guter letzt meine Verurteilung zum Tode veranlaßt hat, vor der mich ein Arzt der Widerstandsbewegung in letzter Minute gerettet hat.

Es ist nicht der Zweck dieser Niederschrift, um am Bestehenden Kritik zu üben.

Wenn diese oder jene Institution ab und zu scharf angegriffen wird, so geschieht dies nur deshalb, um die re-aktiven - also die bio-logischen Auswirkungen von Mißgriffen = verkehrten Bewegungs- und Arbeitseinflüssen aufzuzeigen, denen wir diesen - nun schon in der ganzen Zivilisationswelt bemerkbar werdenden Wirtschafts- und Kulturniedergang zu verdanken haben.

Wie weit das national-sozialistische Regime von obiger Erkenntnis entfernt war, bzw. nicht einsehen wollte, daß eine Arbeitssteigerung unter den heutigen (wissenschaftlichen) Bewegungs- und Erregungsmethoden nur progressiven Nahrungsmangel auslösen mußte, sah ich erst durch den mir aufgezwungenen engeren Verkehr mit höheren Funktionären der Waffen-SS.

Unter diesen hatte man dreierlei Kategorien Menschen zu unterscheiden.

- 1.) Junge, ideal denkende Menschen, die bestrebt waren, mit einer geradezu aufopfernden Kameradschaft fürs vermeintlich Bessere zu kämpfen.
- 2.) Brutale, vor nichts zurückschreckende, meist im besten Mannesalter Stehende, die bisher – egal ob durch fremdes oder durch eigenes Verschulden - keine Existenz hatten und die sich bietende Gelegenheit benutzten, sich als SS-Führer in den Sattel zu schwingen.
- 3.) Hohe SS-Offiziere, die wußten, daß der Zauber über -kurz oder lang zuende ist und keine Gelegenheit versäumten, um möglichst viel Geld zu verdienen.

Ich habe alle drei Kategorien kennen gelernt. Sie zu charakterisieren, sein kurz folgendes gesagt.

Zur Überwachung der K.Z.-Häftlinge waren mir ca. 6 ständige Posten, durch die Bank Invalide, zugeteilt, die ihrer obigen Einstellung nach die zu bewachenden Häftlinge als Werkzeuge betrachteten, durch neuartige Werkstattarbeit ihren Idealen näher zu kommen. Diese Wachen haben meine Leute - wie diese dies auch schriftlich bezeugten - gut und anständig behandelt. Wer dies nicht tat, wurde von mir rasch entfernt, was jedoch nur in einem einzigen Fall notwendig war.

Eines Tages kam eine Frau in meine Wohnung und bat mich mit aufgehobenen Händen, ihren Mann, einen gewissen Cerny, der seit 6 Jahren im K.Z. war, nur einmal zu sehen, womöglich mit ihm kurz zu sprechen.

Cerny war ein sehr guter Arbeiter und so sagte ich dieser Frau, sie soll an diesem und jenem Tag in der Nähe Schönbrunn auf dem zur SS-Kaserne führenden Weg spazieren gehen.

Als mich an diesem Tag der Posten frug, wann und wo er die Häftlinge in der frischen Luft spazieren führen soll, - es war an einem freien Sonntag - antwortete ich: gehen Sie mit den Leuten in den Wald gegen Schönbrunn. - Halten Sie sich aber so, daß die Spaziergänger es nicht merken, daß K.Z.-Häftlinge frische Luft schöpfen gehen. - Es genügt, wenn Sie mit Pistole gehen, was nicht auffällt, da SS immer bewaffnet ging. - Die Leute haben fleißig gearbeitet und sie sollen sich einige Stunden frei bewegen können.

Tags darauf kam die Frau wieder und fiel mir beinahe um den Hals, weil sie ihren Mann nicht nur sehen, sondern auch sprechen konnte. Kurz darauf erfuhr ich, daß die Frau mit ihrem Mann allein im Wald verschwand und die anderen K.Z.-Häftlinge führte der Posten in die Menagerie und zeigte ihnen die Affen. - Dann gingen sie gemeinsam ins Gasthaus und am Abend kehrten alle zusammen wieder in die Kaserne zurück. - Eine Woche später brachte mir ein Mann von der Hauptwache einen großen Kuchen mit einem schönen Gruß von der Frau Cerny und ich möchte das separat beiliegende Stück dem SS-Mann ... für seine Liebenswürdigkeit am Sonntag geben.

Ich sandte das Paket mit dem Überbringer zurück, doch die Frau Cerny war bereits weg.

Wenige Stunden später stand der Posten in meiner Anwesenheit vor dem Verhör. - Erklärte, daß ihm während des sonntäglichen Spazierganges eine Frau entgegen kam, die plötzlich dem Häftling Cerny um den Hals fiel und von ihrem Manne einfach nicht mehr wegzubringen war. - Er hatte Erbarmen, ging mit den anderen langsam weiter, da Cerny versprach, nach wenigen Minuten nachzukommen, was auch geschah.

Nun wurde ich gefragt, was ich dazu sage; ich antwortete, daß ich es wahrscheinlich auch so gemacht hätte, wäre ich an Stelle des Postens gewesen. - Der Posten wurde sofort abgelöst und ging, um eventuellen Weiterungen auszuweichen, als schwer Lungenleidender ins Lazarett, wo er kurze Zeit darauf starb. - Cerny kam nach Mauthausen zurück, wo ich ihn kurze Zeit später aus dem Bunker holte und ihn mit anderen, die das Lager nicht verlassen durften, beschäftigte. Daß mir dieser Vorfall angekreidet wurde, war selbstverständlich, obwohl der Posten und der Häftling von dem Besuch der Frau des letzteren trotz schärfsten Verhörens schwiegen. - Knapp vor Kriegsende sollte ich auch dafür zur Verantwortung gezogen werden.

Als ich in Augsburg in den Messerschmidwerken war, wurde mir bei einer 40 jährigen und noch sehr hübschen Frau das Quartier zugewiesen.

Eines Tages kam die Frau aufgeregt zu mir und erzählte mir, daß sie zu einem SS-Kommando gerufen wurde, wo man ihr nahe legte, sich vor Torschluß als Besitzerin eines auffallenden Rassenkopfes begatten zu lassen. - Sie sei berechtigt, sich unter einer größeren Anzahl besonders gut gebauter SS-Männer den Vater des gewünschten Kindes aussuchen zu können. - Dazu hätte sie bis zu einem gewissen Termin Gelegenheit. Nützt sie diesen nicht, so würde ihr der entsprechende SS-Mann zugewiesen. - Wie diese Sache endete, weiß ich nicht, da ich Augsburg verließ.

Durch diesen Vorfall wurden mir die vielen und abwechslungsreichen Frauenbesuche in der SS-Kaserne verständlich, zu denen ausschließlich Offiziere berechtigt waren, mit denen ich über diese unglaublichen Kindererzeugungsmethoden des öfteren sprach. - Nichts hätte die brutale Einstellung dieser besser charakterisieren können, als die Antworten, die ich von diesen menschlichen Hengsten erhielt.

Das charakteristische der älteren und ranghöheren Semester war eine Trunksucht, durch die es oft zu Ausartungen kam, die jeder Beschreibung spotteten. - Es war vielleicht weniger des Genusses, sondern hauptsächlich der Betäubung wegen, weil es von Tag zu Tag offensichtlicher wurde, daß dieses Regime eine fürchterliche Katastrophe letzten Endes herbeiführen müsse.

So und nur so war es zu verstehen, daß die Arbeiten in Leonstein immer schärfer beaufsichtigt wurden. Man erhoffte sich durch diese Arbeit die in letzter Stunde helfende Waffe. Das fliegende Unterseeboot.

Eines Tages erschien ein höherer SS-Offizier bei mir und erklärte, im höheren Auftrag verschiedene Fragen über das Prinzip der widerstandslosen - bio-genetischen - Bewegungsart stellen zu müssen. - Er rate mir, im ureigenen Interesse die gestellten Fragen gewissenhaft zu beantworten. - Ich antwortete, daß es seit jeher mein Bestreben war, den folgenschweren Wahnsinn zu klären, die dem Aufbau elementarer Zerstörungsenergien dienende Massenbewegungs- und beschleunigungsart für vermeintlichen Wirtschafts- und Kulturaufbau zu verwenden.

Unter dem Begriff "bio-genetische" Bewegungsart verstehe ich - so begann ich meinen Vortrag - nichts anderes als die "originelle" Erd-, Blut- und Säftebewegung, die dem Aufbau der höherwertigen Energiearten meta-physischer (raum- und gestaltloser - also schon trägerstofflosen), physisch unwahrnehmbarer Wirkungsart dient.

Mit Hilfe dieser widerstands-losen, weil druck- und wärmefreien Massenbeschleunigungsart ist es möglich, alle normal unlösbaren Stoffe, Minerale etc. im kalten Strömungsweg zu verflüssigen. - Sodann in den gas-luft-förmigen und schließlich in den ätherischen und energetischen Entwicklungszustand zu überführen.

Es handelt sich um das genau umgekehrte Hydrierverfahren, das bekanntlich mit großem Wärmedruck - siehe das Kohleverflüssigungsverfahren - mit Hilfe bestimmter Katalysatoren möglich ist, um damit letzten Endes den reaktiven Überdruck - die Explosion erzeugen zu können.

Das Endprodukt des bio-genetischen, im kalten Strömungsweg durchgeführten Verflüssigungsverfahrens von allotropen Fettstoffarten aller Art ist das Gegenteil der Explosion, also die Implosion.

Da es sich bei jedem biologischen Bewegungsvorgang um reaktivierte Läuterungsprodukte handelt, sind verhältnismäßig geringe Rohstoffmengen nötig, um hochaktive Energiestoff-Konzentrate zu erhalten.

Alle Nahrungsmittel werden in den sie verzehrenden Organismen biogenetisch zwecks Blutbildung bewegt. Diese juvenile Blutbildung ist notwendig, um die aus den Nahrungsmitteln mit Hilfe der bio-ge-netischen Bewegungsart frei werdenden Atom-energien höherwertiger (levitierender = aufbauender und auftriebender) Art akkumulieren zu können, aus denen, durch die wiederum bio-genetische Blutbewegungsart, ätherische und energetische Feinstoffgebilde in schon Strahlungszustand entspringen. - Diese nach allen Seiten hin ausstrahlenden und jeden Widerstand wärmelos durchschlagenden Überwerte beeinflussen die Innenschwingung der Vitamin-Moleküle entwicklungsgünstig. - D.h. es entstehen so die höherwertigen

(zusammenziehenden) Spannungsarten, aus denen dann dasjenige frei wird, was einzelnen Forscher "fließenden Magnetismus" nannten, der - um nach Göthe zu sprechen - das "Ewig Weibliche" alles Hin-anziehende ist.- Dasjenige, das zu seiner Auftriebssteigerung das Positive im flüssigen und gas-luft-förmigen bindet und so die originelle Aufbau- und Auftriebskraft erhält.

Was z.T. bei Austritt in den atmosphärischen Luftbereich als das noch für höchste Fortentwicklungszwecke Untaugliche, im gegenfallenden Licht der konzentrierende Strahlen sendenden Sonne erstarrt, sich abermals manifestiert, das ist das Wachstum, das sozusagen die Düse, das Sendegerät für höherartige Wertigkeiten, also eine Art Himmelsleiter für das Höheraufsteigende ist.

Was als das gewissermaßen Entseelte am Druckpol (After) ausgeschieden wird, fällt auf die sich auch bio-genetisch bewegende, daher ständig gebärende Erde und wird überwölbt, d.h. unter Licht- und direkten Wärmeabschluß gebracht. - Und damit beginnt sozusagen die Wiederbeseelung.

Damit entsteht auch hier ein innerer Um- und Aufbau. Und das Endprodukt dieses abermaligen Verflüssigungsvorganges ausgeschiedener Fettstoffbestände im Medium Mist ist die irdische Aufbau- und Auftriebenergie, die sich in das Blut der Erde (Grundwasser) bindet, das durch diesen sekundären Umbauprozess als Akkumulator der wie vor geschildert freiwerdenden Energiewertbeständen entsteht. Wird also Mist (Dünger) bio-genetisch durch besonders konstruierte und legierte Boden-bearbeitungsgeräte, Pflüge, Kultivatoren, Eggen etc. bewegt, so entsteht die physische Erstgeburt, der Träger der juvenilen - das Gewicht des Seelenkörpers überwindenden - Levitations-Energie. Bewegt man dieses Medium Wasser (Blut der Erde) bio-genetisch weiter, dann werden wiederum höherwertige Energien frei, die das Medium Luft ausscheiden, wodurch infolge Volumensvergrößerung der konzentrierende Luftdruck entsteht. Das schon metaphysische Reaktionsprodukt der biogenetischen Luftbewegung ist als Implosionsprodukt der emporziehende Unterdruck, die höchstwertige Zugkraft, das "organische" Vakuum, die beste und billigste Bewegungskraft, die es auf diesem Planeten gibt. - Mit v.e. Konzentrationsdruck gepaart ' das jedes Gewicht Überwindende, die Levitationskraft als Funktion höchstwertiger Atomenergien ist.

Der mir unbekanntere höhere SS-Offizier hörte mir mit größter Aufmerksamkeit und innerlich hocherregt zu.

"Nach Ihrer Darstellung gäbe es also keine Gravitation?" meinte er, als ich eine kleine Pause machte, um die Wirkung beobachten zu können.

Die Gravitation ist eigentlich nur die Voraussetzung zur gesteigerten Levitation, war meine Antwort.

Wird umgekehrt die Levitation durch technische, hydraulische und dynamische Bewegungsmittel ausgelöst, so ergibt sich über dem Umweg eines niederwertigen Umbauproduktes die re-aktiv gesteigerte Gravitation.

Damit - schloß ich diese Aufklärung ab - können Sie die Tragik des wissenschaftlichen Bewegungssirrtums in ihrer vollen Auswirkung ermessen.

Langsam beginne ich Sie nun zu verstehen. - Richtiger gesagt, ich beginne zu ahnen, daß es in der Natur ein Nichtperpetuum nicht gibt. - Alles und jedes im ewigen Umbau ist. Daher auch eine Äquivalenz und eine konstante Energiestoff-Erhaltung, sowenig wie eine konstante Erhaltung irgend einer medialen Materie möglich ist. Und noch eine Frage, fuhr mein Gegenüber fort. Sind Sie in der Lage, diesen Entwicklungsgang, denn um diesen handelt es sich meines Erachtens hier, zu kopieren?

Ich antwortete: Ja. Und nun kam die erwartete Gegenfrage: Ist diese Kopierung der veredelnden bio-genetischen Bewegungsart kostspielig?

Ich antwortete, diese materielle und ideelle Veredelungsmöglichkeit ist so gut wie kostenlos, wenn man die dazu gehörigen Geräte und die dazu gehörigen Katalysatoren besitzt.

Wann werden Sie fertig sein? Das hängt ganz von der Materialbeschaffungsmöglichkeit und von zur Verfügung gestellten Präzisionsmaschinen ab.

In kurzer Zeit waren diese von den Steyrerwerken zur Verfügung gestellt. Wenige Wochen später und kaum, daß die verlangten Maschinen standen, war der Krieg zu Ende.

Und was sich in den letzten Tagen abspielte, charakterisiert eine politische Bewegung, die - wie die technische, hydraulische und dynamische - sich selbst und die ganze Umgebung zerstört und in sich sowie an sich entwertet.

Je näher die alliierten Truppen kamen, umso mehr wuchs die Aufregung im SS-Sonderkommando, das die militärische Aufsicht meiner Abteilung hatte.

Eines Tages erklärte der Hauptsturmführer Lindner, daß alles, was bisher gemacht wurde, entweder vergraben oder gesprengt wird.

Ich erklärte, daß allein ich über das auf meine Kosten Gebaute verfüge. Eine Zerstörung auf keinen Fall zulasse, da das, was ich baute, mehr zivilen als militärischen Zwecken dient. Denn - erklärte ich kennen die Menschen erst einmal den bisher gemachten Fehler, dann werden sie ihn aus ureigenem Interesse korrigieren und damit ist jeder Kampf ums tägliche Brot, die eigentliche Ursache dieses Krieges, von selbst behoben.

Um das geht es hier nicht, meinte der v.e. Aufsichtsoffizier, sondern darum, daß die Geräte dem Feind nicht in die Hände fallen. Ich antwortete: auch das wird nicht geschehen, denn mein Lebenswerk werde ich nicht aus der Hand geben. Im übrigen würde selbst eine fertige Maschine niemand zu behandeln und vor allem nicht zu regulieren verstehen. Ein kleiner Fehler und sie würde sich atomisieren.

Je näher das Kriegsende kam, umso nervöser wurden die beiden Überwachungs-Offiziere, die sichtbar Angst vor den ruhig ihre Arbeit machenden Häftlingen hatten.

Eines Tages erklärte Lindner, einen Befehl erhalten zu haben, daß der Arbeitsplatz verteidigt werde. Es werden einige hundert Mann mit schweren Waffen einlangen. Tatsächlich kamen wenige Tage später Handgranaten, Maschinengewehre und Munition. - In den nächsten Tagen werden weitere Verteidigungsmittel und eine kriegserprobte Mannschaft erwartet.

Es war ein trüber und regnerischer Nachmittag, an dem ich mit meinem Konstrukteur im Zeichenraum saß.

"Chef," rief der Konstrukteur herüber, "die Waffen sind da." Ich gab keine Antwort und sah durchs Fenster zu, wie die Wachmannschaften die schweren Waffen vorüberführten.

Wenige Sekunden später verließ der Untersturnführer Kortegast, ein "Norddeutscher" die Werkstätte und ging eilig ins Quartier.

Kaum eine halbe Stunde später erschienen die beiden Offiziere in voller Kriegsausrüstung und gingen mit finsternen Mienen durch den Konstruktionsraum. Und draußen standen die Wachmannschaften in voller Rüstung.

Wort- und grußlos schlugen sie die Tür zu und heulte ein schweres Motorrad auf, auf dem die beiden SS-Führer mit Vollgas in Richtung Ort Leonstein fuhren.

Es war schon Feierabend, als das Motorrad und ein Auto in den Werkhof fuhren.

Ich hörte, daß mehrere Personen ankamen, kümmerte mich jedoch um diese nicht und ging zeitlich schlafen.

Es mag 3 Uhr morgens gewesen sein, als es an meiner Tür klopfte. Ich knipste das Licht an und sah meinen Konstrukteur totenblaß an der Türe.

"Chef, leben Sie wohl, wir gehen sterben." - Im nächsten Moment war ich aus dem Bette und ging in den Vorraum des Parterres, wo ich Lärm, Kommandorufe, mit einem Wort große Unruhe merkte.

Als ich unten ankam, war der ganze Raum mit Wehrmachtsunteroffizieren, etwa ein Dutzend Männer, besetzt, die mit gezogenen Pistolen die zitternden Häftlinge bewachten.

In diesem Moment erschien der Hauptsturmführer Lindner an seiner im Parterre gelegenen Wohnungstür.

Was - sprach ich ihn an - soll das alles bedeuten? Das geht Sie einen großen Dreck an - war die verächtliche Antwort Lindners.

Nun ging ich hoch und erklärte, daß er kein Recht besäße, Menschen, die nichts verbrochen und immer fleißig gearbeitet haben, wie Schwerverbrecher zu behandeln.

Lindner schob mich beiseite und befahl seinen Leuten, mit den Häftlingen abzumarschieren. - Ein Dutzend Pistolen richteten sich auf die wenigen und absolut waffenlosen Zivilisten und mit einem los los setzte sich der Trupp in Bewegung, dessen Kommandant v.e. Untersturmführer war.

Ich ging innerlich schwer erschüttert ins Zimmer zurück. - Und als ich später wieder herunter kam, sah ich, wie die Wachmannschaften die wenigen Habseligkeiten der Häftlinge genau durchsuchten. - D.h. alles auf den Hof warfen.

Wollen Sie mir - sprach ich den Hauptsturmführer an - sagen, was dies alles bedeuten soll? Ihre Freunde wurden von Ihnen bewaffnet. Dies bedeutet Meuterei - und Sie sind verhaftet. Sie gehen heute Abend nach Mauthausen ab, wohin Ihre Leute bereits gebracht werden.

Sie sind offensichtlich wahnsinnig geworden, antwortete ich dem Hauptsturmführer. Zeigen Sie mir den Verhaftungsbefehl. - Den habe ich hier - und schlug auf seine Brusttasche.

Ein Wort gab das andere. Und auf beiden Seiten stieg die Erregung. In diesem Moment fuhr im Hof ein schweres Motorrad der Wehrmacht vor, aus dem ein bekannter Fliegerleutnant sprang, den ich gut kannte.

Dieser frug mich, was los sei. - Als ich ihm antwortete, daß ich wegen angeblicher Bewaffnung der K.Z.-Häftlinge verhaftet und noch heute zur Aburteilung nach Mauthausen abgehen soll, frug er mich, was er für mich tun könne.

Fahren Sie bitte gleich nach Linz zu meinem Vetter und ersuchen Sie ihn, daß er sofort nach hier komme. - Es geht um unschuldige Menschenleben. - Der Leutnant sprang auf sein Motorrad und brauste ab.

Ich verlange, wandte ich mich wieder zu Lindner, daß Sie sofort jemand nach Mauthausen senden, telefonieren etc. um das Leben der Menschen zu retten, die sofort hingerichtet werden, wenn sie mit so schwerer Schuld belastet dort ankommen.

Lindner weigerte sich und daraufhin nannte ich ihn einen feigen Mörder. - Im nächsten Moment brach ich zusammen. - Der kurze Zeit darauf erschienene Arzt stellte einen leichten Schlaganfall fest und ordnete absolute Bettruhe an. - Als Lindner antwortete, er hätte Befehl, mich nach Mauthausen noch heute einzuliefern, erklärte der Wehrmachtsarzt, daß dies unter keinen Umständen in Frage käme. Dies war am frühen Vormittag.

Gegen Mittag kam mein Vetter, ein Oberregierungsrat in Generalrang an. Ich erklärte ihm den Fall und verlangte, daß er Lindner den Befehl gibt, den Untersturmführer, der die falsche Meldung erstattete, und der die Häftlinge nur bis zum Bahnhof Leonstein begleitete, von wo sie durch Militärpolizei weitergeleitet wurden, per Motorrad nach Mauthausen zu senden und die unschuldig der Meuterei Bezichtigten zurück zu bringen.

Lindner bekam diesen Befehl und wenige Minuten später fuhr der Untersturmführer ab.

Er kam ergebnislos zurück. - In Mauthausen, teilte er mir mit, herrsche bereits Übergabe des Kommandos an Polizeitruppen und trotz mehrmaliger Ausrufung blieben die Gesuchten unauffindbar. - Zwei Mann kamen nächsten Tages zurück. - Die Übrigen blieben spurlos verschwunden, obwohl sie nachweisbar im K.Z. ankamen.

Am nächsten Tag verließen die im vorderen Tal befindlichen Truppen ihre Quartiere und zogen sich über das Gebirge Richtung Kirchdorf zurück. - Diesen schlossen sich meine bisherigen Wachmannschaften an.

Gegen Mittag verließen, als Wachmannssoldaten verkleidet, die SS-Offiziere, ihre Frauen zurücklassend, das Sensenwerk. - Und wenige Stunden später brausten ein Halbduzend Panzerwagen in den Hof, aus denen etliche 20 Amerikaner sprangen und ins Haus drangen, die sofort meinen Namen nannten und einer Frau auftrugen, mich sofort zu holen.

Die erste Frage, die ein Kapitän durch einen Dolmetsch an mich stellte, galt den Waffen, die in einem Raum deponiert waren. - Ich wurde aufgefordert, diese sofort zu übergeben. - Das größte Interesse galt den kleinen und handlichen Offizierspistolen und der dazu gehörigen Munition. - Dann wurden die Gewehre, die schweren Dienstpistolen, die leichten Maschinengewehre auf den Hof getragen und dort zerschlagen.

Als dies erledigt war, frug mich der Kapitän, wo mein bisheriger Arbeitsraum war und ob Konstruktionszeichnungen vorhanden sind. Ich zeigte ersteren und erklärte, daß meine Zeichnungen in meinem Zimmer verwahrt liegen. - Der Kapitän überlegte kurz und teilte mir sodann mit, daß ich das Haus nicht verlassen dürfe. - Und alles übrige sei so, wie es liegt und steht, zu belassen. - Hüten Sie sich, gegen diesen Befehl zu verstoßen. Und - er deutete mit seiner Hand rund um im Kreis - ist alles besetzt. Nach einer kurzen Durchsuchung der bisherigen Arbeitsstätte fuhr der Vortrupp weg.

Und nun begann eine schwere Zeit, da die gefangen gewesenen Russen und die dienstverpflichteten Polen zu plündern begannen. Sie drangen in fast jedes Haus und zwangen mit der Waffe in der Hand zur Herausgabe all dessen, was ihnen gefiel. - So habe ich nicht nur Privateigentum, sondern auch fast unersetzliche Werkstücke verloren, die z.T. versilbert und vergoldet waren.

Meine nach Wien geflüchtete Familie brachte die Nachricht, daß auch die Wiener Wohnung beschossen und sodann restlos ausgeraubt wurde.

Kurze Zeit später erfuhr ich, daß auch die bei einem bekannten Oberförster deponierten Arbeitsunterlagen, Versuchsprotokolle, Katalysatoren etc. gefunden und weggeführt wurden. - Was mir als trauriger Rest einer fast 30 jährigen Forschungsarbeit noch verblieb, war infolge Fehlens der wichtigsten Teile, die ich vor den Zugriffen der SS versteckte, ziemlich wertlos.

Eines Sonntag Nachmittages fuhr abermals ein Panzerwagen auf den Werkshof, wo ich mich zufällig befand. Zwei Offiziere (Amerikaner) gingen auf mich zu und frugen mich, ob ich - oder wo Schauburger sei.

Der eine sprach gut deutsch und forderte mich auf, die Konstruktionszeichnungen herauszugeben. - Ich erklärte, daß diese mein Eigentum sind und freiwillig nicht ausgefolgt werden. Der Offizier und, wie sich später herausstellte, Ingenieur machte mit dem Finger eine nicht mißzuverstehende Bewegung und sagte: "zeigen."

Ich führte beide Amerikaner ins Zimmer, wo sie - mitsammen englisch sprechend - Stück für Stück die vorgelegten Konstruktionen besichtigten.

Als dies geschehen war frug der eine: "Kennen Sie Jezcievski?" Ich bejahte und bemerkte, daß dies mein bisheriger Konstrukteur war. Er läßt Sie grüßen und wird in Kürze nach hier kommen. Sie haben Glück gehabt, daß Sie einen Mann haben, der Ihnen ein sehr gutes Zeugnis ausstellte. - Die Sachen bleiben hier. Und auch Sie dürfen bis auf weiteres dieses Haus nicht verlassen. - Denn Sie werden hier weiterarbeiten. - Sodann fuhren die beiden Offiziere weg.

Acht Tage später erschien Jezcievski mit noch einem Polen, den er mir als einen Maschineningenieur vorstellte und erklärte, Auftrag zu haben, sofort ein Inventar über das noch Vorhandene aufzunehmen.

Zu diesem Zweck holte er aus einem Depot alles zusammen, was noch vorhanden war. - Er habe, erklärte er weiter, hohe Offiziere für diese Arbeit interessiert und so könnten wir ungehindert weiterarbeiten. Er rate mir auch, dies zu tun, um irgendwelchen Folgerungen auszuweichen.



Da fast alles weggeschleppt wurde, blieb nichts anderes übrig, als im nahen Sensenwerk Pießlinger, das maschinell gut eingerichtet war, arbeiten zu lassen. - Zwischendurch machte ich an die oberösterreichische Landesregierung Landeshauptmann Dr. Gleißner ein Gesuch, mir pachtweise Arbeits- und Wohnräume im leerstehenden Schloß Leonstein, früheres Militärquartier, überlassen zu wollen.

Gleißner sandte mir den bekannten Fachmann Dr. Ing. Malzacher, um meine Arbeit begutachten zu lassen.

Diesem zeigte ich - da eine Fortsetzung der Arbeiten an der Implosionsmaschine aussichtslos war, eine halbfertige Wärme- und Lichtapparat, die sein besonderes Interesse erregte. - Er lud mich in sein bei Steyr befindliches Werk, um eine eventuelle Zusammenarbeit mit seinem Chefindgenieur - einem Amerikaner - zu besprechen. Die Finanzierung wollte sein Compagnon, ein sehr vermöglicher Mann, übernehmen, den ich auch kennen lernte, mir jedoch sehr unsympathisch war.

Dies war auch der Grund, warum ich ablehnte. Von der oberösterreichischen Landesregierung bekam ich Bescheid, daß in das Schloß Leonstein eine Weberei und ein Kindergarten käme, daher besetzt sei.

Dr. Ing. Malzacher, der beim amerikanischen Oberkommando Linz beschäftigt war, besuchte mich einige Male in Leonstein und interessierte sich für v.e. Apparatur schon allein aus dem Grund, weil er mich und meine Schwemmarbeiten genau kannte, die ja auch auf dem "spezifischen" Verdichtungsprinzip fußten, das sich bisher niemand zu erklären vermochte, obwohl ich dieses wiederholt erklärte.

Ich hatte diese Apparatur, mit der es möglich ist, eine feuerlose und höherwertige, also die natürliche = fallende und konzentrierende Wärmeart nahezu kostenlos herzustellen, noch kurz vor meiner Abkommandierung nach Leonstein in Wien privat herstellen lassen. Der erste Versuch, den ich mit dem Fabrikchef in einem offenen Schuppen abführte, fiel positiv aus. - D.h. v.e. Fabriksbesitzer und seine Leute, die mir die hochtourige Apparatur bei der Übergabe vorführten, begannen, im v.e. halboffenen Raum, trotz allgemein tiefer Temperatur zu schwitzen. Der Fabriksbesitzer vermutete zuerst ein Heißlaufen der Lager, und als er feststellte, daß dies nicht der Fall sei, meinte er, daß er offensichtlich hohes Fieber habe. - Auch die beiden Gehilfen begannen, den Schweiß vom Gesicht zu wischen und glaubten auch, hohes Fieber zu haben.

Ich erklärte, die Apparatur noch am gleichen Tag wegführen zu lassen. Bezahlte sie und riet dem Fabriksbesitzer und seinen beiden Gehilfen, sich ins Bett zu legen, um das Fieber auszuschwitzen, was auch prompt geschah.

Der Fabriksbesitzer teilte mir vertraulich mit, daß die Herstellungsarbeiten von Ingenieuren des Wiener Technischen Amtes ständig kontrolliert würden. Wütend waren, als sie plötzlich unauffindbar verschwunden war, während er krank im Bett lag, heißen Tee trank und schwitzte. Diese Apparatur verblieb und verschwand in Wien.

Dr. Ing. Malzacher stellte die Frage, wie ich auf die Idee käme, die Sonne zu kopieren.

Ich antwortete, daß dies doch die beste und billigste, weil naturrichtige Wärmequelle sei. Denn, ein Feuer anzuzünden, um eine steigende und expandierende, also niederwertige Wärmeart zu erzeugen sei doch naturwidrig, daher falsch und abgesehen davon kostspielig. Außerdem sind Holz und Kohle nicht dazu da, um einer Wärmeart wegen, die am Plafond steigt und den Fußboden kaum erwärmt, verbrannt zu werden.

Auf diesbzgl. Fragen, wie ich mir diese obskure Sonnenkopierung vorstelle, antwortete ich ungefähr folgendes:

Die heutige Wissenschaft betrachtet die Sonne als einen Glut- oder Gasball der ungefähr 10<sup>10</sup> m Durchmesser besitzt. Spektralanalyse 6000°C besitzt. Je näher man diesem Feuerherd kommt, - siehe Pickard - umso kälter und finsterner wird es.

Je weiter die Sonne von der Erde entfernt ist, umso wärmer wird es auf dieser. Und hoch auf den Bergspitzen, nahe der glühenden Sonne liegt ewiger Schnee.

Kurz um, die P.T. Wissenschaft hat sich auch diesbzgl. schwer geirrt, weil das Ganze grundsätzlich anders ist, als die Stern- und Himmelspione sich dies zurechtgelegt haben.

Ja - antwortete Malzacher - und wie ist es wirklich?

Meine kurze Antwort lautete: genau verkehrt. Darf ich Ihnen Herr Doktor Ingenieur, dies wie folgt etwas näher erklären.

J e d e Bewegung wirkt funktionell betrachtet nach zwei Seiten, oder richtiger gesagt nach allen Richtungen. Fällt z.B. ein Meteorit vom Himmel zur und auf die Erde, dann siehtm man hinterher einen grellen Lichtschein, der jedoch kein Feuerschein, sonder gewissermaßen der Seelenschein, ein temperaturloser Lichteffect ist. Denselben temperaturlosen Licht-schein können wir auch bemerken, wenn wir uns im abkühlenden Meer-wasser schwimmend - bewegen. (siehe auch auf-leuchtende Kiesel im Quellwasser).

J e d e Bewegung erzeugt eine molekulare Innenschwingungs-änderung. J e d e Schwingungs-änderung eine Bewegungs-änderung. Struktur- und Charakter- (Qualität) änderung der bewegten Masse (Materie) ist die biologische, d.h. die re-aktive Folge-erscheinung. So entstehen unterschiedliche Grundsoff-ausgleiche, durch diese unterschiedliche Temperaturarten und Spannungs-arten.

Daß sich die Erde bewegt, ist seit Gallilei bekannt. W i e sie sich bewegt, war bisher unbekannt. Und daher konnte man auch die höherwertigen Temperatur- und Spannungs-arten nicht erkennen, die n u r bei einer naturrichtigen - in zykliden Spiralraumkurven sich abspielenden - druck- und wärme-losen - es handelt sich also hier um die widerstandslose - Bewegungsart entstehen.

Daß eine widerstandslose Bewegungsart keine Temperatur infolge der fehlenden Reibung entstehen läßt, ist klar. Da der oben erwähnte Meteorit nur im luftleeren Raum den bekannten Lichtschwanz hinterläßt, und erlischt, wenn er mit gegen die Erde zu wachsendem Luftwiderstand gebremst wird, und - was nun schwer ins Gewicht fällt kaum handwarm auf der Erde ankommt und großkristallinische Struktur aufweist, was unmöglich ist oder wäre, wenn ein aufglühendes Metall sich plötzlich abkühlt, so ist dies allein schon ein Beweis, daß es nur die Überschreitung der Bewegungs-geschwindigkeit (in diesem Fall der Fallgeschwindigkeit) ist die den Astralleib zwingt, das Seelenfutteral zu verlassen. Richtiger ausgedrückt, die übermäßige Innenschwingungssteigerung bei Überschreitung der zulässigen Grenzgeschwindigkeit beutet, wie der Volksmund sagt, die Seele aus dem Leibe. Und da astrale Gebilde ohne einen Körper nicht existieren können, fährt ersteres mit über Affengeschwindigkeit ins Nirwana zurück.

Ebenso sonnenklar, oder - wie man sagt - watscheneinfach ist, daß eine Überschreitung der zulässigen Grenzgeschwindigkeit mit Hilfe einer technischen, hydraulischen oder dynamischen Bewegungsart aus dem ureinfachen Grunde unmöglich ist, weil bei diesen naturwidrigen, also wissenschaftlichen Verlagerungsarten, der Bewegungs-widerstand im Quadrat zur Geschwindigkeitszunahme wächst. Daher logischerweise in diesem Fall Reibungssteigerung, niederwertige Temperatur- und Spannungs-arten aufleben, aus denen dann die zersetzenden (zerstörenden) Läuterungsprodukte einer naturwidrigen Bewegungsart, kurz gesagt die entwicklungs-schädlichen Atom-energien entstehen.

In diesem Falle wird es nach aufwärts zu warm und nach abwärts zu kalt.

Dreht man dieses Bewegungsspiel um, dann wird es nach oben zu kälter und nach unten zu wärmer. Sie würden es Herr Doktor-Ingenieur nicht verstehen, w e n n ich Ihnen nun noch erklären würde, daß auch die Himmelfahrt der seelischen Gebilde, nach Aufhören der Lebens- bzw. inneren Schwingungs-vorgänge wesentlich anders ist, als uns dies die Kirchenfürsten und deren Prediger lehrten. Aber diese Er-leuchtung gehört in ein anderes Wissensgebiet, das sich auch von den dermaligen Wissen-schafts-gebieten grundsätzlich unterscheidet.

Um die Formel  $E = m \cdot C^2$  zu erklären. Die Masse (das Medium) ist nur mit Hilfe der druck- und wärmelos wirkenden, also widerstandslosen Beschleunigungs-art ü b e r die erforderliche Höchstgeschwindigkeit zu bewegen, bei der die Schwingungs-perioden der wechselsinnig wirkenden Zug- und Druck-komponenten (das sind die Bewegungsteilkräfte) die vorgeschriebene Lichtgeschwindigkeit ( $C^2$ ) erreichen.

In diesem Fall tritt die höhere Dissoziation, die Trennung des Astralen von Corpuskularen und damit erst die Manifestation des Atomaren und dessen bio-logische = r e - aktive Wirkungsart ein.

Manifestiert sich das höherwertige Licht, dann wirkt dieses, wie ein Lichtschwanz eines Kometen. Und die Lichtstrahlen, die die nötige Geschwindigkeit nicht erreichen, gestalten in- ihrer Umgebung die fallende und konzentrierende Wärme.

Der Beweis für diese Behauptung ist einfach. Führt man atomare Strahlengebilde höherwertiger Entwicklungsart in Vakuumröhren, d.h. stellt man diese in den Strahlungsbereich levitierender Feinststoffgebilde, dann leuchten sie mit einem grünlichblauen und stark zittrigen Licht auf, weil im Vakuum, die Strahlen-geschwindigkeit steigt.

Erhöht man nun durch Turenzahl die Frequenz (molekulare Schwingungszahl), dann hat man nach oben zu Kälte und Dunkelheit, und nach unten zu fallendes Licht, der letzte Rücklaß des ins Nirwana Zurückkehrenden (Astralen), dessen Funktion die konzentrierende, das Wachstum gestaltende höher-wertige Wärme-form ist.

Bewegt man mediale Masse im Widerstand, d.h. läßt man z.B. einen Wassertropfen im gewöhnlichen Luft-widerstand frei ab und durch eine Bleiröhre fallen, die die ausstrahlenden Gebilde bremst, so entsteht ein dunkelrotes, stark pulsierendes Licht, wenn man die gebündelten Strahlengebilde in einen möglichst luftleeren Raum sendet und dadurch deren Eigengeschwindigkeit beschleunigt.

Sendet man diese Strahlenbündel über dem Umweg einer Leydenerflasche in brennbare Flüssigkeiten oder Gase, dann entsteht eine umso höhere Stichflamme, als die ketten-artigen Reaktionsstöße in der Leydenerflasche addiert wurden. Denn eine Akkumulation dieser Strahlengebilde ist in einer Leydenerflasche sowenig möglich, als deren Messung mit einem gewöhnlichen Voltmeter, weil es sich in diesem Fall um nahezu ampere lose Z u g - kräfte in schon atomarer Zustandsart handelt, die besondere Meßgeräte (Elektrometer) benötigen.

Daß Dr. Ing. Malzacher da nicht mitfolgen konnte, war mir von vornherein klar, weil diese Industriekanone in nur ausgesprochen explosiven Bewegungsauswirkungen sozusagen zuhause war.

Daß der Mann aber eine Ahnung bekam, daß eine Industrialisierung ohne Krach und Gestank besser und billiger ist, war daran zu erkennen, daß in diesem Falle - statt der natur-widrig beschleunigten Masse - der Fabrikant Feuer fing.

Als ich aber den weltbekannten Organisator, vielfachen Generaldirektor und Leiter großer Konzerne soweit hatte, wurde er eines Tages von den Amerikanern verhaftet und - wie ich später erfuhr - in der Lagerküche zum Erdäpfelschälen verwendet.

Und auch mein Schicksal nahm damit auch folgende Wende.

Ich fuhr eben per Rad mit meinem Konstrukteur vom Sensenwerk Gstatt, als mir ein Militärauto begegnete und uns aufhielt. Es waren Beamte der Militärpolizeistelle Kirchdorf, die unser Nationale aufnahmen und uns beiden den Auftrag gaben, nächsten Tages in Kirchdorf zu erscheinen.

Am selben Abend, nach 20 Uhr, flog plötzlich die Zimmertür auf und eine amerikanische Untersuchungskommission in Begleitung eines Polizeioffiziers trat ins Zimmer.

Der Leiter dieser Untersuchungskommission, ein höherer amerikanischer Polizeioffizier setzte sich zum Tisch und befahl mir mit einer stummen Fingerbewegung, mich neben ihm zu setzen. Der Konstrukteur und der neu angekommene frühere K.Z.-Häftling bekamen auf gleiche Art die Aufforderung, sich zur anderen Hand des Offiziers zu setzen.

Der Dolmetsch, auch ein amerikanischer Polizeioffizier und der öst-Polizeioffizier setzten sich so, daß wir vollständig eingeschlossen waren. Zwei Gendarmerieposten standen am Gang Gewehr bei Fuß.

Und nun begann das Verhör, zu dem ich vor allem meine Brieftasche ausfolgen mußte, die der Untersuchungsleiter auf den Tisch ausleerte und die enthaltenen Papiere, Identitätsausweise etc. genau visitierte und sich Notizen machte.

Sie beschäftigen sich mit der Erzeugung atomarer Kräfte? Ich antwortete: ich befasse mich mit der Ergründung der "originellen" Lebenskräfte, die zwar auch atomare Energie-arten, jedoch nicht diejenigen sind, die man seit kurzem in Amerika erzeugt.

Kennen Sie die Erzeugungsmöglichkeit der letzteren, ließ der Untersuchungsleiter durch den Dolmetsch fragen?

Alle Arten Atom-energien sind Läuterungsprodukte einer Bewegungsart, durch die molekulare Innenschwingungen und durch diese Ausscheidungen von unterschiedlichen Feinstoffgebilden in Strahlenform entstehen.

Der Polizeioffizier konnte da sichlich nicht recht folgen und daher stellte er über den Dolmetsch weitere Fragen, der nun auch wirr wurde, als ich ihm die inneren Grundstoff-ausgleiche zu erklären versuchte, deren Produkte, die höher- oder die niederwertigen Atomenergien sind.

Ja, erklärte nach längerem Überlegen der Untersuchungsleiter: wir wissen, daß Sie einer derjenigen sind, die dem Atomgeheimnis auf die Spur kamen.

Ich erkannte den Aufbauvorgang aller Atomenergien schon zu einer Zeit, in der die Wissenschaftler an die Möglichkeit meta-physischer Realitätenerzeugnisse noch nicht dachten. Der Beweis hierfür ist ein Ende der 20er Jahre erteiltes amerikanisches Patent, das sich mit den atomaren Trag- und Schleppkräften des Wassers befaßte.

Sie sagen, frug der U.L. weiter, daß zwischen den in Amerika und den von Ihnen erzeugten Atomenergien Unterschiede bestehen? Welcher Art sind diese?

Ich antwortete: die amerikanischen sind die vernichtenden und die von mir erzeugten, richtiger gesagt ur-gezeugten Atomenergien sind die relativ höchsten Aufbau- und Auftriebs-energien, die man selbstverständlich - außer zur Wachstumssteigerung - auch für den nahezu kostenlosen Antrieb von Maschinen aller Art verwenden kann.

Der U.L. lächelte etwas geringschätzig, als der Dolmetsch letzteres übersetzte, und so erwähnte ich noch, daß die in Amerika erzeugten Atom-energien niemals für Wirtschaftszwecke verwendet werden können, da die Abstrahlungen blut- und säfte-zersetzend wirken. Also die Blutfäule die böseste Krebskrankheit (Atomkrankheit) auslöst, die es wohl überhaupt gibt.

Darauf winkte der U.L. ungeduldig ab und erwähnte, daß er sich nun mit meinem politischen Vorleben befassen werde. Denn die anderen Fragen hätten andere - die noch nachkommen - zu klären.

Meine politische Weste war fleckenlos, weil ich seit jeher Politik als den Gestank einer schlechten Wirtschaft hielt, daher nie organisiert, nicht einmal Mitglied eines Kegelklubs war.

Sie waren bei der Waffen-SS? Diese Frage war rasch erledigt, als ich erwähnte, daß ich - nach dem Stichtag - gemustert und regelrecht einberufen wurde. Daß ich mich bereit erklärte, in der SS-Ingenieurschule meine Forschungsarbeiten fortsetzen zu wollen, fiel auch nicht ins Gewicht.

Sie sprachen Hitler? "Ja". - Sie kamen mit verschiedenen Ministern Hitlers in Verbindung? Darunter auch mit Speer, mit dem Sie korrespondierten? - "Ja".

Was wissen Sie vom Ende der Baronin Mauthner - Eppstein? - "Die hat man lt. Mitteilung des S.D.-Dienstes, der diesen Fall in meiner Wohnung vor mir behandelte, vergiftet." - Warum? - "Weil sie verlangte, daß sich Göring mit meiner Sache näher befassen und vor allem Hitler auf die Gefahr einer technischen Steigerung aufmerksam machen soll."

Wo befindet sich die diesbezgl. Akte Meditsch, Salzburg? Ich antwortete: "Meines Wissens wurden sie bei einem Bombenangriff im Keller Salzburg Haydenstraße 5 verschüttet". Der U.L. erwähnte darauf: "Ihre Angaben stimmen". Mittlerweile wurde es nach Mitternacht. Als der

Untersuchungsleiter dies wahrnahm, sprang er auf, verließ wort- und grußlos das Zimmer und wenige Sekunden später fuhr die Kommission ab.

Nächsten Tages flog wiederum die Türe auf und das Verhör nahm sodann seinen Fortlauf.

An diesem Abend wurde mein Leben von der Geburt an durchkämmt. Man wußte die kleinsten Ereignisse und wußte sichtlich oft besser Bescheid, warum sich dies und jenes ereignete, als ich selbst. Es würde hier zuweit abführen, wollte ich Details erwähnen.

Gegen Mitternacht, also nach abermals über 4 stündigem Verhör setzte der U.L. seine Kappe auf, die er diesmal abgenommen hatte als er sich zum Tisch setzte, zündete er sich eine Zigarette an, bot mir lächelnd auch eine an, sprach kurz mit dem Dolmetsch, dann stand er mit einem Ruck auf und ging mit seinem Stab ab.

Am nächsten Tag waren sie um die gleiche Zeit, wie die zwei Tage vorher, wiederum da.

Diesmal kamen meine beiden Konstrukteure dran, die nun genau gefragt wurden, wer sie nach Leonstein aus Regensburg beorderte und ihnen die nötigen Papiere zur Überschreitung der Grenze gab. Es schien der immer schärfer gestellten Fragen nach da irgend etwas nicht zu stimmen. Plötzlich brach der U.L. das Verhör ab und erklärte beide Polen für verhaftet. Sie haben ihre Sachen zu packen und sofort mitzukommen.

Und nun wendete er sich zu mir. "Ihre Aussagen stimmen". Sie werden jedoch ab heute bewacht.

Sie - er wandte sich an den österreichischen Polizei- bzw. Gendarmerieoffizier - haben zu veranlassen, daß niemand mit Schauburger in Verbindung kommt. Wird dieser Befehl von irgend jemand nicht befolgt, so haben die Posten sofort von der Waffe Gebrauch zu machen. Nun beorderte er die Gendarmerieposten ins Zimmer und ließ ihnen über den Dolmetsch sagen, daß ich kein Häftling sei und sie sich mir gegenüber anständig und korrekt zu benehmen haben - allerdings nicht aus den Augen lassen dürfen. Es darf niemand außer den gegenwärtig im Haus Befindlichen die Haustüre überschreiten und es ist jeder zu erschießen, der diesem Befehl nicht Folge leistet. Die Schlüssel für den Konstruktionsraum wurden mir abgenommen. Und von dieser Stunde an konnte ich keinen Schritt mehr ohne Postenbegleitung machen. Und in Wien wurde von der russischen Militärpolizei und öst. Staatspolizei mein Hab und Gut durchsucht und, da ich zum bestimmten Termin nicht zurückkehrte, der restlosen Plünderung überlassen.

Wochenlang war und blieb ich ohne jede Außenverbindung. Da erschien eines Tages der Kirchdorfer Bezirkshauptmann Dr. Kienmoser, der vor etwa 20 Jahren der Kommissionsleiter war, als man mich wegen utopischer Planungen und offensichtlich Verrückten ins Irrenhaus Mauer-Öhling sperren wollte.

War schon sein Empfang durch den dienstmachenden Posten etwas schreckeneinflößend für den alten und an und für sich sehr ängstlichen Herrn, so schüchterte ihn seine Eskortierung durch 2 Posten mit aufgepflanzten Bajonett zu mir vollends ein. Da ist jemand, meldete mir der Posten, der behauptet, der Bezirkshauptmann von Kirchdorf zu sein, der höherortlichen Auftrag hat, mit Ihnen zu sprechen.

Ich erkannte Hofrat Dr. Kienmoser, der nach Kriegsende als über 70 jähriger reaktiviert wurde, sofort und bat ihn, in meiner Kammer Platz zu nehmen. Die Posten wies ich aus dem Zimmer.

Na, sagen Sie, hub der alte Hofrat an, nach dem er sich vorsichtig umgeblickt hatte, "was haben Sie denn schon wieder angestellt?"

Immer dasselbe Herr Hofrat antwortete ich. Vor 20 Jahren ahnte ich es erst. Heute weiß ich es, daß die ganze Wissenschaft, sowohl weltlicher wie auch kirchlicher Richtung hin ein folgenschwerer Irrtum ist.

Kienmoser winkte mit beiden Händen ab und teilte mir dann mit, daß er höheren Orts aufgefordert wurde, zu mir zu gehen und mich bezgl. der Raumheizung auf chemischem Wege zu fragen. Österreich habe nur sehr wenig Holz mehr und auch keine Arbeiter, die solches für den kommenden Winter in ausreichender Menge schlagen.

Von einer "chemischen" Raumheizungsmöglichkeit weiß ich nichts Herr Hofrat. Ja aber sie haben doch gewiß Herr Hofrat aber das, was ich kürzlich Dr. Ing. Malzacher mitteilte, der es wahrscheinlich Dr. Gleißner übermittelte, ist keine chemische, sondern eine rein physikalische Angelegenheit. Ich versuchte nun, dem Bezirkshauptmann das Wesen dieser einfachen, natürlichen und daher fast kostenlosen Methode, mit der die Natur unseren Lebensraum im Sommer erwärmt, zu erklären.

Er unterbrach mich aber gleich und meinte, daß er dies alles nicht verstehen könne und, wenn ich zustimme, würde er mich mit Bewilligung der amerikanischen Militärpolizei persönlich zu einem Physiker, dem Prior des Stiftes Kremsmünster Dr ... bringen, der dann einen entsprechenden Bericht verfassen würde, den er dann weiterleiten könnte.

Ich war froh, wieder einmal mit Menschen in Berührung zu kommen, und stimmte daher zu. Wenige Tage später wurde ich mit dem Wagen Kienmoser nach Kirchdorf gebracht, wo mich dann der Bezirkshauptmann persönlich ins Kloster Kremsmünster führte, wo genügend leere Räume zur Durchführung v.e. Wünsche vorhanden waren. Kurze Zeit darauf empfing uns der stellvertretende Abt des Stiftes Kremsmünster, ein anerkannter Physikprofessor.

Dr. Kienmoser sprach einige einleitende Worte, währenddem ich Gelegenheit hatte, mir diesen sich ziemlich selbsterrlich gehabenden geistlichen Würdenträger genauer zu betrachten.

Sie sind mir kein Unbekannter, eröffnete der Prior die Aussprache. Wenn ich nicht irre, waren Sie einst Wildmeister bei Fürst Schaumburg Lippe und brachten damals eine ziemliche Unruhe in unsere stille Klausur. Ich sah mir den Prachtraum an, in dem uns der Pater empfing und erinnerte mich blitzartig an eine Episode, die ich mit einem Stiftpater vor vielen Jahren hatte. Ich will sie zur Illustration des Zusammenstoßes, den ich kurz darauf mit dem Prior hatte, kurz erzählen.

Zu den vielen Jagdgästen die in das wildreiche Jagdgebiet Steyrling kamen, zählte auch ein Theologieprofessor, der einen Gams abschießen durfte. Ob er Ordensmitglied des Stiftes Kremsmünster war oder sich nur zu den Ferien dort aufhielt, kann ich mich nicht mehr erinnern.

Jedenfalls frug ich den geistlichen Lehrer, warum er im auch sehr wildreichen Stiftsgebiet Kremsmünster seiner Jagdlust nicht fröhne.

Er antwortete mir, daß ihm an Jagderlebnissen nicht liege und nur die Gelegenheit benütze, mit mir über meine interessanten Naturbeobachtungen zu sprechen. Vor allem seien ihm die rätselhaften Kräfte interessant, die ich zum Abschwemmen von Holzarten benütze, die ein höheres "spezifisches" Gewicht als das Wasser haben und bei sehr mäßigem Gefälle von 0.5 Promille anstandslos schwimmen. Wie ist das möglich?

Ich erklärte ihm, daß das "spezifische" Gewicht des Wassers variabel und von der Fließart des Wassers abhängig ist. Die heutige Wissenschaft benützt die das Wasser entartende - hydraulische- Bewegungsart und es wird eines Tages soweit kommen, daß die naturwidrig regulierten Wasserläufe - krank und von gesundheitsschädlichen Parasiten verseucht - vor allem ihre Trag- und Schleppkraft verlieren, damit das Geschiebe ablagern müssen, in dem die Wegzehrung des abgehenden Wassers steckt. Es wird dadurch nicht nur zu einer Vermurung der Täler und den in diesen liegenden Fluren und Feldern, sondern schließlich auch zu gewaltigen Bergrutschungen infolge Verluste der Aufbau- und Auftriebskräfte des pulsierenden Grundwassers am Steilhang kommen.

Was verstehen Sie eigentlich unter diesem Begriff: Aufbau- und Auftrieb-energien im Wasser?

Darunter verstehe ich die stufenweise Auferstehung der metaphysischen Überwerte, die aus naturrichtig dissoziierten irdischen Überresten - physischen Fettstoffkonzentrationen - entstehen und als allotrope (vielformige) Energiestoffgebilde, die das geosphärische Mutterwasser ausscheiden, wieder erstarren.

Bewegt sich nun das abgehende Quellwasser, so kommt es ganz auf die Bewegungsart an, ob fort- und aufpflanzende oder den Wiederzerfall einleitende Keimstoffgebilde entstehen, aus denen durch unterschiedliche Innenschwingungen in diesen Vitamin-molekülen höher- oder niederwertige, gute oder böse Geister aus diesen Spannungszentren entspringen. Im Laufe

dieser Gespräche frug mich der Theologieprofessor, was denn eigentlich das Kennzeichnende dieser aufwertenden, die edlen Energien aufbauenden Bewegungsart sei.

Es ist diejenige, Herr Professor, die Sie selbst tagtäglich während des Meßopfers bei der symbolischen Umwandlung von Wasser in Wein machen. Die Alten nannten sie die "rekreierende" oder "die erfrischende" (veredelnde) Bewegung, mit der man entwicklungsreife Rohstoffbestände, z.B. einen Fruchtsaft innerhalb einer Stunde in edelsten Wein verwandeln kann. Es handelt sich - erklärte ich dem hoch aufhorchenden Pfarrer weiter - um einen höherwertigen Gärprozeß, der nicht durch Temperaturdifferenzen, sondern durch die vorerwähnte erfrischende, die bewegten Massen dem Anomaliepunkt annähernde Bewegungsart ausgelöst wird. Die heutige Wissenschaft löst unfreiwillig den anderen Gärprozeß aus, bei dem statt edlem Wein der Essig entsteht. - Wenn Sie also das Meßopfer naturrichtig bringen wollen, haben Sie sich erstens kelchartiger (ei oder ur-förmiger) Gefäße und zweitens der Doppelschraubenwellenbewegung zu bedienen, die prinzipiell Christus in den Mittelpunkt seiner weltenergiebewegenden Bewegungslehre - es ist die "verinnerlichende" und die Geisteskraft stärkende - stellte. Diese den einstigen Hohenpriestern wohlbekannte - Aufbaubewegung, der man die sagenhaften Enteertragnisse und z.T. die Überwindungsmöglichkeit der körperlichen Schwerfälligkeit etc. verdankte, hat die heutige Geistlichkeit nicht verstanden, oder sie wird gefälscht bzw. in ihrer Bedeutung den primitiv denkenden Menschenmassen vorenthalten, um die irre geführten, zu einer natur-unrichtigen, daher falschen Massenbewegung verleiteten Menschenmassen infolge Unterbindung der die Geisteskraft stärkenden höherwertigen Bewegungsart arm an Geist und Gut, untertänig, arbeitsfreudig und gläubig zu erhalten.

Der Theologieprofessor sah mich ganz entsetzt an und meinte: Sie das wäre so eine Gaudi, wenn die Massen eines Tages erführen, daß sie den falschen oder, wie Sie es nennen, den natur-un-richtigen Glauben erwischt haben. - Christus nicht verstanden worden wäre!

Ich antwortete: Herr Professor, je früher das geschieht, umso eher sind Not und Elend auf Erden, die Ursachen aller Kriege, zuende.

Es ist verständlich, daß diese Mitteilungen, die der Theologieprofessor sicherlich in vertrauten Kreisen weitergab, die ganze kirchliche Umgebung revolutionierte.

Aus den äußerst vorsichtigen Fragen, die - um nun mit der Begegnung der Priors vom Stift Kremsmünster fortzufahren - der priesterliche Physiker stellte, und den abwägenden Blicken, die er mir unter halbgeschlossenem Lid zusandte, erkannte ich, daß der Mann auf der Hut war, daß das angeschnittene Thema im für ihn ungefährlichen Rahmen verblieb.

Wie wollen Sie durch eine - wie Sie sagen - nahezu kostenlose Luftbewegung Räume heizen oder, richtiger gesagt, natürlich, also feuerlos erwärmen?

Sie wissen Herr Professor, daß bis zu 300°C entstehen, wenn man gewöhnliche Luft mittels Propeller bis über Schallgeschwindigkeit bewegt. Die Temperaturen im Windkanal betragen durchschnittlich ca. 80°C.

Dazu braucht man - mein Lieber - eine enorme Kraft, um dies zu erreichen, meinte auftrumpfend der geistliche Physiker.

Gewiß, antwortete ich, aber doch nur deshalb, weil man eben ungeschickter Weise diejenige Luftmassenbewegungsart verwendet, bei der der Bewegungswiderstand im Quadrat zur Geschwindigkeitssteigerung wächst.

Bewegt man hingegen Luftmassen so, daß an Stelle der v.e. Brernskraft die - zusätzliche - atomare Aufbau- und Auftrieb-energie infolge naturrichtig beschwingter Vitaminmoleküle aufersteht, die nichts anderes als ein höherwertiger Drehstrom ist, der in der Natur z.B. den Zyklon etc. oder sonstige Wirbelwinde mit elementarer Urkraft auslöst, den Golfstrom in Bewegung setzt, dann wird es wie an den Gestaden, an denen der nach Norden sich schlängelnde Golfstrom geht, auch in der Umgebung von Zentripetenzmaschinen warm, die Luftmassen widerstandslos, also so gut wie kostenlos bewegen.

Das Wesentliche ist nicht die gewöhnliche Luftbewegung, sondern die Frequenzsteigerung der Innenschwingungen in den schon bakteriophagen Energiestoffkonzentraten, den schon unsichtbaren Lebenszellen, in denen je nach Bewegungsart medialer Massen die be- oder die

ent-lebenden Energiearten auferstehen. Aus-strahlen und die umliegenden Energiestoffkonzentrate durchstrahlend, beeinflussen und dadurch im biologischen - reaktiven - Fortentwicklungsgang Aufbau oder Abbau, Auftrieb oder Rückstoß, den Himmel auf Erden oder ein höllisches und menschenunwürdiges Leben auf diesem ewig gärenden Misthaufen erzeugen - Hochwürden entscheiden.

Der Prior stand auf und erklärte, daß dies alles mit exakter Physik nichts zu tun hätte. Und für - wie ich es nenne - meta-physische, einem nüchternen Physiker unverständliche Dinge - Utopien - , hätte er weder Zeit noch Interesse. Ich antwortete: Herr Prior, die Menschen leiden große Not. Sie haben hier große und unbenutzte Räume, Laboratorien etc. zur Verfügung. Stellen Sie nur einen passenden Raum und die physikalischen Meßgeräte etc. leihweise zur Verfügung und Sie werden in kurzer Zeit erkennen, daß die physikalische Erscheinungswelt - sei es nun jede bisher unerklärliche, physisch wahrnehmbare Verlagerung der Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft, unsere eigene selbstherrliche oder "originelle" Bewegungsfähigkeit, die Überwindung unserer Körperschwere, die Atmung, die Be-leuchtung und die Er-leuchtung (Orientierung), die feuerlose Temperierung, kurzum die belebenden Funktionen, heißen sie wie immer - auf die höchsten Realitäten zurückzuführen sind, die wir - ohne bisher gewußt zu haben, wie und aus was sie entstehen - die "Astralen" sind.

Der hohe geistliche Herr erklärte, man könne keine Räume für solche Zwecke entbehren. Grüßte, gab dem Bezirkshauptmann die Hand und ging stolz wie ein Kirchenfürst ab.

Und mich fuhr Hofrat Dr. Kienmoser in die amerikanische Gefangenschaft im Mühlhansl, so hieß das alte Werkgebäude des Sensenwerks Zeitlinger, der mich wie die Pest haßte, weil er die Kosten dieser Bewachung zu tragen hatte, zurück. Denn dieser Mann, dem ich sein Werk rettete, zeigte mich hinterrücks bei der S.C.S. an.

Nach und nach wurde mein Aufenthalt im ganzen Land und darüber hinaus bekannt. Es begann ein Kommen und Gehen von Menschen, mit denen ich außer Haus sprechen konnte, weil der Befehl nur das Betreten des Hauses, nicht aber meinen Verkehr außerhalb des Hauses verbot.

Es kümmerte sich überhaupt niemand mehr und so ließ ich anfragen, bis wann und warum meine Schutzhaft wohl noch andauern werde. Es waren längst andere Leute beim Militärkommendo in Kirchdorf, dessen Leiter mir sagen ließ: die Akten seien nach Amerika gegangen. Meine Schutzhaft könne schon Morgen aus sein - könne aber auch bis zum Jahre Schnee dauern.

Durch Mittelsmänner wurde ich u.a. mit dem damaligen Minister für Ernährung Dr. Fenzel bekannt, der die Aufschließung der österr. Urwaldforste - etwa 25 Millionen Festmeter wertvollste Holzmassen, die seit eh und je am Stock verfaulten - in die Wege leiten wollte.

Dadurch wurde in weiten Kreisen eine weitere katastrophale Folgeerscheinung diesmal forstwissenschaftlicher Fehler bekannt. Die Forstwissenschaftler erkannten oder bemerkten vor etwa 100 Jahren, daß sich die Jahresringe erheblich erweitern und das Stärkenwachstum des Baumes sichtlich - infolge v.e. Strukturvergrößerung - zunimmt, wenn man Waldbäume licht-, oder durch Kahlschläge überhaupt freistellt.

So wurde in allen zugänglichen Waldgebieten der sogenannte "Lichtzuwachs" propagiert und in allen Forstschulen gelehrt. Nun stellt sich heraus, daß jede Strukturvergrößerung eine Charakterverschlechterung (Qualitätsverfall) auslöst. Und um es kurz zu sagen, das, was man als eine der größten forstwissenschaftlichen Errungenschaft betrachtete, ist nichts anderes als eine äußerst gefährliche Krebswucherung, womit, um es rückhaltlos zu sagen, der ganze - seit etwa 100 Jahre von dieser unseligen Forstwissenschaft mit gesetzlichen Machtmitteln bewirtschaftete - Hochwald so gut wie verloren ist. Denn gegen Krebskrankheit - deren typisches Kennzeichen die durch aufspaltende (röntgenartige) Einstrahlung verursachte Gewebevergrößerung ist - ist kein Kräutlein gewachsen. Es war verständlich, daß man auch auf diesem Sektor die unheilvollen Auswirkungen praktischer Aufklärungen zu fürchten begann, und damit war jedes behördliche Interesse am Aufschluß der Urwälder in Österreich trotz teilweiser Finanzierungsanträge, die Minister Dr. Fenzel sicherlich zustande gebracht hätte, zuende.

Die einzig praktische Auswirkung dieser Versuchsballone war, daß die Besucherzahl im Mühlhansl stieg. Es kamen nun Professoren aller Fakultäten, Doktore und Ingenieure, Politiker aller Parteigruppen, die alle verschiedenen Pläne, jedoch kein Geld zur Durchführung dieser hatten.



Da - es war an einem regnerischen und finsternen Abend - gab es plötzlich am Flur Krawall. Und im nächsten Moment trat ein riesengroßer Mann ins Zimmer, der einen Posten links und den anderen mit zwei Handbewegungen an die Wand lehnte.

Es hat keinen Zweck, mich vorzustellen. Ich habe auch nur ganz kurze Zeit noch frei, um mit Ihnen zu sprechen. Sind Sie bereit, mit mir über die Demarkationslinie zu gehen? Der Wagen steht zur Verfügung. Gepäck brauchen Sie keines. Sie bekommen drüben alles was Sie brauchen.

Ich erwiderte, daß ich mich auf solche Sachen unter keinen Umständen einlasse. Na schön, meinte der Mann, Sie werden von mir wieder hören.

Die Posten ließen den Mann verdattert vorüber und lautlos fuhr der große Wagen ab. Der Spuck war vorüber. Na, fragte ich die beiden Helden, die mit ihren Büchsen auf der Schulter - es waren zwei Hilfspolizisten - dem verschwindenden Wagen nachsahen, was hätten ihr wohl gemacht, wenn man mich jetzt mitgenommen hätte. Na meinte der andere, da hätte man halt auch nichts dagegen machen können, als beide Arme zu heben. D.h. sich zu ergeben. Denn weiß man, was solche Leute machen!

Nach ihrer Ablösung meldeten sie den Vorfall ihrem Kommandanten in Molln und von nun an wurde es mit meiner Bewachung wieder schärfer gehandhabt. Es kam eine scharfe Kontrolle, aber im Wesentlichen änderte sich wenig.

Da kam ein gewisser Dr. Gabelmann zu mir und teilte mir mit, daß er in Wien war, um bei den Russen wegen Rückgabe meines Eigentums zu intervenieren.

Schauberger - antwortete man ihm - ist nach Wien zuständig und hat sofort zurückzukommen, widrigsfalls er vor ein Kriegsgericht gestellt wird, da er den Deutschen geheime Maschinen geliefert hat. Auch Anregungen zur Verbesserung des Wachstums sind strafbar.

Er soll kommen und es wird ihm alles Notwendige zur Verfügung gestellt und auch seine Wohnung und Zubehör wird er wieder bekommen. Gabelmann verlangte bzw. ersuchte um schriftliche Bestätigung. Der russische Kommandeur antwortete: "was Russe verspricht hält er auch", und damit war die Mission Dr. Gabelmanns, meines damaligen Rechtsbeirates, zuende.

Es hätte keinen Wert, weitere Einzelheiten hier aufzuzählen. Ich lernte jedenfalls sehr interessante Menschen kennen und erweiterte mein Wissen durch viele und lange Debatten mit klugen und sich ihrer Haut wehrenden Technikern, Hydraulikern, Dynamikern, Politikern etc.

Eines Tages brauste wieder ein Militärwagen auf den Werkshof. Die Posten traten vor dem Wagen an, dessen Insassen ich vom ersten Stock aus nicht erkennen konnte. Plötzlich machten die beiden kehrt. Der eine legte mir die Konstruktionsraumschlüssel auf den Tisch, grüßte und ging ab. Wenige Minuten später stiegen sie in den Wagen, der Gas gab und abfuhr. Es war beinahe ein Jahr vergangen, seit ich zwar auch nicht frei, jedoch nicht direkt bewacht war.

Zuerst ging ich ein Stück des Weges in Richtung Ort Leonstein. Niemand kümmerte sich. Auch zwei Hilfspolizisten, die mir begegneten, gingen grüßend vorüber. Dann dehnte ich meine Ausflüge weiter aus und schließlich fuhr ich nach Linz. Niemand kümmerte sich und damit war auch diese Nachkriegsepisode vorüber.

Eins Tages hielt ich mich vorübergehend in Kirchdorf bei einem Verwandten auf, als plötzlich ein amerikanischer Offizier eintrat, meine Verwandten hinauswies und mich fragte: "was machen Sie nun ?" Ich antwortete: "Momentan freue ich mich über meine wiedererlangte Freiheit."

Praktisch ist ja jede Weiterarbeit unmöglich. Ich habe kein Heim mehr. Die Hälfte meiner Geräte fehlt. Mit einem Wort, ich war ablehnend und stark verärgert.

Sie können tüchtige Konstruktoren, Geld und alles Notwendige haben. Nur Realitäten müssen wir sehen.

Darauf stellte ich die Gegenfrage: was verstehen Sie unter dem Begriff: Realitäten?

Na - meinte der Amerikaner - das ist nicht schwer zu beantworten. Unter Realität versteht man Tatsächliches, Greifbares, exakt Meßbares.

Was wir rund um uns sehen oder sonstwie wahrnehmen können hat seine Entstehung und sein kurz vorübergehendes Dasein den wirklichen Realitäten zu verdanken, die als das Ursächliche weder greifbar oder meßbar, ja nicht einmal wahrnehmbar sind.

Na, darüber können Sie sich mit einem Herrn unterhalten, der Sie in Kürze besuchen wird und Ihnen als Atomtechniker auf Ihre Fragen besser als ich antworten kann. Denn ich bin Kaufmann und befaße mich nur mit den - er lächelte etwas spöttisch - greifbaren Realitäten.

Ja antwortete ich, das kann ich verstehen. Denn das Erwerbsprinzip des heutigen Kaufmanns ist, vom Nachteil des anderen zu leben. Die wahre Kunst auf diesem Gebiete ist, dem anderen immer größere Vorteile zu bieten und ihn so zur ständigen Nachfrage zu zwingen. Aber das können Sie als Amerikaner nicht verstehen, weil dieser bisher noch keine Not gelitten, d.h. an Fiktivem noch Überfluß hat. Wir Europäer haben es dank der besten Techniker der Welt, den Deutschen, schon notwendig, uns nach wirklichen Realitäten umzusehen.

Und das sind eben diese, aus denen das alles im Überfluß entsteht, wenn man blos Medien - Erde, Wasser und Luft - um ihre eigene Achse so geschickt dreht, daß kein Bewegungswiderstand, den der heutige Techniker unfreiwillig urzeugt, entsteht. Nun war plötzlich das Interesse meines Besuchers rege, das ich jedoch nun meinerseits ablehnte, weil eben der Mann ein Kaufmann war, der Realitäten, in denen das wahre Reale steckt, nur umsetzt und deshalb vom Mangel lebt.

Etwa eine Woche später erschien bei mir ein auffallend hübscher und sympathischer, etwa 30-jähriger Amerikaner in Zivil und stellte sich als der vom Obigen angekündigte Techniker vor.

Sind Sie bitte nur ein gewöhnlicher, d.h. nur kleine Spätschäden auslösender Techniker, dessen Hauptkunst darin besteht, den bei jeder technischen Bewegungsart auflebenden Widerstand mittels geschickter Hebelstellungen möglichst billig zu überwinden, oder sind Sie ein Atomtechniker, der es sich zur Aufgabe machte, die metaphysischen Realitäten-arten, die der Ausmerzung des für höhere Fortentwicklungszwecke Untauglichen dienen, als wirtschafts- und kultur-fördernde Zweckmittel zu verwenden?

Ich bin, wick der Mann meiner Frage aus, hierher gesandt, um von Ihnen näheres darüber zu erfahren, was Sie als höher-wertige Atomenergien nennen. Können oder wollen Sie mir darüber nähere Auskünfte geben?

Ich fürchte, antwortete ich, daß Sie mich nicht verstehen, wenn ich Ihnen die "originellen" Bewegungsenergien erkläre, die es Ihnen ermöglichten, als noch junger Mann gestatteten, zwei Stufen auf der hohen Stiege, die zu mir führt, auf einmal zu nehmen und - was noch viel interessanter ist - die Möglichkeit gaben, die vorerwähnte Frage an mich zu stellen.

Sie meinen damit offenbar die Lebenskräfte, die Sie - er lachte belustigt - mit Ihrer imaginären Implosionsmaschine ur-zeugen!

Sie haben damit mitten ins Schwarze getroffen, gab ich lachend zur Antwort, und ich will Ihnen nun sagen, wer mir diese Urzeugungskunst vor etwa 30 Jahren zeigte. Jedoch Jahrzehnte benötigte, bis ich die Standforellen, die mit höher-wertigen Atom-energien nicht nur die eigene, sondern überdies auch noch die Schwerkraft des "spezifisch" schweren und daher dichten Quellwassers mühelos überwinden, verstand.

Haben Sie, frug ich den jungen Mann, schon einmal Standforellen genau beobachtet?

Gewiß, aber ich habe mir dabei nie etwas dazu gedacht, meinte er sichtlich unsicher werdend.

Daran sehen Sie, gab ich als Rückantwort, krankt ja die Naturgeschichte, die sich der schulmäßig ge- oder richtiger gesagt ver-bildete Mensch im Laufe der Jahrhunderte zurechtgelegt hat.

Sie werden doch nicht behaupten wollen, daß das alles untauglich oder schlecht ist, was die Wissenschaft in zäher Forschungsarbeit erreichte.

Jawohl das behaupte ich, Herr Doktor oder Ingenieur - gab ich nun, die Offensive ergreifend, zur Antwort. Oder wollen Sie vielleicht behaupten, daß die Spitzenleistung des auf technischem Gebiete erreichten, ich meine damit die Atombombe, eine kulturelle Großtat oder ein brauchbares Hilfsmittel für irgend eine wirtschaftliche Förderung ist?

Zweifellos - parierte der junge Amerikaner meinen Anhieb - denn in Kürze wird man Atomenergien auch für Industriezwecke verwenden können.

Wenn Sie das wirklich glauben mein Herr, dann tun Sie mir ehrlich leid. Insoferne, als Sie dabei die entsetzlichen Spätschäden übersehen, die bei jeder technischen, hydraulischen oder dynamischen Bewegungsart medialer Massen naturgesetzmäßig, daher unvermeidbar, wie z.B. der im Quadrat zur verkehrten Geschwindigkeitssteigerung aufwachsende (atomare) Bewegungswiderstand, entstehen.

Vielleicht ziehen die Menschen, die mit diesen entwicklungs-gefährlichsten, meta-physischen Realitäten spielen, die Konsequenzen, wenn Sie diese Spätschäden, die leider erst nach Generationen zu spür- und greifbaren Realitäten werden, vor Ausbruch des dritten und letzten Krieges erkennen. Ich meine damit, fuhr ich fort, die Atomkrankheiten, die sich in Gestalt unheilbarer Krebserscheinungen, Erblindungen, Verfaulen der Hautbestandteile etc. bei Ihnen drüben rascher zeigen werden als Ihnen lieb ist.

Auf diesem Gebiete will und kann ich Ihnen nicht folgen, unterbrach mich der junge Mann.

Tja, erwiderte ich, wenn Sie Vogelstraußpolitik treiben wollen, trotz der vielen Erfahrungen, die man z.B. mit Röntgenstrahlen machte, deren Spätschäden z.B. schon bei einer medizinischen Durchleuchtung im zweiten oder dritten Glied als Realitäten in Ihrem Anschauungssinn in Erscheinung treten, dann hat eine weitere Unterhaltung keinerlei Sinn und Zweck mehr. Damit brach ich das Gespräch ziemlich brüsk ab. Nehmen Sie bitte zur Kenntnis, daß Sie, ich meine damit diejenigen, die mich ca. 1 Jahr nach Kriegsschluß hinter Schloß und Riegel hielten, denselben Fehler wie das Oberkommando der deutschen Wehrmacht, die Gestapo und die Waffen-SS machte, die glaubten, daß es sich da um brauchbare Kriegsmittel handle. Denn, um es Ihnen klar und deutlich zu sagen, höher-wertige Atomenergien sind diejenigen, die jeden Krieg naturgesetzmäßig aus dem einfachen Grund unmöglich machen, weil sie die entsetzliche Not ausscheiden, die alle heutigen Politiker zu ihrer Existenz brauchen.

Na, dieses Gebiet ist mir zu fremd, um da mitreden zu können, meinte der technische Sach- und Fachverständige. Sie kommen scheinbar von einem Extrem ins andere und bleiben nicht bei der Stange.

Das, erwiderte ich, haben mir schon viele gesagt. Z.B. der weltbekannte Physiker Plank, der mich zum Chefchemiker des Kaiser-Wilhelm-Institutes sandte, von dem ich wieder zu diesem und jenem geschickt wurde, bis mir endlich ein alter Herr dasselbe erwiderte, wie einst vor Jahren der weltbekannte Gelehrte Wilhelm Exner, den meine Entdeckung der Kräfte, die das im geologischen Gefälle abgehende Wasser "stetig" erhalten, so imponierte, daß er sie in der Akademie der Wiener Wissenschaften zur Wahrung meiner Prioritätsrechte deponierte. Zwischen Himmel und Erde gibt es noch Dinge, von denen sich Stubengelehrte nicht einmal etwas träumen lassen. - Sie haben durch die Beobachtung von Forellen, die tausende vor Ihnen gedankenlos machten, scheinbar den Hebel entdeckt, der die Zangen und Hebelarme, von denen der deutsche Dichturfürst Goethe sprach, naturrichtig bewegt. Hätten Sie um einige Jahrhunderte früher gelebt, dann wäre Ihr Ende zuverlässig der Scheiterhaufen gewesen, der auch Gallilei und schon Leonardo da Vinci drohte, als er il primo muovere, den entscheidenden Bewegungsanstoß suchte. Um den Zweck Ihres Besuches zu erreichen, müßten wir Tage, Monate ja vielleicht Jahre mitsammen sprechen. Und dazu haben Sie keine Zeit, weil Zeit nach Ihren amerikanischen Ansichten die Realität, Geld ist, und ich habe keine Lust, einem Menschen, der wie jeder akademisch Vorgebildete die Verbildungsgrenze überschritten hat und dadurch seine ihm angeborene Intuition als Zivilisierter verlor, Wahrheiten zu zeigen, die als das Wesentliche, das das Maß und Gewicht Er- oder Ur-zeugende, weder mit dem Zollstab meßbar, noch auf einer Dezimalwaage wiegbar, also - für Sie mein Herr keine Realitäten, sondern nur Utopien sind.

Damit war auch diese Unterredung zuende. Um gleich dieses Kapitel abzuschließen, sei kurz und vorgreifend erwähnt, daß ich später noch einmal zur amerikanischen Staatspolizei vorgeladen wurde. Auch dieses Verhör hatte keine praktischen Ergebnisse, weil der Philosoph, der diese

Untersuchung führte, ein abermals sehr sympathischer und zweifellos sehr kluger Mann, von den Kräften keine Ahnung hatte, die das älteste arische Testament, die Tabula smaragdina, für den Eingeweihten in unmißverständlicher Art - ungefähr mit den Worten: "Mische die Stoffe des Himmels und der Erde naturrichtig, denn dann wirst du zeitlebens glücklich" - aufzeigte, jedoch bisher als die wirklichen Realitäten, als "die Geisteskräfte" unerkannt blieben.

Das merkwürdige in dieser Hinsicht war die von mir immer wieder gemachte Erkenntnis, daß der schärfste Logiker, also intuitionslose Denker, der nur greifbare Realitäten anerkennende Feuertechner, vielleicht der einzige Intelligenzler ist, der die bio-logischen, das sind die reaktiven, übernatürlichen Kräfte fürchtet und dadurch in seinem Innersten als dasjenige anerkennt, das jede Schuld auf Erden rächt. - Diejenigen Urkräfte, die immer wieder den treffen, der sie zu spekulativen Zwecken unfreiwillig - wie der heutige Techniker, Hydrauliker und Dynamiker den reaktiv wirkenden Bewegungswiderstand - ausgelöst hat. Denn das Leben bleibt als metaphysische Energiefunktion ewig. Und was sich als ziemlich uninteressantes und unreales Erscheinungsbild ständig ändert, ist nur das Futteral für die einzige Realität, der Körper, den die wirklichen Realitäten - originell - bewegen und dadurch beleben.

Es war an dem Tag, an dem ich, teils durch viele Aufregungen, wie Verlust meines Hab und Gutes durch Plünderungen in Leonstein und Wien, die abermalige Geldumwechslung, bei der wieder einmal ein Teil des mühsam Ersparten zum Teufel ging, teils durch starkes Rauchen eigenbaulicher Tabakerzeugnisse verursacht, den ersten und ersten Todesanstoß, einen schweren Herzanfall erlitt, als gegen Abend zu der sozialistische Arbeiterführer, Landeshauptmann-Stellvertreter (LHSt) Ludwig Bernaschek in Begleitung zweier Sachberater - Dr. Ing. Linsbauer und Dr. Bürgermeister - in meinem Leonsteiner Exil erschien.

Bernaschek erwähnte, daß er von verschiedenen Seiten auf meine Entdeckungen aufmerksam gemacht worden wäre und sich nunmehr Näheres darüber einholen möchte. Im Besonderen würde ihn interessieren, über das Wesen meiner in Oberösterreich, in Steiermark und auch im Ausland gebauten und projektierten Holztransportanlagen genaueres zu hören.

Nach dieser Einleitung forderte der LHSt-Vertreter Dr. Ing. Linsbauer auf, die diesbezüglichen Fragen zu stellen.

Mich, begann der technische Sachberater Bernascheks, interessieren in erster Linie die sogenannten "Kleinwasserstraßen", bei denen es sich scheinbar nicht um kleine Wasserführungen für großen Holzmassentransport, sondern, so viel ich aus verschiedenen Veröffentlichungen entnehmen konnte, um ganz besondere Wasserführungsarten handelt.

Sie haben ganz richtig geraten, Herr Doktor. Ich glaube jedoch kaum, daß Sie mich als Techniker verstehen können oder besser gesagt verstehen wollen, da es hier um die Technik geht, die ich, gestatten Sie mir ein offenes Wort, entweder als einen Selbst- oder als einen Volks-betrug gefährlichster Art halte.

Linsbauer sah kurz Bernaschek an, Dr. Bürgermeister sah etwas verlegen drein und so entstand eine kleine Pause, die jedoch der geschulte Politiker Bernaschek mit einer Geste, die zur Fortsetzung des Gespräches aufforderte, sehr geschickt überbrückte.

Ich weiß bereits, fuhr Linsbauer fort, daß Sie sich bei solchen Anlässen die Taktik zurechtlegten, den anderen als Idioten zu erklären, um ihn zu zwingen, sich zu wehren. Aber ich lasse auch als Techniker über Technik, über die ich mir auch meine persönliche Meinung gebildet habe, mit mir reden.

Es liegt mir ferne, Herr Doktor, Sie zu irgend einer Abwehr zwingen zu wollen. Sondern ich bin auf Grund jahrzentelanger und sehr genauer Naturbeobachtung zur unerschütterlichen Überzeugung gekommen, daß die heutige Wissenschaft die Ursache des progressiven Elendes ist, das wir heute - erst im Anfangsstadium - zu spüren bekommen. Wenn diese Unterredung überhaupt einen Sinn oder Zweck haben soll, dann müssen mir die Herren gestatten, daß ich rückhaltlos spreche. Dabei auch die Politik schwer angreifen muß, die ich als eine ganz gefährliche Spekulation betrachte, die diejenigen betreiben, die vom wahren Sachverhalt überhaupt nichts verstehen. Denn wäre es anders, dann wäre es unmöglich, daß man den Wiederaufbau mit denselben Mitteln durchführen will, die den letzten Krieg auslösten. Nehmen Sie bitte zur Kenntnis, daß es die heutigen Arbeitsmethoden sind, die uns in dieses

Elend brachten, das naturgesetzmäßig immer größer werden muß, je intensiver und fleißiger wir diese auf absolut falscher Bewegungs- und Erregungsbasis stehende Arbeit leisten. Dies gilt, meine Herren, für alle vier Wirtschaftsgebiete. Ich meine damit die heutige Forst-, Land-, Wasser-, und die Energiestoff-wirtschaft. Man hat sich, fuhr ich fort, im Wald, auf Flur und Feld, im Wasser- und Maschinenwesen Pflegemaßnahmen und sonstige Handlungsarten zurecht gelegt, die das Verkehrteste sind, weshalb es auch kein Wunder ist, daß die ganze Wirtschaft umso rascher zum Teufel geht, als diese Mißwirtschaft gedeiht.

Betrachten Sie dies, meine Herren, als die notwendige Einleitung zur rein sachlichen Erklärung, die ich nun kurz geben werde, wenn Sie diese nach dieser etwas ungewöhnlichen Vorerklärung noch interessiert.

Bernaschek nickte, und so begann ich mit dem hier Wesentlichen.

Wasser - sagte vor Jahren ein Münchner Professor namens Dr. Gerlach - sei ein sternfernes Rätsel, dessen Wesen und Herkunft Menschen vergeblich zu ergründen versuchen. Aus diesem Grunde müssen wir es als etwas nun einmal Vorhandenes betrachten, auf dessen Gehaben wir keinerlei Einfluß haben. Das ist, meine Herren, die "wissenschaftliche" Ansicht über dasjenige, ohne dem es kein Leben und kein Bewegen gäbe, das aber nichtsdestoweniger die P.T. Wissenschaft als eine chemisch-tote Substanz betrachtet, die mit verschiedenen Dingen vermenget, bzw. verunreinigt ist.

In Wirklichkeit ist aber, fuhr ich fort, Wasser das Blut der Erde, das genau so wie das Blut und die Säfte in höheren Organismen aus verdauten Nahrungswerten entsteht. Und zu dieser Verdauung, oder nennen wir es lieber Vergärung, gehört eine ganz bestimmte Bewegung, die, ur-sächlich betrachtet, aus Spannungs-differenzen, also durch eine innere Erregung entsteht.

Diese "innere" Erregung ist sozusagen der funktionelle Bewegungsherd, der wieder durch unterschiedliche Temperaturen entsteht, sofern das Produkt entwicklungs-gefährlich ist. Denn Entwicklungsförderndes kann nur aus der Temperaturlosigkeit (Fieberlosigkeit) entstehen.

Um es kurz und klar zu sagen: Das Wasser ist, wie alles Irdische, z.B. auch Erde und Luft, sozusagen der Friedhof der vergangen Vegetation.

Erde, Wasser und Luft sind also die Medien, in denen das künftige Leben im statu nascendi steckt. Und von der Bewegungs-art dieses Mediums, in dem Erde und Himmel, bzw. die Grundbaustoffe der Atmo- und Geosphären stecken, hängt es ab, ob höher- oder niederwertige Energiearten, gute oder böse Geister nannten es die naturnäheren Alten, aus diesem vergärten Massengrab wiederum auferstehen.

Da Energien oder Geister ohne Körper (Akkumulatoren) nicht existieren können, scheidet sich sozusagen die erste körperliche Aufgeburt - wie wird erst später näher erklärt - aus, und damit ist in rohen Zügen die Herkunft des vermeintlich unergründlichen Wasserentstehungsgeheimnisses z.T. entschleiert.

Dieser Urzeugungsvorgang des Blutes der Erde (Wasser) ist also prinzipiell betrachtet mit der Mischung der Stoffe des Himmels und der Erde ident, den das älteste arische Testament, die Tabula smaragdina, die bekanntlich die bisher unergründeten Worte: "Mische die Stoffe des Himmels und der Erde richtig, dann wirst du zeitlebens glücklich" in den harten Smaragd eingeritzt hat, verkündet bzw. überliefert.

Um es kurz zu machen, meine Herren, von der Bewegungsart des Wassers hängt der Charakter der aus diesem entspringenden Atomenergien ab, die Werde und Sterbe entscheiden.

Das Wesentliche hierzu sind a) naturrichtige Bewegungs-formen und b) naturrichtige Materialarten dieser.

Ist beispielsweise die Bewegungsform, bzw. der Längs- und Querschnitt dieser natur-un-richtig, also falsch, dann entsteht durch diesen Formfehler der im Quadrat zur Bewegungsgeschwindigkeits-steigerung wachsende Widerstand, den Sie, Herr Dr. Ing. Linsbauer, als Techniker kennen und als eine gesetzliche, also unausschaltbare Begleiterscheinung jeder Bewegungsart zu halten, in der Hochschule gelernt haben.

Schaltet man diesen v.e. Formfehler aus und berücksichtigt man dazu auch noch, daß jede Materie eine Energiestoff-konzentration, und daher von deren Zusammensetzung (Legierung) die auferstehende Energieart mitabhängig ist, dann hat man: a) die ur-wüchsige Bewegungs- und b) die das gesamte Wachstum antreibende Gestaltungs-kraft so gut wie kostenlos zur freien Verfügung.

Macht man es aber verkehrt, das heißt so, wie man dies in allen Schulen der Zivilisationswelt lehrt, dann, meine Herren, geht der ganze Fortentwicklungszauber schief, weil in diesem Fall die gewaltige Bremsung, der im Quadrat zur naturwidrigen Geschwindigkeitsentfaltung aufwachsende Bewegungswiderstand und dessen Funktion, die ab-bauende und rück-stoßende, das Untaugliche aus dem normalen Fortentwicklungsgang ausmerzende nieder-wertige Atomenergie urensteht. Und damit ist, meine sehr verehrten Herren, die eigentliche Ur - sache des progressiven Weltelends und dessen politische Auswirkungen in rohen Zügen erklärt.

Tja - meinte nach einer längeren Überlegungspause der LHSt-Vertreter - kann man diese unterschiedlichen Energiearten feststellen, d.h. messen oder sonstwie exakt feststellen?

Gewiß, antwortete ich. Man braucht hierzu bloß einen Wassertropfen im Luftwiderstand oder ohne Luft-widerstand frei abfallen lassen, um aufbauende oder abbauende Energiearten meta-physischer, also physisch unwahrnehmbarer Zustandsart zu erkennen. Denn, erklärte ich weiter, aufbauende (auftreibende) also levitierende Energiearten lösen, in Vakkumröhren geführt, einen grünlich-blauen, die abbauenden (rückstoßenden, also gravitierenden Energiearten), einen blutroten stark pulsierenden Lichtschein aus, der an der Innenperipherie erscheint.

Könnte man, warf der Berufselektriker Bernaschek ein, sowas einmal sehen? Gewiß meine Herren. Ich müßte dazu nur nachsehen, ob ich noch Teile der einstigen Versuchsapparatur aus dem Gerümpel finde, das man mir bei den Plünderungen als uninteressant hinterlassen hat. - Linsbauer schlug vor, den verlangten Versuch in seiner Wohnung bei Traunkirchen aufzubauen, wozu ich das Einverständnis gab, und damit war die erste Unterredung zuende.

Wenige Wochen später fand dieser rasch improvisierte und daher sehr primitive Versuch in Traunkirchen statt. Nun wurde das Interesse Bernascheks rege, der mich frug: "Könnte man diesen Strom, um den es sich hier zweifellos handelt, verstärken und zum Antrieb von Maschinen, zur Beleuchtung etc. verwenden?"

Ich bejahte diese Frage mit dem Hinweis, daß es sich hier um Urzeugungs-vorgänge handelt, die nur eine "urige" Verwendungsart zulassen. Das heißt, fuhr ich fort, dieser Spannungsausfall baut aus Luft z.B. Wasser in sekundärer Wirkungsfolge auf, wodurch infolge einer etwa 2000-fachen Volums-verkleinerung das "organische" Vakuum, die beste und billigste Zug- oder Aufsogkraft urensteht.

Mit diesem Spannungstoff-ausfall kann man aber auch Wasser in Luft blitzschnell verwandeln, wodurch der "organische" Überdruck infolge in diesem Fall etwa die 2000-fache Volums-vermehrung, die beste und billigste Eruptiv = natürliche Aufschubkraft urensteht.

Das sind, erklärte ich näher, die gigantischen Kräfte, die die ganze Erde im labilen Gleichgewichtszustand erhalten, die durch biomagnetische Drehströme, die aus Spannungsdifferenzen mitentstehen, an sich und in sich, also bio-genetisch um ihre eigene Achse gedreht wird.

Und darunter hat man hier die "originelle" Massenbeschleunigungsart zu verstehen. Kopiert man diese, dann werden die originellen Gestaltungs- und Bewegungsenergien frei, womit dann jede Not an Nahrungsmitteln, und ebenso jede Rohstoffnot zuende ist, da man es sich dann ersparen kann, entwicklungsfreudige Edelstoffkonzentrationen zu verbrennen, um vernichtende Feuerkräfte und die aus diesem Vernichtungsherd entspringenden, der Verwesung und der Erstarrung dienenden, niederwertigen Temperaturen zu erzeugen. Eine insofern entwicklungsgefährliche Angelegenheit, weil daraus wiederum niederwertige Spannungszentren und die aus diesen auferstehenden Energiearten entspringen, die geradezu teuflische Funktionskräfte innehaben.

LHSt-Vertreter Bernaschek konnte diesen Ausführungen infolge zu geringer, die beiden anderen Herren wegen zu starker Verbildung oder, wie man es landläufig nennt, wegen ihrer Vorbildungen nicht folgen.

Aus diesen ersten Unterredungen entwickelte sich ein reger Verkehr vor allem zwischen Linsbauer und mir, der, hoch intelligent, rasch zu begreifen verstand, daß es sich da um weltumstürzende Dinge handelt. - Sich daher alle Mühe nahm, in die Materie soweit einzudringen, daß er sie auch verwerten kann.

Im allgemeinen waren diese Erkenntnisse für alle drei Kronsozialisten insoferne beunruhigend, weil sich doch damit beweisen läßt, daß die bisherige sozialistische Basis, die gegenwärtige Arbeitsart, naturunrichtig und daher die Ursache des progressiven Wirtschaftsniedergangs ist.

Und damit setzte die erwartete Dissoziation zwischen dem Arbeiterführer Bernaschek und den andere Perspektiven erkennenden Intergenzler Linsbauer ein, der sich nun mit aller Kraft in diese neue Materie kniete.

Ich will hier nur einige kleine und leichter verständliche Details zum Verständnis des später Nachfolgenden noch möglichst allgemeinverständlich erklären, um auch die aus der sozialistischen Richtung kommende Abwehr zu verstehen, die mich auf Grund meiner reichen Erfahrungen mit den österreichischen Bundesforsten keineswegs überraschte.

Linsbauer interessierte in erster Linie das Kapitel Kettenreaktionen. Ein allgemein geläufiges Wort, das bisher scheinbar niemand definieren konnte oder wollte. Das letztere deshalb, weil mit dieser Definition, soferne sie naturrichtig ist, alle heutigen Gesetz-mäßigkeiten, Normen, Dogmen, sowie die Lehr- und Grundsätze der modernen Wissenschaft haltlos geworden in sich zusammenbrechen, wonach dann das sowieso schon an allen Ecken und Enden knisternde Wissenschaftsgebäude bedingungslos zusammenkracht.

Die untescheidensten Merkmale zwischen Wissen = religio und Wissenschaft (Spekulation) sind, daß letztere die volums-vergrößernden oder volumsverkleinernden Temperaturauswirkungen für die unmittelbaren Bewegungs-, die Natur jedoch für innere, mittelbare Bewegungs-vorgänge, dem Erregungsaufbau verwendet.

D.h. mit andern Worten, in der Natur geht nichts ohne bio-logische, d.h. re-aktive Rückwirkungen quadrierter Steigerungsart vor sich.

Auf Spaziergängen wies ich an Hand natürlicher Anschauungsbeispiele auf diese Rückwirkungsbeispiele (Reaktionen) hin, die als sogenannte Pulsationen die äußeren Merkmale der inneren Zellschwingung sind, die durch Wärme-mangel oder durch Wärme-überfluß entstehen, also Auswirkungen bio-logischer = re-aktiver Grundstoffausgleiche sind.

Dieser Wärme-mangel oder Wärme-überfluß, das Produkt überpositiver oder übernegativer Grundstoffausgleiche, die struktur-vergrößernd oder struktur-verkleinernd, abstoßend oder anziehend wirken, ist sozusagen der Uranfang des Stoffwechselkreislaufes, der durch einen kleinen und harmlos aussehenden Bewegungsanstoß ausgelöst, sich so aufsteigern kann oder läßt, daß man tatsächlich mit dessen Reaktionsergebnissen Welten heben und bewegen kann. (Siehe die vorerwähnte blitzschnelle Umwandlungsmöglichkeit von Wasser in Luft, den elementaren Überdruckaufbau, und umgekehrt die blitzschnelle Umwandlungsmöglichkeit von Luft in Wasser - beide Möglichkeiten als sekundäre Folgeerscheinungen des höher-wertigen Atom-energieaufbaues, der nur mit Hilfe der höher-wertigen (biogenetischen) Bewegungsart möglich ist.) Denn mit einer technischen, hydraulischen oder dynamischen Bewegungsmethode, die den im Quadrat wachsenden also reaktivierten Bewegungs-widerstand auslöst, kann man die zum Aufbau höher-wertiger Atomenergien notwendigen physischen Verlagerungsgeschwindigkeiten unmöglich erreichen, die zur Urzeugung der inneren Pulsationsgeschwindigkeiten (Frequenz) bzw. Periodenzahlsteigerung bis zur Lichtgeschwindigkeit, notwendig sind.

Damit wird erst klar, was in der bekannten Formel  $E$  (Energie) =  $m$  (Masse) mal  $C^2$  (Lichtgeschwindigkeit) das letzte Wort, bzw. der Formelbegriff  $C^2$  bedeutet. Nämlich die Perioden = die Schwingungsgeschwindigkeit des Pulschlags inneren Lebens, der, und das ist das

Neuartige, durch die Bewegungsart der Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft mit Hilfe ganz besonders konstruierter und legierter Bewegungsformen willkürlich gesteuert werden kann.

Damit hat man die originelle Bewegungs- und Nahrungsmittelsteigerung autoritär in der Hand.

So ist es z.B. möglich, daß sich Flüsse, die etwa 500 m<sup>3</sup> Wasser pro Sekunde abführen (Rhein oder Donau) im Hochsommer bis zur Badetemperatur erwärmen. Bewegt man so einen Fluß biogenetisch, in sich und an sich zentripetal, dann kühlt sich der Wasserlauf trotz sengender Sonnenstrahlen ähnlich wie in einer ägyptischen Gulla ab und nähert sich so seinem Anomalie-, das ist der temperaturlose (fieberfreie) Gesundheitszustand, bei dem erst die naturrichtige Fortund Aufpflanzungsmöglichkeit beginnt.

Solange man also das Wasser hydraulisch oder technisch, d.h. zentrifugal = an sich und in sich auf-spulend bewegt, kann es sich nicht fort- und aufpflanzen (stofflich vermehren und qualitativ verbessern) und muß daher entarten, verderben und schließlich nach Erlöschen allen physischen Lebens, Fische, Krebse etc. selbst zugrunde gehen. Also zu verwesen beginnen und abzusterben.

Denn nur mit Hilfe der bio-genetischen Bewegungsart ist es möglich, das "spezifisch" schwere Geschiebe, in dem die Wegzehrungsstoffe (Atomenergien im statu nascendi) stecken, mitzuführen (die dazu notwendigen Trag- und Schleppkräfte durch freiwerdende Levitationsenergien aufzubauen) und so die Lebenskraft des fundamentalen Mediums nicht nur zu erhalten, sondern auch zur Abgabe dieser an höhere Organismen zu be-wegen, wozu dann schon eine leichte Temperaturänderung für diese Energiestofftransfusion genügt.

Wie weit die Herren den folgenschweren Irrtum der modernen Wissenschaft, Wasser auf hydraulischem Regulierungsweg trag- und schleppkräftig machen zu können, erkannten, konnte ich nicht beurteilen.

Überraschend für mich war jedenfalls, daß Landeshauptmann Dr. Gleißner, Bernaschek, Dr. Ing. Linsbauer und ein Bankfachmann eines Tages nach Neuberg Steiermark fuhren, um sich die Holzschwemmanlage zu besichtigen, die gegenüber früheren Transportmethoden eine, wie es im amtlichen Attest heißt, weit über die Hälfte gehende Transportkostensparnis brachte. Diese Besichtigung, bei der man, wie auch bei einer generellen Projektierung einer Schwemmanlage in Reichraming Hintergebirge Oberösterreich die ablehnende Haltung des Landwirtschaftsministerium spürte, hatte lediglich den einen Wert, die Herren der Landesregierung auf die grundsätzlichen Unterschiede einer natürlichen und unnatürlichen (hydraulischen) Wasserführung aufmerksam zu machen.

Das Charakteristische einer egal ob Klein- oder Großwasserstraße ist die druck- und stoßlose, sich dafür progressiv steigende Zug-kraft des in besonders profilierten Gerinnen fließenden, richtiger gesagt "ziehenden" Wassers.

Im "ziehenden" Wasser gibt es erstens: kein Voreilen des Holzes, das innerhalb eines Sogwirbels geht, dessen Spitze immer rascher als die Holzmasse geht. Also eine Anlandung oder Querstellung dieser unmöglich ist.

Im "ziehenden" Wasser nähert sich trotz äußerer Gegeneinflüsse die Wassertemperatur ständig dem Anomaliepunkt (+4°C), wodurch das im Stromstrich gehende Wasser infolge seiner "spezifischen" Verdichtung so trag- und schleppkräftig wird, daß auch Holz, das spezifisch schwerer als Wasser ist, infolge gleichzeitiger Sogkraftsteigerung anstandslos schwimmt, während hydraulisch geführtes Wasser trotz eines durch Durchstich von Mäander gesteilten Gefälles und der dadurch erreichten Stoßkraftsteigerung besonders im begradigten Flußlauf liegen bleibt.

Dieser jedem Hydrauliker unerklärliche Trag- und Schleppkraftsverlust, siehe z.B. die katastrophalen Folgen des Rheindurchstiches bei Schaffhausen, hängt mit der Störung der schon des öfteren erwähnten Innenschwingung des Moleküles zusammen, durch die, was bisher absolut unbekannt war, die - das Wasser zersetzenden Atomenergien entstehen, die das bedingungslose Krankwerden des Blutes der Erde, dessen Verseuchung mit gesundheitsschädlichen Bakterien, das Absterben aller physischen Lebenserscheinungen



Fische, Krebse etc. und zuguterletzt das unaufhaltsame Zugrundgehen des lebenswichtigsten Mendium zur Folge hat.

Es ist wohlverständlich, daß jeder Beamte und jeder Politiker sich scheut, sich für eine so schwerwiegende Beweisführung einzusetzen. Und selbst hätte er dazu den persönlichen Mut, was sowohl LHStvertreter Bernaschek und besonders Dr. Ing. Linsbauer, der diesbezüglich sogar in Linz (Landhaus) einen öffentlichen und sehr scharf gehaltenen Vortrag hielt, bewiesen, so kann es keine Parteileitung zulassen, daß der öffentliche Beweis geführt wird, daß die behördlichen Vorschriften, die Ursache des progressiven Massenelendes infolge systematischer Zerstörung des lebenswichtigen Entwicklungsfundamentes Wasser durch bisher naturwidrige Wasserführung sind. Denn damit wäre es mit jeder Autorität einer Partei und Regierung, die sich bisher auf derartige Fehlerkenntnisse einer naturfremden Wissenschaft stützte, ein für allemal vorüber.

Und so war es auch für mich keine Überraschung, als man mir eines Tages erklärte, daß der Bau von Kleinwasserstraßen trotz eines Finanzierungsantrages von privater Seite zurückgestellt werden müsse.

Dieser kleine Ausschnitt zeigt aber erst einen der vielen und schweren Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler an, den die moderne Wissenschaft im derzeitigen, etwa 100 jährigen Maschinenzeitalter machte.

Im Folgenden wird nun ein kleines Erlebnis erzählt, das diese wissenschaftliche Irrung auf dem Gebiete Wasserwirtschaft von einer anderen Seite her zeigt.

Eines Tages erhielt ich von einem Forstingenieur Hans Bloch, einem Studiumkollegen und Parteigenossen des gewesenen Energieministers Dr. Miggsch aus Columbien, einen Brief mit einer Beilage, in der genannter Forstingenieur auf die ungeheuren Spätschäden aufmerksam machte, die durch hydraulische Druck-turbinen, besonders Kaplanturbinen im allgemeinen und im besonderen durch das Großwasserkraftwerk Kaprun naturgesetzmäßig zu erwarten sind, wenn trotz vieler Warnungen, die schon zu Zeiten Dr. Dollfuß, Görings etc. ergingen, an dessen Inbetriebsetzung festgehalten wird.

Dieser, an Energieminister Dr. Miggsch gerichtete Brief wurde durch LHSt-vertreter Ludwig Bernaschek persönlich übergeben. Und zugleich wurde hierzu gekürzt folgende Erklärung der durch hydraulische Druck-turbinen entstehenden Spätschäden gegeben.

Am 16. Mai 1913 konnte Professor Dr. Viktor Kaplan die führenden Turbinenfabrikanten der Welt verständigen, daß es ihm gelungen sei, mit neuartigen Laufrädern die bisherigen Werte weit übersteigende Drehzahlen und Wirkungsgrade zu erreichen.

Dies wurde am 22. Juni 1922 von Prof. Budau am Bremsstand bestätigt. Damit sah sich Kaplan am Ziel seiner langjährigen Versuchsarbeiten, als plötzlich ein unerwarteter Rückschlag eintrat, der seine bisherige Spannkraft durch einen schweren Nervenzusammenbruch lähmte.

Bei der Übertragung des im Modellversuch Erreichten zeigten sich nämlich in der Praxis rätselhafte Kavitationserscheinungen, die selbst stählerne Turbinenleitschaufeln in kurzer Zeit zerstörten.

Erst nach langwierigen und sehr kostspieligen Legierungsversuchen gelang es, diese Zersetzungserscheinungen soweit einzudämmen, daß mit dem Bau dieser Turbinensysteme begonnen werden konnte. Man hielt und hält es heute noch als einen großen Verdienst an der Wirtschaft, daß einige Lizenzfirmen Kaplans, in Hinsicht auf die großen Geschäftsmöglichkeiten, keine materiellen und geistigen Aufwendungen scheuten, um die vorerwähnten Zersetzungserscheinungen zu beheben, die lt. Messungen (siehe Deutsche Physik) Druckspitzenleistungen von etwa 32.000 Atmosphären in einer mittleren Kaplanturbine entsprechen.

So rettete man diese gefährliche Zentrifugenzmaschine, die nun fast in der ganzen Welt in einem umso größeren Umkreis das geosphärische und äußerst druckempfindliche, weil negativ überladene Frucht- und Mutterwasser der Erde, den eigentlichen Aufbaustoffträger, zersetzt, als ihre Tourenzahl mit wachsender Druckhöhe wächst.

Eine Vollenbetriebsetzung des Großwasserwerkes Kaprun wird demnach bedeutend größere Spätschäden durch Absinken des Grundwasserspiegels und damit verursachten Bergrutschungen zur Folge haben, als nun durch die Vollelektrifizierung in der Schweiz aufzuscheinen beginnen, wo bereits lt. dortigen Pressemeldungen ca. 200.000 ha ins Gleiten kamen, weil die das Wasser und damit die Berge auf der schiefen Ebene erhaltenden Auftriebs-, oder die Levitationskräfte fehlen, die das ganze Erdegewicht im labilen Gleichgewichtszustand erhalten.

Die bio- oder re-aktive Folge dieser Wasserzersetzungs-großmaschine würde der nahezu totale Niedergang der Landwirtschaft in Salzburg, Tirol und Weststeiermark sein und es ist daher meine verdammte Pflicht und Schuldigkeit, eines von der Natur mit besonderen Gaben ausgestatteten Naturbeobachters, rechtzeitig zu warnen und zugleich andere, bessere und naturgewollte Energieerzeugungsmethoden aufzuzeigen. Dazu wäre in Anbetracht unabsehbarer und unvermeidbarer Folgen einer Vollenbetriebsetzung des Kraprunwerkes noch folgendes zu sagen:

Wie schon zum wiederholten Male im Vorstehenden erwähnt, geht der Wasseraufbau (Blutaufbau der Erde) nach denselben Gesetzmäßigkeiten vor sich, wie der Blut- und Säfteaufbau in den höheren Organismen.

Wird dieser Wasseraufbau (Erdblutaufbau) irgendwie, z.B. durch druck- und wärmesteigernde Geräte, hydraulische Druckturbinen, nicht naturrichtig konstruierte und legierte Bodenbearbeitungs- und Erntegeräte gestört oder gar zerstört, dann treten, wie in jedem Organismus, in dem der dem Blutaufbau dienliche Stoffwechselfvorgang nicht mehr funktioniert, die Blutfäule ein, die den krebstartigen Zerfall vollzieht.

Das Mittel hierzu ist eine niederwertige biologische d.h. eine, mit reaktiver Zersetzungskraft (denn eine Äquivalenz oder eine roh- bzw. feinstoffliche Energiestoff-konzentrations-erhaltung gibt es nicht) ausgestattete Atom-energieart, welche die heutige Wissenschaft auf allen vier Wirtschaftssektoren Forst-, Land-, Wasser- und Energiewirtschaft unfreiwillig durch eine naturwidrige Massenbeschleunigung urzeugt.

Wie tragisch die Auswirkungen dieser, durch druck- und wärme-steigernde Bewegungsarten medialer Massen (Erde, Wasser und Luft) entstehenden niederwertigen Atom-energienarten sind, zeigen am besten Schweizer Presseberichte, nach denen in diesem Hochgebirgsland immer größere Erdbeben, sogenannte Plaikkenbildungen entstehen. Bisher sind nach diesen Meldungen ungefähr 200.000 ha niedergegangen, wodurch gewaltige Geröllemassen in die Bäche, Flüsse und Ströme kamen, die dank der modernen (hydraulischen) Regulierungsart ihre Trag- und Schleppkräfte fast zur Gänze verloren. Kostspielige Baggerungen, die ständig durchgeführt werden, sind zwecklos, weil die niedergehenden Geröllemassen nicht weniger, sondern immer größer werden. Ein Zeichen, daß sich die Ursachen dieser Bergrutschungen verstärken.

Ich habe vor etwa 20 Jahren in Wort und Schrift, ja sogar mittels Plakaten (siehe Tauhefte: Kampf um den Rhein) gewarnt. Man hat mich als Narren verlacht. Sogar einen hochherzigen Antrag einer Wiener Baugesellschaft abgelehnt, die sich erbötig machte, erst die Schäden und deren Ursachen zur beheben und sich dann erst bezahlen zu lassen.

Nun müssen die Schweizer zu drakonischen Mitteln greifen, um unabsehbaren Folgen auszuweichen, die auftreten, wenn sich die vermuten Wasserläufe und Gebirgsseen andere Wege suchen. Ein einziges Hochwasser kann z.B. das ganze Rheinland überschwemmen, da an dieser Stelle der Niederwasserspiegel des Rheins z.T. höher als die Rauchfänge der im Rheintal befindlichen Siedlungen ist.

Und was war die Ursache dieser in Berg und Tal vorsichgehenden Gefälls-ausgleichungen? Diese Ursachen sind:

1. die Vollelektrifizierung mittels hochtouriger Kaplanturbinen und schnell- laufenden Peltonrädern.

2. die hydraulischen Flußregulierungen, die sinnlosen Mäanderdurchstiche und sonstigen Verbauungen der Flüsse und Wildbäche, in denen sowohl die gefährlichen Formfehler wie auch die ebenso gefährlichen Materialfehler nahezu ausnahmslos aufscheinen.

Wie gefährlich diese Form- und Materialfehler wirken, zeigt allein schon der hydraulische, d.h. druck- und wärmesteigernde "eiserne" Pflug. Ändert man nur die Materialart und damit die atomare Energieart, so zeigt sich schon gegenüber bisherigen Ernteergebnissen ein etwa 30 - 50 %iger Mehrertrag. Ändert man dazu auch noch die Form und mit dieser die druck- und wärmesteigernden Profile des gegenwärtigen Pfluges, dann steigt der Bodenertrag gegenüber derzeitigen Ergebnissen über 90 %.

Ohne weiteres verständlich, weil in diesem Falle die aufbauenden und auftreibenden Atomenergien wieder entstehen können, die die ganze Erde aufbauten, deren gewaltigen Gewichtszuwächse im labilen Gleichgewichtszustand erhalten und das Ganze um die Achsen der durch die v.e. Levitationsströme auferstehenden Wachstumsgebilde - diese gewissermaßen aufschraubend - in zykliden Spiralgängen drehen.

Diesem eigenartigen Bewegungsvorgang haben wir das bisher unerkannte Wachstumswunder zu verdanken.

Aber diesbzüglich werden im Nachstehenden die tragischen Irrtümer der modernen Wissenschaft laufend und mit entsprechendem Beweismaterial belegt gesondert aufgezeigt.

Hier geht es nur um die allgemein gehaltene Spätschädenaufzeige, welche erst kürzlich den Dipl.-Forstingenieur Hans Bloch aus Columbien veranlaßte, seinen Studienkollegen und gewesenen Energieminister Dr. Miggsch auf die Folgen einer naturwidrigen Wasserbewegung mittels Kaplan-turbinen und Peltonräder nachdrücklichst aufmerksam zu machen. Wie soll aber ein Jurist diese Bewegungsunterschiede verstehen, wenn sie die sogenannten Wassersachverständigen trotz laufender Mißerfolge bis heute nicht erkannten. Ja sogar jeder Hinweis auf die Selbstverständlichkeit, daß nur Bewegungsunterschiede eine Spannung, und diese erst eine innere Molekularschwingung (Temperaturänderung) auslösen können, wird als ein Phantasma von denen betrachtet, die keine Ahnung haben, was man prinzipiell betrachtet unter dem Begriff "Bewegung" und deren Zweck zu verstehen hat. Nichtsdestoweniger aber das Blut der Erde, von dessen Bewegungsart Werde und Sterbe abhängt, nach mathematischem Formelkram statt mit formrichtigen Profilen zu führen.

Die Rechnung für diesen notorischen Unverstand haben die Steuerträger zu tragen. Will die Schweiz, die - wie sie glaubte - ihre Flüsse und Ströme fast ausnahmslos in den Kulturdienst gespannt hat, überhaupt weiterleben, dann hat sie

a) die die verkehrten Atomenergiearten urzeugenden Druck-Turbinen schleunigst gegen Zug-Turbinen auszutauschen und

b) alle hydraulischen Flußregulierungen ehestens einzustellen und alle naturunrichtig, d.h. nach hydraulischen (druck- und wärme steigernden) Bewegungsprinzipien regulierten Wasserläufe so zu führen, daß sie wiederum temperatur- und daher feberlos abfließen, sich "spezifisch" verdichten, und damit erst die Trag- und Schleppkräfte erlangen können, um das schwere Geschiebe mitführen zu können, in dem die Wegzehrung des durch Berg und Tal gehenden Blutes der Erde steckt.

Und erst dann kann das Wasser seinem Daseinszweck wieder dienen, der darin besteht, mit Hilfe der biogenetischen (anti-hydraulischen) zugkräftigen Bewegungsart die Atomenergiearten aufzubauen und auf seinem Abweg rechts und links zu verteilen, die die dort sprießende Vegetation be-leben und nicht wie es dermalen der Fall ist der naturwidrigen Wasserführung wegen ent-leben und mangels der naturrichtigen Aufbau-energien krebs-krank wird.

Die in den Kaplan-turbinen, Pelton-rädern und sonstigen modernen Turbinensystemen - durch die zentrifugale Bewegungsart des Wassers - auflebenden autoritären Energiearten, müssen daher ein umso größeres Unheil anrichten, als der jeweilige Gefälledruck steigt. So wird z.B. die praktische Auswirkung des größten Wasserkraftwerkes Kaprun der fast totale landwirtschaftliche Niedergang von Salzburg, Tirol und Weststeiermark sein. Außerdem wird das parasitäre Unterleben einen ungeahnten Auftrieb von denjenigen Atomenergien erfahren, die in allen - nach

modernen Anschauungen geführten - Wässern aus niederwertigen Spannungszentren - siehe den englischen Physiker P.H. Blackett, der auch die bio-magnetischen Levitationsenergien erkannte, jedoch deren Er- oder Urzeugungsmethode nicht fand - über dem Umweg niederwertiger Temperaturarten entspringen. Denn jeder Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler quadriert sich. Und das gleiche gilt auch für naturrichtige Bewegungs-ergebnisse (siehe z.B. das rund 14 fache Kartoffelertragnis (das Erdäpfelperpetuum) das anläuft, wenn man bloß das Medium Erde mit einem kupfernen Mollenblech statt achsial-radial - radial-achsial, also genau umgekehrt, als ilies bisher üblich war bzw. ist, bewegt.

Wie konnte es kommen, daß die moderne Wissenschaft diese schweren Bewegungs- und Erregungsfehler machte und trotzdem immer offener werdende Wirtschafts-rückschläge nicht erkannte?

Einer der hierfür geltenden Gründe war, daß es sich um sogenannte Spätschäden handelt, die - siehe z.B. die Röntgenstrahlenwirkungen erst im dritten oder vierten Glied offensichtlich werden. Also der Enkel oder Urenkel die Sünden seiner Väter oder noch entwicklungsjüngeren Vorfahren nicht mehr erkennen konnte, soweit er sie aus rein traditionellen Gründen, von naturfremden Schulmeistern dazu angespornt, nicht selbst machte.

Der interessanteste und maßgebende Grund hierfür war, daß kein moderner Wissenschaftler, die Unterschiede zwischen natürlichen und unnatürlichen (technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen) Druck- und Zugwirkungen erkannte.

Der Wissenschaftler sagt z.B.: Der Druck wirkt nach allen Seiten gleich.

Der natürliche Druck (Luftdruck z.B.) wirkt von allen Seiten her gleich.

Die heutigen Vakuumpumpen sind entweder Druckpumpen, d.h. sie schleudern Luft beispielsweise gewaltmäßig nach außen oder sie wirken als sogenannte Zug-pumpen nur einseitig. Insofern als ein Kolbenzug nur einen der bipolaren Grundstoffbestände und zwar den Sauerstoff aus dem stofflichen, mit gegensätzlichen Grundstoffwerten vermengten Gefüge entfernt. Der im Sauerstoff steckende Süßstoffwert durch die einseitig wirkende Sogkraft frei (sozusagen entbunden) wird und als gegenpolige Spannungsart zurückbleibt. Umgekehrt entfernt die Drucksaugpumpe nur den auf Zentrifugenz reagierenden Kohlen- oder vergärten Fettstoffwert, so daß in diesem Fall der bipolare Sauerstoffwert durch den druck- und wärmesteigernden Schleuder- oder Druckkolben frei und einpolig und dadurch als Gegenspannung zum reaktivierten Bewegungswiderstand wird.

Die Natur macht das ganz anders. Sie erzeugt durch ganz bestimmte Bewegungs- und Materialformen:

a)den radial-achsial, d.h. den von allen Seiten gegen den Schwerpunkt der bewegten Masse gerichteten Druck,

b)zugleich aber von diesem Schwerpunkt aus, einen nach allen Seiten hin gerichteten (ausstrahlenden) Zug,

dadurch, daß die sich in zykliden Spiralkurven (Raumspiralen) drehende Masse gewissermaßen die Schraubenmutter spielt, die wie eine lotrecht stehende Zentrifuge wirkt, die alles minderwertige in einer trombenartigen Kelchform ausscheidet und so dem Edwertigsten in der Achsmittle (siehe den Fruchtkolben einer blühenden Pflanze) den widerstandslosen Vor- oder Auftrieb gewährt.

Der grundsätzliche Unterschied zwischen beiden Massenbewegungs und Beschleunigungsarten ist, daß im wissenschaftlichen Bewegungsfall, die zu bewegende Masse einseitig gegen eine ruhig stehende Form achsial-radial gedrückt und zugleich in Richtung der Kolbenbewegung weitergeführt wird. Die natürliche Bewegungsart jedoch, abgesehen, daß diese im rhythmischen Wechselspiel zug und druck-steigernd, also temperaturmäßig konstant wirkt, bewegt die rohstoffliche (ungeleuterte) Masse zuerst dissozierend (aufspaltend), ohne jedoch Wärme zu erzeugen, und führt dann das auf diesem Veredelungsvorgang Ausgeläuterte mittels einer Vakuumart hoch, das durch eine an sich und in sich wirkende Zentrifugenz sich progressiv steigert.

Es ist selbstverständlich, daß ein Techniker, Hydrauliker oder Dynamiker, der z.B. gewohnt ist, einen Holzapfel oder eine Mostbirne gewaltmäßig zu zerquetschen und dadurch schon durch überstarken Druckeinfluß im Fruchtsaft eine natur-unrichtige Dissoziation erreicht, weil auch hier die beiden gegensätzlichen Grundstoffbestände (Süß- und Sauerstoff) auf Zug und Druck unterschiedlich reagieren, nicht verstehen kann, weil er nicht weiß, daß der Sauerstoff bei Druck- und Wärmeeinfluß den Spannungszustand erreicht, damit einpolig und so aggressiv wird, daß er den bei diesem Einfluß passiv inaktiv werdenden Süßstoff bindet, verzehrt und vergärt (verdaut).

Das Produkt dieses Dissoziationsvorgangs ist die niederwertige Zersetzungsenergie, die jeder Techniker, Hydrauliker und Dynamiker erreicht, weil er ex-pansiv wirkende Wärme und konzentrierende Kältearten bei seinen, ihm in der Schule angelernten Bewegungsarten vergeudet.

Die Natur verwendet ausnahmslos kon-zentrierende Wärme- und exzentrierende Frischstoff-einflüsse und erreicht dadurch den genau verkehrten Wirkungseffekt als der naturentfremdete Scholastiker.

Insoferne, weil bei höher-wertigen Bewegungsarten, die sich, um es nochmals zu betonen, durch kon-zentrierende Wärme- und ex-zentrisch wirkende Gegeneinflüsse kennzeichnen, der Süßstoff (der Chemiker nennt ihn im gebundenen Zustand den Kohlenstoff) den Spannungszustand erreicht, damit frei, einpolig und so hochaktiv wird, daß er den bei diesem Temperatureinfluß passiv (inaktiv) werdenden Sauerstoff bindet, verzehrt, vergärt (verdaut).

Das Produkt dieses Dissoziations- oder vorhergegangenen Aufspaltungsvorganges, der weder durch die einen, noch die anderen Temperatureinflüsse tangiert werden darf, ist die höherwertige Aufbau und Auftrieb-, oder die sogenannte Levitations-energieart.

Die eigentliche Realität, weil es ohne dieses relativ höchste Entwicklungsprodukt keine wie immer heißende Leistungssteigerung, kein Wachstum, keine Nahrungsfreiheit und auch keine Bewegungskraftsteigerung, daher auch keine Bewegungsfreiheit gäbe.

Der heutige Techniker, Hydrauliker und Dynamiker vereitelt durch v.e. Bewegungsfehler die natürliche Fortentwicklung insoferne, daß sie:

- a) die das Blut der Erde das Wasser zersetzende Atom-energie-art,
- b) den im Quadrat zur natur-unrichtigen Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit aufwachsenden - also durch verkehrte Temperatur-einflüsse reaktivierten Bewegungs-widerstand erzeugen.

Dreht man hingegen den in allen Schulen der Zivilisationswelt gelehrtens Bewegungsaufbau um, d.h. benützt man zu irgend einem Bewegungsaufbau höherwertige Bewegungsarten, die im bipolaren Stoffkonglomerat einer medialen Masse konzentrierende Wärme und exzentrisch wirkende Kältewirkungen auslösen, und achtet man ferners, daß weder der eine, noch der andere Temperatur-einfluß vorherrschend oder überwiegend wird, d.h. sorgt man für ein rhythmisches Wechselspiel der beiden Bewegungsteilkräfte (gegensätzlich wirkenden Bewegungskomponenten das sind die vorerwähnten Zug und Druck-kräfte) vor, dann hat man nicht nur die so gut wie kostenlose Maschinenkrafts-urzeugung in der Hand, weil der im Quadrat wachsende Bewegungswiderstand infolge der höherwertigen Bewegungsart nicht aufscheinen kann, sondern zudem auch das Geheimnis der willkürlichen Wachstumsregelung entdeckt. Dadurch, daß man die atomare Gestaltungskraft der Natur, den Aufbau eines hochwertigen Assoziationsproduktes eines temperatur-losen (fieberfreien) Dissoziations-vorganges, willkürlich regeln und damit nicht nur die Fortpflanzung, d.h. die Vermehrung der Nahrungs- und sonstigen Bedarfsartikel, sondern auch die Aufpflanzung, d.h. die qualitative Verbesserung (Veredelung) des quantitativ Gesteigerten nach Wunsch regulieren und so jede Not an Fein- und Rohstoffen ausschalten kann.

Damit hat a) der Kapitalismus, b) der Sozialismus und c) der Kommunismus oder sonstige ... **ismus** jede Bedeutung verloren.

Es wird für alle diejenigen, denen man, egal ob bewußt oder unbewußt, den natur-widrigen, dem zersetzenden Atom-energieaufbau dienenden Bewegungs-Temperatur- und Spannungs-aufbau in allen Schulen der zivilisierten Welt lehrte und lernte, eine Überraschung sein, daß der bisherige

Lebenskampf praktisch und faktisch vorüber ist, wenn man es bloß verkehrt macht, als man dies unter der Anleitung sophistischer Scholastiker bisher zu tun gewohnt war.

Die weitere Folge dieser unterschiedliche Gefühle erweckenden Erkenntnis wird gerechter Weise das Verlangen sein, die eigentlichen Gründe kennen zu lernen, die die weltlichen und sonstigen Gelehrten bewogen, ihren Mitmenschen durch v.e. Schachzug die jedem Menschen zustehenden primitivsten Lebensrechte dieses einmaligen und einzigartigen Daseins zu nehmen.

Selbstverständlich wird auch ein kaum niederzuhaltendes Wutgefühl in den bisher um ihre Lebensannehmlichkeiten beraubten Massen aufleben, das sie bewegt, das ihnen Angetane furchtbar zu rächen, wenn sie einmal die Feinheiten dieser seit Jahrtausenden partizipierten Gemeinheiten durchschauen.

Und damit beginnt, da es keinerlei Sinn und Zweck hatte, alles krumm und klein zu schlagen, erst das große Problem wieder, das selbst die einstigen, tatsächlich schlauköpfigen Politiker, wie man nun sieht, nicht zu lösen verstanden.

Denn - frage ich - wer wird in Zukunft die schweren und niederwertigen Arbeiten leisten, wenn das bisherige Nahrungsmittel- und Rohstoffproblem durch wiederum naturrichtige Bewegungsmethoden der medialen Massen - in denen die alles vermehrenden und das Vermehrte veredelnden Atom-energien im statu nascendi stecken und nur des naturrichtigen Bewegungs-anstoßes harren, um sich über den Umweg von höherwertigen Temperatur- und Spannungsarten in fort und aufpflanzende und jedes Gewicht mühelos überwindene Levitationsenergien nahezu kostenlos zu verwandeln - gelöst ist?

Kein vernichtendes Feuer mehr notwendig ist, aus dem die entwicklungsgefährlichen Temperatur-arten entspringen, um Wohn- und sonstige Räume zu beheizen, kein elektrisches Licht mehr nötig ist, um Beleuchtungszwecken zu dienen, keine technische Maschine mehr gebraucht wird, die das mediale Gefüge entwicklungs-freudiger Aufbaustoffe sprengt und verbrennt, um mit einer blitzschnellen, die Gewebe zerfetzenden Ex-plosion stinkende, rauchende Maschinenungetüme zwecks Aufbau des im Quadrat zu deren Bewegungsgeschwindigkeit aufwachsenden Bewegungs-widerstands anlaufen zu lassen, die einen praktischen Wirkungsgrad von nur wenigen Prozent haben. Dafür die elementare Fort- und Aufpflanzungskraft restlos zerstören, die in jedem festen, flüssigen und gas-luft-förnügen Medium stecken. Sich unter der Hand dieser heutigen unseligen Techniker, Hydrauliker und Dynamiker in Gift- und sonstige Zerstörungsmittel verwandeln, mit denen, es ist tatsächlich unglaublich, diese Torene eine gesunde Wirtschaft und Kultur aufbauen wollten. - Begreiflicherweise das genaue Gegenteil in der Praxis erreichten.

Aber mit diesen armseligen Spekulanten, die doch in der Mehrzahl nur betrogene Betrüger sind, zu rechten, hat keinerlei Zweck. Denn hier geht es darum, so rasch wie nur möglich das bisher Geschehene wieder gut zu machen und die irreführte Menschheit aus dieser schier ausweglosen Sackgasse so rasch wie nur möglich hinaus in Unabhängigkeit und Freiheit zu führen, ohne damit das uralte Problem - die Frage: "Wer leistet künftig die schwere, bzw. durch obige Entdeckung zwar unverhältnismäßig leichter gewordene, immerhin freiheitseinschränkende Arbeit?" - aufzuwerfen. Denn um dieses Problem zu lösen, hat man doch den Qualitätsstoffaufbau vor Jahrtausenden durch Anlernung verkehrter Bewegungs- und Erregungskraftarten systematisch unterbunden. Und schließlich ist man soweit gesunken, das Blut der Erde, den universellen Grundstoffträger des Lebens, die physische Erstgeburt metaphysischer (überirdischer) Be-lebungsenergien in hochtourigen Druck-turbinen zu entladen.

Das Dissoziations-produkt dieses naturwidrigen Verfahrens ist die entwicklungsgefährlichste Atomenergieart, die der Erbauer der hochtourigsten Trubine, Professor Viktor Kaplan, nach rund 20-jährigen Versuchen erstmalig bemerkbar machte. Erst nach langjährigen Legierungsversuchen gelang es, die Materialart zu finden, die der sogar härtesten Stahl zersetzenden Kavitationskraft widerstand.

Und seit dieser Zeit nahm das Verhängnis seinen umso rascheren Ablauf, als diese das atomare Gift in Strahlenform urzeugenden Hochdruckturbinen in fast alle Wasserläufe der Zivilisationswelt, ja sogar in die weltberühmte Hochquellwasserleitung von Wien eingebaut wurden.

Kein Wunder, daß nun in Wien alle 2 Stunden ein Mensch an der entsetzlichen Seuche des technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen Maschinenzeitalters jämmerlich zugrunde geht. Unter rasenden Schmerzen bei noch lebendigem Leib verfault, weil sich die in jedem zentrifugierten Wasser steckenden Energiestoffkeime, die mit keinem Mittel unschädlich gemacht werden können, übertragen und u.U. schon durch einen harmlos erscheinenden mechanischen oder physikalischen Anstoß zum Aufleben gebracht werden können.

Ein kleiner Anstoß - sagt ein uraltes Sprichwort - kann die Welt aus den Angeln heben, gar dann, wenn es sich um einen Ansatzpunkt handelt, der außerhalb der physischen Daseinswelt liegt. Und dieser meta-physische Anhaltspunkt entsteht, wenn man bloß die Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft nach modern-wissenschaftlichen Methoden bewegt. D.h. in form- und material-widrigen Maschinen, Geräten etc. expandierende und steigende Wärme- und konzentrierende sowie fallende Kältearten erzeugt. (Siehe demgegenüber die höherwertigen Temperaturarten, die als fallende und konzentrierende Wärme- und als steigende und expandierende Kältearten von der Natur zum Aufbau relativ höchstwertiger Atom-energiearten verwendet werden. Im wissenschaftlichen Lexikon überhaupt fehlen, bzw. - soweit aus dem Altertum noch Überlieferungen der Bewegungskünste der Hohenpriester der alten Kulturvölker bestanden - sorgfältig ausradiert wurden.)

In Anbetracht der ungeheuren Bedeutung und der letzten Möglichkeit, die unheilvollen Folgen verkehrter Massenbewegungs- und Beschleunigungsmethoden der modernen Wissenschaft ausmerzen zu können, ist auch die Frage zu klären, woher diese - Sein und Nichtsein entscheidenden - Energiestoffbestände eigentlich kommen?

Diese Energiestoffquelle ist die relativ höchstwertige physische Energiestoffkonzentration - das nach Erlöschen der physischen Lebensfunktionen erstarrende Fett.

Werden Kadaver aller Art verbrannt oder außerhalb der indifferenten (temperaturlosen) Schicht zwischen der positiv geladenen Athmo- und der negativ geladenen Geosphäre begraben, dann kommen sie unter den Temperatureinfluß der sich "originell" bewegenden Erde.

In diesem Fall entstehen aus abgelebten Körpermassen, soweit sie nicht als Nahrungsmittel in einen naturrichtig geregelten Stoffwechselkreislauf gelangen, die niederwertigen Zersetzungsenergien, die die Aufgabe haben, die schwachen Lebenskräfte in alten und kranken Organismen auszulöschen um deren Fettstoffmassen dem Feinstoffaufbau (Edelenergiestoffaufbau) zuzuführen.

Bedenkt man, daß Milliarden Menschenkörper in für v.e. Rohstoffaufbau ungeeigneten Gräber, die durchwegs im atmosphärischen (positiven) Einflußbereich liegen, sinn- und zwecklos verscharrt werden, so wird es auch begreiflich, daß eine Aufpflanzung infolge Mangel an meta-physischen Energiestoffarten höherwertiger, die Geisteskraft steigernder Rückwirkungsart so gut wie unmöglich ist. Daher nur mehr Fortpflanzungsenergien wirksam werden, die mehr oder weniger der Elephantiasis, der Strukturweiterung dienen, die der natürliche Vorläufer der v.e. Krebskrankheit ist.

Riesenhafte Verdummungs- und Verblödungserscheinungen, wiederum natürliche Folgen mangelnder Aufpflanzungs- das sind die die Geisteskraft steigernden Edelstoffenergien, sind typische Anzeichen eines gesamtwirtschaftlichen Niedergangs, dem der wichtigste Antrieb, das metaphysische Fett in Gestalt qualitätstoffreicher Erde, Wasser und guter Luft fehlt.

Der beste und unwiderlegbare Beweis für obige, jedem Wissenschaftler als utopische Narretei erscheinenden Behauptungen ist das praktische Beispiel. Und das ist die künstliche Anreicherung der physischen Erstarrungsform Erde, Wasser und Luft mit meta-physischen Energiestoffkonzentrationen.

Die hierzu geeigneten Hilfsmittel und Geräte sind besonders konstruierte und legierte Maschinen, Bodenbearbeitungs- und Erntegeräte, die die Medien Erde, Wasser und Luft natürlich bewegen und erregen. D.h. konzentrierende Wärme- und ex-zentrierende Kältearten erzeugen und die sich so regulieren lassen, daß man an einem ganz bestimmten Punkt, der, weil er außerhalb des Alls liegt, der Anomaliepunkt ist, in rascher Aufeinanderfolge den aufbauenden Lebensrhythmus in kürzesten Wegstrecken und Zeitintervallen pulsieren lassen kann, daß der Wechsel zwischen Zug- und Druckkomponenten über Schallgeschwindigkeit, ja sogar die Lichtgeschwindigkeit als

sogenannte Kettenreaktionen erreicht. Ist diese relativ höchste Innenschwingung bipolarer Energiestoffkonzentrationen - Folgen der katalysatorischen Wärmestoffeinträge höherwertiger (konzentrierender) Wirkungsart - infolge Fehlens des quadrierten Bewegungswiderstandes erreicht, dann entspringt schließlich aus dieser schon bakteriophagen (grenzwertlichen) Spannungsart das letzte und relativ höchste Entspannungsgut, das durch seine Umspannung auch die Wirkungsrichtung verändert. - Das zeitlich begrenzte, das heißt mit jedem Atemzug, der diesem Grundstoffumbau den nötigen Sauerstoff zuführt, neuentstehende juvenile Leben.

Diese rohstoffliche Befruchtungsstoffzufuhr steuern ursächlich an-, richtiger gesagt, einziehende (strukturverengende) und ausziehende (struktur-erweiternde) Feinstoffkonzentrate, die ihrerseits wieder von denjenigen Feinstoffnachschieben abhängig sind, die durch die rhythmischen Bewegungsvorgänge den unzähligen Lebensquellen, den zellenartigen Protoplasmen zugeführt werden.

Es hätte keinen praktischen Zweck, Menschen, die zum ersten Male von diesen rhythmischen Lebensaufbauvorgängen gehört haben, bisher an Äquivalenzen und konstanter Energieerhaltung bei vergänglicher Materialisierung glaubten, nähere Erklärungen über die Möglichkeiten eines maschinellen Lebensaufbaues, richtiger gesagt, die Möglichkeit der maschinellen Urzeugung der das Leben anfachenden höherwertigen Atomenergiearten aufzuzeigen. Im Prinzip betrachtet keine besondere Kunst, da man doch nur die "originelle" - die lebenswichtigen Wärmekonzentrate und die deren Befruchtung dienenden Frischstoffkonzentrate urzeugende - Erdbewegungsart naturgetreu zu kopieren hat, um den Edelenergiestoffaufbau wieder in die natürlichen Wege zu leiten, den - es wird sich wohl kaum mehr exakt feststellen lassen - Verbrecher oder bodenlose Dummköpfe durch verkehrte Bewegungsmethoden umso mehr untergraben haben, als diese verrückten Wissenschaftler und Pseudogelehrten praktische Scheinerfolge erreichten.

Hier bleibt nur das eine zu sagen, was man prinzipiell betrachtet unter dem Begriff "originelle" Bewegungsart zu verstehen hat.

Bewegung ist eine reaktive Folge inner-atomarer Schwingungsvorgänge die sich im lebenden und abgestorbenen Zustand in den sich ständig umbauenden Vitaminmolekülen abspielen. Daher auch die ewige Bewegung dieses ewig gärenden Misthaufen Erde, die sich in zyklischen Spiralraumkurven - schon wieder ein neues Stadeltor für weltliche Niederpriester - abspielt.

Urzeugt man diese naturrichtigen Innenschwingungen durch naturrichtig konstruierte und legierte Maschinen, Geräte, egal ob sie der Bodenvorbereitung oder der Gewinnung der Bodenerträge dienen, also - um es immer wieder und wieder zu wiederholen - konzentrierende Wärme- und expandierende (höherwertige) KälteTemperaturen aufleben lassen, und zügelt (reguliert) man diese so, daß die daraus entstehenden Edelstoffenergiearten - denen die der Ausscheidung des für weitere Fortentwicklungszwecke dienenden Closetttriebkräfte, die die heutige Wissenschaft für vermeintliche Fortentwicklungszwecke verwendet, gegenüberstehen - immer vorherrschen und (oder) überwiegen, dann ist es ohne weiteres möglich, den Lebensstandard der sich ständig vermehrenden Menschen auf einem menschenwürdigen Niveau zu erhalten.

Die dazu mitnotwendigen Hilfsmittel zur Erhaltung eines steten Entwicklungsfortganges ist die - in einem naturrichtigen Mischungsverhältnis gehaltene - Vegetation, die unter keinen Umständen monokultiviert werden darf, sondern im kunterbunten Über-, Neben- und Untereinander für den Dauerschutz gegenüber frei einfallenden Sonnenstrahlen sorgen muß, die in diesem Fall exzentrische Wärmewirkungen und dadurch die zerstörenden Atomenergien an der empfindlichsten Stelle, der protoplasmaartigen Lebenszelle, aufbauen. Struktur- und Charakter- = Qualitätsverschlechterung wäre oder ist die biologische, also reaktive Folge.

Und damit beginnt nach dieser ganz allgemein gehaltenen Einleitung erst der positive Teil dieser Bio-genetik, das heißt, die praktische Verwertung von seltenen Erlebnissen eines Menschen, den sich die Natur offenbar auserkoren hat, um die vor dem totalen Niedergang stehenden Mitmenschen in letzter Stunde zum allerletzten Male zu warnen und ihnen zu raten, wissenschaftliche Fehlspekulationen zu lassen und sich wieder zu natürlichen Ansichten und Weltanschauungen zu bekehren.



Es gehört viel Kraft dazu, um bei den nun folgenden Aufklärungen die streng objektive Mittellinie einzuhalten. Besonders im Kapitel Wald, den naturfremde Forstwissenschaftler in seinem Entwicklungsfundament derart störten, daß er - von der modernen Wissenschaft seit etwa 80 - 100 Jahren kahl-geschlagen, monokultiviert und überstarken Licht- und Wärmeeinflüssen ex-zentrisch wirkender Art ausgesetzt - so gut wie verloren ist, weil die vermeintlichen und von v.e. Forstwissenschaft in jeder Hinsicht geförderten Lichtzuwächse nichts anderes als entwicklungsschädliche Krebs-wucherungen, also schon reaktive Folgen von ex-pansiv wirkenden, die Struktur und den Charakter an der fundamentalsten Stelle zerstörenden direkten Licht und Wärme-einflüssen sind.

Der Wald ist die Wiege des Wassers. Je üppiger der Wald wächst, umso mehr Wasser. Nach wissenschaftlicher Ansicht unverständlich, weil doch die Baumwurzeln ungeheure Wassermengen mit den darin gelösten Nährstoffen auf- und hochsaugen, um das Überflüssige durch die Kronengebilde wieder an die Atmosphäre abzugeben.

In Wirklichkeit ist dieser Entwicklungsvorgang ganz anders. Denn die Baum- oder die Pflanzenwurzel ist gar nicht in der Lage, irgend eine flüssige Nährlösung aufzunehmen, da jedes Würzelchen, soweit es naturgesund ist, durch ein wiederum protoplasmaartiges Bläschen hermetisch abgeschlossen ist. - Nur er-lösten oder nur metaphysischen Energiestoff-gebilden schon raum- und gestaltloser Art den Eintritt in das Innere der geosphärischen Polarität gewährt.

So bildet sich das Spannungsfeld, das, zur positiv gespannten, von allen Seiten drückenden Atmosphäre im wechselsinnigen Verhältnis stehend, den Ausgleich ermöglicht dessen Produkt schon - je nach der Vorgangsart - eine höher- oder niederwertige Energieform ist.

Wird beispielsweise eine von schwacher Rinde geschützte Schattholzart frei oder licht gestellt, dann durchschlagen die harten, röntgenartigen Strahlengebilde die zu schwache Schutzschichte, wodurch es in den Zellgeweben zu einem Freiwerden (Aggressivierung) allotroper Sauerstoffwerte und umgekehrt zu einer Inaktivierung des negativ gespannten Süß- (Frucht-) stoffes kommt.

Das Produkt dieses Ausgleichvorgangs ist eine stark positiv, d.h. elektrolytisch nach allen Seiten hin drückende, also das zelluläre Gefüge sprengende Energieform, die zudem zersetzend wirkt.

Dieser Zersetzungsprozess ist ähnlich der elektrischen Wasserzersetzung. D.h. es kommt zur bekannten Sauer- und Wasserstoffrückbildung, durch deren Verbindung (Assoziation) reaktive Druck- und Wärmewirkungen ausgelöst werden, die nun die Struktur des Wachstumsgewebes lockern und dessen Charakter (Qualität) verderben. Und nach außen zu tritt eine Cambium-(=Jahresring-)erweiterung in Erscheinung, die der Forstwissenschaftler als den sogenannten "Lichtzuwachs" betrachtet, in Wirklichkeit aber eine ganz gewöhnliche Krebswucherung ist, die den inneren Zerfall einleitet, der in Kürze dann mit einem von unten nach oben zu sich im Stamm ausbreitenden Faulprozeß endet. Im Prinzip betrachtet der gleiche Vorgang, den wir in höheren Organismen "den Hitzschlag" bezeichnen, der in höheren, verfeinerten Organismen wesentlich beschleunigt Wirkungen auslöst.

Der genau verkehrte Vorgang spielt sich ab, wenn infolge starken Kronenschutzes einer über-, neben- und unter-einander gestaffelten Vegetation und zusätzlichen Rindenschutzes nur diffuse und an sich, sowie in sich durch Vorausgleiche geschwächte Kathodenstrahlen an den eigentlichen Entwicklungsherd herankommen und mehr oder weniger durch viele Hindernisse und Widerstände von den überstark negativ geladenen Süß- bzw. nach allen Seiten hin ausstrebenden, daher an-ziehenden Fruchstoffwerten überwältigt werden. Insofern, als die biomagnetische Zug-kraft, wie jede physische Zugwirkung, auf positive, eigene Spannungsdruckkräfte besitzende Bewegungsteile abkühlend wirkt. Dadurch der - schon bei ungefähr + 40°C bei Wärmeeinfluß frei und einpolig werdende, den aggressiven Spannungszustand erreichende - Sauerstoff, unter obigen Voraussetzungen passiv (inaktiv) werdend, vom gegensätzlichen Grundstoffgebilde, das bei ungefähr +4°C die relativ höchste Spannungs-, in diesem Fall jedoch Kon-zentrationskraft erreicht, gebunden, verzehrt, vergärt (verdaut) wird.

Und das Produkt dieses wärmelosen Dissoziationsvorgangs ist die biomagnetische, mit reaktiven Konzentrationskräften ausgestattete, daher die Struktur verdichtende und den Charakter (die Qualität) verbessernde Energieart atomarer Wirkungskraft.

Damit ist für den, der verstehen will, in rohen Zügen der tragische Irrtum der modernen Forstwissenschaft und die Ursache des langsamen aber steten Absterbens des Hochwaldes aufgezeigt, dem das Aussterben aller Edelholzarten bereits vorangegangen ist. (siehe das Tannen- und Ulmensterben, das Verschwinden der Hasel = Resonanzholz-fichte, die sich ausbreitende Rot- und Weißfäule, die Leukämie, das Absinken des Grundwasserspiegels, weil auch im Waldboden die Aufbau- und Auftriebenenergien zu fehlen beginnen, wenn der naturfremde Forstwirt den Wald kahlschlägt und dadurch die vorerwähnten Blutzersetzungsvorgänge im Wurzelbereich dieses stärksten Bodenschutzes auslöst).

Was der kurzsichtige, von naturfremden Lehrern verbildete und nur den scheinbaren Eigennutz anstrebende moderne Forstwirt nicht zerstört, erledigt nun der moderne Wasserwirt, der Hydrauliker, der das Blut der Erde, das unter normalen Fließverhältnissen seine überschüssigen Spannungswerte rechts und links verteilend neue und wiederum reaktivierte Aufbau- und Auftriebenenergien verteilt, durch naturwidrige Führungs- und Haltungsmethoden wiederum in sich und dadurch an sich zerstört.

So, wie im Walde durch die wippenden Äste einerseits, und durch deren Schattenspendung andererseits der bei jedem Verdauungs- oder Vergärungsprozeß wichtige mechanische und physikalische Zerlegungs-, oder wissenschaftlich ausgedrückt Dissoziationsvorgang die Voraussetzung eines höherwertigen, aufbauenden, auftreibenden, weil strukturverengenden, (spezifisch) verdichtenden Atomenergieaufbaues ist, genau so wichtig sind die den v.e. Energieaufbau einleitenden Bewegungsvorgänge, die sich in ähnlicher Art auch im abgehenden Wasser abspielen, sofern sie nicht von Wassertechnikern gestört werden, die glauben, den Grundstoffträger des Lebens, das Blut der Erde, durch Begradigung der Ufer (Durchstich der Mäander), Verkürzung des geologischen Gefälles und Steilung dessen geologischen Gefälles beschleunigen zu können, um dieser uferzerstörenden Masse den Ablauf ins Meer erleichtern zu können.

Das genau Gegenteilige wird auch hier wieder erreicht.

Wasser unterliegt wie das Blut und die Säfte höherer Organismen ganz besonderen Bewegungs- und Führungsgesetzen, bei denen die Ufer oder die Wandungen den bewegungsfördernden Widerstand spielen, der zu jeder Bewegungssteigerung notwendig ist. Jedoch eine wesentlich andere Rolle spielt, als ihr der moderne Wasserwirt zuteilt, der in der Wand den Schutzschild, statt den Diffusionsfilter sieht.

Jede Bewegung löst im molekularen, festen Geschiebegefüge, in dem auch das gas-luft-förmige Medium nicht fehlt und daher sehr unterschiedliche Wirkungen ausgelöst werden, eine Schwingungsänderung hervor, die reaktive Temperatur- und Spannungsschwankungen verursacht.

Das Produkt dieser Entwicklungsvorgänge ist eine bipolare Energie (Feinststoffkonzentration), die schon Strahlungskräfte positiver (abstoßender) oder negativer (anziehender) Funktionsart besitzt - also ab-ladend oder auf-ladend wirkt.

Daraus erhellt sich schon, daß es von der Wasserbewegungsart abhängt, ob das abfließende Medium gütig oder ungütig, ein Aufbauenergiespender oder ein - der Umgebung Edelstoffprodukte nehmender - Räuber wird, der sich dadurch selbst verdirbt. - D.h. nach restloser Entladung seiner von ihm normal mit Aufbauvoraussetzungen beschickten Umgebung wegen Unterbrechung des sich gegenseitig ausgleichenden Entwicklungsflusses (panta rhei) absterben muß.

Die moderne Wasserwirtschaft bedient sich bekanntlich der hydraulischen, also drucksteigernden Regulierungsart. Erreicht dadurch erhöhte Wanddruck- und Reibungssteigerungen, die direkte Strahleneinwirkungen der Sonne so unterstützen, daß schon leichte Erwärmungen im Abflußgut auftreten. Diese durch mechanische Führungsfehler ausgelösten Wärmewirkungen ändern schon im molekularen Geschiebegefüge die Schwingungsart, durch die wieder Temperatur- und Spannungsänderungen auftreten, deren Produkte schon positiv überladene, also elektrolytische Zersetzungskräfte besitzende Energiearten sind, die ihre Überschüsse ausstrahlen und so den allgemeinen Zersetzungsvorgang in ihrer unmittelbaren Umgebung kraft reaktiver Zusatzkräfte, die sie durch v.e. Kettenreaktionen erreichen, auslösen.

Frei werdende Sauerstoff- und Wasserstoffgase erzeugen neuerdings heftige Reaktionen, die schon wie Knallgasexplosionen wirken, das molekulare Gefüge nicht nur mechanisch, sondern auch physikalisch durch auftretende Wärmeerscheinungen mit reaktiver Wirkungsart lockern. Mitauf tretende Vakuumerscheinungen, Reaktionen jeder

Ex-plosion infolge innerer Verbrennungsarten, die auch feuerlos stattfinden können (siehe überstarke Gärprozesse in festgefügttem nassem Heu z.B.), vollenden das molekulare Zerstörungswerk, wodurch dann diejenigen Energieüberschüsse frei werden, die einen Flußlauf, der viele hundert Kubikmeter Wasser abführt, bis zur Badetemperatur erwärmen. - Ein Zeichen innerer Entladung, wodurch dieser Flußlauf nun für seine Umgebung zum Verhängnis wird. Insoferne als er dieser ihre letzten geosphärischen - das Grundwasser im labilen Gleichgewicht am Steilhang erhaltenden - Levitaionskräfte nimmt und ihr dafür wiederum verstärkte Zersetzungsenergien spendet.

So muß es dann kommen, was die Schweizer nunmehr erleben, die ersten-, alle irgendwie brauchbaren Wasserläufe zwecks Vollelektrifizierung durch hochtourige Druckturbinen sandten, zweitens alle Ufer, soweit es sich um hydraulische Fluß- und Wildbachverbauungen handelte in Zement legten, dadurch jede Fort- und Aufpflanzungskraft nicht nur im schon abfließenden, sondern auch im Grundwasser durch verkehrte Reaktivwirkungen zerstörten.

Diese letzteren lösten nun im Innern der steilen Schweizer Berge die vorerwähnten Elektrolysen, die dadurch verursachten Wasserzersetzung- und reaktiven Sprengwirkungen in sowohl mechanischer, wie physikalischer und schon energetischer Wirkungsform aus, wodurch es im Berginneren zu den sogenannten Bodengewittern, kleinerdbebenähnlichen Bodenerschütterungen und Strukturlockerungen kam, sodaß gewaltige Rutschungen entstanden, die lt. Pressemeldungen schon über 200.000 Hektar umfassen.

So kommen gewaltige Geschiebmassen in die Bach- und Flußläufe, die infolge der oben erwähnten Aufspaltungsprozesse und sonstiger Wirkungen ihre Trag- und Schleppkräfte fast zur Gänze verloren haben.

In diesen kranken Wasserläufen beginnt alles Getier, Fische, Krebse und die apathogene Bakterienwelt mangels der zum Leben notwendigen Aufbau- und Auftriebenergien abzusterben. Es beginnt ein allgemeines Verwesen dessen, das seine seelischen (astralen) Innenkräfte aufgeben mußte, weil die Särge barsten, die das Leben im statu nascendi bargen.

Und was aus diesen Energiestoffkonzentraten frei wurde, ging wiederum Verbindungen ein, und was daraus schließlich entstand, war das personifizierte Verderben.

Ein kleiner naturwidriger Bewegungsfehler irgendwo durch eine naturunrichtige, daher falsche Uferregulierungsart hat eine Kette von entwicklungsgefährlichen Reaktionen ausgelöst, deren Ursachen bisher niemand entdeckte, und daher das Übel ungehemmt seinen sich ständig verstärkenden Ablauf nahm.

Kein Wunder, weil sich in der Natur jeder gemachte Fehler tausend Mal verstärkt, ja sogar unaufhaltsam steigend oft erst nach Jahrzehnten oder gar Jahrhunderten in Erscheinung tritt. Ein tragischer Beweis, daß es keine Äquivalenz, keine konstante Energieerhaltung gibt, weil die sich ständig ändernde Materie der Rohstoff für höher oder niederwertige Energiearten ist, die der naturfremde Mensch sinnwidrig bewegt, weil er ihr den druck- und wärme-steigernden Bewegungs-ex-puls statt des implosiv wirkenden Im-pulses gibt, der nur durch ganz besonders konstruierte und legierte bewegliche Wandungen, die nicht Wehr, sondern die fortentwickelnde Schale, die Kelchform ist, die Materie rekreiert (erfrischt), und damit dem Giftigen den Vortritt gewährt. Denn Gleichbleibendes, Unveränderliches ist in diesem Perpetuum Natur unmöglich.

Den für die normale Fortentwicklung vielleicht schwersten Bewegungs- und Beschleunigungsfehler medialer Massen hat die moderne Wissenschaft auf dem Gebiete der Landwirtschaft durch die sowohl äußere, wie innere Formgebung ihrer Bodenbearbeitungs- und Landtegeräte gemacht. Insoferne, weil sie druck- und wärmesteigernde, stark reibende, zudem "eiserne" Pflug- und Eggenformen verwendet, die wie auch alle gebräuchlichen Erntemaschinen die Ursache der den Bodenkrebs auslösenden Blutfäule (Grundwasserzersetzung) sind. Außerdem Düngemittel benützt, die vorerwähnten Zerfalls- und Verwesungsprozeß unterstützen.

In diesem Kapitel werden die v.e. Mitursachen des schon in der ganzen Zivilisationswelt aufscheinenden, progressiven Wirtschaftsverfalls nur ganz allgemein und in leicht verständlicher Art aufgezeigt.

Im Besonderen wird dieser rein landwirtschaftliche Arbeitsfehler erst im Schlußwort, in dem der Zusammenhang aller gemachter Bewegungs- und Erregungs- (Temperaturerzeugungs-) fehler aufgeklärt wird, behandelt.

Jede Bewegung medialer Massen, die Temperaturen erzeugt, egal ob diese als Plus- oder Minusarten erscheinen, ist naturunrichtig, also entwicklungsschädlich und daher falsch.

Denn die Natur verwendet für den Aufbau aller organischen Innenbewegungen, die der Verflüssigung und fortentwicklungsnotwendigen Blut- und Säfteführung dienen, die "originelle", jenden Temperaturentstehung unterbindende Fließbewegungsart.

Darunter hat man ganz allgemein verständlich kon-zentrierende Druck- und ex-zentrierende Zugkräfte zu verstehen. Zum Unterschied der modernen Wissenschaft, die ausnahmslos und ausschließlich ex-zentrierende Druck- und kon-zentrierende Zugarten zu ihrer technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen Bewegungskrafterzeugung benützt.

Da es in der Natur unmittelbare Folgerungen, wie z.B. die hier schwer in die Waagschale fallenden Volumengveränderungen, die auf reaktiv wirkende Strukturunterschiede zurückzuführen sind, nicht gibt und jeder mittelbar vor sich gehende Aufbau- oder Rückentwicklungsvorgang biologischen, d.h. re-aktiven Wirkungskräften zuzuschreiben ist, muß jeder kleinste Bewegungs- oder Erregungs = Temperatur-erzeugungsfehler insoferne katastrophale Wirkungen auslösen, weil dadurch eine wahre Kette von Fehlreaktionen entsteht, deren Auswirkungen unermessbar sind, weil sich diese, siehe z.B. den bei jeder technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen Bewegungsart auftretenden Widerstand, im Quadrat zur naturwidrigen, daher gewaltmäßigen, quadrieren.

Schon dieser Umstand hätte die moderne - von uralten Bewegungsmethoden weit abweichende - Wissenschaft aufmerksam machen sollen, daß es äquivalente Umwandlungsprodukte oder eine konstante Energieerhaltung nicht gibt, sondern nur das genaue Gegenteil und damit entweder die progressive Auf- oder die progressive Rückentwicklung, auf keinen Fall also das gibt, was ein Robert Mayer oder ein Isaak Newton behauptet haben.

Nämlich nicht nur eine Gravitation, sondern auch eine Levitation, die aus der naturrichtig bewegten Masse in Gestalt aufbauender und auftriebender, also höherwertiger Energiestoffkonzentrationen entspringt.

Diese Edelstoffkonzentration kann niemals zustande kommen, wenn man mit exzentrierenden Druckkräften eine Materie entspannt und sodann die mechanisch und physikalisch gesprengten und atomisierten Energiestoffsärge (Trägerstoffmassen) durch eine erstarrende Kälteform konzentriert. Kurz gesagt, den Entwicklungsrhythmus an sich und in sich verkehrt. Damit macht die moderne Wissenschaft dasjenige unmöglich von dem jede normale Fortentwicklung abhängig ist. Nämlich die Steigerung der Massengeschwindigkeit bis zu Lichtgeschwindigkeit ( $E = m \cdot C^2$ ), ohne die jeder Energieaufbau unmöglich ist.

Eine direkte Massengeschwindigkeitssteigerung ist mit einer ex-zentrierenden Druck-steigerung von Haus aus unmöglich, weil so die bewegte Masse zerstreut und dadurch - z.B. das Medium Wasser bei Einwirkung von nach allen Seiten hin einwirkenden Zentrifugenzkräften, bei denen der Druck im Quadrat zur Radiusvergrößerung steigt (darunter hat man den Begriff: ex-zentrierende Drucksteigerung zu verstehen) - direkt in Luft verwandelt würde.

Da bekanntlich Luft eine ungefähr 2000-fache Volumensvergrößerung gegenüber der Energiestoffkonzentration Wasser besitzt, würde bei dieser direkten Umwandlung (bei bestehender Äquivalenz) ein Gegendruck aufleben, der unüberwindbar wäre.

Daraus folgert sich schon, daß entweder die Energieerzeugungsformel oder die derzeitige Durchführungsart naturunrichtig, also falsch ist.

Eine Massengeschwindigkeitssteigerung, die erste und wichtigste Energiestoffezeugung, kann nur durch eine von allen Seiten her einwirkende, also kon-zentrische Drucksteigerung möglich sein, bei der die achsiale Zug-geschwindigkeit im Quadrat zur Radiusverkleinerung wächst.

Diese kon-zentrierende Drucksteigerung muß aber überdies wärme-verzehrend, also spezifisch verdichtend wirken, um jede physikalische Volumensvergrößerung, die Umwandlung von Wasser in Luft z.B., zu verhüten.

Die zur Energieerzeugung notwendigen Voraussetzungen sind bei der technischen, hydraulischen und dynamischen, druck- und wärmesteigernden Bewegungsart nicht vorhanden. Aus diesem Grunde gibt es nur zwei Möglichkeiten und zwar:

a)es gibt zwei grundverschiedene Energiearten die unter grundsätzlich verschiedenen Entwicklungsvoraussetzungen entstehen, oder

b)es gibt keine Entwicklung, weil es keine druck- und wärmelose, die Leistungskraft progressiv steigernde Geschwindigkeitssteigerungsmöglichkeit infolge des vermeintlich gesetzlichen, daher unvermeidlichen, im Qadrat zu v.e. Geschwindigkeitsteigerung aufwachsenden Bewegungswiderstand gibt.

Die dritte Möglichkeit wäre, daß die moderne Wissenschaft - infolge Verwendung verkehrter Geschwindigkeitsvoraussetzungen - auch verkehrte Ziele, in diesem Fall also statt einer normalen Fortentwicklung das genaue Gegenteil, die progressive Rück-entwicklung, bzw. richtiger gesagt einen nahezu konstanten Entwicklungsstillstand in folge systematischer Ausschaltung der naturrichtigen Entwicklungsvoraussetzungen erreichte.

Und diese Voraussetzung ist die "originelle" Massenbeschleunigung mit genau verkehrten Mitteln, als diese sind, die die total verrückte Wissenschaft bisher verwendet hat.

Wie weit der Wahnsinn, mit mechanisch und physikalisch auf-spaltenden Druckkräften einen entwicklungsrichtigen (volumens- und struktur-verkleinernden, daher charakter-verbessernden) Fortentwicklungsgang zu erreichen, führt, zeigt der heutige, sowohl seiner äußeren, wie auch inneren Form nach naturunrichtig konstruierte (gebaute) und sinnwidrig legierte Pflug.

Je rascher dieser - sowohl seiner äußeren Form nach, wie auch in Bezug auf seiner Materialart - naturunrichtige Pflug durch den Boden geht, (Ochsentratt, Pferde und Motorzug) umso stärker muß der Reibungswiderstand infolge reaktiver Gegendrucksteigerungen werden, die bei allen elektrolytischen Dissoziationsvorgängen auftreten.

Elektrolyse bedeutet bekanntlich Zerlegung von Wasser in zwei Gase, die bei gegenseitiger Berührung Ex-plosionen (blitzartige Volumensvergrößerungen) mit zusätzlich re-aktiven Hitzesteigerungen auslösen.

Der gewollten Erdbewegung durch den heutigen Pflug wirken also drei gewaltige Widerstände entgegen.

a)die explosive Druckwirkung, die bekanntlich immer in Richtung des stärksten Druckwiderstandes, also in diesem Fall in Richtung Pflugschar (Mollenblech) wirkt,

b)die mechanische Volumensvergrößerung durch die eruptive Bodenerschütterung, das Bodengewitter (Kleinerdbeben mit unzähligen Herden) und

c)der Widerstand, der durch die v.e. Wasserersetzung (Bodenfeuchtigkeitsschwund) steigt, weil bekanntlich Wasser schmiert, solange es nicht chemisch rein, also fettlos ist.

Um nun zu verstehen, was man hier unter dem Gegenbegriff chemisch unreines, also fettstoffreiches Wasser zu verstehen hat, muß der Begriff "Düngung" kurz ventiliert werden. Denn nur so kann man die Edelstoffdüngung in Strahlenform verstehen, die nur mit Hilfe eines formvollendeten und naturrichtig legierten, leichtgängigen und fast reibungslos durch den negativ gespannten, äußerst druckempfindlichen Nährboden gehenden Biopflugs möglich ist.

Der wichtigste im Medium Wasser (Blut der Erde) exakt nicht meßbare, sondern nur mittelbar feststellbare Baustoff ist eine allotrope (mehrförmige), negativ gespannte Energieform, die in allotropen, physisch wahrnehmbaren Sauerstoff- und Trägerstoffformen gebunden ist.

Dieser Urstoff wird frei und als elementare Zersetzungsenergie wirksam, wenn man die Materie Wasser (die Bodenfeuchtigkeit) mit dem druck- und wärmesteigernden Bodenpflug bewegt. Und je rascher dieser Pflug geht, umso umfangreicher wird die nach allen Seiten hin ausstrahlende Zersetzungsenergie dieses Feinststoffausfalles in schon Strahlenform, die alles durchdringt und in den umliegenden Grundwassermassen röntgenartige Aufspaltungsvorgänge (niederwertige Dissoziationen) auslöst, deren Assoziationsprodukte vielfach vermehrte und intensiviertere Reaktionsgebilde, verstärkte Zersetzungsenergien sind, die ihren Aktionsradius pilzartig wie explodierende Atombomben vergrößern.

Pflügt man hingegen den Nährboden mit dem druck- und wärmelosen, formvollendeten und naturrichtig legierten Biopflug, dann wird die genau gegenteilig wirkende Energieart schon metaphysischer, daher physisch ihrer ungewöhnlichen inneren und äußerlichen Geschwindigkeit wegen unwahrnehmbarer Gestalt frei, die hier die höherwertige genannt wird. Und je rascher dieser leichtgängige, weil fast reibungslos durch den Boden gehende Biopflug geführt wird, umso weiter ausstrahlende Edelstoffkonzentrationen durchdringen die umliegenden Grundwassermassen, die in sich die sogenannten Vitaminmoleküle (Edelstoffkonzentrate) Aufbau- und Auftriebsenergie im statu nascendi tragen.

Die biologische Folge dieses atomaren Feinststoffbeschusses ist eine re-aktive Schwingungssteigerung infolge Freiwerdens der dort eingesparten (gebundenen) Edelenergieanwarter, die sich in diesem Fall in selbstherrlich ausstrahlende Edelenergiestoffkonzentrate verwandeln. Weitum alles bestrahlen und mit immer größer werdendem Aktionsradius die immer wirkungsvoller werdenden Impllosionen (Edelstoffausgeburten) verursachen.

Der Grundbaustoff dieser relativ höchstwertigen Edelenergiekonzentrate ist naturrichtig vergärtes Fett. Irdische Lebensüberreste, die nicht, wie ein weitverbreiteter Irrglaube lehrt, zu Staub und Asche zerfallen, sondern je nach ihrer Bewegungsart im Schoße der Erde in metaphysische - also physisch unwahrnehmbare - Atomenergiearten verwandelt werden.

Sodann, wie es in altgermanischen Glaubensarten so schön hieß, als gute oder als böse Geister das Entwicklungsältere, die artähnliche Nachkommenschaft beeinflussen - "originell" be-wegen und dadurch be- oder ent-leben.

Niemand geringerer als Christus selbst hat die naturrichtige Umwandlung von Wasser in Wein und Brot in Geist nur mit formvollendeten Ur-formen (extremen Eiformen bestimmter Legierungsart) gelehrt und inmitten seiner - wahrhaftig die Welt bewegenden - Bewegungslehre, die der Vergeistigung des Ebenbild Gottes dient, gestellt.

Der edle Zweck dieser Bewegungslehre war, die Fort- und Aufpflanzung aller wie immer heißenden Bodenfrüchte, die corpuskulare Vermehrung und die qualitative Verbesserung mit demjenigen zu steigern, was vor-übergehend vergangen war, um sich zu metaphysischen Edelstoffenergien zu verwandeln. Sich sodann als relativ Höchstentwickeltes mit dem Irdischen zu vereinen und dieses originell - körperlich und geistig zu heben. Das ist oder wäre der wahre Zweck und Sinn dieses einmaligen und einzigartigen Lebens, das wunderschöne Märchen, das - nach Shakespeare - heute Irrsinnige infolge einer tragischen Verirrung der modernen Wissenschaft als Qual ohne Ende erleben.

Es hat oder hätte keinerlei Zweck, ausgesprochene Narren oder betrogenen Betrüger eines Besseren belehren zu wollen. Denn diese Armen im Geiste verdanken doch dieser progressiven Not- und Elendsteigerung ihr trauriges Dasein, als Berater denen zu dienen, die sie in dieses entsetzliche Dasein drückten.

Hier gibt es nur eines: Das ist weniger studieren oder spekulieren, sondern es einfach anders, d.h. genau verkehrt probieren. In wenigen Monaten wird der formvollendete und naturrichtig legierte - re-aktive Fett-stoffkonzentrate in Strahlenart urzeugende, druck- und wärmelose arbeitende - Biopflug durch den negativ gespannten, daher äußerst druckempfindlichen Nährboden gehen und dann hat über Jahresfrist jede Not und damit jede Organisation der Not-

leidenden von selbst ein natürliches Ende, weil der Bodenüberfluß wieder da ist, der sich ins Gegenteil verwandeln mußte, weil die moderne Wissenschaft das Medium Blut der Erde, den edelsten Fettstoffträger, aus dem die uns tragenden und schleppenden, be- und erleuchtenden und feuerlos temperatierenden Edelstoffenergien entstehen, verkehrt bewegte.

Das Wasser ist das Blut der Erde. - Die physische Erstgeburt, die das Astrale, das Ur-produkt, die einzige Realität beherbergt, die es originell auf die höchsten Bergspitzen hebt, von denen dann das zurückfließt, das den Rückweg ins Nirwana noch nicht mitmachen konnte, um sich auf seinem Abweg mit Hilfe der originellen, sich um seine eigene Achse ein-spulende Bewegungsart zu vermehren, zu veredeln und sodann seinen aufbauenden und auftreibenden Atomenergieüberschuß in den umliegenden Friedhof vergangener Vegetation zu senden, um das des naturrechtigen Bewegungsanstoßes Harrende zu neuem Leben aufzuwecken.

Und diesem edlen - tausendfachen Segen auf Fluren und Feldern verteilenden - Grundstoffträger des universellen Lebens rückt der von der modernen Agrarwissenschaft irregeleitete Bauer mit dem Gerät zu Leibe, das der Lebenskraft ihr Dasein verleidet. - Und so kam es und mußte es kommen, daß der von allen guten Geistern verlassene Bauer vor seiner von Gott verdamnten Scholle steht, weil er das zerstörte, in dem Gott im statu nascendi steckt.

Kleine Ursachen haben das Sterben des Hochwaldes, vor allem seiner Edelholzarten ausgelöst.

Unscheinbare Bewegungsfehler haben dem Herzblut des Waldes, dem mit munterem Gemurmel, frisch und fröhlich über belebende Bewegungswiderstände hüpfenden, mit jedem Grashalm kosenden Quellbach durch hydraulische, druck- und wärmesteigernde Regulierungsarten zuerst seine Fort- und Aufpflanzungsfähigkeit geraubt. - Seinem Innenleben, Fischen, Krebsen und apathogenen Bakterienleben damit die Lebensvoraussetzungen genommen. - Diese in sich und an sich kranken Wasserläufe wurden nun durch hochtourige Zentrifugenmaschinen gepeitscht, die es als Wasserleiche verläßt. - In dieser leeren, jeden Schmutz und Dreck gierig anziehenden Wassermasse, die in sich und an sich entartet, nur mehr dem Verderben dient, beginnt das pathogene Bakterienleben zu pulsen und rechts und links diesen Kloaken beginnt auf Fluren und Feldern ein langsames aber stetes und unaufhaltsames Zugrundegehen, weil es doch an naturrechtig fließenden Edelstoffkonzentraten in Strahlenform - Edeldünger höchster Entwicklungsart - fehlt.

Selbst die wenigen Naturdünger und die in diesem steckenden Fettstoffüberreste können das v.e. Verderben nicht mehr aufhalten, weil der irregeleitete Landwirt mit seinem Eisenpflug in immer rascher werdendem Tempo durch seine kranken und wasserlosen Felder fährt.

Dazu auch noch Hochofenschlacken in feinst dosiertem Zustand streut, denen das Hochofenfeuer die letzten ätherischen Öle raubte, die in jedem wie immer heißenden Material als die v.e. allotropen Inhaltswerte stecken, deren Aufbau- und Auftriebkraft schon verloren geht, wenn ein Eggenzahn drückend und re-aktive Wärmearten auslösend naturwidrig durch den Boden gezogen wird.

In diesem geosphärischen Krankenbett wirkt jedes Kunstdüngerstäubchen, das fettstofflos vom atmosphärischen Niederschlag in den Boden gewaschen wird, als ein gefährlicher Anzugmagnet für die letzten Überreste an latenten Aufbau- und Auftriebwerten, die im Grundwasser stecken und der- spezifisch schweren und dichten Wassermasse das Pulsen (energetische Atmen) und damit den labilen Gleichgewichtszustand gestatten.

Scheinfruchtgebilde mit großer Struktur sind eine kurz vorübergehende Krankheitserscheinung, die den Keim des Zerfalles in sich tragend diesen auf höhere Organismen übertragen. - Ein oft harmloser Bewegungs- oder innerer Erregungsanstoß genügt, um eine Energieart aufleben zu lassen, die die atomare Sprengkraft in sich tragend die gefährlichen Strukturlockerungen hinterläßt, wenn diese gefährliche Energieart nach allen Seiten hin ausstrahlend ihren Entwicklungsort verläßt.

Im sogenannten Kunstdünger, nicht zu verwechseln mit dem einstigen Höhlendünger, in dem alles vorhanden ist, was die Pflanze zu ihrem Wiederaufbau braucht, fehlt das Lebenswichtigste, das Fett. Dieses hat das Hochofenfeuer verzehrt und daher holt sich das Entleerte mit derselben, resp. gesteigerten Kraft das Geraubte aus dem Fettdepot des Grundwassers zurück, das absinken muß, wenn das Aufhebende, das das Wasser am Steilhang Erhaltende fehlt.

... wird fortgesetzt ...

[www.earthwind-netz.de](http://www.earthwind-netz.de)



# FREIE-ENERGIE-MASCHINEN

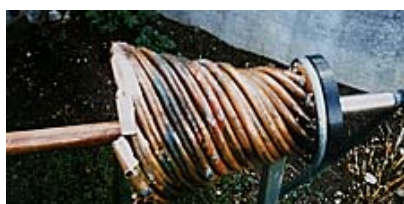


Repulsine, Freie-Energie-Maschine (auch "fliegende Untertasse" genannt)



Die aus Kupfer gefertigte Wellenscheibe (auch Doppelmembran genannt), wichtigstes Bestandteil der Repulsine (freie Energie-Maschine)

Kupfer  
Aufbau  
Später  
Schau  
seiner  
verwendet  
wurde  
Altau





Detailansicht der Austrittsdüse des Heimkraftwerks



Harald Kautz-Vella:

# Auf dem Weg zu einer neuen Energietechnologie

Alle Rechte bei:

Harald Kautz-Vella  
Danziger Str. 143  
10407 Berlin

Berlin, den 28.08.2002

## 1. Wirbelsysteme - ein physikalischer Sonderfall

Viele Wirbelsysteme stellen die Wissenschaft vor Rätsel. Diese Arbeit ist speziell hydrodynamischen Systemen gewidmet. Dort werden Phänomene beobachtet, die man in der herkömmlichen Schreibweise als negative Viskosität bezeichnet. Prof. Victor P. Starr hat eine Vielzahl solcher Phänomene in dem Buch „Physics of Negative Viscosity Phenomena“<sup>1</sup> zusammengefasst, das Ende der 70er Jahre für einiges Aufsehen gesorgt hat. Aber in der Theoriebildung zu diesen Phänomenen macht es Sinn, Wirbelsysteme aller Größenordnungen und in verschiedenen Medien zu betrachten, von Prozessen im Atomkern, so man sie in ihren Welleneigenschaften erfasst, über Beobachtungen in Plasmen, in der Hydrodynamik bis hin zu den Bewegungsabläufen in Galaxien. Ich möchte zunächst in dieser breiter angelegten Sichtweise versuchen, einen Überblick über die möglichen Beschreibungsansätze zu geben, die bisher zu Wirbelsystemen gemacht worden sind. Dann wird es hoffentlich möglich sein, genauere Modelle für die anvisierten hydrodynamischen Systeme zu finden. Ziel dieser Arbeit ist die Entwicklung einer energietechnischen Nutzung dieser Phänomene.

---

<sup>1</sup> Victor Starr: Physics of negative Viscosity Phenomena, 1969

## 1.1. Beobachtungen in der Natur

In der Natur kommen zwei interessante Wirbelformen vor:

- a) Wirbel endlicher Länge, wie z.B. bei Tornados (Luft), bei Blitzen (Plasma) oder in Tiefseetornados (Wasser). Diese Wirbel können während ihrer Entstehung drei Phasen durchlaufen: Die Ausbildung eines Potenzialwirbels durch äußere Einflüsse, eine Verdichtung der Wirbellinien um den Kern herum, die bei hydrodynamischen Systemen mit einer Reduktion der Reibungsverluste einher geht, und die Ausbildung einer stabilen Endform mit einer inneren Wirbelschicht, die auch als Vazsonyi-Schicht bezeichnet wird. Der Potenzialwirbel saugt spiralförmig Materie auf und spuckt sie durch den Wirbelkern wieder aus.

Das Wirbelgeschehen hat fraktale Qualitäten. Die oberste Skala ist der Wirbel selber. Die zweite Skala dieser Struktur bildet sich zunächst als Oszillation senkrecht zur allgemeinen Fließbewegung aus, so dass der Wirbel aussieht, als sei ein gewendertes Seil spiralförmig in den Wirbel hineingewickelt. Ursache für die Ausbildung der zweiten Skala sind Korioliskräfte, da die Achse der Unterwirbel durch die Rotation des Gesamtsystems kontinuierlich gedreht wird. Höhere Skalen entstehen nach dem selben Mechanismus, bilden aber komplexere Strukturen aus, da sich hier die Korioliskräfte aus zwei unabhängigen Metasystemen addieren. Insgesamt sind über ein Dutzend verschiedene stabile fraktale Wirbelmuster bekannt, die sich je nach den Rahmenbedingungen und der Genese des Systems einstellen. Die innerste Schicht des Wirbelgeschehens, die Vazsonyi-Schicht, die sich im Endstadium aus Drehimpulserhaltungsgründen ausbildet, sieht aus wie ein leicht verdrilltes Walzenlager, wobei sich die einzelnen Walzen mit erheblichen Geschwindigkeiten um sich selbst und um die Mittelachse des Wirbels rotieren. Im inneren von Tornados ist sie gut sichtbar. Bezüglich der Selbstähnlichkeit innerhalb der Struktur sind die Vazsonyi-Walzen ein Sonderfall, da sie im Vergleich zu den anderen Skalen relativ eigenständige Systeme mit einer überdurchschnittlich großen Ähnlichkeit zum Hauptwirbel sind.

Aber auch jenseits der makroskopischen Naturphänomene auf der Erde spielen Wirbel eine Rolle: Einige Größenordnungen höher sind es die

Galaxien. Klar zu erkennen ist der Potenzialwirbel. Der Wirbelkern erscheint uns nur als gleißender Sternenhaufen, in deren Mittelpunkt ein Schwarzes Loch vermutet wird; und als Jet, der längs der Rotationsachse der Galaxie aus dem Zentrum wieder hinausgeschleudert wird. Einige Größenordnungen tiefer finden wir z. B. elektrische Potenzialwirbel, wie sie durch Konstantin Meyl mathematisch postuliert und beschrieben worden sind.

- b) Die zweite Kategorie sind die Wirbelringe, die sich im Prinzip als ringförmig in sich geschlossenen Wirbel beschreiben lassen. Man kennt sie als Raucher-Ringe, die sich einmal in die Luft geblasen über zig Meter stabil und linear durch den Raum bewegen können. Aber auch in der Quantenphysik findet man solche Systeme als wellenbasierte Modelle für Elementarteilchen. Wie man am Raucher-Ring sehen kann, kommen sie im Gegensatz zum Wirbel mit linearer Achse ohne den Austausch von Materie mit der Umgebung aus und sind daher auch weniger anfällig für Störungen von Außen.

Generell kann man sagen, dass es Wirbelsysteme unterschiedlicher Stabilität gibt. Begreift man die Elementarteilchen in ihren Welleneigenschaften als Wirbelsysteme, so hat man es hier teilweise mit extrem stabilen Strukturen zu tun. Und auch als Galaxie hat diese Wirbelform eine beachtliche Lebensdauer.

Aber auch auf der Erde kann man Strukturen besonderer Stabilität beobachten: es gibt Hurrikane, Tornados, Elektronenwirbel in Blitzkanälen. Der Durchmesser der auf der Erde auftretenden Wirbel ist wie der von Elementarteilchen und Galaxien streng begrenzt: Ein Hurrikan hat immer um die 30 km Durchmesser, ein Tornado hat immer ca. 50 Meter, ein Blitzkanal zwischen 1,25 und 5 cm. Dazwischen entstehen keine stabilen Strukturen. Trägt man diese Werte auf logarithmischen (ln) Skalen auf, so stellt man fest, dass „stabile“ Größen in regelmäßigen Abständen entstehen. Dieser Umstand ist ausführlich durch die „Global-Scaling-Theorie“ von Hartmut Müller beschrieben worden.

Die „Stabilität“ der Wirbel, die man auf der Erde beobachten kann, manifestiert sich in der Fähigkeit zur Selbstorganisation von Materie. Hierbei handelt es sich wie schon beschrieben um die Ausbildung von fraktalen Turbulenzstrukturen, die die von dem Potenzialwirbel angesaugte Materie in einer Form ordnen, dass ein stabiler Wirbelkern entsteht und im weiteren Verlauf die Materie beim Eintritt in den

Wirbelkern die dort ausgebildete Struktur erhält. Stabile Wirbel können große Mengen kinetischer Energie akkumulieren.

## 1.2. Gängige Erklärungsmodelle

Für die Herkunft der akkumulierten Energie gibt es zwei gängige Erklärungsmodelle:

1. Man erklärt die Hauptsätze der Thermodynamik für unumstößlich und sucht eine hydrodynamische, elektrodynamische oder magnetohydrodynamische (MHD) Erklärung für die Herkunft der Energie: meist werden atmosphärische Spannungen herangezogen, beim Blitz sowieso, aber auch beim Tornado gibt es Modelle, nach denen eine kontinuierliche Entladung der Atmosphäre den Tornado wie einen Elektromotor antreibt. Die beobachtete Abkühlung der Wirbelkerne (in Gasen) wird hier durch adiabatische Expansion erklärt.
2. Man geht davon aus, dass die im Wirbel eintretende Ordnungsbildung, also die Entstehung fraktaler Turbulenzstrukturen, zu einer Wechselwirkung führt zwischen dem was wir Wärme und dem was wir Bewegung nennen. Eine Transformation von der (ungeordneten) thermischen Energie in (gerichtete) kinetische Energie ist unter der Bedingung einer molekularen, dynamischen Ordnung prinzipiell denkbar – würde aber wegen der spontanen Umwandlung von Energie skalarer Natur in Energie vektorieller Natur das mathematische Modell, das der Thermodynamik zugrunde liegt, sprengen und den 2. Hauptsatz der Thermodynamik außer Kraft setzen. Die beobachtete Abkühlung bei gleichzeitiger Selbstbeschleunigung ist in diesem Modell ausschließlich Folge der Umwandlung von thermischer in kinetische Energie. Dieses Modell steht – zumindest für Wirbel mit linearer Achse - theoretisch nur deshalb nicht wirklich im Widerspruch zu den Hauptsätzen der Thermodynamik, weil es sich um ein thermodynamisch offenes System handelt, für das die Hauptsätze per Definition ohnehin nicht gelten.

Man könnte sich an dieser Stelle zufrieden geben. Allerdings beschränken sich diese Erklärungsmodelle auf die Beobachtung einiger hydrodynamischer Phänomene.

Weder die Bewegung von Galaxien wäre damit hinreichend erklärt (die Randbereiche

drehen schneller als die zur Zeit anerkannten Rechenmodelle erlauben), noch der Grund für die immense Stabilität von Elementarteilchen. Auch die Frage, warum stabile Wirbelsysteme nur in bestimmten Größenordnungen entstehen, die auf der besagten logarithmischen Skala in regelmäßigen Abständen angeordnet sind, bleibt unbeantwortet.

### 1.3. Aktuelle Erklärungsansätze

Hydrodynamische Wirbelsysteme sind wie gesagt fraktale Strukturen. Damit sich diese fraktalen Muster ausbilden können, braucht man einen Energietransfer zwischen den Skalen des Systems. Wirbel bewerkstelligen dies auf unterschiedlichste Weise, im einfachsten Fall durch Ausgleichsbewegungen auf adiabatische Ungleichgewichte im Schwere- oder Zentrifugalfeld, diese spontan entstehenden Bewegungen verstärken und stabilisieren sich durch auftretende Korioliskräfte. Bei schnelleren und größeren Systemen findet ein Energieaustausch aber auch durch akustische und elektromagnetische Resonanzphänomene statt. Teile des Wirbels erzeugen Schwingungen, andere Teile geraten in Resonanz und absorbieren Teile der abgestrahlten Energie. Da Resonanz nicht nur bei identischen Frequenzen, sondern auch über harmonische Reihen entsteht, ist in Wirbelsystemen der Übertrag von Energie zwischen den Skalen durch akustische und/oder elektromagnetische Wellen möglich.

Mit der Möglichkeit durch Resonanz akustischen und/oder elektromagnetischen Wellen Energie zu entziehen erschließt sich für Wirbel eine Reihe von neuen Energiequellen. Naheliegend insbesondere im Hinblick auf den Tornado sind die bekannten niederfrequenten atmosphärischen Schwingungen: oszillierende Luftbewegungen, die ab einer bestimmten Höhe eine Rolle spielen (dieser Ansatz wird z.B. von Ivgueni Sorokodoum aus Moskau vertreten), und die Schumann-Frequenz: eine zwischen der Ionosphäre und der Erdoberfläche stehende elektromagnetische Welle von 7,83 Hz. Eine Wechselwirkung zwischen diesen Schwingungen und dem Wirbelgeschehen in der Atmosphäre ist denkbar und könnte auch das Auftreten bestimmter Resonanz-Größen erklären.

Nicht erklären würde dieser Ansatz die globale Skalierung von Wirbeln, die a. auch außerhalb der Erdatmosphäre und ihren Schwingungen gilt und b. wie von Hartmut Müller gezeigt auf einer logarithmischen Einteilung basiert und nicht auf harmonischen Reihen, die eine regelmäßige Verteilung gemäß des Logarithmus zur Basis 2, 3, 4, ... , n implizieren würde. Es ist somit davon auszugehen, dass es eine weitere Energiequelle gibt, die sich auf das Wirbelgeschehen auswirkt – bzw. eine Feldgröße, die einen Energieaustausch zwischen den Skalen selbstähnlicher Strukturen ermöglicht. Findet man einen solchen Übertragungsmechanismus, wäre es denkbar, Selbstbeschleunigung in Tornados über die Selbstähnlichkeit zu Galaxien oder aber auch Schwingungsformen in Elementarteilchen zu erklären, oder – denkt man das System bis hinunter auf die niedrigsten Skalen - als Resonanz auf Schwingungen im Quantenvakuum.

Es gibt meines Wissens sechs Forschungsrichtungen bzw. Theorien, die hier Erklärungsansätze bieten:

1. Konstantin Meyl propagiert die Annahme eines Skalarfeldes, also einer vierten Feldgröße neben Elektromagnetismus und Gravitation, die zu einer einheitlichen Feldtheorie führt. Alle vier Felder stehen somit in streng definiertem Zusammenhang miteinander. Er geht insofern konform mit der Schulphysik, als dass sich durch sinnvolle Vereinfachungen die Hauptsätze der Thermodynamik aus seinen mathematischen Modellen ableiten lassen. Dem Skalarfeld sind in diesem Kontext Fähigkeiten zugeordnet, die in dem Wirbelgeschehen eine Rolle spielen könnten. Es wird oft in Verbindung mit Neutrinos gebracht, die als Teilchen eine Manifestation dieses Feldes sein könnten. Energetische Effekte werden daher oft als Neutrinokollektion gelesen.
2. Die umfangreichen Forschung zur Nullpunktenergie. Hier wird dem Quantenvakuum eine hohe Energiedichte zugemessen, die unter bestimmten Konditionen in Wechselwirkung mit Materie treten kann. Es wird überwiegend mit Plasmen und mit Supraleitung experimentiert, die wegen der hohen Viskosität der bewegten Teilchenströme eine deutliche Wechselwirkung zwischen Materie und Nullpunktfeldern aufweisen.
3. Eine erste Rechengrundlage für die beobachteten Phänomene könnten neueste Forschungen zur Wechselwirkung zwischen Elektromagnetismus und



Gravitation liefern, wie sie z.B. von Jerry E. Bayles vorgestellt wurden. Auch sie basieren wie bei Konstantin Meyl auf einer einheitlichen Feldtheorie, beziehen aber auch eine mögliche Wechselwirkung zwischen elektromagnetischen und akustischen Wellen ein.

4. Die Global-Scaling-Theorie von Hartmut Müller. Sie basiert auf Untersuchungen über die Häufigkeitsverteilung von stabilen Formen. Untersucht wurden nicht nur metrische Größen, sondern auch Gewichte und Zeiteinheiten bzw. Frequenzen. Auf der Basis dieser umfangreichen Datenmengen postuliert die Global-Scaling-Theorie mathematische Zahlenräume, die die beobachteten Gesetzmäßigkeiten zunächst einmal korrekt beschreiben. Grundlage ist die logarithmische ( $\ln$ ) Zahlengrade. Auf dieser häufen sich die ausgewerteten Größen in regelmäßigen Abständen, während andere Intervalle völlig leer bleiben. Auf diese Zahlengrade wird das mathematische Modell der schwingenden Perlenschnur angewendet, wobei Gravitation in diesem Modell mit dem Bestreben von Materie erklärt wird, sich an den Schwingungsknoten der Perlenschnur zu konzentrieren. Die aus diesem Modell resultierende mathematische Beschreibung hat Qualitäten einer echten Dimension. Sie arbeitet mit rekursiven Kettenbrüchen, bringt also fraktale Muster hervor. Die gesamte Vielfalt der ausgewerteten Naturphänomene lässt sich nach Hartmut Müller mit drei sich überlagernden Häufigkeitsverteilungen beschreiben, die um den Wert von  $\ln(6)$  bzw.  $\ln(1/6)$  gegeneinander verschoben sind. Bei Systemen, die knapp ober oder knapp unterhalb der Resonanzgrößen liegen, soll nach der Global-Scaling-Theorie ein Energieübertrag stattfinden, der zu over-unity-effekten führen kann.
5. Der Atomic-Vortex-Theorie von Derek Bond. Sie formuliert ebenfalls die These, dass es einen Energieaustausch zwischen Wirbelsystemen verschiedener Größenordnungen gibt. Sie ist auf quantenmechanische Modelle basiert und versteht unser Universum als einen schmalen Frequenzbereich aus einem wesentlich umfangreicheren Spektrum an energetischen Schwingungen. Wirbelsysteme sollen Energie aus höherschwingenden Frequenzbereichen, die normalerweise mit unserer Realität nicht wechselwirken würden, herunterspannen.
6. TGD (topological geometrodynamics) ist eine neue physikalische Theorie, die einen 8-Dimensionalen Raum postuliert. Unsere Realität kann im einfachsten

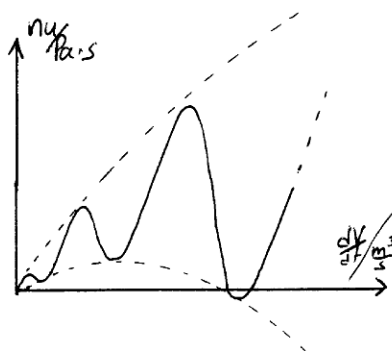
Fall als „space-time-sheet“ verstanden werden, also eine vierdimensionale Folie aus dem 8-dimensionalen Raum. Unerklärliche energetische Effekte werden in diesem Modell als Wechselwirkungen zwischen verschiedenen „space-time-sheets“ verstanden.

Ich werde später noch näher auf die Qualitäten der soeben angerissenen Modelle und Theorien eingehen. Zunächst möchte ich aber einige Experimente vorstellen, um einen anschaulicheren Zugriff auf die Materie zu ermöglichen.

## 2. Beobachtungen im Experiment

### 2.1. Victor Schaubergers Wirbelrohr

Victor Schaubberger gilt als der Pionier der Wirbelforschung. Der österreichische Wasserwirt kam durch jahrelange Beobachtung von Wasserbewegungen in der Natur zu dem Schluss, dass spiralförmige Wasserwirbel gegen die allgemeine Betrachtungsweise keine Entropie vernichten, sondern sie erhöhen - was zu einer spontanen Selbstbeschleunigung der Wirbel führt. Zum Nachweis dieser These konstruierte er ein Wirbelrohr, das später zum Hauptbaustein seines „Heimkraftwerkes“ werden sollte. Dieses Rohr sah aus wie ein doppelt gewendelttes Widderhorn. In einem Versuch ließ er das Wasser durch die große Öffnung aus einem höher gelegenen Reservoir in dieses Rohr einfließen. Das Wasser formte in dem Rohr einen Wirbel und schoss am unteren „dünnen“ Ende heraus. Ein Vergleich der Austrittsgeschwindigkeit bzw. der durch sie erzeugten Drucksäule mit der Höhe des Reservoirs bei verschiedenen Durchflussgeschwindigkeiten ergab folgende Graphik.



**ABB 4: Ergebnis der Versuche von Victor Schaubberger zur Viskosität in Wirbelrohren.**

Der Resonanzpunkt, der unterhalb der x-Achse liegt, zeigt einen solchen Zustand negativer Viskosität. Die Versuchsergebnisse und Apparate Victor Schaubergers wurde während des zweiten Weltkrieges teils von den Deutschen, teils von den Amerikanern vernichtet, beschlagnahmt oder zum Staatsgeheimnis erklärt, so dass seine Versuche bis heute von keinem unabhängigen Institut nachvollzogen werden konnten.

## 2.2. Wasserwirbel bei DM-Tor

Dr. Alexey Savchenko von DM TOR in Moskau hat versucht, Apparate zur thermischen Separation in Gasen (Vortex-Gas-Pipes) auf Fluide zu übertragen<sup>2</sup>. In den Vortex-Gas-Pipes wird tangential ein Gas in einen langen Zylinder eingeblasen. In den Zylinder entsteht ein Wirbel. Der Auslaß erfolgt durch zwei relativ dünne Rohre, eines zapft aus dem Zentrum des Wirbels, das andere Rohr aus dem Randbereich. Lässt man z.B. Luft mit einer Temperatur von 20 °C einströmen, so erhält man aus dem Kern des Wirbels Temperaturen von – 40 °C und aus dem Randbereich 100 °C. Dieser Umstand wird bei Gasen derzeit auf adiabatische Expansion zurückgeführt – hervorgerufen durch das durch Zentripetalkräfte auftretende Druckgefälle. Die Energiebilanz steht hier in keinem Widerspruch mit den Hauptsätzen der Thermodynamik.

Bei ähnlichen Geometrien, nur mit Wasser statt Luft, hat die Apparatur von Dr. Alexey Savchenko genau wie die Gas-Vortex-Pipe thermisch separiert. Dies erscheint zunächst verwunderlich, da Wasser relativ inkompressibel ist und somit adiabatische Expansion als Ursache ausscheidet. Darüber hinaus wurde zusätzlich thermische Energie aus einer unbekanntenen Quelle akkumuliert; und zwar gemessen an der Leistungsaufnahme der Pumpe (der einzigen Energiequelle im System) mit einem Wirkungsgrad, der unmittelbar nach Inbetriebnahme zwischen 120 und 200% oszillierte. Der Wert unterlag beim weiteren Betrieb der Apparatur einer sinusförmigen zeitlichen Schwankung mit einer Periodenlänge von 1 Stunde und pendelte sich nach etwa zehn Perioden bei 160% ein.

## 2.3. Biefeld-Brown-Effekt

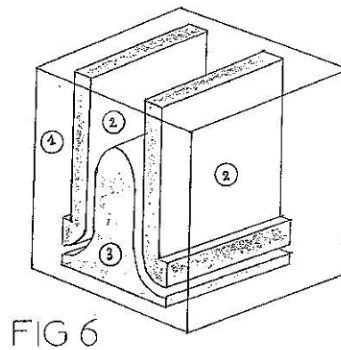
Der Biefeld-Brown-Effekt<sup>3</sup> besagt, dass geladene Kondensatorplatten eine Beschleunigung in Richtung der positiv geladenen Platte erfahren. Der Effekt wurde in den 60er Jahren entdeckt. Der Effekt verstärkt sich durch asymmetrische

---

<sup>2</sup> International Conference: Prospects for Conservation and Development of Unitary Planetary Civilisation. Moskau May 26-31, 2002. Report: Alexey Sevchenko/DM-TOR.

<sup>3</sup> 7. Alexandre Szames, *L'Effet Biefeld Brown*, vol. 1, 1998.

Plattenanordnungen, die gekrümmte oder gefächerte Feldlinien erzeugen. Dieser Effekt wurde ausgiebig von Jean Claude Lafforgue untersucht – sowohl in bezug auf echte Kondensatoren, als auch in dem Patent FR2651388<sup>4</sup> in bezug auf dipolare Flüssigkeiten unter dem Einfluss elektrischer Felder in bestimmten Geometrien.



**ABB 2: Auszug aus der Patentschrift FR2651388 - Isolated systems self-propelled by electrostatic forces von Jean Claude Lafforgue**

2 und 3 sind jeweils die Kondensatorplatten, 1 ist eine dipolare Flüssigkeit, die sie umströmt. Die Feldlinien des sich aufbauenden elektrischen Feldes sind gekrümmt. Als Folge des Biefeld-Brown-Effekts erfahren die einzelnen Dipole, die sich nach den elektrischen Feldlinien ausrichten, eine Kraft, die in der Resultierenden ein Durchströmen der Kondensatorplatten und wegen der begrenzten Durchflussmenge zu einer Beschleunigung der Apparatur nach unten führen<sup>5</sup>.

Der Biefeld-Brown-Effekt geht nach der herrschenden Meinung auf eine statistisch gerichtete Neutrinokollektion durch Elektronen zurück. Der Biefeld-Brown-Effekt unterliegt nach Untersuchungen von T. T. Brown zeitlich periodischen Schwankungen, die sich an kosmischen Prozessen orientieren, Tagen, Jahreszeiten<sup>6</sup>.

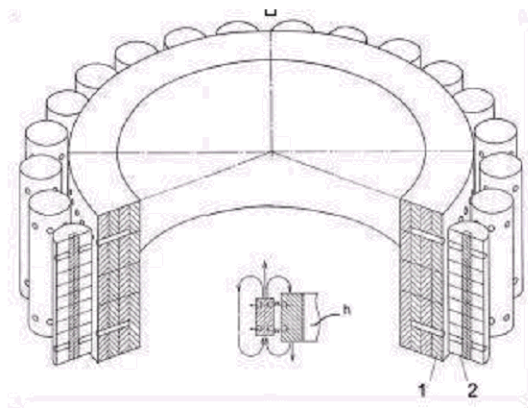
<sup>4</sup> Patentschrift und mathematisch-physikalische Grundlagen zur Wirkung des Biefeld-Brown-Effektes auf dipolare Flüssigkeiten finden Sie in der Patentschrift unter: <http://www.terra.es/personal7/dafero4u/FR2651388/FR2651388.htm>

<sup>5</sup> In Aktion zu sehen unter: <http://jnaudin.free.fr/lfpt/index.html>

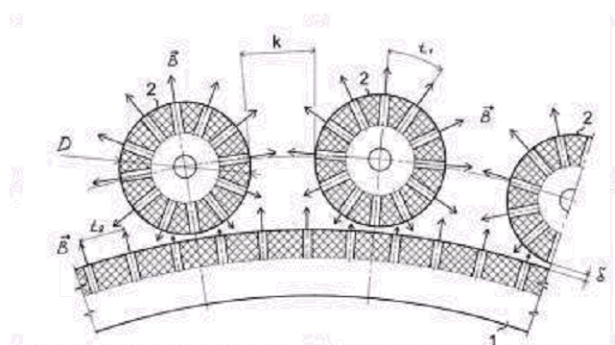
<sup>6</sup> Report: Russ Anderson: A Review of Modern (1988-2000) Biefeld-Brown Effect Replication Experiments. Antigravity conference 2000 in Reno, NV.

## 2.4. Der Searl-Generator

Der Searl-Generator geht auf den Britischen Forscher John R.R. Searl zurück. Untersuchungen am dynamischen Verhalten von Permanentmagneten aus den Jahren 1946 bis 1952 führten zur Erfindung des Searl-Generators. Nach den damaligen Forschungsberichten war es John Searl gelungen, mit Hilfe um einen Kern herum rotierender homopolarer Permanentmagneten eine völlig neuartige Energiequelle anzuzapfen. Da die Herstellung der dazu benötigten Magneten eine komplizierte und nicht immer erfolgreiche Prozedur war, und die Originalunterlagen bei einem Brand in dem Labor vernichtet wurden, konnte der Searl-Generator erst kürzlich auf der Grundlagen von mündlichen Aussagen von John Searl von Godin und Roschin in Moskau erfolgreich nachgebaut und betrieben<sup>7</sup> werden.



**ABB 6: Darstellung des Nachbaus des Searl-Generators durch Godin und Roschin.**



**ABB 7: Formation der Magnete im Searl-Generator.**

<sup>7</sup> V. V. Roschin and S. M. Godin: Experimental Research of the Magnetic-Gravity Effects. Abstract: Institute for High Temperatures, Russian Academy of Science. Online unter: <http://www.rialian.com/rnboyd/godin-roschin.htm>

In dem Searl-Generator kam es bei Godin und Roschin zu folgenden Effekten: Bis zu 200 Umdrehungen pro Minute verhielt sich das Gerät ganz normal. Danach fing es an, sein Gewicht zu verändern, und die Leistungsaufnahme des Antriebs ging gegen Null. Der generator wurde leichter. Nach dem Abschalten des Antriebes beschleunigte der Searl-Generator selbständig auf 550 Umdrehungen pro Minute, lieferte dabei 6-7 Kilowatt Leistung. Im Raum um den Searl-Generator bauten sich Lichtwände auf, auf den Rollen selber kamm es zu wellenförmigen Lichtmustern. Der Geruch von Ozon breitete sich im Raum aus. Noch im Abstand von 15 Metern kamm es zu ringförmigen Magnetfeldern bzw. Wällen.

## 2.5. Die PAGD- und IVAD-Technologie des Ehepaars Correa aus Kanada

Ein weiteres interessantes Konzept sind die PAGD und IVAD-Technologien<sup>8</sup> des Ehepaars Corea aus Kanada. Sie beruhen auf dem seit den 30er Jahren bekannten Effekt, dass es in Vakuumröhren beim Anlegen einer relativ geringen Spannung durch einen Stromstoß zu einer anomalen Kathodenentladung kommen kann, die mehr Energie freisetzt als benötigt wird, um die Entladung auszulösen. Eine wichtige Rolle spielt dabei das Auslösen von Metall-Kationen aus der Anode, die die Röhre in der dem Elektronenfluss entgegengesetzten Richtung durchqueren. Den Correas ist es durch gepulste Ströme bestimmter Frequenzen gelungen, eine solche Röhre zu einer rhythmischen Dauerentladung zu bringen, die inzwischen 2KW „freie“ Energie liefert. Die freigesetzten Elektronen und Metallionen bilden beim durchqueren der Röhre Wirbelkanäle aus.

## 2.6. Das Neutrino-Difusor Ei

Der kroatische Privatforscher Slatko „Shad“ Loncar hat zwei Verfahren entwickelt, mit denen sich Fluide auf molekularer Basis in ihre atomaren Bestandteile spalten

---

<sup>8</sup> P.N.Correa, MSc, PhD, and A.N. Correa, HBA: POWER FROM AUTOELECTRONIC EMISSIONS. (EDITED EXCERPTS FROM "ADVANCED COMMUNICATION ON A NEW POWER TECHNOLOGY", LABOFEX DEVELOPMENT REPORT S3-001) Online: <http://www.globalserve.net/~lambdac/ListContents.html>

lassen. Das erste Patent erzeugt im Rahmen der Elektrolyse von Wasser durch magnetische Resonanz an der Oberfläche der Kathode punktförmige Wirbel, in deren Kern die Moleküle in schnelle Rotation versetzt werden. Bei Rotationsfrequenzen von 200 MHz zerfällt das Wasser in Knallgas, bei 3GHz erzeugt das Gerät ein langsamer brennendes Gas. Interessant dabei ist, dass die anregenden Frequenzen in wesentlich niedrigeren Bereichen liegen, als die Rotationsgeschwindigkeit der Wirbelkerne. Das entstehende Knallgas bildet einen Film auf der Oberfläche der Kathode und wird durch das durchlaufende Wasser ausgespült. In dieser Apparatur werden zylinderförmige Kathoden eingesetzt. Die Elektrolyse läuft kalt ab, ein Teil der für die Spaltung benötigten Energie wird durch die Selbstbeschleunigung der Punkt-Wirbel aus dem Raum gezogen.

In einer verbesserten Geometrie in einer eiförmigen Kammer, dem Neutrino-Diffusor-Ei, konnte auf einen Elektrolyse-Strom vollständig verzichtet werden. Der Effekt bleibt der selbe. Energie wird hier ausschließlich für das impulsgebende Signal und das Durchpumpen der Flüssigkeit benötigt. Dieses Patent wird zur Zeit in Absprache mit der Öl- und Automobilindustrie zur Spaltung von Ölderivaten in höherwertige Brennstoffe entwickelt.



### 3. Interpretation

#### 3.1. Vergleichende Analyse

Bei den aufgeführten Experimenten handelt es sich auf den ersten Blick um eine Reihe unzusammenhängender Phänomene. Begibt man sich auf die Suche nach Zusammenhängen, so kommt man zu folgenden Thesen.

- Alle Systeme weichen in ihren experimentellen Ergebnissen von den Hauptsätzen der Thermodynamik ab.
- Alle Systeme weisen eine hohe molekulare Ordnung auf. Sei es durch das Anlegen eines ordnenden Feldes, wie beim Patent von Jean Claude Lafforgue, oder durch Selbstorganisation in Wirbelsystemen, wie bei Schauberger, den Correas, Savchenko und Loncar. Der Searl-Generator ist hier als Sonderfall anzusehen. Bezüglich Form und Bewegungsablauf ist er eine exaktes Abbild der Vazsonyi-Schicht mit ihren rotierenden Walzen. Es ist zu vermuten, dass die eigentliche Wirbelbildung in diesem bewegten Korsett als Elektronenwirbel stattfindet.
- Die Systeme basieren entweder auf der Bewegung von freier Ladung (PAGD/IVAD, Searl-Generator) oder auf der Bewegung von dipolaren Molekülen.
- Alle Systeme mit Ausnahme des Patentes von Jean Claude Lafforgue, bei dem jeder Dipol ein unabhängiges Subsystem bildet, weisen spezifische Resonanzgrößen auf, die mit der Global-Scaling-Theorie in Deckung zu bringen sind. Die Selbstbeschleunigung des Searl-Generators beginnt bei 3 Hz und endet bei 9,16 Hz. Der rechnerische Wert nach Hartmut Müller liegt bei 5 Hz. Der Elektronenwirbel beim Ehepaar Correa hat ähnliche Durchmesser wie auch der natürliche Blitzkanal (1,5 – 5 cm). Wie auch die Ruhemasse des Elektrons ist dieser Wert gegen die Skalierung der hydrodynamischen Wirbelsysteme um den Wert  $\ln(1/6)$  verschoben. Das Wasser in den Wirbelrohren des Victor Schauberger durchlief definitiv den für hydrodynamische Systeme rechnerisch interessanten Durchmesser von 10 - 17 cm (Durchmesser der Vazsonyi-Walzen im Tornado), und bezüglich der Rotationsgeschwindigkeit mit hoher Wahrscheinlichkeit auch den

interessanten Frequenzbereich um die 5 Hz. Über die genauen Versuchsdaten bei DM-Tor liegen mir zur Zeit keine Daten vor.

Bezüglich der Resonanzgrößen führt diese Betrachtung zu zwei möglichen Interpretationen.

1. Man geht davon aus, dass die Wirkung auf molekularer Ebene (Biefeld-Brown-Effekt) systemunabhängig stets gegeben ist. Die Resonanzgrößen bei makroskopischen Systemen wären dann als Turbulenzsysteme zu definieren, in denen die vektorielle Addition aller molekularen Kräfte eine gerichtete Größe ergibt. Dies hängt von der Qualität der Ordnungsbildung ab. Systeme hoher Ordnung sind vermutlich zu erwarten, wenn die Winkelgeschwindigkeit der Oszillationen der verschiedenen ausgebildeten Skalen in einer harmonischen Reihe stehen. Zwischen diesen definierten Resonanzgrößen wird die Ordnungsbildung auf molekularer Ebene gestört und es kommt zu keiner gerichteten Größe. Die einzelnen Kräfte heben sich gegenseitig auf.
2. Man geht davon aus, dass jede Skala unabhängig voneinander ihre Energie aus dem Quantenvakuum zieht. Dann wären die resultierenden molekularen Kräfte und die Wechselwirkung der makroskopischen Systeme mit dem Quantenvakuum vektoriell zu addieren.

Beide Interpretationen stützen sich nichts desto trotz die selbe Energiequelle: das Quantenvakuum und die in ihm auftretenden Schwingungen, die bei richtiger Wahl der Frequenzen zu einer Übertragung von Energie führen können.

### 3.2. Mögliche Anwendungen im Hinblick auf eine energietechnische Nutzung

Im Hinblick auf eine energietechnische Nutzung des Quantenvakuums lassen sich theoretisch verschiedene Konzepte herleiten, mit denen sich sowohl die nötige molekulare Ordnung als auch der Zugriff auf Resonanzgrößen herbeiführen lässt.

1. Herstellung von molekularer Ordnung von Dipolen durch das Anlegen von externen, künstlich erzeugten, ordnenden Felder bzw. die Herstellung der Resonanz durch ordnende Felder bestimmter Frequenzen via Wirbelbildung.
2. Herstellung von sich selbst stabilisierenden Resonanzfrequenzen durch die Herstellung von Resonanzräumen definierter Größe und Geometrie.
3. Herstellung molekularer Ordnung und der richtigen Resonanzfrequenz durch die natürlichen Selbstorganisation in Wirbelfeldern korrekt gewählter oder selbstregulierender Größe.

Um zu einer sinnvollen energietechnischen Nutzung zu gelangen, muss weiterhin die Energie-Entnahme in einer Weise vonstatten gehen, dass das System a. nicht durch die Entnahme unmittelbar in seiner molekularen Organisation gestört wird und b. durch die Akkumulation nicht abgeführter Energie nicht aus dem entsprechenden Resonanzbereich hinausläuft. Hier bieten sich wiederum verschiedenen Konzepte an:

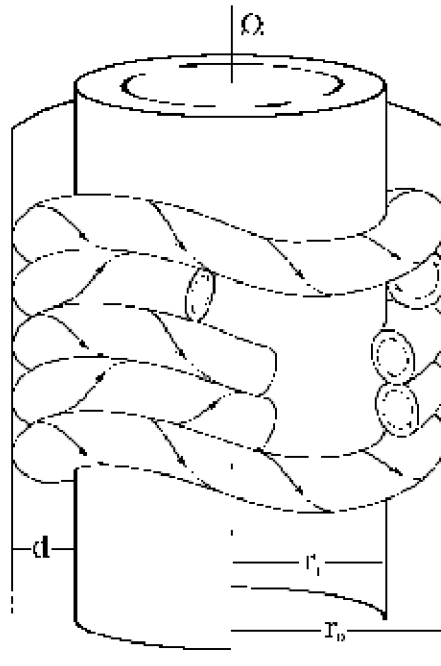
1. Speicherung der gewonnenen Energie in chemischer Bindungsenergie. Dieses Konzept findet sich bei Slatko „Shad“ Loncar wieder.
2. Kontinuierliche Entnahme der Energie durch natürliche Abstrahlung von Wellen verschiedener Natur und Frequenz. Oder aber das Verrichten von Arbeit gegen eine dritte Kraft. Dies kann z.B. der Widerstand eines gekoppelten Generators sein, wie beim Searl-Generator. Man könnte aber auch in einem gegen die Gravitation aufsteigendem Wirbel Arbeit in potentieller Energie speichern.
3. Sind 1. und 2. nicht möglich oder nicht in der Lage, die gesamte gewonnene Energie eines hypothetischen Systems abzuführen, so wird das System sich selbst bezüglich Frequenz und/oder Größe an den Rand der Resonanzbereiche manövrieren. Ist dies nicht zu vermeiden so ist dafür zu sorgen, dass die Materie (in einem thermodynamisch offenen System) die interessanten Resonanzbereiche durchläuft und unmittelbar danach das System verlässt. Das Schauberger Wirbelrohr ist ein solches System, wobei leider der interessante Frequenzbereich durch die Verjüngung des Rohres in Fließrichtung relativ rasch durchschritten wird.

Um die Schlagkraft dieser theoretischen Überlegungen aufzuzeigen: Ein synergetisch sinnvollerer Effekt als beim abwärts fließenden Schauburger-Rohr ergäbe sich z.B. bei einem kontinuierlich expandierenden, aufsteigenden Wirbel. So könnte die akkumulierte kinetische Energie sowohl in Form von potentieller Energie abgeführt werden, als auch in Form von kinetischer Energie, da diese bei konstanter Drehfrequenz im Quadrat zum Radius zunimmt. Die Verweildauer der durchfließenden Materie in den interessanten Resonanzbereichen wäre damit höher.

## 4. Spezifizierung: Wirbel im Medium Wasser

### 4.1. Das Taylor-Couette-System

Wasser gehorcht den Gesetzen der Hydrodynamik. Das von der Hydrodynamik am besten erforschte Wirbel-System ist das Taylor-Couette-System<sup>9</sup>.



**ABB 2: Typische Wirbelbildung im Taylor-Couette-System**

Es besteht aus zwei ineinander, unabhängig voneinander rotierenden Zylindern, zwischen denen sich Flüssigkeit befindet. Die Zylinder können gleichsinnig und gegensinnig rotieren, mit unterschiedlichen Relativgeschwindigkeiten. Nach den Untersuchungen im Taylor-Couette-System bilden sich im Wirbelfeld Turbulenzen aus, und zwar welche, in denen sich im Kleinen wieder ähnliche Turbulenzen ausbilden, und so weiter, und so fort – eine fraktale Struktur. Die Größe der kleinsten sich ausbildende Turbulenz nennt man die Taylorsche Mikroskala. Das Taylor-Couette-System bildet je nach Rahmenbedingung viele unterschiedliche stabile Wirbelformen aus. Für große bzw. schnell rotierende Systeme ist eine bestimmte

<sup>9</sup> Einen guten Überblick über die Forschungen am Taylor-Couette-System erhält man auf der Webseite <http://www.couette-taylor2001.nwu.edu/ct/program.htm>

Wirbelform zu erwarten<sup>10</sup>: Makroskopisch sieht sie aus, als sei unter der Wasseroberfläche ein transparentes, x-fach gewendeltes Seil spiralförmig in den Zylinder gewickelt.

Eine wichtige Kenngröße von Wirbelsystemen ist die Reynolds-Zahl.

$$Re = 2r \times v^\circ \times \rho / \nu$$

Re = Reynolds-Zahl

$v^\circ$  = mittlere Strömungsgeschwindigkeit

r = Radius [m]

$\rho$  = Massendichte

$\nu$  = Viskosität [Pa x s]

In Bezug auf die Reynolds-Zahl sind in der Hydrodynamik drei Überlegungen wichtig:

a) Bei kleinen Reynolds-Zahlen findet wie in jedem zweidimensionalen Wirbel ein Energietransfer von den großen Skalen auf die kleineren Skalen statt. Der Wirbel wird gebremst, die Energie überträgt sich auf die kleineren Wirbel bis hin zu den Kleinsten, wo sie letztendlich in Wärme dissipiert. Eine Beschleunigung des Wirbels selber durch unmittelbare Energieübertragung innerhalb der fraktalen Struktur ist undenkbar. Bei steigenden Reynolds-Zahlen akkumulieren die Wirbel der kleineren Skalen zu viel Energie und werden instabil. Ein kleiner aber wachsender Teil des Energieflusses kehrt sich um, Energie überträgt sich durch das Verschmelzen von Wirbeln von den kleinen auf die größeren Skalen. Das nennt man eine inverse Kaskade<sup>11</sup>. Ein Übertrag von Energie aus molekularen, atomaren oder subatomaren Vorgängen durch inverse Kaskaden wird prinzipiell denkbar, wenn sich das Ordnungssystem bis hinunter in den entsprechenden Bereich erstreckt. Allerdings bleibt dieser Anteil nach Einschätzung der aktuellen Hydrodynamik im Vergleich zu den Wirbelverlusten verschwindend klein. Diese inverse Kaskade war nicht desto trotz das hydrodynamische Modell, mit dem Prof. Starr die Phänomene um die negative Viskosität erklärt hat.

---

<sup>10</sup> Arne Schulz: Verzweigungen und Strömungen zwischen unabhängig rotierenden Zylindern. Dissertation zur Erlangung des Doktorgrade der in der Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftlichen Fakultät der Christian-Albrecht-Universität zu Kiel, vorgelegt Mai 2000. Online: [http://e-diss.uni-kiel.de/diss\\_370/d370.pdf](http://e-diss.uni-kiel.de/diss_370/d370.pdf)

<sup>11</sup> Axel Brandenburg: The inverse cascade and nonlinear alpha-effect in simulations of isotropic helical hydrodynamic turbulence. Nordita (Copenhagen) und University of Newcastle, May 12 2000. Online unter [http://online.itp.ucsb.edu/online/astrot\\_c00/p\\_brandenburg/](http://online.itp.ucsb.edu/online/astrot_c00/p_brandenburg/)

b) Bei großen Reynoldszahlen<sup>12</sup> reduziert sich die Größe der Taylorschen Mikroskala. Das heißt, dass das Ordnungssystem größenordnungsmäßig näher an den molekularen Bereich heranreicht. Die Ordnung des Systems insgesamt steigt. Solange man sich in der Hydrodynamik bewegt, bedeutet dies noch nicht viel, denn auch bei extrem hohen Reynolds-Zahlen liegen größenordnungsmäßig noch etwa drei Zehnerpotenzen zwischen der Taylorschen Mikroskala und dem molekularen Bereich. Erst bei einer totalen Ordnung, bis hinunter in den molekularen Bereich, wären nach Angaben der Hydrodynamik Modelle denkbar, nach denen z.B. thermische Energie durch das Wirbelsystem geordnet werden könnte; um dann über inverse Kaskaden nach „oben“ transportiert als kinetische Energie auf der größten Skala, also im Wirbel selbst, in Erscheinung zu treten. Modelle, die eine Energieübertragung zwischen den Skalen durch Resonanzphänomen in harmonischen Reihen berücksichtigen, sind den Autoren bezüglich der Taylor-Couette-Forschung nicht bekannt. Auch die Ausbildung einer Vazsonyi-Schicht wurde im Rahmen der Taylor-Couette-Forschung nicht beobachtet, da die hierfür nötigen Reynolds-Zahlen im Labor nicht erreicht werden.

c) Alle analogen Systeme in der Natur, Hurrican, Tornado<sup>13</sup> und Magmakonvektion<sup>14</sup>, die ausreichend große Reynoldszahlen haben, weisen in ihren spezifischen Rahmenbedingungen elektromagnetische Selbstinduktion<sup>15</sup> auf. Unter dem Stichwort MHD findet sich hier einiges an interessanter Literatur, deren Auswertung noch aussteht.

---

<sup>12</sup> Kolmogorov A.N. 1941 "The Local structure of turbulence in incompressible viscous fluid for very large Reynolds numbers", Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR 30. Translated by V. Levin. Reprinted in Proc. R. Soc. Lond A 434, 9-13. (1991).

13

Wallace Luchuk: The Tornado From An Aerodynamicist's Point of View. Online unter: <http://www.cafes.net/wallytul/ttheory.htm>.

<sup>14</sup> R. Stieglitz, U. Müller: Kann man das Erdmagnetfeld im Labor simulieren? Forschungszentrum Karlsruhe, Institut für angewandte Fluid- und Thermodynamik, Wissenschaftliche Berichte, FZKA 6223. Online unter: <http://www.ubka.uni-karlsruhe.de/vw/fzk/6223/6223.pdf>

<sup>15</sup> Brandenburg, A.: 2001, "The inverse cascade in turbulent dynamos", in Dynamo and dynamics, a mathematical challenge, ed. P. Chossat, D. Armbruster, and O. Iuliana, Nato ASI Series, Kluwer Publ. (in press) astro-ph/0012112. Online unter: <http://www-solar.mcs.st-and.ac.uk/~keith/Cluster/publicity/publications/pub1.html>

#### 4.2. Vorläufige Auswertung im Sinne der Hydrodynamik

Gemäß dem Stand der Hydrodynamik kann es in Wasserwirbeln zu keiner Selbstverstärkung kommen<sup>16</sup>. Der Mechanismus der inversen Kaskade in Taylor-Wirbeln ist zwar bekannt, aber es klafft eben jene Lücke von drei Zehnerpotenzen zwischen der Taylorschen Mikroscala und dem molekularen Bereich, und auch wenn es in den sich ausbildenden Wirbeln und Unterwirbeln zu einer inversen Kaskade kommen sollte, so könnte maximal nur soviel Energie an die größte Skala zurückgegeben werden, wie vorher durch die Entstehung der kleineren Skalen verloren gegangen ist. Nach Einschätzung der Hydrodynamik wird unter allen Umständen der Energieverlust durch die normalen dissipativen Prozesse eventuelle Rückflüsse durch inverse Kaskaden um Zehnerpotenzen übersteigen. Der Ansatz von Prof. Victor Starr ist für hydrodynamische Systeme in dem derzeit etablierten Forschungsbetrieb somit nicht anerkannt worden.

#### 4.3. Mögliche Wechselwirkungen im atomaren Bereich

Es erscheint mir an dieser Stelle sinnvoll, sich bevor man weiterdenkt näher mit der molekularen Struktur von Wasser zu beschäftigen.

Die Strukturformel von Wasser ist  $H_2O$ . Wasser hat als Molekül Dipolcharakter. In Wirklichkeit besteht Wasser allerdings aus  $H_2O$ ,  $OH^-$  und  $H_3O^+$ , die in permanentem gegenseitigen Austausch von  $H^+$  Ionen und somit in ständiger Verwandlung begriffen sind. Die  $OH^-$  Ionen neigen zur Clusterbildung, das heißt sie bilden verknäulte Ketten und Klumpen, die bei normalem Wasser bis zu 50 Molekülen haben können. Sie werden zusammengehalten sowohl von den Dipol-Kräften als auch durch die zusätzliche Wasserstoff-Brückenbindung und ihren Van-der-Waals-Kräften. Die Cluster zerfallen permanent und bilden sich neu. Für die Theorien zur Hydrodynamik

---

<sup>16</sup> Diese Schlussfolgerung entstammt in erster Linie aus Gesprächen mit Wissenschaftler aus den Bereichen der nicht-linearen Dynamik und der Hydrodynamik, darunter Christian Hoffman von der Universität Saarbrücken, Prof. Bruno Eckhard von der Uni Marburg, und Dr. D. Volchenkov von der Uni Bielefeld, bei denen ich mich an dieser Stelle noch einmal herzlich bedanken möchte.



bleibt die molekulare Struktur von Wasser für das Wirbelgeschehen wegen der besagten drei oder mehr Zehnerpotenzen Größenunterschied unberücksichtigt.<sup>17</sup> Bevor ich zur Theoriebildung schreite, rein assoziativ drei Beobachtungen aus der „Praxis“:

- In der Homöopathie geht man davon aus, dass bestimmte Formen der Verwirbelung von Wasser die Clusterbildung begünstigen und dass man durch oft wiederholte, periodische Verwirbelung Cluster-Ketten höherer Länge und Stabilität erzeugen kann, die dann bestimmte Schwingungsmuster tragen.
- Versuche zur Wasseraufbereitung haben ergeben, dass die spiralförmige Verwirbelung, die beim Durchlauf durch die kleineren Skalen ja hoch periodische Bewegungsmuster erzeugt, den Reibungswiderstand des Wasser drastisch reduziert.
- Schon die Zugabe kleinster Mengen von stabilen Polymeren zu Wasser reduziert den Fließwiderstand in turbulenten Strömungen auf ca. 20%.

Hypothese: In Wasser, das die Skalen eines Spiralwirbels durchläuft, neigen die Cluster dazu, sich in Ketten entlang der lokalen Strömungslinien anzuordnen. Dies ist eine rein statistische Frage, denn die Wahrscheinlichkeit, dass ein senkrecht zur Strömungslinie verlaufendes Cluster durch die auftretenden Scherkräfte dissoziiert, ist logischerweise größer als bei parallel zu den Strömungslinien verlaufenden Clustern. Dieses Phänomen tritt bevorzugt ein, wenn der Wirbel durch einen Sog entsteht, da die Cluster in unter Sog beschleunigendem Wasser gestreckt werden. Die Berührungspunkte gleichläufiger Wirbel sind die Zonen, die die stärkste Scheerkräfte und somit den stärksten Reibungswiderstand erzeugen. Eine Reduzierung der inneren Bindungskräfte des Wassers an genau diesen Stellen würde sich überproportional stark auf die resultierende virtuellen Viskosität der gesamten Flüssigkeit auswirken. Und genau dies scheint insbesondere im Medium Wasser möglich zu sein: Die einzelnen Ionen bzw. Moleküle der sich ausbildenden und längs der Strömungslinien arrangierenden Ketten sind untereinander durch Dipol- und Van der Waals-Kräfte wie durch Federn aneinander gebunden. Senkrecht zum Cluster wirken weder Dipol- noch Van-der-Waals-Kräfte. Die Cluster können also genau dort verhältnismäßig reibungsarm aneinander vorbeigleiten, wo normalerweise die größten Reibungsverluste entstehen.

---

<sup>17</sup> Martin Chaplin: Water structure and behavior. Official Website der South Bank University, London,

Die Cluster haben ein Gedächtnis. Sie merken sich Schwingungsmuster, besonders wenn man sie häufig wiederholt. Die thermische Energie des Wassers geht durch Stoßprozesse zwischen den Cluster-Ketten dabei mehr und mehr auf die longitudinalen Anteile der Schwingungsmuster in den Clustern über, was ursächlich sowohl für eine weiter steigende Stabilität als auch für eine weitere Reduzierung des inneren Reibungswiderstandes verantwortlich ist. Auch dies ist eine Frage der Statistik.

Die hydrodynamischen Eigenschaften des Wassers ändern sich radikal, da es in Bezug auf die Durchbewegung seine Dipolkräfte, die Van-der-Waals-Kräfte, als auch den temperaturabhängigen Anteil seiner viskosen Eigenschaften verliert. Letzteres will heißen: wäre die gesamte thermische Energie in dem longitudinalen Wellenanteil unendlich langer Ketten gefangen, verhielte sich das Wasser wie bei Temperaturen von -273 Grad, ohne dabei zu gefrieren. Die Viskosität, die in der Hydrodynamik als materialabhängige Konstante begriffen wird, geht gegen 0. Damit steigt wiederum die Reynolds-Zahl gegen Unendlich. Die Taylorsche Mikro-Skala wiederum geht gegen 0. Es bilden sich kleinere und kleinere Skalen aus, die den Anteil des stromlinienförmig ausgerichteten Wassers weiter erhöhen.

#### 4.4. Interpretation

Trifft die unter 4.3. formulierte Hypothese zu, so sind Wirbel ab einer bestimmten Größenordnung in der Lage, molekulare Ordnung herzustellen. Kommt es nicht nur zu einer geometrischen, sondern auch zu einer elektrodynamischen Ordnung, d.h. zeigen mehr Clusterketten mit ihrem positiv geladenen Ende in Strömungsrichtung als gegen die Strömungsrichtung, resultiert aus der vektoriellen Überlagerung der Biefeld-Brown-Effekte auf die OH<sup>-</sup>-Ionen eine Beschleunigung längs der Strömungslinien. Dies hat zur Folge, dass alle Skalen des Wirbels eine Energiezufuhr in Form von kinetischer Energie erfahren. Dies reduziert den Fließwiderstand gegen Null. Selbstbeschleunigung kann trotzdem zunächst nur durch die unmittelbare Auswirkung auf die erste Skala entstehen. Da in dem Turbulenzgeschehen der vektorielle Anteil von Stromlinien in tangentialer Richtung (in bezug auf das Gesamtsystem) relativ gering ist, ist dieser Effekt entsprechend

gering). Dazu kommt nun der Mechanismus der inversen Kaskade. Er entsteht wie man hier sehen kann zwangsläufig, da der Energieübertrag von den großen auf die kleineren Skalen bei gegen Null gehendem Fließwiderstand ins unendliche Wachsen würde. Dies führt zu Instabilitäten, die eine Vereinigung kleinerer Wirbel zu größeren nach sich zieht. Im stabilen Endzustand stellt sich ein Gleichgewicht zwischen den von Korioliskräften getriebenen dissipativen und den durch inverse Kaskaden betriebenen antidissipativen Energieflüssen ein. Ein Übertrag von thermischer Energie in dieses selbstregulierende System ist auf jeden Fall denkbar.

Im Hinblick auf eine Durchschalten der fraktalen Strukturen hinunter ins Quantenvakuum ist die Vazsonyi-Schicht von besonderem Interesse. Im Bezug auf Selbstähnlichkeit sind die Walzen der Vazsonyi-Schicht verkleinerte Abbilder des gesamten Wirbels. Vom Tornado weiß man, dass die Vazsonyi-Schicht der eigentliche Motor des Wirbels ist. Es liegt nahe, diese Funktion auch auf andere hydrodynamische Systeme, wie z.B. Wasserwirbel, zu übertragen.

## **5. Theoretische Konstruktion eines Wasser-Wirbelkraftwerkes**

Ein Wasser-Wirbelkraftwerk muss folgende Bedingungen erfüllen:

1. Bezüglich des Durchmessers muss es eine der bekannten Resonanzgrößen treffen. Hier sind die Durchmesser von 15 cm und 50 m technisch realisierbar.
2. Bezüglich der Drehfrequenz gibt es nur einen interessanten Resonanzbereich. Er liegt bei 5 Hz.

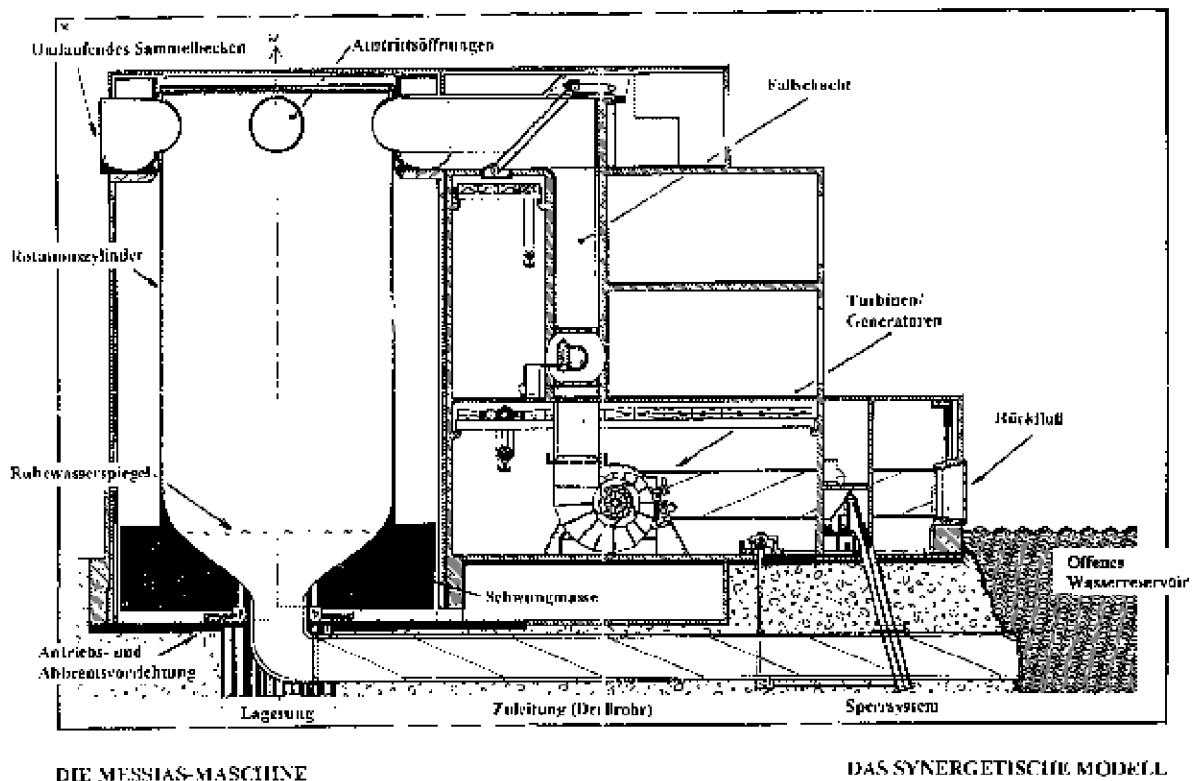
Da bei 15 cm Durchmesser und 5 Hz Drehgeschwindigkeit im Medium Wasser keine interessanten Reynolds-Zahlen erreicht werden können, bleibt nur die Kombination von 50 m und 5 Hz.

3. Um die Verweildauer des Wassers im interessanten Resonanzbereich zu optimieren bietet sich ein expandierender aufsteigender Wirbel an. Die akkumulierte Energie liegt bei Austritt aus dem System als kinetische und potentielle Energie vor und kann mit herkömmlicher Technik verstromt werden.

4. Als „Gefäß“ für den Wirbel bietet sich ein rotierender Metallzylinder an, da so
  - a. die Reibungsverluste zwischen Wasser und Gefäß minimiert werden, und
  - b. durch eine externe Beschleunigung des Zylinders der Wirbel durch „Sog“ erzeugt werden kann. Die Vazsonyi-Schicht kann sich - durch den Potenzialwirbel gegen den Zylinder abgeschirmt - ungestört ausbilden.
5. Um ein thermodynamisch offenes System zu erschaffen, bedarf es eines kontinuierlichen Austausches von Wasser. Dies kann Naturgemäß nur von unten zugeführt werden. Um hier den technischen Aufwand gering zu halten, bietet sich eine Wasserzufuhr aus einem bestehenden Reservoir über eine kommunizierende Röhre an.

Aus diesen Vorgaben lässt sich eindeutig ein Bauplan ableiten.

Die Idee zu so einem System ist nicht neu. Sie wurde bereits in den 70er Jahren von dem Syrier Daruish al Khoos vorgeschlagen<sup>18</sup>.



<sup>18</sup> Achmed A.W. Khammas: Der Messias mit der sanften Technik, SPHINX-Magazin, Schweiz 1976.

Seine Pläne sehen einen Durchmesser von 50 Metern sowie eine Drehfrequenz von 8 Hz vor. Durchmesser wie Drehfrequenz durchlaufen somit exakt die interessanten Bereiche.

Die Erfindung will Daruish al Khoos als Vision empfangen haben. Diese Maschine, die bereits im Koran in der Sure „Von den aufwärts wirbelnden Wassern“<sup>19</sup> beschrieben ist, soll - ebenfalls im Koran prophezeit - Anfang dieses Jahrtausends unsere Eintrittskarte ins Paradies (auf Erden) darstellen. Da die Glaubensgemeinschaft der Moslems die Wiederkunft des Messias für das Jahr 2000 erwartet, hielt sich Daruish al Khoos naheliegenderweise für selbigen. Er starb Dezember 2001 im Alter von 78 Jahren.

---

<sup>19</sup> Vgl. 51. Sure des Koran, je nach Übersetzung mehr oder weniger überzeugend.

## 6. Notwendige theoretische Arbeiten

### 6.1. Fachbereich Hydrodynamik

Wirbelsysteme der oben beschriebenen Form und Größe bringen einige physikalische Besonderheiten mit sich, die in der Theoriebildung berücksichtigt werden müssen.

Im Rahmen der Magneto-Hydro-Dynamik haben wir es mit rotierenden Magnetfelder zu tun, im Bereich der niedrigeren Skalen ist das gesamte Feldgefüge durch gekrümmte und/oder gefächerten Feldlinien bestimmt. Wie in Kapitel 2 gezeigt werden konnte, ist genau dies ein Merkmal von Systemen, die sich mit schulphysikalischem Handwerkszeug nicht beschreiben lassen können. Zur korrekten Berechnung der auftretenden Phänomene möchte ich anregen, die in der MHD benutzten Maxwell-basierten Rechenmodelle auf die einheitliche Feldtheorie von Konstantin Meyl umzuschreiben. Eine Vernachlässigung des elektrischen Logitudinalwellenanteils, wie in den Maxwell-Gleichungen geschehen, ist für ein solches System wissenschaftlich nicht zu verantworten. Die Meylsche Theorie hat hier den Vorteil, dass sie die herkömmlichen Rechenmodelle als Sonderfall beinhaltet, eine entsprechende Erweiterung ist daher mathematisch zu leisten. Auch ein mathematischer Übertrag auf die gravitative Kraft ist in diesem Modell beschrieben.

### 6.2. Fachbereich Theoretische Physik

a. Haben wir eine korrekte Beschreibung der elektrodynamischen Vorgänge, so ist eine Wechselwirkung zwischen elektromagnetischen und akustischen Wellen in Betracht zu ziehen. Da beide Wellenformen durch ein und das selbe Bewegungsmuster erzeugt werden, ist zu erwarten, dass sie lokal synchron schwingen.

Einen ersten Ansatz hierzu bietet der Woodward-Effekt<sup>20</sup>. Er basiert auf der Tatsache, dass der elektromagnetische Energiegehalt eines Probekörpers (z.B. ein Kondensator) nach  $E = m c^2$  in seine Masse mit einfließt. Ein oszillierender Energiegehalt zieht daher zwangsläufig auch einen oszillierenden Masse-Wert nach sich. Wird dieser Probekörper synchron zu dem schwingenden Feld gegen die Gravitation auf und ab bewegt (oder in einem Zentrifugalfeld radial), so ergibt sich eine kleine Energiedifferenz (z.B. im Gravitationsfeld nach  $E = mgh$ ), die sich über die Anzahl der Oszillationen addiert. Bei hohen Frequenzen ist dieser Effekt makroskopisch deutlich messbar.

Wesentlich ausgefeilter sind diesbezüglich die Theorien von Jerry E. Bayles<sup>21</sup>. Sie bieten eine wesentlich komplexere Rechengrundlage für die Wechselwirkung zwischen mechanischen und elektromagnetischen Schwingungen. Bayles Theorie beschreibt in Folge dieser Wechselwirkung gravitative Effekte. Auch Bayles arbeitet mit einer einheitlichen Feldtheorie. Inwieweit sie mit den Meyl'schen Modell kompatibel ist, muss überprüft werden.

b. Die Global-Scaling-Theorie basiert auf umfangreichen Messungen und beschreibt deskriptiv die in der Natur auftretenden Massen, Größen- und Frequenzverteilungen. In vielen Freie-Energie-Systemen geht es um die Suche nach der richtigen Resonanzfrequenz. Diese Frequenzen sind jedoch, wie man bei Loncar sehen kann, nicht unbedingt identisch mit den von Müller beschriebenen Frequenzen. Es scheint so zu sein, dass man die Wirbelkerne nur auf natürlichem Weg anregen kann, also über die Skalen der fraktalen Struktur, nicht aber durch das Anlegen der Eigenfrequenz. Der Schlüssel bei der Suche nach den korrekten anregenden Frequenzen liegt somit in der Skalierung innerhalb der fraktalen Wirbelstruktur. Hier steht eine Auswertung der Messdaten aus der Hydrodynamik an.

c. In der von mir gewählten Chronologie ist die Global-Scaling-Theorie die erste Theorie, die den Ansatz macht, das Raum-Zeit-Gefüge dimensional zu erweitern. Hartmut Müller spricht von drei sich überlagernden Häufigkeitsverteilungen auf der In-Skala, und bringt darüber hinaus einige Betrachtungen zu einer stehenden Zeitwelle an. Dieser Ansatz weist schon auf einen 8 Dimensionalen Raum hin, auch

---

<sup>20</sup> Näheres unter: <http://www.inetarena.com/~noetic/pls/gravity.html>

<sup>21</sup> Jerry E. Bayles: Electrogravitation as a unified field theory. Elektronische Publikation, downloadbar bei <http://groups.yahoo.com/group/neuelectrogravity/>

wenn dies von Müller so nicht formuliert und ausgearbeitet worden ist. Es erscheint mir sinnvoll, die Müller'sche Theorie mit TGD (topological geometrodynamics) abzugleichen. Die strukturelle Ähnlichkeit liegt auf der Hand. An dieser Stelle wäre auch die Atomic-Vortex-Theorie vergleichend mit einzubringen, da Müller insbesondere was die Wirbelbildung und fraktale Geometrien betrifft noch einige Defizite aufweist.

d. Zu guter letzt möchte ich noch zu einer mathematischen Spielerei anregen. Die sumerische Mathematik basierte auf einem Hexadezimalsystem und war in der Lage, viele kosmische Größenverhältnisse in einfache mathematische Zusammenhänge zu bringen. Dies erinnert sowohl vom Denkansatz als auch vom Zahlensystem her stark an Hartmut Müller. Das sumerische mathematische System basierte vermutlich auf alt-ägyptischen Modellen, die ebenfalls einen höherdimensionalen Raum beschreiben. In der Esoterik-Szene wird in diesem Zusammenhang viel über die „Blume des Lebens“ diskutiert, die angeblich klar auf einen 8-dimensionalen Raum weist, die Dimensionen 9-12 werden vermutet, sowie eine dreizehnte, die als „Gott“ bzw. als die alles speisende Energiequelle identifiziert wird. Die Literatur zur „Blume des Lebens“ ist teilweise hoch-mathematisch und könnte unter Umständen als eine brauchbare Inspirationsquelle dienen. Auch Bayles basiert einen Teil seiner Theorien auf geometrische Vermessungen und Berechnungen zu den physikalischen Anomalien in den Pyramiden bei Kairo. Dies wäre sicherlich ein spannender Stoff für eine Semesterarbeit.

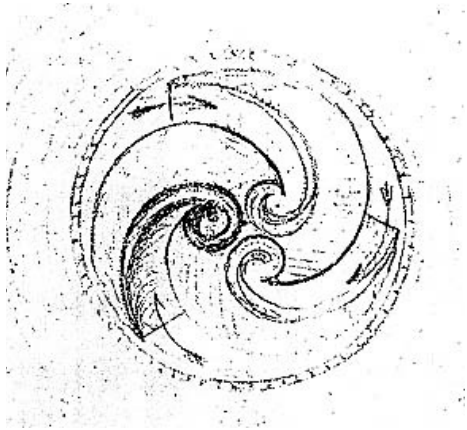
### 6.3. Fachbereich Ingenieurwesen

Die Ideen von Daruish al Khoos zu einem Wirbelkraftwerk haben mir persönlich als Rätsel gedient, und wie ich meine einen beachtlichen Erkenntnisprozess ausgelöst. Vielleicht hat dieses Konzept damit seinen eigentlichen Sinn bereits erfüllt. Dennoch halte ich es für sinnvoll, die Machbarkeit eines solchen Vorhabens ingenieurstechnisch zu überprüfen.



#### 6.4. Fachbereich Elektrotechnik

Um die ersten Früchte aus der Neue-Energie-Szene ernten zu können, bedarf es dringend einer schulwissenschaftliche Überprüfung und Begutachtung der Geräte von Slatko „Shad“ Loncar und dem Ehepaar Correa. Darüber hinaus steht die Entwicklung zur Serienreife an. Bei Loncar läuft dies auf die Entwicklung von Knallgasgeneratoren für den Kfz-Betrieb hinaus. Bei der kanadischen Erfindung auf Systeme zur dezentralen Energieversorgung.



*alle Abb. sind Originalzeichnungen von V.S.*

*Ronald Engert*

## Die Forellenturbine

*Freie Energie durch Implosion. Die Entdeckungen von Viktor Schaubberger.*

Der 2. Thermodynamische Hauptsatz der Physik besagt, daß ein geschlossenes physikalisches System nicht ohne äußeres Zutun aus einem Zustand geringerer Ordnung in einen Zustand höherer Ordnung übergehen kann. Dieser Satz, auch Entropiesatz genannt, sagt aus, daß es kein Perpetuum mobile geben kann. Jeder physikalische Vorgang geht automatisch in einen niedrigeren Ordnungszustand über, wobei Wärme der Zustand mit der niedrigsten Ordnung, d.h. der größten Entropie, ist. Dem Entropiesatz zufolge ist es unmöglich, thermische Energie in mechanische oder elektrische Energie umzuwandeln. Alle herkömmlichen Maschinen, die auf dem Prinzip der Verbrennung und der Umwandlung von höherwertigen Energieformen in Wärmeenergie beruhen, erhöhen die Entropie, d.h. die Unordnung und das Chaos in der Welt. So lautet auch die Prognose der konventionellen Wissenschaft, daß das Universum einen Wärmetod sterben wird, wenn alle höheren Energieformen wie etwa kinetische Energie auf ihren niedrigsten Ordnungszustand zurückgeführt worden sind.

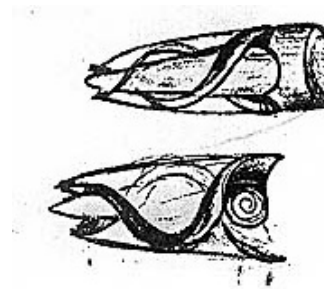
Ein Außenseiter der Forschung, der österreichische Förster Viktor Schaubberger, beobachtete jahrzehntelang die Natur und kam zu dem Schluß, daß die Natur das ideale Perpetuum mobile darstellt, da sie aus sich selbst heraus Zustände höherer Ordnung - Organismen - erzeugt.

Viktor Schaubberger (1885-1958) war Naturphilosoph, Erfinder und Wegbereiter der »freie Energie«, der kostenlosen Maschinenkraft. Er entwickelte ein völlig neues Konzept der Natur, der Energie und letztendlich auch des Bewußtseins. Als Förster beobachtete er immer wieder die Natur, um herauszufinden, wie die Natur funktioniert, wie Wachstum, Bewegung und Leben entstehen. Daraus entwickelte er eine naturnahe Technologie, die ganz anders als die herkömmliche Technologie aufgebaut ist. Er konstruierte Geräte zur Erzeugung von Energie oder zur Fortbewegung, die ohne Treibstoff arbeiteten und weder Abgase noch Lärm verursachten. Diese Geräte – beispielsweise die Forellenturbine, die an die Funktionsweise der Kiemen einer Forelle angelehnt ist – kopierten die Natur und arbeiteten lediglich auf der Basis einer spezifischen Bewegung von Wasser oder Luft.

Sein Verständnis von Wasser, Luft und Erde ließen ihn zum Gegner der etablierten Wissenschaft und Technik werden, und er wies immer wieder darauf hin, daß die heutige Technik, wie auch die moderne Landwirtschaft, der Wasserbau und der Waldbau, die Natur mehr und mehr zerstören. Er setzte dieser naturunrichtigen Technik seine Biotechnologie entgegen, die die Medien Luft, Erde und Wasser veredelt und qualitativ verbessert. Er

entwickelte Verfahren zur Edelwasserherstellung, zur Bodenverbesserung, zur Wachstums- und Qualitätssteigerung von Nutzpflanzen und zur Renaturierung der Flüsse und Wälder.

Mit seinen technischen Entwicklungen, aber auch mit seinem grundlegenden Naturverständnis ist Schauberger angesichts der heutigen ökologischen Situation der Erde aktueller denn je. Hierbei haben seine Entdeckungen nicht nur in der praktischen ökologischen Arbeit ihre Bedeutung, sondern auch in der Tiefenökologie, die vor allem den Bewußtseinswandel im Menschen selbst ins Auge faßt. Gerade das kognitive und emotionale Verständnis der Naturprozesse, die eigene Haltung gegenüber der Mitwelt, das Bewußtsein für die Schönheit und Genialität der Natur werden durch die Beschäftigung mit Schauberger angeregt und auf eine naturgemäße Basis gestellt.



### **Explosion und Implosion**

Die heutige Technik arbeitet nach dem Wärme- und Explosionsprinzip. Bestes Beispiel ist der Verbrennungsmotor, indem hochwertige Rohstoffe - Mineralöle aus den Tiefen der Erde - verbrannt werden, um damit einen explosionsartigen Überdruck zu erzeugen, der den Kolben bewegt. Das Erdöl ist nach Schauberger ein entwicklungsfreudiger Rohstoff, d.h. ein Stoff, der zum Lebensaufbau auf der Erde notwendig ist. Öl besteht aus abgestorbenen Tieren, die seit Millionen von Jahren unter Licht- und Luftabschluß im Erdinnern lagern und sich dort sehr langsam umwandeln. Sie bilden Rohstoffe, die energetisch dafür verantwortlich sind, daß die Erde ihre Kraft behält und Wachstum möglich ist. Die heutige Technik zerstört diese Rohstoffe in der Verbrennung, um daraus Bewegungsenergie zu gewinnen. Diese Verbrennung erzeugt giftige Abgase und Lärm und verbraucht die für den Energiehaushalt der Erde notwendigen Stoffe.

Die heutige Technik beruht also auf einer Zerstörung und auf dem sogenannten Druckprinzip. Der Verbrennungsmotor bewegt durch Druck den Kolben, die Druckturbine erzeugt elektrischen Strom, der Propeller oder die Schraube erzeugen durch Rückstoß Fortbewegung, mit der Hydraulik werden Lasten gehoben, die Spaltung von Atomen erzeugt Hitze und Druck. Alle diese Methoden beruhen auf explosiven oder zentrifugalen Prinzipien und wirken strukturvergrößernd -bzw. auflösend. Die Strukturvergrößerung führt zu Druck und zu einem Reibungswiderstand, der wiederum in Wärmeenergie übergeht. Alle herkömmlichen Maschinen verlieren durch den Bewegungswiderstand, der im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wächst, 50-70% ihrer investierten Leistung. Abgesehen von der Zerstörung der verwendeten Rohstoffe ist ein solch schlechtes Leistungsverhältnis natürlich immens teuer.

Schauberger stellte dieser Zerstörungstechnologie nun eine völlig andere Methode entgegen. Seinen Beobachtungen in der Natur zufolge arbeitet die Natur für den Lebensaufbau nach dem Zugprinzip. In der Natur gibt es sowohl das Druckprinzip als auch das Zugprinzip. Das Druckprinzip wirkt auflösend, zersetzend und wird zur Auflösung abgestorbener Organismen (Pflanzen, Tierkadaver etc.) gebraucht; das Zugprinzip wirkt zusammenziehend, aufbauend; das Wachstum der Pflanzen, Tiere und Menschen beruht auf dem Zugprinzip und der damit verbundenen Implosion.

Die Implosion ist das Gegenstück zur Explosion und wirkt strukturverkleinernd, verdichtend. Diese Verdichtung führt zu einer Abnahme des Reibungswiderstandes und einer Abkühlung. Thermische Energie wird also in höhere Energieformen - Bewegungs-, Wachstums-, Lebensenergie - umgewandelt und damit ist der Entropiesatz in Frage gestellt.

Der Entropiesatz gilt für geschlossene Systeme. Dieses feine Detail in der Formulierung des 2. Thermodynamischen Hauptsatzes ist entscheidend. Nur in geschlossenen Systemen gilt

dieses Gesetz. Daß die heutige Physik nicht in der Lage ist, in offenen Systemen zu denken, ist Ursache für die Dogmatisierung des Satzes. Die Frage erhebt sich, ob die Natur ein geschlossenes oder offenes System ist.

Schauberger beobachtete in der Natur, in der Bewegung des Wassers und der Luft, den Wachstumsformen der Pflanzen und Tiere und gewissen unerklärlichen Phänomenen wie z.B. der Standforelle immer wieder die Wirbel- oder Spiralförmigkeit. Die Spirale ist schon mathematisch ein offenes System, das sich zwischen den beiden Polen Null und Unendlich bewegt ohne sie jemals zu erreichen. Die Spiralförmigkeit und die aus ihr ableitbaren Ei-, Tropfen- und Kelchformen sind die grundlegenden Abbildungsprinzipien in der Natur. Alles Leben geht aus dem Ei (im Falle der Tiere und Menschen, auch Samenformen der Pflanzen) oder dem Kelch (im Falle der Pflanzen) hervor. Wer genau hinschaut, findet die Eiförmigkeit auch in dem Umriß vieler Bäume, in der Form unseres Kopfes und in vielen anderen alltäglichen Erscheinungsformen.

"In der Natur gibt es keine geraden Linien", war ein Ausspruch von Schauburger. Kurven, Wellen, gebogene und geschwungene Formen, die Herzform, die Nierenform, das Unregelmäßige und Asymmetrische sind die Merkmale des Lebens.

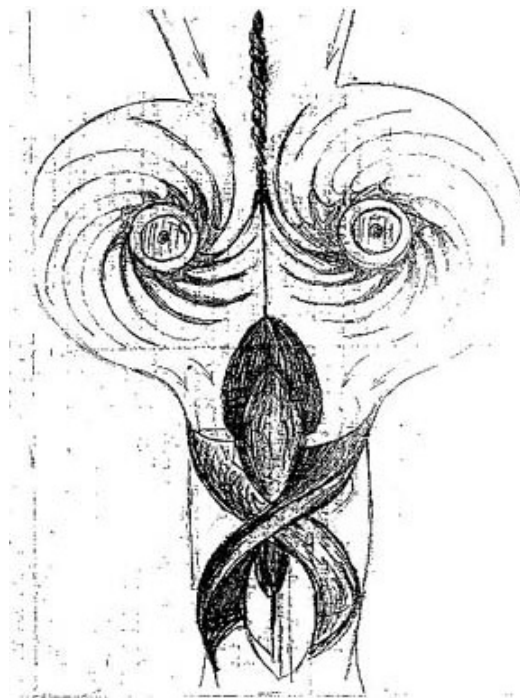
Unser Blutkreislauf beispielsweise beruht auf dem Prinzip der spiralförmigen Einrollung des Blutes. Durch diese Einrollung entsteht wieder die besagte Verdichtung des Mediums, es entsteht ein Unterdruck und das Medium nimmt ziehende Eigenschaften an. Die heutige Vorstellung, bei dem Herzen handele es sich um eine Druckpumpe, ist nach Schauburger eine irrierte Annahme. Das kleine Herz könnte niemals das dickflüssige Blut bis in die feinsten Kapillaren der Hände und Füße und durch den gesamten riesigen Blutkreislauf drücken. Tatsächlich herrschen hier Zugphänomene vor. Durch die spiralförmige Bewegung bekommt das Blut - genauso wie das Wasser in den Bächen und Flüssen - einen achsmittigen Vortrieb. Der Licht- und Luftabschluß ist hierbei notwendige Voraussetzung, wie auch jeder Sauerstoffkontakt des Blutes unbedingt vermieden werden muß, um nicht eine tödliche Embolie herbeizuführen.

Schauberger hatte dieses Phänomen in den Gebirgsbächen beobachtet und spricht in diesem Zusammenhang nicht nur von der Trag- und Schleppkraft des Wassers, das im gesunden, naturrichtigen Zustand das Geröll im Bachbett mittransportieren kann, sondern auch von seiner Selbstreinigungs- und Vermehrungskraft. Wie auch in der Schulwissenschaft bekannt ist, hat das Wasser bei  $+4^{\circ}\text{C}$ , dem Anomaliepunkt, seine größte Dichte und damit seine größte Tragkraft. Naturrichtig fließendes Wasser nähert sich immer dem Anomaliepunkt an, d.h. Wärme wird verzehrt und in Bewegung oder Wasserwachstum umgewandelt. Wachstum ist praktisch das Ergebnis der Implosion, der Strukturverdichtung. Naturrichtig fließendes Wasser fließt in Wirbeln, Wellen, Strudeln. Jeder Stein im Bachbett wirbelt das Wasser ein, und in der Achsmittigkeit der Spirale finden Prozesse statt, die mit dem mechanistischen Weltbild nicht mehr erklärt oder verstanden werden können. Spiral- und Hyperbelformen sind nur mit einer nicht-euklidischen Mathematik beschreibbar und es ist erstaunlich und bezeichnend zugleich, daß die heutige Mathematik und Physik praktisch keine nicht-euklidischen Strukturen beschreibt. Die nicht-euklidische Mathematik fristet ein unterentwickeltes Dasein am Rande der Institute. Bis dato gibt es in der offiziellen Schulwissenschaft keine Formel zur Berechnung der Eiförmigkeit. Nur Walter Schauburger, Maschinenbauingenieur und Sohn von Viktor Schauburger, hat zusammen mit dem Mathematiker Trusnitz die Formeln zur Berechnung von Hyperbeln und Eiförmigkeiten entwickelt und in einer konsequenten nicht-euklidischen Mathematik zusammengefaßt (siehe dazu: Tattva Viveka Nr. 10, Claus Radlberger: Der hyperbolische Kegel).

In der seelischen Achsmittigkeit der Spirale werden nun nach Viktor Schauburger raum- und masselose Kräfte in die Materie gebunden. Diese Kräfte sind metaphysischer Zustandsart. Für Viktor Schauburger ist das Leben ein Phänomen, das über die materielle Ebene hinausgeht. Das Leben kommt aus einer metaphysischen, spirituellen Dimension und manifestiert sich im Wachstum und den Körpern der Lebewesen. Dabei sah er auch in dem Planeten Erde ein Lebewesen, und das Wasser bezeichnete er als das Blut der Erde. Zu bemerken wäre in diesem Zusammenhang, daß die planetare Bewegung der Erde auch eine Doppelspiralförmigkeit beschreibt. Da sich die Sonne um ein Zentrum in der Galaxis (die Plejaden) bewegt, ist die Bahn der Erde um die Sonne keine Kreis- oder Ellipsenbahn, sondern eine offene Spiralförmigkeit. Zusammen mit der Eigenrotation bildet dies eine Doppelspirale. Auch hier also finden wir wieder die für den Lebensaufbau wichtige Spiralförmigkeit. In der Implosion der

Aufbaubewegung entdeckte Schauberger nun noch eine dynamische Energie: die Levitationsenergie. Wie die Implosion das Gegenstück zur Explosion ist, so ist die Levitation das Gegenstück zur Gravitation. Nicht nur Schwere und Gewicht finden wir in der Natur, sondern auch Auftrieb und Erhebung. Das ist der Grund, warum die Bäume nach oben wachsen, warum wir aufrecht gehen, warum wir unsere Körper so leicht bewegen können. Die Blutbewegung erzeugt Levitationskraft; ebenso wie die planetare Bewegung die Erde in der Schwebelage hält, bekommt unser Körper durch die Blut- und Säftebewegung einen Auftrieb. Das Wachstum und die Körpermasse ist in diesem Sinne die Bremse, um unsere Geist-Körper-Einheit im labilen Gleichgewicht zu halten. Ohne Körper würden wir sofort ins Nirwana zurückgehen, wie Schauberger schreibt.

Mit dieser Levitationskraft kommen wir nun zum Kern der freien Energie, wie sie Schauberger in der Forellenturbine anwendete.



### **Die Forellenturbine**

Durch eine naturrichtige Bewegung der Medien Wasser oder Luft können Levitationsphänomene maschinell erzeugt werden. Hierbei werden die Medien gereinigt und veredelt.

Die Levitationskraft entdeckte Viktor Schauberger, als er die Forelle beobachtete. Die Standforellen sind in der Lage, in reißenden Gebirgsbächen bewegungslos zu stehen und sich das Futter "arbeitslos" ins Maul schwimmen zu lassen. In der Laichzeit überwinden sie meterhohe Wasserfälle, um an die Laichplätze im Quellgebiet zu gelangen. Wenn man die in der Strömung stehenden Forellen aufschreckt, fliehen sie nicht etwa stromabwärts, wie der mechanistisch geschulte Geist vermuten würde, sondern stromaufwärts, gegen die Strömung. Dies gelingt ihnen blitzartig mit einer sehr hohen Geschwindigkeit. Schauberger fragte sich immer wieder, wie dies möglich sei. Eine Forelle, die man an der Angel mit der Strömung zieht, erstickt sogar. Welche Kräfte wirken hier?

Die Forelle nimmt Wasser durch den Mund auf und lässt es durch die Kiemen wieder austreten. In den Kiemen befinden sich Tausende von mikroskopischen Leitschienen, die das

Wasser in eine starke Einrollbewegung bringen. Unter Mitwirkung bestimmter in den Kiemen lokalisierter Spurenelemente wird das Wasser energetisiert und "juveniles Neuwasser" aufgebaut. Dieses juvenile Wasser hat andere physikalische Eigenschaften als das Bachwasser und es kommt zu Reaktionen. Die Tropfenform des Fischkörpers schwebt in einem Mantel solcher Reaktionen, die wie ein Gegendruck zur Strömung des Baches wirken. Durch die Kiemenregulierung kann die Forelle dann entweder bewegungslos stehen oder blitzschnell stromaufwärts schwimmen. In den tausenden Einrollbewegungen des Wassers werden Implosionen (Neuwasserentstehung) und Levitationsenergien freigesetzt. Schauberger spricht in diesem Zusammenhang von einem Seelenband, das von der Mündung zur Quelle geht. Dieses Seelenband ist der Fluß der Levitationsenergie, der umgekehrt zum Wasserfluß fließt. Neueste Untersuchungen haben gezeigt, daß die Länge eines Flusses immer 3,14mal so lang ist wie die Luftlinie von der Quelle zur Mündung ( $3,14 = \pi$ ). Der gesamte Fluß bildet also eine organische Einheit, die natürlich durch künstliche Staustufen oder Begradigungen nachhaltig gestört wird.

Die Forelle nutzt diesen Levitationsfluß und steht damit in der Strömung oder schwebt in Wasserfällen nach oben. Das gleiche Phänomen haben wir bei den Vögeln, wo durch die Federn Millionen von kleinsten Luftwirbeln erzeugt werden, die den Vogel in einer Auftriebsenergie tragen. Schauberger nannte dieses Phänomen auch "biologisches Vakuum", das durch die Verdichtung der Luft entsteht. Dieses biologische Vakuum bildet sich über dem Vogelkörper und ermöglicht ihm so den Flug. Schauberger pflegte zu sagen, daß die Vögel nicht fliegen, sondern geflogen werden. Der Fisch schwimmt nicht, sondern wird geschwommen.

Die Forellenturbine kopiert diese Phänomene. Schauberger entwickelte eine sogenannte "Mäanderscheibe", eine kreisrunde Kupferplatte mit einem Wellenprofil ähnlich wie es eine Wasseroberfläche aufweist, auf die gerade ein Tropfen oder ein Stein aufgetroffen ist. Eine zweite Platte befand sich umgekehrt darüber (s. Abb.). Das Wasser wurde nun von oben mittig in den Zwischenraum zwischen den sich drehenden Mäanderscheiben eingeleitet. Durch die Kombination von axialer und radialer Bewegung in dem Wellenprofil erreichte er eine doppelspiralförmige Drehung des Wassers. Das Wasser trat dann am Rand der Mäanderscheibe aus und wurde in Doppeldrallrohre (s. Abb.) eingeleitet. Diese hatten einen konisch sich verjüngenden Querschnitt, ein spezifisch eiförmiges Profil und eine spiralförmige Verdrillung. Die Rohre selbst waren noch einmal spiralförmig zur Achsmittelpunkt der Maschine hin eingerollt. Das Wasser wurde damit in eine zentripetale Bewegungsrichtung gebracht. In der Kombination dieser Bewegungsformen erreichte Schauberger ein Vorherrschen der Zugenergie, die unter anderem bewirkte, daß Wasser kontinuierlich von unten nachgesaugt wurde, das Wasser also nach einem erstmaligen Anstoß durch einen Anlasser nach und nach von selbst den Kreislauf durchlief. Das Profil und die Spiralform der Rohre kopierten die natürliche Fließbewegung des Wassers und bewirkten dadurch eine Abnahme des Reibungswiderstandes, der schließlich

negativ wurde, also ziehende Eigenschaften annahm. Im Bereich der Zugkraft wirkt laut Schauberger nicht mehr der im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsende Widerstand, sondern die im Quadrat zur Beschleunigung wachsende Leistung. Das Ende der Einrollung des Wasser bildete eine zentrifugale Anordnung der Rohre, wo eine Düse in Form einer Zugschraube (s. Abb.) das Wasser mit großem Druck auf eine Turbinenleitschaufel abstrahlte. An dem Turbinenrad konnte dann Bewegungsenergie ausgekoppelt werden. Schauberger bezeichnete diese Apparaturen als lebende Maschinen, da sie den natürlichen Lebensaufbau kopierten. Sie arbeiteten auf der Basis eines rhythmischen Wechselspiels von Druck und Zug, sie pulsierten, weshalb er sie auch Repulsine und Repulsator nannte. Eine frühe Entwicklung, die als Flugscheibe in die Geschichte einging (s. Abb.), hatte einen nachgebildeten Kiemenring aus Aluminium, der die Verwirbelung der in diesem Falle verwendeten Luft bewirkte. Die Levitationsenergie bewirkte ein Aufschweben der Scheibe. Insgesamt entwickelte Schauberger auf der Basis dieses Prinzips Implosionsmaschinen zur Erzeugung von Energie, Fluggeräte, Schiffe und Unterseeboote, sowie Heizungen und Beleuchtungsanlagen.

Okkult angehauchte Personen verbreiten heute die Theorie, daß die Nazis fliegende Untertassen nach Schaubergerprinzip hatten, mit denen sie geflüchtet sind, andere behaupten, die Ufos arbeiteten nach dieser Methode. Diese unbeweisbaren Geschichten sollen hier nicht zur Debatte stehen. Tatsache ist, daß Schauberger sein ganzes Leben der Konstruktion dieser Maschinen gewidmet hat, aber so oft angefeindet, bestohlen und behindert wurde, daß bis heute der eindeutige Nachweis für die Funktionstüchtigkeit der Geräte aussteht. Schauberger selbst behielt seine Konstruktionsgeheimnisse für sich, und seine Modelle wurden von

neidischen und gierigen Vertretern aus Wirtschaft und Politik durch unsachgemäße Behandlung zerstört oder kurzum entwendet. Dieses Schicksal ereilte ihn mit den Nazis ebenso wie mit den Amerikanern und Konzernen wie Siemens und Messerschmidt. Damals war die Zeit noch nicht reif für seine progressiven Entdeckungen. Schon in den fünfziger Jahren warnte er vor den Gefahren der zersetzenden Atomkraft und der unnatürlichen Behandlung von Land und Wasser. Sein Sohn Walter gründete bereits in den fünfziger Jahren die "Grüne Front", eine ökologische Bewegung in Österreich. Heute erst ist das Bewußtsein für die ökologischen Probleme unserer Feuer- und Explosionstechnologie so weit gewachsen, daß neuartige Ansätze auf offene Ohren stoßen. Schauberger ist so neuartig, daß es einer gewaltigen Offenheit im Geiste braucht, um ihn zu verstehen. Das, was damals in den dreißiger und vierziger Jahren noch weggeleugnet werden konnte, kann heute nicht mehr verleugnet werden. Das Werk Schaubergers ist mittlerweile weltweit bekannt und erlebt in jüngster Zeit eine große Renaissance. Möglicherweise ist die Zeit jetzt reif für diese Dinge. Die Erforschung und technische Entwicklung dieser Maschinen ist jedoch eine gewaltige Aufgabe, die viel Geld und Zeit kosten wird. Bevor aber das notwendige Bewußtsein einer neuen Sicht der Natur und der Physik der Natur nicht entwickelt ist, wird jeder maschinenbauliche Versuch der Herstellung solcher Geräte zum Scheitern verurteilt sein. Zuerst müssen wir uns in die Gedankenwelt Viktor Schaubergers hineinversetzen, seine hinterlassenen Schriften und Zeichnungen immer und immer wieder studieren, bis wir den inneren Wesenskern der Natur und des Lebens verstehen. Auf jeden Fall bietet das Schaubergerische Wissen einen Ansatz für eine Technologie für das 3. Jahrtausend.

Zum Abschluß sei ein Zitat von Schauberger angeführt, um dem Leser den Originalton nicht vorzuenthalten. Wir empfehlen unbedingt das Studium dieser Originaltexte, die aus den am Ende angeführten Quellen entnommen werden können. Zur "Todestechnik" schreibt er: "Den Reigen in diesem Treiben schließt aber der Energietechniker. Die Kohle, das Brot der Erde, und, wo es noch in ausreichendem Maße vorhanden ist, das Wasser, ihr Blut, sorgen für die Gewinnung von Energien. Wenige Jahrzehnte erst wühlt der Mensch in diesem zufällig gefundenen Reichtum. Immer weniger und schlechter wird das Triebwasser seiner Werke, immer gewaltiger werden die Katastrophen auf der Erde, weil ihr der Mensch die Kohlenstoffe - ihr Brot -, das Wasser - ihr Blut - gestohlen hat. Unentwegt arbeitet der Mensch aber weiter und immer größer wird sein Elend." (zitiert nach: Olof Alexandersson, Lebendes Wasser, S. 90f.)

Quellen:

*Alexandersson, Olof*: Lebendes Wasser. Über Viktor Schaubberger und eine neue Technik um unsere Umwelt zu retten, Ennsthaler-Verlag, Steyr 1998

*Coats, Callum*: Living Energies. Viktor Schaubberger's brilliant work with natural energy explained, Gateway Books, England 1996

*Viktor Schaubberger. Das Blut der Erde*, hg. von der Pythagoras-Kepler-Schule, Bad Ischl 1997 (CD-Rom, Originaltexte, viele Bilder)

*Implosion. Biotechnische Schriftenreihe*, hg. vom Verein für Implosionsforschung und -anwendung e.V., Offenburg 1995-1998 (4x/Jahr erscheinende Zeitschrift mit Originaltexten von V.S.)

*Tattva Viveka. Forum für Wissenschaft, Philosophie und spirituelle Kultur*, hg. von Ronald Engert, Darmstadt 1994-1998 (3x/Jahr erscheinende Zeitschrift, u.a. mit Texten zu V.S.)

Adressen:

*Pythagoras-Kepler-Schule* (PKS, Sitz der Familie Schaubberger, Archiv der Arbeiten Viktor und Walter Schaubergers und Forschungs- und Seminarzentrum), Kaltenbach 162, A-4821 Lauffen, Tel. u. Fax. 06132-24814, e-mail: schaubberger@pks.or.at, Homepage: www.pks.or.at.

*Zeitschrift "Implosion"*: Verein für Implosionstechnik und -anwendung e.V., Windschlägerstr. 58, D-77652 Offenburg

*Zeitschrift "Tattva Viveka. Zeitschrift für Wissenschaft, Philosophie und spirituelle Kultur"*: Eschollbrücker Str. 4a, D-64283 Darmstadt, Tel. 06151-319051, Fax 319052, e-mail: syntropia@aol.com, Homepage: www.syntropia.de.

*Syntropia. Vertrieb für bioenergetische Produkte nach V.S.*, Eschollbrücker Str. 4a, D-64283 Darmstadt, Tel. 06151-319062, Fax 319052, e-mail: syntropia@aol.com, Homepage: www.syntropia.de

[ZURÜCK](#)



# FREIE-ENERGIE-MASCHINEN

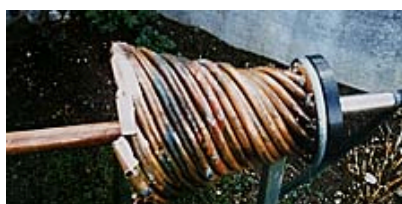


Repulsine, Freie-Energie-Maschine (auch "fliegende Untertasse" genannt)



Die aus Kupfer gefertigte Wellenscheibe (auch Doppelmembran genannt), wichtigstes Bestandteil der Repulsine (freie Energie-Maschine)

Kupfer  
Aufbau  
Später  
Schau  
seiner  
verwendet  
wurde  
Altau





Detailansicht der Austrittsdüse des Heimkraftwerks



Ron Engert

## Der Maulwurfflug und das Regenwurmsanatorium

### Viktor Schaubergers Wege zu einer naturrechtigen Landwirtschaft

#### Einleitung

Die Nahrung des Menschen ist das Bindeglied zwischen ihm und der Natur. Der Anbau und die Ernte von Früchten, die Bearbeitung des Bodens und die Kompostierung waren für Viktor Schauberger die wichtigsten Themen im Rahmen einer naturgerechten Lebensweise, die die Natur versteht und respektiert. Der Mensch ist über die Nahrung bedingungslos mit der Natur verbunden, und eine falsche Umgangsweise mit ihr schädigt zwangsläufig auch den Menschen. In diesem Sinne zeigte Schauberger unermüdlich alternative Konzepte und Methoden zur Landwirtschaft und zum Gartenbau auf, von denen einige in diesem Beitrag vorgestellt werden. Der Text schließt an den allgemeinen 1. Teil an, der in der vorangegangenen Ausgabe von "Natürlich Gärtnern" erschienen ist. Bekanntlich ist es heute dank der Traktoren und landwirtschaftlichen Maschinen für eine Person möglich, das Acht- bis Zehnfache an Bodenfläche zu bestellen als früher. Weniger bekannt ist, daß gleichzeitig der Ertrag je Bodenfläche auf ein Achtel oder Zehntel der früheren Erträge gefallen ist. Die heutige Bodenbearbeitung fußt im wesentlichen auf folgenden Fehlern: o Benutzung von Eisengeräten, o falsche Düngung, z.B. Schlackendüngung oder gar Kunstdüngung, o Entfernen des Bewuchses (Fehlen der Isolierhaut der Erde), o Benutzung von zentrifugalen Pflügen o falsche Kompostierung.



#### Die naturrechtigen Methoden

Schauberger beobachtete als Förster jahrzehntelang die unberührte Natur und zeichnete sich durch ein unglaublich genaues Wissen über die Naturvorgänge aus. Auch war er als naturverbundener und seherisch begabter Mensch den alten Traditionen sehr nahe, die noch aus der vorchristlichen Zeit stammen und im Grunde unsere nord- und mitteleuropäischen Wurzeln sind. Gerade die alten Bauern in dem entlegenen Gebiet am Plöckenstein (im Dreiländereck Deutschland-Österreich-Tschechien), aus dem Schauberger stammt, kannten noch die ganzen alten naturnahen Methoden der Bodenbearbeitung und -verbesserung, auch wenn sie manchmal nicht mehr so genau wußten, warum sie das so machten. Schauberger als gleichermaßen technisch-naturwissenschaftlich wie intuitiv begabter Forscher konnte die Zusammenhänge erklären. Um ein Verständnis für die praktischen Anwendungen zu bekommen, muß vorab noch ein kurzer theoretischer Teil eingefügt werden.

#### Die Bipolarität zwischen Erde und Himmel

Die Natur ist grundsätzlich bipolar. Es gibt immer zwei Pole, zwischen denen eine Spannung herrscht. Subtile Ausgleichsvorgänge, die durch Diffusionsmembranen wie z.B. die Haut oder die Rinde gesteuert werden, bewirken, daß das Leben in einem labilen Gleichgewicht bleibt. Für die Landwirtschaft und den Gartenbau ist wichtig, daß auch die Erde als Planet eine solche Diffusionsmembran hat, die sich aus metallisch-ätherischen Ölen bildet und als Haut die Erde vor dem Atmosphärenbereich schützt. Diese Isolierschicht wird natürlich durch die Bodenbearbeitung angegriffen und muß deshalb von dem Bauer bzw. Gärtner durch bestimmte Maßnahmen

wiederhergestellt werden. Diese Maßnahmen werden im Verlauf des Beitrages dargestellt. Die Geosphäre (die Erde) ist negativ geladen, d.h. sie ist anziehend, während die Atmosphäre positiv geladen ist, d.h. Druck ausübend. Zwischen diesen beiden Polen befindet sich eine Neutralzone, in der das Leben entsteht - der Bereich der Erdoberfläche und der unmittelbare Untergrund. Schauberger bezeichnet die Bäume bzw. Pflanzen als "bi-polares Anoden- und Kathodensystem". Es erfolgt am Tag eine Umstellung des Zug- und Druckpoles, je nachdem wie der Strahlungswinkel der Sonne sich ändert. Durch die Drehung der Erde ändern sich die wechselnden Strahlungseinflüsse der bipolaren Extreme Sonne und Mond. Diese Polarisierungsänderung bewirkt den Kreislauf der Stoffe zwischen Erde und Atmosphäre. Das Leben in der Pflanze kann erst dann hochwertig sein, wenn die geosphärischen und atmosphärischen Stoffe im Innern der Pflanze richtig dosiert sind und sich harmonisch kreuzen. Die Borke ist in diesem Kreislauf ein Diffusionsgewebe, eine Membran, die den Austausch mit den feinstofflichen und energetischen Luftstoffen besorgt. Ohne diese Haut kann es kein Leben geben. Deshalb ist es äußerst wichtig, in Bezug auf Sonneneinstrahlung und Temperatur die natürlichen Bedingungen zu erhalten und das Diffusionsgewebe nicht zu zerstören. Das Aufreißen des Ackerbodens und die Beseitigung der Grassohe ist also naturverkehrt. Der offenliegende Boden ist gleich einer Wunde, kann jedoch durch entsprechende Maßnahmen mit der notwendigen Isolierhaut versehen werden.

## Die praktischen Anwendungen

Unter Berücksichtigung der oben dargelegten Polaritäten und Spannungsverhältnisse, sowie der besonderen Einflüsse der Atmosphäre und der Sonneneinstrahlung ergeben sich entsprechende Methoden und Anwendungen im Gartenbau und der Landwirtschaft. Viktor Schauberger war ein Meister der Naturbeobachtung und alle seine Überlegungen zur Bodenbearbeitung und dem Anbau gehen auf seine Naturbeobachtungen zurück. Zugleich spürte er immer wieder die alten traditionellen Landbaumethoden der Alten auf, die auf wundersame Weise im Einklang mit der Natur arbeiteten anstatt wie die heutige Agrarwirtschaft gegen sie.

## Wie der Bauer dengelt und mäht

Ein sehr schönes Beispiel für Schaubergers Herangehensweise ist seine Beschreibung des Mähvorgangs mittels der Sense. Auch um dem Leser einen Eindruck von Schaubergers Schreibweise zu geben, sei diese Passage wörtlich zitiert (V.S.: Der sterbende Wald, 1937; zuerst in: Tauhefte Nr. 150; jetzt in Implosion Nr. 20, S. 18ff.): "Manche Menschen mögen wohl die Beobachtung gemacht haben, daß die absterbenden Blätter bei Sonnenaufgang ohne geringsten Luftzug zu Tausenden zu Boden rieseln und dieser Blätterregen sofort aufhört, wenn die Sonne steigt und eine gewisse Luftwärme erreicht ist. Wir haben früher erklärt, daß die Strahlungsintensität am Morgen am stärksten ist, wodurch auch die Sauerstoffzeugung die größten Ausmaße erreicht. Der am Morgen in status nascendi entstehende Sauerstoff brennt die Blätter am Blattansatz ab und schließt die durch die Abtrennung des Blattes entstandene Wunde. Durch diesen einfachen Vorgang verhütet die Natur ein Ausbluten der Erde, weil alle Öffnungen durch diesen Verbrennungsvorgang luftdicht geschlossen werden. Eine ähnliche Erscheinung tritt auf, wenn Gras durch gedengelte Sensen geschnitten wird. Die Dengelung der Sense oder der Sichel erzeugt im Metall eine Spannung und Gegenspannung, die sich durch die sägeartigen Spitzen entlädt, wenn die Sensenschneide unter einem flachen Winkel durch das taunasse und kühle Gras geschwungen wird. Das Gras wird so durch einen von der Sensenspitze gegen die Nabe der Sense verlaufenden animalischen Strom [Lebensenergie, R.E.] abgebrannt, wodurch die Wunde sofort vernarbt und weder der Boden, noch das abgeschnittene Futter seine Kraftstoffe verlieren kann, weil die Sense durch den Stiel isoliert ist, also diese sehr flüchtigen Energiestoffe sich nicht abladen, sondern sich kurz schließen müssen. Betrachten wir eine gut gedengelte Sense unter dem Mikroskop, so sehe wir bei wechselnden Temperatureinflüssen Lichtscheine von einem Zahn zum andern huschen. Und lassen wir bei grauendem Morgen die Sense, die winkelmäßig richtig gehalten werden muß, durch die Gräser gleiten, so können wir bei richtigen Temperatureinstellungen im taunassen Grase fadenförmige Ströme sehen, die ohne Druck mit Blitzesschnelle den Halm fällen. Kommt die Sonne, so entlädt sich die Sense, und mit jedem Grad der Wärmezunahme der Luft erschwert sich diese Arbeit, bis trotz aller Schärfe der Sense die Arbeit zum Stocken kommt. Diesem Umstand ist es zuzuschreiben, daß Wiesen, die durch richtig gebaute und fachgemäß gedengelte Sensen mit der Hand geschnitten werden, fast ohne Düngemittel in ihrer Bodengüte erhalten werden, während Wiesen, die durch horizontal übereinander gleitende Maschinenmesser geschnitten werden, im Bodenertrag rasch zurückgehen und sichtbar vermoosen. So wie in vielen Belangen die einstige gewerbliche Kunst verloren ging, so gibt es auch heute nur

mehr ganz wenige Bauern, die das Denglen der Sensen verstehen. Nicht umsonst ließ der seinen Boden liebende Bauer sein Sensenmaterial nicht aus der Hand und dengelte gegen Abend mit einer beispiellosen Liebe seine Sensen, damit sie sich über Nacht aufladen konnten. Selbst für den Aufbewahrungsort trug er Sorge, damit die Sensen ja nicht von der Sonne beschienen und abgeladen wurden." Die äußerst feinen Spannungsverhältnisse im Boden, in den Pflanzen und im Gartenwerkzeug sind ausschlaggebend für Gedeih und Verderb der Vegetation. Der heutige Maschinenmensch ist sich nicht bewußt, mit welcher Grobheit er in diese subtilen Zusammenhänge eingreift. Die naturnahen Bauern des Emmentals und anderer Alpengegenden gehen auch heute noch jeden Morgen um 4:30 Uhr hinaus, um als erstes zu sensen. Hier führt Schauberger noch ein entsprechendes Beispiel aus der Natur an, das das vorgestellte Prinzip verdeutlicht: das Grasenerden der Kuh. "Betrachten wir eine Kuh bei der Nutzung von Pflanzenorganisationen, so kann man bemerken, daß sie mit ihrer scheinbar rauhen Zunge das Gras zu Büscheln nach einer ganz genauen Richtung zusammendreht und die zum Aufbau der nächst höheren Rasse dienenden Gräser durch Drehung um ihre eigene Achse genau an der Stelle bricht, wo die Natur dies wohlweislich bestimmt hat. Hat die weidende Kuh die Halme mit einem knackenden Ton von der Erde gelöst, dann prustet sie über die dadurch entstandene Wunden, dadurch verändert sie die örtliche und stoffliche Zusammensetzung der Luft, es kommt nur dadurch zu starken Gegensätzen und folglich zu notwendigen Ausgleicherscheinungen, welche die geöffneten Wunden nahezu augenblicklich verschließen. Was die Kuh durch Zug gelockert hat, drückt sie fürsorglich mit ihrem Leibesgewicht wieder zusammen und gibt damit dem Boden ein Vielfaches an Wärme, die sie, durch das mit dem Zug verursachte Vakuum, der Erde genommen hat, zurück." (ebd.)

## **Das Gießen**

Die Spannung der Bodenenergien ist z.B. auch beim Gießen entscheidend. Gießt man den Boden zur heißen Mittagszeit mit kaltem Wasser, so erfolgt durch die plötzliche Abkühlung eine Entspannung des Bodens und die Energierichtung des Temperaturgefälles stellt sich um. Es wird keine Spannung und keine Levitationsenergie (s. Teil 1) mehr aufgebaut, die Lebensenergie (Schauberger nennt sie auch Kulturenergie) entlädt sich in den Boden, d.h. die Pflanze fällt um und stirbt ab.

## **Das Schneiden der Nadelbäume**

Eine Methode der Düngung und Bodenverbesserung war früher das Schneiden der Nadelbäume. Diese wurden geschnitten, wenn sie voll im Saft standen. Die grünen Nadeln wurden mit eigenen Messern in kleinste Teile zerhackt und auf die Felder zerstreut. Der Bauer gewann dadurch die wertvollen Metallwerte, die zum Aufbau der verwundeten Bodenhaut unbedingt notwendig sind.

## **Das Tonsingen**

Ein uraltes Verfahren zur Regenerierung der Bodenhaut ist das Tonsingen, das aus den naturreligiösen Gebräuchen unserer Vorfahren stammt. Das Tonsingen wurde mit dem Aufkommen der modernen Technisierung allgemein verspottet, deshalb übten es die Altbauern im Geheimen aus, bis es nach und nach ganz verloren ging. "Der Brauch bestand darin, daß guter Lehm oder Ton im abkühlenden Wasser, also gegen Abend, mit einem hölzernen Löffel intensiv verrührt wurde. Beim Rechtsrühren wurde die Tonleiter hinauf und beim Linksrühren die Tonleiter herunter gesungen. Durch Gärungsprozesse unter Lichtabschluß im abkühlenden Wasser wurden die Atmungsstoffe, die durch das schreiende Singen auf die Wasseroberfläche gedrückt wurden, gebunden. Guter Ton enthält Aluminium, das durch dieses unter Gesang vor sich gehende Rühren frei und zugleich in feinsten Dosierung gebunden wurde. Frühmorgens führte der Altbauer die Bottiche aufs Feld. Er nahm einen festen Palmbusch und besprengte das frisch geeggte Feld wie der Pfarrer die Christgläubigen mit dem Weihwedel besprengt. Der Bauer erreichte damit die Möglichkeit, daß das Aluminium in feinsten Dosierung am Acker zurückblieb und prompt die Schutzhaut aufbaute, die wir an jedem Aluminiumgeschirr wahrnehmen können. Fällt auf dieses Aluminium warmer Regen, so bildet sich ähnlich wie wenn man ein Aluminiumgeschirr mit Sublimat bestreicht, ein schneeweißer grasbüschelartiger Zerfall, wodurch eine noch stärkere Spannung entsteht." (Aus: V. Schauberger, Die geniale Bewegungskraft, S. 39f.) Eine weitere Möglichkeit der Oberflächenpräparierung besteht darin, Hornspäne und feinst zerlegtes Kupfer in abkühlendes Wasser zu verrühren. Hierzu wird noch ein Kohlensäure bindendes Mittel benötigt, und der Vorgang muß unter möglichstem Lichtabschluß stattfinden. Solcherart behandelte Böden bleiben selbst in trockenster Jahreszeit kühl und feucht. Der Mehrertrag dieser Pflege der Hautatmung der Erde beträgt ca. 30%.

## **Das Sonnenpflügen**

Genauso wichtig wie die Oberflächenschicht und die richtige Bodenspannung ist der Einfluß der Sonne. Deshalb wurde das Feld vorwiegend in Nord-Süd-Richtung gepflügt und die Pflugrichtung wurde in einer kurvigen Bewegung der Sonnenbewegung angepaßt. Dies bedeutet, die Längsachse der Furche stand immer im rechten Winkel zur Sonneneinstrahlung. Dadurch entstehen bestimmte Spannungswechsel, die zur Entstehung von Wasser führen. Dies führt wiederum zu besseren Befruchtungsvorgängen. Der gleiche Vorgang findet sich bei einem richtig gewölbten, stark metallhaltigen Kieselstein, wenn er richtig zur Sonne liegt. Unter ihm bildet sich um so mehr Wasser und um so mehr Kühle, je heißer die Sonne brennt. Angler nutzen dieses Phänomen, denn unter diesen Steinen finden sich die besten Regenwürmer. Sie plazieren die Steine an den Fangplätzen, um jederzeit frische Würmer zu haben.

## **Die letzte Ölung**

Im Vorbild der Natur findet man am Beispiel des Samens, der im Herbst herunterfällt, die Bedeutung der Ölschicht. Die gemäßigte Herbstsonne zieht den Sauerstoff aus dem Korn, woraufhin dann hochwertige ätherische Öle ausfließen. Sie erstarren sofort und umgeben das Korn mit einer äußerst feinen und harten Ölschicht. Der Sauerstoff, der die Verwesung unterstützt, kann nicht eindringen und so ist das Korn vor Fäulnis geschützt. Die besondere Anlage der Kornschüttböden und bestimmtes Umschaukeln mit Holzschaukeln steht in diesem Zusammenhang. Auf den Hochalmen gingen die alten Förster und Bauern durch das tagsüber verdunstete Tauwasser auf den Wiesen, wodurch sich die Schuhe mit einem glänzenden Fettfilm überzogen, der das Schuhwerk besser vor eindringendem Regenwasser schützt als alles andere. Sie nannten dies "die letzte Ölung", die man jedem Samenkorn angedeihen lassen muß, um es wasserundurchlässig und keimstark zu machen. Selbst auf sehr trockenen Böden konnte so sehr gutes Wachstum erzielt werden. Aus den alten naturreligiösen Traditionen stammt sodann auch der Brauch der letzten Ölung des Leichnams, der schließlich unter einer Wetter- oder Schirmtanne vergraben wurde. Dadurch war der Körper vor Regen geschützt, wodurch kein Luftsauerstoff zu ihm gelangen konnte. Nur unter Luft- und Lichtabschluß kann eine naturrichtige Verrottung stattfinden, die es ermöglicht, daß die im Fett gespeicherte Lebensenergie des toten Lebewesens langsam wieder in den Vegetationskreislauf zurückgeführt wird.

## **Aussaat**

Der alte russische Bauer ließ bestimmte Samen tagelang unter seinen Wollsocken dünsten und erzielte enorme Erträge. Der naturnahe Förster verstand es, seinen Waldsamen tagelang mit Ton oder Sand aus fremder Erde vermengt im Hosensack nahe der Geschlechtsteile zu tragen. Diese Nähe führte zu einer Aufladung und Erregung der Keimfähigkeit auf beiden Seiten. So gelang es ihm, auch Kahlschläge wieder aufzuforsten, auf denen andere Pflanzungsversuche scheiterten. Die Eingebundenheit in die Natur und die tiefe Beziehung zu den geistigen Welten gaben den alten Bauern Intuition und die vielgerühmte Bauernschläue. Sie wußten noch um die Wichtigkeit der richtigen inneren Einstellung und des Gefühls. "Der alte Bauer sinnierte und ließ sich bei jeder Bodenarbeit Zeit. Er wußte, daß es sich hier um bestimmte Gefühlseinflüsse handelt, die kein Hasten und Jagen ersetzen kann." (Die geniale Bewegungskraft, S. 41)



## Eisen- und Kupfergeräte

Ein wesentlicher Unterschied in der Bodenbearbeitung ist die Verwendung von Eisen- oder Kupfergeräten. Eisengeräte entziehen dem Boden die für gutes Wachstum nötige magnetische Spannung, sie entladen den Boden und das darin befindliche Wasser. Schauberger entdeckte diesen Zusammenhang, als er in den 30er Jahren nach Bulgarien eingeladen wurde, um das plötzliche Sinken der Bodenerträge zu untersuchen. Er bemerkte, daß in den von den Türken mit Holzpflügen bestellten Landesteilen der Ertrag auf höherem Niveau lag als in den Bereichen, wo mit den neu eingeführten Eisenpflügen gearbeitet wurde. Bei dem bekannten Wasserfadenversuch von Lord Kelvin (beim Wasserfadenversuch wird Wasser mit Druck durch eine sehr feine Düse gepreßt, woraufhin elektrische Ströme und Lichteffekte frei werden) stellte Schauberger fest, daß selbst geringste Beimengungen von Rost sämtliche Spannungsphänomene des Wasser verhinderten. Befindet sich also im Boden Rost, der durch den Eisenabrieb des Gerätes entsteht, so verliert der Boden und das darin befindliche Wasser augenblicklich seine Spannkraft. Das Wasser sinkt ab und der Boden trocknet aus. Man kann auch beobachten, daß von der Natur her eisenhaltige Böden trockener als andere sind. Mit der Einführung der schnell und tief gehenden Motorpflüge ist dieses Problem aufgrund des höheren Abriebs besonders akut. Bei Kupferpflügen tritt diese Störung des Erdmagnetismus nicht auf, da Kupfer nicht magnetisch ist. Versuche unter fachmännischer Kontrolle brachten Ertragssteigerungen von im Durchschnitt 17-35%, in einem Fall sogar von 100%. Dabei verbesserte sich auch die Qualität, was an dem gesteigerten Backvermögen von Getreide oder z.B. an der höheren Widerstandskraft der Kartoffeln gegen Kartoffelkäfer zu sehen war. (Siehe den Tätigkeitsbericht der landwirtschaftlich-chemischen Versuchsanstalt Linz 1949-52, S. 109-112; außerdem: V. Schauberger, Der goldene Pflug) In manchen Klöstern war es früher Sitte, die Felder mit kupfernen Pflügen und Eggen zu bearbeiten, wodurch sich der Ertrag zusehends steigerte. Durch das Reiben des Kupfers werden magnetische Kräfte gebunden. Durch Eisen werden die Kräfte entzogen. Da sich reines Kupfer aufgrund seiner geringen Härte schnell abnutzt, verwendet man im allgemeinen Bronze oder Messing, also eine Legierung aus 95% Kupfer und 5% Zink bzw. Zinn oder Beryllium. Neben der Entspannung des Bodenwassers durch die auflebenden Rostschleier führt die schnelle Bewegung der drückenden Pflugschar außerdem zu Druckschwingungen, die die feine Harmonie der Bodenschwingungen zerstört.

(Hierzu sind im Syntropia Kulturwerk Gartengeräte in der entsprechenden Legierung lieferbar.)



## Der Spiralflug

Schauberger entwickelte aus seinen Kenntnissen über die Spiralbewegung den Spiralflug, der im Prinzip genau umgekehrt wie der herkömmliche Pflug arbeitet. Der Spiralflug arbeitet zentripetal, d.h. er dreht die Erde zuerst spiralförmig nach innen, bevor er in eine achsiale Vorwärtsbewegung gebracht wird. Der herkömmliche Pflug hingegen wird zuerst achsial geradlinig gezogen und dreht dann unter Druck die Erde zentrifugal nach außen weg. Wie im ersten Teil dieses Beitrags (Heft 5/97) dargelegt wurde, ist die spiralförmige Einrollung nach innen das lebensaufbauende Prinzip. Die Art der Bewegung ist äußerst wichtig, um die richtige molekulare Innenspannung aufzubauen. Die Drehung der Erde (bzw. des Wassers oder der Luft) ist also von entscheidender Bedeutung. Nur in der spiralförmigen Einrollbewegung erfolgt eine Verdichtung und qualitative Aufwertung des Mediums. Der Spiralflug Schaubergers arbeitet ungefähr auf die gleiche Weise wie ein Maulwurf. Auch hier, wie in allem, hat Schaubberger die Natur kopiert. Durch die Form der Pflugschar wird die Erde nahezu widerstandslos umgedreht. Es entsteht keine Reibung und kein Druck. Da die Erde negativ geladen, d.h. anziehend ist, ist sie auch sehr druckempfindlich. Die herkömmliche Bearbeitung mit drückenden Eisenpflügen wirkt deshalb ausgesprochen zersetzend auf die Feinstruktur des Bodens. Der Spiralflug ist nur für eine oberfächliche Bearbeitung des Bodens vorgesehen, denn Schaubberger war ein Gegner des Tiefpflügens. Eine interessante Episode aus Schaubergers Arbeit ist in diesem Zusammenhang, wie die größere Einführung der Kupferpflüge seinerzeit verhindert wurde. Schaubberger hatte 1948 mit einer Salzburger Firma einen Vertrag über die Serienproduktion der Kupferpflüge geschlossen. Kurz darauf erschien bei ihm ein höherer Beamter der Salzburger Landesregierung und bot ihm seine "Zusammenarbeit" an, d.h. er verlangte einen Anteil für seine Unterstützung. Schaubberger verstand nicht recht, und so wurde der Beamte etwas deutlicher. Er habe eine Vereinbarung mit den Stickstoffwerken über eine Provision, wenn er die Bauern überreden könne, Stickstoffdünger zu verwenden. Da nun durch den Kupferpflug der Stickstoffverbrauch zurückgehen würde, müsse sich der Beamte durch eine Provision auf die Pflüge entschädigen. Schaubberger war entrüstet und lehnte das Angebot ab. Kurze Zeit später kam eine unerwartete Absage der Firma, die die Pflüge herstellen sollte. Vertreter der Volkswirtschaft ebenso wie des Bauernverbandes begannen, vor der Verwendung der Kupferpflüge zu warnen. Diese würden eine Überproduktion verursachen und dadurch die Preise kaputt machen. Der Pflug wurde nicht produziert und Schaubberger konnte dieses Projekt daraufhin nicht mehr weiter verfolgen.

## Edelkompostierung

Schauberger war Vertreter der kalten Kompostierung. Die Aufheizung des Misthaufens durch Fäulnisbakterien und der schlechte Geruch waren für ihn ein Zeichen, daß die zersetzenden Energien unter der Wirkung des Sauerstoffes die Oberhand hatten. Unter dem Einfluß des Sauerstoffes kommt



es zu einer Oxidation, einer Verwesung. Obwohl nach einer Düngung mit solchem Mist das Wachstum etwas besser wird bzw. der Bodenertrag dauerhaft gehalten werden kann, gibt es doch eine wesentlich effektivere und nachhaltigere Ertrags- und vor allem auch Qualitätssteigerung mit der kalten Kompostierung. In der kalten Kompostierung werden frische Abfallstoffe einem kalten Gärprozess zugeführt, der im Unterschied zur Verwesung ein Verrottung verursacht. In diesem Fall entstehen keine Fäulnisprodukte und keine pathogenen Bakterien. Pathogene Bakterien haben die Aufgabe, organische Stoffe zu zersetzen. Sie zersetzen also die Pflanzenabfälle, obwohl dies im Sinne der Humusaufwertung genau das Falsche ist. Laut Schauberger entstehen bei der richtigen Kompostierung apathogene Bakterien, sozusagen Gesundheitserreger. Wie eine kalte Vergärung herbeigeführt wird, zeigt die folgende Beschreibung des "Regenwurmsanatoriums". Grundsätzliche Bedingungen für eine kalte Kompostierung sind der Schutz vor direkter Sonneneinstrahlung, der Schutz vor Regenwasser, der Luftabschluß und die Eiform. Um einen Schauberger-Kompost, das sogenannte "Regenwurmsanatorium" anzulegen, suche man sich einen Tief- oder Herzwurzler, z.B. einen Obstbaum. Um den Baumstamm herum, im Schatten der Krone, wird eine halbkugelförmige Grube ausgehoben, so daß die Wurzeln nicht zerstört werden. Der Baumstamm wird mit Rinde oder Papier vor einem direkten Kontakt mit dem Kompostmaterial geschützt. Durch die Verrottung entstehen an dieser Stelle später Hohlräume, die wie ein diffuser Luftschacht funktionieren, d.h. Luft nur indirekt und schwach dosiert an den Kompost heranlassen. Die erste Füllung ist eine kleingehackte Mischung aus frisch gemähtem Gras und anderen Abfallstoffen, wie z.B. Kartoffelschalen, Obstschalen, Fruchtstengeln etc., die ebenfalls frisch oder luftgetrocknet sein sollten. Diese gut vermischte Schicht, die etwa ein Höhe von 40-50 cm ergeben sollte, wird dann mit Kupfer- und Zinkstaub versehen, um den Boden mit anreizenden Spurenelementen anzureichern. Das geschieht am besten durch Abfeilen winziger Mengen von Kupfer- und Zinkresten. Etwas Salz und eine geringe Menge Rohrzucker kommen noch dazu, und dann wird das Ganze in der Grube festgetreten, mit einer Schicht Erde bedeckt und gut wasserdicht abgedeckt, damit kein positiv gespanntes Regenwasser eindringen kann. Wenn wieder frische Abfallstoffe anfallen, wird, wie oben beschrieben, eine neue Lage angefertigt. Darauf kommt wieder eine etwa 20cm dicke Erdschicht, die zuvor mit möglichst fremdem Kiesel sand, z.B. aus einem Bachbett, vermischt wurde. So folgt Schicht auf Schicht, wobei die Lagen nach oben immer kleiner werden, bis der Komposthaufen die Form eines Eis hat. Die Eiform ist die grundlegende Naturform, um die richtigen Spannungsverhältnisse und Energieströme zu gewährleisten. Das um den Stamm liegende Luftloch wird von oben mit abgefallenem Laub leicht verstopft und dann das Ganze glatt geklopft, damit der vom Baum fallende Regenstaub nur über die Oberfläche streicht und die nun wichtige Oberflächenspannung aufbaut. Ein solcher Misthaufen zieht das ganze Mikrobenleben und die Regenwürmer an. Diese sterben dann im Winter ab und werden in ätherische Öle umgewandelt. Im nächsten Jahr kann man den Humus in einer ca. einen halben Zentimeter dicken Schicht auf die Beete ausstreuen und sofort mit entsprechendem Gerät (aus Kupfer, Bronze oder Holz) einscharren, damit es nicht unter den Einfluß der Sonneneinstrahlung kommt. "Kein Ungeziefer zeigt sich auf dieser Erde, Unkraut ist kaum zu sehen. Was üppig aufwächst, ist edelste Frucht und der Baum, der den Komposthaufen schützte, biegt sich im Herbst unter der Last wurmloser Früchte. Die 30%ige Mehrernte und die bedeutend veredelte Qualitätsernte ist nachhaltig", kommentiert Schauberger (in: Das Regenwurmsanatorium, Implosion Nr. 21, S. 18-26. Der Text enthält noch wesentlich mehr Details und sei zur Lektüre wärmstens empfohlen). Die manchmal angewendete Schlackendüngung (auch als Thomasmehl bekannt) ist nach Schauberger überhaupt nicht zu empfehlen. Im Hochofen wird der Schlacke der letzte Rest an Auftriebsstoffen genommen. Auf dem Fels ziehen sie dann kilometerweit gierig die Bodenenergien an sich, um sich wieder aufzuladen. Es entstehen für kurze Zeit Scheinfrüchte, die keine Kraft haben, schnell verfaulen und nicht überwintert werden können, bis schließlich der Boden derart verarmt, daß sich eine Bebauung nicht mehr lohnt. Durch die Entspannung des Wassers sinken die schweren Metallwerte ab. Sie sind es jedoch, die der Erde die durch Pflug und Egge zerstörte Isolierhaut wiedergeben können. Das Wasser wird schal und leer und dem Boden fehlt die Energie, aus der sich die Vegetation aufbauen kann. Ohne die schützende Isolierhaut kann die Erde nicht atmen und also auch nicht leben.

## Schluß

Wenn wir es richtig machen wollen, müssen wir es so wie die Natur machen. "Die Natur kopieren und dann kopieren", war ein Motto von Viktor Schauberger. Die Isolierhaut des Bodens, die Bipolarität zwischen Himmel und Erde, der Mischbewuchs, die Verrottung unter Licht- und Luftabschluß, das Verhalten der Tiere, die Spiralbewegung, die Eiform: Alles steht in der Natur in einem sinnvollen Zusammenhang und ergänzt sich gegenseitig. Wenn wir Menschen uns wieder in die Arbeitsweise der Natur einfinden, können wir mit geringstem Aufwand maximale Wirkung erzielen. Schauberger sprach

von der Nahrungsmittel- und Bewegungsfreiheit als Ergebnis seiner Biotechnik, d.h. ausreichende Mengen qualitativ hochwertiger Nahrung und kostenlose Maschinenkraft. Die Natur macht es uns vor: üppiges Wachstum, Leben, Energie - alles kostenlos und frei von Lärm und Abgasen. Viktor Schauberg war zutiefst mit der Erde und der Natur verbunden und kämpfte zeit seines Lebens vehement gegen die akademische Technologie. Seine kompromißlose Handlung brachte ihm viele Feinde ein, die es immer wieder schafften, seine Arbeit zu blockieren oder zu sabotieren. Aus diesem Grunde sind wir auch heute noch auf den falschen Wegen und haben uns noch nicht mit den Entdeckungen Schaubergers befaßt oder sie in unsere Alltagspraxis aufgenommen. Der ökologisch und naturverbunden eingestellte Biogärtner von heute sollte jedoch die unschätzbaren Erkenntnisse Viktor Schaubergers nun aus der Vergessenheit reißen, um sie zu seinem eigenen Wohle in seinem Garten einzusetzen. "Der Ursinn des Lebens ist, ein Stückchen Erde urbar zu machen", sagte Schauberg und führte dazu weiter aus: "Die Urbarmachung des Bodens bedeutet, die Bodenkräfte so zu organisieren, daß sich die mütterlichen Impulsstoffe breitseitig ausladen und befruchtenden männlichen Impulsstoffe in die Tiefe einladen können, wo sie sich dann breitseitig spannen und dasjenige zum Leben erwecken, was tief in der Erde versunken des Weckrufs harret, das naturnahe Bodenwirte zu geben vermögen, wenn sie mit Mutter Erde verwachsen sind und wissen, daß diese Erde kein toter Klumpen Materie, sondern die Urmutter ist, der wir für all ihre Liebe zumindest den kleinen Dank schuldig sind, diejenigen Vorgänge zu achten, die es ihr ermöglichen, auch späteren Geschlechtern Mutter bleiben zu dürfen." (V.S.: Biologischer Fruchtbaue, Implosion Nr. 37, S. 8)

<http://www.syntropia.de/>

<http://www.scharlatanprodukte.de>